# TESTIMONY

TAKEN BY

THE JOINT SELECT COMMITTEE

TO INQUIRE INTO

# THE CONDITION OF AFFAIRS

IN

THE LATE INSURRECTIONARY STATES.

---

## MISSISSIPPI.

VOLUME I.

---

WASHINGTON:
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE.
1872.

AMS PRESS
NEW YORK

First AMS EDITION published 1968
Manufactured in the United States of America

AMS PRESS, INC.
New York, N.Y. 10003

# THE KU-KLUX CONSPIRACY.

This report consists of thirteen volumes.

Volume I contains the report of the committee and the views of the minority.

Volume II contains the testimony taken by the committee in relation to North Carolina, and the report of the trials in the United States circuit court held at Raleigh, North Carolina.

Volumes III, IV, and V contain testimony taken by the committee in relation to South Carolina, and the report of the trials in the United States circuit court held at Columbia, South Carolina. Index to the three volumes is contained in volume III.

Volumes VI and VII contain testimony taken by the committee in relation to Georgia. Index is contained in volume VI.

Volumes VIII, IX, and X contain testimony taken by the committee in relation to Alabama. Index is contained in volume VIII.

Volumes XI and XII contain testimony taken by the committee in relation to Mississippi. Index is contained in volume XI.

Volume XIII contains miscellaneous testimony taken by the committee, testimony in relation to Florida, and miscellaneous documents.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/conditionofaffai0011vari

# INDEX.

## A.


Page.

Aberdeen, meeting to condemn Ku-Klux at ..... 782, 791, 861, 862
Abraham, ———, (colored,) whipping of ..... 436
Acts of the legislature of Mississippi ..... 884–888
ADAM, G. GORDON, testimony of ..... 60–63
  resident of Vicksburgh ..... 60
  lawyer; United States district attorney in 1868, and resigned in 1869 ..... 61
  execution of the laws, &c ..... 61, 62
Adams, Thomas W., whipping of ..... 257
Alabama, armed men carrying colored men from Meridian to:
  French's account of ..... 6, 8, 9, 18
  Smith's ..... 64, 65, 69, 78–80
  Ford's ..... 100, 102–105, 109, 122, 123
  Whitaker's ..... 170, 171, 200, 201
  Sessions's ..... 210
  outrages in Mississippi by persons from ..... 60, 249–252
Alcorn County, killed in: (for pages see names elsewhere,) ——— Turner, ——— Williams—2; whipped in: Edmund Glenn, John Glenn, Andy Graham, Fanny Honeysuckle, George Maybray, George Shubble, E. J. Stubblefield, Green Williams—8; killed in: (names not given) ..... 1153
ALGOOD, JEFFERSON B., testimony of ..... 499–510
  resident of Noxubee County; a planter; native of South Carolina; candidate for board of supervisors ..... 499
  was a slave-trader ..... 508
  Judge Ames, superintendent of education, notified by the Grand Cyclops to resign his position, and witness warned ..... 499
  killing of Mr. Charles Wissler; the "White Rose" organization, and "The Sons of the South" ..... 501
  Mr. Dericut prevented from teaching; school-house and church burned ..... 502
  opposition to colored schools ..... 502 507
  effect upon the negroes of Ku-Klux outrages ..... 502
  depreciation of the value of land; general treatment of northern settlers; whites reconciled to negro suffrage ..... 503
  witness's views as to the Ku-Klux order; relative rate of taxation ..... 504
  killing of a white man at a negro meeting, and one in Lowndes County ..... 505
  killing of Mr. Shipley by Mr. Wissler; killing of Mr. Wissler ..... 506
  school-tax ..... 507
  administration of county affairs ..... 509
Alibi, the only line of defense ..... 929, 930, 933, 934
Allen, Joseph, whipping of ..... 424
Allen, Miss Sarah A., compelled to discontinue her school ..... 777, 778, 820, 1022
ALLEN, Miss SARAH A., testimony of ..... 777–779
  resident of Geneseo, Illinois; engaged in teaching in Lowndes County; taught a colored school in Monroe County ..... 777
  was visited by disguised men and warned to leave ..... 777, 778
  discontinued her school; character of the disguises worn ..... 778
  nearly all the schools in Monroe County broken up; complaints against the school tax ..... 779
Ames, Judge, superintendent of education, notified to resign ..... 499
Amnesty, disabilities, &c ..... 289, 309, 310, 383, 414, 447, 791, 792
ANDERSON, JOHN H., testimony of ..... 1137–1145
  resident of Monroe County; a farmer; deputy sheriff ..... 1137
  a republican and Clay whig ..... 1142
  Sanders Flint and his two sons taken from jail; the latter killed; whipping of Santee Butler, Aleck Willis, and Simon Dunham ..... 1138, 1144
  the Ku-Klux Klan and Seventy-Six in Monroe County ..... 1138, 1139, 1141, 1145
  invited to join the Ku-Klux order by Nathan Pulham ..... 1141–1143
  killing of Mr. Trailer; killing of Mr. Garrett by Hendricks ..... 1143
  Andy Burns shot at ..... 1138, 1144

Page.
ANDERSON, LYDIA, (colored,) testimony of ..... 510–513
resident of Noxubee County ..... 510
whipping of witness ..... 510–513
and Aleck Hughes; killing of Solomon Triplett ..... 512
and George Murph ..... 512, 513
whipping of Nathan Campbell; killing of Peter Gregory ..... 513
Anonymous threatening letters ..... 5, 76, 87, 90, 91, 92
Arms, practice of carrying ..... 567
Arnold, Mr., visited and compelled to do justice to a negro ..... 1186
Artesia, disturbance at:
Algood's account of ..... 550
Jarnagin's account of ..... 530, 531
Rives's account of ..... 556, 557
Powers's account of ..... 601–603
Lewis's account of ..... 680–692
Orr's account of ..... 711–718
Nelson's account of ..... 895–899
Brothers's account of ..... 1001–1017
Bliss's account of ..... 1030–1036
Perkins's account of ..... 1167–1171
Atkins, Ab., killing of ..... 361
Atkins, Joseph, whipping of ..... 1151
Avery, John W., ordered to quit teaching ..... 1150

B.

Bailey, Drury, outrages upon and subsequent killing of ..... 1029, 1030
BASKERVILLE, CHARLES, testimony of ..... 374–416
resident of Noxubee County since 1866 ..... 374, 391
resident of Lowndes County from 1851 to 1866 ..... 374, 391
native of Virginia; planter and merchant: lieutenant colonel of cavalry in confederate army; general agent for Alabama and Mississippi of National Insurance Company ..... 374
postmaster in Virginia thirty-five years ago ..... 383
dismissed Yankee soldier from teaching school on his plantation ..... 384
disguised men, operations of, &c. ..... 375, 376, 392, 393, 411, 412
disguised men, country store broken up by ..... 376, 393
disabilities, removal of ..... 383, 414
colored people, behavior of ..... 382
colored people, masked, interrupt fair in colored church in Macon ..... 375, 392, 395, 399
killing of "Bully Jack," (colored) ..... 386, 396
killing of Dick Malone, (colored) ..... 376, 394, 395
whipping of ——— Harston, (colored) ..... 395
whipping of Isham Lowry, (colored) ..... 395
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins, (white) ..... 385, 396, 397
Ku-Klux trials at Oxford ..... 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 400, 401, 410
Ku-Klux, demonstrations in favor of ..... 382
Ku-Klux, no arrests by State authorities of ..... 400
school-houses burned ..... 402
school-tax, &c ..... 384, 385, 395, 407, 411
negro suffrage ..... 413, 414
concerning W. W. Chisolm, witness ..... 391
concerning John R. Taliaferro, witness ..... 476, 477, 486–491, 403–405, 409–412
concerning Union Leagues ..... 383, 388
Beckwith, Joseph, hanging of ..... 888, 889, 1040
BECKWITH, JOSEPH, (colored,) testimony of ..... 888–890
resident of Lowndes County ..... 888
taken out by disguised men and hanged three times ..... 888–889
character of the disguises worn ..... 889, 890
Behavior of colored people ..... 234, 255, 261, 298, 338, 351, 364, 382, 542
Bell, Mrs. Ada, entrance of soldiers into chamber of ..... 825, 827, 840, 871, 872, 912, 913, 998, 999
Bird, Allen, beaten and shot to death in jail:
Coleman's account of ..... 486
Cooper's account of ..... 495
Powers's account of ..... 587
Metts's account of ..... 643–646
Rives's account of ..... 656, 658
Judge Orr's account of ..... 698, 708, 709
Bishop, J. N., president of board of school-directors, relative to ..... 744, 746, 747, 757, 758

Page.
BISHOP, JOSEPH N., testimony of ..... 1172–1175
resident of Lowndes County; superintendent of education ..... 1172
relative to the levy of school-tax in the county; condition of the county as to school-houses at the time of the inauguration of the common-school system, 1172
statistics of expenditures for school purposes in the county ..... 1173–1175
Blake, Frank, whipping of, for being a democrat ..... 1042
BLISS, E. RAYMOND, testimony of ..... 1030–1036
resident of Lowndes County ..... 1031
details of the disturbance at Artesia, and the killing of Lee and the subsequent investigations ..... 1030–1036
Booth, Miss, ordered to quit teaching ..... 665, 666
Bowler, Mr., shooting while resisting arrest of ..... 1042
Boyd, Armistead, whipping of ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Boyd, Charles, whipping of ..... 1157
Boyd, Mr., closing of school of ..... 848
Bramlette, Judge, killing of ..... 10, 70, 99, 176, 182, 210, 221
Bresle, Early, shot at ..... 1157
Bridges, Mr., Ellen Grayson's son taken from custody of, and assault upon:
Davis's account of ..... 475
Jarnagin's account of ..... 518, 519, 522
Rives's account of ..... 562
Smith's account of ..... 573, 574
Clay's account of ..... 604, 605
Rice's account of ..... 609–619
Judge Orr's account of ..... 598, 708, 709
Brookhaven, mayor of, killing of the ..... 302
Brooks, Hardin, identified by Smith ..... 575
Brooks, Joseph, whipping of ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Brooksville, disturbance near ..... 556, 568
BROTHERS, OSCAR C., testimony of ..... 1001–1021
resident of Artesia; a physician ..... 1001
surgeon in the confederate army ..... 1020
details of the disturbance at Artesia, and the killing of Lee, and subsequent proceedings ..... 1001–1017
what witness knows of the "Native Sons of the South" ..... 1017–1021
Brown, Jerry, killing of ..... 487, 492, 495, 573
Brown, Mr., killing of ..... 563
Brown, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 666
Buford, Mr., killing of Mr. Cherry by ..... 657
Burnings:
school-houses and churches in Noxubee County ..... 477, 478, 502, 528, 539, 629
in Winston County ..... 467, 493, 587, 588, 601, 640, 650, 699, 1150
in Lee County ..... 823, 912, 922, 1021, 1166
school-houses in Oktibbeha County ..... 989
in Monroe County ..... 779, 921, 1021
in Chickasaw County ..... 1021
churches in Alabama ..... 572
assessor's office in Chickasaw County ..... 824, 840, 871, 912
properties of various persons, (see School-houses and Meridian) ..... 531
Burns, Andy, shot at ..... 1138, 1144
Burton, Mr., identified by Hicks ..... 891
Butler, Santee, whipping by negroes of ..... 361, 362, 847, 879, 1138, 1144
Butler, William, identified by Willis ..... 1184

C.

Campbell, John, robbing of store of ..... 340
CAMPBELL, GEORGE W., testimony of ..... 576–582
resident of Noxubee; a farmer; was a mechanic; a magistrate ..... 576
testimony taken by him as coroner in the case of the killing of Bully Jack; Mr. Glass charged by Jack's wife with being concerned in the killing ..... 576, 578
Lewis Jordan said to have been killed by Jenkins ..... 577, 582
investigation of the killing of Jack ..... 578, 579, 581
a negro killed by Mr. Murdock, and one by a negro woman ..... 579
copy of Ku-Klux notices received by him ..... 580, 581
killing of Dick Malone ..... 581
Cannon, (Campbell,) Nathan, whipping of ..... 485, 486, 491, 493, 513, 638, 647
Carlisle, Coleman, identified by Coleman ..... 488

Page.
CARPENTER, EDMUND L., testimony of ..... 619–625
resident of Noxubee County; a farmer and planter ..... 619
Sam Coger still alive; killing of Dick Malone ..... 619
whipping of Isham Lowry ..... 619, 620
shooting of Sam Coger ..... 621, 622
witness's views as to Ku-Klux ..... 622–625
miscegenation ..... 623, 624
Carroll County, state of affairs in ..... 588
CARTER, EDWARD, (colored,) testimony of ..... 1083–1085
a school-teacher ..... 1083
resident of Sanford, Alabama ..... 1084
visited by disguised men, shot at, and he and his family driven from home; his daughter ravished by John Cook and Diller Luddith ..... 1084
CASON, JEREMIAH H., testimony of ..... 1129–1133
resident of Columbus; a minister of the Baptist Church ..... 1129
character and standing of H. B. Whitfield; his business affairs ..... 1130–1133
Cherry, Mr., killing of, by Mr. Buford ..... 657
Chestnut, Charles, killing and throwing in a well of ..... 226
Chickasaw County, burning of assessor's office in ..... 824, 840, 871, 912, 1024, 1025, 1074, 1077
of school-houses in ..... 1021
killed in: Drury Bailey—1; shot at in, Early Bresle, ——— Gardner—2; whipped in: E. C. Echols and wife, Cornelius McBride—3; shooting in: Wesley Pulliam—1, (for page see name elsewhere.)
Chisolm, W. W., (witness,) testimony concerning ..... 391
CHISOLM, W. W., testimony of ..... 246–265
resident of De Kalb, Kemper County, for eighteen or twenty years; native of Georgia; elected magistrate when twenty-one or twenty-two years of age, and probate judge before and after the war; at present sheriff of Kemper County ..... 246
republican ..... 252
raid of armed men from Alabama ..... 249, 250, 251, 252
alarm among white and colored people ..... 253
Kemper County, lawlessness and crime in ..... 246
Kemper County, white and colored voters about equal in ..... 253, 264
Kemper County, republican majority in ..... 253
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 248, 252, 253, 258, 259, 260, 262, 264
disguised men, attack on Colonel Powers's plantation by ..... 248, 249
disguised men, operations in Kemper County by ..... 256, 264
disguised men, operations in Noxubee County by ..... 254
disguised men, witnesses afraid to testify against ..... 255
disguised men, reorganizing under name of "Seventy-Six" ..... 257, 258
concerning John W. Gully ..... 248, 250, 252, 255, 256, 258, 262, 263, 264, 265
concerning Dr. Fox ..... 255, 256, 258
whipping of Thomas W. Adams, (white) ..... 257
whipping of Henry Gregor, (colored) ..... 256
shooting of Captain Rush, deputy sheriff ..... 247, 248, 254, 256, 264
concerning J. Aaron Moore, (colored,) representative ..... 254
riot at Meridian ..... 254
colored churches and school-houses burned ..... 260
teachers of colored schools threatened ..... 261
behavior of colored people ..... 261
education of colored people ..... 264
Churches, burning of, in Noxubee County ..... 502, 528, 539, 629
in Lee County ..... 823, 912, 922, 1166
in Winston County ..... 587, 588, 601
n Alabama ..... 572
CLARK, HENRY, testimony of ..... 1086–1100
a detective in the employ of Colonel Wells ..... 1068
was a scout; a prisoner at Andersonville ..... 1088, 1098
a native of Missouri ..... 1097
on a surveying party in New Mexico ..... 1098
his investigation of the Ku-Klux Klan of Tippah County ..... 1086, 1088, 1089, 1094, 1095, 1096, 1099
whipping of Silas Mask ..... 1086, 1098, 1099
Harris Taylor and A. Woods, captains of the Klan ..... 1086
Widow Sykes's house visited and she ordered to leave; her daughter frightened till she became insane ..... 1086, 1087, 1096, 1097
whipping of Tillman Green, Armistead Boyd, Albert Thomas, and Joseph Brooks ..... 1087, 1095

Page.
CLARK, HENRY, testimony of—Continued.
killing of Dillard, said to have been done by Judge Pollard; twelve or fifteen cases of whipping in Tippah County ..... 1088
organization called the "Robertson Family" ..... 1089, 1091, 1092
Native Sons of the South ..... 1089, 1090, 1091
Drs. Cannon and Bonsall arrested for violating the enforcement act in arresting Miller and Rose without a warrant ..... 1090, 1091
Saddler, sheriff of Pontotoc, the head of the Robertson Family and a member of the Ku-Klux Klan ..... 1089, 1093
CLAY, MATTHEW, testimony of ..... 604–609
resident of Noxubee County; a planter ..... 604
affidavit of witness relative to the assault upon Bridges by negroes, and correcting misrepresentations in H. B. Whitfield's testimony ..... 604, 605
letter of Whitfield to witness, October 5, 1871, explaining his testimony before investigating committee ..... 605, 606
the taking of the negro from Bridges ..... 606, 607
Cockerman, Frank, whipping of ..... 1081, 1083
Cockrell, Mr., burning of house of ..... 531
Coger, Sam, killing of ..... 224, 227, 241, 242, 471
Coger, Sam, still living ..... 549, 550, 619
Coger, Sam, shooting of ..... 621, 622
Cole, ———, killing of ..... 589
Coleman, Mr., burning of store of ..... 531
Coleman, Robin, whipping of ..... 484, 494, 638, 647
Coleman, William, compelled to leave ..... 488, 495, 497, 498
whipping of ..... 335, 474, 482, 483, 495, 637, 654, 655
COLEMAN, WILLIAM, (colored,) testimony of ..... 482–492
resident of Noxubee County; came from Winston County in April last ..... 482
his house fired into by the Ku-Klux and witness shot; was knocked down, cut with knives, taken out, and whipped severely ..... 482, 483
character of the disguises worn ..... 483, 484
whipping of Mordecai Mitchell, Robin Coleman, and George Gladney; Sam McMillan shot at ..... 484
whipping of Nathan Cannon ..... 485, 486, 491
killing of Solomon Triplett; Allen Bird beaten and shot to death in jail ..... 486
Peter Cooper, school teacher, driven off; colored school-house burned ..... 487
killing of Jerry Brown ..... 387, 492
no white man punished for these outrages; colored people forced to lie out at nights; identifies Coleman Carlisle, J. Boyd Hughes, Theodore Ellis, Peter Ellis, Monroe Ellis, Bog Ellis, and Francis Ellis ..... 488
Colored churches burned ..... 20, 260
Compton, Dr., alleged Ku-Klux officer ..... 884
Conkerton, John, outrage upon ..... 1103, 1104, 1106
Connell, Alfred, whipping of ..... 1151
Connor, William P., burning of gin-house of ..... 531
Cook, John, rape of Edward Carter's daughter by ..... 1084
Cooper, Peter, driven from home ..... 487, 497, 639, 656
COOPER, PETER, (colored,) testimony of ..... 492–499
resident of Macon; came from Winston County; a school-teacher ..... 492
a shoemaker ..... 493
his money taken and his clothes and books burned by the Ku-Klux; school-house burned; whipping of Nathan Cannon ..... 493
whipping of Mordecai Mitchell ..... 493, 494
whipping of Robin Coleman and George Gladney ..... 494
killing of Allen Bird and Jerry Brown; whipping of Mr. Coleman ..... 495
killing of Jerry ———; opposition to colored schools ..... 496
William Coleman forced to leave ..... 495, 497, 498
Court-house, disturbance caused by General Lamar in ..... 297, 298, 348, 850, 851, 910, 911, 1160–1162
Courts, State, impossible to convict Ku-Klux in ..... 591, 697, 703, 705
Cox, Mace, killing of ..... 1045, 1046
Crosby, Andrew, captain of Ku-Klux ..... 775
CROSBY, EDWARD, (colored,) testimony of ..... 1133–1137
resides ten miles east of Aberdeen ..... 1133
Green T. Roberts outraged by disguised men ..... 1133, 1136
intimidation of colored republican voters ..... 1133–1136
Cunningham, Mr., captured by the Ku-Klux and not since heard of ..... 783

D.


Page.

Dance, Miss, burning of school-house of ..... 849
Darden, William, identified by Hicks ..... 891
Darden, William, shooting at Hicks by ..... 1083
DAVIS, ALEXANDER K., (colored,) testimony of ..... 469–482
resident of Noxubee County; a law student; a member of the last legislature. 469
whipping of—
Betsey Lucas ..... 469, 470
Isam Lowry and Eliza Hinton ..... 473
Aleck Hughes ..... 473, 474
Bill Coleman ..... 474
Robert Jackson ..... 480
C. M. Doss alleged captain of Ku-Klux; killing of Sam Coger; five families driven from Mr. May's place ..... 471
killing of—
Dick Malone ..... 471, 472
Bully Jack ..... 472
Johnson Keitt and Solomon Triplett ..... 474
Ellen Grayson's son ..... 475
man, (name not given) ..... 475, 476
Mr. Wissler ..... 476
Mr. Shipley by Charles Wissler ..... 480, 481
witness's knowledge of the "White Rose" and of Ku-Klux, as obtained from J. S. Taliaferro ..... 476, 477
colored school-house at Shuqualak and at Brooksville burned ..... 477
three white school-houses burned; sentiment as to colored schools; witnesses afraid to testify ..... 478
negroes generally republican ..... 479
court broken up by Charles M. Doss ..... 479, 480
Davis, Joseph, Gholson's statement relative to testimony of ..... 835
Reynolds's ..... 903, 907, 908, 910
turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ..... 270, 278–281, 295, 356
DAVIS, JOSEPH, (colored,) testimony of ..... 808–819
resident of Monroe County for six or seven years; was in the confederate service ..... 809
a radical ..... 813
was forced to join the Ku-Klux-Klan by Jasper Webb, Andrew Pope, Whitfield Pope, and Thomas Malone; went on a raid ..... 808
whipping and killing of Jack Dupree ..... 808, 809
Henry Hatch and Michael Forshee forced to join the Ku-Klux Klan; Burrill Willis and Jefferson Willis joined voluntarily ..... 809
kinds of disguises worn ..... 810, 815
went for Aleck Pope on second raid, but did not catch him ..... 810
whipping and hanging of Aleck Pope ..... 810, 811
whipping of Rhett Willis and Simon Dunham; killing of Abram Wamble ... 811
mode of Ku-Klux operations ..... 813
witness and others bribed not to betray the Ku-Klux ..... 817, 818
Davis, Miss Anna, outrages upon ..... 823
Davis, Miss Anna, character of ..... 839, 912, 922, 1075, 1165
Dericut, Mr., prevented from teaching ..... 502
Diggs, Frank, mail-agent, killing of ..... 74
Dillard, Mr., killing of ..... 1088, 1101, 1104, 1105
Disabilities, amnesty, &c ..... 289, 309, 310, 383, 414, 447, 791, 792
Disguised men, Ku-Klux, secret political organizations; objects, operations, organizations, &c., of:
Eggleston's account of ..... 1, 3, 4, 5
French's account of ..... 14, 15, 16
Jacobson's account of ..... 54, 57–59
Flournoy's account of ..... 82–85, 87, 90, 91, 93
Ford's account of ..... 102, 104, 112, 114, 116, 122, 123, 126
Whitaker's account of ..... 190, 191, 199
Sessions's account of ..... 206, 209, 211, 212, 215–217, 222, 224
Chisolm's account of ..... 246, 248, 249, 252–254, 256–260, 262, 264
Huggins's account of ..... 268, 274, 275, 278, 286, 287
Morris's account of ..... 299, 302–304, 312
McBride's account of ..... 327, 330, 338, 342
Holman's account of ..... 348, 358
Little's account of ..... 365
Baskerville's account of ..... 375, 392, 411, 412

Page.
Disguised men, &c.—Continued.
Whitfield's account of....417, 426, 430, 434, 435, 438, 442, 453
Pickett's account of....460–465
Disguised men, confederate soldiers and democrats, members of bands of....4, 287, 338, 350, 366, 463
uniforms, costumes, disguises, worn by....274, 275, 278, 327, 328, 343, 357, 467
State authorities inflict no punishment for acts of....4, 10, 16, 304, 311, 322, 331, 340, 350, 400, 431
witnesses afraid to testify against....255
negroes forced to join bands of....351, 357
(For further particulars see Ku-Klux.)
DISMUKES, ELISHA, testimony of....626–636
resident of Noxubee County; a lawyer....626
was quartermaster in rebel army....631
Lieutenant Governor Power's statement to witness relative to the attack upon his house in Kemper County....626, 627 633
hanging and shooting of a negro....627, 628
intimidation of voters in Noxubee....628
a church and two school-houses burned....629
concerning the killing of George Evans....633, 634
witness's views as to Ku-Klux and the Loyal League....634, 635
Doss, C. M., alleged captain of Ku-Klux....471
Doss, C. M., breaking up of court by....479, 480, 530, 1040
Dow-Blair Regulators....927
Duncan, Frazier, whipping of wife of....1152
Duncan, Matt, killing of brother of....584
Dunning (Dunham) Simon, whipping of....774, 811, 1136, 1144
Dupree, Jack, killing of:
Huggins's account of....270, 280
McBride's account of....339
Holman's account of....356, 357
Little's account of....360, 362
Whitfield's account of....435
Pickett's account of....462
Turner's account of....773, 774
Lee's account of....786
Davis's account of....808, 809
Gholson's account of....829, 847, 879
Reynolds's account of....903, 927

E.

Eaves, Buck, identified by Coleman....1151
Eaves, Mr., school-scrip taken from and burned....1150
Eberts, Mr., closing of school of....848
Echols, E. C., whipping of....330, 342, 351, 849, 879, 921, 1153
Echols, E. C., whipping of wife of....1153
Edmonds, Nancy, whipping of....1155
Education, negro....21, 86, 264, 306
opposition to, in Winston County....496, 649, 650
in Noxubee County....502, 507, 572
sentiment of democrats of Lowndes County as to....680, 700
Eggleston, B. B., character of....1055, 1057
EGGLESTON, B. B., testimony of....1–6
resident of Columbus, and assessor of internal revenue....1
went to Mississippi from Ohio....3, 4
served in Union Army during the war from captain to brigadier general....4, 5, 6
disguised men, operations of....1, 3, 4, 5
disguised men, object of....1, 4
disguised men, democrats compose organizations of....5
disguised men, no convictions for acts of....4
attack upon Mr. Powers, lieutenant governor....2, 3
attack upon Colonel Flournoy....3
anonymous threatening letters....5
persons whipped....1, 3, 4
freedom of political opinion....2
execution of the laws, &c....2, 4
Union Leagues....6
Ellis, Bog, identified by Coleman....488

Page.
Ellis, Francis, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Monroe, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Peter, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Theodore, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Elm, William, identified by Smith ..... 575
Emmons, Mr., outrages upon ..... 1023
Enforcement act, effect of ..... 591
Evans, George, alleged Ku-Klux, killing of ..... 583, 584, 633, 634, 794
Execution of the laws, security of person and property &c., as testified to by—
Eggleston ..... 2, 4
French ..... 14
Jacobson ..... 53, 55, 57
Adam ..... 61, 62
Smith ..... 80
Flournoy ..... 91, 95
Ford ..... 96
Whitaker ..... 165, 167, 186, 201
Sessions ..... 209
Taliaferro ..... 224, 244
Chisolm ..... 253
Huggins ..... 286
Morris ..... 299, 300

F.

Farmer, H. W., ordered to quit teaching ..... 676, 899
Farmer, H. W., whipping of ..... 277, 418, 444
Farmer, Mr., knocked down by a negro ..... 556, 568
Flint, Sanders, and his sons, Joseph and Willis, taken from the Athens jail; the two latter killed ..... 263, 269, 359, 786, 803-806, 843, 844, 860, 861, 879, 1138, 1144
FLINT, SANDERS, (colored,) testimony of ..... 803-808
resident of Monroe County ..... 803
he and his sons Joseph and Willis taken from jail by Robert Park, Samuel Young, Zachariah Westbrooks, Williamson Westbrooks, Bluford Westbrooks, Purnell Smith, Click Marshall, and Henry Hall; he escaped: his two sons were killed ..... 803-806
his property seized by Aleck Smith ..... 806, 807
drowning of a woman; killing of Dick Hendricks ..... 807
Flournoy, Colonel, attack by disguised men upon ..... 3, 83, 84, 85, 88, 89, 90, 94, 302, 437, 460, 461, 465, 466, 467, 468
FLOURNOY, ROBERT W., testimony of ..... 82-95
resident of Pontotoc County; editor and lawyer; county superintendent of schools ..... 82
deputy postmaster ..... 83
went to Mississippi in 1856 ..... 82, 91
born in Georgia ..... 91
voted for ordinance of secession ..... 95
attacked by disguised men ..... 83, 84, 85, 88, 89, 90, 93, 94
disguised men, operations of ..... 82, 83, 84, 85, 87, 90, 91, 93
anonymous threatening letters ..... 87, 90, 91, 92
freedom of political opinion ..... 89, 90
opposition to colored schools ..... 86
teachers of colored schools ordered to stop teaching ..... 82, 83, 86, 87
school-houses burned ..... 94
sense of security ..... 91, 95
Union Leagues ..... 86
FORD, WILLIAM C., testimony of ..... 96-127
resident of Meridian ..... 96
lawyer ..... 96, 121
went to Mississippi from Missouri; served in confederate army ..... 121
colored men taken from Meridian by armed men from Alabama ..... 100, 102, 103, 104, 105, 109, 122, 123
execution of the laws, &c ..... 96
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 102, 104, 112, 114, 116, 122, 123, 126
riot at Meridian ..... 96, 99, 103, 107
riot at Meridian, examination by Judge Leachman in regard to ..... 115, 125
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 99
killing of ——— Williams, (colored) ..... 102, 114, 116, 125
wounding of ——— Keyser, (colored) ..... 102, 114, 116

Page.

FORD, WILLIAM C., testimony of—Continued.
three negroes hung at Meridian ..... 99, 108, 117
concerning William Sturgis, mayor ..... 97, 99, 111
concerning ——— Price ..... 97, 100, 102, 109, 111, 119, 120
concerning William Dennis *alias* Clopton, (colored) ... 97, 98, 99, 102, 106–107, 113, 114, 116, 117, 121
concerning Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 97, 98, 99, 107, 113, 114, 116
concerning J. Aaron Moore, (colored) representative ..... 97, 98, 113, 116
concerning Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 100, 112
burning of Sturgis's store ..... 97, 105, 106
burning of J. Aaron Moore's house ..... 99, 106, 124
burning of colored church at Meridian ..... 99, 105, 106, 124
democratic negroes ..... 127
feeling between the races ..... 117, 118, 119
Union Leagues ..... 105
Forshee, Michael, forced to join the Ku-Klux ..... 809
Foster, Addy, whipping of ..... 339
Foster, Dr., burning of store of ..... 531
Fox, Dr., testimony concerning ..... 255, 256, 258
Freedmen's Bureau the cause of trouble ..... 852, 883
Freedom of political opinion ..... 2, 55, 75, 81, 82, 89, 90, 214, 215, 301, 333
Freeman, Mr., shooting by the Highs of ..... 839
Freeman, Mr., rape by ..... 1165
Freeman, Mr., burning of church by ..... 1166
FRENCH, O. C., testimony of ..... 6–23
resident of Natchez; member of legislature, and chairman of joint committee to investigate Meridian riot ..... 6
went to Mississippi from Ohio ..... 17
agent of Freedmen's Bureau ..... 18
execution of the laws ..... 14
armed men carried colored persons from Meridian to Alabama ..... 6, 8, 9, 18
disguised men, objects and operations of ..... 14, 15, 16
disguised men, opinions of democrats concerning ..... 15
disguised men, no prosecutions for acts of ..... 10, 16
riot at Meridian ..... 6–12, 16, 17
riot at Meridian, investigation by Judge Leachman of ..... 10
riot at Meridian, witnesses afraid to testify concerning ..... 7, 11, 12, 13
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 10
shooting of ——— Kryzer ..... 13
attack on Colonel A. P. Huggins ..... 14
three colored men hung at Meridian ..... 7, 10
in regard to Mayor Sturgis ..... 7
in regard to ——— Price ..... 8, 17
in regard to Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 8, 17, 19
in regard to William Dennis, *alias* Clopton, (colored) ..... 9, 10, 11, 14
in regard to Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 9, 10
in regard to J. Aaron Moore, representative, (colored) ..... 9, 10, 17, 20
burning of Sturgis's store ..... 7
burning of colored churches ..... 20
burning of school-houses ..... 18, 19, 20
education of negroes ..... 21
Chickasaw school fund ..... 21
opposition to republican mayors ..... 18
legislation in regard to railroads ..... 21, 22, 23
State debt ..... 21, 23
charges against State and county officers ..... 20
Union League ..... 16

G.

Galloway, Joseph F., ordered to quit teaching and preaching ..... 662, 663, 667, 1059, 1081
GALLOWAY, JOSEPH F., testimony of ..... 662–675
resident of Lowndes County; teacher in Mary's Academy ..... 662
a Congregational preacher ..... 665
a republican ..... 670
was ordered by Ku-Klux to stop teaching ..... 662, 663
character of the disguises worn ..... 663
Kendricks warned to leave, and he left; Squire Webbe ordered to desist from teaching ..... 664

Page.
Ellis, Francis, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Monroe, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Peter, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Ellis, Theodore, identified by Coleman ..... 488
Elm, William, identified by Smith ..... 575
Emmons, Mr., outrages upon ..... 1023
Enforcement act, effect of ..... 591
Evans, George, alleged Ku-Klux, killing of ..... 583, 584, 633, 634, 794
Execution of the laws, security of person and property &c., as testified to by—
Eggleston ..... 2, 4
French ..... 14
Jacobson ..... 53, 55, 57
Adam ..... 61, 62
Smith ..... 80
Flournoy ..... 91, 95
Ford ..... 96
Whitaker ..... 165, 167, 186, 201
Sessions ..... 209
Taliaferro ..... 224, 244
Chisolm ..... 253
Huggins ..... 286
Morris ..... 299, 300

F.

Farmer, H. W., ordered to quit teaching ..... 676, 899
Farmer, H. W., whipping of ..... 277, 418, 444
Farmer, Mr., knocked down by a negro ..... 556, 568
Flint, Sanders, and his sons, Joseph and Willis, taken from the Athens jail; the two latter killed ..... 263, 269, 359, 786, 803–806, 843, 844, 860, 861, 879, 1138, 1144
FLINT, SANDERS, (colored,) testimony of ..... 803–808
resident of Monroe County ..... 803
he and his sons Joseph and Willis taken from jail by Robert Park, Samuel Young, Zachariah Westbrooks, Williamson Westbrooks, Bluford Westbrooks, Purnell Smith, Click Marshall, and Henry Hall; he escaped: his two sons were killed ..... 803–806
his property seized by Aleck Smith ..... 806, 807
drowning of a woman; killing of Dick Hendricks ..... 807
Flournoy, Colonel, attack by disguised men upon ..... 3, 83, 84, 85, 88, 89, 90, 94, 302, 437, 460, 461, 465, 466, 467, 468
FLOURNOY, ROBERT W., testimony of ..... 82–95
resident of Pontotoc County; editor and lawyer; county superintendent of schools ..... 82
deputy postmaster ..... 83
went to Mississippi in 1856 ..... 82, 91
born in Georgia ..... 91
voted for ordinance of secession ..... 95
attacked by disguised men ..... 83, 84, 85, 88, 89, 90, 93, 94
disguised men, operations of ..... 82, 83, 84, 85, 87, 90, 91, 93
anonymous threatening letters ..... 87, 90, 91, 92
freedom of political opinion ..... 89, 90
opposition to colored schools ..... 86
teachers of colored schools ordered to stop teaching ..... 82, 83, 86, 87
school-houses burned ..... 94
sense of security ..... 91, 95
Union Leagues ..... 86
FORD, WILLIAM C., testimony of ..... 96–127
resident of Meridian ..... 96
lawyer ..... 96, 121
went to Mississippi from Missouri; served in confederate army ..... 121
colored men taken from Meridian by armed men from Alabama ..... 100, 102, 103, 104, 105, 109, 122, 123
execution of the laws, &c ..... 96
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 102, 104, 112, 114, 116, 122, 123, 126
riot at Meridian ..... 96, 99, 103, 107
riot at Meridian, examination by Judge Leachman in regard to ..... 115, 125
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 99
killing of ——— Williams, (colored) ..... 102, 114, 116, 125
wounding of ——— Keyser, (colored) ..... 102, 114, 116

Page.

FORD, WILLIAM C., testimony of—Continued.
three negroes hung at Meridian ..... 99, 108, 117
concerning William Sturgis, mayor ..... 97, 99, 111
concerning ——— Price ..... 97, 100, 102, 109, 111, 119, 120
concerning William Dennis *alias* Clopton, (colored) ... 97, 98, 99, 102, 106-107, 113, 114, 116, 117, 121
concerning Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 97, 98, 99, 107, 113, 114, 116
concerning J. Aaron Moore, (colored) representative ..... 97, 98, 113, 116
concerning Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 100, 112
burning of Sturgis's store ..... 97, 105, 106
burning of J. Aaron Moore's house ..... 99, 106, 124
burning of colored church at Meridian ..... 99, 105, 106, 124
democratic negroes ..... 127
feeling between the races ..... 117, 118, 119
Union Leagues ..... 105
Forshee, Michael, forced to join the Ku-Klux ..... 809
Foster, Addy, whipping of ..... 339
Foster, Dr., burning of store of ..... 531
Fox, Dr., testimony concerning ..... 255, 256, 258
Freedmen's Bureau the cause of trouble ..... 852, 883
Freedom of political opinion ..... 2, 55, 75, 81, 82, 89, 90, 214, 215, 301, 333
Freeman, Mr., shooting by the Highs of ..... 839
Freeman, Mr., rape by ..... 1165
Freeman, Mr., burning of church by ..... 1166
FRENCH, O. C., testimony of ..... 6-23
resident of Natchez; member of legislature, and chairman of joint committee to investigate Meridian riot ..... 6
went to Mississippi from Ohio ..... 17
agent of Freedmen's Bureau ..... 18
execution of the laws ..... 14
armed men carried colored persons from Meridian to Alabama ..... 6, 8, 9, 18
disguised men, objects and operations of ..... 14, 15, 16
disguised men, opinions of democrats concerning ..... 15
disguised men, no prosecutions for acts of ..... 10, 16
riot at Meridian ..... 6-12, 16, 17
riot at Meridian, investigation by Judge Leachman of ..... 10
riot at Meridian, witnesses afraid to testify concerning ..... 7, 11, 12, 13
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 10
shooting of ——— Kryzer ..... 13
attack on Colonel A. P. Huggins ..... 14
three colored men hung at Meridian ..... 7, 10
in regard to Mayor Sturgis ..... 7
in regard to ——— Price ..... 8, 17
in regard to Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 8, 17, 19
in regard to William Dennis, *alias* Clopton, (colored) ..... 9, 10, 11, 14
in regard to Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 9, 10
in regard to J. Aaron Moore, representative, (colored) ..... 9, 10, 17, 20
burning of Sturgis's store ..... 7
burning of colored churches ..... 20
burning of school-houses ..... 18, 19, 20
education of negroes ..... 21
Chickasaw school fund ..... 21
opposition to republican mayors ..... 18
legislation in regard to railroads ..... 21, 22, 23
State debt ..... 21, 23
charges against State and county officers ..... 20
Union League ..... 16

G.

Galloway, Joseph F., ordered to quit teaching and preaching ..... 662, 663, 667, 1059, 1081
GALLOWAY, JOSEPH F., testimony of ..... 662-675
resident of Lowndes County; teacher in Mary's Academy ..... 662
a Congregational preacher ..... 665
a republican ..... 670
was ordered by Ku-Klux to stop teaching ..... 662, 663
character of the disguises worn ..... 663
Kendricks warned to leave, and he left; Squire Webbe ordered to desist from teaching ..... 664

Page.
GALLOWAY, JOSEPH F., testimony of—Continued.
also Mr. Myers and Miss Booth; received a letter from Leonard Stewart warning him, by order of Ku-Klux, to quit preaching ..... 665, 666
Brown warned to quit teaching ..... 666
visited the second time by Ku-Klux, and ordered to quit preaching; they were disguised altogether different ..... 667
recognized Leonard Stewart ..... 668
Albert Hardy visited by Ku-Klux; assaulted and ordered not to go to church again ..... 669
whipping of Jim Hicks and wife ..... 671, 672
whipping of George Irion, three colored women, Ned Murphy ..... 672
whipping of Bob Wells ..... 672, 573
whipping of Joe Turner ..... 673
death of Perkins, supposed to have been poisoned ..... 674, 675
Gardner, ——, shot at ..... 1024, 1027, 1028
Gardner, Warren, identified by Turner ..... 771
Garrett, Mr., killing of ..... 836–839, 868, 879, 911, 1143
Gessner, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 1022
Gholson, S. J., head of Ku-Klux ..... 1026, 1027
Gholson, S. J., testimony relative to ..... 1022, 1023, 1026, 1027
GHOLSON, SAMUEL J., testimony of ..... 829–884
resident of Monroe County since 1830; was a slaveholder ..... 841
was in secession convention; judge of the Federal court for twenty-two years; a secessionist *per se;* in the confederate army; speaker of the house of representatives ..... 853
opposed the ratification of the fourteenth amendment ..... 854
concerning the testimony given in the case known as "The United States *vs.* Walton and others," and the proceedings in the case ..... 829–834, 848
killing of Jack Dupree ..... 829, 847, 879
killing of Aleck Page ..... 829–834, 848, 879
killing of Abe Wamble ..... 834, 867, 879
concerning Joe Davis's testimony ..... 835
killing of Hendricks and Mr. Garrett, and the legal proceedings thereon .. 936, 839, 868, 879
character of Miss Davis; Freeman shot by three men named High ..... 839
burning of Shattuck's office at Okolona ..... 840, 871
Mrs. Bell's chamber visited by soldiers ..... 840, 841, 871, 872
relative to the school system and the school-tax ..... 842, 843, 850, 873, 874
Sanders Flint and his two sons taken from jail by disguised men, and the latter killed ..... 843, 844, 860, 861, 879
whipping of Alfred Whitfield ..... 844, 845
whipping of Mr. Huggins ..... 845, 846, 879
recognition of John S. Roberts and John Porter ..... 845, 846
Santee Butler whipped by negroes ..... 847, 879
killing of Tom Hornberger, (or Durham) ..... 848, 866, 867, 879
Mr. Boyd's and Mr. Ebert's school closed ..... 848
Miss Dance's school-house burned, and a Presbyterian church ..... 849
whipping of Mr Eccles and McClendon ..... 919, 879
disturbance in the court-room in Monroe County ..... 850, 851
witnesses said to have been tampered with; case of Confederate Sam ..... 851, 852
financial condition of Monroe County since the war ..... 852
the Freedmen's Bureau the source of trouble ..... 852, 883
relative to taxation ..... 852, 853, 876, 877, 878, 880, 881, 882
witness's knowledge of the Ku-Klux order, its purposes, &c ..... 854–860, 863
meeting at Aberdeen to condemn Ku-Klux outrages ..... 861, 862
State Ku-Klux act of July 21, 1870, no convictions under ..... 861, 865
correctness of the report of testimony upon the *habeas corpus* trial, before Judge Hill ..... 865, 866
general treatment of northern settlers ..... 869–871
carpet-baggers and scalawags ..... 871
relative to the Loyal Leagues ..... 873
census and school statistics of the county ..... 874
value of real and personal property in Monroe County ..... 874, 875
ravages of the war; valuation of slave property ..... 875, 876
the cotton crop ..... 878
rejoicings upon the return of the prisoners from Oxford ..... 878, 879
whipping of William McMillan; Ku-Klux letters ..... 880
concerning the judiciary ..... 882
State legislation relative to negroes ..... 883
Dr. Compton said to have been an officer in the Ku-Klux order ..... 884

Page.
Gibson, Dr., mob under lead of ..... 459, 460
Gladney, George, whipping of ..... 484, 494, 638, 647
Glass, Mr., charged with killing Bully Jack ..... 576, 578
Gleed, Robert, character of ..... 1056, 1057
GLEED, ROBERT, (colored,) testimony of ..... 718–728
resident of Lowndes County; senator from the eighteenth district; in the State since 1865 ..... 718
received a Ku-Klux letter ..... 718
killing of Mason and Dick Malone; men severely whipped ..... 719
colored woman whipped ..... 719, 720
school broken up ..... 720
operations of Ku-Klux in Lowndes and Monroe Counties ..... 720, 721
difficulty in bringing them to justice; democratic opposition to the Ku-Klux act ..... 721
effect of the passage of the State Ku-Klux act; purposes of the Ku-Klux order ..... 722
the Tuscaloosa Monitor on leading or intelligent negroes ..... 724
what is thought by the negroes of democratic colored voters ..... 725, 726
Glenn, Edmund, whipping of ..... 1155
Glenn, John, whipping of ..... 1154
Government of the United States, feeling toward ..... 193, 704
Graham, Andy, whipping of ..... 1154
Grant, John, identified by Smith ..... 571
Grand Gulf and Port Gibson Railroad Company discharged employés for voting republican ticket ..... 318
GRAY, EDMUND, (colored,) testimony of ..... 894–895
resident of Lowndes County ..... 894
whipping of Jim Hicks ..... 894, 895
Grayson, Ellen, killing of son of:
Davis's account of ..... 475
Jarnagin's account of ..... 518, 519
Rives's account of ..... 552, 262
Smith's account of ..... 573, 574
Clay's account of ..... 606, 607
Rice's account of ..... 609–619
Green, Tillman, whipping of ..... 1087, 1095
Gregory, Peter, killing of ..... 513, 547, 587
Greyer, Henry, whipping of ..... 256
Gully, John W., testimony concerning ..... 248, 250, 252, 255, 256, 258, 262–265

H.

HAIRSTON, JOSHUA, (colored,) testimony of ..... 798–803
resident of Lowndes County ..... 798
was shot at by William Moore, (colored) ..... 798, 799
whipping of Thompson ..... 799, 800
Hairston, Joshua, shot at ..... 798, 799, 1039
Hall, Henry, identified by Flint ..... 804
Halliday, Dick, whipping of ..... 772
Hanson, Henry, shooting of ..... 1151
Hargrove, A. H., shot at by negro ..... 1042, 1043
HARRISON, JAMES T., testimony of ..... 1180–1183
resident of Columbus; a lawyer ..... 1180
character of H. B. Whitfield; his money affairs ..... 1180–1183
Harston, ———, whipping of ..... 395, 423
Hatch, Henry, turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ..... 278, 279, 291, 295, 773, 774
Hatch, Henry, forced to join Ku-Klux ..... 809
Hickman, Rufus, whipping of ..... 587
HICKS, JAMES, (colored,) testimony of ..... 891–893
resident of Lowndes County; lived near Caledonia ..... 891
whipping of witness and his wife; recognized Mr. Darden and Mr. Burton ..... 891
had a difficulty with Billy Darden and was shot at by him ..... 892, 893
his meal poisoned ..... 893
Hicks, James, shot at by Darden ..... 892, 893, 1083
Hicks, James, and wife, whipping of:
his own account of ..... 891
Whitfield's account of ..... 417, 445
Galloway's account of ..... 671, 672
Turner's account of ..... 773

Page.
Hicks, James, and wife, whipping of—Continued.
Gray's account of ... 894, 895
Perkins's account of ... 900
Humphries's account of ... 1038
Higgins, Jesse, compelled to leave home ... 992
Higgins, Jesse, whipping of ... 1154
Higgins, John, indicted for whipping Aleck Hughes ... 551
Highs, shooting of Mr. Freeman by the ... 839
Hinton, Eliza, whipping of ... 473, 1154
Holloway, Rev. Mr., ordered to stop preaching ... 283
HOLMAN, EDWARD E., testimony of ... 342–358
twenty-six years of age; farmer; resident of Holly Springs for nineteen years; member of grand jury at Oxford for trial of Ku-Klux ... 342
disguised men, operations of ... 342, 348
disguised men, disguise used by bands of ... 343, 357
disguised men, character of members of bands of ... 350
disguised men, no convictions by State courts for acts of ... 350
disguised men, negroes forced to join bands of ... 351, 357
Oxford trials of Ku-Klux ... 342, 348
Oxford trials interrupted by Colonel Lamar ... 348
colored men killed ... 345
colored men whipped ... 344, 346
whipping of Eckels, (Echols) ... 342, 351
whipping of McLachlan for teaching colored school ... 350, 357
threatening Warmouth, (white) ... 344, 351, 357
killing of Solomon Triplett, (colored) ... 346, 347
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ... 356, 357
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ... 357
Joe Davis, (colored,) turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ... 356
witnesses intimidated, &c ... 349, 350
behavior of colored people ... 351
opposition to free schools, &c ... 348, 350, 352, 354, 355
colored schools in Pontotoc County broken up ... 352, 357
school system, school-tax, &c ... 352–356
Honeysuckle, Fanny, whipping of ... 340
Hopkins, ———, killing of ... 225, 242
Homberger, Thomas, killing of ... 281, 360, 780, 781, 787, 848, 866, 867, 879
Hotcher, Jane, whipping of ... 1156
HUGGINS, A. P., testimony of ... 265–298, 820–828
resident of Aberdeen; born in Ohio and partly raised in Michigan; served in Union Army from private to lieutenant colonel ... 265
officer for eighteen months of Freedmen's Bureau ... 265, 290
from May, 1870, assistant assessor of internal revenue, and from August, 1870, superintendent of public schools for Monroe County ... 265, 290
went to Mississippi and engaged in planting ... 266
refused admission into Baptist church at Aberdeen ... 266, 267
republican in politics ... 267
sheriff for six weeks for election under General Ames ... 267, 287, 290
attacked and whipped by disguised men ... 271–276, 293, 295
disguised men first appeared in August, 1870 ... 268
disguised men, disguise of men and horses of bands of ... 274, 275, 278
disguised men, majority of people sympathize with ... 286, 287
disguised men, republicans denounce acts of ... 286
disguised men, democrats and confederate soldiers in bands of ... 286, 287
Sanders Flint and two sons (colored) taken from jail and the two sons murdered ... 268, 269
Sanders Flint, murderers of the two sons of, tried and acquitted ... 269, 292, 294
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ... 270, 280
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ... 278, 279
killing of Abraham Wamble, (colored) ... 280, 296
killing of Tom Hornberger, (colored) ... 281
old colored man whipped and made to promise to vote the democratic ticket ... 269
whipping of colored men not named ... 278
whipping of Alfred Whitfield, (colored) ... 269, 270
whipping of Alfred Skinner, (colored) ... 278
whipping of Aleck Stewart, (colored) ... 277
whipping of Peter ———, (colored) ... 281
whipping of ——— Farmer, (white,) teacher of colored school ... 277
whipping of Cornelius McBride, (white,) teacher of colored school ... 284

HUGGINS, A. P., tetimony of—Continued. Page.
Rev. Mr. Holloway, Congregationalist preacher, ordered to stop preaching ... 283
Rev. D. McLachlan, Methodist preacher, driven off ... 283
school system, school-tax, &c ... 266, 284, 288, 289
school-teachers forced to stop teaching ... 282, 283
collection of school-tax in Monroe County stopped by Ku-Klux ... 266, 284
collection of school-tax in Lowndes County stopped by Ku-Klux ... 285, 297
members of school board ordered by Ku-Klux to resign ... 281
school-houses burned ... 283
Oxford trials of Ku-Klux ... 278, 279, 291, 293, 298
Oxford trials interrupted by Colonel Lamar ... 297, 298
Joe Davis, (colored,) turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ... 270, 278, 279, 280, 291, 295
Henry Hatch, (colored,) turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ... 278, 279, 291, 295
persons killed or whipped in Lowndes County ... 285
Lieutenant Governor Powers attacked in Noxubee County ... 286
outrages in Chickasaw County ... 286
behavior of colored people ... 298
disfranchisement by reconstruction laws ... 289
Miss Allen could not procure board in a white family because she taught a colored school; she was visited by Ku-Klux and compelled to discontinue her school ... 820
sympathy manifested for the persons implicated in outrages ... 820, 821
hanging of Dock Hendricks ... 821, 822
killing of Tobe Hutchinson ... 822, 823
colored church burned at Tupelo, October, 1871; outrages upon Miss Anna Davis ... 823
assessor's office at Okolona fired ... 824
his attempted arrest by the sheriff of Oktibbeha County, on a charge of conspiring to take away the liberties and rights of Mrs. Ada Bell ... 824–826
relative to purchase of school furniture ... 828
Huggins, A. P., attack upon:
his own ... 271–276, 293, 295
French's account of ... 14
Sessions's ... 213
McBride's ... 299, 316, 339
Little's ... 360, 362
Baskervill's ... 385, 396, 397
Whitfield's account of ... 430, 435
Pickett's ... 460, 463
Power's ... 587
Lee's ... 787
Gholson's ... 845, 846, 879
Reynold's ... 905, 906, 919
Stone's ... 1022
Wells's ... 1152
Huggins, A. P, extravagant expenditures for school purposes by ... 901, 914–917, 919, 920
Huggins, A. P., relative to testimony of, in the case of Aleck Stewart ... 907
Huggins, A. P., character of ... 1165
Hughes, Aleck, whipping of ... 340, 473, 474, 512, 1153
Hughes, Jim Boyd, identified by Coleman ... 488
HUMPHRIES, ABRAM S, testimony of ... 1185–1186
resident of Columbus; merchant, banker, and planter ... 1185
Mr. Arnold visited by fifteen or twenty men and compelled to do justice to a negro ... 1186
Humphries, Charles, killing of Mr. McDaniel by ... 1040
Hunnicutt, Catharine and John, shooting of ... 1074, 1075, 1078, 1157, 1158
HUMPHRIES, WILLIAM W., jr., testimony of ... 1037–1073
resident of Lowndes County; a lawyer ... 1037
was in confederate army ... 1058
whipping of Seaton and Reynolds ... 1037, 1038
whipping of James Hicks ... 1038
killing of Mason ... 1038, 1039
contradiction of Mr. Whitfield's testimony; Hairston shot at ... 1039
hanging of Joe Beckwith; disturbance of court by Mr. Doss; killing of McDaniel by Charles Humphries; whipping of Thomas McGaughey by negroes, 1040
Fernandez Pope fired at by Solomon Shaw; Winston beaten by George Triplet; Hughes shot by a negro ... 1041
Melton Odeneal shot by a negro, Jim Sherman ... 1041, 1042

Page.
HUMPHRIES WILLIAM W., jr., testimony of—Continued.
Dick Lamp denounced and cursed; George Young, democratic negro, taken out and whipped by negroes; negro shot for voting the democratic ticket; Frank Blake beaten for being a democrat; Bowler shot while resisting arrest, 1042
A. H. Hargrove shot at by a negro ..... 1042, 1043
Mormon, democratic negro, threatened with a whipping; Wylie Johnson and Moses Randall discharged from the police for voting the democratic ticket; Judge J. A. Orr's letter of instruction to the sheriff in the case of Hugh Lee, 1043
verdict of the jury of inquest of Lee ..... 1044
killing of Mace Cox ..... 1045, 1046
great stealing of stock; 1,500 indicted ..... 1046
character of the judiciary ..... 1047
intimidation of democratic voters ..... 1048
rejection by sub-committee of written statement relative to intimidation and the enforcement of the law ..... 1048, 1049
opinion of the democratic party in reference to the system of free schools ..... 1049
relative to taxation ..... 1049–1051
character of Henry B. Whitfield ..... 1051, 1052, 1067, 1068
discussion in sub committee as to the admissibility of the indictment against Whitfield: its rejection by the committee ..... 1052, 1053
other testimony ruled out by sub-committee ..... 1053–1055
relative to the character of General Eggleston ..... 1055–1057
character of Gleed ..... 1056, 1057
indorses the opinion of the grand jury as to the present condition of affairs ..... 1057
Joseph F. Galloway ordered to discontinue his school ..... 1059
whipping of Joe Turner ..... 1060
witness's knowledge of the Ku-Klux ..... 1061–1066, 1067
Native Sons of the South ..... 1062, 1063
society of "Seventy-six;" "The Union Club" ..... 1067
relative to the abstraction of a deposition from the files of the court, and the substitution of another by witness ..... 1069–1072
Humphries, W. W., character of ..... 1110, 1113
abstraction and substitution of deposition by, his own account of ..... 1069–1072
Lyon's account of ..... 1119, 1125–1129
Hutchinson, Tobe, taken by Ku-Klux and not since heard from ..... 787, 822, 823, 1028

I.

Intimidation of witnesses in Noxubee County ..... 478, 588, 628
in Carroll County ..... 588
Irion, George, whipping of ..... 672

J.

Jack, Bully, killing of:
Baskervill's account of ..... 386, 396
Davis's account of ..... 472
Jarnagin's account of ..... 515, 516
Rives's account of ..... 550
Campbell's account of ..... 576, 578, 579, 581
Powers's account of ..... 585, 587
Orr's account of ..... 707
Jackson, Robert, whipping of ..... 480, 514
JACOBSON, E. P., testimony of ..... 53–60
resident of Vicksburgh and United States district attorney for northern district of Mississippi ..... 53
execution of the laws ..... 53, 55, 56, 57
disguised men, operations, &c., of ..... 54, 57, 58, 59
Meridian riot ..... 55
attack on McLaughlin, (McLachlan) ..... 54
freedom of political opinions ..... 55
democratic negroes ..... 59
outrages by persons from Alabama ..... 60
JARNAGIN, HAMPTON L., testimony of ..... 513–544
resident of Noxubee County; a lawyer ..... 513
an old-line whig: would have voted for Seymour and Blair ..... 543
whipping of Betsey Lucas and Robert Jackson ..... 514
his version of the driving away of families from Mr. May's place ..... 514, 515
killing of Bully Jack ..... 515, 516
killing of Sam May ..... 515, 540

JARNAGIN, HAMPTON L., testimony of—Continued. Page.
killing of Ellen Grayson's son; his previous confinement in an out-house by Bridges ..... 518, 519
killing of a man near Brooksville ..... 519
Mr. Reed, agent for the Southern Express Company, suspected of robbing the office; his trial by court-martial ..... 519, 520
case of Yerger, charged with killing Mr. Crane ..... 520, 521
killing of Mr. Wissler ..... 521–523
Mr. Shipley burned to death by kerosene by Mr. Wissler ..... 523–526
character and standing of J. S. Taliaferro ..... 527
several churches and schools burned ..... 528, 539
county taxation and its expenditure ..... 528, 529, 531, 532, 535, 536–538
negro suffrage acquiesced in ..... 529, 530
court broken up by Mr. Doss ..... 530
killing of Mr. Lee at a negro meeting in Artesia ..... 530, 531
burning of Dr. Rosser's cribs and stables, Dr. Foster's store, Coleman's store, W. P. Connor's gin-house, Dr. Mooror's dwelling, and Cockrell's house ... 531
destruction of property during the war ..... 531, 532
increase of county and State officers and of salaries ..... 532–534
number and value of slaves in the county before the war ..... 534, 535
depreciation of real estate ..... 537
witness's knowledge of the Ku-Klux ..... 540, 541
the practical difficulty in discovering the perpetrators of outrages ..... 541
the colored people have generally behaved very well ..... 542
article from the Macon Beacon, May 14, 1870, entitled "Ku-Klux;" witness generally concurs in it ..... 543
Jenkins, Mr., charged with killing Lewis Jordan ..... 577, 582
Jerry ———, killing of ..... 496
Job, Zach, whipping of ..... 340
Johnson, Wylie, discharged for voting the democratic ticket ..... 1043
Jordan, Lewis, killing of ..... 577, 582
Judiciary of the State, character of ..... 593, 1047
Juries, composition, &c., of ..... 322, 692, 693, 931, 932

K.

Keitt, Johnson, killing of ..... 474
Kemper County, census of ..... 585
killed in: brother of Matt Duncan, George Evans—2; whipped in: Thomas W. Adams, Henry Greyer, Rufus Hickman—3; shot in: Captain Rush—1.
Kendricks, Wat, ordered to leave ..... 664
Kennon, Mrs. Martha, ordered to quit teaching ..... 1081
KENNON, WOODSON H., JR., testimony of ..... 693–697
resident of Lowndes County; warehousing; lost an arm in the confederate service; native of the South; was assistant teacher in a public school ..... 693
a democrat ..... 696
was visited by disguised men April, 1871, and ordered to discontinue his school, which he did ..... 693, 694
objection made to schools on account of tax ..... 694, 695
character of the disguises worn ..... 695
Kidd, John, and son identified by Turner ..... 771
Killings:
Atkins, Ab, (colored,) Monroe County, spring of 1871 ..... 361
Bailey, Drury, (colored,) Chickasaw County, July, 1871 ..... 1029, 1030
Bird, Allen, (colored,) Winston County, July, 1871 ..... 486, 495, 587
Rives's account of ..... 656, 658
Sheriff Metts's account of ..... 643–646
Judge Orr's account of ..... 698, 708, 709
Brown, Mr., Noxubee County, 1868 ..... 563
Brookhaven, mayor of ..... 302
Cherry, Mr., Winston County, 1871 ..... 657
Chestnut, Charles, (colored,) Noxubee County, January, 1871 ..... 226
Coger, (Koger,) Sam, (colored,) Noxubee County, March, 1870 ..... 224, 227, 241, 242, 471
Cole, ———, (colored,) Lauderdale County, October, 1871 ..... 589
Cox, Mace, (colored,) Lowndes County ..... 1045, 1046
Diggs, ———, mail-agent, (colored,) State line ..... 74
Dillard, Mr., Pontotoc County, May, 1871 ..... 1088, 1101, 1104, 1105
Duncan, Matt, brother of, (colored,) Kemper County, May, 1869 ..... 584

Page.

Killings:
Dupree, Jack, (colored,) Monroe County, spring of 1871:
Huggins's account of ..... 270, 280
McBride's account of ..... 339
Holman's account of ..... 356, 357
Little's account of ..... 360, 362
Whitfield's account of ..... 435
Pickett's account of ..... 462
Turner's account of ..... 773, 774
Lee's account of ..... 786
Davis's account of ..... 808, 809
Gholson's account of ..... 829, 847, 879
Reynolds's account of ..... 903, 927
Evans, George, Kemper County, May, 1871 ..... 583, 584, 633, 634, 794
Flint, Joseph and Willis, (colored,) Monroe County, 1870:
Chisholm's account of ..... 263
Huggins's account of ..... 269
Little's account of ..... 359
Lee's account of ..... 786
Flint's account of ..... 803–806
Gholson's account of ..... 843, 844, 860, 861, 879
Anderson's account of ..... 1138, 1144
Garrett, Mr., Monroe County, October, 1871 ..... 836–839, 868, 879, 911, 1143
Grayson, Ellen, son of, (colored,) Noxubee County, June 1871:
Davis's account of ..... 475
Jarnagin's account of ..... 518, 519
Rives's account of ..... 552, 562
Smith's account of ..... 573, 574
Clay's account of ..... 606, 607
Rice's account of ..... 609–619
Gregory, Peter, (colored,) Noxubee County, October, 1871 ..... 513, 547, 587
Hendricks, Dock, (Dick,) (colored,) Monroe County, October, 1871:
Lee's account of ..... 787
Flint's account of ..... 807
Huggins's account of ..... 822, 823
Gholson's account of ..... 836–839, 868, 879
Reynolds's account of ..... 911
Anderson's account of ..... 1143
Hopkins, ———, (colored,) Noxubee County, April, 1871 ..... 225, 242
Hornberger, Thomas, (colored,) Monroe County, April, 1871 ..... 281, 360, 780, 781, 787, 848, 866, 867, 879
Hutchinson, Tobe, (colored,) Lee County, November, 1871 ..... 787, 822, 823, 1028
Jack, Bully, (colored,) Noxubee County, July, 1870:
Baskervill's account of ..... 386, 396
Davis's account of ..... 472
Jarnagin's account of ..... 515, 516
Rives's account of ..... 550
Campbell's account of ..... 576, 578, 579, 581
Powers's account of ..... 585, 587
Orr's account of ..... 707
Jerry, ———, (colored,) Winston County, 1869 ..... 496
Jordan, Lewis, (colored,) Noxubee County, 1866 ..... 577, 582
Keitt, Johnson, (colored,) Winston County, March, 1871 ..... 474
Keyser, (Krizer,) colored, Lauderdale County, 1870 ..... 3, 112, 114, 116
Lee, Hugh, Lowndes County, October, 1871:
Algood's account of ..... 505
Jarnagin's account of ..... 530, 531
Rives's account of ..... 556, 557
Powers's account of ..... 601–603
Lewis's account of ..... 680–692
Orr's account of ..... 711–718
Nelson's account of ..... 895–899
Brothers's account of ..... 1001–1017
Bliss's account of ..... 1030–1036
Perkins's account of ..... 1167–1171
Lewis, Isaiah, (colored,) Noxubee County, May, 1871 ..... 1156
Malone, Dick, (colored,) Noxubee County, March, 1870:
Taliaferro's account of ..... 225, 242
Baskervill's account of ..... 376, 394, 395

Page.

Killings:
Malone, Dick, (colored)—Continued.
Whitfield's account of ..... 426
Davis's account of ..... 471, 472
Rives's account of ..... 550
Campbell's account of ..... 581
Powers's account of ..... 587
Carpenter's account of ..... 619
Orr's account of ..... 700, 701
Gleed's account of ..... 719
Mason, ———, (colored,) Lowndes County, December, 1870 ..... 423, 719, 1038, 1039
May, Samuel, (colored,) Noxubee County, 1871 ..... 515, 540, 573, 587
Mayfield, Jesse, (colored,) Monroe County, April, 1871 ..... 462
McDaniel, Mr., Lowndes County ..... 1040
McGauhey, Thomas, Lowndes County ..... 1040
Murph, George, (colored,) Winston County, 1869 ..... 512, 513, 642, 657
Nevelle, Samuel, (see Grayson, Ellen.)
Page, Aleck, (colored,) Monroe County, March, 1871:
Huggin's account of ..... 278, 279
McBride's account of ..... 339
Holman's account of ..... 357
Little's account of ..... 360, 362
Whitfield's account of ..... 435
Pickett's account of ..... 462
Turner's account of ..... 773, 774
Rose's account of ..... 780, 781
Lee's account of ..... 780
Davis's account of ..... 810, 811
Gholson's account of ..... 829–834, 848, 879
Reynolds's account of ..... 927–929
Plair, (Muse,) John, (colored,) Oktibbeha County, April, 1871 ..... 990–992
Shipley, Mr., Noxubee County, November, 1871 ..... 480, 481, 506, 523-526, 1162–1164
Thomas, Jesse, (colored,) Winston County, 1865 ..... 639
Trailer, Mr., Monroe County, October, 1869 ..... 1143, 1147
Triplett, Solomon, (colored,) Winston County, December, 1870:
Holman's account of ..... 346, 347
Whitfield's account of ..... 432, 433
Davis's account of ..... 474
Coleman's account of ..... 486
Anderson's account of ..... 512
Triplett's account of ..... 545, 546
Powers's account of ..... 587
Metts's account of ..... 638, 639, 646, 647
Wells's account of ..... 1150, 1151
Turner, ———, (colored,) Alcorn County, March, 1871 ..... 1152, 1155, 1156
Wamble, Abram, (colored,) Monroe County, April or May, 1871:
Huggins's account of ..... 280, 296
Little's account of ..... 361
Rose's account of ..... 780, 781
Lee's account of ..... 787
Davis's account of ..... 811
Gholson's account of ..... 834, 867, 879
Reynolds's account of ..... 908, 927
Williams, ———, Alcorn County, March, 1871 ..... 1153
Williams, Joseph, (colored,) Lauderdale County, November, 1870, 74, 102, 114, 116, 125, 165, 166, 185, 191, 199, 200
Wissler, Mr., Noxubee County, November, 1871:
Davis's account of ..... 476
Algood's account of ..... 501, 506
Jarnagin's account of ..... 521–523
Wells's account of ..... 1164, 1165
Yarborough, Nelson, (colored,) Winston county ..... 641, 657
Names not given:
Alcorn County ..... 1153
Lauderdale County ..... 587, 589, 793, 794, 796
Lowndes County ..... 345, 589, 774, 775
Monroe County ..... 676, 677, 780, 781, 784, 785, 807
Noxubee County ..... 224, 426, 475, 476, 505, 519, 579, 587, 627
Oktibbeha County ..... 590, 702, 709–711, 989

Page.

Killings:
Names not given—Continued.
Tishemingo County ..... 1153
Winston County ..... 230
Koger, Sam., (see Coger, Sam.)
KOLB, WILLIAM B., testimony of ..... 1080–1083
resident of Lowndes County; a mechanic; taught a public school ..... 1080
received a Ku-Klux notice ordering him to discontinue teaching, which he did ..... 1080, 1081
A. L. Myers, Ruffin Webb, Mrs. Martha Kennon, and J. F. Galloway notified .. 1081
Jim Hicks shot at by Mr. Darden ..... 1083
whipping of Frank Cockerman ..... 1081, 1083
Ku-Klux, Taliaferro's acknowledgments as to ..... 476, 477
Algood's views of ..... 504
Jarnagin's knowledge of ..... 540, 541
Rives's knowledge of ..... 564, 565, 567–569
Powers's knowledge of ..... 586, 587, 592, 595
Carpenter's views of ..... 622–625
Dismukes's views of ..... 634, 635
Lee's views of ..... 788
Yates's views of ..... 795
Gholson's knowledge of ..... 854–860, 863
Reynolds's knowledge of ..... 925–927, 929, 933
Humphries's knowledge of ..... 1061–1067
Clark's investigations of, in Tippah County ..... 1086, 1088, 1089, 1094–1096, 1099
Anderson's knowledge of, in Monroe County ..... 1138, 1139, 1141, 1145
result of Wall's investigation of ..... 1148–1150, 1152, 1157–1160
character of disguises worn by ..483, 484, 571, 584, 663, 667, 695, 771, 778, 810, 815, 889, 890
no pretext for its existence in the State ..... 593–595
no arrests, convictions, &c., for outrages of ..... 488, 546, 548, 562, 574, 582, 678, 702, 781
effect upon negroes of ..... 502, 1029, 1151
confessions of ..... 1075, 1076, 1079
difficulty in discovering and bringing to justice of ..... 541, 591, 702, 706, 721
purposes of ..... 558, 564, 565, 567, 569, 578, 703, 710, 711, 722
letters and notices of ..... 573, 580, 581, 718, 880, 1080
inability of State courts to deal with ..... 591, 697, 703, 705
operations of ..... 720, 721
confession of Tabbs as to ..... 782, 783
method of operating of ..... 813
republicans and colored men the victims of ..... 286, 311
sympathy with ..... 286, 287, 382, 461, 797, 820, 821
(for further particulars see Disguised men.)
Ku-Klux act, democratic opposition to ..... 722
cause of opposition to ..... 930, 931
Ku-Klux trial, full report of the great, (see Oxford.)

L.

Lagronnes, arrest for the killing of a negro of two of the ..... 780, 784, 784, 785
Lamar, Colonel, disturbance in court at Oxford by ... 297, 298, 348, 850, 857, 910, 911, 1160–1162
Lamp, Dick, denounced and cursed ..... 1042
Lauderdale County, killings in ..... 587, 589, 793, 794, 796
numbers driven from ..... 589
killed in: —— Cole, —— Keyser, Joseph Wiliams—3. [For pages, see names.]
Lawrence, Manuel, whipping of ..... 1155
Laws, (see Execution of.)
Leachman, Judge, investigation of, (see Meridian riot.)
Leadbetter, Henry, whipping of ..... 340
League, Loyal, organization of in Noxubee County ..... 556, 558–570
Dismukes's views as to ..... 634, 635
Gholson's ..... 873
Leake, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 676
Lee County, churches burned in ..... 823, 912, 922, 1166
school-houses burned in ..... 1021
killed in: Tobe Hutchinson—1. [For page, see name.]
Lee, Hugh, killing of:
Algood's account of ..... 505
Jarnagin's account of ..... 530, 532

Page.
Lee, Hugh, killing of—Continued.
Rives's account of ..... 556, 557
Powers's account of, ..... 601–603
Lewis's account of ..... 680–692
Orr's account of ..... 711–718
Nelson's account of ..... 895–899
Brothers's account of ..... 1001–1017
Bliss's account of ..... 1030–1036
Perkins's account of ..... 1167–1171
verdict of jury in case of ..... 1044
LEE, JAMES W., testimony of ..... 785–792
mayor of Aberdeen, since April 1, 1871; was selectman ..... 785
Saunders Flint and his two sons taken from the Athens jail by disguised men; he makes his escape, the other two killed; killing of Jack Dupree and Aleck Page ..... 786
killing of Hornberger, Abe Wamble, Dock Hendricks; Hutchinson taken out and not since heard from; whipping of Mr. Huggins ..... 787
witness's view as to the Ku-Klux organization ..... 788
meeting at Aberdeen in opposition to the Ku-Klux ..... 789, 791
concerning disabilities ..... 791, 792
LEWIS, HIRAM W., testimony of ..... 675–693
resident of Lowndes County; a planter; sheriff-elect; came from Ohio three years and a half ago ..... 675
Mr. Farmer and Mr. Leake ordered to discontinue their schools ..... 676
negro taken from the custody of a constable by masked men and hung and shot ..... 676, 677
Mr. Phillips ordered to discontinue his school ..... 677
society of the Native Sons of the South, obligation, &c., of ..... 677, 678, 679, 691
six or eight cases of whipping in the county; objects of the Ku-Klux; no one brought to justice ..... 678
course of the democratic press relative to the Ku-Klux organization; bitter feeling toward white republicans from the north ..... 679
its effect upon immigration; sentiment of the democratic whites as to colored education; concerning the school system ..... 680
disturbance at Artesia; killing of Mr. Lee, and subsequent proceedings ..... 680–692
composition of juries ..... 692, 693
Lewis, Isaiah, killing of ..... 1156
LITTLE, FINIS H., testimony of ..... 358–374
resident of Aberdeen ..... 358
lived in Aberdeen four years; farmer and merchant; member of the State senate ..... 366
born and raised in Kentucky, and went from Kentucky to Mississippi ..... 367
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 358, 365
disguised men, character of members of bands of ..... 366
disguised men, feeling of community toward ..... 363
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins, (white) ..... 360, 362
whipping of Cornelius McBride, (white) ..... 365
killing of two sons of Sanders Flint, (colored) ..... 359
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ..... 360, 362
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ..... 360, 362
killing of Abe Wamble, (colored) ..... 361
shooting of Ab. Atkins, (colored) ..... 361
whipping of William McMillan, (colored) ..... 358
whipping of Joseph Atkins, (colored) ..... 361
whipping of Santee Butler, (colored) ..... 361, 362
Oxford trial of Ku-Klux ..... 362
trial and acquittal of murderers of sons of Sanders Flint ..... 360, 362
riot at Meridian ..... 365
behavior of colored people ..... 364, 366
school-tax, &c ..... 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374
opposition to free schools ..... 364, 366, 370, 373
schools broken up ..... 358, 364
school-houses burned ..... 363
school-tax not levied, by order of Ku-Klux ..... 367
concerning Union League ..... 374
Louisville, meeting to condemn Ku-Klux in ..... 648, 649
Lowndes County, killings in ..... 345, 589, 774, 775
whippings in ..... 672, 678, 719, 720, 772, 900
sentiment of the democrats as to education of negroes in ..... 680

Page.

Lowndes County—Continued.
schools broken up in ..... 676, 720, 899
school-system and taxation in ..... 728–751, 757, 758, 760–762, 1172–1175
the Ku-Klux order the refunding of school-tax in ..... 285, 297
circular of school superintendent of ..... 453–459
killed in: Mace Cox, Hugh Lee, ——— Mason, Mr. McDaniel, Thomas McGaughey—5; shooting of: Mr. Bowler—1; shot at: Edward Carter, Joshua Hairston, A. H. Hargrove, Jim Hicks, Fernandez Pope—5; whipped in: Joseph Allen, Frank Blake, Frank Cockerman, H. W. Farmer, Dick Holliday, ——— Harston, Jim Hicks and wife, George Irion, Alfred Murphy, Edward Murphy, ——— Reynolds, Aleck Stewart, ——— Thompson, Joseph Turner, James Vernon, Robert Willis—17. (For pages, see names elsewhere.)
Lowry, Isham, whipping of ..... 395, 425, 473, 619, 620
Lucas, Betsey, whipping of ..... 469, 470, 514, 548, 558, 1154
LYON, THEODORIC L., testimony of ..... 1115–1129
resident of Columbus; chancellor of the fifth district ..... 1115
character of H. B. Whitfield, and relative to his money matters ..... 1115–1125
character and standing of W. W. Humphries; alleged forgery and substitution of deposition by him ..... 1119, 1125–1129

M.

Malone, Dick, killing of:
Taliaferro's account of ..... 225, 242
Baskervill's account of ..... 376, 394, 395
Whitfield's account of ..... 426
Davis's account of ..... 471, 472
Rives's account of ..... 550
Campbell's account of ..... 581
Powers's account of ..... 587
Carpenter's account of ..... 619
Orr's account of ..... 700, 701
Gleed's account of ..... 719
Malone, Thomas, forces Davis to join the Ku-Klux ..... 808
Marshall, ———, arrest of for the killing of a negro ..... 780, 781, 784, 785
Marshall, Click, identified by Flint ..... 804
Mask, Silas, (Willis,) whipping of ..... 1086, 1098, 1099, 1157
Mason, ———, killing of ..... 423, 719, 1038, 1039
MATTHEWS, BEVERLY, testimony of ..... 1175–1180
resident of Lowndes County; a lawyer ..... 1175
character of H. B. Whitfield and his business affairs ..... 1175–1180
May, Albert, whipping of ..... 1156
May, Mr., families driven from place of ..... 471, 514, 515, 549, 560
May, Sam, killing of ..... 515, 540, 573, 587
Maybray, George, whipping of ..... 1156
Mayfield, Jesse, killing of ..... 462
Mays, Pope, identified by Willis ..... 1184
McBride, Cornelius, whipping of ..... 284, 365, 437, 921, 1154
McBRIDE, CORNELIUS, testimony of ..... 325–342
resident of Sparta, Chickasaw County, for one year; resided in Oktibbeha County nearly one year; resided in Cincinnati, Ohio, before going to Mississippi; native of Belfast, Ireland; taught colored school, private, in Oktibbeha County, and public colored school and white Sunday-school in Chickasaw ..... 325
twenty-four years of age, and republican in politics ..... 328
taught colored school in Cincinnati; been in this country five years; not naturalized, and never have voted ..... 337
assisted marshal at Oxford ..... 337, 341
attacked and beaten ..... 326, 327, 328, 337, 338, 341
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 330, 332
disguised men, character of members of bands of ..... 338
disguised men, disguise worn by ..... 327, 328
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ..... 339
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ..... 339
whipping of Echols ———, (white) ..... 330
whipping of Rev. Mr. McLachlan, (white) ..... 333
whipping of Campbell ———, (white) ..... 340
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins, (white) ..... 339
whipping of colored men for buying land ..... 335, 336 339
whipping of William Coleman, (colored) ..... 335

Page.
McBRIDE, CORNELIUS, testimony of —Continued.
whipping of William Miller, (colored) ... 336, 340
whipping of Addy Foster, (colored) ... 339
whipping of Aleck Hughes, (colored) ... 340
whipping of Zach Job, (colored) ... 340
whipping of Henry Leadbetter, (colored) ... 340
whipping of George Shubble, (colored) ... 340
whipping of Fanny Honeysuckle, (colored) ... 340
Joe Davis (colored) turned State's evidence against Ku-Klux ... 332
colored republicans whipped ... 332
behavior of colored people ... 338
Oxford trials of Ku-Klux ... 333, 337, 341
Ku-Klux not punished by State courts ... 331, 340
freedom of political opinions ... 333
school system, teachers, &c ... 334, 335, 336, 338, 341, 342
opposition to free schools, &c ... 329, 332, 337, 340
teachers of colored schools threatened, &c ... 326–329
school-houses burned ... 326, 329, 330, 333
McClendon, (McKennon,) Mr., whipping of ... 849, 879, 909, 921
McCOY, JOHN, testimony of ... 1074–1080
resident of Corinth, Alcorn County; deputy United States marshal ... 1074
came from Kentucky; was an officer in the Union Army ... 1076
attempted rescue of prisoners in his custody by an armed band; firing of Colonel Shattuck's office ... 1074, 1077
Widow Hunnicut's house fired into and the shooting of John and Catharine Hunnicut by disguised men ... 1074, 1075, 1078
capture of the lieutenant of the band and his confessions as to the Ku-Klux order; character of Miss Davis ... 1075
capture of seven of the Ku-Klux in Tishemingo County; three of them, John Whittaker and two of the Reynolds boys, made acknowledgments ... 1076, 1079
shooting of Sam Meeks ... 1075, 1078
McDaniel, Mr., killing of ... 1040
McElhaneys, identification by Coleman of two of the ... 1151
McGauhey, Thomas, whipping of ... 1040
McLachlan, Mr., notified to leave ... 993
McLachlan, Mr., store broken open and he forced to leave ... 54, 283, 333, 350, 357, 436, 993–997, 1103
McMillan, Samuel, shot at ... 484
McMillan, William, whipping of ... 358, 880
Meeks, Samuel, shooting of ... 1075, 1078
Meridian, riot at ... 6–12, 16, 17, 55, 63, 66, 67, 68, 70, 71, 72, 73, 78, 96, 99, 103, 107, 168, &c., 205, 206, 209, 210, 211, 220, 221, 222, 254, 302, 365
William Sturgis, mayor of ... 7, 66, 69, 77, 97, 99, 111, 112
Price, ———, in connection with riot at ... 8, 17, 63, 64, 65, 77, 79, 97, 100, 102, 109, 111, 119, 120, 168, 169, 179, 180, 181, 182, 187, 188, 189, 203, 205, 210, 220
William Dennis, *alias* Clopton, (colored,) in connection with riot at ... 9, 10, 11, 14, 66, 67, 68, 71, 72, 78, 97, 98, 99, 102, 106, 107, 113, 114, 116, 117, 121, 171, 172, 173, 178, 190, 192, 196, 204
Warren Tyler (colored,) in connection with riot at ... 9, 10, 66, 70, 71, 72, 97, 98, 99, 107, 113, 114, 116, 170, 171, 173–177, 180, 182, 189, 190, 191, 194, 210, 211, 220, 222
J. Aaron Moore, representative, (colored,) in connection with riot at ... 9, 10, 17, 20, 66, 70, 72, 97, 98, 113, 116, 171, 173, 254
Adam Kennard (colored,) in connection with riot at ... 8, 17, 19, 63, 64, 77, 100, 112, 168, 180, 181, 182, 187, 188, 202, 205, 206, 209, 210, 220
diagram of floor of court-room at ... 174
burning of Sturgis's store at ... 7, 67, 97, 105, 106, 171, 185, 195, 199
burning of house of J. Aaron Moore ... 72, 99, 106, 124, 178, 185, 199, 200, 221
burning of colored church at ... 72, 99, 105, 106, 124, 178, 185, 200, 204, 221
hanging of three men at ... 7, 10, 71, 99, 108, 117, 179, 184, 198, 200, 204, 221, 222
investigation by Judge Leachman of riot at ... 127–164
testimony of—
Allen, Thomas ... 151
Andrews, Ann ... 139
Barbour, Harriet ... 140
Bass, Frederick ... 130
Belk, L. D ... 137, 161
Berry, H. N ... 157
Cameron, J. A ... 161
Carter, J. A ... 154

Page.

Meridian—Continued.
Testimony of—
Charles, J. O ..... 160
Christy, John ..... 144
Clements, Nathan ..... 146
Cole, Ann ..... 146
Cole, Chanie ..... 145
Cole, John ..... 143
Cole, J. W ..... 148
Cole, Mary ..... 145
Coleman, T. W ..... 163
Coldman, Wiley ..... 150
Covert, G. S ..... 156
Culty, Mary ..... 155
Davis, Jefferson ..... 147
Dodd, Mrs. L. C ..... 161
Duck, J. L ..... 153
Early, E. V ..... 164
Evans, Thomas ..... 152
Evans, W. P ..... 163
Fairly, Peter ..... 144
Finley, Dred ..... 135
Flournoy, J. G ..... 154
Ford, W. C ..... 161
France, Ben ..... 133
Freideritce, A. G ..... 155
Hancock, R. T ..... 160
Henderson, R. L ..... 151
Hobson, Lemuel ..... 129
Hodges, Hurlburt ..... 159
Hodges, Nelson ..... 129, 132
Homer, Tim ..... 147
Horn, Jesse ..... 160
Howlett, Mrs. J. C ..... 163
Kerlee, L. H ..... 152
Kline, J. D ..... 156
Leachman, Judge; order of ..... 164
Levy, Felix ..... 154
Lily, T. A ..... 139
Long, John ..... 143
McAlpine, A. M ..... 163
McCormick, T. A ..... 158
McDonald, J. A ..... 149
McElroy, Charles ..... 140
McMullen, J. W ..... 152
Martin, James ..... 153
Maron, George ..... 141
Maron, Harry ..... 141
Maron, Louise ..... 145
Merriman, L. B ..... 155
Mitchell, Alex ..... 159
Moore, George ..... 145, 162
Moseley, R. J ..... 134, 162
Parker, Samuel ..... 128, 141
Patton, W. S ..... 127, 136
Payne, W. A ..... 158
Pelton, Thomas J ..... 132
Peters, W. Y ..... 164
Phillips, J. R ..... 160
Pringle, Isaac ..... 154
Pringle, W. Y ..... 154
Rea, R. N ..... 158
Redwood, Dr ..... 131, 139
Riggins, George ..... 141
Rush, Mrs. V. E ..... 157
Rush, W. M ..... 149
Scott, Hattie ..... 155
Shannon, J. J ..... 150
Sharman, C. J ..... 149
Sharp, Joe ..... 142

Page.

Meridian—Continued.
Testimony of—
Shaw, W. ... 158
Sumner, W. W. ... 158
Smith, D. C. ... 135
Smith, J. R. ... 153
Swann, H. M. ... 150
Young, Jacob ... 161
Wagner, A. B. ... 150
Washburn, Andy ... 148
West, Marshall ... 131
West, Robert ... 156
Whitaker, M. H. ... 163
Williams, John ... 160, 162
Williams, T. E. ... 159
Wilson, A. R. ... 151
Windham, B. B. ... 164
Winningham, J. H. ... 161
investigation by legislative committee of riot at ... 23–53
testimony of—
Beatty, Jacob ... 49
Bell, L. D ... 32
Bryant, James ... 44
Cockrell, Nathan ... 51
Hagan, Charlotte ... 37
Harris, William ... 51
Henderson, Granville ... 34
Henderson, R. L ... 45
Higgins, P. H ... 32
Hollis, William ... 52
Jackson, Peggy ... 36
Joseph, Aleck ... 52
Keaton, Mary A ... 43
Kizer, J. W ... 46
Layton, P. S ... 41
Leachman, Robert ... 26
Lee, Wesley ... 49
Mason, Henry ... 28
Moore, J. Aaron ... 49
Moseley, Robert J ... 24
Parker, Samuel ... 40
Parton, Ellen ... 38
Patton, William S ... 24
Perry, Hannah ... 43
Richards, Granville ... 53
Richards, Harris ... 51
Saunders, W. E ... 45
Samson, Michael ... 45
Smith, J. R ... 35
Sturgis, Edgar ... 41
Sturgis, Theodore ... 39
Threefoot, H. M ... 32
Walker, J. P ... 30
Weidmann, Felix ... 28
METTS, M. HALL, [illegible] ... 630–652
[illegible] Winston County; a merchant and farmer; is sheriff ... 635
[illegible] of William Coleman's testimony ... 636, 637, 650
[illegible] Coleman, and its cause ... 637
[illegible] Moreland Mitchell, Robin Coleman, George Gladney, and Nathan [illegible] ... 638, 647, 648
[illegible] of Jesse Triplett ... 639, 646, 647
[illegible] killing of Jesse Thomas ... 639
[illegible] position to the free-school law ... 640, 650
[illegible] Winston: killing of Nelson Yarborough ... 641
[illegible] ... 642
[illegible] of Allen Dodd in Winston jail by disguised men, and [illegible] ... 643–646
[illegible] at Louisville by [illegible] Ku-Klux outrages ... 647, 649
[illegible] from Winston County: shooting of Mr. Parks ... 652
Miller, William, [illegible] ... 336, 340

Page.
Miller, William, miscegenation ..... 558-560, 623, 624
Mitchell, Mordecai, whipping of ..... 484, 493, 494, 638, 647, 648, 655
Monroe County, the Ku-Klux order the school-tax not to be collected in ..... 266, 284, 367
schools broken up in ..... 779, 921
killings in ..... 676, 677, 780, 781, 784, 785, 807
purchase of school furniture in ..... 828
valuation of property in ..... 874-876
taxation in ..... 852, 853, 876-878, 880, 881, 918
school system and taxes ..... 842, 843, 850, 873, 874
disturbance in court in ..... 850, 851, 910, 911
financial condition of ..... 852
census and school statistics of ..... 874
killed in: (for page see name elsewhere:) Ab Atkins, Jack Dupree, Joseph and Willis Flint, Mr. Garrett, Dick Hendricks, Thomas Hornberger, Jesse Mayfield, Aleck Page, Mr. Trailer, Abe Wamble—11; shootings in: Andy Burns, ——— Freeman, Henry Hanson—3; whipped in: Joseph Atkins, Santee Butler, Alfred Connell, Simon Dunham, A. P. Huggins, Mr. McClendon, Mr. Owens, Peter ———, Hake Siss, Alfred Skinner, Mr. Swansy, Alfred Whitfield, Aleck Willis, Mr. Wilson—14.
Moore, J. Aaron, burning of house of ..... 72, 99, 106, 124, 178, 185, 199, 200, 221
Moore, William, Joshua Hairston shot at by ..... 798, 799
Mooror, Dr., burning of house of ..... 531
Mormon, ———, threatened for voting the democratic ticket ..... 1043
MORRIS, JOSHUA S., testimony of ..... 298-325
resident of Jackson; lived in Mississippi for twenty years; born in Tennessee and always lived in the South; lawyer ..... 298
justice of the peace and postmaster before the war ..... 298, 319
judge of probate during the war ..... 319
now attorney general of the State and reporter of decisions of supreme court ..... 299
rebel during the war ..... 324
republican since reconstruction ..... 319
execution of the laws ..... 299
disguised men, operations and purposes of ..... 299, 302, 303, 304, 312
disguised men, school-teachers beaten by ..... 302
disguised men, not brought to punishment ..... 304
freedom of political opinion ..... 301
riot at Meridian ..... 302
feeling toward northern people ..... 300, 301, 304
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins ..... 299, 316
murder of mayor of Brookhaven ..... 302
attack on Colonel Flournoy ..... 302
attack on Lieutenant Governor Powers ..... 304
colored people intimidated from voting ..... 303, 307, 308, 310, 317, 318
tone of newspaper press toward Ku-Klux ..... 303, 304, 321
colored men, most of Ku-Klux outrages committed upon ..... 311
State courts fail to punish Ku-Klux ..... 311, 322
Oxford trials of Ku-Klux ..... 311
negro suffrage ..... 304, 310
law of Mississippi in regard to influencing voters ..... 317, 318, 320, 321
negroes not willing to vote democratic ticket ..... 308
Grand Gulf and Port Gibson Railroad discharged employés for voting republican ticket ..... 318
unfriendly legislation of 1865 in regard to negroes ..... 305, 306, 312
school-tax, &c ..... 307, 315
desire of colored people for education ..... 306
school-teachers beaten ..... 302
State and local governments ..... 306, 307, 316, 317, 319
State finances ..... 307, 309, 310
removal of disabilities, &c ..... 309, 310
opposition to reconstruction ..... 311
qualifications of jurors, &c ..... 322
MORTON, JOHN, testimony of ..... 1112-1115
resident of Columbus ..... 1112
a planter ..... 1113
character of H. B. Whitfield ..... 1112-1115
character of W. W. Humphries ..... 1113
Murdock, Mr., killing of a negro by ..... 597
Murdock, Mr., indictment for killing Bully Jack ..... 707
Murff, Alexander W., school director, forced to resign ..... 1151

Page.
Murph, George, whipping of ..... 512, 513, 642, 657
Murphy, Alfred, whipping of ..... 772
Murphy, Edward, whipping of ..... 672, 772
Myers, A. L., ordered to quit teaching ..... 665, 666, 1051

N.

Native Sons of the South, society of the ..... 501, 677–679, 681, 1017–1021, 1062, 1063, 1089–1091
Negro suffrage ..... 304, 310, 413, 414
Negroes, effect of Ku-Klux upon ..... 502, 1029, 1151
general character and behavior of ..... 234, 255, 261, 298, 338, 351, 364, 382, 542
generally republican ..... 592, 596
voting democratic ticket ..... 59, 77, 127, 190, 230, 308
afraid to testify ..... 349, 350
intimidated from voting ..... 238, 303, 307, 308, 310, 317, 318, 332, 333
unfriendly legislation in regard to ..... 305, 306, 312
education of, (see Education.)
NELSON, ELYMAS, (colored,) testimony of ..... 895–899
resides on Dr. Whitfield's plantation, near Artesia ..... 895
disturbance at Artesia, and killing of Mr. Lee ..... 895–899
Nevelle, Sam, killing of, (see Grayson, Ellen.)
Newman, Mr., driving away of ..... 1158
Newspaper articles, Ku-Klux ..... 543
Northern settlers, general feeling and treatment of ..... 300, 301, 304, 503, 1148
Noxubee County, families driven from ..... 471, 514, 515, 549, 560
school-houses and churches burned in ..... 477, 478, 502, 528, 539, 629
feeling toward colored schools in ..... 478
intimidation of witnesses in ..... 478, 588, 628
court broken up in ..... 479, 480, 530, 1040
depreciation of land in ..... 503
whippings in ..... 573
administration of affairs of and taxation in ..... 509, 528, 529, 531, 532, 535–538
terrorism among the colored people of ..... 588
killings in ..... 224, 426, 475, 476, 505, 519, 579, 587, 627
killed in: Mr. Brown, Charles Chestnut, Sam Coger, son of Ellen Grayson, Peter Gregory, ——— Hopkins, Bully Jack, Lewis Jordan, Isaiah Lewis, Dick Malone, Samuel May, Mr. Shipley, Mr. Wissler—13; shot at in: Samuel McMillan, Daniel H. Smith—2; whipped in: Lydia Anderson, Frazier Duncan's wife, Eliza Hinton, Jane Hotcher, Aleck Hughes, Robert Jackson, Zach Job, Henry Leadbetter, Isham Lowry, Betsey Lucas, Albert May, William McMillan, Mr. Stinson—13. (For page see name elsewhere.)

O.

Odeneal, Melton, shooting of ..... 1041, 1042
Officers, increase of State and county ..... 532–534
Oktibbeha County, killings in ..... 590, 702, 709–711, 989
schools burned in ..... 989
killed in: John Plair, (Muse)—1; whipped in: Abraham ———, Jesse Higgins, Daniel Oyster, (Rogers,) Moses Rice—4.
ORR, JOHN A., testimony of ..... 697–718
resident of Columbus, Lowndes County; judge of the seventh judicial district since May, 1870 ..... 697
the Bridges case; killing of Allen Bird ..... 698, 708, 709
burning of schools in Winston County ..... 699
opposition to the free-school system and to negro education ..... 700
killing of Dick Malone ..... 700, 701
indictment pending against James Murdock for the murder of Bully Jack ..... 701
man shot from ambush, and a negro taken from the custody of an officer by masked men and shot ..... 702, 709–711
no one brought to justice ..... 702
cause of difficulty in detecting the perpetrators ..... 702, 706
designs of the Ku-Klux order ..... 703, 710, 711
inability of the State courts to deal with the Ku-Klux outrages ..... 697, 703, 705
feeling of the people toward the General Government ..... 704
Stinson and Reynolds whipped by disguised men ..... 697, 707, 708
disturbance at Artesia: the killing of Lee, and subsequent proceedings ..... 711–718
Owen, Mr., whipping of ..... 909, 921

Page.
Oxford, full report of the Ku-Klux trial at ..... 936–987
the counsel ..... 936
the petition ..... 936, 937
the affidavit ..... 937
Exhibit A; the indictment ..... 938, 939
the certificate ..... 939
Exhibit B; the *capias;* the writ of *habeas corpus;* the marshal's return ..... 940
the relator's traverse; writ of *habeas corpus;* the replication; the witnesses ..... 941
the testimony for relators ..... 941–966
testimony of—
A. J. Pope ..... 941–943
Mrs. Lucinda Cook ..... 943
Powhatan McNeice ..... 943, 944
Lafayette Willis ..... 944, 953, 958, 960, 963
John Kuykendall ..... 944, 945
John Wooten, James Moore ..... 946
W. E. Love ..... 946, 947
Miss Elizabeth Webb ..... 947
James Bassham ..... 947, 948
General Gholson ..... 948, 953, 958, 959, 960, 961, 965, 980
Colonel W. F. Dowd ..... 948, 959, 960, 962, 965
Colonel R. O. Reynolds ..... 948, 958, 959, 962, 979
Mrs. Sarah E. Malone ..... 948, 949
Silas F. Kendrick ..... 949, 956, 982
Henry Alexander ..... 949, 954, 955, 962
James Moore; Miss Mary Mays ..... 949
John Willis ..... 949, 957
Miss Kate Mays; Millie Locke ..... 950
Robert Odennal ..... 950, 951
Dr. Doudle ..... 951
James Moore; Seecy Crosby ..... 952
E. O. Sykes ..... 952, 979, 980
Robert E. Houston ..... 952, 979, 975
Ann Forshee ..... 952, 983, 984
William Lansford; Lizzie Willis ..... 953
Jane Willis ..... 953, 954
Rena Willis ..... 954
Mrs. Mary E. Neeland ..... 955
John Boyd ..... 955, 956
Mrs. M. A. Bronson ..... 956, 957
Mrs. Rachael Hutchinson; James Moore ..... 957
Mrs. W. D. Walton; Miss Jennie Hutchinson; Miss Mollie Willis ..... 958
Mrs. Mattie Anderson; Miss Florence Ford ..... 959
W. J. Gordon ..... 960, 961, 982, 983
Charles H. Eckford; W. E. Love ..... 961
James Alexander ..... 962
Clark Taylor; James Moore; Mrs. Julia Roberts; Jackson Roberts ..... 963
Henry Tucker ..... 964, 965
motion to strike out testimony ..... 965, 966
testimony for the United States ..... 966–979
testimony of—
Felix Bumpus ..... 966, 980, 981
John Wolf ..... 966–969, 981, 982
Fanny Page ..... 969–971
Joe Davis ..... 972–975
Rosetta Dawkins ..... 975–977
District Attorney Wells; United States Marshal Peirce ..... 977
Henry Hatch ..... 977–979
rebutting testimony ..... 979–984
testimony of Hubert C. Harris; W. F. Tabor; B. F. Hall ..... 980
the argument; a motion; ruling of the court ..... 984
decision of Judge Hill ..... 984–987
order of court ..... 987
demonstrations upon the release of prisoners ..... 878, 879, 909, 910
discussion in sub-committee as to admissibility of report of trial at, and decision of the joint committee ..... 934, 935
Oyster, (Rogers,) Daniel, whipping of ..... 988

P.

Page.

Page, Aleck, killing of—
Huggins's account of ..... 278, 279
McBride's ..... 339
Holman's ..... 357
Little's ..... 360, 362
Whitfield's ..... 435
Pickett's ..... 462
Turner's ..... 773, 774
Rose's ..... 780, 781
Lee's ..... 786
Davis's ..... 810, 811
Gholson's ..... 829–834, 848, 879
Reynolds's ..... 927–929
Panola County, outrages in ..... 782
Parks, Mr., shooting of ..... 652
Parks, Robert, identified by Flint ..... 804
Penitentiary, legislation in regard to ..... 208, 214, 220
Perkins, ———, supposed to have been poisoned ..... 674, 675
PERKINS, LEWIS, (colored,) testimony of ..... 899–901
resident of Lowndes County ..... 899
his house visited by about forty disguised men, and Mr. Farmer, a school-teacher boarding with him, ordered to leave in ten days ..... 899
he was compelled to close his school; whipping of Hicks; has heard of ten or twelve whippings in the neighborhood ..... 900
PERKINS, WILLIAM H., testimony of ..... 1167–1171
resident of Lowndes County ..... 1167
disturbance at Artesia; the killing of Lee, and subsequent investigations ..... 1167–1171
Peter, ———, whipping of ..... 281
Phillips, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 677
PICKETT, GEORGE B., testimony of ..... 459–468
officer of the Army of the United States, commanding detachment of Sixteenth Infantry, stationed at Aberdeen ..... 459
disguised men, operations of, &c ..... 460, 461, 462, 463, 464
disguised men, character of members of bands of ..... 463
disguised men, disguise worn by bands of ..... 467
disguised men, persons killed or whipped by ..... 461, 462, 463
mob under lead of Dr. Gibson ..... 459, 460
attack on Colonel Flournoy ..... 460, 461, 465, 466, 467, 468
Oxford trials of Ku-Klux ..... 461
Ku-Klux opposed to republicans, &c ..... 463, 464, 465
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ..... 462
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ..... 462
killing of Jesse Mayfield, (colored) ..... 462
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins, (white) ..... 460, 463
school-tax, &c ..... 467
school-houses burned ..... 467
Plair, (Muse,) John, killing of ..... 990–992
Political opinions, (see Freedom of, &c.)
POLLARD, AUSTIN, testimony of ..... 1100–1110
resident of Chickasaw County; chancellor of the seventh judicial district; native of Alabama ..... 1100
details of disturbance at Pontotoc by disguised men, and the killing of Richard Dillard, one of their number ..... 1101, 1104, 1105
public meeting held to frown down Ku-Kluxism; Dr. Porter's paper circulated. 1102
threatened with assassination in case he attempted to hold court in Union County ..... 1102, 1103, 1105
disturbance at Starkville, and store of McLachlan broken into and he compelled to leave ..... 1103
John Conkerton taken out by disguised men, but escaped and shoots at his assailants ..... 1103, 1104, 1106
Wesley Pulliam wounded by him ..... 1107
Dr. Porter asserts that the paper issued by him was false, and was published to conciliate ..... 1102, 1108
newspaper, the Pontotoc Times, by Dr. H. H. Porter, free, vol. 1, No. 1, local ..... 1109, 1110
Pontotoc, disturbance at ..... 1088, 1101, 1104, 1105, 1152
Pope, Andrew, forces Davis to join the Ku-Klux ..... 808
Pope, Fernandez, shot at by Solomon Shaw ..... 1041

Page.
Pope, Whitfield, forces Davis to join the Ku-Klux ..... 808
Porter, Dr. H. H., copy of newspaper issued by ..... 1109, 1110
Porter, John, identified by Higgins ..... 845, 846, 905, 906
POWERS, HOMER C., testimony of ..... 987–1000
resident of Starkville; sheriff of Oktibbeha County; appointed by General Gillem; has been planting corn and cotton ..... 987
county peaceable from 1867 to 1871; in the spring of 1871 a band of disguised men commenced their operations; whipping of Daniel Oyster or Rogers .... 988
house of a colored man broken into by disguised men, the occupant struck with a club and shot at; school-house at Tampico burned; white man killed, supposed to have been done by John Plair or Muse ..... 989
John Plair taken from the custody of officers by disguised men and killed .... 990–992
Mingo Rogers and Jesse Higgins visited; both left through fear ..... 992
Mr. McLachlan, teacher and preacher, warned to leave the county ..... 993
his arrest, and the attack upon the freedmen's exchange store, of which he was agent; he was compelled to leave ..... 993–997
Mrs. Bell's room entered by soldiers ..... 998–999
writ sued out against Mr. Huggins ..... 999–1000
Powers, Ridgley C., attack on house of, and his superintendent shot at .. 1, 2, 3, 248, 249, 286, 304, 583, 794
POWERS, Lieut. Gov. RIDGELEY C., testimony of ..... 583–603
resident of Noxubee County; is lieutenant governor of the State, elected December, 1869; canvassed the State ..... 583
came to the State in December, 1865; native of Ohio ..... 600
no trouble in enforcing the law outside of Monroe, Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Noxubee, Kemper, Lauderdale, and Winston Counties; attack upon his house in Kemper County by disguised men, and his superintendent shot at ..... 583
George Evans, one of the attacking party, killed ..... 583, 584
character of the disguises worn; Matt Duncan's brother murdered, quartered, and thrown into Talladega swamp ..... 584
census of Kemper County; Bully Jack's murderers came from Alabama ..... 585
witness's knowledge of the organization, obligation, &c., of Ku-Klux in Mississippi ..... 586, 587, 592, 595
whipping of A. P. Huggins; killing of Peter Gregory, Dick Malone, Bully Jack, Solomon Triplett, Allen Bird, and Samuel May; whipping of Rufe Hickman and a teacher in Lowndes County ..... 587
all the school-houses in Winston County burned except one, and some churches ..... 587, 588, 601
great state of terrorism among the colored people of Noxubee, and great intimidation of colored voters; state of affairs in Carroll County; negroes compelled either not to vote or to vote as desired by the whites ..... 588
several colored men killed in Lauderdale County since the riot; killing of Cole; from fifty to one hundred driven from Lauderdale; killing of a colored man in Lowndes County; effects of stationing troops in disturbed districts ..... 589
colored men killed in Oktibbeha County; opposition to colored schools and to negroes owning land; law forbidding them to own or lease lands passed by the legislatures in 1865 and 1867 ..... 590
sentiment of the democratic party of the State as to negro suffrage ..... 590, 591
effect of the enforcement act; impossible to convict in State courts; the practical difficulties in finding out the perpetrators of outrages ..... 591
course of the democratic press of the State relative to outrages ..... 592
colored people, when left free, unanimously republicans ..... 592, 596
character of the judiciary of the State ..... 593
the pretexts assigned in other States for the organization of Ku-Klux do not exist in Mississippi ..... 593–595
every step toward equality under the law opposed by the democratic party ... 596
his reason for becoming bail for Mr. Wissler, charged with killing Shipley .... 596–599
killing of Lee at Artesia and the subsequent arrest of negroes ..... 601–603
Press, democratic, course relative to Ku-Klux outrages ..... 303, 304, 321, 363, 592, 679
Pulliam, Wesley, alleged Ku-Klux, shooting of ..... 1107
Purdy jail, Tennessee, release of prisoners from ..... 1152

Q.

Quarles, Barbour, identified by Willis ..... 1184

R.

Races, feeling between the ..... 63, 111, 118, 119, 182, 188, 195, 202
Railroads, legislation in regard to ..... 21–23, 207, 213

Page.
Randall, Moses, discharged for voting the democratic ticket ..... 1043
Rapes ..... 1084, 1165
Real estate, depreciation of ..... 502, 503, 537
Real estate, opposition to, and laws passed by legislature to prevent negroes owning ..... 574, 590
Reed, Mr., suspected of robbing office, and trial of ..... 519, 520
Regulators, Dow Blair's ..... 927
Report of grand jury appended to testimony of W. W. Humphries ..... 1073, 1074
Report of State investigating committee, as published in the Columbus Index, June 1, 1871 ..... 762–769
Republicans, feeling toward those from the North ..... 679
Reynolds, confessions as to Ku-Klux by the two ..... 1076, 1079
Reynolds, ———, whipping of ..... 697, 707, 708, 1037, 1038
Reynolds, Reuben O., Mr. Stone's testimony concerning ..... 1022, 1023
REYNOLDS, REUBEN O., testimony of ..... 901–934
resident of Aberdeen, Monroe County, for thirty-five years; a lawyer ..... 901
native of Georgia; counsel for the parties implicated in the murder of Page ..... 913
was in the confederate service ..... 914
extravagant expenditures for school-buildings by Mr. Huggins, and relative to school system ..... 901, 914–917, 919, 920
Sanders Flint and his two sons taken from jail and the latter killed; whipping of Alfred Whitfield ..... 902, 917
killing of Jack Dupree ..... 903, 927
contradiction of Joe Davis's testimony as to the killing of Aleck Page, and other points ..... 903, 907, 908, 910
accuracy of the "Full report of the great Ku-Klux trial in the United States district court at Oxford, Mississippi" ..... 904, 905
relative to the whipping of Huggins and his recognition of John T. Roberts and John Porter ..... 905, 906, 919
relative to Huggins's testimony in the case of the whipping of Aleck Stewart ..... 907
killing of Abe Wamble ..... 908, 927
whipping of McKendon, (McClendon,) Owen, Wilson, and Swansy ..... 909, 921
demonstrations upon the release of the Oxford prisoners upon bond ..... 909, 910
disturbance in court by Mr. Lamar ..... 910, 911
tampering with witnesses by Mr. Sykes; killing of Doc. Hendricks and Mr. Garrett ..... 911
burning of a colored church at Tupelo; character of Miss Davis ..... 912, 922
burning of Mr. Shattuck's office ..... 912
Mrs. Bell visited by soldiers ..... 912, 913
conversed with General Gholson before testifying ..... 914
relative to State and county taxation ..... 918
teachers notified to discontinue their schools; whipping of McBride, Eccles ..... 921
doctrines taught by the teachers at Aberdeen ..... 923, 924
his knowledge as to Ku-Klux ..... 925–927, 929, 933
Dow Blair's Regulators ..... 927
relative to the killing of Aleck Page ..... 927–929
alibis the only possible line of defense ..... 929, 930, 933, 934
reason for the opposition to the Ku-Klux law ..... 930, 931
composition of juries ..... 931, 932
discussion in sub-committee as to the admissibility of the "Full report of the great Ku-Klux trial in the United States district court at Oxford, Mississippi," and decision of committee ..... 934, 935
RICE, HAMPTON A., testimony of ..... 609–619
resident of Noxubee County; a planter; a magistrate ..... 609
details of the taking of Sam. Nevelle from the custody of Bridges, of the assault by negroes on the latter, and of the finding of a body in the Bigby River, supposed to be Nevelle's, derived from evidence taken by him as a magistrate, and from sources deemed reliable ..... 609–619
Rice, Moses, whipping of ..... 436
Richardson, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 1022
Richardson, Mr., whipping of ..... 1158
Rienzi jail, prisoners taken from and shot, hung, and whipped ..... 1153
RIVES, JAMES H., testimony of ..... 548–570
resident of Noxubee County; a lawyer ..... 548
a confederate soldier ..... 566
private secretary of Governor Pettus; native of Georgia ..... 566
whipping of Betsey Lucas ..... 548, 558
families driven from Mr. May's place ..... 549, 560
Sam. Coger still living ..... 549, 550
killing of Dick Malone, Bully Jack ..... 550

Page.

RIVES, JAMES H., testimony of—Continued.
John Higgins indicted for whipping Aleck Hughes ..... 551
killing of Ellen Grayson's son; his body found in the Tombigbee River..... 552, 562
character of Taliaferro ..... 553, 554
disturbance near Brooksville, 1870; Mr. Farmer knocked down ..... 556, 568
killing of Mr. Lee at Artesia..... 556, 557
purpose of Ku-Klux ..... 558
miscegenation..... 558–560
killing of Mr. Brown ..... 563
witness's knowledge of Ku-Klux ..... 564, 565, 567–569
contradiction of testimony of Taliaferro..... 551, 565
acquiescence in negro suffrage..... 566
carrying of arms a frequent practice..... 567
Loyal League, organization, &c., of, in Noxubee..... 556, 558–570
RIVES, ROBERT G., testimony of ..... 652–662
resident of Winston County; a lawyer ..... 652
a democrat..... 661
private in the confederate army ..... 662
contradiction of Mr. Coleman's testimony as to owning land..... 653
whipping of Coleman for stealing hogs ..... 654, 655
whipping of Mordecai Mitchell ..... 655
Allen Bird's case ..... 656, 658
outrage upon Peter Cooper ..... 656
killing of George Murph and Nelson Yarborough; Mr. Cherry killed by Mr. Buford ..... 657
a planter compelled to leave ..... 660
Roberts, Green T., outrage upon..... 1133, 1136
Roberts, John S., identified by Huggins..... 845, 846, 905, 906
Roberts, John S., identified by Willis..... 1184
"Robertson Family," the organization called the..... 1089, 1091, 1092
Rogers, Mingo, compelled to leave..... 992, 1154
ROSE, Capt. THOMAS E., testimony of ..... 780–785
captain in the Sixteenth Infantry; assigned for duty at Aberdeen, March 29, 1871 ..... 780
on service in the State from April, 1869, to March, 1870 ..... 782
killing of Aleck Page, Thomas Hornberger, and Wamble..... 780, 781
no attempts made to arrest the perpetrators..... 781
Tubbs confessed to him as to raids made by the organization of which he was a member, and of its purposes..... 782, 783
attempt to kill Mr. Woods..... 782
Cunningham captured and never heard of afterward ..... 783
negro killed; said to have been taken from the Lagronnes and Marshall; arrest of these latter..... 780, 781, 784, 785
Rosser, Dr., burning of cribs and stables of ..... 531

S.

Saddler, Mr., sheriff of Pontotoc, the head of the "Robertson Family," and a member of the Ku-Klux Klan..... 1089, 1993
School-board, members of, ordered by the Ku-Klux to resign..... 281
School-fund, Chickasaw..... 21
School-houses burned..... 18, 19, 20, 76, 94, 260, 283, 326, 329, 330, 333, 363, 402
in Noxubee County..... 477, 478, 502, 528, 539, 629
in Monroe ..... 849, 1021
in Winston ..... 467, 493, 587, 588, 601, 640, 650, 699, 1150
in Oktibbeha..... 989
in Chickasaw ..... 1021
in Lee ..... 1021
School system and taxation:
Taliaferro concerning ..... 245
Huggins concerning ..... 266, 284, 288, 289
Morris concerning..... 307, 315
McBride concerning ..... 334, 335, 336, 338, 341, 342
Holman concerning..... 352–356
Little concerning ..... 367–374
Baskervill concerning..... 384, 385, 395, 407, 411
Whitfield concerning..... 422, 443, 446, 447, 448, 452
Pickett concerning..... 467

Page.
School system and taxation—Continued.
in Lowndes County ..... 680, 694, 695, 700, 901, 914–917, 919, 920, 1172–1175
in Monroe County ..... 842, 843, 850, 873, 874
Sykes concerning ..... 728–751, 757, 758, 760–762
opinion of democratic party as to ..... 1049, 1166
facts relative to ..... 507
opposition to ..... 779
Schools broken up ..... 352, 357, 358, 364
in Lowndes County ..... 720
in Monroe County ..... 779, 921
Schools, purchase of furniture for ..... 828
free and colored, opposition to ..... 86, 329, 332, 337, 340, 348, 350, 364, 366, 370, 373
School-teachers whipped and forced to stop teaching .. 76, 82, 83, 86, 87, 261, 282, 283, 302, 326, 329, 350, 357, 420, 421, 422, 446
SESSIONS, J. F., testimony of ..... 205–223
resident of Franklin County and member of legislature ..... 205
native of Mississippi; lawyer by profession ..... 209
member of legislative committee to investigate Meridian riot ..... 205
was a member of Knights of the Black Cross, a secret political organization .. 216
disguised men, secret organizations, &c ..... 206, 209, 211, 212, 215, 216, 217, 222, 223
riot at Meridian ..... 205, 206, 209, 210, 211, 220, 221, 222
armed men from Alabama carried colored men from Meridian ..... 210
execution of the laws ..... 209
taxation ..... 209
concerning Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 205, 206, 209, 210, 220
concerning Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 210, 211, 220, 222
concerning ——— Price ..... 205, 210, 220
debt of the State ..... 208
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 210, 221
killing of Clopton *alias* Dennis, (colored) ..... 221
three colored men hung ..... 221, 222
burning of house of J. Aaron Moore, (colored) ..... 221
burning of colored church ..... 221
beating of Colonel A. P. Huggins ..... 213
freedom of political opinions ..... 214, 215
railroad legislation ..... 207, 213
legislation concerning penitentiary ..... 208, 214, 220
concerning Union Leagues ..... 222, 223
"Seventy-Six," Ku-Klux reorganizing under name of ..... 257, 258, 1067
Shattuck, Mr., burning of office of ..... 824, 840, 871, 912, 1024, 1025, 1074, 1077
Shaw, Solomon, shooting at Fernandez Pope by ..... 1041
Sherman, James, shooting of Melton Odeneal by ..... 1041, 1042
Shipley, Mr., killing of ..... 480, 481, 506, 523–526, 596–599, 1162–1164
Shooting at—
Bresle, Early, (colored,) Chickasaw County ..... 1157
Carter, Edward, (colored,) Lowndes County, September, 1871 ..... 1084
Gardner, ———, Chickasaw County ..... 1024, 1027, 1028
Hairston, Joshua, (colored,) Lowndes County, November, 1870 ..... 798, 799, 1039
Hargrove, A. H., Lowndes County ..... 1042, 1043
Hicks, Jim, (colored,) Lowndes County, March, 1871 ..... 1083
McMillan, Samuel, (colored,) Noxubee County, May, 1871 ..... 484
Pope, Fernandez, Lowndes County, 1871 ..... 1041
Smith, Daniel H., Noxubee County ..... 571
Shootings:
Bowler, Mr., Lowndes County ..... 1042
Burns, Andy, (colored,) Monroe County ..... 1138, 1144
Freeman, Mr., Monroe County, October, 1871 ..... 839
Hanson, Henry, Monroe County, March, 1871 ..... 1151
Hunnicutt, (Honeycutt,) John and Catharine, Tishemingo County, September, 1871 ..... 1074, 1075, 1078, 1157, 1158
Meeks, Samuel, (colored,) Tishemingo County, 1869 ..... 1075, 1078
Parks, Mr., Winston County, March, 1871 ..... 652
Pulliam, Wesley, Chickasaw County, 1871 ..... 1107
Rush, Captain, Kemper County, March, 1871 ..... 247, 248, 254, 256, 264
Shubble, George, whipping of ..... 340
Siss, Hake, whipping of ..... 1151
Skinner, Alfred, whipping of ..... 278
Slaves, number and value of, in Noxubee County before the war ..... 534, 535

Page.
SMITH, DANIEL H., (colored,) testimony of ..... 570–575
resident of Noxubee County; served in the Federal Army ..... 570
teacher ..... 571
was threatened with hanging; was shot at by John McDannall; his house visited by disguised men in September, 1870; character of the disguises; identifies John Grant ..... 571
bad feeling in relation to colored schools; opposition to negro suffrage; burning of churches in Pickens County, Alabama ..... 572
a great many whipped in Noxubee; received Ku-Klux letters ..... 573
killing of Jerry Brown and Sam May ..... 573
killing of Ellen Grayson's son ..... 573, 574
no one punished for these whippings, &c.; opposition to negroes becoming landowners ..... 574
identifies William Elm and Hardin Brooks ..... 575
SMITH, J. R., testimony of ..... 63–82
native of Mississippi; resident of Meridian; postmaster and clerk of chancery court ..... 63
disguised men, operations of ..... 74, 79
riot at Meridian ..... 63, 66, 67, 68, 70, 71, 72, 73, 78
riot at Meridian, examination by Judge Leachman of ..... 72, 73, 78
concerning William Sturgis, mayor of Meridian ..... 66, 69, 77
concerning ——— Price ..... 63, 64, 65, 77, 79
concerning Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 63, 64, 77
concerning J. Aaron Moore, (colored) ..... 66, 70, 72
concerning William Dennis, *alias* Clopton, (colored) ..... 66, 67, 68, 70, 71, 72, 78
concerning Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 66, 70, 71, 72
armed men from Alabama carried colored men away from Meridian .. 64, 65, 69, 78, 79, 80
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 70
killing of Diggs, (colored,) mail agent ..... 74
killing of Joseph Williams, (colored) ..... 74
three colored men hung ..... 71
burning of Sturgis's store ..... 67
burning of house of J. Aaron Moore, (colored) ..... 72
burning of colored church at Meridian ..... 72
burning of school-houses ..... 76
feeling between the races ..... 63
freedom of political opinions ..... 75, 81, 82
school-teachers whipped and compelled to leave ..... 76
threatening notices ..... 76
negroes voting democratic ticket ..... 77
security and safety of person and property ..... 80
concerning Union Leagues ..... 70, 77
Smith, Purnell, identified by Flint ..... 804
Sons of the South, the Native ..... 501, 677–679, 681, 1071–1021, 1062, 1063, 1089–1091
Starksville, disturbance at ..... 993–997, 1103
State and county officers ..... 20, 306, 307, 316, 317, 319, 447
State debt, &c ..... 20, 23, 208, 307, 309, 310
Stewart, Aleck, whipping of ..... 277
Stewart, Leonard, identified by Galloway ..... 668
Stillwell, Mr., recognition of, and proving of *alibi* by ..... 793, 796
Stinson, ———, (Seaton,) whipping of ..... 697, 707, 708, 1037, 1038
Stinson, Jesse, John, and William, identified by Turner ..... 771
Stock, stealing of ..... 1046
STONE, RUFUS B., testimony of ..... 1021–1030
resident of Aberdeen; formerly lived in Chickasaw County; chief clerk in assessor's office ..... 1021
six school-houses in Chickasaw County burned, twenty-six in Monroe County and one in Lee County; character of Miss Davis ..... 1021
Mr. Richardson, Geesner, Waterbury, Miss Allan, and others, ordered to discontinue their schools; whipping of Mr. Huggins ..... 1022
concerning General Gholson and Colonel Reynolds ..... 1022, 1023, 1026, 1027
outrages upon Mr. Emmons, teacher ..... 1023
character of Dr. Woodmansee's democratic speeches ..... 1023, 1024
firing of Colonel Shattuck's office ..... 1024, 1025
General Gholson regarded as the head of the Ku-Klux ..... 1026, 1027
concerning the shooting at Gardner ..... 1024, 1027, 1028
Tobe Hutchinson taken out by a band of disguised men; his body found with his throat cut ..... 1028
effect of Ku-Klux outrages upon the colored men ..... 1029

Page.
STONE, RUFUS B., testimony of—Continued.
frequent outrages upon Drury Bailey, and his subsequent murder by Isaac Turner ..... 1029, 1030
correction of his testimony as to the burning of twenty-six school-houses in Monroe County ..... 1030
Stubblefield, E. J., whipping of ..... 1152
Sturgis, Mr., burning of store of ..... 7, 67, 97, 105, 106, 171, 185, 195, 199
Luddith, Diller, rape of daughter of Edward Carter by ..... 1084
Suffrage, negro, whites of Noxubee reconciled to ..... 503, 529, 530, 566
opposition to, in Noxubee County ..... 572
sentiment of democratic party of the State as to ..... 590, 591
democratic party of Lowndes County as to ..... 755, 756
Swansy, Mr., whipping of ..... 909, 927
SYKES, JAMES, testimony of ..... 728–769
resident of Columbus, Lowndes County; has been a planter ..... 728
native of Virginia; was an old-line whig; opposed the war; hates radicalism worse than democracy ..... 755
was a slave-holder ..... 756
concerning the school-system and the school-tax in Lowndes County, and the action taken by the citizens relative thereto ..... 728–751, 757, 758, 760, 761, 762
school statistics of the county ..... 736, 740, 741, 743
general taxation in the county ..... 737, 738, 741, 746, 752
condition of the school-system before the war ..... 738, 740
relative to the statements in Mr. Bishop's report ..... 744, 746, 747, 757, 758
concerning proper price to be paid to teachers ..... 748–750
opposed to negro suffrage, and thinks the democrats are also ..... 755, 756
agricultural statistics of the county ..... 759, 760
Sykes, Mr., alleged tampering with witnesses by ..... 851, 852, 911
Sykes, Mrs. Jane, outrages upon herself and family ..... 1086, 1087, 1096, 1097
Sykes, Mrs. Jane, whipping of ..... 1157

T.

Tacket, Tripley Ann, driven from Winston County ..... 652
Taliaferro, John R., concerning ..... 376, 377, 386, 391, 403–405, 409–412, 439–441
acknowledgments relative to Ku-Klux by ..... 476, 477
contradiction of testimony of ..... 551, 565
character, standing, &c., of ..... 527, 553, 554
TALIAFERRO, JOHN R., testimony of ..... 223–246
native of Virginia and resident of Noxubee County ..... 223
captain in confederate army; engaged in planting ..... 224
disguised men, operations of ..... 224–246
trial of Ku-Klux at Oxford ..... 224, 239, 241
execution of the laws ..... 224, 244
killing of colored men, not named ..... 224, 230
killing of Sam Rogers, (colored) ..... 224, 227, 241, 242
killing of ——— Hopkins, (colored,) preacher ..... 225, 242
killing of Dick Malone, (colored) ..... 225, 242
killing of George Chestnut, (colored,) teacher ..... 226
whipping of colored men, not named ..... 225, 226, 227
negroes intimidated ..... 238
negroes voting democratic ticket ..... 230
behavior of negroes ..... 234, 235
schools, &c. ..... 245
concerning Union Leagues ..... 245
Taylor, Harris, captain of a Klan ..... 1086
Taxation ..... 209
relative rate of ..... 504, 1049–1051
in Noxubee County ..... 528, 529, 531, 532, 535–538
in Lowndes ..... 737, 738, 741, 746, 752
in Monroe ..... 852, 853, 876–878, 880, 881, 918
Testimony of—
Adam, G Gordon ..... 60–63
Algood, Jefferson B ..... 499–510
Allen, Miss Sarah A ..... 774–779
Anderson, John H ..... 1137–1145
Anderson, Lydia ..... 510–513
Baskervill, Charles ..... 374–416
Beckwith, Joseph ..... 888–890

Page.

Testimony of—
Bishop, Joseph N....1172-1175
Bliss, E. Raymond....1030-1036
Brothers, Oscar C....1001-1021
Campbell, George W....576-582
Carpenter, Edmund L....619-625
Carter, Edward....1083-1085
Cason, Jeremiah H....1129-1133
Chisolm, W. W....246-265
Clark, Henry....1086-1100
Clay, Matthew....604-609
Coleman, William....482-492
Cooper, Peter....492-499
Crosby, Edward....1133-1137
Davis, Alexander K....469-482
Davis, Joseph....808-819
Dismukes, Elisha....626-636
Eggleston, B. B....1-6
Flint, Sanders....803-808
Flournoy, Robert W....82-95
Ford, William C....96-127
French, O. C....6-23
Galloway, Joseph F....662-675
Gholson, Samuel J....829-884
Gleed, Robert....718-728
Gray, Edmund....894-895
Hairston, Joshua....798-803
Harrison, James T....1180-1183
Hicks, James....891-893
Holman, Edward E....342-358
Huggins, A. P....265-298, 820-828
Humphries, Abram S....1185-1186
Humphries, William W., jr....1037-1073
Jacobson, E. P....53-60
Jarnagin, Hampton L....513-544
Kennon, Woodson H., jr....693-697
Kolb, William B....1080-1083
Lee, James W....785-792
Lewis, Hiram W....675-693
Little, Finis H....358-374
Lyon, Theodoric L....1115-1129
Matthews, Beverly....1175-1180
McBride, Cornelius....325-342
McCoy, John....1074-1080
Meridian riot; testimony taken before legislative committee....23-53
Meridian riot; investigation before Judge Leachman....127-164
Metts, Michael A....636-652
Morris, Joshua S....298-325
Morton, John....1112-1115
Nelson, Elymas....895-899
Orr, Jehu A....697-718
Oxford trials....936-987
Perkins, Lewis....899-901
Perkins, William H....1167-1171
Pickett, George B....459-468
Pollard, Austin....1100-1110
Powers, Homer C....987-1000
Powers, Ridgley C....583-603
Reynolds, Reuben O....901-934
Rice, Hampton A....609-619
Rives, James H....548-570
Rives, Robert G....652-662
Rose, Captain Thomas E....780-785
Sessions, J. F....205-223
Smith, Daniel H....570-575
Smith, J. R....63-82
Stone, Rufus B....1021-1030
Sykes, James....728-769
Taliaferro, John R....223-246

Page.
Testimony of—
Triplett, David ..... 544–548
Turner, Joseph ..... 769–777
Walburg, Lewis ..... 1110–1112
Wells, C. Wiley ..... 1147–1167
Whitaker, M. H ..... 165–205
Whitfield, Henry B ..... 416–453
Willis, Washington ..... 1184–1185
Wilson, James T., sr ..... 1145–1147
Yates, Captain George W ..... 793–798
Thomas, Albert, whipping of ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Thomas, Jesse, killing of ..... 639
Thompson, ———, whipping of ..... 799, 800
Tippah County, whippings in ..... 1088
Clark's investigation of Ku-Klux in ..... 1086, 1088, 1089, 1094–1096, 1099
whipped in: (for page, see names elsewhere:) Armistead Boyd, Charles Boyd, Joseph Brooks, Tillman Green, Silas Mask, Albert Thomas—6.
Tishemingo County, killings in ..... 1153
shot in: John and Catharine Hunnicutt, Samuel Meeks—3; whipped in: Mr. Richardson—1.
Trailer, Mr., killing of ..... 1143, 1147
TRIPLETT, DAVID, (colored,) testimony of ..... 544–548
lived in Winston County last year; now in Noxubee ..... 544
killing of Solomon Triplett by disguised men ..... 545, 546
no arrests made ..... 546–548
killing of Peter Gregory ..... 547
Triplett, George, beating of Mr. Winston by ..... 1041
Triplett, John Q., identified by Coleman ..... 1151
Triplett, Solomon, killing of:
Holman's account of ..... 346, 347
Whitfield's account of ..... 432, 433
Davis's account of ..... 474
Coleman's account of ..... 486
Anderson's account of ..... 512
Triplett's account of ..... 545, 546
Powers's account of ..... 587
Metts's account of ..... 638, 639, 646, 647
Wells's account of ..... 1150, 1151
Tubbs's, ———, confessions as to raids made by the Ku-Klux ..... 782, 783
Turner, ———, a freedman, killing of ..... 1152, 1155, 1156
Turner, Isaac, killing of Drury Bailey by ..... 1029, 1030
TURNER, JOSEPH, (colored,) testimony of ..... 769–777
resident of Lowndes County ..... 769
was whipped by disguised men ..... 770, 775
character of the disguises worn; recognized John, Will, and Jess Stinson, Warran Gardner, Laney Williams, John Kidd and his son John, Fuller Wiler, and Jasper Webb ..... 771
whipping of Albert Murphy, Dick Halliday, Ed Murphy, a colored man and a colored woman ..... 772
whipping of Jim Hicks and Jim Verner ..... 773
killing of Jack Dupree and Aleck Page ..... 773, 774
whipping of Simon Dunning and Aleck Willis ..... 774
Jehu Wolf, colored Ku-Klux, turns State's evidence ..... 773, 774
also Henry Hatch; man killed on Muddy Creek ..... 774, 775
Andy Crosby captain of Ku-Klux ..... 775
Turner, Joseph, whipping of ..... 673, 770, 775, 1060, 1152

U.

Union Club, society of the ..... 1067
Union League:
French concerning the ..... 6, 16
Sessions concerning the ..... 70, 77, 222, 223
Flournoy concerning the ..... 86
Ford concerning the ..... 105
Whitaker concerning the ..... 178, 187
Taliaferro concerning the ..... 245
Baskervill concerning the ..... 374, 383, 388
Whitfield concerning the ..... 452

V.

Page.
Verner, Jim, whipping of ..... 773
Voters, law of Mississippi relative to influencing ..... 317, 318, 320, 321
treatment by negroes of democratic colored ..... 725, 726, 1048
intimidation of colored ..... 1133–1136

W.

WALBURG, LEWIS, testimony of ..... 1110–1112
resident of Columbus; captain of police ..... 1110
character of H. B. Whitfield ..... 1110–1112
character of William W. Humphries ..... 1110
Wamble, Abram, killing of ..... 280, 296, 361, 780, 781, 787, 811, 834, 867, 879, 908, 927
Waterbury, Mr., ordered to quit teaching ..... 1022
Webb, Jasper, identified by Turner ..... 771
Webb, Jasper, forces Davis to join Ku-Klux ..... 808
Webb, Ruffin, ordered to quit teaching ..... 664, 1081
Wells, Bob, whipping of ..... 672, 673
WELLS, G. WILEY, testimony of ..... 1147–1167
resident of Marshall County ..... 1147
United States district attorney for the northern district for two years ..... 1148
feeling toward northern settlers ..... 1148
results of his investigations of the Ku-Klux organization ..... 1148–1150, 1152, 1157–1160
school-house of John W. Avery burned and he warned to leave; school-scrip taken from Mr. Eaves and burned; large number of school-houses burned in Winston County, and all the schools discontinued ..... 1150
killing of Solomon Triplett ..... 1150, 1151
John Q. Triplett, two McElhaneys, and Mr. Eaves recognized by Coleman; Alexander W. Murff, school-director, forced to resign; whipping of Joe Atkins; effect upon the negroes of Ku-Klux outrages; whipping of Alfred Connell and Hake Siss; Henry Hanson shot ..... 1151
whipping of Joe Turner, E. J. Stubblefield, A. P. Huggins, and wife of Frazier Duncan; John Campbell's store robbed; disturbance in Pontotoc; release of prisoners from the Purdy jail, Tennessee ..... 1152
colored school-teacher thrown into a well; killing of Williams; three men taken from the Rienzi jail; one shot, one hung, and one whipped; whipping and hanging of Alex. Hughes: whipping of E. C. Echols and wife; outrage upon Almira Wyndham ..... 1153
whipping and hanging of Betsey Lucas; whipping of McBride, Eliza Hinton, Jesse Higgins twice, Andy Graham, and John Glenn: Mingo Rogers driven off ..... 1154
whipping of Manuel Lawrence, Green Williams, Edmund Glenn, George Maybray, twice, and Nancy Edmonds ..... 1155
killing of Turner, a freedman ..... 1152, 1155, 1156
whipping of Albert May and Jane Hotcher; killing of Isaiah Lewis ..... 1156
whipping of Willis Mask, Armistead Boyd, Joseph Brooks, Albert Thomas, Mrs. Jane Sykes, and Charles Boyd; Early Bresle shot at ..... 1157
shooting of John Honeycutt and sister ..... 1157, 1158
Mr. Newman driven away; whipping of Mr. Richardson ..... 1158
disturbance in court caused by General Lamar ..... 1160–1162
details of the burning of Shipley by Whistler ..... 1162–1164
killing of Mr. Whistler ..... 1164, 1165
character of Mr. Huggins and Miss Davis; rape on a colored girl by Mr. Freeman ..... 1165
church burned by Freeman; sentiment toward the common-school system ..... 1166
Westbrook, Bluford, Williamson, and Zachariah identified by Flint ..... 804
Whippings:
Abraham, ———, (colored,) Oktibbeha County, May, 1871 ..... 936
Adams, Thomas W., Kemper County, 1869 ..... 257
Allen, Joseph, (colored,) Lowndes County, June, 1871 ..... 424
Anderson, Lydia, (colored,) Noxubee County, June, 1871 ..... 510, 513
Atkins, Joseph, (colored,) Monroe County, March, 1871 ..... 361, 1151
Blake, Frank, (colored,) Lowndes County ..... 1042
Boyd, Armistead, (colored,) Tippah County, summer of 1871 ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Boyd, Charles, (colored,) Tippah County, March, 1871 ..... 1157
Brooks, Joseph, (colored,) Tippah County, summer of 1871 ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Butler, Santee, (colored,) Monroe County ..... 361, 362, 847, 879, 1138, 1144
Cannon, (Campbell,) Nathan, (colored,) Winston County, May, 1871 ..... 485, 486, 491, 493, 513, 638, 647

Page.
Whippings:
Cockerman, Frank, (colored,) Lowndes County, April, 1871....1081, 1083
Coleman, Robin, (colored,) Winston County, May, 1871....484, 494, 638, 647
Coleman, William, (colored,) Winston County, March, 1871....335, 474, 482, 483, 495 637, 654, 655
Coleman, William, (colored,) Winston County, compelled to leave home....484, 495 497, 498
Connell, Alfred, (colored,) Monroe County, March, 1871 .... 1151
Duncan, Frazier, wife of, (colored,) Noxubee County, March, 1871.. .... 1152
Dunning, (Dunham,) Simon, (colored,) Monroe County, summer of 1871..774, 811, 1138, 1144,
Eccles, (Echols,) E. C., Chickasaw County....330, 342, 351, 549, 879, 921, 1153
Eccles, E. C., wife of, Chickasaw County.... .... 1153
Edmonds, Nancy, (colored,) Winston County, May, 1871.... 1155
Farmer, H. W., Lowndes County....237, 418, 444
Foster, Addy, (colored,) Winston County.... 339
Gladney, George, (colored,) Winston County, May, 1871....484, 494, 638, 647
Glenn, Edmond, (colored,) Alcorn County, April, 1871.... 1155
Glenn, John, (colored,) Alcorn County, April, 1871.... 1154
Graham, Andy, (colored,) Alcorn County, April, 1871.... 1454
Green, Tillman, (colored,) Tippah County, summer of 1871....1087, 1095
Greyer, Henry, (colored,) Kemper County.... 256
Halliday, Dick, (colored,) Lowndes County, April, 1871.... 772
Harston, ———, (colored,) Lowndes County.... 395, 423
Hickman, Rufus, (colored,) Kemper County, spring of 1871.... 587
Hicks, Jim, and wife, (colored,) Lowndes County, March, 1871:
Whitfield's account of.... 417, 445
Galloway's account of.... 671, 672
Turner's account of.... 773
his own account of.... 891
Gray's account of.... 894, 895
Perkins's account of.... 900
Humphries's account of.... 1038
Higgins, Jesse, (colored,) Oktibbeha County, March, 1871.... 1154
Hinton, Eliza, (colored,) Noxubee County, March, 1870....473, 1154
Honeysuckle, Fanny, (colored,) Alcorn County, March, 1871.... .... 340
Hotcher, Jane, (colored,) Noxubee County, April, 1871.... 1156
Huggins, A. P., Monroe County, April, 1871:
Powers's account of.... 587
Lee's account of.... 787
Gholson's account of....845, 846, 879
Reynolds's account of....905, 906, 919
Stone's account of.... 1022
Wells's account of.... 1152
Hughes, Aleck, (colored,) Noxubee County, April, 1871....340, 473, 474, 512, 1152
Irion, George, (colored,) Lowndes County, April, 1871.... 672
Jackson, Robert, Noxubee County, March, 1870.... .... 480, 514
Job, Zach, (colored,) Noxubee County, 1871.... 340
Leadbetter, Henry, (colored,) Noxubee County, 1871.... 340
Lowry, Isam, (colored,) Noxubee County....395, 425, 473. 619, 620
Lucas, Betsey, (colored,) Noxubee County, March, 1870...469, 470, 514, 548, 558, 1154
Mask, Silas, (Willis,) (colored,) Tippah County, summer of 1871..1086, 1098, 1099, 1157
May, Albert, (colored,) Noxubee County, April, 1871.... .... 1156
Maybray, George, (colored,) Alcorn County, March, 1871.... 1155
McBride, Cornelius, Chickasaw County, March, 1871....284, 365. 437, 921, 1154
McClendon, (McKennon,) Mr., Monroe County....849, 879, 909, 921
McMillan, William, (colored,) Noxubee County, August, 1869.... 358, 880
Miller, William, (colored,) Winston County.... .... 336, 340
Mitchell, Mordecai, (colored,) Winston County, May, 1871..484, 493, 494, 638, 647, 648, 655
Murphy, Alfred, (colored,) Lowndes County, April, 1871.... 772
Murphy, Edward, (colored,) Lowndes County, April, 1871.... 672, 772
Owen, Mr., Monroe County.... .... 909, 921
Oyster, (Rogers,) Daniel, (colored,) Oktibbeha, April, 1871.... 988
Peter, ———, (colored,) Monroe County, April, 1871.... .... 281
Reynolds, ———, Lowndes County, 1871....697, 707, 708, 1037, 1038
Rice, Moses, (colored,) Oktibbeha County, May, 1871.... 436
Richardson, Mr., Tishomingo County, April, 1871.... 1158
Shubble, George, (colored,) Alcorn County, March, 1871.... 340

Page.

Whippings:
Siss, Huke, (colored,) Monroe County, March, 1871 ..... 1151
Skinner, Alfred, (colored,) Monroe County, 1871 ..... 278
Stewart, Aleck, (colored,) Lowndes County, March, 1871 ..... 277
Stinson, (Seaton,) Mr., Noxubee County, 1871 ..... 697, 707, 708, 1037, 1038
Stubblefield, E. J., Alcorn County, June, 1871 ..... 1152
Swansy, Mr., Monroe County ..... 709, 921
Thomas, Albert, (colored,) Tippah County, summer of 1871 ..... 1087, 1095, 1157
Thompson, ——— (colored,) Lowndes County, November, 1870 ..... 799, 800
Turner, Joseph, (colored,) Lowndes County, summer of 1871 ..673, 770, 775, 1060, 1152
Vernon, James, (colored,) Lowndes County, 1871 ..... 773
Wells, Robert, (colored,) Lowndes County, winter of 1870 ..... 672, 673
Whitfield, Alfred, (colored,) Monroe County ..... 269, 270, 844, 845, 902, 917
Williams, Green, (colored,) Alcorn County, April, 1871 ..... 1155
Willis, Aleck, (Rhett,) colored, Monroe County, summer of 1871 ..774, 811, 1138, 1144, 1184
Wilson, Mr., Monroe County ..... 909, 921
Names not given ..... 587
in Lowndes County ..... 672, 678, 719, 720, 772
in Alabama ..... 795–797
in Monroe ..... 1146
WHITAKER, M. A., testimony of ..... 165–205
resident of Meridian, and a lawyer ..... 165
chairman of committee of safety at time of riot ..... 172
served in confederate army ..... 193
execution of the laws ..... 165, 167, 186, 201
disguised men, operations of ..... 190, 191, 199
riot at Meridian ..... 168
riot at Meridian, investigation by Judge Leachman of ..... 184
concerning William Sturgis, mayor of Meridian ..... 172
concerning ——— Price ..... 168, 169, 179, 180, 181, 182, 187, 188, 189, 203
concerning Adam Kennard, (colored) ..... 168, 180, 181, 182, 187, 188, 202
concerning Warren Tyler, (colored) ..... 170, 171, 173–177, 180, 182, 189, 190, 191, 194
concerning Dennis, *alias* Clopton, (colored) ..... 171, 172, 173, 178, 190, 192, 196, 204
concerning J. Aaron Moore, (colored) ..... 171, 173
concerning ——— Reynolds ..... 179
killing of Judge Bramlette ..... 176, 182
killing of ——— Williams, (colored) ..... 165, 166, 185, 191, 199, 200
three colored men hung ..... 179, 184, 198, 200, 204
burning of store of Sturgis ..... 171, 185, 195, 199
burning of house of J. Aaron Moore, (colored) ..... 178, 185, 199, 200
burning of colored church at Meridian ..... 178, 185, 200, 204
diagram of court-room floor at Meridian ..... 174
armed men from Alabama carried colored men away from Meridian ..... 170, 171, 200, 201
feeling between the races ..... 182, 188, 195, 202
negroes voting democratic ticket ..... 190
sentiment of people toward the Government ..... 193
concerning Union Leagues ..... 178, 187
White Rose, the society of the ..... 477, 501
Whitfield, Alfred, whipping of ..... 269, 270, 844, 845, 902, 917
Whitfield, Henry B., letter of, to Dr. Matt Clay ..... 605, 606
Humphries's opinion of the character of ..... 1051, 1052, 1067, 1068
Walburg's opinion of the character of, and relative to his business affairs ..... 1110–1112
Morton's opinion of the character of ..... 1112–1115
Lyon's ..... 1115–1125
Cason's ..... 1130–1133
Matthews's ..... 1175–1180
Harrison's ..... 1180–1183
WHITFIELD, HENRY B., testimony of ..... 416–453
resident of Columbus since February, 1839; native of Georgia, and son of Ex-Governor Whitfield; mayor of Columbus ..... 416
lawyer by profession ..... 417
member of board of school directors of Lowndes County ..... 418, 443
disguised men, operations of bands of ..... 417, 430, 435, 438, 439
disguised men, colored men whipped and killed by ..... 426, 434
disguised men, colored men intimidated by ..... 427, 442, 453
killing of ——— Mason, (colored) ..... 423
killing of Dick Malone, (colored) ..... 426
killing of ——— Triplett, (colored) ..... 432, 433

Page.

WHITFIELD, HENRY B., testimony of—Continued.
killing of Jack Dupree, (colored) ..... 435
killing of Aleck Page, (colored) ..... 435
hanging of Joe Blacksmith, (colored) ..... 424
whipping of James Hicks, (colored) ..... 417, 445
whipping of ——— Harston, (colored) ..... 423
whipping of Joe Allen, (colored) ..... 424
whipping of Isham Lowry, (colored) ..... 425
whipping of Moses Rice, (colored) ..... 436
whipping of Abraham ———, (colored) ..... 436
whipping of Colonel A. P. Huggins ..... 430, 435
whipping of Cornelius McBride ..... 437
whipping of two men in Columbus ..... 419
attack on Colonel Flournoy ..... 437
threats against H. W. Farmer, teacher ..... 418, 444
driving away of Rev. Mr. McLachlan ..... 436
school system, school-tax, &c ..... 422, 443, 446, 447, 448, 452
school-teachers ordered to stop teaching ..... 420, 421, 422, 446
circular of school superintendent of Lowndes County ..... 453–459
trials of Ku-Klux at Oxford ..... 437, 444, 449
no arrests of Ku-Klux by State authorities ..... 431
State government of Mississippi ..... 450, 451
disfranchisement ..... 447
concerning John K. Taliaferro ..... 440, 441
concerning Union Leagues ..... 452
Whittaker, John, confessions as to Ku-Klux ..... 1076, 1079
Wiler, Fullen, identified by Turner ..... 771
Williams, ———, killling of ..... 1153
Williams, Green, whipping of ..... 1155
Williams, Joseph, killing of ..... 74, 102, 114, 116, 125, 165, 166, 185, 191, 199, 200
Williams, Laney, identified by Turner ..... 771
Willis, Aleck, (Rhett,) whipping of ..... 774, 811, 1138, 1144, 1184
Willis, Burrill, (alleged Ku-Klux,) indentified by Davis ..... 809
Willis, Burrill, (alleged Ku-Klux,) identified by Willis ..... 1185
Willis, Jefferson, (alleged Ku-Klux,) identified by Davis ..... 809
Willis, Jefferson, (alleged Ku-Klux,) identified by Willis ..... 1185
Willis, John, identified by Willis ..... 1184
Willis, Plummer, identified by Willis ..... 1184
WILLIS, WASHINGTON, (colored,) testimony of ..... 1184–1185
resident of Monroe County ..... 1184
whipping of Alexander Willis by the Ku-Klux; recognized Barbour Quarles, William Butler, Plummer Willis, John Willis, Pope Mays, and John Roberts ..... 1184
Jefferson Willis and Burrill Willis ..... 1185
WILSON, JAMES T., sr., testimony of ..... 1145–1147
resident of Monroe County; a farmer; fifty years old; native of the State ..... 1145
was visited twice by the Ku-Klux ..... 1145, 1146
whipping of a colored woman ..... 1146
killing of Mr. Trailer ..... 1147
Wilson, Mr., whipping of ..... 909, 921
Winston County, burning of school-houses and churches in ..... 467, 493, 587, 588, 601, 640, 650, 699
killings in ..... 230
no intimidation of voters in ..... 641
killed in: Allen Bird, Mr. Cherry, Jerry ———, Johnston Keitt, George Murph, Jesse Thomas, Solomon Triplett, Nelson Yarborough—8; shot in: Mr. Parks—1; whipped in: Nathan Cannon, Reuben Coleman, William Coleman, Nancy Edwards, Addy Foster, George Gladney, William Miller, Mordecai Mitchell—8, (for page see names elsewhere.)
Winston, Mr., beating by George Triplett of ..... 1041
Wissler, Mr., killing of ..... 476, 501, 506, 521–523, 1164, 1165
Wissler, Mr., killing of Mr. Shipley by ..... 480, 481, 506, 523–526, 596–599, 1162–1164
Witnesses, (see Testimony of.)
Wolf, Jehu, turns State's evidence ..... 773, 774
Woodmansee, Dr., character of speeches of ..... 1023, 1024
Woods, A., captain of a Klan ..... 1086
Woods, Mr., attempt to kill ..... 782
Wyndham, Almira, outrage upon ..... 1153

## Y.


| | Page. |
|---|---|
| Yarborough, Nelson, killing of | 641, 657 |
| YATES, Captain GEORGE W., testimony of | 793–798 |
| captain of the Seventh Cavalry, United States Army; stationed at Meridian | 793 |
| killing of a negro; Stillwell recognized; he proves an *alibi* | 793, 796 |
| negro shot, his house fired, and he and two children burned | 793, 794, 796 |
| attack upon Governor Powers's house, in Kemper County, and the killing of George Evans | 794 |
| his views as to the Ku-Klux organization | 795 |
| sympathy with the Ku-Klux | 797 |
| two colored men whipped in Alabama | 795–797 |
| Yerger, Mr., case of, (killing of Mr. Crane) | 520, 221 |
| Young, George, whipping by negroes of | 1042 |
| Young, Samuel, identified by Flint | 804 |

# TESTIMONY.

## CONDITION OF AFFAIRS IN THE SOUTHERN STATES.

### MISSISSIPPI.

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 8, 1871.

B. B. EGGLESTON sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In what part of the State of Mississippi do you live?

*Answer.* I live in Columbus, Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you lived in that State?

*Answer.* I went there in December, 1865.

*Question.* What public position, if any, do you occupy there?

*Answer.* I am assessor of internal revenue at this time.

*Question.* In what parts of the State do your duties require you to go?

*Answer.* My duties do not take me away from my office really; my district extends over about one-third of the State. The revenue is assessed by assistants under me, and they report to my office.

*Question.* Are you, through your assistants, in communication with that part of the State comprised in your district?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Please go on and state to the committee any facts within your knowledge, or that have come to your knowledge through those sources, tending to show the existence of any organization intended to interfere with person and property, or with the free expression of opinion.

*Answer.* Personally I know nothing about any outrages being committed in Mississippi, nor of any organization of any kind. All I know is from hearsay and from reports. I am satisfied in my own mind that there are organizations or that there is an organization existing in the State, even in the county in which I live. Its object is to carry their ends in political matters, I think; that is my opinion.

*Question.* What are the facts which have brought you to that conclusion?

*Answer.* Reports of outrages being committed.

*Question.* In what manner have those reports reached you?

*Answer.* From conversation with different parties, and from seeing accounts of them published in the papers.

*Question.* What offenses of that character have become known to you either from conversation with the parties themselves, or from any information upon which you rely as credible, and from which you can give us a statement of the general condition of things existing there?

*Answer.* There have been some persons whipped in the country; at least I have been told so.

*Question.* Have the persons themselves who have been the sufferers told you so?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think any person who has been molested by them has told me so. There was a colored man who gave me an account of a party who were after him one night, but they did not hurt him because he got away.

*Question.* How recent was that occurrence?

*Answer.* That occurred, I should think, three months ago.

*Question.* What did he say in reference to the manner in which he was pursued, and the character of the persons who pursued him?

*Answer.* He said that there was a party of disguised men on the road, and he heard his name spoken, and upon that he got away. The same party, or it was supposed to be the same party, visited some quarters near where he lived, and whipped two or three persons, I believe; two, I think it was.

*Question.* At that same time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was this colored man a leader among the colored people?

*Answer.* I do not know that he was.

*Question.* Did he sustain any relations that made him obnoxious to the neighborhood?

*Answer.* I do not know that. I met him on Mr. Lewis's plantation, where he had formerly lived. He came over there and reported the fact to Mr. Lewis. Mr. Lewis was a northern man; he came there and reported the fact to him, and I heard the report. That is the way I came to know about it.

*Question.* Was that the only person who has been visited by these persons in disguise with whom you have had any conversation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The only one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To the extent of your knowledge, are persons at liberty, in the district in which you discharge your duties as assessor, to express freely and without molestation their political sentiments?

*Answer.* I think they are at this time; yes, sir.

*Question.* There is no hinderance?

*Answer.* I never have heard of any; nobody has ever said anything to me. My assistants have never been interfered with in the discharge of their duties in any way.

*Question.* Can the laws be, and are they, executed through that portion of the State with which you are acquainted?

*Answer.* I believe they are.

*Question.* And do you believe that life, person, and property are secure within that district under the administration of justice there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if a man goes quietly about his business, and does not talk politics, &c., I do not think there is any danger. A man may be in danger by talking politics and making himself obnoxious to those people.

*Question.* Suppose he talks politics in the ordinary way of expressing his opinions, does that bring upon him any hostility?

*Answer.* I do not think it would; not at this time.

*Question.* I understand you to say that you believe men of both political parties are at liberty to talk freely about political questions, and will incur no danger by doing so.

*Answer.* At this time; yes, sir.

*Question.* Has it been so for the past two years there?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think it has. During our canvasses and campaigns there the people become very much excited; and I think there have been times there when a man was in danger if he expressed himself very freely.

*Question.* Does that remark apply to men of both political parties, or only to those of one political party?

*Answer.* Well, I think it applies to one.

*Question.* Which one?

*Answer.* I have never heard of any threats from the republican party. I have heard them from the other.

*Question.* Threats on what ground?

*Answer.* Well, that the leaders of the republican party are objectionable to the people there. I frequently hear the remark on the street in our city that as soon as they get power they intend to clean out all such men as myself and those of that stripe. I frequently hear that remark. No person says anything to me specially about it. They all treat me kindly.

*Question.* Do you understand that remark as applying simply to the exercise of their political power, or to the exercise of violent means?

*Answer.* I think it is more for political effect that they talk that way than anything else. They intend it to have the effect of causing people to keep quiet and allowing them to go on.

*Question.* What are the facts upon which you base your belief as to the existence of a secret organization there?

*Answer.* As I have said before, from what I have heard about their being seen; and some of them have been taken. In the case where they visited Lieutenant Colonel Powers's place, one of them was killed. The place of Colonel Powers, lieutenant-governor of the State, was visited by them a month or six weeks ago, and in the affray one of them was killed; so the colonel told me.

*Question.* Were those who went masked?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it one of the persons who were masked that was killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They did not hurt anybody on the plantation; they got up a parley, and while the parley was going on one of the party was killed, and they then dispersed.

*Question.* For what purpose did they visit that plantation?

*Answer.* They said they wanted a young man who was overseer on the place.

*Question.* Did you know him?

*Answer.* No, sir; only by reputation.

*Question.* Was Colonel Powers there at the time the visit occurred?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was on his other plantation when it occurred, and went over there; and from there came to our place, and I was talking with him about it.

*Question.* Then you have no personal knowledge upon that subject, and have had no conversation with any other person than the one you have named?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Has there been any difficulty encountered in executing the internal revenue laws in the district?

*Answer.* None at all; no trouble whatever in that respect.

*Question.* How much of the State does your district embrace?

*Answer.* About one-third of the State.

*Question.* Can you name the counties embraced in your district?

*Answer.* Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Choctaw, Carroll, Holmes, Attala, Leake, Winston, Noxubee, Kemper, Neshoba, Lauderdale, Newton, Clark, Jasper, Smith, Scott, Rankin, Madison, Hinds, Warren, Yazoo, Issaquena, and Washington; twenty-four counties in all. It is a little over a third of the State, running from east to west right through the middle of the State. The State is divided into three districts, and mine is the middle district; the Vicksburg district.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Where did these troubles occur of which you heard?

*Answer.* The one at Colonel Powers's place was in Winston County; the other was just in the edge of Noxubee, close to Lowndes County, in the northwest corner of Noxubee County.

*Question.* On the Alabama line?

*Answer.* Lowndes County is on the Alabama line, but the occurrence took place in the northwest corner of Noxubee County, which is also a border county.

*Question.* Which one occurred there?

*Answer.* The one the colored boy told me about.

*Question.* Where was the attack on the plantation?

*Answer.* That was in Winston County, a little southwest of Noxubee

*Question.* In which county do you live?

*Answer.* I live at Columbus, in Lowndes County.

*Question.* Have you heard of these organizations in other counties of your district?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of them in different counties.

*Question.* In about how many?

*Answer.* I have heard of them in a number of instances. You are, doubtless, aware of the occurrence which took place in Pontotoc County.

*Question.* What was that?

*Answer.* I know of it from newspaper report only. Some disguised men went in there after Colonel Flournoy, and he shot one of them.

*Question.* That is not in your district?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is in the third district; the northern district, toward the Tennessee line.

*Question.* Have you heard of any of these organizations in the Mississippi River counties of your district?

*Answer.* No, sir, I have not.

*Question.* Have you heard of any in the western part of your district?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They seem, then, to be in the eastern part, so far as you know?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, so far as I know.

*Question.* Have you heard of their appearance in the lower district of the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* About when did these occurrences begin to take place there?

*Answer.* I hardly know; I have given the time of the two transactions of which I have heard. I have myself received a number of anonymous letters, purporting to come from this klan; I received a number of them two years ago, giving me so many days in which to wind up my business and quit the State, but I never paid any attention to them, and nobody ever troubled me.

*Question.* You were somewhat prominent in the affairs of the State at first?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, for a little while.

*Question.* Were you the republican candidate for governor there at the first election?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Where did you live before you went to Mississippi in December, 1865?

*Answer.* In Ohio.

*Question.* In Pickaway County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Were you in the Army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I desire to correct the statement I made; I was not living in Pickaway County.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* I have heard so.

*Answer.* I lived there at the commencement of the war. When I went into the Army my family moved up into the northern part of the State, so that my children could go to school there, and there they remained during the war. When the war closed I went to Mississippi, and my family followed me from northern Ohio; consequently I was not living in Pickaway County at the time I went to Mississippi.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* You retained your legal residence in Ohio during the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But you never happened to live there after you went into the Army?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you say there was an organization in Mississippi of men who were in the habit of going about in disguise?

*Answer.* I believe there is; I do not know that to be the fact.

*Question.* Have they been in the habit of parading, in disguise, about your district for the last twelve months?

*Answer.* It is so reported; I never saw them.

*Question.* Is it denied?

*Answer.* I do not think it is.

*Question.* Have you heard of their committing such outrages as whippings?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard it frequently.

*Question.* Are these acts denied?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that they are.

*Question.* Upon what class of persons are these outrages committed?

*Answer.* Generally upon freedmen.

*Question.* Is there a condition of terrorism upon the part of freedmen and others, produced by these occurrences?

*Answer.* I am not prepared to say.

*Question.* Do you have any decided opinions as to the purpose of this organization?

*Answer.* I believe it is political.

*Question.* What do you mean by political?

*Answer.* I mean that they intend to use it for political purposes.

*Question.* Do you mean party purposes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I give that as my opinion. I do not know anything about it.

*Question.* To advance the success of one party?

*Answer.* Yes; I think so.

*Question.* What party?

*Answer.* The democratic party, I think, as they term it down there.

*Question.* Have outrages been committed upon any others than republicans?

*Answer.* I have not heard of any. There were two men, so I am told, whipped in our town, or near to it. The whipping of these men had nothing to do with politics. They were two men there, mechanics, who were taken up, charged with trying to get their employer to go out, in order that they might garrote him and rob him. They were put in jail, tried, and acquitted. The next night, or perhaps a night or two afterward, they were taken out and severely whipped; or, that is the report. It was the current rumor there that they had been whipped, and the men left the country.

*Question.* You say you do not think that was connected with politics?

*Answer.* I do not know that it was.

*Question.* You mean that the main part of these offenses are of a political character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have there been any convictions of persons engaged in committing these offenses?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Have there been any prosecutions?

*Answer.* None that I know of.

*Question.* When you say that the laws are executed and have been in that district of country, you mean that to apply to offenses other than those of this character?

*Answer.* I think the law can be executed, if you can find any persons guilty of these offenses. I think they can be arrested and tried, without any trouble.

*Question.* The difficulty is in finding out the parties?

*Answer.* If there is an organization of that kind existing you cannot find out the parties.

*Question.* Why?

*Answer.* If eight or ten men disguise themselves and commit a depredation in the night time, and then go home and throw off their disguises, and nobody knows them, I do not see how you would ever reach such men.

*Question.* I confess it would require an extraordinary exertion to reach them. Has that exertion been made?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* Have any efforts been made by the authorities to reach them?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* What is the sentiment of the community in regard to these offenses? Have there been any public meetings held denouncing them?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard any persons denounce them; or have you seen any denunciations in the public press of that locality?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not in our locality.

*Question.* Suppose the leading white citizens of the county—who, I suppose, are principally democrats, are they not——

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a majority of the white people are democrats.

*Question.* Suppose the leading white citizens should set their faces against this thing, and endeavor to suppress it, do you think they would be successful?

*Answer.* Yes. sir; I think the public there could put down anything of that kind.

*Question.* Could the republicans do it?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know; I do not think they could.

*Question.* You think that the other party might, by publicly expressing their condemnation of such proceedings?

*Answer.* If such an organization exists—I do not say that it does, for I do not know, although in my opinion it does—if it exists, I do not think it extends to more than one political party; for I have been pretty familiar with the republican party, and am satisfied that there is no such organization in that party. If there was, I think I would know of it, and I know of no such organization in the party.

*Question.* Have these operations had the effect of deterring voters from voting at your elections?

*Answer.* I think that is the object of it.

*Question.* To intimidate men and keep them away from the polls? Has it had that effect in any of your elections?

*Answer.* I do not know that it has had any such effect yet in our State.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Have there been any elections there since you heard of this organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we had an election there last year, and this organization was said to exist in our State two years ago. I received anonymous letters, signed "K. K. K," two years ago in the State.

*Question.* Had there been any of these visitations then?

*Answer.* I think not.

*Question.* So you cannot yet judge what would be the effect of those visitations upon the elections?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* There have been no elections since they commenced these outrages?

*Answer.* No, sir, not since then.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Anybody might have sent you these notices whether such an organization existed or not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; anybody might have sent them to plague me.

*Question.* They were not followed up by anything?

*Answer.* No, sir; I went on and attended to my business just as though I had not received them at all.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Bad republicans might send such papers, in order to give the idea that there was such an organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that might be the case; and some friend might have sent them just to plague me.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* What rank did you have in the Army?

*Answer.* I held different ranks.

*Question.* You began as captain?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What rank had you when you left the Army?
*Answer.* Brigadier general.
*Question.* Of cavalry?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Have you had Union Leagues organized through Mississippi?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Headed by white men?
*Answer.* In some instances I think they were; in some they were not.
*Question.* Did they extend pretty generally over the State?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think they were general over the State.
*Question.* How long ago did they exist?
*Answer.* I think they were organized in 1867, probably.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you belong to that league?
*Answer.* No, sir.

---

WASHINGTON, *June* 12, 1871.

O. C. FRENCH sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In what part of the State of Mississippi do you live?
*Answer.* I live in Natchez.
*Question.* How long have you resided there, or in the State?
*Answer.* I have resided in the State since November, 1867.
*Question.* Have you been a member of the legislature of Mississippi?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am now.
*Question.* A member of the house or of the senate?
*Answer.* Of the house.
*Question.* State whether, as such member, it became your duty to make any investigation into the riot which occurred at Meridian; and, if so, in what capacity you acted.
*Answer.* I was appointed a member of the house committee to make the investigation of the riot that occurred there in March last, and was elected by the members of the committee as chairman of the joint committee; in that capacity I acted during the investigation.
*Question.* Proceed to state as briefly as you can the general facts that were developed before that committee.
*Answer.* The facts, as they were developed, according to my understanding of them, showed that the causes which led to the riot grew out of the fact that certain parties were in the habit of coming in there from Alabama. It was also developed in the investigation that certain parties living in Meridian, and in that vicinity, sympathized with those parties, and perhaps were aware of the time when they were coming in there, and the purpose for which they were coming. This knowledge, I think, was confined to a limited number; it was not generally known or understood, I think, by the citizens of Meridian that those parties were coming in for the purpose of committing outrages. But they had sympathizers there, those who gave information to them and aided them in their operations; at least that appeared to be developed by the testimony before the committee.
*Question.* In what manner did they come from Alabama?
*Answer.* On the trains which came from there; for instance, they would come in the evening, perhaps about 11 o'clock, and would leave on the return trains, about 3 o'clock in the morning. On two or three occasions, however, they came in and remained there over one day. At the time when they came in and carried back with them some colored men, they were there during the entire day; they came in the morning, remained all day, and went off at night in the train, taking three persons whom they claimed to have arrested by authority. It was shown by the investigation that there was no proper authority for arresting those persons. They were taken off to Alabama, and nothing has been heard of them since; we were unable to elicit any information with regard to them.
*Question.* Did those persons coming from Alabama to Meridian assume any disguise, or were they in their ordinary apparel?
*Answer.* They were in their ordinary apparel. We made every effort we could to

ascertain the names of the parties, and we did succeed in obtaining the names of those who appeared to be the leaders. The immediate cause which led to the riot in Meridian, as represented by parties who appeared to be in symapthy with the riot, grew out of the fact that there was a meeting held, on the Saturday before the riot occurred, by the colored citizens of Meridian. Different representations were made relative to the conduct of the parties who participated in the meeting. Some said that incendiary speeches were made by colored people on that occasion; others state that no improper language was used. From all the information that we could get we found that statements were made to the colored people, that if they could not in any other way prevent these outrages being committed, they would have to try and prevent them by force of arms; but it was advised that they should not, as a body, attempt any such thing, but to do so in connection with the white people who desired to maintain peace there and to prevent these raids being made from Alabama. On Saturday evening, after the meeting was held by these colored people, there was a fire there in which there was destroyed some property belonging to a gentleman by the name of Sturgis, a brother of Mayor Sturgis. That created some considerable excitement, and there was some disturbance in Meridian on that Saturday evening. One or two colored men were arrested and held under guard over Sunday. On Monday another meeting was held by the white citizens there, for the ostensible purpose, as they reported to us, of making representations for changes in the offices there, particularly in the one held by Mayor Sturgis. It was also proven before our committee that the meeting passed a resolution, in which they requested Mayor Sturgis to vacate his office as mayor, and also to leave the place. It was also proven by witnesses who gave testimony, that it was talked of around town, by parties who participated in this meeting, that there was going to be such a meeting for the purpose of getting rid of Mayor Sturgis, and ordering him out of the place. That meeting took place on Monday, perhaps from 11 to 2 o'clock. At 3 o'clock the trial came on of the colored men who had been placed under arrest for making incendiary speeches on the Saturday morning before. During the progress of that trial the riot was inaugurated and occurred, and three men were killed at that time. There was a general riot and disturbance there, and very great excitement through the town that evening. Three other men were arrested and placed in the care of the sheriff; it was not proven or claimed by anybody that those three men had committed any offense. They were known there as prominent colored men; that is the way they were designated before the committee. In fact, one of them went to the sheriff and asked his protection. As represented by parties who testified before us, they were placed under guard for their protection. They remained under guard Monday and Tuesday. On Tuesday night they were taken out of the room where they were under guard, carried off into the woods, and murdered. We could not get any statement under oath as to who murdered these men. We obtained statements made not under oath, one of the marshal of Meridian, Mr. Patten, in which he said that he was satisfied that Mr. Reynolds, of Alabama, was the leader of the party who took these men out and killed them.

*Question.* What part of Alabama was he from?

*Answer.* From Sumter County, Alabama; I cannot tell his post office address.

*Question.* You say you obtained statements made not under oath; why did you not examine men under oath?

*Answer.* We have the statement which he made under oath, but he would not make that statement under oath; he gave that statement before the committee as his opinion, but he would not swear to it. He said that this man Reynolds came to him after these men had been taken out and murdered, and told him where he would find them; that he knew they were there, for he had just seen them there. The marshal said that he took some men and went out there and found the bodies as Reynolds represented to him he would find them. It was difficult for us to get any positive testimony; in fact we could not get any under oath, as to who did any of the killing. Parties would say to us, not under oath, that they were satisfied they knew the parties who were instrumental in doing the killing there.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did they make those statements while on the witness stand, or afterwards, or before?

*Answer.* When on the witness stand they would not say they knew anything about who did the killing; unofficially they said they did know, but they said it was worth their lives to state what they knew.

*Question.* Did you make a record of what they so stated?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a record was made and published of what they said under oath, and also a record was made of the statements they made not under oath, which record was filed with the governor.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did you hear those statements?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were generally made to me.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Were those statements made under oath submitted to the legislature?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And printed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Have you a copy of them with you?
*Answer.* I have furnished the chairman of this committee with a copy. [See appendix to the testimony of this witness, page 23.]

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* As disclosed before the committee, what was the general purpose of the men who came from Alabama?
*Answer.* They claimed that there were some colored people who had come from Alabama; that the men they arrested and carried back were under some charges; but we could not get any statement as to what those charges were. They said they came to arrest them and carry them back to be tried for offenses they had committed.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was it ascertained that in fact they were originally from Alabama?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. But there were no charges sworn to against them that we could ascertain; and we could not ascertain that they were placed on trial when carried back, from the fact that we could not get any information of what became of them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How many colored men were so taken?
*Answer.* Three.
*Question.* Do you remember their names?
*Answer.* I do not remember their names; I have their names recorded.
*Question.* Do their names appear in the testimony in this pamphlet?
*Answer.* I think not; perhaps they do, but I am not certain. A Mr. Price, who was superintendent of education in Meridian, was arrested on some charge. Some men came over from Sumter County, Alabama, claiming to be a deputy sheriff. He remained round there, as he said, for the purpose of making arrests; but he never made any. He was assaulted one night, and this man Price was accused of being the leader of the party who assaulted him. When the trial of Price came on, these men came from Alabama, as they said, to see that justice was done, and that the man was properly punished. The trial was to be before the mayor. The sheriff, the city marshal, and several prominent citizens of Meridian went to the mayor, and requested that he should not try Price; they said they thought perhaps the charges were made up against him; they did not know whether they were or not; but that they thought it would lead to disturbance if the trial was proceeded with, and they requested Price to leave Meridian. He was released from arrest, and left Meridian, and never has returned there.
*Question.* Do you say Mr. Price was superintendent of education?
*Answer.* He was not the superintendent of education; in that I was mistaken; he was the principal teacher there.
*Question.* He was charged with assailing the man who claimed to be a deputy sheriff from Alabama?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. We made an investigation of that matter, and found that the man who claimed to be a deputy sheriff had no requisition from anybody, and no official character whatever.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was it ascertained that the assault was made on him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was in this way: They went to where he was at night, and ordered him to leave there, and it was shown that they gave him some rough treatment; knocked him down.
*Question.* Knocked who down?
*Answer.* This man who claimed to be deputy sheriff.
*Question.* Who else was with this teacher?
*Answer.* It was not proven who the parties were.
*Question.* Were his companions colored or white?
*Answer.* This man claimed that, in common parlance, they were Ku-Klux in disguise; he could not tell whether they were colored or not. We failed to get any positive testimony as to whether this man Price was one of the parties or not.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He was not tried?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* He left without being tried?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And with the connivance of the officers?

*Answer.* By the consent and at the request of the officers, on the ground that they thought, if they attempted to put him on trial in Meridian at that time, while these men were there from Alabama, it would create disturbance.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Could they not have postponed the trial?

*Answer.* They released him from arrest, and requested him to leave.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* How far is Meridian from the Alabama State line.

*Answer.* Some five or six miles.

*Question.* Is this Sumter County the adjoining county in Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it immediately adjoins Lauderdale County, in which Meridian is.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How many persons came from Alabama to Meridian?

*Answer.* That was variously estimated; all the way from one hundred to two hundred and fifty. You will find in the testimony there statements of parties that as many as one hundred and fifty-odd came over at one time.

*Question.* Were they armed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and stacked their arms in the street.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* When were those parties in Meridian?

*Answer.* Prior to the riot.

*Question.* Not at the time of the riot.

*Answer.* Some ten days before the riot. The cause of the meeting which led to the riot, as was ascertained, was something like this: A committee had been appointed to go to Jackson and wait upon the governor, and represent to him the condition of affairs. They did so, and when they returned to Meridian they called a meeting for the purpose of reporting what they had done, and what the governor said.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* That was the Saturday night meeting to which you have referred?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and the meeting at which it was said incendiary speeches were made.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Who were the committee?

*Answer.* One was a man named Clopton, sometimes know as Dennis, who was killed, and another was named Isaac Radford, and another was named Krizer.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Those were the three men who made a report to that meeting?

*Answer.* Yes sir.

*Question.* Were they the three men who were arrested for making incendiary speeches?

*Answer.* One of them, Clopton, was arrested. Another who was arrested was named Warren Tyler, a school teacher. He was the man, I think, giving testimony at the time the riot commenced.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was the character of those speeches given in the testimony?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; you will find in the testimony there a statement of one man who made a speech, a Mr. Moore, a representative from that county; he gave an account of his speech. Other parties also stated the character of his speech, as will appear from that testimony. It is also stated in the testimony that some language was used by those men which was not judicious.

*Question.* Can you repeat the language?

*Answer.* Not exactly; but it was stated that this man Tyler, who was killed, said that if they could not have peace in any other way, they would have to do as the Indians had done there on a former occasion. Some time before that an Indian was killed in Meridian, in a drunken brawl, and the tribe or band to which he belonged came back and killed a citizen of Meridian. It was said that Tyler referred to that, and said that if they could not have peace in any other way, they would have to attempt the measures then adopted by the Indians, and for every one of their men who was killed or carried off, do the same to the people there.

*Question.* Is there a full report of those speeches in this testimony?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; as full a report as we could get.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Will you give us a brief summary of what was developed on the trial that was in progress when the riot was commenced—the trial of the three persons who were arrested for making incendiary speeches in the meeting of Saturday?

*Answer.* They were placed upon trial; Mr. Bramlette was the name of the justice holding the investigation. A man named ———— was testifying, and made some statement in regard to a conversation that had occurred upon the street, between him and Mr. Tyler; after he had got through Tyler asked him to continue on the witness stand for a moment, as he desired to call two witnesses to impeach his testimony. As Tyler said that this man picked up a stick, which appeared to be the marshal's cane—a large hickory cane, which was upon the table before the justice of the peace—and started towards him; Tyler started back and began to step backwards; at that the firing commenced. It will appear from the testimony that some testified that Tyler fired the first shot; others testified that he had no pistol. We could not ascertain who fired the first shot; the evidence was conflicting; but the firing commenced at that time, and Judge Bramlette, who was holding court, was killed; Clopton, who was one of those arrested for making incendiary speeches, was wounded and thrown from the second-story window, and carried back into the sheriff's office; his throat was cut while he was in the sheriff's office.

*Question.* Does that appear in the testimony?

*Answer.* You will find it in the testimony given by the sheriff.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Was his throat cut the same day, during this transaction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the same day, immediately during the time of the riot. Tyler succeeded in getting away; the trial was going on in the second story of the building, and he got into a shop some two or three hundred yards away. He was found there and killed by a posse under the control of the deputy sheriff. You will see by the testimony of the deputy sheriff that he considered the party who shot this man as acting as a part of his posse. Then those parties that I spoke of a little while ago as having been killed on Tuesday night were arrested, one wounded on the streets, and placed in the hands of the sheriff, and kept under guard Monday night, and all day on Tuesday; and on Tuesday night they were taken out and killed. Moore, the representative from that county, was there at the time of the trial, and it was supposed by everybody in the court-house that he had been killed at the time the firing commenced. He fell down by the side of Judge Bramlette, the body of the judge lying partly on top of him. After the court-house was cleared he got out and went off into the woods. His house, among others, was burned. Three or four parties were organized and went in search of him and tried to find him. A special train was chartered on the Meridian road, and a party sent down to find and arrest him, but he succeeded in getting away to Jackson. The three men who were killed were killed on Tuesday night. On Tuesday, as the party from Alabama was going back to Alabama, they shot a woman about six miles out from Meridian, on a plantation there. These were all the persons who were killed.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* When did that riot occur?

*Answer.* I think it was on the 4th of March, or rather my recollection is that the meeting was on the 4th of March, and the trial occurred on the 6th.

*Question.* Has there since been any trial of those persons who were arrested for making incendiary speeches?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; before Judge Leachman, who testifies to it. They were tried, and, with other parties, bound over to court. A man by the name of Horn ——

*Question.* What you call a trial was only an examination?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a preliminary examination.

*Question.* Has there been any actual trial before a jury?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was this in March last.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; my recollection is that the trouble commenced on the 4th of March, and the riot occurred on the 6th.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have the parties who were charged with beginning the riot and killing Clopton been also arrested and bound over?

*Answer.* There have been three men arrested and bound over, upon no specific charge further than participating in the riot; it is not specified that they were implicated in any way in the killing of Clopton.

*Question.* Has anybody been arrested for cutting the throat of this man who was carried into the sheriff's office?

*Answer.* We could not get any information as to who cut his throat.

*Question.* There has been no final trial of any of these parties before a jury?

*Answer.* There has not been; it is probable, I do not know whether it is the case or not, that some parties from Alabama have been arrested before this time. Charges were made against the parties who appeared to have been prominent in the trouble, which charges were filed with the governor of the State, and he immediately issued processes for their arrest. Whether they have been arrested or not I cannot say; they had not been when I left.

*Question.* Was this occurrence traced to any political excitement?

*Answer.* It grew out of the fact of these persons coming in from Alabama, although it appeared by statements, not under oath, however, but which we recorded, that those parties were acting in connection with parties in Meridian for the purpose of intimidating or disposing of certain parties who held office in Meridian. In other words, they said they intended, that is, the parties in Meridian, in connection with those who came from Alabama, said they intended to make it so hot there for certain office-holders that they could not remain there. The one most objectionable to them was this man Sturgis.

*Question.* Was that objection founded upon anything connected with the discharge of their official duties. or was it because of their political sentiments?

*Answer.* We made particular inquiries as to that, but we could not get any person to make the statement that they had been derelict in any way in the discharge of their official duties. The statement was that they were obnoxious on account of their politics.

*Question.* What was their politics?

*Answer.* They were republican, all of them. The particular charge against Mr. Sturgis was, that he associated too much with the colored people in Meridian, and attended their meetings, as they claimed, with a view to create disturbance between the whites and the colored people there. But we could not get any parties to make any specific charge against any officer in Meridian. It appears that the grand jury reported a sort of general charge against the board of supervisors of that county, but that occurred some year or two before. I believe several persons—three, I believe—had been killed there about a year before that; one was a member of the board of supervisors, and one was the overseer of the roads. You will find that stated in the testimony

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What was the politics of those persons?

*Answer.* They were republicans.

*Question.* Does this pamphlet embrace the testimony taken before your committee?

*Answer.* In regard to the killing of the parties?

*Question.* In regard to the riot at Meridian.

*Answer.* It presents all the testimony taken under oath; it does not present the statements which were made not under oath.

*Question.* You have made frequent use of the expression that persons made statements to you "not under oath." Do you mean by that that they had not been sworn at the time they made those statements, or were the statements made at some other time?

*Answer.* I will explain that. Some statements were made prior to the statements which were made under oath by some persons whose testimony you will find in that pamphlet. They would come to my room and state to me certain facts which, as they represented, were known to them; but they said to me that they could not give those statements under oath before the committee, as what was given before the committee would be made public.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did you take those private statements down in writing?

*Answer.* I took them down.

*Question.* Did the parties know that you were taking them down?

*Answer.* No, sir; two or three members of the committee and myself would prepare a statement of what they said. But when we would question them on those very same points while they were under oath we could not get them to testify.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* They simply refused to testify?

*Answer.* No, sir; they would not refuse exactly, but gave evasive answers.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did they at any time know that you had reduced their statements to writing?

*Answer.* I do not think they did.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Are those statements which were made to you and to your fellow-members of the committee reduced to writing by you, and which you say you submitted to the legislature, embraced in this printed copy of testimony?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were not made under oath, and are not embraced in this copy.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who were the members of that committee?

*Answer.* On the part of the senate were Messrs. Caldwell, Gibbs, and Stone; on the part of the house, Messrs. French, Foote, Sessions, Hemmingway, and Willing.

*Question.* Did all those members attend this examination?

*Answer.* All, with the exception of Mr. Foote.

*Question.* He did not attend the examination?

*Answer.* He attended at the meetings of the committee in Jackson, but did not go to Meridian.

*Question.* What is the politics of the members of that committee?

*Answer.* Of the senate, Mr. Stone is a democrat, and Mr. Gibbs and Mr. Caldwell republicans; of the house, Mr. Sessions and Mr. Hemmingway are democrats, and the other three members are republicans.

*Question.* Were any of those democrats present when you say these private statements were made to you?

*Answer.* Mr. Hemmingway was present at one time when some of them were made; he was the only one who was present. The democratic members, however, took statements in the same way in private as we did.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Of each and every witness?

*Answer.* No, sir; of certain parties who testified.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* This pamphlet contains merely the testimony, without any report, I believe?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; at the time this was printed the report had not been made. We were trying to get some testimony which we failed to get; we got as much as we could up to the close of the session, and on the last day of the session we made our report.

*Question.* Where is that report?

*Answer.* It was in the hands of the printer when I left Jackson.

*Question.* It has not been printed?

*Answer.* It has by this time, I suppose. The report simply states that the committee proceeded to Meridian, and made the investigation, and that they submit as their report the testimony taken before the committee.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was there any counter report?

*Answer.* There was no report of the opinion of the committee; the report was merely the testimony taken by the committee.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The legislature took no action on it?

*Answer.* None, further than to discharge the committee, and order the report to be printed.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* I understand you to say that the reason given by those persons for not testifying to what they had stated privately to some members of the committee was that they were in fear?

*Answer.* That they were in fear; some of them had been warned that if they told before the committee what they knew they would be killed.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did they swear to that, or was that a statement?

*Answer.* It was a statement made by them.

*Question.* What was the character of those witnesses in that community for intelligence and standing?

*Answer.* It was good.

*Question.* Were they white or black?

*Answer.* Some were white, and some were black. I will give you the names of some of them, so that you can call them if you desire. You will find the testimony of some in this pamphlet. One was named Krizer.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What sort of a man was Krizer?

*Answer.* He was a colored man, and a member of the board of supervisors at the time one other member was killed. He was shot at the time and wounded, and lost one arm.

*Question.* Was he a man of good character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has been employed as deputy sheriff.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was he one of those who declined to state all they knew for the reasons you have given?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Who was the next one?

*Answer.* T. J. Pelton.

*Question.* What sort of a man is he?

*Answer.* He has been acting as a member of the police there; a white man. It is stated in some part of the testimony that he is not of good repute. He said himself that he was odious in the community; but nobody made any charge against him of dishonesty, or being riotous or disorderly, or anything of the kind; but that he was odious to the community.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* That was his general reputation?

*Answer.* No, sir; not his general reputation; some said that he was a good citizen, and others that he was odious.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did he state why he was odious?

*Answer.* He said he knew of no reason except his politics.

*Question.* What were his politics?

*Answer.* He was a republican.

*Question.* Go through with all the names in that way.

*Answer.* Henry Mason is the next, a colored man, who drives a dray. He said if he testified to what he knew, it would not only break up his business, but it would cost him his life; that he had been so warned.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Right there; what were the things which these men said in their statements they knew?

*Answer.* What they had actually seen.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Things they would not testify to?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. A great many colored people, I suppose two hundred, have left there since the riot.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* I thought the point to which you directed your statement was, that you understood from these statements that the object of the men coming from Alabama was a political object?

*Answer.* I would only state in regard to that what was stated before the committee; that they came there ——

*Question.* In that connection I notice you used this statement; have you authority for assuming that they came there for political purposes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Go on with what you were stating.

*Answer.* The next witness is Peggy Johnson. You will see by her testimony there that she swears to one man shooting Tyler.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What reason did she give why she was not afraid to testify to that fact, and yet was afraid to testify to other facts?

*Answer.* She said that a hundred other persons saw that man shoot Tyler; that it was currently reported around there.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was she afraid to testify to such facts as she knew, but which were not of common report?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was she a colored woman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. She testified also to the fact of the man Clopton being thrown from the second story. In her testimony she does not know who did it. In her private conversation she did not hesitate to state who did it. These are all the names I have here.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You say you live in Natchez?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you any knowledge of outrageous proceedings on the part of bands of men in other portions of the State than in Meridian?

*Answer.* No positive knowledge. The portion of the State where I reside, Natchez, is perfectly quiet. There have been no disturbances or outrages committed there. There have been several men killed there during the last year, but they have been personal difficulties—nothing political.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Natchez has no worse reputation now than she used to have?

*Answer.* She is much better than she used to be; improved in her morals.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* There are no disturbances in the southwestern part of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Are the laws efficiently executed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are property and person secure there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and my knowledge and information is that that is the case along the river, in the river counties. All the disturbances are along the boundary of the State, along the Alabama line.

*Question.* To what extent do the disturbances occur there, according to your information, derived from the inquiries which you have made?

*Answer.* There was a great deal of complaint some three or four months ago of outrages committed there about the time Mr. Huggins was driven from Aberdeen. It was reported, by letters written to members of the legislature at that time, that several colored men were whipped there.

*Question.* From the information which you derived when in Lauderdale County making this investigation, to what extent did outrages or disturbances of this character occur in that part of the State?

*Answer.* About that time they were quite frequent in that portion of the State, and in the counties above; some in Oktibbeha County, in Lowndes County, and in Monroe County.

*Question.* Were there any in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was an account of three or four cases of disturbance there.

*Question.* Any in Kemper County?

*Answer.* I have not heard recently of any in Kemper County. I used to live just in the edge of Kemper County three years ago. At that time there were some disturbances there, a great many growing out of personal feuds, and some political.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Is this town of Meridian the county town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; recently made so.

*Question.* Was it the county town at the time of the disturbance?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How large a place is it?

*Answer.* I suppose it is a place of about three thousand inhabitants. It is where the Mobile and Ohio Railroad crosses the Vicksburg Railroad.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was a man by the name of Renfeau identified as one of the men who came from Alabama there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He and a man named Reynolds appeared to be the leaders of the party.

*Question.* In regard to these acts to which you have referred as occurring in Noxubee and other counties, were they represented to you as being committed by persons in disguise, or persons in their ordinary apparel?

*Answer.* By persons in disguise.

*Question.* In the day-time or in the night-time?

*Answer.* In the night-time.

*Question.* Were those outrages committed upon white persons or colored persons?

*Answer.* Principally upon colored persons.

*Question.* What was the reason, if any, that was assigned for the infliction of these punishments or outrages upon persons in your State?

*Answer.* I have never been able to ascertain what reasons they gave; general rumor stated that they were political; but as to what the object of the parties committing these outrages was I could not say.

*Question.* Were they alleged in public conversations——

*Answer.* Alleged to have been done for political effect.

*Question.* In conversations which occurrences of this kind would naturally elicit, was it alleged that they were committed by men of the democratic party upon republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In your conversations with democrats of good standing, respectable, intelligent gentlemen, what view did they take of these outrages? Give us the views which were expressed on one side and the other, of these outrages, so that we may be able to get at the public sentiment on the subject.

*Answer.* Parties such as you have described, democrats of good standing, were always opposed to them. When anything of that kind occurred, members of the legislature of that party appeared to regret it as much as anybody could. I have talked very freely with them in regard to these matters, and they appeared to regret these outrages as much as any person could regret them. They said they were done by parties who were irresponsible, lawless men. I have talked with two members of the legislature about these matters and about an organization of this kind, and as to what their opinion was about it. They said their opinion was that there was such an organization, and that it was for political purposes and effect; but that they were not in favor of it; that they had never belonged to it, and had no knowledge themselves of any persons who did belong to it; but they were perfectly satisfied that there was such an organization; and one of them stated further that he believed the organization was established for political purposes.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Give us the names of those two gentlemen.

*Answer.* If you require it, I will give their names, but the statements they made were made in a private conversation, and in rather a confidential way.

*Question.* I require their names.

*Answer.* The statement I am now repeating was made by Mr. Hemmingway.

*Question.* Who was the other gentleman?

*Answer.* Mr. Sessions.

*Question.* You stated in reply to a question by the chairman that your impression is, from conversations which you have had, that this organization was for political purposes. Were these conversations generally with republicans?

*Answer.* Not exclusively.

*Question.* I did not say exclusively, but generally. You have given two instances of conversations with democrats. I asked you if your conversation was generally with republicans.

*Answer.* I have talked with members of the democratic party in the legislature just as freely, frankly, and candidly as I ever did with the republican members.

*Question.* Have not your conversations with regard to whether this organization was political or not been confined generally to republicans?

*Answer.* I presume it has been talked of more among the republicans than among the democrats. Still I have found democrats who were willing to admit that there was such an organization, and that it was for political purposes; and at the same time they deprecated it.

*Question.* Any other democrats than the two you have mentioned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was talked about in a joking way by democrats generally; I have frequently heard them say that they would have such and such parties Ku-Kluxed; but that was only joking. The Ku-Klux organization was talked about daily, and seemed to be acknowledged as existing by all parties, on all hands. I never found anybody who would deny that there was such an organization as the Ku-Klux organization. I never found anybody, in conversation, who was willing to indorse it, or who appeared to have any sympathy whatever with it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was Mr. Hemmingway's first name?

*Answer.* I cannot state his first name.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was it Mr. Hemmingway who told you this?

*Answer.* No, sir; did I say Hemmingway or Street?

*Question.* You said Hemmingway.

*Answer.* That was an error; it was Street.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What is the post office address of Mr. Street and Mr. Sessions?

*Answer.* Mr. Street lives in Tishemingo County; and Mr. Sessions in Liberty, Franklin County.

*Question.* Liberty is his post office address?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know the post office address of the other gentleman?

*Answer.* I do not; I do not remember the county town of that county; it can be ascertained by referring to the map.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Mr. Street was not a member of your investigating committee?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You have said that it was generally admitted that this organization was formed for political purposes; what kind of political purposes?

*Answer.* I suppose just the same as any political organization is formed for; for the interest of the party.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Very much like the Union League, do you mean?

*Answer.* I do not know what the object of the Union League is; I never was a member of it. I presume it was to advance the interest of the party to which the organization belonged.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* By murder, outrage, and intimidation?

*Answer.* I would state my opinion exactly here, if the committee desires it, in regard to this Ku-Klux organization in the South. I believe it was organized for the purpose of advancing the interests of the democratic party; I believe so from what I have been able to learn there. I believe that there are a great many good citizens who belong to it; that they went into it under different names, all having the same object in view, the advancement of the interests of the democratic party. I believe bad men got into the organization, the same as do in every other organization, and that these outrages grew out of that. But I do not believe that a large majority of the citizens who joined the organization, who helped to start it in the first place, ever had any intention of anything of that kind, or any sympathy with it. I believe many persons who formerly belonged to the organization have become disgusted with it since it has assumed that character. That is my opinion from what I have been able to learn about it.

*Question.* Have these good persons who belonged to it, and are now disgusted with it, taken any means to stop these outrages?

*Answer.* That I cannot say.

*Question.* Have they come out in public meetings and condemned them?

*Answer.* Not that I am aware of.

*Question.* Have they been active in aiding the authorities in bringing the perpetrators of those outrages to justice?

*Answer.* I cannot say that the authorities there receive a very active support from the citizens in efforts to put down lawlessness of any kind.

*Question.* Have you ever known a man convicted for offenses of this Ku-Klux class?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a few days ago five men were convicted upon a preliminary examination and bound over.

*Question.* I do not speak of being bound over, but of being convicted and punished.

*Answer.* Two men were punished in Natchez in 1868, before I arrived there, for committing an outrage upon a school teacher, and sent to the penitentiary; they were released in a few weeks afterward. Those are the only cases I know of.

*Question.* That was in 1868?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were there any Ku-Klux in Mississippi in 1868?

*Answer.* That was a disguised party that went and committed an outrage upon a school-teacher who lived a few miles from Natchez. They were arrested, convicted, and sent to the penitentiary.

*Question.* You spoke of this party from Alabama stacking their arms in the street.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What kind of arms?

*Answer.* Double-barreled shot-guns principally.

*Question.* What was the number of the party?

*Answer.* Variously estimated from one hundred and fifty to two hundred and fifty; I should think from the testimony that there were perhaps one hundred and seventy-five of them.

*Question.* What time of the day did they come there?
*Answer.* They came in the morning and ate dinner there.
*Question.* How long did they remain there?
*Answer.* Until that night.
*Question.* Was that after the riot?
*Answer.* No, sir; before the riot. Parties also came at the time the riot occurred; came in in squads, on the train and on horseback. There were various estimates as to the number who came.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* What were the different estimates?
*Answer.* One squad that came in on the cars on Monday it was estimated numbered about forty. And then there were other squads that came in on horseback, perhaps fifteen or twenty together; there were two or three of them. I should suppose from the testimony that there were perhaps from one hundred and fifty to two hundred who came from Alabama there.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Before or during the riot?
*Answer.* After the riot occurred. They came in while the excitement prevailed there. There was a great deal of excitement for a few days.
*Question.* You say that Price was accused of being with the party that committed an assault upon a man from Alabama who represented himself as a deputy sheriff?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What was the deputy sheriff there for, according to his statement?
*Answer.* For the purpose of arresting those same parties who were afterward carried off by the large body of Alabamians that came in there, as was stated before us at the time of the examination. That was what he claimed to be there for, acting under the authority of the sheriff, being himself a deputy sheriff.
*Question.* I would like to understand why the authorities concluded that Price had better be released and sent away.
*Answer.* The first reason was that it was to avoid a difficulty; these other parties who came in from Alabama stated that they came for the purpose of seeing that justice was done by him. The authorities thought there might be a serious disturbance there, and they concluded it would be better to release him and let him go. They stated that they did not know whether he was guilty or not, but rather than attempt to go on with the trial they preferred to let him go, as the parties from Alabama would not be contented with anything but finding him guilty, whether he was guilty or not.
*Question.* Did they allege that if he should be acquitted he would be executed any way?
*Answer.* They alleged that they believed it would not be safe for him to return at all; that if he came there he would be outraged in some way. You will find that in the testimony.
*Question.* That is, that they could not do justice by him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. Moore, the representative from that county, dare not go back there now, since the legislature has adjourned. I have a letter in my possession, written by the postmaster there to Moore, advising him not to come back to Meridian at this time.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Have you that letter, you say, in your possession?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is at my room at the hotel here. Moore gave it to me to read just as I got on the cars and was about leaving; I read it and put it in my pocket.
*Question.* Was the letter addressed to you?
*Answer.* No, sir; to Mr. Moore, the representative from Lauderdale County; he lives in Meridian.
*Question.* What was the date of the letter?
*Answer.* It was written perhaps ten days ago. Mr. Moore has not gone back there at all since the legislature adjourned; he remains away by the advice of friends who are living in Meridian.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You say you went to Mississippi in 1867?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* From what State?
*Answer.* Ohio.
*Question.* From what part of Ohio?
*Answer.* From near Salem, Columbiana County.
*Question.* Have you held any other office in Mississippi, besides that of representative?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What?

*Answer.* I went there as an agent of the Bureau for General Howard; I still hold that position; I am disbursing agent, acting as an agent without fee, at Natchez.

*Question.* In what year were you elected as representative to the legislature?

*Answer.* In 1869.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* You spoke of a railroad train having been chartered during the troubles at Meridian. How was that?

*Answer.* The authorities of Meridian telegraphed to the president of the Vicksburg and Meridian road for the use of a train; also to president Murdock, of the Mobile and Ohio road, for the use of a train on that road. It was granted to them, and they took it, and with a body of armed men went down the Meridian road for the purpose of arresting Mr. Moore.

*Question.* Did they succeed?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Does that road run directly across the State?

*Answer.* It runs from Vicksburg to Meridian, and there connects with the Selma road.

*Question.* It runs east and west across the State, and crosses the State line of Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It afforded a very convenient mode of travel for these people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you understand whether the men who came from Alabama were Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* They were not disguised at all; they came simply as a body of armed men.

*Question.* Was there anything said by them, during any of their operations, which would lead to the impression that they were Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know whether they would be termed Ku-Klux or not. All that they said, as we were able to learn, was that they came over there to see that the law was properly administered. They came over, in the first place, to arrest the colored men and take them back; the men they arrested and carried back afterward. They came over again when Price was arrested, as they said, to see that the law was properly executed there and justice done in that case. Everybody in speaking of them, however, speaks of them as the Ku-Klux from Alabama.

*Question.* What is the political complexion of Meridian?

*Answer.* Meridian, that is, Lauderdale County, elected republican candidates. They have had no election in the towh of Meridian yet.

*Question.* Did they not elect their commissioner?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is acting under appointment from the governor. There has been no election for municipal or county officers in Mississippi as yet.

*Question.* Do you not know which political party has the majority in Meridian?

*Answer.* I cannot state.

*Question.* Is it not true that in most of these towns there is a concentration of colored population?

*Answer.* I think that as a rule, at least so my experience teaches me, you will find in the towns that there is a pretty equal division between the colored and white voters. I know that is the case in Vicksburg, and also in Natchez; there is not a difference of over 125 in Natchez; the colored voters predominate there by about that number. In Vicksburg the white voters predominate. I cannot say how it is in Meridian.

*Question.* Has there not been a general movement against mayors in that part of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I think there has been, in the northern part of Mississippi; I know there has been against the former mayor of Columbus; also of Aberdeen, and of Meridian.

*Question.* They were all republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all republicans. I do not hesitate to say that there is a very strong effort in all the towns in the State to get control of the municipal governments, the democrats trying to obtain control of them, and the republicans to retain the control of them.

*Question.* One of the ways in which the democrats are trying to obtain the control is to induce or compel the mayors to resign?

*Answer.* They have brought every influence to bear to get the republican mayors removed, and to get the governor to appoint men of their party. He himself stated to me that they seemed to be determined to have appointed all the democratic mayors that they could.

*Question.* Has there been any general movement against school-houses and schools in that part of the State?

*Answer.* There have been several school-houses burned, as I have learned from conver-

sations with the superintendent of education. He stated to me a short time ago that within the last year there had been twenty, I think twenty-five, I will not say positively, of his school-houses burned.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Were they colored school-houses?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Common schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, under the school system.

*Question.* Generally attended by colored children?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, more generally by colored people than by whites. There are very few white children attending school outside of the towns.

*Question.* Was it known by whom these burnings were done?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were generally done in the night-time by parties who were not recognized.

*Question.* By disguised parties?

*Answer.* In some cases.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Nobody ever saw them burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in some cases parties in disguise were seen to go there and burn them; in one or two cases. In one case in particular they went there while some exercises were going on and scared the people away.

*Question.* In the day-time?

*Answer.* No, sir; in the evening. I remember the circumstance of the superintendent speaking to me particularly about that case, but I do not remember where it was located.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* What were the circumstances?

*Answer.* They went there while they were having some exercises, an exhibition or something of that sort, and frightened the people away and burned the school-house.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You have heard of this; you do not know it yourself?

*Answer.* It was told to me by the superintendent.

*Question.* Have you never heard of any outrages being committed by negroes?

*Answer.* The one case I have stated is the only case I have heard of in which they have been accused of committing outrages upon anybody.

*Question.* What case; burning a school-house?

*Answer.* No, sir; the case where Price was arrested. Some parties claimed that the assault on the deputy sheriff was not made by negroes, although it was stated that the parties were in disguise. But the common report around Meridian is that the deputy sheriff was Ku-Kluxed by negroes.

*Question.* That is the only case you have heard of?

*Answer.* That is the only case I have heard of their being charged with Ku-Kluxing.

*Question.* I do not mean Ku-Kluxing merely, but committing any outrages.

*Answer.* There have been disturbances among them occasionally; but that is the only case that I have heard of their being charged with combining together against anybody.

*Question.* I was asking you generally if you have not heard of frequent outrages and acts of lawlessness by the negroes, whether combined efforts or individual efforts.

*Answer.* Of course, there have been a great many arrested for thieving and for disturbances that occurred among themselves.

*Question.* Has that been frequently the case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is quite frequent that they are arrested. But as for outrages committed by parties in disguise, or committed by them in a combined body, I do not know that I have ever heard of any other case.

*Question.* I am not talking about that.

*Answer.* The record of the courts will show that negroes have been arrested, arrested for some alleged crime they have committed.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Has there been any difficulty in punishing them?

*Answer.* No, sir; there does not appear to be; a great many of them are sent to the penitentiary.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any negroes burning any white school-houses?

*Answer.* I never have.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any negroes serving notices on democratic white mayors to resign their places?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of anything of the kind.

*Question.* Have you ever known of any one being prosecuted and punished for burning these school-houses?

*Answer.* Not one instance.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Do you know whether they have been found out?

*Answer.* I do not know that they have been.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you know of school-houses ever having been burned?

*Answer.* I know from having seen where the houses were, in the case of some of them, and in other cases from the official statements of the superintendent.

*Question.* Does he state who burned them?

*Answer.* No, sir; only that they were burned.

*Question.* Does he state why they were burned?

*Answer.* He says he presumes they have been burned by parties or persons opposed to the advancement of the common-school system in the State; that he knows of no other reason why they should be burned, except to retard the progress of education in the State. He does not attempt to specify who were the parties who burned them.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Have any colored churches been burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a colored church was burned in Meridian at the time of this riot there, the church in which Mr. Moore officiated.

*Question.* That Mr. Moore is a representative from that county, and a colored preacher?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* His house was burned also?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and all his furniture.

*Question.* I think I saw at the time that it was intimated he had burned the church, or his own house. Did you find anything to sustain that charge?

*Answer.* No, sir. There were some rumors afloat, something in the papers there, that he had burned his house in order to obtain the insurance on it; it was stated that his house was insured. But we made particular inquiry of the witnesses who came before us as to whether they thought Moore burned his own house, and none of them hesitated to say that they were satisfied that he did not do it. He left town immediately after the riot, and his house was not burned until one or two o'clock that night.

*Question.* Why did he leave town?

*Answer.* He says he was satisfied he would have been killed if he had remained there; that he left town because he thought his life was in danger.

*Question.* Do you know of any circumstances tending to confirm that fear?

*Answer.* Immediately after the riot he asked the deputy sheriff to protect him, as he feared violence; the deputy sheriff answered by saying that he could not protect anybody; that he would have to protect himself. Mr. Moore says that one or two parties whom he met advised him to get out of town immediately, for they were satisfied he would be killed if found there while the excitement was raging. It was stated on the street by persons, while the excitement was going on, that they must go and hunt up Moore and kill him.

*Question.* Does it appear that any parties visited his house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. If you will read the testimony you will find that his house was visited two or three times; one party visited it and broke up his furniture, and then another party went there in the night and burned his house.

*Question.* Did the parties go there in search of him?

*Answer.* So it appeared.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* In regard to the government of Mississippi, are there any charges of corruption against the State officers?

*Answer.* No specific charges at all that I know of; there are some general charges about the officers being corrupt men; no more than you will see in the newspapers. I know of nobody who has made any specific charge of corruption against the State government, or any part of it.

*Question.* Have any charges of corruption been made against the county officers?

*Answer.* No one has made any complaint except such as you will find in the newspapers. The papers sometimes claim that the officers are extravagant and corrupt, as you will find one party generally making charges against the other.

*Question.* Are any charges made against the city governments?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Is there any extraordinary amount of corruption there?

*Answer.* Not to my knowledge.

*Question.* Not more than usual?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think the government has been administered there more economically than it was ever administered before.

*Question.* Before the war, even?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have there been any large railroad appropriations, or anything of that kind?

*Answer.* There have been no railroad appropriations at all, except that a law was passed by the legislature providing that any railroad which would construct twenty-five miles of road within the limits of the State, and have it equipped and in good running order by the 1st day of September, 1872, should receive from the State at the rate of $4,000 per mile. That was approved and entered into by all parties there; it seemed to be a general movement, entirely satisfactory to everybody.

*Question.* Has the public debt of the State been increased since the republicans went into power there?

*Answer.* There is no public debt of the State except the old repudiated debt and a debt existing at the time the republicans went into power there, of, perhaps, $250,000; not more than that, I think. The legislature authorized the issue of certificates of indebtedness, to be used through the State, to the amount of $500,000, and the issue of $500,000 in bonds maturing in five years; that is, $100,000 in one year, $100,000 in two years, &c.

*Question.* To pay the old debt and the interest on it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* There has been no new debt created?

*Answer.* No, sir; and there will be a margin left in the treasury after the collection of the taxes this year for paying the current expenses of the State and the $100,000 of bonds which mature this year.

*Question.* Then I understand that it is not alleged that these Ku-Klux outrages are in consequence of any corruption on the part of the State officials, or increase of the debt of the State, &c.?

*Answer.* So far as that is concerned, I will state that they allege that we have been extravagant in levying taxes for the purpose of building school-houses and carrying on schools; that is the only thing in regard to which there has been any dissatisfaction expressed. That is what is stated in the papers, that the school tax is onerous and too heavy. They also state in the papers and in conversation that the school tax is being paid by persons who do not receive the benefit of it; that the persons who have no children, or very few, to send to school own the most property, which is taxed for the benefit of colored children. Still, at the same time, there is no general opposition to the school system. Almost every man who owns a large plantation is anxious to have a school-house built on his plantation, and donates the land for the purpose. They say that they can manage their laborers and their children better in that way.

*Question.* Who say that, the democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the democrats and everybody else.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In point of fact, are school-houses being built there by the owners of the land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In what numbers?

*Answer.* I cannot tell. I should say that during the last year there must have been established three thousand or four thousand schools in the State.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* There have been that many school-buildings erected?

*Answer.* I cannot state that exactly. I could send you the report of the superintendent of education for that State.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You say that there have been established four thousand schools in the State; how many counties have you in the State?

*Answer.* There are sixty-eight counties organized, and two not organized.

*Question.* That would make five or six schools to the county?

*Answer.* There are more in some counties than in others. The school system has been pretty thoroughly organized in the State. There is a large school fund there known as the Chickasaw school fund, from the sale of the Chickasaw school lands. The Chickasaw school district had several hundred thousand dollars of a school fund, and they have gone ahead and organized schools there.

*Question.* Where do they get that fund?

*Answer.* From the sale of the Chickasaw school lands.

*Question.* They have used the fund for this purpose?

*Answer.* They use only the interest of the fund.

*Question.* Do you include in the number you have named the school-houses established by that fund?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that would include everything.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was a bill passed by your legislature for the sale of the Jackson Railroad?

*Answer.* No, sir; a bill was passed extending the charter of the Jackson Railroad, or a new charter was granted.

*Question.* Was the State interest in the road sold?

*Answer.* It was turned over to Colonel McComb, upon an agreement that he was to build one hundred and forty miles of road running to Aberdeen, and build a branch-road, according to the original charter, running from Canton to Aberdeen, and complete it within three years.

*Question.* They gave it to him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they made a donation of it.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What was the amount of the State stock in the road?

*Answer.* About $250,000, worth about five cents on the dollar at the time they turned it over to him.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was that an incomplete and abandoned enterprise?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was like this: when the charter was granted to the New Orleans and Jackson Road, it was upon condition that the company was to build a branch-road by way of Canton and Aberdeen within ten years, otherwise they forfeited their charter. The ten years expired without the branch being constructed, and consequently the charter was forfeited. The legislature renewed the charter, required the branch-road to be built in three years, and turned over to the railroad company what stock the State held in it. The State had given to every other road constructed in the State—to the Mobile and Ohio, to the Mississippi Central—and to all other roads constructed there they had given aid to build them. The stock that the State held in this road—the help they had originally given to construct the road—they donated to the road.

*Question.* The charter to that branch having been abandoned in consequence of the road not being completed, the stock which the State held in it would have been lost at all events?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Not at all; the stock was in the road which had been built and running for fifteen years.

*Answer.* The road would have gone into bankruptcy and the State would have lost its stock, for there would have been nothing left after the sale of the road with which to pay the stock; it would have been an entire loss to the State.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* In regard to the disposition of the stock held by the State in the railroad company and the action upon the subject taken by the legislature, I wish to ask you whether that was a party question?

*Answer.* No, sir; it assumed the character of a contest between the railroad interests of the State, and was not of a party character at all. It was advocated and opposed by both democrats and republicans.

*Question.* The other railroads did not want this done?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it assumed no political character, and was of no political consequence whatever. Some of the very warmest advocates of the scheme were in the democratic party, who lived on the line of the road where the extension was to be made, and they wanted the extension to Aberdeen. It ran through counties represented by democrats; democrats were the prime movers in the enterprise.

*Question.* Was it opposed by men of both parties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; however, it passed by a very large vote; the opposition to it was very limited, and embraced members of both political parties.

*Question.* It was opposed and sustained by men of both parties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the same way also with the act which was passed giving the aid of the State to the amount of $4,000 a mile to all railroad companies that would construct twenty-five miles of railroad within the State, and have it equipped and in running order by the 1st of September, 1872.

*Question.* Have any of the railroad questions been made party questions there?

*Answer.* No, sir; not at all. In order to show that they were no party questions I will

state that there is now a road being constructed from Natchez to Jackson; the president of that railroad is a leading democrat in that portion of the State. When the proposition was made to grant $4,000 a mile to these railroads I telegraphed to him to know what he thought of it and what he desired. I also went further and asked if he could control the papers in his portion of the State in favor of the enterprise; they were all democratic but one. He telegraphed back to pass the bill by all means, and that he could control the papers. The democratic papers in all parts of the State, especially in that portion of the State, have come out in support of the measure. The only opposition has been on the part of two or three of them; the other democratic papers have come out promptly and advocated the measure. It has not assumed at all the character of a political contest in the State.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Has the railroad legislation anything at all to do with the disorders and troubles in the State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think not. Pretty nearly everybody in the State is in favor of the railroad system.

*Question.* Has that ever been made by anybody an excuse for any violence?

*Answer.* None whatever that I am aware of. The railroad legislation of the State has not been party legislation in any respect at all.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Have there been any efforts in the legislature to assume the payment of the old repudiated debt?

*Answer.* None whatever.

*Question.* There has been no movement of that kind?

*Answer.* A resolution was offered at one time to ascertain what the old debt was, or something in regard to it; but it was not carried; it was voted down. I would say, however, that there is a movement on foot in the State of Mississippi to assume the old repudiated debt; and I will also state that General Forrest is at the head of that movement.

*Question.* Does he live in the State?

*Answer.* He does business in the State, and is most of the time at Aberdeen. His family is living at Memphis. He is the prime mover for the assumption of the old repudiated debt; so that if there is anything political about it, it must be democratic.

*Question.* Have there not been a number of persons at Jackson upon that business?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Lobbyists?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Name some of them.

*Answer.* A man of the name of Tommony; a man by the name of Elliot; and a man from this city, I do not remember his name. The editor of the Memphis Avalanche also was there in that interest; and also a prominent democrat of this city was there in that interest in connection with the editor of the Memphis paper; and a man from New York. They were there at the time I was in New York some time ago on business. I do not remember their names.

*Question.* Who is Elliot?

*Answer.* He is a man from Mobile; that is all I know of him.

*Question.* Who is Tommony?

*Answer.* He is a Memphis man.

*Question.* No movements have been made in the legislature for that purpose?

*Answer.* No, sir; none whatever. It is a matter talked of, but the strongest advocates for the assumption of the payment of that repudiated debt are those interested in the railroads in the State of Mississippi, which interests are purely democratic. It was fought off in this legislature, which is republican; it was kept out of the legislature by them.

---

*Testimony before the joint committee of Mississippi legislature to investigate the Meridian riot appointed under resolution approved March 21, 1871.*

A RESOLUTION in relation to the riot at Meridian.

*Be it resolved by the legislature of the State of Mississippi,* That a joint committee, consisting of three members on the part of the senate, and three [5] on the part of the house, be appointed, whose duty it shall be to investigate the facts in relation to the late riot at Meridian.

*Resolved further,* That the said committee shall sit either at Meridian or Jackson, or at both places, with full authority to act in the premises; to send for persons and papers; to administer oaths, and adopt such other means as, in the opinion of a

majority of the committee, it may seem necessary, to ascertain fully and completely the causes, progress, and results of the said riot, and the proceedings and investigations thus had shall be reported by said committee to the legislature at the earliest practicable moment.

*Resolved further*, That the sum of twenty-five hundred dollars, or so much thereof as may be necessary to defray the expenses incident to their investigation, is hereby appropriated and set apart out of any funds in the treasury of the State not otherwise appropriated, and the auditor of public accounts shall be authorized to issue his warrants upon the treasurer for such sum or sums, not exceeding the amount herein appropriated, upon the certificate or certificates of expenses of the chairman of the committee being furnished him.

*Resolved further*, That the committee is authorized to employ a clerk to aid in the investigation.

Approved March 21, 1871.

*Committee.*—Hon. O. C. French, chairman. On part of senate: Senators Caldwell Gibbs, and Stone. On part of house: Representatives French, Foote, Sessions, Hemmingway, and Willing.

ROBERT J. MOSELY, being sworn:

State in what capacity you were acting at the time of these occurrences.

*Answer.* Sheriff.

*Question.* How long have you been acting?

*Answer.* Near two years; I am over the county more or less.

*Question.* How long have these troubles been brewing?

*Answer.* Some five or six months.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of a member of the board of supervisors?

*Answer.* Yes; the inquest showed that Joseph Williams was called out of his house by ten or twelve men; no arrests made; did not go on the scene; I had a deputy there.

*Question.* Has any other killing of colored men occurred in your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; prior to that.

*Question.* State the names of them.

*Answer.* A colored man, some twelve or eighteen months ago, by the name of Lacey; a road overseer also shot last fall, in September or October; was shot by party secreted by the roadside; was some months before he was able to make statement about it; his name was Moses Robinson.

*Question.* Was there a mail agent killed on this route near State line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; about October, 1870; do not recollect name.

*Question.* State character of member of board of supervisors and other parties who were killed.

*Answer.* There were bills of indictment against both parties; Robinson for killing hog; petit larceny; the other man, Joseph Williams, for malfeasance in office.

*Question.* Was the killing of these parties caused by prejudice from their holding office?

*Answer.* That is the opinion of a majority of the colored people.

*Question.* Have these parties that have been killed been all identified with one political party?

*Answer.* Yes.

*Question.* Make statement of what you know about the killing of Jack Burton.

*Answer.* Was killed by party in disguise; some ten or twelve men; nearly a year ago; some time last spring; ten or eleven months ago, at Lauderdale depot. A man by the name of Kaiser was shot at the same time; he lost his arm; arrests have been made, and before committing court parties charged have invariably proved an *alibi*.

*Question.* Have any indictments been found by grand jury against any parties for these offenses?

*Answer.* One indictment found, but no arrests made.

*Question.* State reasons why no arrests were made.

*Answer.* I made every effort; capias is returnable at this next term of court.

*Question.* How was the grand jury composed that indicted the supervisors?

*Answer.* Usually composed of about an equal number of white and colored; the jury that indicted the board of supervisors had five colored men; there were in all seventeen men, perhaps twenty.

*Question.* Did the grand jury make an *exposé* of any of their proceedings that were liable to come before the court?

*Answer.* Not at all.

*Question.* Did not these different occurrences produce some excitement among the republicans?

*Answer.* I think it did. A man by the name of Renfeau, with a party, came in here for the purpose of arresting a colored man for stealing some man's money; my deputy

was on the spot at the time they came; they were about forty-five in number; Mr. Ragsdale supposed there were three hundred; his clerk says one hundred and fifty, or one hundred and sixty, eat at the table; I talked with citizens about measures to suppress them; leading men thought best to make no arrests; about two o'clock at night the mayor put a warrant in my hands to arrest some of the parties; I thought it not best, as I did not know the number of them, and said all might be killed; sent for old man Shearer, Hueston, and Thomas, old citizens, and they told me not to undertake to make any arrests; I sent my deputy to them to see that they put up their arms; they stacked them and eat at the Phœnix and other hotels; thought it not best to make any arrests after consulting old citizens; thought it would produce more bloodshed; at this time excitement was high; they were after Price; did not make any arrests; they came in about sundown, and left next day; the offenses committed were nothing further than assault and battery, with the exception of taking several parties back with them; they went off without paying their bills; some parties have since offered to pay some of their bills; Colonel Horne has done so; it was a reign of terror; I did not know what forces they had; Kennard came over here to make arrests of these parties that escaped from Sumter County, Alabama; they came along to back him up; he made the affidavit and was around here a day or two; Price was arrested; they came over to see that the civil authorities discharged their duties.

*Question.* Did you make any attempt to arrest this Alabama man?

*Answer.* I did not consider that he had violated any law.

*Question.* What effort did you make to identify these parties who came over from Alabama?

*Answer.* I made effort, but failed.

*Question.* What was the character of the meeting held on Monday?

*Answer.* Mass meeting of citizens; they apprehended some difficulty from the colored people, and meant to take some measure to memorialize the governor to remove some of the officers; they also notified the mayor to leave; a man by the name of Smith was recommended for his place, and holds the office now; it was put in the shape of a request to vacate the office and leave; he was accused of being at the bottom of these disturbances here between white and black; not for malfeasance in office, but of obtaining money under false pretenses he was accused.

*Question.* How many were there under orders of your deputies that night?

*Answer.* About one hundred and fifty, armed with shot-guns and pistols; Mr. Parker, a citizen of Sumter, said that he could send to Sumter County for arms and men if necessary; he was informed by the sheriff that it was not necessary; some came; do not know how many; I was busy guarding the mayor; the Alabamians were not detained, because there were no charges against them, and there was no effort made that I know of to identify them; I gave instructions to persons whom I gave orders to raise squads to disarm every man that they met, white and colored, and bring them to the court-house.

*Question.* Were you not around to the burning?

*Answer.* I did not go, but sent men there; I was not informed until next day that men were taken away from my deputies; I left them in care of A. R. Wilson, an authorized deputy, and charged him that they were in danger of being murdered; regarded him as a suitable and reliable man to leave them in charge of; I believed when I placed them in his hands that they would be taken care of.

*Question.* The charges were such that you do not think that Mr. Wilson would leave them without placing them in safe hands?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* Do you think Mr. Wilson discharged his duty as custodian of those people in turning them over to other irresponsible parties?

*Answer.* I think he was derelict of his duty; one of the parties was wounded; I was in the room at the time Mr. Dennis's throat was cut, but did not know of it till afterward.

*Question.* Do you think that any of those parties that were killed were killed by parties summoned by you as guards?

*Answer.* I do not; the character of those citizens summoned by me was such that I do not think they had anything to do with the killing of any of these parties; the people of Meridian who were not acting as special deputies had sufficient respect for those who were acting as deputies to prevent them from committing any depredations; I believe that the murder of those three parties was done by persons who came to Meridian for that purpose; not by parties hereabouts; my instructions to my deputies were to disarm all persons, but not to go into any person's house.

*Question.* What authority had those parties in pursuing Aaron Moore?

*Answer.* My authority; the men were reliable, and I believe would have brought him back safe; I had a deputy in charge of one squad; do not know who was in charge of the other squad; they took a special train. I heard on Sunday that there was to be a mass meeting on Monday and certain parties would be ordered away; the meeting was held prior to the examination of the parties, (among whom was Moore;) I do not

think that the meeting had any influence or effect at the trial; I do not think that the opinion prevails that Moore removed his furniture; I saw the pistol that Tyler was alleged to have had; Mr. Brantley has the pistol; did not notice whether or not it had been fired; did not know that it was my duty to retain pistol or weapons used; I did not appoint Mr. Horne to lead any of the squads; I saw him with a gun in the crowd; I saw but very little of him; I was giving my time more particularly to some plan to protect Mr. Sturgis, the mayor; Mr. Horne told me about the dispatch being sent to Sumter County.

*Question.* I am told that there were some twenty or thirty armed men came into town; if they had been colored would they have been arrested?

*Answer.* I think they would have been.

*Question.* Do you not think that the cause for fear on the part of the colored was as great as on the part of the whites, in view of all the circumstances which occurred?

*Answer.* I think on that day (Saturday, March 4) the whites had greater cause to fear an attack from the colored people, but prior to that day the colored people had greater cause to apprehend danger from the whites than the whites had from the colored; on account of depredations of parties living outside of Meridian; I formed this conclusion from the character of speeches made as reported to me by J. R. Smith.

*Question.* Do you think that the colored people as a class had any cause for fears of an attack in force from the white people?

*Answer.* At that immediate time I think not, but prior to that, owing to raids made by parties said to be Alabamians, they had cause.

*Question.* Do you believe that the white people had any cause to apprehend an attack from the colored people in force?

*Answer.* I do, sir; this impression is formed from information received from various sources.

*Question.* Do you think that the demonstration of hostility on the part of the colored toward the whites has been as great as the demonstrations of hostility on the part of the white toward the colored?

*Answer.* I do not.

(Evidence to be continued.)

ROBERT LEACHMAN, circuit judge sixth district, being sworn, states:

Personally, I know very little about it; all I have learned is hearsay.

*Question.* It has been charged by some that the witnesses were intimidated and afraid to give the facts; can you give your opinion of this matter?

*Answer.* I do not think they were.

*Question.* Why is it that in the burning of the church and house, and other outrages, with a guard upon the streets of one hundred and fifty men acting as a patrol, that it was impossible to identify any man?

*Answer.* I think that the witnesses who were examined answered candidly and conscientiously; I think that there are some men that follow these railroads—whether they belong in Alabama or in Mississippi I cannot say—that may be called desperadoes, and have committed outrages at Lauderdale and different portions of this county.

*Question.* What do you think about the sheriff of your county?

*Answer.* Perhaps he has not done as he ought; the public opinion here does not sustain the burning of the church nor Moore's house. I think if the facts were proven before a jury, the parties could be convicted, and if any man could be identified who took part in the killing of the three men, if brought before the jury and proven, would be punished; as for the balance, I cannot say. Mr. Sturgis was the cause of this trouble, to a great extent; I have advised him frequently to run the machine moderately, and not to foment the feeling between the white and blacks. Had he been a moderate man and a good adviser, this affair never would have occurred; he had not lost the confidence of the colored people. I never laid the facts before the governor as regards his misconduct; the marshal submitted to Sturgis's rule altogether. I do not think that there was any politics in this thing; I think that it arose out of the mere course of things. The white people believed that Sturgis was fomenting this disturbance.

*Question.* Is it not a fact that all of the persons murdered or injured belonged to the republican party, or were identified with the colored people?

*Answer.* I do not know; Judge Bramlette was a republican.

*Question.* Was his killing premeditated or an accident?

*Answer.* I cannot say; Mr. P—— had attacked me in the street and charged me with being his personal and political enemy, and that he intended to revenge himself by getting me removed from my position as judge of the circuit court, if possible; and Judge Bramlette stated to me the next morning that Mr. Sturgis was very bitter and hostile to himself and myself, and was going to have us removed, if possible. Do not know the feeling existing between Tyler and Sturgis, but think they were friends; I think J. P. Walker, the district attorney, discharged his duty efficiently and impartially, and makes a very efficient officer.

T. J. PELTON, being sworn, states:

I have resided here since the fall of 1865; I was on the police at the time of the riot; in regard to the killing of parties I know nothing; was on Front street at time I heard report of fighting at court-house; came to the corner, and met Colonel Horne running this way with gun in hand; asked if I had pistol, and replied that I had, and he requested me not to go down there; went across in confectionery store, and staid a half or three-quarters of an hour; Mr. Mosely came riding down on his horse; I went out and spoke to him; he directed me to go on the hill by the Methodist church, and he said, "Pelton, I want you to go to ——— house and get guns; if we can get the guns out of the negroes' hands, we will have no more trouble." I started in that direction, and got up in the neighborhood of the Baptist church, and met an armed squad of eight or ten men, who stopped me and said, "Here, Pelton, you have been in this town long enough, and we want you to get out before to-morrow morning;" J. P. Gully was one of them. I turned and came to the upper end of this building, and saw a great squad of one hundred and fifty men on this corner, swearing that they were going for Sturgis; I left and went home, and sent for General Patton, the marshal, and told him what had been said to me; he advised me to keep still until the excitement was over. I staid in the house until about eleven o'clock, about the time the fire broke out; about half an hour from that time another squad came to my house, and they were informed that I was not in. I staid in the house, seeing there was no chance to get on any train; I was informed by Mr. Peters that they were around the depot, and that armed men were on the Jackson train, and advised me to stay in the house until Tuesday night; he lives in the country. I went out the back door; he kept watch for me; I went about two and a half miles south of here; a watchman at the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad kept me posted as to what was going on. On Wednesday morning a man named Roberden, a carpenter, went to my house and told my wife that he was one of the squad that came to order me off, and that he was under direct orders of the sheriff. I know some parties that do know of the killing of Warren Tyler, and of his being shot in the court-house; John Ethridge is one, ——— Ingraham, who is with Van Horzier, is another, and W. A. Payne can give some facts in regard to the shooting at the court-house. I remained in my house about twenty-seven or twenty-eight hours after being notified to leave by this squad, and had communication with outside through Peters; I have staid since the disturbance at Peters's house eight days. I returned and gave myself up to the sheriff; I have received notice to leave since I have been here; I have the notice in my possession; I was examined by the court at the late investigation: I can identify several parties who gave me the first notification to leave.

*Question.* Were you summoned before this committee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by Mr. French, this morning. I do not know anything about the parties who took the three men out of the court-house and killed them.

*Question.* When Colonel Horne accosted you, where were you going?

*Answer.* To this corner; I did not come because I was obnoxious to the community; I knew that I was obnoxious by seeing my name in the Mercury and being handed around; I was a policeman; I never was molested; I do not know anything about the burning of the church nor Moore's house, but think Mr. Heuston does; I believe Harry Mason, colored, knows all about the burning of Moore's house, and the parties who prohibited the removal of the furniture from the house.

*Question.* How long have you been in Meridian?

*Answer.* I have been here since the fall of 1865.

*Question.* What is the difference in treatment of a Northern man and one who affiliates with the democracy?

*Answer.* A great difference; the republicans have all been ordered out; there is an organization, but I cannot say that it is secret, that goes to work and says it shall be so, and it is done; the sheriff, in my opinion, did not do as I would have done had I been sheriff; I went to some of them (the Alabamians) and requested them to put down arms, and they did it; when they came in in the night, he (the sheriff) deputized some one else to attend to this; I know nothing about his wife's illness; the sheriff was in full sympathy with the meeting of Monday; I do not know how many men signed the request for the parties to leave here; Mr. Belk, the deputy sheriff, is a man that attends to his business and seems to be posted as to what is going on; Reynolds came into the court-room when I was speaking to Dennis, and asked for Mosely; the people seemed to be familiar with him, and he seemed to be acquainted generally with them.

*Question.* Where was his squad, (of horse marines?)

*Answer.* They were scattered around; he (Reynolds) was here on Monday; also on Sunday night taking an active part; on Sunday night Dennis sent for me and requested me to see the sheriff, as he was afraid they were going to take him out and kill him; the Alabamians seemed very welcome for people from a distance; I saw the sheriff when a squad of two hundred and fifty men stood right out here, about eight abreast; some of the leaders raised a yell "Sturgis, Sturgis;" Mosely (the sheriff) was on his

horse; I could not hear what he said, but could see by his gestures that he was trying to keep them from going to Sturgis's house; nearly all of the white men in town were out there with them; Dred Finley was the only colored man I could see; they seemed to be rejoicing about the death of Tyler; I never heard Tyler make threats against Judge Bramlette; I do not know that they were friendly, and do not know that they were unfriendly; I do not know anything about an order called the "Knights of the White Camelias;" I was never admitted into it; I have heard talk about some outrages committed upon women; the women are in town yet; Ellen Parton is one of them; I saw her to-day; Marshal Ware saw some of this.

*Question.* What would be the probability of convicting a man for killing in this town?

*Answer.* Very poor; they generally prove an *alibi*.

*Question.* Did you ever know anything of a contemplated outbreak or uprising here by the citizens of one class upon those of another?

*Answer.* I never did; the mayor made an effort to get rid of the city marshal for malfeasance in office, but could not get shed of him; the people seemed to like him; there was a controversy between Mr. Patton and a man appointed by the governor, but it was for malfeasance in office for which the mayor wished him removed; I am slightly acquainted with the present mayor; I do not know whether he was present at meeting on Monday; I have heard so; I heard that there was a petition up to the governor for his appointment; I had a petition for the retention of Sturgis, (mayor;) it had about one hundred white signers; it is in Jackson; it was for the purpose of retaining him here; I sent it by Ware among the colored people to get signers; it had about four hundred and seventy-two names, as near as I could remember; I was afraid to put it in the post office; afraid it would not get all safe.

*Question.* Who are the present aldermen of this town?

*Answer.* Messrs. Wolf, Bramlette, Moore, and Johnson. There was one vacancy; Mr. Sturgis had his brother appointed, but he never got his commission; Mr. William Sturgis was book-keeper for his brother; I know the statement to be false in reference to his swindling colored people, in the instance alluded to in the Mercury, as I was present myself; I attached the cotton myself, acting as special deputy under order of the court; Sturgis had a mortgage, and under replevin the court gave him the cotton; I went after it; it was weighed in Front street, at Rush's scales; it fell short of Sturgis's weight five or eight pounds in Mobile; this came out in the Mercury; I think Sturgis (mayor) a straightforward business man, a man of good habits, sober and industrious.

T. J. PELTON.

HENRY MASON, being sworn:

I have been living in Meridian eight years; I was here when Judge Bramlette was killed; was not in the court-house; do not know about anybody being killed; I saw Tyler drop from the balcony; Bill Peterson and Nelse Hodges saw him when he was in the ditch; I was driving a dray; Tyler was carried into Sam. Parker's shop; I do not know who went in there; I did not see a pistol on him at the time they wanted to put him on my dray; he had no pistol on when he came into the court-house; I was on the steps when he came in the court-house; I did not come up; I live in the next house to Mr. Moore's, about twenty steps from his; I was there when Moore's house was burned; I saw one hundred men there about an hour before house was burned; saw them inside the house breaking furniture, &c.; Berry Horne was one of them that was inside; Captain Henderson was leading the company of hundred men; the house was burned about an hour or an hour and a half after Berry Horne was inside breaking things; I did not see any furniture removed from the house; I saw two men with fire and can of oil go to the church to fire it: it was moonlight, but could not discern the parties; I do not think that Moore moved any of his furniture; Horne was in the squad of Captain Henderson; I was carrying water to keep my house from burning; Mr. Wiley Coleman stated that they did not want to burn me out as they had the one they wanted; I do not think there was any fire in Moore's stove at the time; I heard Moore's and Clopton's speeches; there was nothing said contrary to no man; Moore's principal subject was about the Alabamians, and asking white and colored to join together to keep them off.

FELIX WEIDMANN, sworn, states:

I can give no testimony as regards the killing of any one, nor burning of church and Moore's house; about fifteen men came into my house one morning and got breakfast; they were strangers living across the line, and said that: "We are for the good of the city; charge it to the city." They all had arms; Mr. Horne offered me five dollars once in payment; I did not accept it; I did not see any guns fired; I closed up my hotel as soon as it commenced. These fifteen men said they came over to see about the trial of Price.

WM. S. PATTON, sworn:

*Question.* Do you know the leaders of this band of men that came here from Alabama some months ago?

*Answer.* Some colored people came up to see me and said some armed men are in town; I came down and requested to see the leader; some one asked me if I wanted to see Renfeau; I believe that there was a body of armed men here for some purpose; I should think, from the remarks made as above, that Renfeau was their leader; they were scattered about, not under any apparent organization or drill; this was before the last disturbance; I saw strangers here on Monday; it was about four o'clock in the morning when a party came to me between the Phœnix House and court-house, and informed me of the three bodies in the ticket; I did not recognize the party; do not know whether Renfeau was here or not; Reynolds (Captain Jinks) I think a desperate character; he was over here; the sheriff had men scattered all over town; I think he had a posse of fifty or a hundred men at the time men where taken out; I brought Isaac Lee up here; he appealed to me for assistance; I brought him up in the court-house and had him locked in sheriff's office, and Dr. Phillips dressed his wounds; he was not shot in this portion of town; I was in the court-room when the first shot was fired; I think Warren Tyler fired the first shot as soon as Brantley walked toward him, and when near the door he fired and the shot struck Bramlette; I cannot say whether or not it was the result of accident or intentional; do not know that there was any difficulty existing between Bramlette and Tyler; I did not see the pistol that Tyler had after he was killed; I think the sheriff had been trying to maintain peace and order; he was out himself all the time during the riot; I saw him frequently; Tyler stated in his speech that it was necessary for them to take care of themselves, mentioning the name of the supervisor that was killed, and giving example of the Indians who, when one of their number was killed, "got another for him."

*Question.* Do you think the civil authorities ample to maintain peace—I mean to control a mob if led from another State?

*Answer.* I think not; I examined the wound in Bramlette's head; he had others in his body which I did not see; I do not know anything about the throwing of Dennis's body out of the window; there were several in there; cannot mention their names; I saw no traces of blood; heard no declarations; I think public opinion approves of the killing of Warren Tyler, under the circumstances; Gus Ford, the policeman, may have been killed accidentally; I did not see a pistol in the court-room except Tyler's; I saw Moore when he was down; I thought he was dead; there were between one hundred and a hundred and twenty-five men in the court-room at the time of the trial; this was an extraordinary trial, the cause of the great crowd; cannot find seven out of ten men on the streets who are not armed; people generally are armed; it is believed by a great many that Sturgis's place was fired by their consent and knowledge; do not know whether insurance companies have liquidated losses; I do not recollect the resolutions passed at the meeting on Saturday; they were read over once by Tyler; I do not know what has become of them; I passed through the room on Monday, when the meeting was in progress on my way to the sheriff's office; do not know how many persons signed the address to Sturgis; I don't think it would be safe for Sturgis or Moore to come back; Moore is a man that tries to get along with everybody; a man with some intelligence, and the feeling seems to be that he is secretly opposed to the white race; I know the telegraph operator; think he was raised here; a body of men went down on the train for Aaron Moore; I had no process against him; I have been in office eight or nine months (city marshal;) was appointed by the board of aldermen; there was a feeling against Sturgis when he was appointed by Governor Alcorn, because he was opposed to the whites of the South in many of his decisions; I knew nothing about his swindling the colored people of my own knowledge; I know nothing about his making twenty or twenty-five thousand dollars; I do not know whether he was a partner of Theodore Sturgis or not; do not think it would have been safe for Price to remain here after the Alabama people came over; Price did not stand his trial; his trial was to come off, but the justice of the peace told me not to open court, as they did not think it prudent; this was Judge Bramlette; I do not know that the feeling is stronger here than anywhere else against the radical wing of the republican party; I do not think there is a man here in town who would harm Sturgis.

*Question.* Do you not think it is a periodical thing for certain districts to get up an excitement about the "niggers rising?"

*Answer.* I do not know as it is.

*Question.* Do you not believe that the Alabamians coming to this place was the cause of this whole excitement?

*Answer.* I believe they were the prime movers of it; I do not think there was any serious difficulty between the two races previous to the raid of the Alabamians.

*Question.* Do you know anything about Pelton's being ordered from Meridian?

*Answer.* Only what he told me himself. He was on the police, and I went to see him on Monday evening, and he told me he was met by a party up the street, and that they told him to leave in the morning, and I advised him to leave for a few days, anyway.

*Question.* State what business Pelton has been in since he has been in town.

*Answer.* First a porter in a hotel, and afterward appointed marshal, and then on police, and afterward in the employ of Mr. T. Sturgis, on a farm; I have never heard him use any incendiary remarks; about his character, many hard things are said about him; many persons say they do not believe him honest; I do not know these things, but there is a great deal of talk about him.

*Question.* Do you think this paper, the Mercury, reflects the general tone of the people?

*Answer.* It reflects a great deal.

WM. S. PATTON.

J. P. WALKER, being sworn, states:

I am the district attorney for this district; am a resident of Meridian.

*Question.* In your opinion, were the witnesses present at the investigation afraid to give evidence?

*Answer.* Perhaps some of them, when put upon the stand, did not testify what they had represented to Mr. Woodson they would testify; they seemed to testify without any reluctance; whether it was true or false, of course, I do not know.

*Question.* Is it unusual for witnesses to fail to testify what they had represented they could?

*Answer.* It is not. They did not fail to testify to any important fact that Mr. Woodson had represented to us they would testify to.

*Question.* From the development of facts and the testimony which was taken during the investigation, in which you represented the State, during the late riots at this place, do you think that the crimes of murder and arson were committed?

*Answer.* The testimony developed that there were seven persons killed and two houses burned; in the killing of Judge Bramlette, the testimony developed the fact that he was killed by a shot aimed at Mr. Brantley; in regard to the killing across the railroad, I know nothing; the testimony developed the fact in regard to the burning of the church, that two white men, names unknown, took coals of fire from Moore's house and fired it; cannot say in whose custody the three men were; thought we had traced it to H. R. Wilson, as special bailiff, but failed; in reference to killing Warren Tyler, the testimony developed that he fired the shot that killed Judge Bramlette; some testimony that he fired two or three others, and went out of the window; I think no effort was made to produce the weapon used by Tyler; we made inquiry afterward, but it had changed hands; Mr. Brown and myself made inquiry and it could not be found; the jury of inquest on Judge Bramlette were all white.

*Question.* Do you regard the origin of this riot as immediate or remote?

*Answer.* I knew that a bad state of feeling had been existing here for a great while, but I myself anticipated no trouble up to Saturday evening after the meeting of the colored people in the court-house; I was here when the men came from Alabama to attend the trial of Price, about a month before the fire; I advised the sheriff and deputy what to do; I saw armed men on the corner on the way to my office, and it was my understanding that they had come over for the protection of Adam Kennard; I said I thought that we did have ample protection for him; Colonel Harris stated that they were men from Livingston, and most of them he knew, and that he would go out and have a talk with them and get them to lay their arms down; the sheriff, as far as my intercourse has been with him, has been very prompt; I advised him to go with Price to the mayor's court, as his presence would tend greatly to preserve order; I do not know the circumstances relative to the killing of Joseph Williams, member of the board of supervisors; do not think an indictment was found; I did not draw it; I think it was investigated before the grand jury. In reference to the Lauderdale case, my recollection is that parties proved an *alibi* before the committing court.

*Question.* What is the state of the public mind and sentiment in reference to Moore?

*Answer.* My opinion is that public sentiment is very much against him; he never was in my court; in this trial, about the time of this excitement, he was one of the parties charged; Moore was charged with being one of a party who had whipped a colored man for loitering around the church where he was holding a supposed Loyal League meeting; this was about two and a half years ago; he was tried and the charge was not sustained.

*Question.* Do you not think that it is the wish of the majority of the people of this locality to place in contempt the party or parties at the head of the State government?

*Answer.* Not on the part of the better class of people; they manifest opposition toward incompetent officers; they seem disposed to sustain competent officers and those of respectability.

*Question.* Do you think it would be safe for Moore or Price to return?

*Answer.* I do not think Mr. Price ought to come back; Clopton and Tyler were regarded in this place as the exponents of the colored sentiment; Clopton's conduct on the night of the fire was very bad; I was present at the fire; the better class of colored men I do not think would indorse what he had done; I have never had any ap-

prehension of danger here until on Saturday evening; I was about three-quarters of a mile out of town, and when I heard drums beating and the noise, I came to town and learned that the colored men had had a meeting, and had made some inflammatory speeches, and that Mr. Smith had gone in search of the sheriff to have him arrest the meeting; then I had serious apprehension; as well as I can remember, I think the grand jury published a report criticising the actions of some county officials.

*Question.* From the evidence given in the investigation in which you took part, or from your own knowledge, can you state how the fire on Saturday, March 4th, occurred, in which the property of Mr. Sturgis and other property was destroyed?

*Answer.* I cannot; the feeling against Mr. Sturgis was intensely bitter; I do not think after that letter it would be safe for him to come back; of my own knowledge, I know nothing of the charges against Price; I drew the charges on the affidavit of Adam Kennard.

*Question.* Do you know whether or not there was any requisition from the governor of Alabama to the governor of Mississippi for the arrest and return of any of the parties?

*Answer.* None that I know of; there has been no grand jury in session since that time; I board at Mr. Mosely's, a private boarding-house; I have boarded there three weeks; Mr. Mosely's wife was in delicate health at the time of the fire.

*Question.* Do you know for what Daniel Price was arrested? and if so, state all of the facts in reference to his trial and escape.

*Answer.* He was arrested under an affidavit drawn under the fourth section of the bill familiarly known as the "State Ku-Klux bill," by the State authorities; his escape was advised by his friends and counsel and rather winked at by the prosecution, for the purpose of avoiding trouble, with the promise of Price never to return, as I understood; the specifications charged him with leading a band of ten or more colored men, masked, into a house where affiant (Adam Kennard) was sleeping for the night, (the prosecutor was a colored man,) taking him into the woods near the city, stripping him of his clothes and money, and taking them from him, and whipping him very badly, and then shooting him as he ran off; Adam Kennard lives in Sumter County, Alabama; he stated that he had known Price a long time in Alabama, and that he had been intimate with him, and that they had been political friends over there; they were said to be republicans; it was said that Kennard was acting as deputy sheriff of Sumter County, Alabama; it seems that Price and Kennard had some falling out about the taking of some hands from here to work in Alabama—Price objecting to his persuading colored men away from this city; I heard of Kennard's coming over here and going on a man's bond, and taking him back to Alabama before the occurrence with Price.

*Question.* Did or did not Kennard have a requisition from the governor of Alabama for the criminal?

*Answer.* I heard he had; but in my opinion he had not.

*Question.* Was the mayor (Mr. Sturgis) a competent man, in the ordinary acceptation of the term?

*Answer.* He, in my judgment, had sufficient ability to discharge the duties of mayor of a town like this; but he was regarded as a great partisan, and a man whose judgment was very much distorted by political circumstances.

*Question.* Did the feeling against Mr. Sturgis arise from his political standing, or his actions as mayor?

*Answer.* From his conduct as mayor. There was no feeling against him for some time after he was first appointed, as I was aware of.

*Question.* If it was simply his politics, would not the people have been satisfied simply with his removal from office, without ordering him away?

*Answer.* I knew of no disposition to get him out of the county until the occurrences running from Saturday night, the 4th, to Monday, the 6th of March.

*Question.* Do you know the reasons or facts set forth why he should be removed?

*Answer.* There were a great many facts set forth. I signed the petition. The main object was to give the position to somebody who would restore order and peace. The outside of the city was like a picket line, constant firing all night; I was present at the fire on Saturday night, March 4, 1871; a few moments after fire commenced, I met Billy Clopton on the sidewalk, going rapidly toward the fire, cursing boisterously; after the block had been consumed by the fire, I was standing at the southwest corner of the burned block and saw Billy Clopton approach a squad of colored men, eight or ten—maybe more—addressing them as he approached them, saying: "Why the h—ll don't you go and get your arms; something to shoot with? What in the h—ll are you standing here for? I have no secrets to keep; what I have to say I say openly and above-board." He turned from the crowd of colored men, two or three of the crowd following him; he stopped in the street in about ten paces, and fired his pistol four or five times; this was a half or three-quarters of an hour before he was knocked down with a gun; said Clopton is sometimes called William Dennis, and is the same styled as General Dennis in the communication of William Sturgis in the New York Tribune.

J. P. WALKER.

P. H. HIGGINS, being sworn:

I reside in Meridian; am a builder; have been living here two years; know nothing in reference to the late riot.

H. M. THREEFOOT, being sworn:

I am doing business opposite the sheriff's office; I know nothing in reference to the riot

L. D. BELK, sworn:

I reside in Meridian; have resided here one year next August; I have been acting deputy sheriff for two years; was acting deputy sheriff at the time of the riot.

*Question.* Was Mr. Sturgis in good standing in this community; was he in good standing regardless of party?

*Answer.* He was not; I could not state the cause; I saw Clopton on the night of the fire; I heard the language used by him that night; myself and Mr. Walker were standing in the street alone, immediately after the fire, near the ruins; Jack Lee, a colored man, was standing near us; Clopton came near us and took Jack by the hand and said: "You d—n paper collar hotel boys are not doing your duty; why don't you go home and get your guns?" I called to the boy and he came toward me; Clopton took hold of him and said: "Do not go with them, as they are no friends of yours," and he went off and Clopton walked off, and after he got near this house, he met twelve colored men, and they fired guns up in the air; I heard no expressions up to this time. Presently I spoke to Walker and said: "I fear there is going to be some trouble here;" went around on Front street and met a number of people, white and black, moving goods which had been moved out for fear of fire; anticipating trouble, I went to Mr. Mosely's house, and was sent immediately back to do what I could, and if it became serious, to report to him; Clopton had been knocked down during my absence; a number waited upon Judge Bramlette and made affidavit against Clopton, and it was put in my hands for his arrest; I had probably two hundred men to go with me, looking for Clopton, and found he was not hurt; brought him into court-room, and myself and some twenty or thirty men kept guard over him during Saturday night and Sunday; don't know as I heard any other threats by any one, white or black; I heard of the meeting in the court-house on Saturday; I was not at the court-house that day; the meeting was on the same day of the fire; it lasted from 3 to 6 o'clock p. m. I know nothing of the origin of the fire; Sturgis, the mayor, was one of the parties burned out; I did not see Tyler or Moore the evening of the fire; do not know whether or not they were present at the meeting; was informed that they were; the citizens manifested a disposition to restore order—I never saw anything like it—and to act in obedience to the orders of the sheriff, and not to act except under his direction; there were very few blacks at the fire; a great many were around the mayor's office after the killing of Tyler; I am the chief deputy sheriff; Mr. Mosely arranged the guard himself, and selected the leaders of each squad, probably three hundred men in all; when the men were reported to have come from Alabama, I was at home asleep; Mr. Henderson was in charge of the office; he was sworn for that occasion; I saw Tyler with a pistol in his hand, erected toward Judge Bramlette; I could not swear that he shot him; I went into the street and said that Tyler had shot Judge Bramlette; I never saw the pistol but once; do not know how many times it had been fired; I have been informed by the party that had it, that he had loaded two of the barrels that were empty after the firing in the court-room; Mr. Brantley has the pistol. I was not in charge of Dennis (Clopton) when he had his throat cut; at the time his throat was cut I was at home asleep; Henderson was the next in command. I was in there once in the night while Clopton was in there; Mr. Mosely was in there at the time; I heard Clopton when he struck the ground after being thrown out of the window; I saw no one up there, I saw people passing back and forth by the window.

*Question.* How far were you from Parker's house when Tyler was killed?

*Answer.* In the immediate vicinity; I do not know whether he was killed by the squad or not; there were some two hundred men in the squad; I understand he resisted to the last; I went to take his pistols off and found none in his scabbard; he was lying on the right-hand side of the partition door in back room; I do not know who started the rumor in reference to his resistance; I do not know who went into the house first; Colonel Whitaker was there; do not know how many wounds were found upon Tyler's body; did not have any inquest upon Tyler, because Finley requested to take the body home and bury it; I told him I did not see the impropriety; not one of our party was hurt by Tyler's resistance; I have heard the term used by some of the party that he had a great deal of nerve; I did not state that he was "dead as hell," although accused of it; I was asked by some parties where Tyler was, and "if the d—n son of a b—h was dead," and I told them "if you could see him you would think so; I saw the gash in Clopton's neck; it was effectually done; I ordered his coffin and had grave dug; was not buried for two days and nights; I know nothing of two per-

sons who were killed in the country; it was reported to me, and I went straight there, but found none; I went up to the place where Joe Williams was killed; the parties accused were brought here to magistrate's investigation.

*Question.* Why were these parties arrested and arraigned for using language, when parties committing assault and battery were not arrested?

*Answer.* I do not know; Mr. Mosely appointed a man by the name of Wilson to take charge of the three men that were left in the office; I was at home at the time, and do not know what arrangements were made with him; Mr. Mosely had but one bonded deputy; Mr. Mosely requested me, where I saw persons with arms, unless they belonged to one of the companies, to take them away; I saw no man with arms, except those that were of the sheriff's squads; I think it would not be safe for Moore to come back here; if I was Sturgis I would not come; I never was present when Mr. Sturgis (mayor) made a speech; he is not a dissipated man, and not strictly temperate; never heard Moore use any incendiary language; Moore stands in the attitude of, as some would call it, a snake in the grass, and some would call, a wolf in sheep's clothing.

*Question.* Do you think the civil authorities capable of maintaining order here, at all times, and on all occasions?

*Answer.* I would not give that as my opinion, yet awhile; I have seen Reynolds; never heard him make any threats; he was over here on Wednesday after the riot; he came up into the court-house on Wednesday night to take two men from Captain Henderson, who had them in charge; he did not get them; the men were afterward relieved; I do not know that he has been back here since; I have heard that he was an outlaw from Alabama; there were three hundred armed men on guard to prevent any lawlessness; they were put in squads and sent in different directions; I did not see any armed colored men; I heard a great many reports of the kind; do not know as I saw, but on two occasions, colored men together, one on Tuesday morning, of about twenty or thirty, in front of a bar-room, some with guns; this was before the order to disarm; the largest body was in front of the mayor's office, about the time of the killing of Tyler; I think the conduct of some of the colored men here will justify me in saying that the meeting of Saturday was gotten up for the purpose of raising a disturbance between colored and white; there was an effort made to rearrest Moore; a special train was sent in pursuit; I think the crime he had committed sufficient to pursue him; the warrant was issued Sunday evening; he was not arrested until Monday morning, in the court-house; do not know of any causes which led to the extra exertion to arrest Moore on Tuesday; I was in the court-house on Monday evening, and had just left and gone into the sheriff's office; heard the words "d—n liar," and oaths, and I leaned over in my seat; about this time heard report of pistol; ran into the court-room and saw Tyler standing with pistol in his hand, in shooting position, pointing in direction of Judge Bramlette; do not know who fired the shot that killed Judge Bramlette; Tyler immediately ran through the sheriff's office and out of the window after shooting; do not know how many shots were fired; I could not see Brantley from where I stood; I state, as my belief, that Tyler killed Bramlette and Ford; do not say it positively; about five minutes after Tyler went out, I summoned a posse and went in search of him; I stated to parties that Tyler had killed Bramlette and Ford, and I wanted them to help me pursue him; a great number responded to my call; from the time I summoned the posse to the time he was killed some twenty minutes elapsed; I did not go directly to the house; house is on the extreme end of the next block; did not know he was there until we found him.

*Question.* In your judgment was it necessary, considering the number of men you had there, to kill him to arrest him?

*Answer.* In Tyler's case I think it was necessary to have a great many men to make the arrest; none of my men have been hurt, so far as I know.

*Question.* Were the citizens under the direction of the sheriff when they killed this man?

*Answer.* They were under the direction of the sheriff. I was sitting in the sheriff's office in position that I could see Tyler in the court-room. Did not see anybody else with pistol. I went down on the train after Moore to Golden Grove; had about twenty-five or thirty men with me. I had a warrant for his arrest; the same warrant on which he was first arrested. I had a great many men with me that I knew, and a great many that I did not know. Moore would have been safe had we found him; I saw no one else on the road looking for him; met large number of black persons on roads with guns; do not know as it was usual for trains to be chartered to pursue men for breach of the peace; there was nothing paid for the trains; had trains on both roads; telegraphed to the officers and they readily granted trains for the occasion; did not go further than Golden Grove, which is within Lauderdale County, in search for Moore; went as far as the siding which is in that direction; heard that Moore was on the road by a telegram from Hickory Station; that Moore had tried to get on the morning train and failed; I know nothing of my own knowledge, of persons being taken from this county back to Alabama without due process of law; I have heard it spoken of; I have seen Adam Kennard but once, when he was over here; do not know whether he was

an officer or not; I knew that Price was arrested; I executed warrant on one occasion; do not recollect the charge; some black people here in town made the charge; he had an investigation, and it did not amount to anything; at one time it was reported that some colored people were taken back to Alabama; next day a large crowd of colored people appeared upon the street.

*Question.* What was the relative position of Judge Bramlette and Mr. Brantley in reference to Warren Tyler, at the time Mr. Brantley was testifying?

*Answer.* Judge Bramlette was seated at the table; Mr. Brantley was in front of him, a little to the right, about ten feet; Tyler was seated in a chair in front of Judge Bramlette, a little to the left, distant about twelve feet; Tyler and Brantley were nearly opposite each other, about fifteen feet apart; this was their position a very short while before I heard the first shot; I saw only two of them, Tyler and Brantley, afterward; I do not know, of my own knowledge, whether or not Judge Bramlette and Tyler were on good terms; Judge Bramlette has told me that he and Tyler were not on speaking terms; I was friendly with Moore up to this time; we were from the same place; I did not see him from the time of his arrival up to the time of the trial here; I could see no one but Tyler at the time I saw his pistol drawn, but judged from the position I last saw him in, and the position in which Judge Bramlette was found, that it was pointed at Bramlette; Moore asked me for protection; I replied that "I could protect no one now;" I felt it my duty to protect myself at this time; I did not have the warrant for Moore in my possession at this time; there was no one in the house at the time Moore asked for protection but a man by the name of Joseph; all had left. The seats were arranged in two rows crosswise in the room, with an aisle through the center; four or five seats from each row had been taken to the back of the room, leaving a space of about twelve or fourteen feet in width in front.

L. D. BELK.

GRANVILLE HENDERSON sworn:

I reside in Meridian; have resided here about a year; occupation, assistant assessor; I was in Judge Whitaker's office at the time of the shooting on Monday; I know nothing about the shooting of Tyler of my own knowledge; have heard no statements as to who shot him; I was out in the street just as Clopton was falling; I saw him when he was within five or six feet from the ground; I did not not look up to the balcony at the time to see who was on it; I know nothing about the killing of those three men across the railroad; Richard Jackson stated that when the crowd went up to escort Mr. Sturgis to the train these Alabamians took the niggers out and killed them; I was in the crowd when Tyler was killed; I had a gun; was not summoned; when I heard what was going on I was under the impression that the colored people were rising, and joined the squad; I have never felt that there was any cause for fear or danger; I was present at the meeting of Monday; do not recollect of any committee being appointed to wait upon the mayor, requesting him to leave; there was a committee appointed to wait upon Governor Alcorn; I cannot say what the conduct of Deputy Sheriff Belk was when Tyler was killed; I was considerably excited; there were probably five hundred armed men; saw no colored people with arms; very few colored people could be seen at this time; I did not hear Mr. Moore on Monday request to make a speech; it was suggested by Mr. Shearer that Mr. Moore was present, and persons among the audience inferred from that that Mr. Moore would be requested to speak, and they did not want to hear him, and remarked that "he had made his speech on Saturday;" Moore has always been treated with respect here; it was the impression among the people here that it was a pre-arranged plan of Moore's to bring about a riot; he was present at the meeting of the blacks on Saturday, and I heard that he made an incendiary speech, one calculated to bring on a riot; the object of the meeting on Monday was to send a committee to the governor to have Sturgis removed; I do not know as there was any other object; the people felt that they were not safe out at nights, as there was constant firing about the city; I do not suppose that a white man could get up here and make an incendiary speech without being taken to task for it, any more than a colored man; the committing of such outrages as the coming over here from Alabama of those people, and taking away those people, was not encouraged by the people, and I think was sufficient grounds to justify the colored people in the holding of the meeting on Saturday; I do not know by whom this constant firing was done; I think Mr. W. H. Rush was present at the meeting on Saturday; Mr. Moseley and Mr. Belk, during the excitement, did all they could to restore peace and order; if this community had any intention of killing the blacks, they would have done it when they all had arms; there were only a few of the blacks against which any animosity existed; I reached the house where Tyler was killed about a minute afterward; cannot state positively the time; think it was between two and four o'clock; I remained there probably from three to five minutes, and returned immediately to the court-house; cannot state positively how long afterward it was that I saw Clopton falling from the balcony; I understood that he was brought back to the sheriff's office; I do not know in which room the prisoners were confined; I think I saw Mr. Belk take a pistol away from a prisoner said to be Isaac

Lee; do not know how many shots were fired at the house in which Tyler was killed; Tyler had a great many wounds; do not know whether any resistance was made by Tyler or not; I do not know who occupied the house in which Tyler was killed.

G. HENDERSON.

J. R. SMITH sworn:

I reside in Meridian; I am the chancery clerk and postmaster; I was present when the arrest of Aaron Moore was made by the sheriff; I was in conversation with Moore in the chancery clerk's office, and the sheriff came in with a paper in his hand and told Moore and Tyler to consider themselves under arrest; Moore inquired what he was arrested for; sheriff replied for complicity with Dennis in making incendiary speeches on Saturday night, and he further remarked that he did not consider that the charges amounted to anything, and sheriff then walked away; he did not take them in custody implying from his conduct that the charges were so frivolous that they would not amount to anything, and he told Moore that he did not think the charges would give him any trouble; I was in my office and in the hall, and heard some parts of the speeches that were made on Monday; I think it was Mr. Shearer who made the suggestion, or motion, that Moore be allowed to speak, and the expression was general that they did not want to hear him; I returned from Jackson on the 9th; at the meeting place of the trains, about sixty or seventy miles from here, I saw two citizens of Meridian, J. F. Sanford and J. W. Draugn, get off one train and on the other; they got on the train returning to Meridian; saw no arms; did not know their business; they said that everything was peaceable in Meridian; I saw two or three boys at Forest get on the train and return to Meridian; some two or three more got on at each station coming this way; when the train reached Meridian there were in all twenty or more; some had arms; rather unusual for citizens to be making excursions of that kind; some of them were bar-keepers, some clerks in stores; I should think it unusual for them to be making excursions at this time; cannot say as there was a general feeling of regret at the arrival of Moore in Jackson, as I do not know; do not know of any individual expressing any regret at his safe arrival; heard some prominent citizens of the town say that they were glad that he got there safe; I have known Moore some ten or twelve years; I have known of his movements the last five years; since connection with the republican party have been intimately acquainted with his movements; he never intentionally got up any trouble; I have thought at times that his conduct was indiscreet; and have advised him at times to be prudent and discreet, as I thought it was liable to cause trouble to get up a feeling of bitterness between the races that would cause trouble; know nothing in reference to his connection with reported arrest for whipping a man some two or three years ago; the report of whipping was for parties entering Council of League as spies without authority; I was appointed by the meeting on Monday on committee to go to Jackson to try to get some changes in officials, particularly mayor; I applied to the governor as a member of the committee for this purpose; there had been a petition signed by a number of democrats and several white republicans of this city, requesting his removal; I signed petition with some modifications; I did not sign the petition because he was not a good officer but to appease the popular opinion, as he was powerless to do good; was powerless because he did not have the respect and support of the white citizens generally; he was a man of very firm, decided views, and became very extreme and ultra in his political views and other respects; became so ultra in his political views that he became to be partial; this opposition set in from the time he was appointed by General Ames; the opinion of the partiality of the mayor was formed from outside rumors entirely, as I have never attended his courts; he had been here about a year and a half before he was appointed by General Ames; he was engaged in mercantile business; was very quiet.

*Question.* Was this opposition to Mr. Sturgis not common to persons holding office from the same authority?

*Answer.* Not to the same extent.

*Question.* Why was it not to the same extent?

*Answer.* Perhaps because other officers were not thrown in direct contact with the people as he was; and another reason was, he did not confine his association altogether with white people; he was more disposed to associate with colored people than most of the other white republicans in the community.

*Question.* Was there not a system of ostracism practiced toward him by the white people which was not practiced toward Judge Leachman and other white republicans of the county?

*Answer.* Rather more especially against him; it may have been because he was a northern man; I am inclined to think that there is more opposition toward northern than southern republicans; I was in my office on the day of the meeting of the colored people on Saturday, and was informed by Judge Gibbons and Mr. McMullins that the speeches were incendiary; I stepped to the door and heard Clopton, in speaking, say that they must take the matter in their own hands and fight it out, and not let the Alabamians come over here; I then went and informed the sheriff that, if the meeting

was not broken up, it would lead to a disturbance and trouble; I could see a feeling of enthusiasm among the colored people, and was satisfied from speeches of that character that the white people would not remain quiet; the Alabamians were not here at this time.

*Question.* How long before this meeting of the colored men was it that the Alabamians were in Meridian and took off the colored men?

*Answer.* About three weeks.

*Question.* Do you know whether the sheriff was notified of the presence of the Alabamians, and whether he made any attempt to arrest them?

*Answer.* In my presence one colored man notified the sheriff that a crowd of men got off at the depot. This man stated that they had beat one or two colored men and tied two or three colored men.

*Question.* At the time this man was speaking to the sheriff, did you see any armed men?

*Answer.* I saw eight or ten white men about the post office; did not know any of them; I do not think they were citizens of this place.

*Question.* Do you know the objects for which the meeting was called on Saturday?

*Answer.* I thought I did, but it seems I did not; Tyler informed me that it was a meeting of the colored men of the town in favor of retaining Mr. Sturgis as mayor, and Mr. Mosely as sheriff, as there was some talk of their removal at this time; do not know whether the meeting gave any formal expression in reference to the removal of Mr. Sturgis and the sheriff; was told that they did not; I do not know whether or not the speeches made had any reference to the removal of these officers; I was tolerably well acquainted with Sturgis; I was here on the night of the fire; know nothing of the origin; do not know whether or not Moore was present; I was there about 12 o'clock; Mr. Sturgis, the mayor, I think was not a member of the firm; the firm was T. Sturgis; I always regarded the mayor as manager of the concern; I considered it in as good a financial condition as any house in town. I suppose that the remarks heard in the speech on Saturday alluded to the first visit of the Alabamians, and the carrying off of the three or four colored men.

*Question.* Did you regard it as incendiary on the part of the colored people to denounce such conduct as that which characterized the visit of the Alabamians?

*Answer.* Not simply the act of denouncing it, but the threats "to arm and fight it out," to prevent its repetition. The conduct of these people was generally condemned by the citizens of Meridian, regardless of party.

*Question.* Did not a great many men of one particular party applaud it?

*Answer.* Not to my knowledge; I do not think Moore or Sturgis would be safe to come back here.

*Question.* If they should return, what would be the treatment toward them?

*Answer.* I do not know; I do not think they would find it pleasant residing in this community; I have never heard any direct threats against Moore or Sturgis since they left, but from remarks I have heard, I do not think they would be safe. Mr. Sturgis was generally regarded as an upright business man; I do not think the charges against him had any foundation in fact; do not consider that I was invited to the meeting of the colored people on Saturday; do not think that any other white republicans were invited except Mr. Mosely, who was invited to be present, and set himself right before the colored people; was notified by Tyler that it was a meeting of the colored men of the town; Moore returned from Jackson on Friday evening preceding the Saturday of the meeting; not usual for Moore to return during the present session of the legislature, at the last of every week; I do not know that Moore applied to the governor to have any of the officials here removed; I know that two colored men, Clopton and Radford, had been to Jackson during the week of Moore's return, and returned with Moore on Friday; I was told that they went down to the governor to prevail upon him, if possible, not to remove Mayor Sturgis; I do not know whether or not Moore had anything to do with the calling of the meeting on Saturday; do not know who presided at the meeting, but think perhaps Dennis was chairman; do not know whether there was a secretary or not.

J. R. SMITH.

Mrs. PEGGY JOHNSON sworn:

I live in Meridian; I stay in the restaurant nearly opposite the court-house, kept by Mr. Santon; I was standing in the street in front of the court-house when Clopton was thrown out and Tyler jumped out; I saw the men when they threw Clopton out; I cannot give the names of the persons who threw him out; Colonel Horne jumped upon him and stamped him when he reached the ground; I saw Tyler when he jumped out; he ran through George Moore's barber shop; he was shot when he reached the ground to where he jumped; he was shot in the back, I thought, from the way he clapped his hands to his back; he cried "O, Lord!" Mr. Hugh Wilson shot him; he is a citizen of this place; I saw Tyler when he came from the balcony, swing down on the iron brace under the balcony, and immediately ran off; he did not fall to the

ground; Wilson came out on the balcony and shot him with a gun; I saw Tyler's pistol buckled behind him in his case; his coat at the time was over his back; I was standing on the corner when they returned from Parker's shop, and they stated that they "had killed the damned old rascal;" they then formed in line and threw up their hats, cheering and saying, "the damned old rascals are dead, Warren Tyler and Bill Clopton;" Tyler did not have a pistol in his hand when he came out on the gallery; I saw him when he sprang out of the door; I did not see them do any more shooting after that; I know the sheriff and deputy sheriff; I know Mr. Belk; Mr. Belk was standing on the corner next Travis's grocery; Mr. Mosely was on his horse on the corner opposite the court-house, and Mr. Mosely asked them what they were doing there without their arms, and asked them why they did not get their arms and get in line and go to Tyler's house; Mr. Ramsey asked Mr. Mosely what crowd he was commanding; Mr. Mosely inquired "Why;" and further replied, "That crowd over there," pointing to a large crowd of white men; the crowd had no arms; Mr. Ramsey replied, "Sir, I want you to be particular;" there were no colored people on the street at this time; there was a horse company and a foot company started up the street to search for Aaron Moore, saying that "he has ruined our country and we are going to have him;" could not point out the one who made the expression; I went for Mr. Clopton's wife, and told her that her husband was lying out in the street, and to go and get him; tried to get a colored man to drive the wagon, but he would not do it; he said he was afraid; I drove it myself; she asked the sheriff for her husband, and he (Mr. Mosely) replied, "Go back home and stay there; you can't get him; these men won't let you have him;" he (Dennis) was struggling in his blood at this time, not dead yet; I saw some men bringing Henry Johnson and Marion White to town; both of them had their heads bent; these men were brought to the court-house; I did not know the names of any of the squad; I lived here before the railroad was built here; I am a married woman; Henry Johnson is my husband's name; am not living with him at this time; have been separated since about two months before last Christmas; he was an alderman of this town; I have heard about Ku-Klux; have never seen any; saw the Alabama men; there is a great deal of dread of the Ku-Klux in this country; have heard of the Ku-Klux killing Joe Williams; I have been out to his house twice since; heard that they were disguised; I have heard of the Ku-Klux being after Kizer; they were not in disguise; came in the night; Kizer is in Jackson; do not know the men that were taken away by the Alabamians; the colored people, after the meeting of Saturday, marched around the streets, beating drum until dark; did not see them have any arms; I am kept at my business until late; started for my home about 11 o'clock, and met armed men, and was halted by them; Mr. Wagner was among them; by Ku-Klux I understand the meaning to be men that go out in the night disguised; I did not see any such parties Saturday night of the fire; they were straightout men without disguises, going along with their guns; this was after the fire, way yonder about midnight; a good many colored people have left since this disturbance; a great many took foot and went to the woods and sent for their wives; I came near leaving myself; was afraid to stay, as I heard the Alabamians said they were going to take me away; it seemed to be known that the Alabamians were coming here before they came; I know of two women said to be outraged; do not know anything about their character; Ellen Parton and Mrs. Johnson were the two; said to be four in all; the Alabamians did not do this; I was at the church Sunday night and saw a crowd of white men, armed, come by the church, and pass on by; they were all walking; went by the Methodist church and kept on toward the Baptist church; I know where Captain Duck lives; do not know whether they went toward his house; they were all upon the hill; he lives near the Baptist church; I understand from my sister that some of the parties undertook to outrage her; I think some of them were young girls, one of them about fifteen years of age; the squad I met halted me, and Mr. Wagner asked me where I was going; I told him I was going about my business; Mr. Adams told me "not to talk so G—d d——n big; he would take me up;" I told him to "take me up and shoot me, put me in the guard-house, or do what he pleased, I wasn't bothering him;" they formed in a line and went back to Bill Dennis's house, and I ran from my house over there.

her
PEGGY + JOHNSON.
mark.

CHARLOTTE FAGAN, being sworn:

I reside in Meridian; I know nothing further about the woman said to be outraged than what was told me by Parthenia Greene; the little girl's name is Onie Paton, between ten and eleven years old; I have heard of others down in this part of town; I saw men at the burning of Moore's house; I saw men in Moore's house, and heard great noise like they were breaking up the pots and dishes, and the captain (Henderson) said "come out of there, Bob," and Bob said "we are fixing to run a big rabbit out of his den;" this was the last time the men went there; the breaking of the stoves and dishes was by the first party, about three-quarters of an hour before this last party

came; I saw Captain Henderson in the last party; those that were on foot were the ones that went into the house both times; there was a man in my house to look for guns, and inquired my husband's name, and said that his name was Skinner; there were two Ku-Klux caught upon the hill by Warren Tyler; they say they were disguised; I did not see them; they were in my house; Clopton made Tyler turn them loose; they belonged in this town; they staid at Hulburt's or Sturgis' store; were clerks; they said that they had long gowns on; did not get their gowns; this was about six weeks ago; about the time they were trying to catch Mr. Price, the school-teacher; I do not know any of the men that went into Moore's house; I saw two men with torches when they fired the church; never heard who those men were; I live right near Moore's house; do not know whether or not Moore's furniture was out of the house: Moore has always preached peace in his church; he sometimes came home in two weeks; sometimes in three weeks; could not tell when he did come home; Moore's wife lived here; the colored people have always tried to manage in a way to keep peace; Clopton was always regarded as an outrageous man; they say he was drunk the night of the fire; always heard the white people say that he said things that he had no business to say; the colored people did not pay much attention to him, as he was always drinking, and I know of no one that was led by him; Warren Tyler was a very good peaceable fellow, so far as I know; I knew him before he was grown: I saw them when they shot Isaac Lee; I think the man's name is Adams; I heard a man on horse say, "Adams, did you halt him?" Adams said "Yes;" but he did not have any halting to do, as he was right under the house; I saw the man when he shot him; Mr. Lee went across the hill to some white people's house; he went in the yard, and another party who were coming up on the other side of the house were going to shoot, and Mr. Swann waved his hand to them not to shoot; Lee at this time was in the white people's yard; they got him and brought him down to the court-house: Mr. Swann was with the men when they shot; the man called Adams lives here in town; I have seen him often; he lived close by where the shooting was done, but has moved down here; it was about three-quarters of an hour after I saw the last party that I discovered the fire; I do not know whether the men who caught the Ku-Klux were armed or not; I am a member of the church which Mr. Moore had charge of; they said that the Ku-Klux had gowns on; I do not know whether they had anything over their faces or not; I do not know the names of the two men who were reported to me as being dead out in the country; said to be black men; they were found, or said to be seen, by Mrs. Saulsbury; I do not know whether any one went to look for the bodies or not; I heard no reasons assigned by the parties pursuing Isaac Lee why they wanted to capture him; it was in the yard of Mr. Heuston that Isaac Lee went when they were pursuing him.

her
CHARLOTTE + FAGAN.
mark.

ELLEN PARTON, being sworn, states:

I reside in Meridian; have resided here nine years; occupation, washing and ironing and scouring; Wednesday night was the last night they came to my house; by "they" I mean bodies or companies of men; they came on Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday; on Monday night they said that they came to do us no harm; on Tuesday night they said they came for the arms; I told them there was none, and they said they would take my word for it; on Wednesday night they came and broke open the wardrobe and trunks, and committed rape upon me; there were eight of them in the house; I do not know how many there were outside; they were white men; there was a light in the house; I was living in Marshal Ware's house; there were three lights burning; Mr. Ware has been one of the policemen of this town; he was concealed at the time they came; they took the claw hammer and broke open the pantry where he was lying; he was concealed in the pantry under some plunder, covered up well; I guess he covered himself up; a man said "here is Marshal's hat, where is Marshal?" I told him "I did not know;" they went then into everything in the house, and broke open the wardrobe; I called upon Mr. Mike Slamon, who was one of the crowd, for protection; I said to him "please protect me to-night, you have known me a long time;" this man covered up his head then; he had a hold of me at this time; Mr. Slamon had an oil-cloth and put it before his face, trying to conceal himself, and the man that had hold of me told me not to call Mr. Slamon's name any more; he then took me in the dining room, and told me that I had to do just what he said: I told him I could do nothing of that sort; that was not my way, and he replied "by God, you have got to," and then threw me down; this man had a black eye, where some one had beaten him; he had a black velvet cap on; after he got through with me he came through the house, and said that he was after the Union Leagues; I yielded to him because he had a pistol drawn; when he took me down he hurt me of course; I yielded to him on that account; he never injured me any ways, but hurt me with his pistol; from there they went off; looked like a heap around the house; there were eight in the house; I knew no one but Slamon; he is employed by the Mobile and Ohio Railroad Company to grease cars; I

do not know of any other woman who was treated as I was, but have heard of them; I did not notice the faces of any of the rest; they turned their faces around from me; these were different men from those that were there on Monday and Tuesday nights; those were all strangers that were to my house on the last night but Slamon; I am generally acquainted in Meridian; those with Slamon I did not take to be citizens of this town; those were citizens who called on the two nights preceding, and did no damage; those who called on the first two nights treated me kindly; I complained to Capt. Early, who was acting constable, and he said he was going to stop all of that, and that they were men who came in here, and he was very mad about it; the reason why I did not make an affidavit against this man was because it was in the night, and I told Capt. Early next morning; I told a great many of the citizens about it, and they had known me for a long time, and said it was scandalous; I told Dr. Phillips and Mr. Rainey how they done me, and I told some white ladies about it, too; I did not stay at home any more for a week afterward; I am a married woman; have been parted from my husband since the surrender; I am not living with him; there is one other woman living with me named Alice Batt; this man had her in there first, and Alice Batt told me that he said to her to go away, that "she was rotten," and to call that other woman; and when I went to him he asked me "what is the matter with that other woman?" Alice Batt moved in on Monday; I know nothing in reference to her, only she lived in the rear; don't know what she does for a living; the one that committed the rape upon me was called by one of the party "Capt. Jinks;" he had a black eye; there was a light in the room; I saw him in the room with Alice, but do not know what he did with her; I was in the same room at the other end when Alice told me that he wanted me.

her
ELLEN + PARTON.
mark.

There was nobody in the room at the time he had me; he drove Alice out of there there was an old bed in the room, broken down and piled up; did not straighten out the bed; he just pressed me down; I never was treated that way before; I never was forced before; Marshal Ware's wife is dead; he is not married.

her
ELLEN + PARTON.
mark.

THEODORE STURGIS, sworn:

I was not examined before the investigating court; as regards the origin of the fire on Saturday night, I cannot give you any light upon that subject; there are four parties employed in my store, William Sturgis, Edgar Sturgis, David C. Smith, and myself; the store was a story and a half frame building, formerly a church; the house was worth two thousand dollars; I was the owner; I was doing what was called a lien business; I kept groceries, dry goods, general goods, and country supplies; I have been taking liens for a month, predicated upon this year's crop; I refused to credit until after the first of April; I had considerable out on last year's business; I had thirteen thousand dollars' worth of stock on hand; got some goods in on the day of the fire, and got in quite a stock of goods recently; my stock was full; have been doing business here since 1862; I had one thousand dollars insurance on building and eight thousand on stock; being burned out at this time interferes very much with my business, as now is the time that planters want their liens filled; could not tell whether fire originated in my store or Mr. Hurlburt's, or between them; both are frame buildings; I was at my residence at the time; I saved four thousand dollars of my stock, which is more than any one else on the block saved; the fire broke out just after dark; the store was closed at the time the fire broke out; brother had the key at home; my younger brother slept in the building; there were no combustibles other than matches there; my younger brother, Edgar, was at home with me at the time of the fire; he had been home long enough to eat his supper, when William Sturgis came running in and said "there is a fire on our corner, hurry down;" cannot throw any light upon the origin of the fire; have not been able to ascertain anything in relation to the origin of the fire; at this time Edgar Sturgis had the key to the store; the books were not burned; I saved them; the whole upper portion of the building was on fire when I reached there; the doors were broken open when Edgar and myself reached there; have heard that Tom Pelton broke them open; I owned the lot upon which the building stood; the business was transacted in my own name, T. Sturgis; the insurance policy was in the name of Theodore Sturgis; the house was perfectly solvent; I staid at the fire until after the goods were carried up; the people generally assisted; quite a number of colored people were there; William Dennis was intoxicated, and perhaps talked too much; I talked to him and called him a fool, and tried to persuade him to go home; I also sent my brother to him; shortly afterward I learned that he was knocked down; his language was confined to cursing of those parties who burned me out; William Sturgis, my brother, was mayor of the town, and was at my house when the committee

waited upon him; I do not know who the committee were; the nature of the communication to him was that he had to leave the town; I think their words were "that it was the desire and wish of the citizens that he (William Sturgis) would leave town, and that he should leave; the committee said that they were going to Jackson, and William Sturgis seeing Mr. Shearer among them said that he would go to Jackson, as he felt safe with Mr. Shearer; Mr. Shearer stated to the crowd that William Sturgis would leave and go to Jackson with him; the crowd said that he should not go to Jackson, but must take a northern-bound train, and leave at two o'clock; after that I had an interview with Mr. Shearer, Captain Henderson and R. J. Mosely, and asked that they supply a guard to protect him to the cars; request was complied with, and he was protected to the cars; I got two friends of mine to go with him to Lauderdale Station to protect him from violence; W. D. Hurlburt and Willie Snow went along with him; my younger brother lost his clothing and about three hundred dollars in money in the fire; sometimes there was a loaded gun in the office; sometimes not any; my brother William and D. C. Smith carried pistols; there is no truth in the report that I kept an arsenal, or thirty or forty loaded guns for use; I never kept but one can of powder there, and retailed it out of a glass jar; I kept guns in the showcase for sale as other merchants do; I had on hand from twenty to twenty-five guns; in the value given of my stock it is estimated at cost price; I did a business of twenty-five thousand; was reducing business down; I am a northern man by birth; the treatment of the citizens of Meridian toward me was very kind; lived in New Orleans twelve years previous to living here; my younger brother came out here last fall; he has had no other than kind treatment from the citizens; Edgar, my younger brother, is about thirty years of age; he and myself have never taken any part in politics; neither my brother Edgar nor myself have been treated unkindly by the citizens since this occurrence; it was perhaps two or three hours after the difficulty in the court-house that my brother was waited upon by the committee; no violent demonstrations toward my brother while he was at my house; during the day on which he was notified to leave by the committee, party came in in the afternoon looking for Aaron Moore; by my solicitation two young men went through my premises; a portion of the crowd did not seem willing to take my word, the reason why I told them to go through my house; these parties who searched my house saw my brother; they went to the barn, smoke-house, kitchen, and everywhere else; it is rather unusual to have the privacy of a family invaded in that way; it is not unusual to have the privacy of a family invaded in that way at the request of the owner.

*Question.* Do you, or do you not, think, from the expressions which you heard from a portion of that crowd, that your house would have been searched if you had not asked them to do it?

*Answer.* I do not think so.

*Question.* Has your brother taken any very active part in politics, outside the mere fact of holding office?

*Answer.* I do not think he has.

*Question.* Was not the prejudice against him engendered from the mere fact of his holding office?

*Answer.* I think it was to a very great extent.

*Question.* Were you or were you not indicted as a member of the board of supervisors for malfeasance in office?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Do you know whether there has been a grand jury in session since you have been a supervisor?

*Answer.* There has not.

*Question.* Was the old board indicted?

*Answer.* I think some of them were; my brother was a republican.

*Question.* Does the same ill-feeling which you say existed against your brother because of his holding office, exist against other republican office-holders in this county?

*Answer.* It exists against some, but not against others; at the time of his first appointment I was not aware that he had an enemy in town; I know nothing about the killing of any parties of my own knowledge.

THEO. STURGIS.

SAM. PARKER, being sworn:

Reside in Meridian; it was in my shop that Tyler was killed; was not in the house when he went in; did not see him go in; he was killed in about a quarter of an hour from the time of the shooting at the court-house; I was on the sidewalk at my door when the shooting occurred in my shop; I saw Bob Coleman and son, Wash Brantley and Hugh Wilson, on the sidewalk in front of my door; Mr. Brantley went in first and carried me in with him to search for Warren Tyler; this was before he was killed; he went in and found him under my bed, and he said: "Here he is, boys, under the bed;" I ran out as soon as he said that; I met the crowd in front room coming in; did not recognize any of the crowd; do not know how many shots were fired; shooting com-

menced pretty soon after crowd got in there; saw him after he was killed; I do not know how many times he was shot; he was lying by the fire-place, with his feet on the hearth and head toward the back door; I was then taken in custody by Mr. Belk, and brought to the court-house; was relieved by Mr. Belk; gave me the key and sent me back, about a quarter of an hour after this; I found a pistol under the bed next morning, the same bed under which they said Tyler was found; was but one bed in the room; it was a large repeater; do not remember whether it was a five or six shooter; examined it to see if it had been shot off; it had not been shot off; there had been a couple of caps bursted off or dropped off; one of the caps seemed to have been bursted, and the hammer was down on it; the other was not on the tube; I am certain all the barrels were loaded; Mr. Brantley came around shortly after I got it from under the bed and said he thought it was Mr. Mosely's pistol, as Mr. Mosely said that he had lost one from his drawer in the court-house, and if it was not Mr, Mosely's he would bring it back to me; Mr. Brantley brought it back to me the next morning, and asked me "if I thought I had a better right to it than he did;" I told him I had no right to it at all; Mr. Brantley then kept the pistol; Mr. Dan. McDonald said that he thought the pistol was his; that he and Tyler had exchanged pistols; did not examine Tyler to see whether he had his belt and scabbard on; did not see whether he had a pistol or not; helped to carry him out; he was shot in the face, also in the breast by a gun; the wadding was on his breast; the charge passed through an account-book in his pocket; after I got out of the house, Mr. Rob't Coleman cocked his gun and drew it on me and held it in my face.

SAM. PARKER.

EDGAR STURGIS, being sworn:

Been residing in Meridian since last December; my brother William and myself left the store together about seven o'clock; I locked the store and took the key with me; is but one key; went to post office together; from there to Mr. Palmer's house; William stopped there; I went on to Theodore Sturgis's, my brother's house; had eaten my supper and sat down before my brother William came; it was about half an hour from the time that I parted from my brother William before I saw him again at my brother's house; it might have been more, it might have been less; when he came up he brought the alarm of fire; my brother Theodore and myself went immediately to the fire, (on the 4th of March;) the fire was burning in the top of both buildings, Sturgis and Hurlburt's stores; it had burned through the ceiling and was dripping in below in Sturgis's store; did not go in Hurlburt's store; I lost my trunk, with clothes, worth from one hundred to one hundred and fifty dollars, and three hundred dollars in money, which were in the upper story; did not keep quantity of loaded guns on hand; kept guns in show-case for sale; I had a gun up stairs that was loaded; knew of no other loaded gun in the house; did not notice whether or not Mr. Hurlburt's store was closed before I left; was in the habit of closing the store early, sometimes at seven and sometimes before; I think the distance from brother's store to post office somewhere in the neighborhood of a quarter of a mile; myself and brother were there a very few moments; the distance from the post office to where I left my brother William (Mr. Palmer's) may be another quarter of a mile; distance from Mr. Palmer's to my brother Theodore's house but a few rods; supper was waiting when I reached home; sat down to supper as soon as I reached home; it was about an hour from the time I left the store before the alarm of fire was given; I am in the habit of sleeping in the store; had a fire there in the morning in the back part of the store below; do not think any fire there after nine or ten o'clock; brother's and Mr. Hurlburt's stores are close together; small space between them; space might have been a foot—might have been less; never measured it; the space was not open, it was closed up; do not know whether space enough for any one to pass between the two stores or not; there was only one key to the store, and I carried that.

EDGAR STURGIS.

P. S. LAYTON, being sworn:

I reside in Meridian; am an insurance agent; three of the companies which I represent lost about six thousand dollars in the fire of the 4th March; losses have been adjusted, settled, and paid, to Hurlbut Brothers in two cases, and to Mrs. Chadwick; the fire originated between 7 and 8 o'clock p. m. on the 4th of March; I was present at the fire before Hurlburt Brothers burned down; from the best of my information I believe the fire started in Sturgis's store; no idea what part of the building; I did not go in Sturgis's building; did not try; Hurlburt's was a long building, with a warehouse at the back of it; when I got out of Hurlburt's store Sturgis's building was pretty well burned up; Hurlburt's building was on the corner of the block; I entered Hurlburt's building at the rear on the west side; my attention was principally directed to those buildings on which I had risks; do not think there was much wind; could not say which way the flames spread at first; the progress of the fire was very rapid; know

nothing about space between Hurlburt's and Sturgis's building; considered it great risk on property on the block for insurance companies; insured some; considered it bad, and stated to party that I did not think company would let the risk stand; secondly, from the general character of Mr. William Sturgis, wanted nothing to do with him; do not know whether or not William Sturgis had any property on the block or not; but from the general impression here, judged that all of the family were together in that store; it was a block in which insurance companies wanted little to do with; all pine; some old and some new buildings; there was a vacancy between Mrs. Chadwick's two-story frame building and building on the west of between thirty and thirty-five feet; there was a shed in the space; it was torn down; could not get it away; the amount of goods saved from Mr. Hurlburt's store I do not know; they were being removed from the west side when I was there; the flames spread very rapidly over the whole block; it was all pine; I was in charge of one of the squads on Wednesday sent out by the sheriff; on Wednesday morning there were two gentlemen, Colonel Whitaker and Mr. Heuston, who were on the committee of safety that had been appointed, recommended me to the sheriff as a proper person to take charge of a body of men to rearrest one Aaron Moore, who had been guilty, as charged, of incendiary language, and who fled, after having been duly arrested, from justice; said Aaron Moore was reported to be in the vicinity of Golden Grove, about ten or eleven miles from here; the sheriff gave me a written deputization as special deputy, with authority to rearrest said Aaron Moore, which I failed to do, because of the said Moore's not being comeatable; I think I had twelve men in the guard; there were different opinions as regards where Moore was going; some thought he was going northeast from here; my idea was that he was going to Jackson; do not know how many squads were sent out for Moore; I know of a squad on the railroad; do not know who was in command of the squad; I saw Mr. Belk on the car; I presumed that they were sent out by the railroad to do what I had been sent out on horseback to do; I tried to get them to hold on and not go down to Golden Grove ahead of me; do not know whether Henderson, Randall, or Early had squads; Randall was with me part of the time; I thought it was a public necessity to use such unusual vigilance to capture Moore, to answer the charges for which he had been arraigned; charge, as I understand it, incendiary and calculated to raise a riot; I know nothing of Captain Jinks; I was not able to get out of my bed for two weeks after my return from Golden Grove, on account of having typhoid pneumonia; I am well acquainted with business men here; the men in my posse were all citizens of Meridian, and selected by myself; my object was to arrest Moore and return him to custody; it was after the fire Clopton was arrested; a good many of the colored people assisted, and a great many did not assist in taking goods from the stores; I heard a great many refuse to assist on being requested to do so, and I heard no white person refuse; I offered ten or fifteen negroes from one to five dollars apiece to assist, and but three or four assisted in the removal of a stock of goods from a contiguous block, which I had fears would be burned; those of the negroes that helped me have never called on me for the money; I heard no violent language, nor saw any riotous conduct after the fire, but heard a great many guns; I was present at the meeting on Monday; think there was a petition and a committee appointed to wait upon Governor Alcorn with the view to the removal of certain obnoxious persons from office, and to preserve peace and quiet, and to prevent any collision between the races; the object was mainly for the removal of Mayor Sturgis; I think democrats and republicans attended the meeting; am not certain who was on the committee.

*Question.* State whether or not the meeting appointed a committee to wait upon Mr. Sturgis, requesting him to leave here.

*Answer.* My impression is that there was; there was so much said about Sturgis that I do not recollect whether or not the committee was appointed; he was objectionable for the reason, as I understand, that it was supposed that he affiliated with the worst of low-down negroes, and kept arms concealed for negroes; they were supposed to be kept in his store, and some in his house; other republican office-holders were not as objectionable as Mr. Sturgis; I mean by low-down niggers, negroes who are ready for any villany that any villain might incite them to; at the same time I do not think that the majority of them are that way; I knew nothing about Aaron Moore's conduct previous to Saturday night; there were not any other republican officials in this place, that I know of, that were as obnoxious as Mayor Sturgis; I think such a proposition was made as to allow him a reasonable time to leave, time to settle up his business and get off peaceably; think there was a general call issued for the meeting Monday through the press of the city; the hall was very much crowded; many republicans and colored people there; do not think Sturgis ought to feel himself safe if he came back; do not know about Moore; I saw Moore in the meeting on the 6th; heard no suggestion that Moore should speak; I think there was a desire expressed by a great many in the meeting that they did not want to hear Moore.

*Question.* Do you know how the information was received here that Moore was at Golden Grove?

*Answer.* Yes; I received my information from Captain Armstrong, local editor of the

Gazette; he stated that he received a telegram; did not state the name of the party, nor from what point; I think that Armstrong stated to me that he received it from some one who left here on the train in the morning. On Saturday night after the fire I was appointed by the sheriff special deputy, to assist in arresting William Clopton, alias Dennis, and remained on duty at the court-house all that night, giving strict instructions to the party in charge of the guard who had William Clopton in custody, to see to it that no violence was done the prisoner. On Sunday morning said Clopton was duly and safely turned over to Mr. Belk, the regular deputy sheriff; and on Sunday night I was again, by the sheriff, put in charge of keeping the peace at the court-house and in the city. This I did, to the best of my ability, instructing Captain Wessenberg, who had immediate charge of said Clopton, to place guards so as to protect the prisoner from any violence; which duty he performed. On Monday morning Captain Wessenberg and myself left the prisoner in charge of Mr. Belk, the deputy sheriff, and saw said Clopton no more until after he was killed. General orders from the sheriff were to disarm all persons that we might find with arms, not acting under the sheriff's authority; there were three or four arms taken under these orders by Captain Beazy, who had instructions to turn them over to the sheriff.

*Question.* Why was it that you thought it necessary on Saturday night to give instructions to Captain Wessenberg to guard Clopton closely, and particularly from violence and parties on the outside?

*Answer.* Because from the excitement incident to the fire, and the various reports made in reference to the collection of armed negroes, I thought that some indiscreet young persons, without reflection, and probably under the influence of stimulants, might attempt to do violence to the prisoner. Captain Wessenberg is a contractor on the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad; makes his headquarters at this place; do not know where he is now. There were no arrests of negroes made by any of my posse, while I was in charge, with or without arms.

*Question.* From the arrangements which you made, had there been armed men in the corporate limits of the town would they have been found?

*Answer.* If there had been any organized body within the corporate limits, I think they would have been found. On the trip to Golden Grove only found one musket in possession of a negro; Major Randall took charge of the gun; do not know whether the negro had it in his hands, or whether it was taken from his house. There was no violence attempted upon any person whatever by any of my posse.

P. S. LAYTON.

Mrs. MARY A. KEATON, being sworn:

I reside in Meridian; I was here at my residence on the night of the fire, March 4, 1871; I saw some parties returning from the fire; heard Bill Dennis; knew him by his voice; I was well acquainted with him; heard him utter bitter oaths and say, "Let the town burn; they have ruled here long enough;" I did not distinguish anything else that he said; he was cursing all of the time; he appeared to unload his wagon and go back to the fire; heard no one else using any language that night; do not know as I saw any one using arms that night; I heard a great deal of firing all of that night, and when they fired some one would answer by firing again; I do not know who did the firing; as soon as I saw the flames I heard firing all around; there was a great deal of firing in the direction of Clopton's house; I live in the west part of town; I was at Mr. Foye's, near where Clopton lives; I have known Clopton some time; I came from the same place he did—Aberdeen; he had a very bad name in the place he came from; I was about fifty yards from Clopton when I heard him make use of this language; I judge that he had a load of goods, and was coming home with them; he had his boy with him; it was not light enough to see him, but I knew his voice well; his voice was a very coarse, harsh one; he seemed to unload his wagon, (cursing very much,) and went back; I do not know whether the firing was done by colored people or not; I have seen the colored people about here with as many arms as the white people; did not see squads of persons with arms the night of the fire.

her
MARY A. + KEATON.
mark.

Mrs. HANNAH PETTY, being sworn:

Reside in Meridian; I was here on the night of the fire, on the 4th of March; I was at my home; not down in town at all; saw persons going to and from the fire; saw two white men, Mr. Hancock and Mr. Wilson, running in the direction of the fire; saw some black men going to the fire, and some coming from the fire; saw two black men with arms coming towards the fire; one of them said, "You would not kill women and children, would you?" and the other said, "Yes; go from the cradle up—men, women, and children;" saw flash of fire, and heard Clopton say, "Damn you, I will make many a one of you bite the dust before morning;" I heard the report and saw the flash

of the gun that Clopton had when he used this language; Clopton was at the next house, between fifty and seventy-five yards from where I was; Clopton lived in the lot just below mine; his house is the next one to mine in the direction coming to town; when spoken above an ordinary voice, I can tell everything that is said at Clopton's house; know Clopton's voice well; heard him cursing and swearing before that when he came up from town with wagon; there was a great deal of firing in that vicinity, and as many as two or three shots struck my house; the firing was such as to create an alarm; I did not understand anything he said before the time I heard him firing the gun; after that I saw no other men, white or black, with arms, as I closed up my house for fear of being shot; do not know who did the firing in the vicinity; I have known Clopton five years; it was about dusk when I heard Clopton using this language; he came there with the wagon during the fire; that evening between sunset and dark I saw, drawn up in line, between one hundred and one hundred and fifty black men, between Jones's hotel and Rush's livery stable, extending from the hotel to the stable; do not know whether they were armed or not; they had been marching and paradiug the streets all day; I saw two young men, who halloed fire as they passed my house; those were the two young men that Clopton shot at; I did not see the gun which Clopton had; I only saw the flash and heard the report; I did not see Clopton only during the day, marching around; he stood at the corner of a log house at the time of firing, the reason I could not see him; I knew it was him because I heard his voice and knew it; I do not know whether it was a gun or a pistol fired; from their movements I believe they intended murder; did not see the two white men at the time Clopton fired the gun; I saw the faces of the two black men coming to town; it was in the shade of the evening; light enough for me to tell a negro from a white man; sun sets, I suppose, between six and seven o'clock in Meridian now; I have no time-piece; the fire occurred between sunset and dark; it was after sundown; the first I heard of the fire was from the two white young men, who were in front of my lot hallooing fire; they live exactly opposite me; I had not seen the fire before; I did not see Clopton drive his wagon up there; saw wagon when it came up; it came up in front of his house; can see much plainer from my house to Clopton's than you can from Mrs. Foyes, as Mrs. Foyes has peach trees and two rows of palings between her house, and there is nothing between mine and his to prevent my seeing his; I did not see or hear anything of Clopton after that on that night; there was shooting in my neighborhood after the fire; I do not know whether it was negroes or white folks firing.

*Question.* How near to your house was the firing done after the firing of Clopton at those two men?

*Answer.* In front of my house, in the back of my house, and all around it.

HANNAH PETTY.

JAMES BRYANT, being sworn:

I live in Sumter County, Alabama; am employed in Meridian at Weidmann's European House; I was here at the time the men came over from Alabama; also during the fire and the riot; the only one that I knew among the party that came over from Alabama the night of the riot was Alonzo Kenega, from Livingston, Alabama; he was around with a gun, and a pistol buckled to his side; this occurred on Monday night; I knew Kenega well; he ate at Mr. Weidman's; I heard the names of some of them called at the table, but do not remember them; I saw George Whitfield over here at the time some parties were carried off from here, some two or three weeks before; he was armed with pistols; do not know who it was that took the baker out; I saw Mr. Wessenberg, Mr. Homan, Mr. Marx, and Mr. Eagan standing around the engine house, waiting for Tyler to come out; they tore up the floor in the engine house; they thought he was in there; Nathan George Whitfield was not in disguise; did not hear him say what he came over here for; I do not know the names of the colored men that were taken away from here to Alabama; when I spoke to Nathan George Whitfield, he said that was his name; after I began quizzing him about his mother and all, he said he never saw me before; I heard that the three men taken away from here lived in Livingston, Alabama.

his
JAMES + BRYANT.
mark.

MICHAEL SLAMON, being sworn:

Live in Meridian; work on the Mobile and Ohio Railroad; am a car repairer. I was here on the 4th of March—the night of the fire—and was here on Monday night of the occurrence in the court-house; am not certain whether I was here on Wednesday night or not; I was with one squad of four men; no one had charge of them to my knowledge; I just went out to see if there was any men with arms, white or black, and to take them away; I went to no particular houses; I was at one house that night; heard a noise in there and went over there; this was at Marshal Ware's house; heard some one inquire for arms and ask Ellen to open a locker, and one of the men helped her

pull it open; while there, I know of no one committing rape upon Ellen; I only saw one woman in the house; I saw no attempt to commit rape; Ellen was excited; I said, "What is the use of being so much excited? no one is going to bother you;" don't remember of her appealing to me for protection; I saw her go off in company with no man; she went into the other room with a candle in her hand to look for arms; I staid there about five or six minutes; I was not in disguise, no more than I had an oil-cloth coat on; had on same boots and hat that I now have; did not attempt to conceal myself; it was raining, and I had my coat buttoned up; I heard some one in the house calling Captain Jinks, but do not know who it was meant for; there was a man there with a black eye, or cut eye; looked like he had been struck in the eye; I did not see any pistols drawn while there; went no further than the front door; I left one or two men in the front part of the house when I came away; I do not know whether there were any in the back part of the house or not; I was the only one of my crowd that went into the house; I left the others at the gate, and when I returned I found them there; these parties I found there were strangers to me; do not know whether they were citizens or not; am tolerably well acquainted here; my home is in Meridian; I have been here about six years; Mr. Higgins was one of the squad in which I was in; I do not know the other two by name; they were not associates of mine; I had no written authority at all to go there; either one of the four had as much charge of the squad as the other, as far as I knew; could not tell who ordered the party to go there; I had no orders; just went with the crowd; there were three or four others in there; I think the man with the black eye asked if there was any arms in the house; I was attracted there by the noise; I did not go there to protect her, (Ellen,) but would have protected her if she needed it; left the other party there; there was no rape committed there to my knowledge; there were some of the other party outside of the door when I came out, besides the balance of my own party; as one of the party came out the dog grabbed at him and he shot at him as he run under the house; I had only taken one drink that evening to my recollection, about four o'clock; went from there to the Catholic church and to the railroad, and back to the court-house; went into no other house; I did not see the man with the black eye after that.

*Question.* Why did you not take the pistol away from the man that shot the dog?

*Answer.* I supposed that he was out for taking arms or hunting arms, same as what we went to do; I asked one of those parties if he was sent out, and he said yes; it was raining when I started out, and raining most of the time when I was out; I am not acquainted with Alice Batt; Ellen called my name; do not know what she said; I believe it was to help her open the locker; I told her I would not; I did not put an oil-cloth up to my face when Ellen spoke to me; I know the sheriff and the deputy sheriff; do not know whether they were here, at the court-house, or not, when I went away.

his
MICHAEL + SLAMON.
mark.

R. L. HENDERSON, being sworn:

Reside in Meridian; I am a manufacturer of lumber; I went with a squad in search of Aaron Moore, with Mr. Belk, on the train; I was in charge myself; do not know how many men were with me; think about forty; went as far as Golden Grove, in this county, and as far as Chunky, in Newton County, to get on side track; had orders to bring Moore back, as a deputy under verbal appointment; my squad was at Moore's house before it was burned—not after; some of my men went into Moore's house the first evening; I ordered them right out; they went in through the window, which was open; they did not disturb anything; the night that Mr. Sturgis was escorted to the train, there were probably three or four hundred men in the crowd; they all escorted him to the train; knew Moore very well; never knew him to be turbulent before; I was present at the meeting on Monday; Moore asked to speak, and I heard one person cry out "No!" and he made no further effort to speak.

R. L. HENDERSON.

W. E. SAUNDERS, being sworn:

I reside in Starkville, Oktibbeha County, Mississippi; I was in Meridian on the 6th of March, in pursuance of an order of the chancery court to attend to some business in reference to some land, as commissioner of said court; about three o'clock p. m. I went to the chancery clerk's office in the court-house, and after being in there a while I started out, and getting into the court-house I found a large assemblage of people. I stopped a while to see what was going on, and found that it was a trial of three colored men going on. I had no personal acquaintance (with one exception) with any one in the house. During this trial a witness was introduced by the name of Brantley, and after giving in his testimony it was announced to the court by one of the colored men on trial, whom I learned during the trial to be Warren Tyler, that he would introduce witnesses to impeach the evidence of Mr. Brantley; at which Mr. Brantley advanced toward Tyler and picked up a stick which was lying on the table in front of

the justice. The officer in charge of the court endeavored to arrest him in his advance upon Tyler, at the same time Tyler endeavored to make his escape from the court-house by a side door; about which time I heard the report of a pistol, and others in quick succession following; I endeavored then to make my escape from the court-room by a side door; I was seated at the door through which Tyler passed, but in consequence of the firing being in that direction, as soon as the crowd was sufficiently dispersed, I made my way through one of the side doors into a room, which I think was the grand jury room, and remained there until the court-house was very well cleared, and then left the court-house and went to my room at the hotel; I was about two or three feet from Tyler when I heard the report of the first pistol; I cannot tell who fired the first pistol; the report of the pistol sounded not very far off; the general firing was from the center of the court-room; could not distinguish in what direction the first firing was, although it was very near me; I could see persons shooting, but knew no one there; I did not see a pistol in Tyler's hand; the only thing I saw in his hands was a pass-book and lead pencil when he was leaving the room; this was immediately before the firing had commenced; I went up on the train with the mayor; I was at the depot when he got on the train; the body of men that escorted the mayor on the train was very quiet and peaceable; some parties came on the train at Meridian and drew their guns and threatened to kill him; cursed him and abused him; the guards made them leave the train and protected him; a portion of the guard went as far as Lauderdale Springs with the mayor; the utmost kindness and gentlemanly treatment was manifested toward him by the guards.

*Question.* State the position occupied by the judge in reference to Tyler and Brantley at the time of the firing?

*Answer.* The judge was seated against the railing with a table in front of him; the marshal was seated on the opposite side of the table, in front of the judge, facing the door, with his back to the witness, (the door leading to the sheriff's office;) on the marshal's right was a table occupied by the prosecuting attorney; Brantley was standing somewhat to the rear of the marshal; when the remark was made by Tyler, Brantley advanced in the direction of Tyler and picked up a stick which was lying on the judge's table, at which time he was arrested by the marshal, I think; it was about this time that I heard the first shot fired; the table in front of the judge, I suppose, was about three and a half or four feet square; during the trial I saw Tyler leave the court-room once, and attempted to leave a second time, when the marshal was required by the State's attorney to keep the defendant in the court-room; at the time I heard the report of the first pistol my attention was directed more in the direction of the court than to Tyler; I saw no effects of the shots at the time of the firing, but did afterward.

W. E. SAUNDERS.

J. W. KIZER, being sworn:

I live in Meridian; I have been living here about twelve months; have been employed at the court-house by the sheriff; I was at the meeting on Saturday, March 4th; Dennis, Tyler, and Moore spoke at the meeting; I have been in Jackson since the 18th of March; I left Meridian for fear of my life; at Lauderdale Springs, on the last of March, 1870, I was shot down and left for dead; this was the same time Jack Burton was killed; I was struck by at least thirty balls; my right arm was broken so that it had to be taken off; the men were not in disguise; about ten or twelve o'clock eight or ten men came into the house calling for me, and cocking their guns; Lauderdale Springs is in Lauderdale County, about eighteen miles above Meridian; no one made any threats against me at Meridian, either after or before the riot; on Saturday night I heard that they had killed Dennis, and were going to kill Warren Tyler and Aaron Moore; I told them of it; during the night I heard some parties say that they were going to ring the Presbyterian bell for fire, and maybe Aaron Moore and Tyler would come out; a short time after that the bell was rung; there were about fifty or one hundred men between the church and Moore's house, armed with double-barreled shot-guns and navy sixes; on Sunday morning, I went to the court-house and saw Dennis in arrest, and under guard; on Sunday, I heard Mr. Gaskins tell Clopton he did not expect to see him alive, as he heard some parties say on Saturday night that they were going to kill him. Dennis replied, "They would have killed me, but my guards stuck up to me." During the day I heard parties cursing him, and telling him he ought to be killed; among them were Mr. Horne and Judge Evans. Clopton asked me to go and see the boys and talk to them, as he believed they would have killed him last night if the guards had not stuck up to him; I was informed by Ben Peterson and others, that there had been a meeting held in Mr. Horne's office; he (Peterson) said he counted thirty-six come out of there; I went to the colored Methodist church the same evening, (Sunday,) and told Mr. Moore, and Warren Tyler, and Ike Radford of the movements I had seen in town, and I thought they were going to kill William Dennis that night. They said they would go down and see the sheriff about placing colored

guards over him, or making some arrangements for keeping him safe that night. Ike Radford and myself went on by the sheriff's, and Moore and Tyler stopped and talked with the sheriff about half an hour, and they all came to the court-house together. After Moore and Tyler had talked with Dennis in the court-room, Warren Tyler asked the sheriff what he was going to do. The sheriff said he did not know how many guards they had, and that they would see about it. Tyler, Moore, Radford, Sheriff Mosely, and myself went down to the foot of the steps; Tyler asked the question again, what he (the sheriff) was going to do about it; sheriff said he did not know, as he did not know how many guards he had; I told him he had better get some colored guards, as I was afraid they would kill Billy to-night, as I had been around town and seen their movements; the sheriff told Warren Tyler to go ahead and summon guards; Tyler asked him who it was best to get; the sheriff told him to get some good fellows, Ike Radford for one; I told Warren to get some good boys that would stick up to us, if anything did occur, and I left them and went back up in the court-house; William Dennis and the guards that were guarding him asked me what Tyler and Moore were going to do; I told them I did not know; Dennis said he hoped that they would not kill him to-night; I told him that they would have some colored guards to guard him to-night; some of the guards, a short time after, told me if there were any niggers coming there to guard him to-night, there was going to be a fuss, and that they would not stay; I told them that you all say that "you were going to kill Billy last night, and it is right for him to have some colored guards;" one spoke up and said, "You will see if any niggers come here to-night, there will be a fuss, and that not a white man would stay here;" I left then and went to the sheriff's dwelling; about half an hour after dark the sheriff came and called me, and told me to go to the church and tell Aaron Moore and Warren Tyler not to let any man come down this side of the church, for he had sent twenty-five men out there, not to allow any one to pass either way with arms; this company sent up by the sheriff had been past then just about five minutes; I then started to the church, and met some of the party that were summoned by Tyler for guards coming; one of the party told me that he was the only one that had a gun and had had three caps bursted at him, and his gun taken away; I told him to go back with me, and I would tell him what I wanted; I went back and met some of the other party that had been summoned; I asked them if they had lost their guns too; one Mr. Hurd, in the crowd, said they told him that the sheriff said just to get their pistols, that they need not get guns, and that Tyler told him and the others to go on to the sheriff's house and wait until the rest came; I went on to the church, and saw Mr. Tyler and Moore; Moore was in the pulpit about opening the meeting; Tyler was at the door, and I told Tyler what Mosely said, and he said that he did not believe in no such way as that, and for me to go and see Mr. Moore; I told Mr. Moore what the sheriff said, not to allow any one to come this side of the church; this company that the sheriff had sent out had gone above the church, and had everybody freightened in the church; I told them I would go back to see the sheriff, and find out about it just as quick as I could; then I took the man that had the caps bursted at him to the sheriff's house; the sheriff told me that he had guards plenty in town, as he had about three hundred down; the streets were full; I told the sheriff that these men had gone beyond the church, and had everybody frightened; and he replied that they had gone to Captain Duck's, and that he did not know where Captain Duck lived, and that Duck had sent for twenty-five men for the protection of his family; the man that had lost his gun asked the sheriff for it, and said it had been taken away; and the sheriff said that he told the guards to take away all guns of parties in the streets, and that he should have his in the morning; then we went back to the church and found it surrounded with men—white men; the people in the church asked what the sheriff said; I told them the sheriff said there was no danger, and they told me to look yonder at the men, and that they had to take care of themselves; Tyler sent word to Moore to break up the meeting as it would not do for them all to be killed in the house; I went back to the sheriff's house; on Monday morning I was ordered by sheriff to make a fire, and I went into the circuit clerk's office to get some coal, and Mr. Wessenberg and one of the guards drew a pistol and a double-barreled shot-gun on me, and asked me, "Where is that pistol you had?" I said that I had it in my pocket, and he told me to "Give it up, God d—n you, or I will blow a hole through you;" I pulled it out and gave to them; I told them that it was my own pistol; that I had bought it and paid my money for it; they took it from me; the deputy sheriff, Mr. Belk, then came in as they were leaving the hall with it, and I asked him if he thought it was right, and he said he thought I "had no business with it;" I told him that I had bought it, and paid my own money for it, and did not disturb anybody with it, and that I had it to protect myself in traveling around nights, as I had been threatened by some parties; I was in the court-house at the time of the trial; the trial of Warren Tyler, Wm. Dennis, and Aaron Moore commenced about two or three o'clock. Moore, Tyler, and Clopton had no counsel; they stated that they did not want any; Jim Brantley was called in from the streets as a witness in the case; Brantley, being sworn, stated that, "As I was coming along on the streets I met this boy, Tyler, and another boy; and this boy that

was with Warren asked him (Warren) what all of them white folks were doing assembled in the court-house; this boy Warren here says that they are getting sort of scared and want peace;" and Brantley further said that I called him a damn liar three times; Ford then asked Brantley "what else he said;" Brantley said "Tyler said something about my calling him a damn liar, and I said I called him a damn liar, or any other damn rascal, and had a notion to shoot him on the spot;" Ford asked Brantley if that was all, and told him to take his seat; Tyler said to Brantley, "Don't leave the stand yet, Mr. Brantley," and told the judge he wanted to introduce a couple of witnesses; Brantley asked Tyler what he said, and then grabbed the marshal's stick, which was lying on the table where the judge was sitting; he drew the stick and started for Warren Tyler, and the marshal held him; I was at the time standing in the hall door leading into the sheriff's office; Tyler jumped up and ran toward the sheriff's office, clapped his hands to his thigh, and told the marshal to "Stop him, or let him come and he would stop him;" just as he said that some one fired from the direction of the entrance to the court-room; the judge was sitting in the middle of the house and the firing was at his left hand toward the entrance of the court-house; Tyler was standing; the entrance to the court-house was about thirty feet from where I was standing; the firing was done between me and the entrance to the court-room; Tyler had no pistol in his hand; I do not know who fired the first shot; I know certain that Warren Tyler did not fire the first shot, as I was closer to him than anybody; after the first shot was fired, Judge Bramlette was still in his seat; he was not struck by the first shot; I do not know whether Warren Tyler fired at all or not; I did not see any one at the time they were shot, but saw them afterward; I am certain the first shot did not strike Judge Bramlette; do not know where Ford was standing at the time the first shot was fired. Clopton was sitting between the judge and the door at the time, and Moore was standing near the judge. I went into the chancery clerk's office, and remained there until the firing was all over, and when I came out I saw Clopton and Gus Ford lying in the sheriff's; Bramlette was lying near where he was sitting when I saw him last. I heard the sheriff tell Ike Radford and others, speaking in reference to the Alabama men who had come over there, that he could do nothing without an affidavit; then they went and had an affidavit made out, and do not know what the sheriff told them; the sheriff told me that they had gone and got an affidavit, and wanted him to go and arrest those men, and that he was not going to do any such damn thing, saying that "They always put me in everything; I know what they want; I won't go out there and do nothing, and get my head shot off, and a few niggers killed; that is what they want; I have sent old man Shearer and Thomas to see these Alabama parties and they are not going to do anything;" the sheriff stated that Shearer and Mr. Thomas knew all of these Alabama men; my understanding of the objects of the meeting of the colored men on Saturday, was to make some arrangement to keep out the Alabama Ku-Klux and to keep from being shot down; William Dennis said in his speech that he could prove by white and black men that there had been crowds lying around his house of nights, of white men, and that he (Dennis) had counted thirty odd; and was told by white men that they were after him before they came, and he got some eight or ten colored men to stay with him, which was the reason why they did not attack him; Dennis further said, that if they ever came again, or the first crowd he found dodging around his house after night, he expected to kill some of them, or try; Tyler stated in his speech the number of his friends that had been killed and wounded in the county in the last twelve months, and asked the members of the Loyal League if they would all stick up to one another; they responded, "Yes;" and he said that was right; let every man come, white or black, so that they could keep the county quiet; and so that every man could lie down of nights without fears of being killed; Warren Tyler said they had waited for the officers and intelligent people to make some arrangements to have peace, and they would not do it; if the law won't do it, now let us go ahead and let us adopt some rule, and let us ask every man to go with us; and to send for old man Horne and ask him to go with us; and he thought if he went with us, we would have peace; I was in the habit of attending Aaron Moore's church; I went there nearly every time there was preaching there; I have known the colored people to put out watchmen around the church; have never seen them with arms; I know this was done occasionally, when they would hear threats; I have seen crowds of white people going around the church; one crowd on a week night had guns; the other on a Sunday night did not; this occurred when they were holding church services; they never held any Loyal League meetings in the church; there were no other services held in the church but regular church services, and a benevolent society also met there once a week, whose objects were to take care of the sick and bury the dead; I was a member; I have never known any political meeting to be held in the church; the Baptist church, which was burned, was built by the Government for a school-house, and was afterward sold to the colored people for a church; there was a school kept there at the time it was burned, by Mr. Hollin.

JOHN W. KIZER.

WESLEY LEE, being sworn:

I lived in Meridian at the time of the riot; I was present at the time of the troubles there; I was in the court-room at the time of the shooting there; do not know who fired the first shot; my father, Isaac Lee, was killed on Monday night; I do not know who killed him; on Monday evening, about two hours before sundown, two men, Isaac Adams and a man who kept a soda-water factory, came to the gate of my father's house and called for my father, (Isaac Lee;) my father came to the door and he saw that the men had guns, and he started to run; Isaac Adams called to him to "halt," and he did not halt, and Adams shot at him; he was running at the time he was shot; he was shot in the wrist with buckshot; he afterward ran over the hill and got under a house; they went there and got him and carried him to the court-house; I saw him no more after he was arrested and taken to the court-house, as I left Meridian on Tuesday morning.

WESLEY LEE.

JACOB BEATTY, being sworn:

I resided in Meridian at the time of the riot; am now living in Jackson; I left Meridian on Friday, after the riot of Monday; I was in Meridian on Monday of the riot; I was right across the street in front of the court-house, in a bakery where I worked; on Tuesday morning, about 3 o'clock, they came after me and asked Mr. Lawrence if I was in the shop; he told them yes; and Mr. Lawrence inquired of them if they wanted me, and they said "No, let him alone, he's all right, we don't want him;" Mr. Lawrence came in the back room and told me that Mr. Adams had been there and asked for me; about twenty minutes after this, six men came with their guns and told me to get up, that they wanted me; I was lying down on a bench at the time; I put on my shoes, and they took me out and carried me to the depot, and they gave me about four hundred lashes, with boards and sticks, and after they had beat me enough, they told me to get up and go; I got about fifty yards up the hill and they stopped me; I was talking with Mr. Lindley; I asked him "What they wanted to take me out that way and beat me for?" He replied, "Do you not know that the Alabamians don't allow you to have a white man arrested?" I stepped off about ten steps and he then shot me; when he shot the first time in the arm, I ran, and he shot me again through the breast with a double-barreled shot-gun; I ran through the building, and another man shot me through my hat with a pistol; I do not know who he was; they hunted for me about a quarter of an hour and gave it up and went back; I went into an old building, as I could get no further, and staid there until daylight; at daylight I got up and got a drink of water and went down to Dr. Phillips's office and got my wounds dressed, and from there I went home and laid down, and stayed there all day Tuesday, until night; I heard that they were hunting for me; on Tuesday night I went in the bushes and staid; on Wednesday, at a house in the country, I do not know whose house it was; on Thursday night I went back to Meridian. I was not disturbed, as no one knew I was in town. I staid at home Thursday night, and left Meridian on the cars on Friday morning. On Tuesday morning, (the second time they came to the house,) two men came in after me; I do not know who they were; when I got out of the door I saw four more; three of them I knew; they were Frank Lindley, Isaac Adams, and Lem. Davis; they were old citizens; they said to me that I had Mr. Lindley's pistol, and they wanted me to give it up; I told them that I did not have it, nor did I know anything about it; they told me to come on and go with them and they would make me get it; I asked Mr. Davis if they were going to kill me, and he said that he did not know; they told me that they had Mr. Lindley under arrest also, and when I got to the depot I found that Mr. Lindley had a gun; I had no pistol, nor any arms at that time; they stripped me at the depot, and one man stood on my head while the others paddled me; there were about twenty around me when I got to the depot.

JACOB BEATTY.

J. AARON MOORE, being sworn:

Reside in Meridian; on Saturday evening, about four or five o'clock, I passed by the court-house; I heard a noise up in the court-house, apparently as though some one was speaking; I went up, and when I got up there Wm. Dennis, sometimes called Clopton, was speaking; I sat down and listened at him until he got through speaking; after he got through, Warren Tyler read a resolution; I do not recollect precisely the words of the resolution; but it was advocating peace, and said, inasmuch as there had been so much disturbance in our town lately, hoped that there will be some steps taken for peace; I sat there and listened to him until he made his speech; after he got through, I made some remarks; I said I would be very glad that if white and colored would unite together, as a band of brothers, that they might adopt some plan to keep the Alabamians from among us, and to prevent disturbance; I further said, if any colored men come from anywhere to disturb the white people in this town, if I saw them before they did come in, I should go quietly and ask them to stop, and if they did not stop,

then I should make some other attempt; then I said, suppose they should tell me they would shoot me down if I did not let them alone; I would keep still until I got away from them; and that I would get some colored men to help me to stop them, and if we could not do it, then I would call upon the white people; and I said I thought that was the way the white people ought to do; and under this consideration we might live together like brethren; we adjourned very shortly after that, and the boys all went down out of the court-house; went out very quietly; I started down; Mr. McMullins called me in the room where he was, and said to me: "I like your remarks very well; I am just like you; I am opposed to the Alabamians coming here to disturb the peace among us." After that I went home; after the men came out of the court-house, they were all in a line, marching and beating a drum, as usual; after supper my wife went to the door; I was reading, and some one cried out that there was a fire down town; I got up and looked out, and saw the fire; about an hour afterwards Kizer came up to my house and said they had killed Wm. Dennis down town; some of the boys that were there with me asked what they killed him for; there were two or three there with me, and he said that he was drunk and cutting up there, and that a crowd of them started to take him off and kill him, and Dennis pulled back and refused to go, and he said Marcellus Coleman knocked him in the head with a shot-gun; I heard nothing more then about that; in a space of an hour or an hour and a half, some one was passing by my house, and I heard them say that about seventy-five white men had got their guns and had gone down to get Bill Dennis; then everything appeared to be quiet; I went to sleep; I was down town about sundown; I went down especially to see the sheriff; I saw him; had a long talk with him; I asked him if he thought Dennis would be safe in the court-house that night; he replied that he thought that he would, for he intended to put such men to guard him as to hold them responsible for him; Isaac Radford and Warren Tyler went with me to see the sheriff, and were present while I was talking to him; I further said to him, to keep any suspicion or hard thoughts from any class, "Won't it be a good thing to have the guards divided—some white and some colored?" and he said he did not know, but if we thought it was best he would do it; I told him I thought it best, as it would keep down hard feelings; he then said to Tyler and Radford: "Go and get me some good, reliable colored men, and fetch them here;" we were at his house at this time; then says he, "Never mind, we will go down to the court-house and see Belk, the deputy sheriff;" we went down, and he called Mr. Belk out, and said to him: "Mr. Belk, Aaron and the boys desire to have the guards mixed to-night, what do you think of it?" Mr. Belk said that "I have got my guards all fixed and I do not want to change them;" Mr. Mosely said that he would rather that they should be mixed if Mr. Belk was willing; Mr. Belk replied again that he did not want his guard changed, and that he "did not want any colored men about here to-night at all;" then Mr. Belk said to me that "there would be a large quantity of men here to-night from a distance;" I then said, "Mr. Belk, if the Alabamians are coming here to-night, do you think there is going to be any fuss;" he replied, "I did not say that there would be any Alabama men here to-night. I said there would be a quantity of men here from a distance;" I then asked him confidentially what he meant by that; he then took me one side and said that "They have had a meeting here to-day, and that three or four men have got to leave this town at once; there will be a committee appointed to wait upon them, and your name was brought up in the committee, but it was fought down by some of the best citizens of this town. Wm. Sturgis, Bill Dennis, and Warren Tyler, have got to leave this place." By this time, Mr. Mosely, Radford, Tyler, Belk, and myself had all got together again; Mr. Mosely said, "Warren, you and Radford go and fetch me a dozen good colored men." We all then broke up; I then went and got my supper and went to my church; after we had sung and I had taken my text, Warren came to the pulpit where I was and says to me: "I had them men carrying them down town and met some white men who took their guns away from them, and they said that Mr. Mosely had told them to go and disarm the colored men." He said further to me: "If I was you, I would break up meeting, as there are white men all around the church." I said to him the worship of the Lord must go on; I kept on preaching my sermon, and just before I got through Kizer came in and said that Mr. Mosely had given orders to disarm all of the colored men and keep them up here; on Monday morning I asked Mr. Mosely if he had given orders to disarm the colored men, and he replied that he had; I was present at the meeting on Monday; there was a resolution before the meeting to petition the governor to have him remove Sturgis, and to the effect that, if the governor would not remove him, that they would do it; Mr. Coleman got up and said: "Gentlemen, I insist that you do not send such a resolution as that to the governor;" there was another resolution to the effect that the niggers were disturbing the peace; this resolution was also to go to the governor; Mr. Coleman said that he was opposed to that resolution going to the governor, as there is some just as mean white people as there is colored people here. About 10 o'clock in the morning I was in the chancery clerk's office talking to Mr. Smith, the clerk, and Warren Tyler, and was notified by the sheriff that I and Warren Tyler could consider

ourselves under arrest; I inquired of him, "for what?" and he replied, "for holding that meeting on Saturday;" I replied, "good gracious! can we not hold a little meeting without being arrested?" he said to me, "never mind, you will not be hurt," and to go on about my business, and report back there at 2 o'clock; he did not take Tyler into custody at that time, and he further told me to go in and listen to the speeches; Mr. W. W. Shearer spoke when I went in, and said: "Gentlemen, here is our representative, I should like to hear from him," and they would not let me speak; said, "no! no! we don't want to hear anything from him." I went from there home, and returned to the court-house about 2 o'clock; after the organization of the court I was asked by the prosecuting attorney if I had any counsel, and I replied, "no; as I had done nothing, I did not need any." Mr. Berry was the first witness examined; Mr. Brantley was the next witness; after he had finished his testimony, Tyler, who was on trial, asked him not to take his seat, as he wished to introduce two witnesses to impeach his testimony; at this, Mr. Brantley took a stick, which was lying on the table in front of the justice, and started toward Tyler; the marshal took hold of Brantley, and Tyler at the time retreated toward the door leading into the sheriff's office; about this time I heard cries of "Shoot him!" "Shoot him!" Then the firing commenced; Tyler had no pistol in his hand when he passed by me; I do not know whether he had a pistol on him or not; he was sitting between me and Judge Bramlette, and in going out passed by me; it appeared to me that the first shot came from about the middle of the house; who did the firing I do not know; I am confident that Tyler had nothing whatever in his hands; if he had anything in his hands I could have seen it; I had no arms at the time; I knew nothing of the meeting of Saturday before it was held; I left Jackson for Meridian on Friday morning; Clopton and Radford had been here, and went over with me; Clopton came over to Jackson to bring a petition to the governor, for the purpose of having Mayor Sturgis retained in office; I was not wounded in the difficulty; after the firing was over I left the court-house, went home, and then left Meridian.

J. AARON MOORE.

WM. HARRIS, being sworn:

I lived in Meridian before the riot; am now living in Jackson. I was in Meridian at the time of the riot. I was not at the court-house when the shooting took place; I know nothing of the shooting there. When I first saw Tyler after the shooting he was coming toward my house, led by two men. He was shot very badly at the time. They brought him into my house, and Tyler asked me to protect him. I closed the doors, but the crowd outside made me open them. Tyler had in the meanwhile passed through the yard into the shoe shop of Parker, the second door from my house. Tyler told me that he had been shot twice. In the crowd that was pursuing Tyler I saw with guns Bob Coleman, sr., and Bob Coleman, jr., Hugh Wilson, and George Schell, all citizens of Meridian. These were among the number that came to my door and demanded admittance. I was punched in the face with a gun by some one of them. Mr. Schell begged of them not to kill me. There were so many in the crowd when they found Tyler that I could not tell who shot him. The sheriff rode around where Tyler was found, just before he was found, and said, "Find him, damn him," and rode away again. The deputy, Mr. Belk, was around there with a pistol in his hand. I cannot say that the Alabamians were the sole cause of these troubles, as I had heard it whispered about among the people before they came over. I left Meridian on the 10th of March. Mr. Coleman drew a gun on me and threatened to shoot me, and I learned that he broke the trigger trying to shoot me.

his
WILLIAM + HARRIS.
mark.

HARRIS RICHARDSON, being sworn:

I lived in Meridian at the time of the riot; among the party of Alabamians that came over to Meridian, I knew Stephen Renfeau and his brother, and Josh Sledge, all from Livingston, Sumter County, Alabama; I saw these parties in Meridian several times; they were in Meridian on Sunday just before the riot of Monday. I lived in Sumter County, Alabama, at Livingston, for twenty-odd years, and was run away from there last August; I was shot in the head over there. Renfeau was the captain of the men that raised the row in Livingston last August, and the other men mentioned above were in the same party.

his
HARRIS × RICHARDSON.
mark.

NATHAN CLEMENS, being sworn:

I lived in Meridian at the time of the riot; I was near the court-house when the shooting in the court-house occurred; saw nothing of it; I saw Isaac Adams draw his

gun on old man Lee, and halt him; I then turned my head and heard the gun fired; I think it was Adams that shot Lee; this occurred in Mrs. Heuston's yard; this occurred after the fuss in the court-house was over, and while I was on my way home, about a half a mile from the court-house.

his
NATHAN × CLEMENS.
mark.

WILLIAM HORNE, being sworn:

I resided in Meridian at the time of the late disturbances there; occupation, barber; on Sunday night, March 5th, I was notified by Warren Tyler to go down and act as a guard over Bill Dennis; I got my gun and started down town for that purpose; on the way to the court-house, just this side of Mr. Mosely's, I met twelve men, who took my gun away from me and snapped three caps at me. On Tuesday, March 7th, three men, Albert Allman, Ed. Meridan, and the third I cannot call his name, all from Eutaw, Alabama, came into the house where I was helping to shroud Gus. Ford, who was just killed, and drew a pistol on me, and one of them shot at me; I noticed where Ford was shot; it was in the left side; I know of one man's being taken back to Alabama since the riot; his name was Scott; he was taken away by Mr. Joe Reynolds, a clerk in Pollard's store, in Eutaw, Alabama; I know him well; I know that he is a mighty man for killing niggers when he got a chance; I have seen him shoot three; the man that was taken back to Alabama, from Meridian, was under a bond of $200 at Eutaw, for his appearance there for some rascality committed, and ran away from there; these facts in reference to his being under bond I learned from Mr. Reynolds.

*Question.* Do you know the name of the man who shot at you when you were passing out of Gus. Ford's house?

*Answer.* Alfred Allman.

*Question.* At what time, of your own knowledge, was Reynolds clerking for Pollard?

*Answer.* He was clerking there in December and January last.

his
WILLIAM + HORNE.
mark.

Witness:
W. H. FURNISS.

ALECK JOSEPH, being sworn:

I lived in Meridian at the time of the riot. I am now living in Jackson. I was on police duty at the time of the meeting on Saturday. I was so employed by the mayor, William Sturgis. I was present at the meeting which was held on Saturday, March 4, 1871.

*Question.* What was the meeting held for?

*Answer.* I do not know what the meeting was called for, but they spoke about putting down the Ku-Klux business. I do not know who was president of the meeting; do not think that they had any. After the meeting we came down and marched around a little.

*Question.* Did you have any company there?

*Answer.* There was a company begun there, but it never was finished; I had been elected captain but never commissioned; after marching about we dismissed about sundown; the next thing that occurred the fire broke out, a little after dark; I was in my house at the time; I was not present at the meeting on Monday morning; I was present at the trial in the evening; I saw Tom Hill at the trial in the evening take his pistol out and present it, and I am pretty sure that he fired it; he shot toward the door of the court-house.

*Question.* State whether or not you know who fired the first shot?

*Answer.* That I do not know; I saw Warren Tyler just before the shooting commenced make toward the door leading into the sheriff's office; I could see him plainly; I did not see anything in his hand; he did not have a pistol in his hand; I was where I could have seen it if he had one; I do not know who did the first or last shooting; I saw the man whom I mentioned shoot; I dropped down on the floor; when the shooting ceased, I raised up and saw Judge Bramlette lying with his head in a chair where he had fallen; he fell in the opposite direction from the sheriff's office; the marshal told me to lay him down on the floor, and turn a chair over and place it under his head; he was dead at this time; about the time Brantley got up to strike Tyler, the judge got up, and at that time some one cried out, "Shoot the damn rascal!" then the firing commenced; about fifteen minutes after the judge was killed, Ike Adams and a Mr. Snow, who is employed in a music store, came into the court-house and said to me, "You are no friend of mine;" kicked me twice, and said, "God damn you, get out of here!" and raised a gun to strike me; I started down stairs, and the last I saw of Adams he had a gun to his face as if to shoot me.

*Question.* Had you ever been mistreated before that by the white people there?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* During this excitement did you see any colored men with guns?
*Answer.* I saw two or three colored men on Saturday night from the country, who came in with guns, and I asked them what they were doing with guns, as these were exciting times; and they said that they had been working out there getting out crossties, and coming home brought their guns with them.

his
ALECK + JOSEPH.
mark.

Witness:
W. H. FURNISS.

GRANVILLE RICHARDS, being sworn:

I live in Meridian; lived there at the time of the riot. I was at the meeting on Saturday, March 4, and was also at the meeting on Monday. I was near the house in which Tyler was killed, and saw the persons at the time he was killed going in and out of there. I heard Moses Adams make the remark that "He knew that he had discharged twenty-six buckshot at him." Isaac Adams was also in the crowd; I heard him say nothing. I left Meridian on the Thursday following the riot; I left because they had threatened my life; they came to my house on Tuesday night and shot my dog, broke down my gate and palings, and took my pistol off from my mantlepiece, in my house. They went over to Mrs. Flournoy's house—some dissipated women staid there—(by dissipated women I mean women not of good character) and they told my wife, and my wife told me, that these men made threats against me, in which they said that they were coming to kill me on Wednesday night. I left immediately when I got this word. On Wednesday night they did come to kill me. I went back Thursday morning, and immediately left Meridian for Jackson. Of the party that was to my house on Tuesday night, I knew John Barrett, Thomas Hill, and M. V. Pullens. I had been a policeman in Meridian sixteen months prior to the 1st of February, when I resigned. I was never mistreated by persons in Meridian before. I heard they were going to kill all of the nigger policemen.

his
GRANVILLE + RICHARDS.
mark.

Witness:
W. H. FURNISS.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 21, 1871.

E. P. JACOBSON sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you reside?
*Answer.* At Vicksburg, Mississippi.
*Question.* How long have you resided there?
*Answer.* About fifteen months.
*Question.* Have you resided that long in that one place?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* How long have you lived in the State?
*Answer.* About the same time, fifteen months.
*Question.* What official position, if any, do you hold there?
*Answer.* I am United States district attorney for the southern district of Mississippi.
*Question.* Give us such information as you may have derived in your official position, during the period you have been there, respecting the execution of the law in that State and the security of person and property?
*Answer.* Well, sir, the only class of law which has come under my supervision and in regard to which I should be able to testify, is the revenue laws; they are almost the only cases, because we have very little jurisdiction in Mississippi which would involve a test as to whether the people were law-abiding. We have no jurisdiction in Mississippi which would bring up before our court cases where the test could be applied whether the people were law-abiding or not, in the manner in which I suppose other courts have an opportunity to test the question. That is, we have none of the usual criminal cases; none such as frequently occur in some places, to show lawlessness or the contrary. We have revenue cases in the main, and in regard to those cases I think I can say that at this day the law is pretty well obeyed in our State. Prosecutions have taken place there of those who have failed to obey the law; and at this day I think there is a disposition to obey the law.

*Question.* Where it is disobeyed, is there any difficulty in bringing the offenders to justice, through the medium of the courts in that district?

*Answer.* As regards those cases?

*Question.* Any cases whatever over which you have jurisdiction?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* The law can be executed in that district without obstruction?

*Answer.* Well, I am now testifying in regard to my official experience, and therefore only in regard to matters which have come before me officially. I am not now speaking of my general knowledge. Speaking from my official information, I think the law can be enforced without difficulty in our district.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* How does your district run geographically?

*Answer.* East and west. It comprises the southern half of the State—or rather more than half.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You mean that the line dividing the two districts runs east and west?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; my district comprises the southern part of the State. The line which divides the two districts is a little above the middle of the State.

*Question.* In the United States district court in which your duties are discharged, have there been any indictments under either the act of 1870, called the enforcement act, or the act of Congress passed at the recent session for the suppression of what are known as Ku-Klux disorders?

*Answer.* No, sir. I wish to state that, since the passage of the last law on that subject, we have had no court. There have been some occurrences in our State; but we have had no court whereat there was a grand jury. Since the passage of that law there have been some occurrences in that State which I had expected to examine into at the next court, meeting on Monday next.

*Question.* Have you made any preliminary examination into those cases?

*Answer.* No, sir. For the purpose of saving expense to the Government, I have observed the practice of postponing all examinations until the term of court, because the parties who generally come before us are persons who are not likely to run out of the State, and, if they do, the writ of the United States reaches them all over the United States.

*Question.* Have the complainants been before you? How do you know of the occurrence of these cases?

*Answer.* Well, sir, both from newspaper reports and because of some complaints which have been before me, and in particular one, which, however, does not concern my district—a complaint of some lawlessness exercised against a person up in Oktibbeha County, which is in the northern district. After listening to the complaint, and finding that it did not belong to my district, I referred it to the district attorney in the northern district.

*Question.* In that case in which complaint was made before you as an officer, you found that you had no jurisdiction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the nature of that case?

*Answer.* The complainant, I think, was named McLaughlin. He seemed to be an intelligent man. He was accompanied by another gentleman, whose name I do not now remember. They were referred to me by Governor Alcorn, to whom they presented their complaint. They stated to me that this man McLaughlin had come up into Oktibbeha County as a teacher, and, after spending some little time there as a teacher, the idea was suggested among some of the negroes—possibly it was suggested by him to them, I suppose—at any rate the idea was entertained—of establishing a sort of society store, which was carried out, and McLaughlin was appointed manager of the concern. Soon after he had opened the store and was prospering in it, as he stated to me, he was surrounded one night by a party of persons—no, he first received some notices to quit that neighborhood, which he did not do. Some time after that he was surrounded by a party of persons with guns and pistols at night, and they attempted to get into his store. He had had some little notice that an attempt would be made to injure him or to surround him there, and he had provided himself with aid, consisting of two or three friends. They were surrounded at night by a party of persons armed with pistols and guns, who attempted to break into the store. They partially succeeded; they broke open a shutter, I believe, and one of his doors; and they summoned him to come out. As he stated, feeling himself secure in there in the dark, with his friends about him, well armed, he declined to do so, and told them if they had any business with him he was prepared to receive them in there. After a while they seemed to regard the attempt to injure him that night as useless, and they abandoned the place. The next day, as he told me, he visited the sheriff's office and complained to him of the occurrence; and the sheriff visited some of the parties, (Mc-

Laughlin had recognized some of them,) and enjoined upon them not to repeat the disturbance. The sheriff, it seems, and some prominent persons of the place, proceeded together to the different parties, and cautioned them not to do that again, or rather urged them not to do it again; and they promised not to do it. Thereupon they assured McLaughlin that he should not be disturbed again. But, notwithstanding that, some nights afterward they visited him again in disguise, and surrounded his house. I do not recollect whether he stated to me that they fired upon him or not. I know they attempted some violence, and used some very harsh language. I will not say that they fired or attempted to injure him.

*Question.* This is his account to you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; my impression is that they summoned him to come out; that they beleaguered his place until daylight, and told him if he did not leave that neighborhood they would kill him. The sheriff having assured him he would not be disturbed, he had not kept his usual guard about the house; and, as he expressed himself, he was very much frightened. In fact, they did take him out that night, carried him some distance, threatened to kill him, and used all sorts of violent language toward him. Finally somebody interposed, or something occurred. I do not recollect the circumstances. However, they let him go, with an injunction that he should leave or he would be killed.

*Question.* Did they assign to him any reason why he should leave?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not think that any reasons were specifically assigned; I gathered from the expressions which passed on the occasion, as related to me by Mr. McLaughlin, that they were political reasons: that is, if political reasons may be considered to consist in an objection which those parties surrounding him and troubling him seem to have had to his associating with and managing the affairs of the negroes.

*Question.* Did they assign that to him as a reason why he should leave? Did he so state to you?

*Answer.* I gathered that from his conversation. I understood him to say that they said he was consorting with negroes, and implied that he was disturbing or exciting their minds.

*Question.* When did this occurrence take place?

*Answer.* My recollection is that it occurred some two months or so ago.

*Question.* Have you any authentic information of any other occurrences of that character in your own district or any other part of the State?

*Answer.* I know of a report made to Governor Alcorn, by a committee sent by him to Meridian to investigate an affair there.

*Question.* A legislative report?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You mean a report of a joint committee sent by the legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* We have that report. Has there been any other recent occurrence of that character coming within your knowledge as a public officer?

*Answer.* I know of no others; and I know of none that have occurred that were reported in the newspapers previously.

*Question.* So far, then, as your knowledge goes, have there been in that portion of Mississippi any disturbances of the public peace by any band of lawless men?

*Answer.* Well, sir, not very recently.

*Question.* You believe, then, that in that part of the State comprised within your district the execution of the law is effective, and that life and property are secure there?

*Answer:* I am not prepared to assent to that.

*Question.* If not, state why?

*Answer.* I confine myself strictly, because of the form of the question, to my official knowledge.

*Question.* Go on and give us any knowledge you may have as a citizen upon this question.

*Answer.* In some of the counties—and the county in which I live is among them—life and property are, I think, as secure as they are anywhere in the United States, subject only to such accidents as are likely to occur elsewhere—such lawlessness as is common anywhere. There are, however, some counties in my district, and in the State, where such is not the case.

*Question.* Name them?

*Answer.* Well, I should include Lauderdale as one in the list.

*Question.* Name all, referring to the map, if necessary, to refresh your recollection.

*Answer.* I wish to state that in my reflections upon this subject I have always generalized. I have not particularized my thoughts so as to be able to point to any particular county. I have seen so much of Lauderdale that I am persuaded that it is a county which is not well regulated—where life and property are not safe. I know I should not care to live in Lauderdale and assert my principles if they were contrary to the principles of the prevailing race.

*Question.* Name the counties in which you think such a state of affairs exists, and then give us the reason for that opinion.

*Answer.* From my personal knowledge, I should speak in particular of Oktibbeha, Lauderdale, and, I think, Winona. I don't like to particularize.

*Question.* If there are any counties or districts in Mississippi in which there is lawlessness which cannot be reached by the ordinary process of law, we want to know which they are.

*Answer.* I should say, generally, that the district most marked is the eastern part of the State, along the Alabama line.

*Question.* To what extent on that eastern border, so far as your information goes, do these disorders exist?

*Answer.* Perhaps in the immediate counties only.

*Question.* What knowledge have you on that subject?

Mr. VAN TRUMP. The witness will recollect that the question of the Chairman was whether there are parts of the State in which the decrees of the courts cannot be enforced.

The CHAIRMAN. My question was whether the law can be executed there in all classes of cases? If there are any exceptions, state them, and your reasons for thinking them so.

*Answer.* I cannot particularize any counties, because, as I have already observed. I have thought of this matter—every good citizen has thought of it; every person having an interest in the State has thought of it—only in a general way. I have never fastened upon my mind any particular occurrence; but these occurences have made an impression upon my mind and I have generalized from them.

*Question.* You speak of this condition of things as being confined to the eastern border of the State, without being able to designate the counties?

*Answer.* I would not say that it is entirely confined to those counties. There are some counties in the State that are not well regulated; but I am unable now to point you to them.

*Question.* Give us the knowledge you have as to any portions of the State in which the laws cannot be efficiently executed, or in which life, person, and property are not secure for any reason.

*Answer.* Well, I should say the eastern part of the State. The eastern counties in my district would come under that category.

*Question.* Out of what causes does it arise that the laws are not executed, or that life, person, and property are not secure?

*Answer.* In the first place, I think our State legislation is defective. I do not think the legislation of the State is sufficient to protect life and property, under the circumstances. Legislation which would be sufficient in a northern State, where the people are educated, where the greatest liberality of sentiment prevails, where the country is old, where public sentiment regulates society to a great extent, and that sentiment is properly educated—legislation which would be sufficient in such a community will not do for communities like ours. Our legislature has not come up to the wants of the times and the occasion. There are some morbid habits which have grown up with the past state of affairs in our State which need something more than the slow process of public sentiment to eradicate them. That is one reason.

*Question.* That is a very general statement; come down to specific facts.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think we ought to have some laws to prevent the general carrying of deadly weapons. I think that inasmuch as there is a class of people in our community who are so deeply impregnated with their prejudices that they cannot get their minds liberalized enough to condemn certain practices, such as the constant shooting of people at each other, and mortal affrays that occur, but rather seem to countenance them, (I say a class of people, it is not all the people,) I have always felt that there ought to be some legislation to change the mind of that class of people to a condemnation of such practices. To be more specific, I believe that a law, such as the old English law under, I believe, King Edward and King Alfred, which made counties, and hundreds, and parishes responsible in damages——

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Right there let me ask, in what country were you born?

*Answer.* I am by birth a German.

*Question.* Go on with your statement.

*Answer.* I think that a law which would hold the community responsible in damages for an injury resulting to a person from any disturbance which can in its nature grow only out of a morbid sentiment, would do more to obviate the present difficulty than anything else. I think that in so far our legislation is defective. I think that in our State we ought to have some law to encourage the more prompt attendance of witnesses in homicide cases. People are very reluctant to be mixed up in homicide cases; and in a sparsely populated country they have easy means of evading the process, and they will not come. I think there ought to be an inducement held out to them in the

form of higher compensation. Our fee-bill is too small. Poor people are called upon to attend court at an expense of two or three dollars a day, while they receive only a dollar and a half a day for their attendance.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You are pointing out defects in your State legislation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am confining myself to State legislation.

*Question.* So far as regards the laws now in force there, those of the State legislature or of Congress, is there any obstruction to the effective execution of those laws in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* No general obstruction.

*Question.* So far as the laws of Congress are concerned, has there been any difficulty in executing them in your district?

*Answer.* None at all, so far as my knowledge is concerned.

*Question.* Are there any acts of lawlessness or violations of law in that portion of the State for which there is no adequate remedy in either the State or the Federal courts? When I say "adequate remedy," I mean to inquire whether the remedies now provided can be administered.

*Answer.* Well, sir, without having thought of the question, and it is a very comprehensive one——

*Question.* It is one very likely to have come under your observation as a United States officer.

*Answer.* If I should give my present impression, without having previously spent much thought upon the subject, I should say that the remedies are adequate for all purposes except for the protection of life and property, the inadequacy in these cases growing out of the defects in legislation which I have stated.

*Question.* You have misapprehended the question. The inquiry is whether the existing remedies can be administered in the courts of justice?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think they can.

*Question.* You think that all laws now existing punishing such crimes as the State or Federal Government sees proper to make either misdemeanors or felonies can be executed through the medium of either the State or the Federal courts?

*Answer.* They can if you exclude the power which the people exercise upon the juries—the power of public sentiment.

*Question.* Is there any public sentiment existing there which prevents justice from being done through the medium of the laws now in force?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I should say that in regard to the enforcement act and the Ku-Klux act there would be great difficulty in enforcing them in our State through the juries

*Question.* For what reason? Has any fact come under your observation upon which you base that statement?

*Answer.* No, sir: nothing except my daily intercourse with the people, and the general atmosphere of sentiment which everybody perceives without being able to trace it.

*Question.* Has that satisfied you of the existence of what is called the Ku-Klux organization in that State or in your district?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I am satisfied that there is no Ku-Klux organization in our State.

*Question.* What public sentiment do you speak of as not permitting the enforcement of what is called the Ku-Klux bill?

*Answer.* Well, a general impression on the part of a portion of the white people of the State that the Ku-Klux bill is a hostile measure against the South.

*Question.* That is the only reason you have for supposing it would be difficult to enforce it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You have said that you have as yet framed no indictments under that bill?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* There has been no indictment before your grand jury?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Then it is a matter of opinion with you entirely?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There have been no complaints under that law?

*Answer.* We have had no court. I had intended at this present term to examine into this whole matter. If I had already made such an examination, I should be a much more satisfactory witness.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Is the town of Meridian in your district?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* You speak of a vicious public sentiment which encourages, or does not frown down, brawls and fights, as you think it ought to do. I suppose you allude to a class of cases where one man calls another a thief or a liar, and is knocked down or shot for the insult. You mean to say that juries will hardly punish a man for that; that they seem to think the aggrieved party ought to fight instead of going to law. This is the bad state of things to which you refer?

*Answer.* Well I think that is one thing; but I think the reason is much more general. I mean to speak of the people themselves, off or on the juries. The people on the juries are generally mistaken as to what the law is, and you cannot make them obey the law, because they have a law of their own—the law of the "Code," which does not acknowledge the law of the legislature.

*Question.* Then they let men off for offenses for which, in your opinion, they ought to be punished?

*Answer.* The people off the juries will countenance broils and fights, and rather take a morbid interest in them, whereas if there were legislation which would go down into their pockets and make them pay for that sort of fun, they would soon take an interest the other way. They would be interested in stopping broils and fights. That is the idea I wish to convey. Lest I may have been misunderstood when I said that I do not believe there is any general organization of Ku-Klux in our State, I wish to make an explanation. I have no doubt that in some counties there is a local understanding between a class of vagabonds who infest our State, by which they are enabled on five minutes' notice to come together and do mischief. I am satisfied of that; but I do not believe that there is in our State a general Ku-Klux organization, having fixed rules and a fixed constitution, and acting under any general head. We have in our State two classes of men who are the cause of all the difficulties. Our people might be divided into three classes. First and foremost are, fortunately for us, a class of people who love peace and who receive the stranger kindly, who want to fuse all the discordant elements. They are the people who, if the State is ever to prosper, will make it prosper. Then we have a set of what I should demoninate—perhaps not very classically—"old fogies." They are men of the old political stamp, having all the old arrogance and presumption which characterized southern politicians before the war. They cannot make their egotistical natures believe that it is possible for them to be wrong in any of their opinions. The very first idea suggesting itself to them is that the other party is wrong, and their last idea is the same. They inveigh against the "carpet-bagger" and against the negro. They are restless; they are bound to abuse somebody. In them there is neither peace nor prosperity. They retard both the progress of the law and the material progress of the country. They are generally men of standing, and they do a great deal to hurt the State and to encourage lawless people, because they are utterly intolerant of any opposing sentiments; and they are in favor, at least in their language, (I do not know what they would do if they were brought to the test,) of driving out every "carpet-bagger" and making the negro take a stand below them politically. The third class are a set of shiftless vagabonds—men who never pay their bills, who loaf about the streets and drink, who have no visible means of support, who have no occupation—in other words, have nothing to lose by disorder and nothing to gain by order. They own no property. With them there is a small sprinkling of respectable young men, who are generally enticed into their society by youth and inexperience. This third class constitutes the real disturbers of the peace in the State. They do the executive work, which is encouraged by the "old fogies." They are very easily brought together. They drink together all day long, and if in the evening they happen to be full of liquor, and some "Yankee" or negro has done them some imaginary or real injury, they go for him. They are the men who mask themselves and surround houses and commit these outrages. But I do not regard them as belonging to any general organization.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Have you not, perhaps inadvertently, omitted a "fourth estate" in your civil organization? Is there not another class commonly known as "carpet-baggers?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Describe them.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I had not wished to classify them among the people, because I believe in the present age we have progressed far enough not to make any distinction between people because of the place of their birth. The question how long a man has been in the State ought not to affect his standing as a citizen. But if I am to distinguish this class, I shall do so from the standpoint of the southern people. We have a class there called "carpet-baggers." We have very respectable people among them, and we have some among them who are not respectable. The better class of "carpet-baggers" are not any better, or scarcely better, favored than the worst class. The better class of "carpet-baggers" do not countenance the worst class. After the war when the southern country was at peace again, there was in the North a general excitement, as there

always is after such an event, which led a good many persons to go to our State from the North, and a good many officers and soldiers to remain there, or to return there, having been there during the war. The temptation is very great to some of those persons to do wrong. The negro is ignorant, and he looks up to the Northern man and to the Southern republican as a protector. The ignorance of the negroes sometimes holds out a temptation to the Northern men, who are called upon to lead them, to do wrong, to enrich themselves at the expense of others. In the main, my observation has been that the carpet-baggers who come into the State are an industrious, thriving, and well-meaning class of people, and ought not to be held responsible for sporadic cases of bad character. The Southern people down our way seem to be impressed with the idea that all their difficulties arise from the presence of the carpet-baggers.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In describing classes of people in the South, are you talking of the colored people along with the whites, or about the white people alone?

*Answer.* I am talking of the white people. The negroes in a body in our State are in sympathy with the carpet-baggers. I can almost say that there is scarcely a case in the State where the negro sides against a carpet-bagger.

*Question.* Are there or are there not large numbers of democratic negroes in your State?

*Answer.* No, sir; the cases of negroes who are democrats in our State may be numbered by the fingers of one hand.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In describing those bands of young men, do you mean to state your belief that their organization is local, not general?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that there are local organizations which commit violations of law?

*Answer.* I do not think there are permanent organizations.

*Question.* Whether permanent or temporary?

*Answer.* I do not think it would be proper to call them organizations when they are the fruit of a moment's reflection—perhaps of an accident. There is a class of persons there whom I have described, and who are led, upon some accident, to jump to arms and go off and commit some mischief.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that there is merely a sympathy of purpose and feeling which leads to a temporary association for the commission of offenses?

*Answer.* That is the idea.

*Question.* Do you mean to characterize the State in that way, or merely the district with which you are acquainted?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I would speak only of some portions of the State.

*Question.* Do you mean the remark to apply to the portion of the State along the eastern border?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that the class of cases to which you have referred as those which render life and person insecure?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Where young men of that kind commit these offenses, is it done in such a way that they can be detected and brought to punishment?

*Answer.* Sometimes.

*Question.* Do they commit the offenses in disguise?

*Answer.* Recently I have heard of but this one case up in Oktibbeha County where any disguised was used.

*Question.* The McLaughlin case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In the other cases they go in their ordinary garments to commit these offenses, so that they can be identified?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When they are thus identified is there any difficulty in punishing them in the courts?

*Answer.* Well, sir, sometimes they escape out of the State, especially on the border of Mississippi, and cannot be reached by the process of the State.

*Question.* That is a difficulty in getting them into court; but when once brought into court, is there any difficulty in punishing them?

*Answer.* Well, sir, there is nothing in the way except the influence of public sentiment. I would say, from my observation, that where there is a suspicion of a political cause which led to the disturbance, there would be some little difficulty in procuring the conviction of a prisoner if he was guilty of the disturbance.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Is there not in all the States of the Union some danger of a jury being more or less influenced by political sentiments?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I think the danger is greater there. I think I am justified in saying that it is markedly greater in our State.

*Question.* In that portion of the State, you mean?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do offenses of that class committed by young men of the character you have described, beget that political feeling in any greater degree than any other violations of law?

*Answer.* Sometimes those disturbances arise from no political cause. For instance, not long ago, at Ocolona there was some little trouble between two young gentlemen, and it appeared as if it would result in a fight between them. One of them employed a young man named Hill as his friend to negotiate the matter with the person with whom the quarrel had arisen. This young man, Hill, coming to Ocolona to arrange the matter, and stopping at the hotel got into some words with a party one evening. Four of them, armed with pistols, blew out the light and shot this young man in cold blood. Such things, having no political cause at the bottom, will occasionally occur; and I may say that when such a case came before the jury, if that jury had not some corrupt member upon it, their judgment would be impartial. But if such a difficulty resulted from a suspicion of a political cause—if, for instance, the case was between a party of whites and a party of negroes—it would depend upon the complexion of the jury as to whether justice could be had or not, whether the law could be vindicated or not.

*Question.* In an ordinary case coming before a court, without any reference whatever to a political cause, do we understand you to say that the juries there are likely to be influenced by political motives, from the simple fact that one man is a democrat and the other a republican?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think they would.

*Question.* Then does the class of cases to which you have referred as committed by these young men beget necessarily a political feeling in the juries when those cases come into court?

*Answer.* No, sir; not unless there is a complexion about the affair which raises a suspicion of a political cause.

*Question.* Then in that class of cases the question whether there is any difficulty in administering the law depends, according to your view, upon whether the offense has been committed, for instance, against a carpet-bagger or against a negro?

*Answer.* I should say it would depend, of course, upon the facts of the case, whether they justified or were likely to raise a suspicion in the minds of the jury that there was a political cause. If, for instance, some language had been used during the affray which would show that there was some political feeling between the parties, and that the cause was a difference of politics, or if the case was clearly between negroes and whites where, by implication, the minds of the jury would beget the idea that there had been a political cause, then I think the jury would be likely to be prejudiced.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You mean that would result simply from the fact that the party on one side was black and on the other white?

*Answer.* I think it would. I have been engaged in the State courts in defending persons, and that is my experience.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have there been any cases of this class in which, according to your information, persons from Alabama have crossed into Mississippi and committed these offenses?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In explanation of that I will say that I believe a great many of the difficulties occurring in the eastern counties are due to parties who come over there from Alabama. I am satisfied that along the border of Mississippi, near Alabama, there are a great many bad characters, and they are so near the line that they oscillate to and fro and are almost a part of our population.

*Question.* Is there any interchange of hospitality in that direction; do Mississippians visit Alabama in the same way?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I suppose they do.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 22, 1871.

G. GORDON ADAM sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In what part of the State of Mississippi do you live?

*Answer.* In Vicksburg.

*Question.* How long have you resided there?

*Answer.* I came there with the Federal army in 1863.

*Question.* What is your profession?

*Answer.* I am a lawyer.

*Question.* Have you held any public position during the period you have lived in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I was district attorney of the United States for nearly a year.

*Question.* At what time?

*Answer.* I resigned that office about a year and a half ago.

*Question.* You held the office in 1868 and 1869?

*Answer.* It was in 1869 that I resigned—about July or August, 1869, as I remember it.

*Question.* Have you continued to reside there since that time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Give us whatever knowledge you have, as derived either from your official position or from your residence there as a citizen, of the manner in which the law is executed in the State, and also the security enjoyed for life, person, and property. Give us a general statement, and make it in your own manner.

*Answer.* Do you wish me to cover the whole time I have lived there, or only the last two or three years?

*Question.* We are not so much interested in going back very far as in ascertaining the present actual condition of the State, and the condition for the last two or three years.

*Answer.* I can only speak personally of those counties in which I have lived. I have been familiar with the condition of things in the counties of Warren, Hinds, Washington, Issaquena, and Bolivar. Four of those are river counties, in the alluvial district. Immediately after the war there was a great deal of lawlessness of the very worst character, even in the county in which I now live. But so far as those counties are concerned, I consider that sort of thing to have ceased now. In the counties with which I am well acquainted, and in which I practice mostly, I consider things as peaceable as in any county I ever lived in. There is the same lack of execution of the laws as exists in a great many other counties all over the Union. We do not pay anybody there for executing the laws. Our district attorneys are generally young men, and they meet the ablest counsel. The salary of the office is not sufficient in any county to make it worth the while for a lawyer of any ability or standing to accept the position. But I mean to say those counties compare favorably with other counties I have lived in in other States. I have not been in any of the counties of late in which it is charged in the papers that outrages are committed of the character regarding which I suppose you are desirous of obtaining information. Of them I can only judge as anybody else can from newspaper reports.

*Question.* We desire to obtain information upon the whole general subject of whether the laws are executed, and whether life, person, and property are secure; and, if not, we want to know the cause, be it what it may.

*Answer.* In the counties which I know well, I do consider life and property as secure as, for instance, in counties in Massachusetts, where I have lived. But you must remember that I speak only of those in which I live and practice, not being a person who has business that carries me all over the State.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You speak from observation in regard to them more than in regard to other counties?

*Answer.* I speak, of course, from practical observation in those counties; I know them well, and almost everybody in them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Those are the counties you have named?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That you may form an idea of what kind of counties they are, I will state that four of them are river counties, in which the colored voters must be certainly four or five to one white; and in the other there is a large majority of colored voters.

*Question.* Have you any knowledge of any combinations of any character, which obstruct the administration of justice, or prevent the execution of the law in that part of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you any such knowledge of such portions of the State where it is alleged such combinations do exist as will enable you to testify with reference to their actual condition at the present time?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have no personal knowledge; I only know what I read in the papers on the subject, and the accounts are very conflicting.

*Question.* Your personal knowledge, then, is confined to the four or five counties you have named?

*Answer.* Yes, sir

*Question.* As to the other portions of the State you have no personal knowledge?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were there any cases which required your official investigation prior to the time you resigned your position as district attorney of the United States, which gave you any knowledge of the existence of influences in any part of the State affecting the security of life and property?

*Answer.* There were cases in which colored men—this, mind you, was three years ago—in which colored men had been treated very badly. One case I remember very distinctly in which the indictment was drawn under the civil rights bill. It never came to trial while I was district attorney; my successor had it in charge at the time of trial.

*Question.* Why did you not bring it to trial?

*Answer.* I could not get it to trial.

*Question.* For what reason?

*Answer.* The two principal witnesses whom I summoned were the sheriff and the justice of the peace of the county in which the outrage was committed, and the subpœna was returned, "Not found in my county" by the deputy marshal. That was certainly two years ago. I do not think there would be any difficulty now in getting service, or in carrying through such a case till the offender was punished. I consider the change in feeling down there almost marvelous during the last two or three years.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Do you mean in that county?

*Answer.* I mean in the whole State.

*Question.* I thought you were speaking in reference to this particular case?

*Answer.* I speak in reference to all such cases of maltreatment of negroes as happened at that time.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In what county did that occur?

*Answer.* In Copiah County, in the southern part of the State.

*Question.* What was the nature of the offense?

*Answer.* Whipping a negro nearly to death; staking him out and whipping him.

*Question.* Did he know the men?

*Answer.* Oh, yes, sir.

*Question.* You think, then, that there is an improvement in the tone of public sentiment in favor of supporting and enforcing the rights of negroes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I will go further than that; I do not believe there has been a case of that kind in the State within the last year, or year and a half. In fact, I believe it would be impossible for a man to do such a thing now. The negroes understand their rights too well, and would combine to resist such a thing now; and what is more, they would be supported in it by a majority of the white population.

*Question.* Is there any other fact which you derived a knowledge of as an officer, or which has come under your observation as a citizen, which would throw light on the general subject of our inquiry, as I have stated it to you? If there is, state it fully to the committee.

*Answer.* As to the execution of the criminal law particularly, I think that at the present moment, so far as my observation goes, it is being executed more faithfully than it was before the war. I think there is an improved spirit, and even an improvement upon the system that existed before the war; a desire to see offenders punished, and a determined effort on the part of the officers of the State government to have all offenders prosecuted to punishment. Although, as in other States, it is not a very difficult matter for any criminal having plenty of means to employ the ablest counsel and defeat by technicalities the young men who generally fill the office of district attorney.

*Question.* Those are cases where—if we may admit the expression—the intention of the law is defeated by means of the law itself?

*Answer.* It is the misfortune of our whole country; we never pay adequately for executing the law, but we spend a great deal of money in making laws.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What are the politics of the white men of those counties, in regard to which you have spoken as having personal knowledge; what are the politics of the white population of those counties?

*Answer.* A large portion of them are democrats; but during the last canvass there was no regular democratic ticket in Mississippi.

*Question.* What is their politics generally?

*Answer.* There were two parties, both calling themselves republicans; the one national republicans, and the other radical republicans. The platforms of the two organizations were almost exactly the same.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Judge Dent was supported by the democrats, I suppose, though running as a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I wrote the first circular to organize the republican party in Mississippi; and I wrote the platform for the Dent national republican party at the last election, so that you can see that things were very much confused there politically.

*Question.* Are you now a republican?

*Answer.* I have always been; I never voted any other ticket.

*Question.* What was the general character of the lawlessness you described as prevailing several years ago in the counties to which you have referred, and generally in Mississippi?

*Answer.* The committing of personal outrages on negroes and on Northern men; but that was principally just after the war.

*Question.* Did it take the form of mob violence, of regulators, or what?

*Answer.* I can best illustrate that by giving what occurred in our own county. There was a band there, soon after the war, with a man at the head of it of the name of Tucker. The band went around murdering negroes and Yankees, as they say. He and his whole band were driven out of the State by the execution of one warrant issued by me as United States commissioner: it only required the slightest exercise of power, in a determined spirit, to break the whole thing up. As soon as I insisted upon having the warrant executed, this man disappeared with his band, excepting those captured and tried; one is now at the Dry Tortugas. All that was four years ago—yes, five years ago; there is nothing resembling it now in any of those counties.

*Question.* In those river counties you speak of?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I would never think of going armed in traveling through any of those counties.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June 27, 1871.*

J. R. SMITH sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* At Meridian, Lauderdale County, Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you lived there?

*Answer.* I have lived in the county all my life; I am a native of the State of Mississippi.

*Question.* In what business have you been engaged for the last few years?

*Answer.* For the last five years I have occupied the position of postmaster of the city; also clerk of the chancery court for the last year.

*Question.* Were you in Meridian at the time of the riot which occurred there on the 6th day of March last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Go on now and give us any knowledge you have which will tend to enlighten the committee as to the condition of things in Meridian, especially as illustrated by that riot, affecting the execution of the laws and the security of person and property there.

*Answer.* There was a pretty bitter state of feeling existing between the parties, the two races, about that time, and for some little while prior to the culmination in the riot.

*Question.* Growing out of what causes?

*Answer.* There were some bad men of both parties in the community, and it was impossible to reconcile the feeling between them. There were some leading men there in the democratic party ——

*Question.* Was this a bitterness of political feeling, or was there any special occasion giving rise to peculiar bitterness at that time?

*Answer.* Well, just at that time there was a charge against a man named Price, a republican, of being concerned in maltreating a colored man from an adjoining county in the State of Alabama.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What was the name of that colored man?

*Answer.* Adam Kennard; he was from Livingston, in an adjoining county in Alabama.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Go on and give a full account of that matter.

*Answer.* As near as I know, he came into our town and represented himself as a deputy sheriff.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Who did?

*Answer.* This colored man, Adam Kennard. He made attempts to arrest some colored men, to carry them back to Alabama. Since the election in Alabama last fall large numbers of colored men have left that county, and come into our county; the report was that they had left their employers—had not complied with their contracts fully—and I believe some were charged with having committed theft. Hence this colored man, Adam Kennard, was sent in the capacity of a deputy sheriff, as he said, to arrest some of these men and carry them back.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You say he was sent in the capacity of a deputy sheriff?

*Answer.* He himself so represented.

*Question.* Was he really a deputy sheriff?

*Answer.* I think it doubtful; he had no process or requisition from the authorities of the adjoining State.

*Question.* Have you any system of State comity down there which recognizes the right of a sheriff of Alabama to discharge his official duties in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I do not so understand it, unless he comes with a requisition from the governor of the State.

*Question.* Did this man produce any official authority for his action?

*Answer.* I do not think he did; merely his verbal report.

*Question.* For what alleged offenses did he assume to arrest the negroes?

*Answer.* For violation of contract—failure to fulfill their contracts.

*Question.* In Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and in one case, I believe, the offense charged was stealing an amount of money from his employer at the time the man left.

*Question.* This, you say, was the assumed capacity in which he came, and the reason for which he came?

*Answer.* That is what he said.

*Question.* Go on and show, according to your account of it, what connection that had with the lawlessness which followed.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Before you do that, state whether this man Kennard generally came alone.

*Answer.* My understanding is that he came alone; he was there for several days operating among the colored people. In the meantime he was assaulted one night, and pretty badly beaten.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* By disguised men?

*Answer.* I do not know about that. He was beaten in the cabin where he was resting during the night. He made his escape, and the next day made a report of it to the justice, and also made an affidavit, charging this man Price, who was a teacher of a colored school, a republican, and a white man, with being implicated in the assault on him.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did he include any others with Price?

*Answer.* He said there were a number of colored men, but he did not make affidavit against any other. Mr. Price was arrested the next day, and put under bonds for appearance before a magistrate for investigation. For some cause or other that investigation was postponed for several days—about a week, I think. On the day set for the investigation, this colored man, Kennard, returned from Alabama, and with him came a band of armed men from Sumter County, Alabama. They came, as they said, for the purpose of seeing that this colored man, Kennard, had a fair showing in the courts, and was allowed to testify, and to introduce the evidence that he claimed to be able to introduce; that was the statement they made. Well, there was a good large number of these men.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* They were variously estimated at from thirty to one hundred and fifty; I suppose myself there were forty or fifty of them.

*Question.* Did they appear at the place of hearing?

*Answer.* I do not think that they did.

*Question.* Was there a hearing before the magistrate?

*Answer.* The trial was again continued in consequence of the appearance of this armed band; the case was called and continued for a week. The court and the citizens and attorneys feared that there would be a collision or disturbance in the court if

the case was heard then. After the continuance these men withdrew, and returned to Alabama without having committed any depredation or disturbance of any kind whatever.

*Question.* What was there to show that these men came for any purpose connected with the hearing in the case of that colored man; what was there to show that?

*Answer.* They came with him on the same train, and stated publicly there on the streets that they came in order to protect him, or to see that he was enabled to testify, and to show that this man Price was guilty of flogging him on the occasion.

*Question.* Did you hear any of them say so?

*Answer.* I did not myself; I had no communication with any of them myself. A number of them came into my office—ten or fifteen of them—but they did not speak to me nor I to them.

*Question.* How were they armed?

*Answer.* With double-barreled guns generally, a considerable number of them; they were not all armed with double-barreled guns, though a good large number of them were.

*Question.* Was there any other proceeding or occurrence going on in Meridian to account for the appearance of armed men there on that day?

*Answer.* There was not. I would state that as soon as they got off the train at the depot, they arrested three or four colored men, tied them, and sent them back on the next train to Alabama. My understanding is that they reported that they had discovered these men there by accident; and as they were men who had forfeited their contracts, and one of them was guilty of stealing, they assumed the responsibility of sending them back to their own State.

*Question.* Was there any disturbance on that day, any violation or breach of the peace?

*Answer.* There was not.

*Question.* What next occurred in connection with this subject?

*Answer.* This trial of Mr. Price was continued for one week. On the day set for the trial, I think, there were two or three of these men came over, but the man Kennard did not come; they reported that he was sick and unable to be there.

*Question.* That was the negro who claimed to be a deputy sheriff?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was still no disturbance, although there was considerable feeling existing in the community, and considerable apprehension; I had great apprehension myself. The trial was again continued for one week. I felt satisfied that there would be trouble, and induced Price to withdraw from the community, in order to avoid a collision.

*Question.* You induced him to withdraw?

*Answer.* I did it as a friend, a political and personal friend, and as a friend of peace, in order to preserve quiet in the community; I suggested to him that it was best for him to withdraw.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was he under bond for his appearance?

*Answer.* He was under a small bond.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did he leave?

*Answer.* He did. The day for the trial came; he was called, and did not answer.

*Question.* Was the prosecutor there—the negro—Kennard?

*Answer.* I am not certain that he was; I did not see him; his attorney was there.

*Question.* Was that the end of the proceeding against Price?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* There was nothing further done?

*Answer.* Nothing further done in the matter.

*Question.* The recognizance was forfeited?

*Answer.* It was.

*Question.* What connection has this with the lawlessness which followed?

*Answer.* The colored people were not pleased with Mr. Price for leaving there. The leading ones, some of them, came to me and suggested that they had been badly treated—had been imposed upon; they said they would prefer that Mr. Price should have remained there and taken the chances.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Did they not hold a meeting on the Saturday before the riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have not got to that yet.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What length of time intervened from the last day fixed for the trial of Price to the riot on the 6th of March?

*Answer.* It was about ten or twelve days. The mayor of our city, Mr. Sturgis, was also displeased with Mr. Price for leaving. He had applied to the governor for a squad of Federal troops. The troops were sent there, and he had commenced proceedings against prominent democratic citizens of the town, accusing them of having invited these Alabamians into our State.

*Question.* The mayor did?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* William Sturgis. That got up a very bitter feeling toward him in the community. I saw that the feeling was very bitter; I knew the people very perfectly; I have always lived there. I went to Mr. Sturgis, and asked him, still in the interest of peace, to resign his position; he declined to do it. We then asked the governor to remove him from the position, not because he was not a good officer, but in the interest of peace. The prudent republicans there and some of the leading democrats were anxious to preserve peace at all sacrifices. He became very indignant at our asking the governor to remove him, and sent one or two of the leading colored men to Jackson to see the governor in his interest, and to counteract the movement for his removal. These colored men returned to our town on Friday, together with the colored member of the legislature, Aaron Moore. I was not pleased with the appearance of things. They called a meeting the next day, Saturday, the 4th of March, in the court-house.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Who called the meeting?

*Answer.* The colored people exclusively. They came to my office, which is in a room adjoining the court-room, and told me the object of the meeting. They said it was only to give expression to their feeling in favor of the mayor being retained at that time. I saw no objection to that meeting. They proceeded with it, and the meeting was continued for some two or three hours; speeches were made there by as many as three of the leading colored men.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Name the three leading colored men, if you can.

*Answer.* Warren Tyler, William Dennis, alias Clopton, and J. Aaron Moore, a member of the legislature from our county. They got a pretty good audience together. I was in my room adjoining; I did not go into the room where the speaking was going on.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Were you within hearing of the speaking there?

*Answer.* I could not understand what was said from where I was; I could hear the talking and the speaking, but not distinguish the words. The audience became considerably aroused and excited, and appeared to take great interest in the meeting. Two or three white gentlemen who were in my office informed me that the speeches were such as were calculated to inflame the feelings of the white people, or the democratic people.

*Question.* And also to inflame the negroes; was that their idea too?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that it was arousing the negroes to a feeling against the white people, or in favor of taking matters in their own hands. That is the way they stated it from their standpoint.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Were they democrats who gave you this information?

*Answer.* Some of them were, some were not; one was a deputy clerk of mine. A number of democrats dropped into the audience as the meeting progressed. I stepped to the door at one time, and heard a few sentences of one of the speakers. I was satisfied myself that it would cause some trouble; that the remarks of the speakers were calculated to inflame the minds of the democratic hearers; that, while there was nothing really objectionable in the remarks, nothing but what might have very properly been said, yet, knowing the feelings of the people there, from their standpoint I was satisfied it would get up considerable feeling.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the tenor of the remarks you heard?

*Answer.* It was to arm themselves and prepare to resist the visits of those Alabama men, who had come over there out of their State, and taken away from our State three or four colored men. That was the main point of the sentences that I heard. While they might have had that right, still I knew it was calculated to offend the whites, and to inflame them and raise a very bitter feeling.

*Question.* Was there any disturbance or breach of the peace at that meeting?

*Answer.* No, sir. I went to the sheriff and suggested that the meeting ought to be discontinued; that he should suggest its discontinuance. He did not do it, however. The meeting continued until about sundown that evening. About one hour later the

alarm of fire was given in an important part of the town, in the business part of the city. The fire originated between the storehouse of the mayor and an adjoining storehouse, in a wooden building. The excitement was pretty high during the burning, until as late as twelve o'clock at night.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* How much of the city was burned?
*Answer.* One block of houses, about six or eight stores.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Do you mean by a block a square, from one street to another?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the origin of that fire?
*Answer.* There are democrats there who have been disposed to accuse the mayor of setting it on fire, or having it done, himself.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was it cool or warm weather?
*Answer.* It was moderately warm at the time; we had no fires in our chimneys or grates.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was there any feeling attributing the origin of the fire to either side of this controversy? Let us get at the whole feeling, as near as we can, preceding the riot.

*Answer.* The democrats were disposed to take the ground that a few leading colored men there were determined to bring about a collision, while a few leading colored men took the same position in regard to the democrats. The feeling on each side was about the same in regard to a few leading men on each side. Hence the democrats were inclined to believe, or pretended to believe, that the mayor was implicated in the burning; that he set fire to his own building in order to sacrifice the town; that he was willing to sacrifice his own interest in order to sacrifice the interest of others.

*Question.* Was it his building that was burned?
*Answer.* It was in the name of his brother, but it was supposed that he had an interest in it.

*Question.* Have there been any legal proceedings growing out of the fires, in the way of prosecutions, or in the way of action upon the policy of insurance, which led to any development as to the cause of the fire?
*Answer.* There have been some investigations, but no developments. There was an investigation before the grand jury, which sat a short time after; also an investigation by a meeting of the citizens, but nothing ever grew out of it.
*Question.* There was no positive evidence in regard to the origin of the fire?
*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* While that fire was going on, did many of the leading negroes refuse to work to help put it out?
*Answer.* I am inclined to think they did. There have been several fires there, and prior to that time the negroes were very efficient, and all worked, and received credit for subduing the fires. On this occasion I regretted to notice that large numbers of negroes did not take hold as usual. Having influence with them, I urged upon them to do what they could to put out the fire; some of them did, and some did not.
*Question.* Did not this man Clopton, the orator of the day, say that that was a white man's fire, and they had nothing to do with it?
*Answer.* I heard that stated.
*Question.* Is it not charged?
*Answer.* It is the common remark that he made such a remark.
*Question.* Were there any shots fired during the time the fire was raging?
*Answer.* A number of shots were fired in different parts of the town during the fire.
*Question.* Were there not a number of white men wounded during the fire?
*Answer.* I do not think there were; it was so stated, but I am inclined to think that they were not wounded, though they said so.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was it exclusively owing to the efforts of the white men that the fire was suppressed?
*Answer.* No, sir; a large number of colored men worked very hard, though some did not seem to take hold with the interest they had shown at fires before that time.
*Question.* Were there any white men who stood back?
*Answer.* Large numbers of them; not one-fifth part of the white men took hold.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Prior to that time the negroes were the fire department?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; or rather we had no fire department, but the negroes did most of the work.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Which race did the most to put out this fire of Saturday night?

*Answer.* I think it was about equal.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did not those negroes who did not assist denounce those who did?

*Answer.* Not in my hearing; I have heard such charges made, but I heard nothing of the kind while I was on the ground, and I was there until the fire was about out.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Was it not commonly reported that night that, while a number of the negroes worked as they had always done heretofore, the leaders, such as Clopton and others, made use of expressions like this: "This is a white man's fire, and we don't want you to work here?"

*Answer.* That has been charged against Clopton, and I am inclined to think he did make some indiscreet remarks.

*Question.* Was it not further charged that some shots were fired by some of the worst of the negro population there, in order to disconcert those who were trying to put out the fire?

*Answer.* It is believed so by a great many; I do not know that it is so.

*Question.* Was it so charged at that time?

*Answer.* They were very ready to charge it on the negroes.

*Question.* Was there not a very general apprehension among the people there that there was a design on the part of, not the whole negro population, but the worst men among them, their leaders, to burn the town?

*Answer.* A great many men thought there were certain negroes whom they considered bad negroes who were disposed to bring about a collision, or burn the town, or something of that kind.

*Question.* Did not those bad negroes have a great deal of influence over the mass of the negroes?

*Answer.* There was some influence.

*Question.* Was there not a Loyal League meeting at that time, and did not the bell tap about the time the fire broke out?

*Answer.* I have heard it so stated; I do not know that it is so.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* This fire occurred on Saturday night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the 4th of March.

*Question.* Was there any outbreak among the citizens?

*Answer.* This man, William Dennis, was arrested during the night; in fact there was an effort made to kill him; he was struck on the head with a gun, and supposed to be dead, and removed from the ground as dead.

*Question.* He was one of the men who had spoken at the meeting?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I heard that it was done because of some incendiary suggestions that he was making to other colored men, but I do not know the facts about that.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* During the fire?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He, however, was not badly hurt; but he was arrested and held for trial; he was held during that night and during Sunday, the trial to be had on Monday.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was that the only case of violence that occurred that night?

*Answer.* The only one, I think; there were two or three white men there who reported that they had been shot at, but I never was myself inclined to believe it.

*Question.* Were you present when Dennis was arrested?

*Answer.* I was not; I was at my home. A friend of mine came to me and informed me first that Dennis was dead, and that there was likely to be considerable trouble.

*Question.* Did you hear what Dennis had said?

*Answer.* Only current report.

*Question.* Did you hear him say anything?

*Answer.* I did not see him during the night.

*Question.* Did this bitter feeling, of which you have spoken as existing in the beginning, continue and increase during these proceedings, men becoming exasperated on both sides?

*Answer.* During the fire?

*Question.* During the progress of all these things—the meeting, the fire, &c.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the feeling, as I observed, became more intense.

*Question.* On both sides?

*Answer.* On both sides; I think, though, with the colored people it was confined to a few, but with the whites it became more general. The whites called a citizens' meeting on Monday morning, and they had a very large meeting, at which there was considerable discussion; some resolutions were adopted.

*Question.* Let me understand, because this is a subject I desire to understand, if I can. Was this bitterness of feeling of which you speak one arising simply out of the alleged arrest of negroes by these people from Alabama, and the consequent impression on the part of the negroes that the white men there wished to oppress them in that way; or had it any connection whatever with party politics?

*Answer.* Well, the colored people were very much dissatisfied because no effort had been made by the officers to arrest the men when they came from Alabama, and carried off four or five colored men in broad open daylight, without any resistance being offered to them. The colored people thought it became their duty to take some steps for their own protection.

*Question.* Then there was no political question in this contest at all, further than as political feeling might be attributed to one man or another who was implicated in it?

*Answer.* Yes, that was about the only feeling.

*Question.* There was no political question at the bottom of this?

*Answer.* There was no political question under discussion—nothing of that kind.

*Question.* No further than, as you have stated, as the men engaged in it might belong to one party or the other, the negroes on one side of the question and the white men on the other?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Go on and give us, as far as you know, a statement of what occurred at the trial on Monday; or continue your narrative by stating what occurred between Saturday night and Monday, if there was anything.

*Answer.* On Sunday there was considerable excitement among the whites; they held little street-corner meetings, and decided upon holding a general meeting on Monday morning, which they did.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* These Sunday meetings were not called meetings, but merely accidental meetings?

*Answer.* They were meetings gotten up for the occasion. Well, the people then were disposed to think that the negroes had set fire to the town, and that they were anxious for a difficulty. The white people proposed to hold this meeting for the purpose of taking some steps to control them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were these Sunday meetings in the form of organized meetings or merely knots of citizens discussing?

*Answer.* On Sunday the meetings were generally informal; on the Monday there was a regular organized meeting, a very full one. A number of the citizens made speeches which I thought were very violent, and the resolutions were violent.

*Question.* Did you hear any of the speeches?

*Answer.* I heard some portions of them.

*Question.* What was the tenor of them?

*Answer.* They seemed to charge upon the negroes a disposition to get up a disturbance, and they seemed disposed to want some measures of vigilance adopted by which the negroes could be controlled and prevented from holding incendiary meetings; to stop them from indiscriminate firing of guns; from the carrying of guns, and things of that kind. They adopted resolutions requesting the immediate resignation of the mayor—not requesting, however, but giving him so many hours in which to leave the town. They appointed committees to investigate the origin of the fire. The meeting continued until 12 or 1 o'clock, I suppose.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* How did they propose to stop the carrying of arms by the negroes; were they disposed to disarm the negroes?

*Answer.* They were inclined to charge most of the things on the mayor; they charged him with being partial, and allowing these things among the negroes. They adopted a resolution asking for his removal, and appointed a committee to visit the governor and ask for the removal of the mayor; and that they might have officers appointed who would control the negroes; who would disarm them, and break up their organizations, or, as they called them, their incendiary organizations.

*Question.* I suppose they meant the Leagues?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have been very hostile toward the League during its organization there. During the progress of the meeting there were two or three colored men arrested on the charge of having been implicated in the burning of the buildings Saturday night, among them Warren Tyler, and Aaron Moore, the representative. There were affidavits made against them as having been in some way connected with the fire. The three men were put upon trial that day, Moore, Tyler, and Dennis.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Dennis went also by the name of Clopton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was known by both names; his real name was Dennis, though he was more often called Clopton.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* By "trial" I suppose you mean a preliminary examination?

*Answer.* A preliminary examination, yes, sir. The trial had been progressing some half an hour, or probably an hour.

*Question.* Had that examination commenced before the adjournment of the meeting of which you have spoken?

*Answer.* No, sir; it commenced a short while after the meeting; I suppose it commenced about half-past two in the afternoon. They were hearing the charges against Tyler; Tyler was a man of considerable shrewdness, and was managing his own defense.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Were you present during that investigation?

*Answer.* I was not; I was in the adjoining room, but not in the room where the trial was going on.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Had any of these Alabama men come over to that trial?

*Answer.* No, sir, there were none over there on the day of the trial that I know of; there had been some there on the night of the burning, the Saturday night before.

*Question.* Did you know any of them?

*Answer.* I did not; I was told that there were some there; I do not know that it was so.

*Question.* Were you told who were there?

*Answer.* No, sir

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Go on and give an account of the trial, as you call it.

*Answer.* The trial was progressing, and a witness was being examined, who testified against this man Tyler. After he was through, Tyler called him back, and asked to introduce a couple of witnesses to impeach his evidence.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was his name Brantley?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What was his first name? There are two Brantley's.

*Answer.* James Brantley. Brantley took exceptions at having his evidence questioned, and, as I understand, raised a club, and moved toward this man Tyler. Then it was that the first shot was fired, and the justice was killed by that first shot; so the general impression is, or the evidence as taken shows that; I do not know that, for I was in an adjoining room, where I heard all the shots.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What was the name of the justice?

*Answer.* Bramlette.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Who was supposed to have fired that first shot?

*Answer.* There is a great deal of mystery about that. The democrats generally charge it to this man Tyler, the prisoner; that is very questionable, however.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You say the democrats charge Warren Tyler with firing the first shot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there any charge by name that anybody else fired it?

*Answer.* There was not. The colored people generally, and there were a great many of them in there, took the ground that Tyler did not fire the first shot; that it was an

accidental shot, in the indiscriminate firing there, that killed Bramlette. I suppose there were forty or fifty shots fired within five minutes.

*Question.* Was Tyler armed?

*Answer.* The sheriff says that he disarmed him at the commencement of the trial; that he was satisfied that he had done so. But when the firing commenced Tyler was seen to draw a pistol; some of the witnesses testify they saw him shoot; others do not testify so. The witness who was making at Tyler with a stick was rather between Tyler and the justice; hence it is altogether probable that it was an accidental shot. If Tyler did shoot, it was at the witness who was striking at him with the stick, and that shot may have killed the justice, though a large number are disposed to think that the shot was deliberately aimed at the justice.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* By Tyler?

*Answer.* By Tyler.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Let me understand you as you go along. You say there is evidence that the sheriff disarmed Tyler?

*Answer.* He states so in his evidence.

*Question.* And then there is evidence that Tyler afterward appeared with a pistol?

*Answer.* The sheriff states, in his evidence before the investigating court, that it was his intention to disarm Tyler, and that he thought he had done so; but when the firing commenced, a number of the witnesses show that Tyler drew a pistol, and some state that he had as many as two pistols; where he was finally killed there was a pistol picked up from the floor.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Had Tyler gone out twice during the trial?

*Answer.* There were a number of witnesses who so said.

*Question.* Was it not pretty freely charged that Sturgis, the mayor, had furnished Tyler with arms after he had been disarmed by the sheriff?

*Answer.* There are a great many who think so; I do not know that there is any positive evidence of it, though a great many think so.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Give us the whole history of the affair as far as you can.

*Answer.* After the firing commenced there was then a general confusion in the court-room; I suppose there were forty shots fired; the audience got down the stairs very soon after the firing commenced. This man, Tyler, advanced to a little veranda in front, on the second story—he had received two shots up to that time—and he jumped off the little balcony and was carried to a little shop, I suppose one hundred or one hundred and fifty yards from there, where he was hidden away. As soon as it was announced that there was trouble the citizens commenced arming, and it was almost universal; I suppose there were three hundred men under arms within fifteen minutes. They started off in search of this man, Tyler, found him, and killed him—riddled his body with bullets. It was found that there were two or three men dead in the court-room, or rather one was dead and the other was dying; and the judge was also instantly killed. One of the colored men, Dennis, was not dead; he was afterward dragged from the balcony and thrown over onto the sidewalk; afterward carried back into the court-room, and during the night his throat was cut in the room where he was lying. Well, there was great excitement on the street the balance of the afternoon; they talked a while of going to the mayor's house——

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* "They talked," you said; who talked?

*Answer.* The armed mob of two or three hundred men.

*Question.* White men?

*Answer.* White men; they proposed to put themselves under the control of the sheriff, but they were not controlled much. They divided themselves into posses—companies—and patrolled the town during that evening and night. During the night there were three other colored men arrested, carried to a room in the court-house, and put in charge of a special deputy. One of them had been wounded in the afternoon—his arm broken by a shot. During the night those three colored men were taken out; and they were found dead the next morning, about two hundred yards from where they had been confined. There was never any evidence brought out as to who took them out of the room; there was a great mystery attached to it.

*Question.* Were they left in the custody of the sheriff?

*Answer.* They were left in the custody of the sheriff proper, and he left them in charge of a special deputy.

*Question.* What account did the special deputy give of it; was he examined about that?

*Answer.* He was examined before the investigating court, and said that he had delivered them back to the sheriff, or that he went to the sheriff and told him that he would not act any longer, and then went off.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What court, or what examination; the one by Judge Leachman?

*Answer.* The examination by Judge Leachman. Two of those colored men were wholly inoffensive; there was some trumped-up charge against one of them, but the other two were wholly inoffensive, no charges against either of them, no better men living. They also made very close search for Moore, a member of the legislature. He was in the court-room at the time of the trial, but, by strategy, he escaped. He was sitting near the justice, who was killed, and appreciating the danger, he fell down on the floor by his side, and appeared to be dead; by that means he escaped from the building. These men then hunted around his premises, and around the country for several miles. During the night his house was burnt; a very good residence.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were there any white men wounded in this contest in the court-room?

*Answer.* There were two slightly wounded—spectators, or men not materially interested.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* How were the spectators there divided; were those of one color all on one side of the room, and the white men on the other?

*Answer.* The colored men, with the exception of one or two of the city police, perhaps, were in the rear end of the building.

*Question.* All together separate from the whites?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* And the whites were by themselves?

*Answer.* The whites were generally together, forward.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Who were the two white men wounded; any persons connected with the court, or mere spectators?

*Answer.* Mere spectators; workmen—mechanics—who had just dropped into the court-room from curiosity.

*Question.* Were they wounded by this indiscriminate firing, which followed the first shooting?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that the end of this transaction, known as the Meridian riot?

*Answer.* The burning of the residence of Moore, and the burning of the church occurred during that night.

*Question.* Whose church was burned?

*Answer.* The colored people's church, a Baptist church.

*Question.* Was it Mr. Moore's church that was burned?

*Answer.* It was not his church; he was a preacher of the Methodist church. The church that was burned was the colored Baptist church, near his residence. They followed Moore, I suppose, for fifty miles out on the railroad leading to Jackson, for the next day, perhaps two days, following; I do not know for what purpose.

*Question.* Who followed him, the citizens?

*Answer.* A large number of armed men, citizens of the town. They reported that they were merely following him to bring him back for a completion of the hearing. The other two persons who had been arrested had been killed; Moore had escaped. They said that they only wanted to bring him back to Meridian in order that the investigation might go forward. The general impression was that they proposed to dispatch him if they found him, and I think that was the case.

*Question.* Of the three men arrested—Tyler, Dennis, and Moore—you say that Tyler and Dennis were both killed?

*Answer.* Tyler and Dennis were both killed; Moore is living.

*Question.* Has he been again arrested and brought to trial for the offenses charged on him?

*Answer.* He has not. There was no indictment found against him at the following court.

*Question.* Has he been back to the city of Meridian?

*Answer.* He has not; he has never returned; he is still living at Jackson since the adjournment of the legislature. It is not safe for him to return. I wrote him myself not to return, for I knew he would not live twelve hours if he did return.

*Question.* Could he be taken back there and tried in the ordinary mode of proceeding in courts of justice?

*Answer.* I suppose he could have a fair trial; but he would be liable to violence from outside.

*Question.* Would there be any danger of his being taken out of the hands of the officers of the law?

*Answer.* I do not know that there would be any danger of his being taken out of the hands of the officers of the law, though if he were to come back there and was not under the protection of the officers of the law, I am satisfied he would not be safe.

*Question.* What was the name of the man whose testimony was questioned, and who resented the questioning of his testimony?

*Answer.* His name was James Brantley.

*Question.* Has there been any proceeding against him for the assault upon Tyler in the court-room?

*Answer.* There has not; there has been this investigation before Judge Leachman.

*Question.* Was there any legal proceeding against him for his conduct in the court-room?

*Answer.* There was this investigation held before Judge Leachman.

*Question.* Was he committed or discharged on that investigation?

*Answer.* I think he was discharged. There were two or three gentlemen, I think, held under small bonds; but my recollection is that Brantley was discharged.

*Question.* I want to ascertain the result, and the manner of enforcing the laws against anybody in your State.

*Answer.* He may have been held; I really disremember.

*Question.* What investigation are you speaking of?

*Answer.* The investigation held before Judge Leachman, the district judge—the judge of the circuit of that district.

*Question.* Did he sit there for the purpose of making the investigation and committing for trial those against whom might be found sufficient evidence?

*Answer.* I suppose that was the investigation.

*Question.* Was there any order made by the court?

*Answer.* I find in this report of the investigation this order:

"STATE OF MISSISSIPPI, *Lauderdale County:*

"I, Robert Leachman, judge of the sixth judicial district of the State of Mississippi, and acting as committing magistrate in the above-stated cause, after hearing the testimony, do hereby order that G. W. Brantley, Hugh Wilson, and Robert E. Coleman be held to answer before the grand jury at the next term of the circuit court, on the 3d Monday in April, 1871, to answer the State of Mississippi on a charge of unlawful assembly, or any charge the grand jury may see fit to prefer against them, in a bond of two hundred dollars each, with good and sufficient security. That J. F. Sanford and Isaac Adams be likewise held in the sum of five hundred dollars each, to answer a charge of assault with intent to kill, or any charge the grand jury may see fit to prefer against them; and that A. G. Horn be likewise held in the sum of one hundred dollars, to answer a charge of assault, or any other charge the grand jury may see fit to prefer against him.

"[SEAL.] ROB'T LEACHMAN."

*Question.* Then there has been a legal investigation of this occurrence in the court-room?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the parties against whom the judge believed there was sufficient evidence have been held for trial?

*Answer.* They were held to appear before the circuit court to answer to the grand jury.

*Question.* Has there been any proceeding there; has the grand jury acted upon the bill that was sent before them in the case?

*Answer.* The grand jury has been in session since then, but my understanding is that they have failed to find an indictment against them.

*Question.* Do you know that?

*Answer.* I do not; we do not have a way of knowing these things.

*Question.* You are a clerk of one of the courts?

*Answer.* I am the clerk of the chancery court, not of the circuit court.

*Question.* Of a court held in the same building?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you not sufficient information to be able to state whether the grand jury did or did not find a bill?

*Answer.* I am satisfied they did not, though I do not know it from any positive information.

*Question.* It is so generally understood?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It would have been a matter of public notoriety if they had found a bill?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then the end of the law has been reached, so far as that investigation into this alleged riot is concerned?

*Answer.* It seems so.

*Question.* Are any of the men there held for trial, the sheriff, the deputy sheriff, in whose charge these three colored men were left who were taken out that night and afterward killed?

*Answer.* Any of these number bound over?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* I think not; none of these were of the guard that had these three men in charge; that is, I do not think they are.

*Question.* Is this, then, the whole statement you have to make in reference to this matter? If there is anything else you know that will throw any light upon the subject of our investigation—which will enable us to ascertain whether the laws are sufficiently executed in the State of Mississippi to secure protection to life, person, and property—tell us what it is.

*Answer.* I do not know that I know anything else that would bear upon this subject—that would add anything to your information.

*Question.* Have any other cases of lawlessness occurred in your county, of which you have knowledge, for which there is no adequate redress in the legal tribunals?

*Answer.* There have been some other outrages committed there, but there never has been any clew found to them. There was a mail-route agent running from my office to Selma, Alabama, who was shot and killed on his car, just at the State line, about twelve or fifteen miles from Meridian; he was killed from no cause whatever; he was a remarkably quiet man.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* That was in November last; he was an appointee of the Post Office Department here.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* His name was Diggs. And then in the same month a member of the board of supervisors of our county was killed in his house, about ten miles from Meridian.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* Joseph Williams. It seems that he was attacked by about twenty or thirty masked men; he was called out of his house and shot. He was a little influential and prominent in his community among colored people.

*Question.* What was his color?

*Answer.* He was a colored man; not guilty of anything wrong that I ever learned.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was this mail agent in the discharge of his duty when he was killed—running on his train?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How was he shot; had the train stopped at a station?

*Answer.* The train had stopped at a wooding place in the woods, and a man with a mask came up to the car with a double-barreled gun and shot him dead.

*Question.* Did he give any reason for it?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was not a word said; he walked up, and by the time he was seen he fired and killed him dead.

*Question.* Did any of the other people on the train see this man?

*Answer.* I think they did.

*Question.* Was any pursuit made?

*Answer.* None whatever; the train moved off very rapidly, and nothing was ever done.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Was there anybody arrested in connection with the killing of Williams?

*Answer.* One young man was arrested and brought down for examination, but it was established that he knew nothing of it. It is a very difficult matter to establish guilt against the parties who do these things down there, so far as my observation goes.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Are these the only cases which you recollect having occurred there?

*Answer.* The only ones of any importance and of recent date.

*Question.* Had there been any violence inflicted by men in disguise prior to these cases you have mentioned?

*Answer.* There have been two prominent colored men attacked, nearly a year ago, over a year ago, perhaps; one of them was a member of the county board. They were living in the same house, and were attacked by an armed band; the member of the board was killed; the other man was badly wounded, and lost an arm.

*Question.* Were they attacked by men in disguise?

*Answer.* I so understand; that is the report. There was a kind of investigation, or an effort made to ascertain who did it, but it amounted to nothing.

*Question.* It did not result in the identification of anybody?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was no indictment.

*Question.* Is there any such public sentiment there, any such intolerance, as prevents the free expression of political sentiments by any man of any party?

*Answer.* Well, sir, there is a prety heavy pressure there against men of republican views. Heretofore in our canvasses there, and in our elections, we have had the presence of troops, which has given confidence to the colored people and the republicans, in consequence of which they have come forward. But without the presence of troops in a political canvass, why, sir, we would not hope to do much, not in my part of the State. The colored people there have been very much intimidated and frightened since the riot there.

*Question.* In that part of the State in which you reside may a member of the democratic party express his political sentiments without fear or danger of molestation or bodily injury?

*Answer.* Oh, yes, sir; they express themselves very freely.

*Question.* May a member of the republican party do the same thing?

*Answer.* He has to be very cautious. If he is an old citizen there, of influence, he is allowed to talk quite freely; but if he is a carpet-bagger, why he has to be very cautious. I have felt very secure there myself, being a native of the county, born and raised there, and the people have known me from infancy; I have got along very well myself, though others have not.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You are a republican?

*Answer.* I am.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Upon what facts known to you do you base that statement?

*Answer.* I do not know that the feeling exists, I do not believe that it exists, among the members of the democratic party generally; I do not think the masses of the democratic party are chargeable with these things. But there is a certain class of old political leaders, the remnants of the old slave aristocracy, who are badly-disposed men; they operate upon the younger men, who would otherwise be orderly and good citizens. But this feeling of bitterness toward republicans and toward the Government is engendered and kept alive by the influence and teachings of that class of older men. I do not think that the majority or the mass of the democratic party there are badly disposed. I think they are disposed to be good citizens, and would be, if they were allowed to think and act for themselves, and were out from under the influence and control of these bad leaders.

*Question.* Could a meeting of negroes be called there and be addressed upon political questions without danger of exciting violence?

*Answer.* It could so long as the addresses were confined to what the democrats thought was legitimate from their standpoint; if it went beyond that, why you might apprehend the meeting would be disturbed.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* You do not mean that the republicans would not be allowed to speak unless they made democratic speeches?

*Answer.* Not entirely democratic speeches; but they would have to be a kind of moderate ones; we would have to be rather cautious and guarded in the expression of our sentiments. We never have had any disturbance there in the republican meetings heretofore, during the canvass; we have generally been very cautious. I have had a great deal to do with managing things in that county, and my advice has always been to yield and go slowly in order to avoid trouble. There is no disposition among the colored people, generally, to get up any trouble; they are peaceable, and disposed to be peaceable. They are not in favor of retaliation, of evil for evil; they are very submissive as a general thing. Of course, in some communities there are some few bad spirits, which is very natural everywhere.

*Question.* Has there never been a republican speech made in your county by a carpet-bagger?

*Answer.* Oh, yes, sir.

*Question.* And heretofore, up to this time, there has been no disturbance at a political meeting?

*Answer.* No, sir, no disturbance that amounted to anything.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Has there been any extensive system of destroying school-houses in any part of the State that you are aware of?

*Answer.* I understand that there have been some destroyed.

*Question.* Have you any knowledge of it, such as will enable you to speak of it with any degree of certainty?

*Answer.* One was destroyed in my county that I know of and the teacher was ordered to leave.

*Question.* Was that a white school or a colored school?

*Answer.* It was a colored school with a white teacher under the school system of our county. He was ordered to leave, and his house was burned. Afterward they agreed to rebuild the house, provided the board would appoint a democratic neighbor of theirs as a teacher.

*Question.* What was the name of the man compelled to leave?

*Answer.* I think his name was Ritter; I did not know him personally.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* I think that was about February; about that time.

*Question.* February last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. And there was a colored teacher taken out of his school-house and flogged pretty severely, and ordered to stop his teaching. That was in my county, some three or four months ago; I do not remember the exact date.

*Question.* Were the men in disguise who visited these school-teachers in the instances you have mentioned?

*Answer.* No, sir, I think not; I think there were written notices sent to them; that is my recollection.

*Question.* As to the burning of the school-houses, how was that done, or was it the teacher's house that was burned?

*Answer.* It was the school-house; I think that was burned in the night, and no clew was found to the perpetrator.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Is there not considerable apprehension on the part of the poor white people of that region in regard to negro equality and social equality?

*Answer.* Well, no, sir; they do not apprehend anything of the kind. The leaders of the democracy say ——

*Question.* Is not that the feeling which the leaders endeavor to impress upon them?

*Answer.* No, sir; there are remarkably few negroes that show a disposition to——

*Question.* Is not that the point upon which the democratic leaders always try to stir up the white people?

*Answer.* That is the means adopted by the leaders of the democratic party.

*Question.* That is what I mean.

*Answer.* Oh, yes; they talk much of that idea, and endeavor to instil it into the minds of the white people generally, and are successful to a very great extent.

*Question.* I want to get at the method by which they arouse the feelings of the poorer white men.

*Answer.* That is the burden of their argument; this question of equality that they say is endeavored to be forced upon them by the republican party, putting the negro everywhere, and putting him into position.

*Question.* How do they talk on this subject?

*Answer.* They put it in very plain terms. They say that the object of the republican party and of the Government is to put the negro in control, to make a sort of negro supremacy, to give him the control of the affairs of the Government, to put him in office, and gradually to force him into social relations with the white people. That is the argument they make use of, to the exclusion of almost every other argument, when they come before the poorer class of the white people. That has been the case for the last three years, and it does affect the opinions of a large number of the poor white men who are really and honestly republicans, and friends of the Government. But that thing is pressed upon them so strenuously by these leaders that it has had its effect.

*Question.* Not only political but social equality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Marrying the whites to blacks?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they take the position that putting colored men into office, in positions of prominence, will gradually lead them to demand social equality, and to intermingle by marriage with the whites.

*Question.* Do the negroes themselves attempt anything of the kind?

*Answer.* They do not; not in my section of the State. There has been very little, if any, effort on the part of any negro to force himself forward, socially, upon the whites.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* A question or two just in this connection. Do men like Warren Tyler, Clopton, and men of that sort, assert their entire equality in every form and with some arrogance?

*Answer.* That is what I said before; some few do. These two men, Tyler and Clop-

ton, were really rather bad men; they did assert and demand more than colored men generally, but they were exceptions. There are a few exceptions, and they belonged to the exceptional class.

*Question.* And the democrats propose taking the very worst cases they can pick out to show the poorer white men how the thing is working?

*Answer.* Yes, that is so.

*Question.* They always take care to use the strongest illustrations they can to prove the fact; that is the way politicians generally do?

*Answer.* They very naturally take leading men, and say what they do the balance would follow.

*Question.* Is there not a great deal of social ostracism practiced by the colored men and the leagues themselves against any negro who attempts to side with the democrats, or to vote the democrat ticket?

*Answer.* There is some little, but not to the extent that there is by democrats toward white republicans, not to near the same extent.

*Question.* A democratic negro has a great deal of difficulty in voting his own sentiments when his own race is in the majority?

*Answer.* Well they are a little inclined to abuse him, but not so much so as a white republican is abused, to my certain knowledge, and from my own personal experience.

*Question.* Still there is a great deal of it?

*Answer.* Well, there is some feeling of that kind.

*Question.* How long before this riot was it that Loyal Leagues had been established in your State?

*Answer.* The first Union League was established there in 1867; I myself established the first Union League in the State of Mississippi. But they had ceased to operate or to be effective since the canvass of 1869. Our party organization became a little slack, and the leagues were pretty well lost sight of since the fall of 1869.

*Question.* Was not the league in your county revived with a great deal of earnestness just before this riot?

*Answer.* I do not think it was; if so, it was not the original Union League, it was in some other shape, and something I knew nothing of, if it was there.

*Question.* Was there not a gathering of colored men both on the night before and the night of the fire, on the Saturday preceding the riot?

*Answer.* I have heard it remarked that there was a gathering of them at one of their churches on the night of the fire.

*Question.* That was not the Union League?

*Answer.* I did not understand that it was; my impression is that the Union League was disbanded there in 1869, and never has been reorganized.

*Question.* And any organization got up among the negroes was outside of the general party and of the Union Leagues?

*Answer.* There might have been a local organization of their own. From the time these Alabama men came there I do not know but what there was some disposition to organize, to place themselves in a position of defence, or where they could assert and take care of what they construed to be their rights. They did not know where the thing would stop, perhaps they would continue to take them off.

*Question.* I understand you to say that you were not advised whether Price and the men who beat Adam Kennard were disguised or were not?

*Answer.* I have heard it said they were.

*Question.* Your information is that they were?

*Answer.* Yes, my information is that they were.

*Question.* Do you remember the fact that Kennard believed that he identified Price by his mask dropping off, perhaps?

*Answer.* I do not know but what he identified him; of course he stated in his affidavit that he identified him, but I disremember whether it was by the dropping of his mask, or by some other means that he recognized him. He had formerly lived in Sumter County, and was a prominent man among the republicans. He was rather a big man, a very large and a very courageous man, and Kennard might have detected him from his size and appearance.

*Question.* The whipping of Kennard was believed to be done by Price and those who acted with him for that purpose?

*Answer.* The citizens there generally believe so. Of course Price told me that he did not do it, and many people believed that he did not.

*Question.* Was there not a great deal of feeling of this sort; that Price had induced numbers of negroes to come over from Alabama for the purpose of voting for him as mayor of your city, to which position he was aspiring?

*Answer.* There was such a report current there. I had very little intimacy with Mr. Price after he came there.

*Question.* Sturgis was then your mayor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Where were the troops at the time of this riot?

*Answer.* There were no troops nearer than Jackson.

*Question.* I thought a committee had gone for troops, who had come with them on the Friday before?

*Answer.* The troops returned to their post before the riot; there were none there at the time of the riot.

*Question.* You testified at the examination before Judge Leachman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you remember using in your testimony on that occasion these words in regard to the speaking that was going on there on the Saturday evening?

"As I stepped to the door, I heard Dennis saying something about the Alabamians, and that they, the negroes, would take things into their own hands. I thought it was prudent to notify the sheriff, and did so."

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I said so. From what little I heard, it was very little, I was satisfied that it was what would be construed as inflammatory. Whether the negroes did or did not have the right to express such sentiments is another question. But I knew that they were of such a nature that they would be inflammatory to the democrats in the state of feeling that then existed.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* That it would have that effect upon them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that it would have that effect upon them; that it was inflammatory, from their stand-point; and hence I wanted the meeting dissolved.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Did you not yourself regard language of this sort, "taking things into their own hands," as being inflammatory from almost any stand-point, if said to an ignorant audience?

*Answer.* It was calculated to excite them, the same as the speeches made at the citizens' meeting on the Monday morning after the fire and before the riot; they were very inflammatory.

*Question.* That was after the fire and after the belief had become general, whether just or not, that the bad negroes, at least, had encouraged the setting the town on fire, and had dissuaded others from helping to put the fire out?

*Answer.* It was after there was an impression of that kind that prevailed.

*Question.* And after a block of the city had been burned up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there not a general impression on Saturday night, while the fire was going on, that the shots which were fired were fired by some of the negroes there?

*Answer.* Well, I heard a great many say that the man Dennis fired some shots. I believe some testified to seeing him fire. Others testified that there were small bands of armed colored men posted in different parts of the town, who were firing shots indiscriminately. I did not see anything of the kind myself.

*Question.* I am speaking of the general impression of the people at that time.

*Answer.* That was the general impression at the time.

*Question.* Was there not a great deal of excitement that pervaded the town after that fire, growing out of the general impression that there were negroes in the community who were exciting the others to commit these acts?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was a great deal of apprehension, a great deal of feeling, and excitement.

*Question.* The bulk of the property of the town of course was owned by white persons?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that sense of insecurity, after the speeches of Clopton, after the fire, and after the shooting at night, had been greatly increased?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so much so that they raised a crowd of men, armed, that night and patrolled the town during the balance of the night.

*Question.* After the fire was over?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* From an apprehension of other violence?

*Answer.* They appeared sufficiently apprehensive to make a patrol of the town.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the impression as to the purpose of the colored man who came over from Alabama assuming to be a deputy sheriff; what was the impression as to his object in taking these colored men into Alabama?

*Answer.* So far as I could understand it the impression was that large numbers of colored men were gradually coming out of Alabama into Mississippi ever since the last Alabama election. In that county at that election very few of the colored men voted.

*Question.* Which county?

*Answer.* Sumter County, Alabama. There was a very large majority of colored voters there, but yet in the result of the election they were several hundred in the minority. After that large numbers of them came into our State, to our county.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Do you state that as a fact or as an impression?

*Answer.* That is what I heard; it is generally understood there to be so.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Had you not seen persons who had come from Alabama?

*Answer.* I had seen a great many colored men from that county.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* I want to get at the origin of this feeling on the part of the colored men.

*Answer.* It seems that these Alabama democrats, finding that a great many of the colored men were leaving their county when they needed them there for the purpose of labor, were disposed to adopt some means to get them back there, and to stop them from going out in such numbers. Therefore they sent this deputy sheriff there to arrest some and carry them back, in order to make a kind of example of them and probably deter others from leaving.

*Question.* Was that an impression that prevailed among the negroes in Meridian?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the negroes thought so.

*Question.* Did any of you ever undertake to ascertain whether this negro, Kennard, actually had authority or who had sent him there?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* Adam Kennard. I do not know that he exhibited any papers, any authority. I am inclined to think that he had no authority.

*Question.* Did he live in Sumter County, Alabama?

*Answer.* He did.

*Question.* Was he then acting for the sheriff, or was he a servant of the sheriff, or in what capacity was he acting?

*Answer.* He purported to be acting for the sheriff as a deputy; so I was told by the mayor of our city, who, I think, had seen him or knew something of his being there.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Was anything said about Ku-Klux being in Sumter County, Alabama?

*Answer.* Well, first and last I have heard a great deal said about there being such an organization there.

*Question.* Did the negroes who left that county state anything about the operations of the Klan as one of their reasons for leaving?

*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of; not to me.

*Question.* Did you hear of their assigning such a reason?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not think I did.

*Question.* Did you understand how Kennard was paid for his services?

*Answer.* I did not.

*Question.* Did you understand who paid his expenses?

*Answer.* I did not.

*Question.* Do you know the names of those colored men who were arrested or kidnapped by that Alabama party and taken over the line?

*Answer.* I do not. They had been at Meridian but a few days; had just come from that county, as I understand.

*Question.* Do you know what has become of them?

*Answer.* I heard some time afterward that they had been carried back to the county authorities; perhaps imprisoned for a hearing, those that were under charges.

*Question.* There was only one that there was any charge against?

*Answer.* There was one who was charged with stealing money; the others were simply charged with forfeiting their contract; I do not know that they were imprisoned; but I understand that the other man was, and had been, or would be, tried.

*Question.* You do not know what has become of the other two?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Did the white people of the town of Meridian generally favor that operation of that Alabama band there; their coming into Meridian and taking out people in that way?

*Answer.* No, sir; I must admit that the better part of the citizens, even of the democrats, were opposed to it, and so spoke plainly.

*Question.* Why did you not prevent it?

*Answer.* That is a little mysterious; I never could understand why. They seemed to suppose, perhaps, it might get up some disturbance; that they might undertake to capture this man Price and kill him.

*Question.* Price was a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. During the day they went to work to get these men to lay down their arms and go along quietly until the evening train departed, when they left.

*Question.* They took these colored men off with them?

*Answer.* They sent them off immediately after they came in. They came in there before and remained during the day.

*Question.* Do you know whether the colored people generally looked with apprehension on that band from Alabama?

*Answer.* I think they did.

*Question.* Do you know whether they regarded them as belonging to the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I think they did.

*Question.* Did they at that time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think they so regarded it.

*Question.* They felt, then, that their friends, those three colored men who had been taken away, were in the hands of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* They felt so, I think.

*Question.* You spoke of the citizens arming on the day of the riot—about three hundred arming themselves. What class of citizens do you mean by that?

*Answer.* It embraced all classes; many of the best citizens of the town.

*Question.* White people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were they all whites?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What became of the negroes after the riot began?

*Answer.* The negroes scattered off, got into their homes, and secure places, for self-protection.

*Question.* They hid away?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They apprehended that the onslaught would be general, and they would all be killed. They were not armed and were not organized, and hence they retreated to such places of safety as they could find.

*Question.* What has been the feeling among the negroes since the riot, and what is it now?

*Answer.* It is remarkably quiet now.

*Question.* What is the feeling among the negroes in regard to their security and safety?

*Answer.* They feel that so long as there is no political canvass, or nothing to get up a bitter political feeling between them and the democrats, they will not be in any danger, and that everything will go on very harmoniously and pleasantly, as it has done since the riot; but they are very apprehensive that in case of a canvass they must have some kind of guarantee of protection, or they could not go as fully into it as they would like. That is the feeling.

*Question.* Suppose an election were to take place there now, what would be the probable conduct of the colored republicans?

*Answer.* Well, sir, if it was a political contest, I am inclined to think that the colored republicans would not come forward promptly.

*Question.* Do you mean that they would not vote?

*Answer.* Not generally; they would be very guarded at least, very cautious. I do not know that there is any real ground for fear, though they have had an apprehension ever since the riot that such a thing might occur again, and they do not feel entirely secure.

*Question.* Who are these men who are bound over by Judge Leachman? Who is G. W. Brantley?

*Answer.* He is a gentleman of leisure.

*Question.* Is he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a horse-trader, billiard-player, whisky-drinker, &c.

*Question.* Is he a member of the democratic party?

*Answer.* He is supposed to be.

*Question.* Was he in the rebel army?

*Answer.* I have only known him a year or two; I suppose he was, but I do not know.

*Question.* Who is Hugh Wilson.

*Answer.* He is a man there of some little prominence, and is considered in the community as a dangerous man when provoked. He is a very clever man generally, of very good standing, of that class of men.

*Question.* Is he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a builder and a manufacturer of brick.

*Question.* Is he a democrat?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; understood to be so.

*Question.* Was he in the rebel army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Who is Robert E. Coleman?

*Answer.* He is an old man, and a planter.

*Question.* Is he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* A democrat?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is.
*Question.* Did he take any part in the rebellion?
*Answer.* I suppose he was too old to have been a soldier.
*Question.* Do you know the attitude he held during the rebellion?
*Answer.* Of course he was a sympathizer with the South.
*Question.* How far does he live from town?
*Answer.* He lives in town. His plantation is four or five miles out of town.
*Question.* Who is J. F. Sanford?
*Answer.* A young man in town, engaged in no occupation.
*Question.* He has no ostensible business?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Is he a democrat and a white man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a Kentuckian.
*Question.* He is a Kentuckian?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has been there since the war.
*Question.* Was he in the rebel army?
*Answer.* I think he was.
*Question.* Who is Isaac Adams?
*Answer.* A laboring man, a carpenter, and a very nice man.
*Question.* Is he a white man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* A democrat?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was he in the rebellion?
*Answer.* I think he was; I think I heard him say so, but I am not certain.
*Question.* Who is A. G. Horn?
*Answer.* He is the editor of the Meridian Mercury.
*Question.* He is a white man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is the Meridian Mercury the democratic organ there?
*Answer.* It is.
*Question.* Was he in the rebellion?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* How old is he?
*Answer.* About fifty, I suppose.
*Question.* What was his attitude toward the rebellion?
*Answer.* He was a war man, in sympathy with the confederate cause; but he was not in the service. He was publishing a paper at the time.
*Question.* Publishing a paper during the war?
*Answer.* Not there: I think it was in Mobile.
*Question.* Did this investigation extend to a general inquiry as to those implicated in the proceedings? I notice by this report that the case is entitled, "The State *vs.* James A. Brantley and others, charged with riot, riotous homicide, and riotous arson."
*Answer.* I suppose the investigation was extended as fully as it could be.
*Question.* To find out who was implicated?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a great many witnesses were examined.
*Question.* And this was the finding of the court?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In answer to a question by Mr. Beck, in answer to several questions, in fact, you spoke of the general impression there as to the intention of the negroes; among whom did you mean to say that general impression prevailed as to the fire and the intentions of the negroes?
*Answer.* That impression prevailed among the citizens, the democrats; a pretty general impression.
*Question.* You say that there were some cases of outrages by bands of disguised men—I forget how many you spoke of, but you spoke of two or three—was it the general understanding or impression there that those were Ku-Klux outrages? Were they so spoken of and regarded?
*Answer.* So regarded pretty generally by all classes, democrats and all.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Were the men who came there from Alabama with the deputy sheriff white men or black men?
*Answer.* They were white men; I saw a number of them.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* You say that a man may make a republican speech there, provided he puts it in a pretty mild form?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has got to be a little mild and cautious and guarded.
*Question.* You said something about incendiary speeches; I want to get precisely at

what is understood there as an incendiary speech. What is offensive to the democratic ear in that sense?

*Answer.* They are pretty generally disposed to regard—when the negroes propose to assert all their rights, and to defend themselves against violence in the exercise and enjoyment of their rights, and to do it at all hazards, they would call that incendiary.

*Question.* Have you ever heard any republican speaker there, white or black, claim that the negroes were entitled to any more or greater rights than white men?

*Answer.* I never have since my experience with the party.

*Question.* Have you ever heard any republican speaker, white or black, claim the right to violate, in any way, the rights of the whites as a class or as individuals?

*Answer.* I never have.

*Question.* And if any of them assert that they are, in law, in every way, entitled to the same legal rights as white men, and that they intend to assert those rights, that is regarded by the democrats there as incendiary?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if they speak with considerable force of asserting their rights, and declare their intentions to have the rights given under the Constitution and laws—whenever they speak of having their rights, of exercising them by force, if necessary, or at any hazard or sacrifice, why, then the democrats are disposed to regard that as incendiary and offensive.

*Question.* Have you ever heard any republican speaker, white or black, claim that the negroes were entitled to assert their rights by force in any way, except to defend themselves when their rights were unlawfully violated?

*Answer.* I never have; always on the defensive.

*Question.* Do you understand that to be the extent that any of them have undertaken to assert their rights—republicans or colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; unless with rare exceptions, I would understand that to be the extent of their offending.

*Question.* Has there been any disposition manifested by the colored men, as a class, to violate, in any manner, the rights of the whites as a class

*Answer.* Not to my knowledge.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 28, 1871.

ROBERT W. FLOURNOY, sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you reside in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In what part of it?

*Answer.* In Pontotoc County—what is called Northern Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you lived there?

*Answer.* I moved to Pontotoc County in 1856; I have resided in Pontotoc town about four years.

*Question.* In what occupation are you engaged?

*Answer.* I have been editing a paper in Pontotoc about sixteen months. Sometimes I take law cases. I am not a regular practitioner: I abandoned the practice after I went to Mississippi; but I sometimes take cases.

*Question.* In what were you engaged from 1856 until you commenced editing a newspaper?

*Answer.* In 1856 I was practicing there. I commenced publishing and editing a paper last year.

*Question.* You have lived in that county since 1856 till the present time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State whether at any time during your residence in Pontotoc disguised men have come into the town; and, if so, when, what they did, and your whole knowledge of their proceedings.

*Answer.* Well, sir, it is necessary, probably, for me to state that I have been what is called county superintendent of education, appointed by the State superintendent, for the purpose of establishing schools. Ours is a large white county; the negro population there is small compared with the white. I established, I think, about fifty-two white schools, and twelve colored schools. After these schools had been in operation some time, the teachers of a portion of them informed me that they were called upon by disguised men, and required to cease teaching, or they would be "dealt with;" that was the phrase used. Of course the committee will understand that as to some things which I relate I speak from hearsay; other portions of my testimony will be what I know myself. The committee of course can make the discrimination.

Mr. VAN TRUMP. Perhaps, then, it would be well for you to designate, as you go along, the nature of your knowledge on the subject.

*Answer.* What I am now stating is what I have heard.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were these reports made to you by teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* As superintendent of education in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by the teachers and by democratic teachers—by southern men born and raised, the most of them, in Pontotoc County, I believe. They said that they had been called on; that they were awakened at night, after midnight—in every case, I think, they stated it was after midnight; that when called upon they were told—I believe there is no variation in this matter—that their "grandpa" wanted to see them; that he had not had anything to eat in six months, and had not had any water since Vicksburg fell. This same statement was made by all of them. They were told to come out; that the men wanted to talk to them. They went out. They were asked how things were getting along in that neighborhood, if the negroes were behaving themselves, and if there were any colored schools taught in the neighborhood. These gentlemen informed them, of course, that they were teachers themselves. They asked them why they taught colored schools, and if they thought it was right. They told them the law authorized it, and they were doing it because it was a means of getting support. They informed them then that they were democrats, and they wanted to know what their politics were. They were informed of that fact; and then they were told they must stop teaching or else they would call on them again, and when they called on them again they would be "dealt with;" those were the words used. The school of one of the teachers called on had expired the day they got there. Another one stopped his school, I think, some four or five weeks—a month or a month and a half—before the session closed. Two others continued to teach; one a week, when his time expired, and the other about two weeks. These teachers asked me what to do, and I told them I would continue to teach. After the disturbance of the schools I came out in my paper in some very bitter articles, in which I denounced these men as a body of midnight prowlers, robbers, and assassins. I was very severe in the articles I wrote. I never referred to the Ku-Klux in my paper until they stopped my schools—stopped one school at least. Soon after, those articles appeared (I think I continued them for two or three weeks) my friends came and informed me of certain threats that were making in regard to myself; that they would visit Pontotoc Town. I did not apprehend anything myself. When consulted by my friends about it, I did not apprehend their coming there. I had heard of a body of disguised men going through the country, whipping negroes, for several months, but I did not apprehend anything. However, on the morning of the 13th of May, in the present year, between 12 and 1 o'clock, I was awakened by knocking at my door. It proved to be two friends of mine who informed me that there was a body of disguised men then in town. One of those friends was the foreman of my printing establishment. My printing office was near a room in the court-house where the post office was kept; I was also deputy postmaster. This gentleman informed me that he had seen these men drawn up. There is a yard round the court-house. He had jumped out the back door and gone to the jail, where some gentlemen who had been hunting deer were playing a game of euchre; and when he got these gentlemen and returned to the court-house, he heard an indescribable noise; I cannot explain it; I never heard anything like it at any time; it is a very singular, grating, discordant kind of a whistle, which can be heard a considerable distance. He heard that round on the back street, not the main street. There was a vacant lot; and these men approached near enough to be heard. There was but one spokesman; I never have heard of an instance where more than one man did the talking. The spokesman of the party was asking a man who lived on the back street the way to my house; he was also asking if it had been understood that I had threatened to shoot into them; he wanted to know if they thought I would do it. These gentlemen told me they heard him asking for me; and they told me there were three or four or five persons who had stopped around at an old shop, and that they intended to intercept them before they got to my house and demand their surrender. They requested me to go with them. I immediately got up, put on my clothing, took one of my double-barreled guns, and handed another to a gentleman who had nothing. I had two double-barreled guns; for I did not know whether these men intended to come, though I did not expect they would. I went on around to this shop; there was a gully running for about one hundred and fifty yards; I heard this noise—this whistle or whatever it is; I never heard it before. It was not a very dark night. I could see a body of men on horses. Their horses seemed to be a white mass. When I got to this shop I there met Judge Pollard. He was in town holding a chancery court; he is a judge of that court. I also met there Mr. Todd, the deputy sheriff of the county, and two or three other gentlemen. When we got there we had but little time for talking, for this body of disguised men had turned the corner, about one hundred and fifty yards off, and were approaching in our direction. After a short consultation we considered that inasmuch as Pollard was a higher officer than Todd, it would be proper for him to make the demand of these men to surrender. As they were coming on, Mr. Pollard advanced. He handed his gun back to us; he said

he did not like to advance with a gun in his hand; the gun was put behind the house. Pollard advanced within about fifteen yards of them. I was standing near the corner of the house and the other gentlemen were behind the house. They insisted upon my standing behind the house; but when Pollard advanced and I saw that he was advancing so near these men, I felt some apprehension for him and I advanced myself some ten steps. When I did so two or three of the gentlemen who were behind the house followed me. As Pollard spoke to the disguised men, they stopped. They were riding two and two, just as cavalry ride. When he spoke to them they clustered up. I did not hear distinctly what Pollard said, but I heard a portion of it. There is a law of the State of Mississippi, as well as a law of Congress, against these disguised men; our law requires them to unmask whenever they are called upon. Pollard demanded that they should surrender. He had scarcely done so before a pistol was discharged by this body of men. The ball went into the house; and from examination next day where it lodged, it must have come very near striking Pollard. I think they shot at Pollard. I do not think they shot at me, because I was stooping down and was rather in the shadow of the house. As soon as they shot, my impression is (and I am very positive on this point) that we commenced firing. Some of the gentlemen say that the others fired two or three times before we returned the shot. My own impression is that they fired but once before we fired. As soon as we fired they turned and went back and came to the main street, about a hundred yards from there. No man fell at the place where that firing was done. My impression is there were six or eight, probably six, discharges of double-barreled guns and two or three pistols on our side. They shot all the time. They also had double-barreled guns, because eight buckshot were found lodged in the house; but they shot pistols mostly. In the mean time this firing had called out several other citizens. I think at that time there were only seven or eight of us; not exceeding eight. The firing had called together other citizens who heard it. My wife had become alarmed and come on down; but I pacified her and got her back. I returned to my house with her, accompanied by three or four other persons. There we sat and smoked, I think probably half an hour. It was then proposed we should return to see if we could make any discoveries. We got lights and returned. We found some saddle-bags; one of them contained four citizens' hats, and another only one. There was a pistol found near where the firing commenced. There was also found a piece of white osnaburg, which had covered a horse down to the knees. These things were found where the firing took place. After a while we went on around, and I suppose some two or three hours after the firing it was announced that there was a man found near the corner where they had turned. We got a light and went there. There was a man lying on his back, with dark clothing; he had on a kind of dark sack, which they said afterward was black calico; I did not examine very closely the texture of the cloth. It was a loose sack, reaching down to about the hips; his pants had a broad stripe, about an inch wide, reaching all the way from the hips down. He also wore a mask which reached to the bosom. It had holes cut for the eyes, but none for the mouth, because it hung loose, and there was no difficulty in breathing. Colonel Fountain and some other gentlemen (Colonel Fountain is a prominent man, a democrat who has been running for governor, but he does not approve of these Ku-Kluxes) went to the man and said he was dead; but the Colonel on closer examination discovered that he was breathing; we immediately sent for a doctor; two or three doctors came. They removed the mask, and he opened his eyes. I asked him who he was. He said his name was Richard Dillard. He was a young man about twenty-three or twenty-four years of age. I had never seen or heard of him before. I then asked him how many men were with him there that night. He said thirty. I inquired of him what their object was in coming into the town. He said their object was to get at Colonel Flournoy; that was myself. I asked him what they intended to do with me. He said he did not know. I then inquired who were the men that were with him. He said that he did not know who they were; that he was forced to go with them, and he did not know them. I discovered that he was very weak, and that it was probably painful for him to talk; so I did not press my questions further upon him. That was about all I said to him. Some other questions were asked by other gentlemen. In the mean time the doctors came. Colonel Fountain suggested that probably the man was paralyzed from the fall. The doctors had examined his bosom and found no blood. The man said no; that he was shot in the side; that he was wounded in several places. They then discovered some blood. They took a blanket and removed him to the jail, because there were beds in the lower part of the jail; it was occupied by the family of the jailor. They got a mattress and put him on the floor. The doctors took off his hat. The hat that was worn on that occasion was a white-looking hat that stood up high. I suppose those saddle-bags were for the purpose of putting disguises in, because the hats in the saddle-bags were citizens' hats—common hats. When the disguise was removed it was found that the man had on his full suit of common clothes under the disguise. They removed all that, and then found his shirt saturated with blood. One buck-shot had penetrated near where the shoulder joins the neck; one had gone into his left arm, and one had lodged in the hip; but this one was immedi-

ately taken out by the doctor; it did not more than bury itself; it did not in fact do that. There were three other shots—two close together in the hollow of the hip and one about an inch below. That shot caused his death. He died in about two hours after he was taken to the jail and examined. He had every attention paid to him; two or three doctors were with him; but he died. The next day we sent word to his father and mother; they had a coffin made, and sent for him and took him away. The next day the sheriff went around and brought into town three horses and two mules. There was one horse that was disguised—I mean the neck and ears—with something like what persons put on horses to keep the flies off. This reached to the shoulders; and then there was a white cloth that reached to the knees, which had been removed. But this head-gear, fantastically fixed off, was still on the horse. This horse when brought in was shot near the eye and in the neck. He was claimed afterward by this man's father as belonging to him. That seems to have been the horse that Dillard rode. Then there was a mule and a sorrel horse. They had been left about a mile and a half from town by two young men, saying that they had been shot upon at a place called Randolph. These horses were put in the public stable there. Mrs. Pegues claimed one of them, a mare, as belonging to her. She said that it had been ridden off by her son; that her son had joined the Ku-Klux; that she had done all she could to prevent it, but had been unable to keep him out of it. The mule was claimed by the father of a young man named Hardin. I had especially heard of Hardin as making threats about me before that. Two of the horses brought in were not wounded at all. I understood afterward that the riders had been unable to continue to ride them and had got off.

*Question.* Were they claimed by anybody?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; every one of them was claimed. There was a small horse that was claimed by Braddon, who said he had loaned it to his brother on Friday to go to mill. Friday night was the night they came. Friday was the 12th of May. The brother has not been heard of since, according to the best information I have. It is supposed he died. The other horse was claimed by a man named Sadler, who said that the horse had been ridden off by a son of his, Tom Sadler.

*Question.* What has become of the son?

*Answer.* That son is said to have gone off to Texas. I have my doubts about that; I think he is in the neighborhood. There are in all twenty-seven suits of these disguises now in the jail at Pontotoc, or were when I left there.

*Question.* Where were they found?

*Answer.* At different places; some in the suburbs of the town and along in the road. These men did not go back the road they came; we cut them off from going that road, and they went around by a road leading through the woods for four or five miles. These articles were picked up and brought in by different persons who found them.

*Question.* At what time in the morning did the firing occur when this man was shot?

*Answer.* It was between 12 and 1 o'clock.

*Question.* How long did the men remain in town, or did they go out immediately?

*Answer.* Well, I understood that they had been in town probably half an hour; that they had been to several places. They had been where there were some lady teachers of negro schools, but they did not stay there. After the firing commenced they left as rapidly as their horses could convey them; they went off very rapidly. They had been in town about half an hour, in fact longer, as I understood; it was said they came in a little after 11 o'clock. I looked at my watch on leaving home, and it was a few minutes after 12; I returned about 1 o'clock, when the firing was over.

*Question.* How do you account for these disguises having been left?

*Answer.* I account for it in this way: that those men were thrown into probably a strange portion of the country to most of them, because I heard of their inquiring the road to Chesterville, and the road back to their homes. I presume as morning approached they did not like to be seen with disguises on; I suppose that is the reason they threw them off along the road. The direction we made them turn threw them out of the road some eight or ten miles. We threw them in an entirely different direction, and they did not seem to have known much of that country where they went. Some of them went four or five miles down on a road through the woods.

*Question.* How far from Pontotoc did the men live whose names you have given; the man who died, and the others who claimed the horses?

*Answer.* The man who died lived, I think, eight miles from Pontotoc; Sadler lived about the same distance; Pegues lived about four miles away.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Did they all live in the same general direction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all lived in the same direction—out in the northwestern portion of the county. Hardin lived about six or seven miles distant, and Braddon, who claimed the other horse, lived about ten or twelve miles away; the nearest man we knew of was Pegues.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What villages are in the northwestern part of the county?

*Answer.* There are no villages; there is a place called Poplar Springs, where there is a store, and Cherry Creek, where there are two stores; Cherry Creek itself is about seven miles from Pontotoc, and the stores eight miles.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In the early part of your testimony you spoke about the teachers who were visited; had you employed those teachers yourself?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. According to the law of Mississippi there are five school directors appointed in each county, and a county superintendent of education. The duty of the county superintendent is to examine teachers and give them a certificate of competency; they then go before the five directors, who fix their salaries and employ them.

*Question.* Had you employed these teachers without regard to their party relations?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I never inquired of a teacher his politics; I avoided mixing up politics with my schools in any way; but I know (for I took occasion afterward to make the statement in my paper) that there were eleven, including ladies, who were republicans, and all the others were democrats. There were sixty-four schools, I think, established in the county of Pontotoc—twelve colored schools and fifty-two white schools. There were only eleven republican teachers; all the others were democrats.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Were some of the democratic teachers warned as well as the republicans?

*Answer.* Only one republican teacher was warned; all the rest were democrats.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How many of them were warned?

*Answer.* Four, that I heard of.

*Question.* What did they state to you as the substance of the warning that was given to them?

*Answer.* That they must stop teaching or they would be called upon again, and if called upon the second time they would be "dealt with." Those were about the words they used.

*Question.* Were those teachers of white or colored schools?

*Answer.* In every instance they were teachers of colored schools.

*Question.* What do you understand was the meaning of their being told that their "grandpa" wanted to see them? Who was understood to be the person so designated?

*Answer.* The "grandpa" is the cyclops, or head of the company of Ku-Klux. He is the head man among them, who does all the talking.

*Question.* Is that understood to be his designation as used in their raids?

*Answer.* That is what they call the head man among them.

*Question.* Were any school-houses burned in your county?

*Answer.* None were burned in my county that I heard of.

*Question.* When were these visitations made to the school-teachers?

*Answer.* My impression is that Mr. Smith's school lacked a month and three weeks of completing the term. A school month is twenty days. His school must have been stopped about the 1st of May or the latter part of April.

*Question.* Of this year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They called on him first. He consulted with me, and I told him that I would continue. They called upon him again and used such threats as deterred him, and he stopped the school. It it said now—I do not know the truth of it—that they inflicted corporal punishment upon him; but he is a very proud man, and he denied it to me. I hardly think they did it, though it is generally believed there that they did inflict corporal punishment upon him on the second visit. But he did not stop his school the first time he was called upon. They called upon him a second time; and then he told me he could not stand it; that they used such threats toward him that they deterred him.

*Question.* Did he communicate to you the reason they gave for making that demand upon him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they said they were determined that there should be no colored schools kept; that they intended to break up every one of them in the State; that it was useless to contend about it; that they should be stopped. At some other points where they went—I state this as a hearsay testimony—at some other places they called upon persons who were not school-teachers to intimidate them. One white man they took into a swamp about a mile off, and I have no doubt they punished him very severely. They went into a negro house and danced about on the floor, exhibiting their pistols, and said the whole question was between the Loyal Leagues and the Ku-Klux. I state to this committee that there has never been a Loyal League in Pontotoc County. I know this is so. I never was in a Loyal League in my life; I know nothing about them; there has never been one in my county. But these men said the Govern

ment was afraid of them; that the courts could not touch them; that they were too strong; and that a democratic President should be elected in 1872; that they were determined upon that.

*Question.* According to your information, to what extent have visits been made by men in disguise in that county or in adjoining counties?

*Answer.* Well, sir, they have been riding in that county more or less for the last six or eight months; but of late they have ridden more frequently. There is such a reign of terror there now that persons whose backs are cut all to pieces will actually deny that they have been whipped by them.

*Question.* What are they afraid of?

*Answer.* They are afraid of being killed. These men tell them that if they ever disclose the matter, or say a word about it, they will kill them.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* If these persons whose backs are lacerated do not tell, how do you ascertain the fact?

*Answer.* Because they have returned back to their families, and they have seen their clothing and their shirts.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have you met with any persons who have been the victims of these outrages?

*Answer.* I have met with no one who admitted to me that he had been whipped. I have talked with several who said they had been taken out and threatened, but they did not admit that they were whipped.

*Question.* Did those men who said that they had been taken out and threatened describe the appearance of the men who did it?

*Answer.* They said they could tell nothing about them; they were all disguised with a white stripe down their pantaloons, or wore dark clothing, with a mask. I never yet met one who said he knew the voice of any of these men, excepting a man named Maffit. He is a very strong democrat, from South Carolina—a man of great firmness. He was teaching a negro school, and he said he knew the voice of some men who called upon him; that this man Hardin was one of them. It seems that two men spoke to him.

*Question.* What is Mr. Maffit's full name?

*Answer.* I do not know his full name; I have very little acquaintance with him. He applied to me for a position as teacher; I found him competent, and gave him a certificate, and I only saw him afterward when he came to complain about this matter.

*Question.* Where does he live now?

*Answer.* Within four miles of Pontotoc Town; his post office is at Pontotoc. He said, I think, that after this head man had given him his orders, one of the party asked for a drink of water, and the man who asked for the drink of water, he said, was named Hardin. You asked about other schools that they stopped. I know of a school that they stopped in Union County. Union was a part of Pontotoc until the legislature changed it last year. They stopped a school there, a negro school, kept by a young man named Newsham.

*Question.* Did Maffit tell you that he recognized one man as Hardin before you had discovered Hardin's connection with this transaction in your own town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. This conversation with Mr. Maffit, or Moffit—I really do not know his precise name—took place some two or three weeks before they came to Pontotoc, and he told me then that Hardin was one of them.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did Mr. Maffit quit teaching?

*Answer.* No, sir. Smith, the man who was visited twice, was the man who quit teaching.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where is Smith now?

*Answer.* Up there near Cherry Creek.

*Question.* What is his full name?

*Answer.* Minot Smith.

*Question.* Do you remember the names of any other teachers who were visited?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. John Huntingdon was warned by a letter or note. They called when he was not at home, and they left a note where he was staying. Mr. Seales was called upon. His school was out the very day they called; they called on Friday, and his school had expired that day. The four teachers who were called upon were Seales, Huntingdon, Smith, and Maffit.

*Question.* Within what period of time were these visits to those four teachers?

*Answer.* They called on Maffit, I think, about a week or two before they called on any other teacher; but after the second visit to Smith these others followed very rapidly.

*Question.* Was the visit to Smith in the beginning of the month of May?

*Answer.* No, sir; Smith had stopped his school before May.

*Question.* Can you fix the period within which the four teachers were called upon?

*Answer.* I think that possibly Huntingdon, the last one who was called on, was called on in May. I think the others must have been in the latter part of April, and that was the time when the second visit was made to Smith, though the first had been a week or two before.

*Question.* Can you assign any other cause for their intended visit to you than your denunciations of these proceedings against the schools?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I am a very decided man in my political opinions; I think that you, Mr. Chairman, who are acquainted with me, will probably bear me out in saying that I am very independent, and speak and write just what I think. There has been some feeling against me to a considerable extent in the county of Pontotoc. In the town of Pontotoc, where I live, that feeling has measurably worn away, and I have a good many personal friends there among the democrats and some in the county. But the charge they make in the country is that I want to put the negro over the white man. Of course I need not say to this committee that that is false; I never in my life thought of such a thing as putting one citizen above another in any way; but that is the charge they made in the country. There was a feeling against me growing out of my political opinions. This feeling exists there not only against me, but against all other republicans; and there are some white republicans in my county.

*Question.* You have been publishing a republican newspaper at Pontotoc?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is called "Equal Rights."

*Question.* Have you done more in publishing your paper or expressing your political sentiments than to advocate firmly the principles in which you believe?

*Answer.* I have advocated in my paper loyalty to the United States as a paramount obligation upon the citizen; I have urged compliance with the Constitution of the United States, and the right of every citizen under that Constitution. That is about the extent to which I have gone. In that I have claimed the right for every colored man to send his children to the same schools as white persons do. But when I accepted the appointment of county superintendent of education, I accepted it with the full determination to carry out, and have carried out, the law, as I understood its intention, which was to keep up separate schools.

*Question.* Did you organize separate schools?

*Answer.* I did organize separate schools in every instance; I never attempted to put negroes and whites together. I say to you very candidly that my individual opinion is that when children can play together, as black and white children do, I see no reason why it would poison them to go to school together.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* While you have organized separate schools, you have been a very firm and independent advocate of mixed schools in your paper?

*Answer.* When I took charge of affairs as superintendent of education of the county, I carried out strictly the law and kept the schools separate. Governor Alcorn and myself got into a controversy with reference to the opinions which I expressed about the right of the citizen, black or white, to send his children to the University of Mississippi.

*Question.* Then you were really writing in your paper against the law of Mississippi?

*Answer.* There is no law of Mississippi prohibiting mixed schools.

*Question.* I think you stated that the law was understood to provide for separate schools.

*Answer.* I will explain that. In the whole law there are no distinctions made, but it goes on to say that upon application of parents or guardians representing twenty-five children of school age, separate schools may be established; and that we consider to be the intention of the law—to establish separate schools. But that had no reference to the University of Mississippi. I was silent in my paper on the subject until the professors of Oxford College wrote, over their own signatures, and had published, a letter in which they said that whenever a boy applied for admission into the University of Mississippi, they would look into his face, and if they discovered that he had negro blood, they would refuse him admission. Governor Alcorn came out and indorsed that letter. All this that I now tell you was long after I had commenced editing the paper. I had edited the paper a year before, and had never made any reference to the schools; but when Governor Alcorn indorsed the letter of those professors, I came out in my paper and demanded the right of the citizen to send his children to the University of Mississippi.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Had the advocacy of that opinion anything to do with the hostility evinced toward you by this visit of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know how far that might have influenced them; but I will

say that my course, as superintendent of education, gave entire satisfaction, so far as I understood, to persons of all parties there, because I was very particular in employing teachers that I thought would suit. There was nothing in the law against the admission of colored children into the schools along with white; and I do not believe that under the law a negro could have been prevented from entering any of the schools; but it was understood that the meaning of that portion of the law which said there might be separate schools established was that we should establish separate schools for negroes and for white persons.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* In that discussion as to whether colored persons should be admitted to the University, did you not go into the question at large and advocate mixed schools generally?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not. I have a distinct recollection about that. After Smith's school had been stopped and others ordered to stop, I then for the first time (and it has been since the first of May of the present year) came out and said in my paper substantially this: that, in deference to the declarations of the democratic party in Mississippi, the republican party had instituted separate schools; that as an individual I had pretermitted that question and was willing to pretermit it, but that I never had believed in that principle; that I now was fully satisfied of what I had before believed, that the democratic party did not intend the negro should be educated under any circumstances; and I, therefore, demanded the repeal of the law which permitted the establishment of separate schools; I demanded that all the schools should be open for all children, whether black or white. This, however, was after my schools had been stopped, but before they visited me—before they came to Pontotoc. In the controversy between Governor Alcorn and myself growing out of the question of the Mississippi University, I took occasion frequently to say that I was willing to pretermit the question, and was willing to try the system of separate schools as then established; but as there was but one college in the State of Mississippi I demanded the right of the negro to enter that college if he was prepared to do so, because there was but one institution of that sort there.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Then whatever may have been your individual opinion as to the rights of the races, you had in practice, as county superintendent, organized separate schools?

*Answer.* I had.

*Question.* You had organized no mixed schools at all?

*Answer.* No mixed schools at all.

*Question.* And any expression of sentiment which you had printed in your paper had gone no further than the discussion of the question with reference to the University?

*Answer.* It was confined simply to the University of Mississippi. The professors had put out that letter, and Governor Alcorn had indorsed it.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did you understand that your course in regard to establishing schools there met the approbation of the democratic party as well as the republicans?

*Answer.* I think I may say without hesitation that the teachers and the manner in which the schools were established met the approbation of the people generally.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You do not refer to the discussion in your paper as being generally approved?

*Answer.* Oh, no, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Your establishment of separate schools for blacks and whites met the approbation of the democratic party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and my general management of the schools met the approbation of all parties, I believe. Of course, my opinions as expressed in my paper in reference to the rights of the colored citizens, and the loyalty which I attempted to impress upon the citizens toward the Government of the United States, did not meet with the approbation of a large portion of the white people of Mississippi.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In that portion of the State of Mississippi in which you reside, is a man who entertains republican sentiments (I use the word "republican" in its party sense) at liberty to express and advocate his opinions without fear of personal violence?

*Answer.* He cannot do it. And that is the great difficulty that the republican party labors under, not only in Mississippi, but in all the Southern States. Most of the negro population who are grown were slaves a few years ago, and there are but few of them who can read. Documents which you may send never reach them. The only way in which they can possibly be reached is by oral communication, in other words, by

gathering them together. You cannot go to every man's house; that is impossible; and the only way you can reach the colored population is to collect them in a body and address speeches to them. You cannot reach them in any other way. They cannot read. Many of them would have taken my paper, and said to me that they wanted to do so, but neither themselves nor their children could read it. I said to them that it would be foolish to take the paper when they could not read it. There is but that one way in which you can reach the colored population of Mississippi or any other State; and we are excluded from meeting them in that way. It is impossible. I went round myself in 1868, and know the violence that was committed at different points where we spoke. At one place, Clark, a candidate for county superintendent, had his leg broken. At another place where I staid all night after making a political speech, they called out Dr. Kerr, and he was shot out in his own yard. At other places meetings were broken up. That was in 1868. It is a matter of impossibility now for me or any other republican to go out in that way and freely discuss the doctrines of the republican party.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Was not a candidate for Congress shot there in 1868?

*Answer.* You refer to Barry; that occurrence was later; he was shot, I think, in 1869. We had an election there for State officers, and afterward he was shot.

*Question.* It was during his canvass for Congress?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is this intolerance the general sentiment of the community there, or is it enforced by means of any organized body of men?

*Answer* To say that every democrat in the State of Mississippi would be opposed to discussion is more than I would do. I know some very liberal gentlemen there belonging to the democratic party, for whom I have a very high appreciation; but they cannot control public sentiment there. The active efforts to prevent free discussion and get up these difficulties originate, I think, with members of these societies, and they are sympathized with outside. The night that this difficulty took place in Pontotoc town, and early next morning when I was about there, I thought the sentiment of the whole people there was in favor of law and order; but before that night the sentiment changed, and from that time up to the time when I left home their sympathies were altogether with these men.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* The night that the attack was made on you, were not all the men who stood by and aided you to fight these people democrats, except Judge Pollard?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I am not sure what politics Mr. Todd claims to be: but I think that I may say they were all democrats, except Judge Pollard, whom I consider as a very weak-kneed republican; he is one of the Alcorn republicans.

*Question.* They did stand by you and took the chances of the fight as well as yourself?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Even Pollard was pretty nearly a democrat, according to your view?

*Answer.* Well, sir, he does not claim to be a democrat; but I do not recognize him as a very strong republican. He claims to be one. He is one of Alcorn's appointees.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* That was the only time you ever had occasion to call those men into active service to preserve law and order?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I was the last man that got there. I live in a rather isolated portion of the town. I was called up by these men. They were all young men except Pollard. He did not live there. He is about thirty-five or forty; the others are right young men; I suppose the oldest of them is not more than twenty-four. They were warm friends of mine—are really very friendly to me. I do not know whether they considered it particularly defending me or not. I think they disapproved of those kind of men going about. They had heard of it, and I think they disapproved of it; and I think they disapprove of it yet; for I will assure you that almost ever since this thing has occurred those young men have had to take it by turns and watch the town; for threatening messages and anonymous letters are coming in through the post office signed Ku-Klux. Those young men have continued to take it by turns and watch the town until they are completely exhausted.

*Question.* If any of your citizens there, those young men or yourself, were attacked by disguised men, would not the great bulk of the citizens, regardless of party, stand by and fight for the defense of your citizens?

*Answer.* No, sir; after mentioning over a few young men, I think I could name very few others who would fight in that way. I think there were citizens called upon that night who refused to come out; for long before these gentlemen came to me they had

gone and awakened other citizens, and many refused to come out—would not come out at all—would have nothing to do with the matter; and not a single citizen of the town came out till afterward, excepting these few young men who happened to be playing a game of euchre around at the jail. They afterward complained that their conduct had been so much disapproved of. I remember an expression made by Colonel Fountain's son, which was repeated to me. Colonel Fountain's son, Charles, who was a young man, was not at the firing because he had gone to wake his father up; when they sent for me they sent for Colonel Fountain also; Colonel Fountain told me that his son told him that the pressure of public opinion was so strong against him that he became very angry, and said that if the Ku-Klux were to come that night to Pontotoc, he did not believe he could raise eight men who would defend the town. His father then told him to go around and make inquiries. That evening I think he was better satisfied; he had found about fifteen who agreed to stand up and defend the town if these men came there again. But the older citizens, gray-headed men—men who control public opinion—were making all sorts of excuses. They said that these men did not intend to do anything wrong, that they were just on a little spree; that an organization of that sort was very necessary, and they thought it a very good institution; that they had no business to be shot on; that they considered it murder. Some men from the country came in and said they would be organized and would come in again. There was a letter sent to me; I could have brought that letter, but it was very profane and obscene in every way. It was signed "Ku-Klux." It was sent to me while I was sick. They said they would come again; that there were seven thousand and more of them. It was all great stuff; there was a great deal of profanity in it. They wrote another letter telling the young men that they had a certain object in view, which was to get me and all others out of the way; that if they would keep their beds they would not be interfered with, but that if they came out they did not intend to run away any more; that they would come strong enough the next time to whip out the town. That was a letter written to one of the young men of the town.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What effect have these proceedings had on the sense of security among people in that county?

*Answer.* Well, sir, my brother-in-law, Captain Cullins, who was a co-editor of mine, has removed about nineteen miles from where I live. When I became sick my wife sent for him. He told me (this was on Sunday) that as he was coming along he met four men, all of whom are reported to be Ku-Klux; they are suspected to be so; I do not know whether they are or not. He said that when they saw him, two of them put their hands behind them to their pistols; he also laid his hand on his pistol, and they passed, saying nothing. He knew them well, and they did not speak to him. He had heard of threats made against him. He had not gone very far before two more passed him, and went on very rapidly. He then turned out of the road and cut across the country. He did not think it was safe for him there. I myself do not suppose it would be safe for me. Sheriff Bell himself, the sheriff of the county, does not believe that he could safely go to many parts of the county. I do not apprehend that they might come openly, but I think they would assassinate. There is a feeling of entire insecurity existing there now. When I came to Cupola, on my way here, my friends thought it unsafe for me to come alone, and they insisted upon accompanying me. There were United States soldiers there, but I would not have them as a guard. I have an utter contempt for the idea of not being able to walk about without having a parcel of soldiers following me. Two of my friends accompanied me to the depot, but I did not want them to do so. I have no idea that I can safely go into certain portions of Pontotoc County; it would be impossible.

*Question.* From the observations which you have made there in your capacity as county superintendent, and from other information which you have derived while residing in that county, have you any doubt as to the existence of an organization known as Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* None in the world. They not only exist there, but they exist in other counties. I understood that they had reorganized since this difficulty, and they were riding again in the county a few nights before I left home. After this difficulty on the 13th of May, there had been no riding there until a few days before I left home.

*Question.* Are there any instances, so far as you know, in which persons belonging to the democratic party have been visited by them or threatened, except these teachers of colored schools?

*Answer.* No, sir; none.

*Question.* You stated you went to Mississippi in 1856. Where had you lived before that?

*Answer.* In Georgia; I was born there. Howell Cobb, who used to be Speaker of the House of Representatives, was my cousin.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Did not your family come originally from Virginia?

*Answer.* My father was born in Prince Edward's County, Virginia. My great-grandfather was a Huguenot, who left France at the revocation of the edict of Nantes by Louis XIV. Some of my uncles, I believe, were Kentuckians; but I think they have all died.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Repeat the names of your uncles.

*Answer.* John James was one of my uncles; also Matthew; there was a David, too.

*Question.* You spoke of a place named Cupola to which you came on your way to Washington. Is that a railroad station?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is in Lee County; it is the nearest railroad and telegraph station to Pontotoc Town. There is no railroad to Pontotoc Town.

*Question.* That is the station at which you took the train?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You spoke of friends accompanying you for your protection.

*Answer.* They were not satisfied to have me come alone. The cars leave at 10 o'clock at night. At 3 o'clock I found one of my friends on horseback, determined to come with me anyhow; and another one also came with me.

*Question.* Who is Sheriff Bell?

*Answer.* His name is William Bell. He is a gentleman born, I think, in that county.

*Question.* An old citizen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think about forty years old.

*Question.* You speak of a letter threatening that these men would come to town in force strong enough to overcome it. When was that letter received?

*Answer.* There were two letters. One was received by my family while I was sick, some time during the present month, and the other was received by a young man about the same time. I think it was probably the third or fourth, or fifth of this month.

*Question.* You say that in selecting school-teachers generally no distinction of party was made; was any distinction made in selecting teachers for the colored schools?

*Answer.* None whatever.

*Question.* What happened to be the politics of the teachers of the colored schools; what was their politics generally?

*Answer.* There were three ladies from Michigan who taught colored schools. Two of them had been there teaching the negroes, and we afterward employed them when this system went into operation. Another teacher was Mr. Lippincott, who was with Reynolds in Texas. I presume he is a republican, though I never asked him.

*Question.* Were the others all democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, except Mr. Huntington; he is a republican; he is a native of that State. But Mr. Smith, the two Mr. Seales, and Mr. Maffit were all democrats.

*Question.* It happened then that the majority of the teachers of the colored schools were democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I will state further that I rejected but three applicants, and one of them was a negro. There was only one negro teacher in the whole county. I rejected one negro applicant. I examined him twice at his own request, and he could not stand the examination. I reckon he supposed I would take him anyhow because he was a negro. Out of the whole of those teachers there was but one colored teacher.

*Question.* How is the University of Mississippi maintained?

*Answer.* By taxation upon the people, and by appropriations hitherto made of the public funds. Some $35,000 is paid to professors annually. That is what was paid when there were about three hundred students. There are now but seventy students; but the same number of professors is kept, and the same pay given to them. I have no idea that a single colored boy in Mississippi is competent to enter the college. I do not believe there is one such. Although Governor Alcorn has had an appropriation of $5,000 made to establish a colored university, I do not believe there is a single colored boy in Mississippi capable of entering the freshman class of any college unless it may be some one who has been imported; there is none native there. The education of the negroes is, however, progressing. We have boys in our county who are studying geography, and getting along pretty well in arithmetic.

*Question.* What is the colored vote of Pontotoc County?

*Answer.* The registered colored vote is 464 I think.

*Question.* What is the registered white vote?

*Answer.* I cannot answer that question as positively as I would wish, because Union County has been made from a part of our county. I think the registered white vote would be over 1,700 now.

*Question.* How was it in 1869, when you had your last election?

*Answer.* In 1869 the colored vote was a little over 500, and the white vote was 2,300, or a little over.

*Question.* Mr. Alcorn carried the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he carried that county.

*Question.* I infer there must be a considerable white republican vote there.

*Answer.* Well, there were a great many democrats who did not exactly approve the nomination of Judge Dent; and then a large number of men who were originally "old-line whigs," but who now act with the conservative or democratic party, who do not claim to be republicans at all, voted for Alcorn.

*Question.* Both the candidates professed to be republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Dent was put up by the democrats, but I believe he was a republican. In the county of Pontotoc, as it now stands, there are probably 200 white republican votes—probably more than in any other county. I have been working very hard there; and I think there are about 200 reliable white republican votes in that county.

*Question.* So far as circumstances seemed to identify them, to what class of citizens did these young men belong who were in the gang that made the attack on Pontotoc?

*Answer.* Dillard was of an obscure and poor family. In fact, almost all of us are poor now, comparatively speaking; but he was what you might call ignorant. The family of Pegues are very respectable, as much so as any in the county.

*Question.* Property-holders?

*Answer.* Very good livers—well off, having enough. Sadler's father is one of the most respectable men in that county.

*Question.* Is he a land-holder?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has a good support. Hardin is not much. Braddon was a man of not much force. I am speaking of the five whose horses were there. I do not like to speak of any others. As far as we could find out from the horses, we identified those men as being their riders upon that occasion. Two or three of these men belonged to very ignorant families. The other two were about as respectable as anybody we had there.

*Question.* So far, then, as circumstances seemed to indicate, this band was composed of both classes—the respectable class of property-holders and also others?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they came from the respectable class, and also the poor, ignorant class.

*Question.* Have you received any information which gives you an opinion of the number composing this organization in Mississippi, or in that region of Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir. I paid no attention to that anonymous letter which was written to me. I think it was mere gas. That spoke of seven thousand being around there in those counties and up that way.

*Question.* How far into the State have you heard of the organization penetrating?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have heard of its penetrating into Union, Tippah, Leake, Lee, Pontotoc, Prentiss, Alcorn, Tishemingo, Itawamba, Monroe, Lowndes, Noxubee, Oktibbeha, Choctaw, Winston, and Kemper.

*Question.* Winston is near the center of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Winston is lower down than our county. I understood they burned a public school-house in Leake County.

*Question.* Leake is about the center?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In the lower counties, where the negro population is very heavy, I do not think there are many Ku-Klux; for instance, in Holmes, Hinds, Warren, Washington, and Yazoo. The negro population is strong in Noxubee and Lowndes; the latter is the second strongest negro county in the State; but these are distant from the other negro counties. There is a tier of counties—Monroe, Noxubee, and Lowndes—all heavy negro counties, in all of which the Ku-Klux exist. Leaving those counties you would have to go one hundred and fifty miles before striking the negro population proper in any density.

*Question.* Have you heard anything of an organization called the Pale Faces?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* Have you heard any mention of the Knights of the White Camelia?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* All these bands are called Ku-Klux, are they?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. All these letters that I have spoken of were signed "Ku-Klux." They are generally understood to be Ku-Klux.

*Question.* By people of all parties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, by all classes of persons they are known as Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Does any party in Pontotoc deny the existence of such an order?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not believe that any man there who has any regard for truth would deny the existence of the order. I heard Fountain and others remark, "We have doubted it until now." You see in the case I have mentioned, there was a man who was caught in the disguise. I do not believe that another such case has occurred in the United States. There have been some who were shot, but when found the disguise had been taken off. This man was in his disguise. After that occurrence, I heard men say that they had always doubted it before.

*Question.* You have stated that you turned this party off the road that they came in by?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did any of your party follow them and appear to them afterward?

*Answer.* No, sir, because we were all on foot and they were on horses.

*Question.* I did not know but you cut across.

*Answer.* There was a cross street. These men had to go some two or three hundred yards around. Some of us did go to the cross street. About a hundred yards above where we were they were fired on again; and there is the place, probably, where Dillard was killed, for I forgot to mention that I asked him if he had been struck at the first firing and he said no; that he was struck where he fell. That is what he said to me.

*Question.* Were you with the party engaged in the second firing?

*Answer.* I scarcely think it prudent to answer that question; the committee will excuse me. I will state, however, that when these men turned and went around, some of the young men in their excitement attempted to follow them. One or two others went up the street where they would pass—say one hundred yards distant. Those horsemen had to go about three hundred yards; and when they came round, this party was fired on again by the Ku-Klux, and the firing was returned, which resulted in killing one of them.

*Question.* The whole thing, then, was calculated to impress the band with the idea that they might be pursued?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all along as they went they called out, "Come on;" "Hurry up, boys." Some of them were going slowly—those that were wounded. The way they went, in going off, they had to go nearly half a mile through the town; whereas, if they had gone as they came in, they would not have had to go more than a hundred yards to get away from the houses. Persons in the town heard them calling out to each other to hurry up, for some of them were getting along very slowly. They evidently apprehended that they would be pursued.

*Question.* Is that probably one reason why they cast off their disguises so rapidly?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I think, however, the main reason for that was that being thrown out of the direction they came, and being in a country they knew little about, as day approached, they did not like to be seen with disguises on. That is the reason, I think, they took them off.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* From the inquiries they were making, it is pretty evident they did not know your house?

*Answer.* That is a strange thing to me, because certainly some of those men—Pegues, who lived within four miles, and others—must have known where my house was. I doubt very much whether this man, Dillard, and some others knew it; but some of them must have known it. On that evening they had been talking to a Dr. Speight, and he said they asked him, "Which way is old Flournoy's?" He told them it was just across from the gullies where they were. They said, "We understand he has threatened to shoot on us if we go there; will he do it?" It seems they asked that question two or three times. He told them he did not know. He said they started for my house. In one direction it was not more than one hundred and fifty yards; but in the direction they turned to go it was at least a quarter of a mile. He hallooed to them and told them they could not get over there because of the gullies. I asked him afterward why he told them that; it seemed so accommodating that I wanted to know why he did it. He told me that he was very much scared; and of course I said no more to him. When he told them they could not get across those gullies they turned.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Does this Dr. Speight live there?

*Answer.* He has been living in the town since Christmas; he has lived longer than that in the county. When he told them that, they turned back, and a portion of them had not caught up when the firing commenced. They were not in any particular order. About twelve or fifteen had come up and others were still coming when the firing was heard, and those fellows wheeled round. The men we met at the cross street were the men who had been fired on before, because they started around and got there before the others.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did anything come to your knowledge as superintendent of education to indicate the extent of the depredations of the Ku-Klux against school-houses in Lowndes and Noxubie Counties?

*Answer.* No, sir; I only understood they had burned all the school-houses in Winston and in Leake. I do not know what they did in Noxubie. I heard they burned some there, but I do not know.

*Question.* Is it an ascertained fact of public history that school-buildings were burned in Winston and Leake Counties.

*Answer.* I think there is no doubt about Winston, and I have none about Leake. It was repeatedly published in the papers and not denied.

*Question.* In the counties which you have named as infested by Ku-Klux, does the

same sense of insecurity prevail, so far as your knowledge goes, that you have described as prevailing in Pontotoc?

*Answer.* I understand that there is a complete reign of terror there; the people are very much afraid. I heard one man say (I will not mention who he is) that he would be afraid to tell this committee all he knew. I am not afraid to tell the committee all I know, nor am I afraid of those Ku-Klux, though I think it very probable they will kill me before this thing is done.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Were you in the rebel army?

*Answer.* I was in the convention that carried the State out. I was elected to the convention as a Union man. When I got there I did everything I could to prevent the State going out. I told them that I believed it would be the death-knell of slavery whenever they went out, and that they would be whipped in the game. They said to me: "We are five or six to your one; we are going out on Thursday, and the course of men like you is calculated to encourage the North to believe that there is a division among the men of Mississippi, when you know that there is no such thing, that all will join in it. We are getting dispatches from our Senators, Davis and Brown, and from our members of Congress, assuring us that all that is necessary is for Mississippi to present a solid, united front, and follow the example of other States; that there will be no difficulty; that all the trouble and bloodshed which may come will result from the course of such factious men as you." I then called on Alcorn and Brooks, who had represented the State here in Congress, and other men, to meet me in the senate chamber. Alcorn made a speech. He had by that time got to be a pretty strong secessionist; he had reached a point where he intended to "cross the Rubicon." I was assured by five or six of the most prominent secessionists that if we would vote for the ordinance of secession they would submit that ordinance to the people of Mississippi. I had fought it to the bitter end, as is shown by the records of the convention, by my speeches, and in other ways. I had thrown every obstacle I could to prevent the State going out. There were members of the convention who believed that if the question were referred to the people of Mississippi they would reject the ordinance of secession. But that was not true. If it had been submitted there would not have been 2,000 votes against it. Yet, as it was the last hope, I agreed to vote for the ordinance of secession, with the express understanding that it should be submitted to the people for ratification. When that ordinance had been passed, I called on those men to redeem their pledges. They asked me, "Who made the pledges?" I named to them Rogers, Miller of Pontotoc, and other men. Then the reply was made to me, "Those men will no doubt agree to do it; but we are not bound by their pledges; we never pledged ourselves." I had supposed that these men represented the party that carried the State out. When it came to a vote upon the question of submitting the ordinance, Rogers, Miller, and a few others who had made the pledge did vote for submission, but others refused. I quit the convention after the forfeiture of that pledge. I went home. Each of the four delegates from our county raised companies; and they came to me to know whether I was going to raise a company, and all that sort of thing. Finally I got up a company and was mustered into service and went to Richmond; but I resigned in, I think, about nine days after I got there—before the battle of Manassas was fought—because there was a conflict in my conscience. I had been a loyal Union man all my life; had fought the battle for the Union in Georgia side by side with Cobb and Johnson. In my earlier life, when I was not of age, I was a Calhoun nullifier; but ever since I have been a man I have been uniformly a Union man, loyal to the Government of the United States. My conscience did not allow me to stay in the service, and I resigned. My resignation was accepted, and I went back home and remained there during the war. I lost nearly everything I had; but neither side burned my cotton; I put it out several times; and when the war closed it brought me nearly a dollar a pound; so that I had enough to keep me and my family comfortable. During the war I was arrested by the confederate authorities and charged with having said that I approved of negroes going off to the Yankees. I told the officer who arrested me that if I were a slave and there was no other way to get my liberty, I would run away to the Northerners. He said that I had said I thought the federal soldiers were right in burning houses. I told him that if I commanded a company of soldiers and my men were shot down from behind houses I would burn the houses down. They finally concluded they would not send me down to headquarters, and allowed me to stay at home; but I was always under suspicion during the war. I did vote for the ordinance of secession under the circumstances I have told you. I did join the confederate army and was mustered in as a captain, but resigned a week or two before the first battle of Manassas, and never took any part in support of the rebellion after that time. I have been considered to be the most extreme and radical republican in the State of Mississippi. I do not think I am a bitter man at all. I sometimes vote for democrats in spite of all that can be done, and I have a good many democratic friends. If I have a friend I go a long ways for him. But I am considered by many to be the most extreme man in the State. I do not know whether I am or not.

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 28, 1871.

WILLIAM C. FORD sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* In Meridian, Mississippi.

*Question.* What is your occupation?

*Answer.* I am a lawyer.

*Question.* How long have you lived there?

*Answer.* Since August, 1865.

*Question.* Are you practicing your profession?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State to the committee your knowledge of the manner in which the law is executed in Meridian, and the extent to which life and property are secure, giving your own view of the matter, and any facts which throw light on the inquiry.

*Answer.* According to my view, the law is as well executed there, and life and property are as secure, as in the country generally.

*Question.* Have you anything further to say on the subject?

*Answer.* I would state in connection with that remark that I do not think the criminal law of this country is executed as it should be, in any part of the country.

*Question.* Do you mean in the State of Mississippi, or the whole country?

*Answer.* The whole country, according to my observation.

*Question.* You mean the United States at large?

*Answer.* So far as my observation and knowledge extend, the whole country.

*Question.* So far as regards the State of Mississippi, to what cases do you refer as illustrating the general remark?

*Answer.* I do not refer to any particular case, or any particular locality.

*Question.* To what class of cases?

*Answer.* I refer to the administration of the criminal law generally. I do not think that in this country it is executed as it ought to be. I think too many guilty men escape punishment. That is what I mean to say.

*Question.* You mean that the penalties now provided by law are not inflicted through its administration?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* As we are inquiring in reference to the condition of the late insurrectionary States, and as you seem to have a very general view of this subject, in what respect is it that the laws are not efficiently executed? Does it arise from the inefficiency of the judiciary, or the jury system, or what does it arise from?

*Answer.* I think it arises out of the jury system, and the character of the Government, and the way in which the officers are appointed or elected. It is one of those things in regard to which you can see the result, though probably you would find some difficulty in accounting for it. In other words, as you ask me about the administration of the law, I mean to say that comparing this country with the English government, from my idea of the administration of the criminal law there, I do not consider that we execute the criminal law here, and punish the guilty, as we ought to do.

*Question.* Do you state this from actual observation in England, or from your historical studies?

*Answer.* From my historical studies, of course.

*Question.* Entirely?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The purpose of this committee is to ascertain the state of affairs existing in the late insurrectionary States; and as we desire to be practical, give, if you can, any fact which may throw light upon the general inquiry, as it relates in the first place to Mississippi.

*Answer.* Well, as I said when you first asked me that question, I think the criminal law is executed there as well as it is in this country generally, so far as my knowledge extends. When I say that, I say that it is not executed there as it ought to be.

*Question.* Have you ever witnessed any lawless proceedings in Meridian, other than what is termed the Meridian riot, which occurred in March last?

*Answer.* I do not know that I can recollect anything now outside of the usual occurrences of that kind in the place.

*Question.* In all other cases where the law has been violated, has there been the ordinary prosecution and trial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so far as I can recollect now.

*Question.* Then, according to the view which you present, we understand you to say that that portion of Mississippi in which you live, is in the normal and regular condition of civilized society, and there is nothing to interfere with the administration of justice?

*Answer.* Nothing, that I see, more than exists ordinarily in other portions of the community.

*Question.* Were you there when this disturbance occurred in March last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was present when that riot occurred.

*Question.* Give us, as briefly as you can, a connected statement of its origin and progress.

Mr. BECK. I suggest that the witness be allowed to state whether the difficulty between Price and the other man had any connection with the origin of that riot.

The CHAIRMAN. Without indicating any particular circumstance, I wish to get from the witness his view of the origin and progress of the riot.

*Answer.* Well, to go back to the origin of it, General Ames, while provisional governor of the State, appointed a man by the name of William Sturges mayor, and in doing so removed a man named William Cathey. Cathey is an old citizen—a man noted for his integrity as a man. He was of the same politics as Sturges; both were republicans. Cathey was removed, as has always been understood, at the request of the colored population. Sturges, by his general conduct as mayor, seemed to regard himself as the peculiar guardian of the colored population, and administered the duties of his office apparently in their interest more than that of the white persons. It is said by the citizens—I do not know the fact personally, but it has always been charged—that he furnished the negroes with arms; that he kept a quantity of guns and ammunition in his store; and I know from my own knowledge that very soon after the time he was mayor, up to the time he left, there was a use of fire-arms at night about the town that I never knew before. The citizens were kept constantly uneasy by the firing of guns at night; it was a very common thing. Sometimes a dozen guns would be fired in rapid succession. The firing was located to a great extent about his own house or his brother's house, where he lived. The policemen and the aldermen were appointed by him. The policemen were half, or more than half of them, colored men. Well, that thing kept the citizens uneasy. After he had been mayor a year, perhaps, more or less—I cannot recollect precisely—a man came there by the name of Price, from Sumter County, Alabama. He came there and commenced teaching school among the colored people. From that time up to the riot, on account of the conduct of the colored population, and the influence, as it was charged, (and that is my opinion,) that was exerted upon the people by Sturges and Price, their conduct so far as order was concerned was very much changed. On the 4th or 5th of last month, one of them, by the name of Clopton, had been to Jackson to see Governor Alcorn; I do not know what he went for, but soon after he came back, they called a meeting in the courthouse. I was not present at the meeting. It is said there were two or three hundred persons there. Clopton, another colored man named Warren Tyler, and one by the name of Aaron Moore, made speeches. It was said by the witnesses in court, at the trial of Clopton, Tyler, and Moore, that their speeches were of an incendiary character; that they were very violent and abusive, and that some of the speakers threatened to burn the town. The meeting adjourned about dark, or a little before, and about dark—it may have been a little after dark—the town caught fire. I reside just outside the corporation, and I did not come into town until, perhaps, half or three-quarters of an hour after the fire began. When I rode into town, I rode down to where some buildings were burning, and some goods were being taken out of the store of a young man named Hurlbutt, and the store of Theodore Sturges, a brother of William Sturges. While standing there I heard some one cursing behind me, saying he would haul Sturges's goods whether he got pay or not; that if they wanted to fight he was ready to fight; that, damn it, they had been wanting a fight long enough. I turned my horse around and looked. It was this colored man named Bill Clopton, or Bill Dennis, as he is called by some persons. He was hauling the goods. Not long after that the district attorney, Mr. Walker, came to me while I was sitting on my horse, and said from indications he had observed, and from the conduct of the colored population, he thought there was danger of an attack that night, or some trouble. I told him I had not seen anything except hearing this negro make that remark. There was nothing more said and he went off. About an hour after that, when the fire had been stopped, I was looking down the street. I saw the flash of a pistol three times. The pistol was fired off about a hundred yards from me in the street, where there were a great many persons. About twenty or thirty yards from it there was another pistol fired. I saw a negro policeman run over to where the last pistol was fired, and presently the circuit attorney, Mr. Walker, came by where I was, and the deputy sheriff was with him. He remarked to me, "I told you that I thought there would be a disturbance here to-night, and I believe it was Clopton who fired that pistol." He then told me that he thought so from the fact that while he was standing in the street with the deputy sheriff, Clopton came up to three negroes and remarked to them, "Come and get your guns; there is going to be trouble here to-night; we are going to be attacked." The freedmen were rather slow to go, and he urged them to go. They started off with him, and the deputy sheriff, as he said, remarked to him that there was one of those negroes whom he knew, a very good negro, and he thought it his duty to call him back. The district attorney told him he thought so too, and he called him back. When they called him back they asked him what Clopton had said

to him. He said that Clopton had told them to go out there and get their arms, that they were going to be attacked. A few minutes after that I went home. I saw nothing more of what occurred. I learned that Clopton was afterward knocked down by somebody, and was under arrest in the hands of the sheriff that night. Next morning, Sunday morning, I came to town. There was a great deal of excitement in town, and I was asked by some citizens to write an affidavit and have Warren Tyler and Aaron Moore arrested and prosecuted. I do not know whether they asked me to have Clopton arrested or not. A man by the name of Dunn, who heard the speeches, came to me and detailed what he heard at the meeting. Others also told me, and I wrote an affidavit charging them with incendiary language in an unlawful assembly, or rather with using such language as would bring about a riot or breach of the peace.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* On what date did you charge the crime as having been committed?
*Answer.* The 4th of March.
*Question.* Saturday?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were they arrested on your affidavit on Sunday?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think they were arrested. They were not arrested, in fact, at all, only constructively. Moore and Tyler were only constructively arrested—never actually arrested. Clopton had been put under actual arrest on Saturday night and kept under guard by the sheriff all day Sunday.
*Question.* Was the warrant issued for Moore and Tyler on Sunday?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think I included in the affidavit all three of them.
*Question.* And the warrant issued on Sunday?
*Answer.* Well, I gave it to Dunn or to the justice of the peace, Judge Bramlette; I cannot say whether it was issued on Sunday or Monday.
*Question.* Do you know whether the warrant was out before Monday, or whether it was out on Monday morning before the meeting?
*Answer.* I do not know. On Monday morning there was a notice posted around town that there would be a meeting of citizens; and when the citizens met and the meeting had been called to order, there was a committee appointed to retire and draft resolutions, expressing the feelings of the meeting with reference to the fire and the condition of the community generally. I was on that committee and went out with it, and I did not hear what took place in the meeting. We were out for probably an hour. I cannot now recollect what the resolutions were, except that they denounced any incendiary or violent language and any lawless conduct, and appointed a committee to visit Governor Alcorn and ask him to remove this man Sturges from office and give us a better man. The meeting adjourned, and at 2 o'clock Judge Bramlette, who was a justice of the peace, (he was called judge because he had formerly been a probate judge,) opened his court in the court-house, and Warren Tyler, William Clopton, or Dennis, and Aaron Moore were brought in.
*Question.* Were you present at the hearing?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I represented the State prosecutor. The district attorney was off attending court. I read the affidavit and asked them what they had to say. Clopton said that if it referred to anything he did on Saturday night, he was drunk and did not know anything he did on the Saturday of the fire. Aaron Moore said he did not know he had done anything wrong. Tyler just said, I believe, that he was not guilty. The trial had progressed about an hour. I had examined four or five witnesses. Mr. James Brantley was called as a witness. Among other things I asked him what he had heard Tyler say on that day with reference to the meeting that was held in the court-house. He said he heard Tyler say that the white people were getting scared, or something of that kind; he said he had heard Tyler say so to two or three other freedmen in his presence; and I think he said that he told him it was not so. I do not recollect what he said exactly. I then asked the defendant, Tyler, if he had any question to ask him, and I think he asked him one or two questions. I told the witness to take his seat. Tyler asked him to get up, and then he turned his face to the justice of the peace and said, "I want three colored men summoned to impeach your testimony."
*Question.* Tyler said this to the justice of the peace?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. In saying it he looked at Brantley. Brantley asked him what he said, and he repeated it. Brantley then started to him with a stick, or he picked up the city marshal's stick, which was lying on the table in front of him, and started to Tyler.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Describe the stick.
*Answer.* It was an ordinary walking-cane. The marshal reached up and caught Brantley. The marshal was sitting on my left.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did Brantley start as if to strike?

*Answer.* He took up the stick and started to him. Tyler was as far off as from here to that door, (illustrating.) The marshal reached up and caught Brantley by the arm. Tyler, when Brantley started to him, got up out of his chair, put his hand round, as I thought, to draw a pistol; but somebody then passed between me and Tyler, and I did not see him any more.

*Question.* From the manner in which Brantley took up the stick and started toward Tyler, were you impressed with the idea that he intended to attack him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* State in feet the distance that Tyler was at that moment.

*Answer.* About twelve feet.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Tyler was twelve feet from Brantley when the marshal laid his hand on Brantley and stopped him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So that Brantley never was within striking distance of Tyler?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* When the marshal laid his hand on him did Brantley cease making any effort to get closer to Tyler?

*Answer.* The marshal took hold of Brantley and stopped him. At that instant a pistol was fired from about the door leading from the court-room into the hall which led to the sheriff's office.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was that the direction in which Tyler was when you last saw him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Instantly there were from twenty-five to thirty pistol-shots, mostly in my rear. The crowd was behind me, except the officers of the court and some persons to my left. I stooped down in front of my seat until nearly all the firing was over. I then went out into the hall and into an office on the opposite side of the hall. When the firing ceased I went back into the court-room. Judge Bramlette was lying near the seat where he had been sitting; he was shot in the left temple and was dead.

*Question.* When he was sitting in his seat was his left temple toward the door you have described?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Clopton was limping across the room, apparently injured; and in the door of the sheriff's office—just inside the door—a negro policeman, named Gus Ford, was lying on his face, almost dead. I looked out from the sheriff's office and saw a large crowd running in the direction it was said that Warren Tyler went. I saw them collect around some frame buildings, and in about five minutes from the time the difficulty occurred in the court-house, I heard shooting in those buildings. A portion of the crowd came back to the court-house very soon and said they had killed Warren Tyler. On that night, between 12 and 2 o'clock, I heard the bells ringing, and looking out from my window I saw a house on fire in that part of the town where Aaron Moore lived. In about half an hour afterward I saw another fire. When I came to town next morning, I discovered that the buildings which had been burned were Aaron Moore's house and the colored Baptist church. I also learned that three other freedmen were killed during the night. One of them was named Isaac Lee; the names of the others I cannot recollect now. I know nothing of who killed them or anything about it, excepting I was told they were taken from a guard that was left around them by the sheriff.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is that the fullest account you can give of the origin and progress of that riot? If not, state anything more which may help to give your knowledge of the affair.

*Answer.* That is the outline of it, so far as I recollect now.

*Question.* Was Sturges appointed originally under the reconstruction acts before the adoption of the State constitution?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was appointed by General Ames.

*Question.* After the State was admitted, did he hold his office by appointment or by election?

*Answer.* By appointment. We have never yet had an election for city officers since the reconstruction acts were passed.

*Question.* Was he reappointed by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He held his office at that time by virtue of that appointment?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say there was a division of sentiment then as to whether Mayor Stur-

ges exercised his office in the interest of the colored people. On which side of that question did you stand—for or against the mayor?

*Answer.* I thought he exercised the office in favor of the colored people.

*Question.* You took ground against him, so far as that question was concerned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I came to that conclusion from what I had seen in his own court.

*Question.* You have stated that Price came from Sumter County, Alabama, to teach a colored school in Meridian?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the next stage in the history of the riot, as you give it, relates to a meeting called on Saturday, the 4th of March?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* For what purpose?

*Answer.* I cannot tell for what purpose the meeting was called, except from what was said and done. It seems, from the testimony of the witnesses as to the utterances of the speakers, that they were not satisfied with the administration of the law and the manner in which the officers discharged their duty, and were disposed to take the law into their own hands.

*Question.* Between the time when Price came to teach the colored school and the time of the calling of the meeting, had you no knowledge of armed men coming over from Alabama to interfere with any of the citizens of Meridian; or did you consider such a matter as having nothing to do with the origin and progress of that riot?

*Answer.* I do not think that had anything to do with the origin and progress of the riot. I will tell you, however, if you wish it, all I know about it.

*Question.* As you omitted all reference to it, I wanted to know your opinion about it.

*Answer.* I do not think the coming over of those Alabama men had anything to do with the breaking out of this riot—at least not very directly.

*Question.* What did those men come for?

*Answer.* A deputy sheriff, a negro, came over to Meridian while Price was there and arrested another negro who was indicted in Alabama, and took him and carried him back. It was understood there that that was quite offensive to this man Price, and that the negro himself was objectionable to Price. The negro lived in the same town Price came from. I do not recollect the negro's name.

*Question.* Which negro?

*Answer.* The deputy sheriff.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Was his name Aaron Kennard?

*Answer.* Yes; Aaron Kennard. It was understood that he was a democrat, (I do not know anything about it,) and that he and Price disliked each other very much, or at least Price disliked him. Some time after that, Aaron Kennard came over there again—I do not know for what. He was spending the night at the house of a colored man, and, as he charged, Price, with a number of negroes, disguised themselves, went to the house, took him out of it and gave him a very severe beating, and then let him go. The next morning he was in town and went before a justice of the peace and made an affidavit. He went to the district attorney, I think. The district attorney charged Price with going in disguise to this man's house, taking him out and beating him. The charge was made under a statute framed especially to reach the Ku-Klux. I recollect now that the district attorney showed me the affidavit.

*Question.* And that was in the affidavit?

*Answer.* That was in the affidavit. He showed me the affidavit and asked if I thought that was sufficient under the statute. Price was arrested and taken before Bramlette, a justice of the peace. They were not ready for trial, and he gave bond for his appearance at some future day—four or five days afterward. On that day a number of men from Alabama came over to Meridian, as they said, to see that Price was tried, and gave as a reason for it that they understood Price had said that if the justice of the peace, after hearing his case, committed him, he intended to resist and make the fight right there. That is what was said.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* That is what these men who came from Alabama said that Price had said?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I came up the road at two o'clock to the hotel, and I saw two or three men there with guns. I went out to my residence; and when I came back to town next morning I understood they had been out in the town with their guns and had walked about awhile. I think they were persuaded by citizens to go and put their guns away. It was charged (I know nothing of this matter) that they also arrested a negro, or it may be two negroes, at the depot where they got off; and it was said they arrested them because they recognized them as negroes who were charged with larceny over in Sumter County; and that when they went away they took the negroes with them. Price was not tried that day; the case was again postponed; and before or about the time he was to be tried I understood from Mr. Smith, (who has been ex-

amined here, I believe,) that he and the Republicans of the town addressed him a note and requested him to leave the place, and that this met with the approbation of the attorneys who were defending him, and the witnesses who were prosecuting him.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did you understand that these republicans who united with Smith were white or black men?

*Answer.* They were white men. Mr. Smith showed me the paper, but did not read it to me. He said, "We have advised him to leave here."

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you sign that request?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were you counsel on either side in that case?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You say that it met the approbation of counsel on both sides, that he should leave?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he left. That is all I know about the Alabamians coming over.

*Question.* Were there Alabamians there on the second day appointed for the hearing?

*Answer.* I do not recollect there being any Alabamians there on that day. I do not know whether he left on the day appointed for the hearing, or the day before.

*Question.* Do you know whether on the day appointed for the second hearing the prosecutor, this colored deputy, was there?

*Answer.* I think he was there.

*Question.* Do you know whether he was accompanied by any armed men?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have no recollection now of any armed men coming there in connection with this Price affair but once; and that was the first day it was set for hearing after he was arrested.

*Question.* Had this meeting called on Saturday no reference whatever to the alleged wrongs against the colored men by persons coming from Alabama and taking away colored men from Meridian?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* What was that meeting called for?

*Answer.* The meeting on Saturday?

*Question.* Yes, sir; what was it called to protest against?

*Answer.* I have no means of knowing what it was called for, except from the utterances of the speakers at the meeting.

*Question.* Did you hear them?

*Answer.* I did not hear them. I only heard the witnesses for the prosecution testify as to what they heard.

*Question.* Did the speeches have no reference at all to the proceedings by those Alabama men?

*Answer.* They may in the testimony have said something in reference to those men being taken off. I do not recollect.

*Question.* What was your understanding of the complaint made at that meeting?

*Answer.* My understanding from the utterances of the speakers, as detailed by the witnesses, was that they were dissatisfied with the administration of the laws, and the treatment of the colored people, and they did not intend to submit to it any longer, and if it were continued they would take the law into their own hands.

*Question.* "Dissatisfied with the administration of the law" by whom—not by Sturges?

*Answer.* No, not by Sturges.

*Question.* Then by whom?

*Answer.* I think that one person they complained of was the sheriff of that county.

*Question.* What did they complain of him for?

*Answer.* I have understood they complained of him because he did not give enough of them offices.

*Question.* That was not the "administration of the law"?

*Answer.* When I say "the administration of the law" I mean the conduct of the sheriff.

*Question.* Of what officer who did administer the law did they complain? Did they complain of Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have always understood it.

*Question.* At that meeting?

*Answer.* There was no witness who detailed that they spoke of Judge Bramlette by name.

*Question.* Then was there any specific complaint of inefficiency in the administration of the law, or want of protection? If so, of whom did they complain, as you understood?

*Answer.* No witnesses stated, according to my recollection, that they mentioned the

name of any officer; but they stated that the colored people were not properly treated and that some of them had been killed; and Warren Tyler, I think, proposed that they act like the Indians, and that when one of them was killed, they in retaliation go and kill two.

*Question.* Do you know to what killing they had reference?

*Answer.* I think they had reference to the killing of a man by the name of Williams.

*Question.* When and where?

*Answer.* In Lauderdale County.

*Question.* How long before?

*Answer.* Williams was killed probably some six months before.

*Question.* By open violence?

*Answer.* By persons in disguise at night.

*Question.* Did they complain that nobody had been arrested for that?

*Answer.* I do not know that they complained that nobody was arrested for that; but that was one of the things mentioned in the speeches as a grievance.

*Question.* What other occurrence was referred to?

*Answer.* I think they had reference to the shooting of a man whose name I do not recollect, near Lauderdale Springs, and the wounding of another man named Keyser.

*Question.* Colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* By open violence, or by disguised men?

*Answer.* I think by disguised men also.

*Question.* How long before did that occur?

*Answer.* During the year preceding; I do not recollect precisely.

*Question.* Were any other specific cases referred to?

*Answer.* None that I recollect.

*Question.* And according to your information, there was no reference whatever to the capture of these negroes by the men from Alabama?

*Answer.* I cannot say that there was no reference to that. I examined seven or eight witnesses; but of course I cannot recollect anything except the general tenor of their testimony.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* That was on the trial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is where I got my information; I was not present at the meeting.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* According to the information derived by you, in your position as one of the counsel who examined into this affair, do you give it now as your belief that the meeting had no reference to the acts of these men from Alabama in carrying off negroes?

*Answer.* Well, I cannot say that it had, but it may have had. I cannot tell what influences were brought to bear on the negroes or what influence moved them to call the meeting.

*Question.* How long before the meeting was called had these Alabama men been there—how many days?

*Answer.* I cannot recollect; but I think it was in January or February that Price was arrested. This meeting was in March. I cannot recollect, but think it was a month or more before.

*Question.* Had there not been a visit by these colored men to the governor before Saturday?

*Answer.* Clopton, or Dennis, returned a day or two before from a visit to the governor. He said in his speech that he had seen Governor Alcorn and had got no satisfaction from him.

*Question.* Was it with reference to these offenses against colored men that he asked protection?

*Answer.* I do not know what were the grievances he made known to Governor Alcorn: but I suppose it was with reference to the condition of affairs generally, as bearing upon the negroes.

*Question.* Were you in town on the first day fixed for the hearing before Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* I was in town at 2 o'clock in the morning, and came in again between 9 and 10.

*Question.* I am speaking of the day fixed for the hearing of the charges against Price.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was there on that day; as I said before, I came up the road at 2 o'clock, got off the cars at the depot, and I saw some armed men there.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* I saw three or four.

*Question.* Did you talk with any of them?

*Answer.* No, sir; I asked the clerk of the hotel what that meant. He said they were

men from Alabama, who had come over to be present at the trial of Price, as he understood it.

*Question.* How many were there, on that day, according to the best information you have?

*Answer.* It is difficult to say.

*Question.* Were there not forty or fifty?

*Answer.* My impression is that there were about a dozen: in that I may be very wrong

*Question.* According to your information was it on that day that the colored men were arrested and taken back?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they arrested one or more colored men at the depot when they got off, and took them back with them.

*Question.* You say that this man from Alabama, who was a deputy sheriff, was a colored man, and, as you understand, a democrat?

*Answer.* I mentioned that because I understood that was the reason why there was such an enmity existing between him and Price, and the reason Price whipped him.

*Question.* Was he, according to your knowledge, actually a deputy sheriff?

*Answer.* I never heard it contradicted, but have frequently heard it stated that it was true.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Was he a deputy sheriff of Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* By what legal regulation was it that the deputy sheriff of a county in Alabama went to execute process in the State of Mississippi? Had he a requisition from the governor?

*Answer.* No, sir; not as I understand it. Of course there was no legal authority for it.

*Question.* Then he was really a trespasser, according to the letter of the law, so far as that matter was concerned?

*Answer.* Looking at the naked letter of the law, I suppose he would be.

*Question.* Is it usual at all in your county for deputy sheriffs from Alabama to come over and exercise their functions in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I understand that the thing is frequently done.

*Question.* Have you known it to be done in Meridian?

*Answer.* I think since I have lived there it has been done once: but I cannot recollect the name of the party.

*Question.* Do you know the names of those men who came from Alabama?

*Answer.* In that Price affair?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you know who any of them were?

*Answer.* There was one man, I understood, by the name of Reynolds: and it is said he was there at the time of the riot. I know that man when I see him, but have only learned his name since the thing occurred.

*Question.* Do you know who any of the others were?

*Answer.* No, sir. One of them by the name of Murphy was charged on the night of the riot with committing rape on a negro. He was arrested, put in jail, tried at the next court, and sent to the penitentiary, where he now is. It is charged that he came there that night; but whether there is any proof of it I do not know: nor do I know it has ever been proved that he came from Alabama.

*Question.* Then according to your information some twelve or fifteen men came with arms from Alabama in company with this deputy sheriff to attend this hearing?

*Answer.* About twelve. That is my opinion: it is not based on anything very certain, because I have no means of knowing.

*Question.* Is such an occurrence usual in the administration of justice in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir, it is not usual; and it was disapproved by all good citizens of the place.

*Question.* Were any of those men arrested for inciting to riot, or endangering the peace of the citizens of Meridian?

*Answer.* They were not.

*Question.* None of them?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did any of the citizens who applied to you as counsel for the arrest of Tyler, Clopton, and Moore, make any application to have these armed Alabamians arrested for endangering the peace of Meridian?

*Answer.* Well, I cannot recollect now. I could not name the citizens who spoke to me about it. There was a great deal of excitement.

*Question.* Did any excitement follow the visit of the Alabamians?

*Answer.* There was a great deal of excitement in town on that day, and a great deal

of indignation on the part of a good many peaceable, law-abiding citizens of the town that those men should come there with guns in their hands.

*Question.* Were they understood to be members of the Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* I cannot say about that.

*Question.* You have stated what the general impression was about a great many things; what was it on that subject?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know of anybody who understood them to be members of the Ku-Klux organization.

*Question.* What is your own belief about it?

*Answer.* I cannot say they were members of the Ku-Klux organization.

*Question.* Have you a belief on that subject?

*Answer.* No, sir, I cannot say that I have a belief.

*Question.* You know whether you do or do not think that they were members of that organization.

*Answer.* I have no evidence that they were.

*Question.* Have you any opinion about it?

*Answer.* No, sir, I have no opinion about it.

*Question.* Have you any knowledge of the existence of that organization there?

*Answer.* No, sir, except mere hearsay.

*Question.* Was there any impression on either side as to those men being Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* The colored people charged that they were.

*Question.* The charge made by them at that time was, that these men who came from Alabama were members of the same disguised organization that had killed Williams; was not that their charge?

*Answer.* Well, they charged generally that these men were Ku-Klux. As I understood, the colored people made that charge, or at least some of them did.

*Question.* Had the charge that these men were Ku-Klux nothing to do with the calling of the meeting of the colored people on Saturday?

*Answer.* Not that I know of. I do not see that it had anything to do with it—at least anything directly to do with it.

*Question.* You think it had not?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that it had.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Do you say that these Alabama men took two colored men from Meridian and carried them back with them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The men they took with them were charged with having committed a larceny over there. I said one or two men were taken back; that is what was said—I never saw it—that they did arrest one or two men and take them back to Alabama.

*Question.* You suppose that to be true?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose so; I have heard it.

*Question.* Do you understand that those men coming from Alabama had, or professed to have, any warrant or process whatever?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard that they had.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you follow that affair sufficiently to know whether there was actually any charge against the colored men for larceny?

*Answer.* I heard the question asked afterward; and I heard that they were charged with having committed a larceny. I cannot say who stated it—whether I saw it in a newspaper, or whether it was stated by some individual from Alabama.

*Question.* Were they ever tried?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir.

*Question.* How far is the county town of Sumter County from Meridian?

*Answer.* About thirty-six miles.

*Question.* There is railroad communication between them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You are in frequent intercourse with the members of the bar of that county, are you not?

*Answer.* I am with one or two of them. I cannot say frequent, but occasional intercourse.

*Question.* This affair having occurred and occasioned excitement in your town, did you never take interest enough to inquire whether the colored men thus violently carried off had been tried?

*Answer.* Well, I did not myself.

*Question.* Have you any knowledge as to whether they have been tried or not?

*Answer.* I have no knowledge about it, except that I asked the question of somebody (I cannot state whether it was a gentleman from Alabama, or who it was) if it was true that these men were charged with larceny, and according to my recollection, the answer was made that it was.

*Question.* When you say "charged," do you mean that there was any official information made against them—an affidavit and process; or do you mean simply the charge of those men that took them away?

*Answer.* My understanding was not that it was an official charge.

*Question.* You understood it was simply a charge made by the men who took them away?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You did not mean to convey the idea that the men were arrested in pursuance of any legal proceeding in Alabama?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* That, then, was another unlawful seizure of colored men, and the unlawful carrying of them from Mississippi to Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; of course, as a naked question of law, it would be unlawful.

*Question.* And the colored men charged that that was done by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that occurred not more than a week or ten days before this meeting on Saturday?

*Answer.* As to the date it is a mere matter of opinion; I cannot recollect. It was about a month, I think.

*Question.* Then you still think, although the other occurrences which were complained of had occurred six months or more before, that this affair had nothing to do with the calling of the meeting on Saturday?

*Answer.* Well, I do not think (I may be mistaken) that the witnesses who detailed what they heard the speakers say said that that was any part of their grievances, though it may have been, and the witnesses may have stated so.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Were any of these Alabamians at that fire?

*Answer.* No, sir, not that I know of, unless they happened to be in town.

*Question.* Were any of them at the riot? If so, tell their names.

*Answer.* I have understood that a number of them came on Monday night, and were there during at least a portion of the night. They came in on the train about 10 o'clock at night, and left at 2 o'clock the same night; or rather, I think, the train left at half past two.

*Question.* Was or was not that the night the church was burned?

*Answer.* That was the night the church was burned, and the night Aaron Moore's house was burned.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* But after the riot was over?

*Answer.* After the riot was over.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* The fire, you say, occurred on Saturday night. About what time on Saturday night was the alarm given?

*Answer.* Well, it was very soon after dark.

*Question.* What time had the meeting of the colored people on Saturday adjourned?

*Answer.* From all the information I have it was about sundown.

*Question.* At that season of the year there would probably be an hour intervening between that and the time when the fire occurred?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, about an hour.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* I wish you to state what Alabamians you knew to be in town on Monday night, what church was burned, what church was offensive or not offensive to the people of that town, and what had been done in that church.

*Answer.* I have stated it was understood there were some Alabamians in town that night. The colored Baptist church was burned between 12 and 2 o'clock. That church had been used for several years, I think, by the teachers of the colored schools.

*Question.* What other churches are there in town?

*Answer.* About seventy-five or one hundred yards from it is the colored Methodist church. That has been used all the time, as is understood, for the meeting of the Loyal League and for the holding of the colored people's political meetings, except this one, which they held in the court-house.

*Question.* State in which church meetings offensive to the people of Meridian had been held?

*Answer.* They were held in the colored Methodist church, as I have stated.

*Question.* Was there any feeling in Meridian against the colored Baptist church?

*Answer.* I never heard any expressed.

*Question.* State, if you feel free to do so, who you think burned that Baptist church.

*Answer.* I think the Baptist church was burned by those men who came over from

Alabama, or by men who were not acquainted with the town, or the feeling of the people in the town.

*Question.* Why do you say that?

*Answer.* I say that because, if the people of Meridian had been disposed to burn either church, they would have burned the Methodist church.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What became of those two negroes who were taken over to Alabama? Did they ever get back?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of them since?

*Answer.* I never have heard of them since. I never have heard anything said of them except what I have stated.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where did the fire on Saturday evening originate?

*Answer.* From what I saw and from what I have been told, it originated in the second story of Theodore Sturges's store-room, and in that part of the store adjoining the store of Hurlbutt & Brother.

*Question.* Was it an accidental fire, or was there a charge that it was an incendiary fire?

*Answer.* It has been charged, and is generally believed that it was an incendiary fire.

*Question.* Was Theodore Sturges the mayor?

*Answer.* He was the brother of William Sturges, the mayor.

*Question.* You say it was believed to have been an incendiary fire?

*Answer.* It has been so charged, and is generally believed.

*Question.* Has it been the subject of dispute between the white and black population as to how the fire occurred?

*Answer.* I cannot say about that.

*Question.* Was there any charge against anybody specifically for causing that fire?

*Answer.* It is said that Clopton on the night of the fire said that "the white people had set the town on fire, and now the town might burn up."

*Question.* My object in putting that question was to ascertain whether anybody was arrested for causing the fire, or whether the hearing which came off on Monday was exclusively upon a charge of uttering in the meeting of the Saturday night previous these expressions calculated to incite to riot?

*Answer.* Nobody was arrested on a charge of setting the town on fire; but a committee was appointed on Monday to investigate that subject; and at that meeting, or the one on the next day, a committee was also appointed to investigate the facts in relation to the burning of Aaron Moore's house and the church; and resolutions were introduced and passed condemning the burning of the church, and of Aaron Moore's house.

*Question.* At whose instance was that committee raised?

*Answer.* At the instance of the white people who held the meeting. I believe there were some colored people at the meeting; I do not know.

*Question.* Did that committee come to any conclusion charging anybody with starting the fire of Saturday night?

*Answer.* One committee man, Mr. Steel, told me that from all the evidence before the committee they believed the house was set on fire.

*Question.* By whom?

*Answer.* They believed it was set on fire by Sturges himself.

*Question.* Did they so report?

*Answer.* No, sir; they did not so report. They reported that it was set on fire, but they did not state by whom.

*Question.* Was Sturges arrested?

*Answer.* He had gone. That committee was appointed on Monday, and reported on Tuesday or Wednesday. There were three meetings held—one on Monday, one on Tuesday, and one on Wednesday.

*Question.* Has Sturges ever been indicted?

*Answer.* No, sir; not to my knowledge.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* Which Sturges was this?

*Answer.* William Sturges, the mayor.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You say that the belief was that it was set on fire by Sturges; which of them?

*Answer.* I will state this about that: it is the general belief of the people of Meridian—it was at the time, and is now, so far as I know——

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Do you mean the people, white and black?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not include the black people—that that house was set on fire, and that the proprietors of it had knowledge of the fact.

*Question.* Who were the proprietors?

*Answer.* Well, Theodore Sturges. William Sturges was generally regarded as one of the proprietors, though he acted as clerk.

*Question.* Was it insured?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were the goods insured for more than their value?

*Answer.* It is said they were insured to their full value, and probably a little more—to their full value at least. I have always understood that the house and goods were insured, (of course I cannot be certain about that,) for about $10,000, perhaps $11,000; and I have heard a good many citizens say that they did not think the house and stock were worth more than $8,000 at the highest.

*Question.* Did others put it up at the full valuation?

*Answer.* I have never heard anybody put it up to its full valuation.

*Question.* Has the insurance company contested the liability?

*Answer.* I have understood that they have not paid it.

*Question.* When you heard this man Dennis speaking about hauling the goods of Sturges, did you attach any significance to that as connected with this riot, or with the origin of the fire?

*Answer.* I thought it was a very unusual remark.

*Question.* Did it show anything more than his friendship for Sturges?

*Answer.* His remark that he was ready for the fight if they wanted to fight, made, of course, an impression upon my mind.

*Question.* I thought it was the other part of the remark that you attached importance to—the remark that he would haul away the goods, even if he did not get pay for it?

*Answer.* That remark of itself would not have attracted my attention particularly.

*Question.* Were the goods saved?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose they were.

*Question.* They were not burned then?

*Answer.* A portion of them was saved—a portion of the stock of Sturges and Hurlbutt.

*Question.* Recurring to the subject of the trial, I have understood you to say that when this difficulty in the court-house originated, you were acting as counsel for the prosecution? How far was Tyler from you at the time when Brantley started toward him with the cane?

*Answer.* Well, he was about eight or ten feet.

*Question.* Was anybody between you and him?

*Answer.* At the time he started there was not.

*Question.* You saw him reach to his pocket as if for a pistol when Brantley started toward him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And immediately after the shot was fired, were you in such a position as to see whether Tyler fired that shot or not?

*Answer.* No, sir; a gentleman by the name of Shedd was sitting on my right; he stepped forward to catch Brantley and assist the marshal; and he passed between me and Tyler. I do not know that I would have seen Tyler at any rate; my attention may have been attracted to Brantley and the marshal.

*Question.* You said you saw the shot fired from the direction of the door leading to the sheriff's office; how far was that door from where Tyler was?

*Answer.* About ten or twelve feet from Tyler.

*Question.* And in the same direction that Tyler was from you, but ten or twelve feet further away?

*Answer.* It was further away. Tyler was not exactly on a line between me and the door.

*Question.* When you say that the shot came from the direction of the door, do you mean to convey the impression that Tyler fired that shot?

*Answer.* That is what I think.

*Question.* Had the marshal got hold of him?

*Answer.* The marshal had hold of Brantley, the witness.

*Question.* Had any one seized hold of Tyler?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were you not in such a position that after seeing Tyler put his hand in his pocket as if for a pistol, if he had raised his arm to shoot, you would have seen him?

*Answer.* If this gentleman had not passed between him and me, and I had kept my eyes in that direction, I would have seen him; but the catching hold of the witness by the marshal near to me attracted my attention as well as the movement of Tyler; and as I have said, immediately after the marshal caught hold of the witness, a gen-

tleman by the name of Shedd passed between me and Tyler to catch hold of the witness also; and he did it.

*Question.* Just then you heard the shot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In passing between you and the witness, did Shedd also pass between you and Tyler?

*Answer.* I meant to say that he passed between me and Tyler.

*Question.* The witness was beyond Tyler?

*Answer.* No, sir; the witness was to my left, and Tyler was in front, a little to my right.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Where was the justice of the peace?

*Answer.* Almost directly in front of me.

*Question.* How far from you?

*Answer.* About eight feet.

*Question.* An indiscriminate firing followed the first shot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say that after that occurrence three colored men were arrested and put in the custody of the sheriff and his officers. What were they arrested for?

*Answer.* I do not know. I understood that the sheriff issued an order to have arms taken away from all persons; why these three colored men were arrested I do not know.

*Question.* Those three men who were arrested were all killed, were they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They were placed in the charge of the sheriff and his deputies?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It was known who those deputies were?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was any inquiry made as to how and by whom those three colored men were gotten out of the custody of the officers and killed?

*Answer.* The whole matter of the riot, and everything in connection with it, was investigated by the circuit judge of the district, Judge Leachman, immediately after the riot, upon the special request, as I understood, of Governor Alcorn, who sent over an attorney to represent the State; and the circuit attorney assisted him in doing so. The whole matter was investigated.

*Question.* You mean the whole matter of the riot occurring on Monday afternoon; but did that investigation include the inquiry as to how those three colored men had been killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did the investigation disclose who had killed them?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think not.

*Question.* What account did the deputies give as to the manner in which the men had got out of their custody?

*Answer.* I think, from reading the testimony, that the deputy stated that he left them in the hands of some persons, as a guard; and I think that guard stated that they left them in the hands of some other persons; I do not recollect.

*Question.* Did it appear in the investigation who actually took them out of the custody of the officers, whoever the officers may have been?

*Answer.* I think it appeared that they were taken out of the hands of those who had them in charge by some persons unknown; but I do not recollect who it was that had them.

*Question.* Were those unknown persons any of these Alabamians who came in on Monday night?

*Answer.* They were unknown persons; I cannot say they were Alabamians.

*Question.* You do not know who they were?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You had no knowledge of who they were?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* With which party do you act there?

*Answer.* When I vote, I act with the democratic party.

*Question.* Were these men, who called upon you to prosecute the negroes for the meeting held on Saturday, members of that party, or were any republicans?

*Answer.* I do not think any of them were republicans; I think they were all democrats.

*Question.* Did this question assume a political aspect and arouse heat as a party question?

*Answer.* I cannot say that it assumed a party aspect. There was a great deal of excitement, and it is generally believed that it was brought about by the conduct of Sturges and Price.

*Question.* Altogether?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, altogether.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* When you say "generally believed," do you mean believed by both whites and blacks?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not speak with reference to the blacks.
*Question.* Do you mean believed by the democrats?
*Answer.* By the white people generally; I do not know that they are all democrats.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is there any public sentiment on the subject among the blacks there?
*Answer.* Well, from my understanding, some of the colored people think that Clopton and Tyler were very bad negroes, and they condemn their conduct at the riot and preceding the riot.
*Question.* Did any portion of the population of that town justify the conduct of those men in coming over from Alabama?
*Answer.* Well, sir, I have never heard a single man in the town justify it. There may be men who justify it, but I have never heard them.
*Question.* Did you hear any of them excuse it?
*Answer.* Well, I may have heard some men rather excuse it.
*Question.* On what ground?
*Answer.* Well, I do not know that I can state the ground—only this: they understood that Price had stated to his attorneys that if, at the examination, he was held to bail, he would resist, and I think it was generally understood, where he came from, that he was rather a brave, determined man. That is the only reason I have heard given for it.
*Question.* Then the original mistake was when counsel on both sides consented that a man charged with a criminal offense should run away from investigation, instead of retaining him and giving him justice, whether he was guilty or innocent?
*Answer.* I did not state that it was a mistake.
*Question.* Was not that the beginning of the mistake, so far as the legal proceedings were concerned?
*Answer.* Of course it was the duty of the State to prosecute the man; but I understood the republicans themselves brought that thing about.
*Question.* I understood you to say that both parties, the counsel for Price and also the prosecuting officers, concurred in advising him to leave?
*Answer.* I understood that they consented to it, after the republicans advised it.
*Question.* Whenever it may have been, there was consent given?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they thought it best for the community, for fear of a difficulty.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* You say that after Sturges became mayor and Price came there, the negroes behaved badly; what did they do?
*Answer.* Well, as I said before, I do not think there was a night passed that they were not firing guns all night at intervals.
*Question.* Did they shoot anybody?
*Answer.* I have not heard of anybody being shot, except one or two men who were shot on the night of the fire, as they were going to the fire.
*Question.* Did anybody apprehend that there was any design on the part of the negroes to kill anybody?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was there any attack by them on anybody?
*Answer.* There was a good deal of uneasiness expressed on account of the firing of guns every night and the general demeanor of the negroes.
*Question.* I want to get at something specific.
*Answer.* I will state one specific act. They collected together one night armed (so it is said; I did not see them) and went to the house of one of the citizens, collected round his house, shouted, hallooed, and sang some very obnoxious songs; I do not recollect what they were.
*Question.* "Old John Brown?"
*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not recollect the songs. Their general conduct in marching through the streets that night alarmed some other citizens whom I have heard speak of it.
*Question.* On any occasion did they ever show any desire or disposition to harm anybody?
*Answer.* Of course I can only give my opinion about it. My opinion is that the negro population, if left alone, with no improper influences brought to bear upon them, are a very harmless and a very quiet race of people. But when improper influence is brought to bear upon them, when bad men exert a bad influence upon them, they can be made of course to do unlawful things.

*Question.* Did they ever in any instance make any attack upon any one, or endeavor to do any person any harm or injury?

*Answer.* Since you have mentioned that, it brings to my mind one case of that kind.

*Question.* Let us have the exact facts.

*Answer.* Some time before the fire two young men, Hodges and Williams, were walking along. This is all hearsay.

*Question.* It is something that you believe to be true?

*Answer.* I have never heard it contradicted. They were walking through a portion of the town where the colored people live.

*Question.* These were white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Some of the colored people ran out and arrested them, being themselves armed, (and I have understood that this man Tyler was among them,) and threatened to kill them, charging them with being Ku-Klux; and they would have done it, had not an old negro come up and interfered and begged them to desist, and told these young men to run. They ran, and the negroes fired at them, I think, as they ran.

*Question.* They were not hurt?

*Answer.* No, sir. They were walking along the public street at the time, as I understood.

*Question.* Was anybody ever prosecuted for this attack upon Hodges and Williams?

*Answer.* No, sir; nobody was prosecuted for that.

*Question.* Did these young men ever make any complaint to anybody?

*Answer.* They told it; everybody in town heard of it, I suppose.

*Question.* Do you mean to say to this committee that when a parcel of negroes set upon two white men and undertake to take their lives by firing upon them, such an occurrence can pass by in your town without being prosecuted?

*Answer.* Well, there were some reasons which I do not know for their not being prosecuted.

*Question.* You have told us that everything is peaceable and quiet in your community; that the laws can be executed there, and are executed. Do you mean to say that if a band of negroes made an assault and undertook to take the lives of two white men, no attention would be paid to it, and no legal proceedings be instituted?

*Answer.* None were taken in that case.

*Question.* State whether you believe such a thing could be?

*Answer.* I do not know whether it was so or not.

*Question.* Do you believe the main fact to have been true—that the negroes undertook to take the lives of those two men and fired upon them?

*Answer.* The young men were told to run; they were fired upon after they started. I do not know whether the negroes attempted to kill them or not.

*Question.* Do you believe that those two white men, or any other two white men, would allow any such thing as that to pass without being prosecuted?

*Answer.* I will state what I have understood in reference to that matter. Sturges was mayor, and one of the young men was clerk in the house adjoining him with a young man who was a relative of Sturges; and I think that the matter was smothered up for reasons I do not altogether know.

*Question.* Would there have been any difficulty in your town or county in prosecuting and punishing a negro for an assault with intent to kill?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you believe it to be true that two white men were assaulted by a band of negroes, and an attempt made to take their lives, and yet that they made no movement for a prosecution?

*Answer.* I suppose the main fact was true; whether all the facts detailed were true or not I do not pretend to know.

*Question.* Conceding the account to be true that there was an assault on these men, an attempt to take their lives, how did it happen that no proceedings were taken to redress the matter by law?

*Answer.* Well, I gave you the reason, as I understood, why it was not done.

*Question.* But it is a very flimsy reason.

*Answer.* That is the reason as I understood it; I do not know whether it is a good one or not.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What was the reason you gave?

*Answer.* One of the young men, Hodges, was in the employ of young Hurlbutt in the house next door to Sturges, and his employer was Sturges's relative. Hodges and Williams were together; and I understood at the time that the matter was suppressed without a prosecution for some reason; I did not exactly know what the reason was; I never inquired into it particularly.

By Mr. POLAND:

*Question.* This matter was publicly known, was it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You are a lawyer and live in a community where this assault was committed, this attempt to take the lives of two men, and yet you did not do anything about it?

*Answer.* Well, it was no particular concern of mine.

*Question.* Whether the men were killed or not?

*Answer.* Of course I am concerned as a citizen of the community; but I suppose it was the business of the mayor, the men who were officers, to have that matter investigated, and not the business of private citizens.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What was it alleged these young men were doing, or had done, to provoke this assault?

*Answer.* I understood they were walking along the street in that part of the town where the colored people live.

*Question.* And were doing nothing at all—had done nothing?

*Answer.* I understood they were just simply walking along the street. All I have stated about that matter is hearsay.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* You stated, as I understood, that your community was not disturbed by any bad influences—that your white and black people got along very harmoniously together?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did I understand you to say that there is no bad feeling between the great mass of the races?

*Answer.* None at all in our community, unless improper influences are brought to bear on the colored population.

*Question.* State, as specifically as you can, what manner of man Sturges, the mayor, was: whether or not even the republicans themselves had not applied for his removal, because of his bad influence on the colored people. Give us his general character as a preserver of the peace, and also state whether there was any application by republicans for his removal, and if so, for what cause.

*Answer.* His general character as a man was bad. I understood before he left there that some of the republicans had made application, or intended making application, to have him removed and some other person appointed in his place.

*Question.* State whether it was his duty, by law, to prevent the indiscriminate shooting of fire-arms about on the streets, and whether he carried out that law so far as the negroes were concerned.

*Answer.* There was an ordinance of the town against it, and there was a standing complaint in reference to it. But the ordinance was never executed, and the firing continued up to the time he left the place.

*Question.* Was it the duty of the mayor to see that the ordinance was enforced?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is generally understood that that is the duty of such officers.

*Question.* Was it regarded as part of Sturges's object to keep on such terms with the colored men that he could control them in his own interest for his own reëlection—to keep him in his place?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was generally understood and believed that his object was to ingratiate himself with the colored people and get their votes and their influence.

*Question.* Was it supposed to be for that reason that he winked at their illegal acts—their shooting and general misconduct?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. About one-half of his policemen were colored men.

*Question.* How long had that man Price been in Meridian before the time of the riot?

*Answer.* I think he had been there about six months.

*Question.* Do you know whether he was aspiring for public position and expecting to get the negro vote?

*Answer.* He was a very influential man among the negroes, and he was never known to associate with anybody else. It is said he was never seen upon the streets except in company with a negro. I never saw him upon the streets without his having a negro in company with him. I never saw him but two or three times during the whole time he was there.

*Question.* Was it said that he was aspiring for political position?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know anything about his inducing a number of negroes to come there for any political purpose?

*Answer.* It is said he brought a considerable number of negroes there from Sumter County, Alabama, and was active in getting them places on farms and inducing them to come to the city.

*Question.* Was his purpose in so doing ever indicated; I mean any personal purpose of his own?

*Answer.* I do not know of any particular act that he did. We have never had an election there since the reconstruction acts were passed; I mean any city election.

*Question.* Do you know whether Price and the negro man, Aaron Kennard, whom you have spoken of, had been members of the same Loyal League in Alabama?

*Answer.* I understood they had been at one time.

*Question.* State what was the cause of the misunderstanding between them, as you heard it.

*Answer.* I never heard it. I do not know the cause; I never heard of any cause.

*Question.* Did you never hear of any quarrel between them while members of the same league in Alabama?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have understood that Price disliked Aaron Kennard very much, because he belonged to a different political party; but what caused the rupture I do not know.

*Question.* How many men went with Price in disguise at the time Aaron Kennard was whipped?

*Answer.* I have understood that there were half a dozen or more.

*Question.* Disguised as Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Disguised as Ku-Klux.

*Question.* How were they said to have been disguised?

*Answer.* I never heard the disguise described. I think it was understood that the Ku-Klux were generally men in disguise.

*Question.* Are not all men who commit offenses in disguise called Ku Klux in your country?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are called Ku-Klux.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Do you understand that all men who are disguised are disguised as Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That would be owing to the purpose for which the disguise was used. I do not understand that there is any peculiar disguise for the Ku Klux.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* All disguised men are considered Ku-Klux in your community?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And these men were disguised?

*Answer.* That was the charge.

*Question.* And they did, while so disguised, in the night, attack this man Aaron Kennard?

*Answer.* I learned that from the district attorney, who showed me the affidavit containing the charge. The charge was made under the statute passed for the punishment of that crime.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Do you understand that they whipped or beat him?

*Answer.* I do not know whether he was whipped or beaten.

*Question.* Was he scourged?

*Answer.* I do not know what signification you give to the term; I have used the word "beaten" heretofore.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What was the general character of Price in your community?

*Answer.* His general character was that of a very bad man, and a man whose only associates were the colored people.

*Question.* Do you know whether or not an application for the removal of your mayor had been made to the governor before this speaking on the Saturday preceding the riot, and whether those men were trying to keep him in office as their friend?

*Answer.* You mean the colored people?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* I have always understood that the colored people opposed every movement gotten up for the removal of Sturgos, and were very anxious he should be returned as mayor.

*Question.* Do you know whether, before the meeting on Saturday, they had been advised that application had been made to the governor for his removal?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they had been or not.

*Question.* On the night of the fire, was it charged that some of the bad negroes shot at the white men who were trying to put out the fire?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: it is said (and some witnesses have stated that fact in the investigation) that a young man by the name of Ray was shot at and struck with one or two balls as he was going to or from the fire, I do not recollect which; and I think that other persons besides young Ray were shot at.

*Question.* Was it charged that they were shot at by negroes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; shot at by negroes.

*Question.* Was it charged that men like Clopton and that class of bad negroes were discouraging their colored brethren from aiding in putting out the fire?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I heard one or two men state that Clopton came up to where some colored men were at work in saving some goods, and ordered them away, and told them not to assist; that the town was set afire, and that the white people did it, and "Damn it, let the town burn." He did, as I understood, make a portion of them desist from rolling out the goods and leave.

*Question.* At previous fires had not the negro population generally aided very freely in extinguishing them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; as a general thing they rendered very good service. I noticed them on one occasion particularly. A great many of them rendered very good service in trying to save goods and put out the fire.

*Question.* A public meeting of the citizens was held on Monday morning after the fire, and after the incendiary speeches of Saturday; and you were asked awhile ago by the chairman whether any meeting was held when the Alabamians came over. Had these Alabamians done anything or made any speeches, so far as you knew or heard?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* There was indignation at their being there with arms?

*Answer.* There was a great deal of indignation on the part of the citizens.

*Question.* But nothing to call out a public meeting?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They had done nothing and said nothing, so far as you knew or heard?

*Answer.* Nothing, except what I have stated.

*Question.* They believed Price would not submit to a prosecution for having whipped this other man?

*Answer.* That was the pretext they had, as I understood, for going there; that Price said he would resist if he were held to bail or sent to jail.

*Question.* Was it not said on the morning of the trial that the sheriff had disarmed Warren Tyler before he took him into court?

*Answer.* I have heard it said that the sheriff disarmed him; I do not know whether it was the fact or not.

*Question.* You did not see the sheriff disarm him?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Was that currently reported?

*Answer.* I heard it; I do not know whether it was currently reported or not.

*Question.* Do you know whether or not during the time of the trial this man Sturges came in to where Tyler was and had a conversation with him?

*Answer.* After the court opened, and before the investigation commenced, Sturges came into the court-room, and took a seat by Warren Tyler. He wrote something in a blank-book and handed it to Tyler, and had a conversation with him. After the trial began, Tyler went out into one of the rooms adjoining the court-house, across the hall, along with Aaron Moore, another defendant; and it is said that Sturges went out with them. Sturges disappeared about that time, and I saw him no more.

*Question.* Was Warren Tyler armed when he returned to the court-room?

*Answer.* After the trial had progressed some time, Tyler and Moore went out again. I thought it unusual, and asked the justice of the peace to have them brought back and kept there. When they came back again, a Mr. Evans, who was sitting behind me, said to me, "Warren Tyler has a pistol." I did not see the pistol, however.

*Question.* Is it your opinion, from all the facts you have heard and know, that he was furnished with the pistol after the trial began?

*Answer.* From all I can learn, my opinion is that he was furnished with a pistol, or procured one, after the trial began.

*Question.* Is it your opinion, from all the facts you have heard, that the pistol was furnished to him by Sturges?

*Answer.* My opinion would only be founded on the fact that it was said Sturges went out with him. He was taking a great interest in the trial and came in and had a consultation with him; wrote questions in a book, and handed the book to Tyler. Tyler, in examining the witnesses, after I would get through with them, would refer to his book when he was asking questions. From the interest Sturges took in the trial, I believe that if Tyler was furnished with a pistol, it was furnished to him by Sturges.

*Question.* And your opinion is that he was furnished with a pistol after the trial began; that is your best impression?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; though I did not see the pistol. The gentleman who was sitting behind me told me that Tyler had a pistol when he returned.

*Question.* Did not this shooting begin before you had developed all your testimony?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we had not developed, I think, half of it. I had a great many witnesses to examine that had not been called.

*Question.* When, in your answer to the chairman, you spoke of the facts that had been developed, you spoke only of such as had been developed up to the time the shooting began?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What the other witnesses would have developed in regard to the Alabamians and others you do not know?

*Answer.* No, sir; there were some witnesses who had not been examined, and whose testimony, if it was what they had stated to me, was very important in reference to some of the defendants.

*Question.* You have said something about the killing of a man named Joe Williams. Who was Joe Williams; when and where was he killed; what sort of a man was he?

*Answer.* Joe Williams was a colored man who was a justice of the peace, and I think he was a member of the board of police, though in that I may be mistaken. He lived at Toomsuba, a station about twelve miles east of Meridian. He was regarded by the white people there, and a large portion of the black people, as being a very bad man. At the time he was killed there were two indictments pending against him—one for shooting a colored man, and the other, I think, (I never read the indictment,) for authorizing some colored man to go and search for a stolen pig in some other colored men's houses, without any warrant or written authority.

*Question.* So that he was a man who, from his past conduct, was obnoxious to the blacks as well as the whites?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* This killing occurred some six months before?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I learned these facts from having been employed as an attorney to defend him on those two indictments. I was employed by him directly after the indictments were found; and one of the indictments I never read.

*Question.* You spoke something about an outrage at Lauderdale Springs, but you did not explain it. What was that?

*Answer.* A year and a half or two years ago, there was a negro man killed there—I think by persons in disguise. The particular facts in connection with it I do not now recollect.

*Question.* In stating it before you did not give the facts. State them now, if you recollect them.

*Answer.* I do not recollect the facts; but I recollect the killing. It was a year and a half or two years ago.

*Question.* You spoke also of a man named Keyser, without giving the facts.

*Answer.* Keyser, at the same time, was simply wounded; he was not killed.

*Question.* Was this at Lauderdale Springs also?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; both happened about Lauderdale Springs at the same time. I may be mistaken about a negro man being killed at the time Keyser was wounded; but I think there was a negro man killed at the same time by persons in disguise.

*Question.* The Keyser affair and the Lauderdale Springs affair were the same thing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Keyser was wounded at the same time.

*Question.* What was the general character of those men, Clopton and Tyler?

*Answer.* Their general character was that of turbulent, violent, and very bad negroes, especially Clopton.

*Question.* Do you know any facts indicating the influence which they were having upon the other negroes in the community in the way of stirring up strife and bad blood between the negroes and the white people?

*Answer.* Clopton, or Dennis, as he was sometimes called, I knew ever since I had been there. He had always been very prominent in all the public meetings, and very forward in apologizing for and assisting all colored men charged with crimes in the courts there. He had been in a great many difficulties, and was frequently, it is said, (I never saw him so more than once or twice,) drunk and disorderly.

*Question.* Have you any doubt in your own mind, from the facts which you have heard, that Warren Tyler fired the first shot in the court-house that day?

*Answer.* I have no doubt, from all that I have heard from others, and from what I saw, that he fired the first shot.

*Question.* Was that the shot that killed the justice?

*Answer.* I cannot say about that; I did not see the justice fall.

*Question.* At the time Tyler fired that shot, assuming that he fired it, was he in any danger from Brantley?

*Answer.* No, sir; Brantley was not within reach of him, and the marshal had hold of him, and another gentleman caught him afterward.

*Question.* Had Brantley ceased all effort to pursue Tyler before the shot was fired?

*Answer.* I think he made no effort after he was seized by the marshal.

*Question.* And the other man was then entirely out of his reach?

*Answer.* The other man (Tyler) was, as I said, ten or twelve feet from him.

*Question.* The firing after that was promiscuous on both sides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Well, I cannot say who fired the shots; the firing was mostly behind me; and I got right down in front of my chair, as I thought that was safest, and did not move until the firing had nearly all ceased.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did you get on the floor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I just got down in front of my chair. I thought that was safest. I did not know where the shots were coming from.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* How many white men were wounded in that affray?

*Answer.* Besides Judge Bramlette, there was one white man I know of wounded, a Mr. Reed; and I think there were others, but I do not recollect whether there were or not.

*Question.* Does this book [handing a pamphlet to witness] contain the evidence before Judge Leachman in the investigation of which you have spoken? If it does, I wish to have it appended to your testimony.

*Answer.* Yes, sir: this is the evidence taken before Judge Leachman touching that riot, and everything connected therewith.

[See page 127 *et seq.*]

*Question.* Do you know whether or not that evidence was adopted by the legislative investigating committee?

*Answer.* I understand it has been. I do not know whether Mr. Sessions, one of the committee, who is here now, told me so or not. But my understanding is (I do not know whether it is a fact) that the legislative committee who came there afterward to investigate adopted that as a part of their report, though they examined a good many other witnesses.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did the negroes help to put out the fire on that Saturday night as they had usually done?

*Answer.* A great many of them did.

*Question.* You say that a Mr. Ray was wounded on that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I do not know whether it was going to the fire or not.

*Question.* You spoke of a Mr. Reed who was wounded in the court-room at the time Judge Bramlette was killed. How was he wounded?

*Answer.* He was shot. The ball passed through his wrist and lodged in his clothes about his vest pocket.

*Question.* Was he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* A democrat?

*Answer.* I do not know his politics. I think his name is Reed. He is a plasterer.

*Question.* What are the politics of Judge Leachman?

*Answer.* He is regarded as a republican. He is an appointee of Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* I understood you to say that Mayor Sturges furnished the negroes with arms. Can you tell where he got those arms from?

*Answer.* I said it was charged that he furnished the negroes with arms and kept arms in his house.

*Question.* Whence did he get the arms with which to furnish these negroes?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir.

*Question.* There were no public arms belonging to the town?

*Answer.* No, sir; I simply stated that that was charged by the citizens.

*Question.* To what extent was that furnishing of arms carried?

*Answer.* I cannot say to what extent. I have heard that charged for a long time; and I have also heard it charged that the negroes who fired off the guns at night, frequently half a dozen at once, fired them from his back yard, and that he kept guns about his house. Of the truth of it I do not know anything.

*Question* Did you say that you procured an order to be issued to disarm the negroes?

*Answer.* No, sir; I said I understood the sheriff of the county, on Saturday night or Sunday after the fire, issued an order that all persons be disarmed in anticipation of a riot or difficulty.

*Question.* Did that order extend to both blacks and whites?

*Answer.* That was my understanding. I never saw the order. I do not know that it was written or published. I did not understand that it was.

*Question.* Did you not know that there were some one hundred and fifty white men armed all night to guard the negroes?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of there being white men armed, except a few men who, after the fire was over, were detailed by the sheriff to guard Clopton, who was under arrest. I heard of no white persons being armed during or previous to the fire.

*Question.* Were any arms taken away from negroes in pursuance of that order?

*Answer.* I understood that two pistols were taken from Isaac Lee when he was arrested. He was one of the negroes who was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear of any white man being disarmed in pursuance of that order?

*Answer.* I only learned that that negro was disarmed by the testimony developed in the investigation before Judge Leachman.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* That was his offense—being armed?

*Answer.* I do not know that that was his offense. I saw from the testimony that two pistols were taken from him.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You spoke of a change in the conduct of the colored people after a certain time. What was the character of that change?

*Answer.* I stated that after Sturges was appointed mayor, and after Price came there the colored people changed in their general conduct.

*Question.* What was the character of that change?

*Answer.* As I stated before, they were firing guns at night. They called at a citizen's house and alarmed him very much by their shooting, hallooing, and singing obnoxious songs. They called, as he thought, to assassinate him. On the same night they alarmed some other citizens by their demonstrations on the street.

*Question.* Is that the only change of conduct to which you allude?

*Answer.* I also stated the fact of their arresting these two young men on the street and threatening to kill them.

*Question.* These are the only evidences of a change of conduct on the part of the negroes?

*Answer.* I do not know that I can specify anything particular just now, but I know that their general conduct as members of the community was very much changed and not at all calculated to preserve the peaceful relations between the white people and the negroes.

*Question.* You spoke of "incendiary speeches." In what respect were they "incendiary?"

*Answer.* As I recollect the testimony of one of the witnesses, Aaron Moore stated, among other things, that Sodom and Gomorrah had been burned up, and that if they didn't mind, the town of Meridian would be burned up likewise. It was also testified that Warren Tyler stated in his speech that the negroes must stand up to each other, and when one of them was killed, they must do like the Indians—kill in retaliation. There were other remarks of a similar character that I cannot now recollect.

*Question.* Did those negroes give a reason for talking in that way? What did they complain of?

*Answer.* As I have stated before, my understanding is that they said they were not properly treated; that some of them had been Ku-Kluxed, as they said; that they could not submit to it, and must take the law into their own hands.

*Question.* Had there been any prosecutions of persons who had Ku-Kluxed them?

*Answer.* There was an investigation, I believe, into every case where a person had been killed by disguised persons. I think every case of that kind was investigated, and an attempt made to find out who did it.

*Question.* Was anybody ever arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the Lauderdale Springs case, where Keyser was wounded, a man by the name of Jameson was arrested, and perhaps others, and an examination was had before a committing court.

*Question.* You speak of the case where a man was killed near Lauderdale Springs?

*Answer.* I think it was the case where Keyser was wounded. When Joe Williams was killed that matter was investigated. There was a young man arrested charged with committing the crime. The matter was investigated before Judge Bramlette; but there was no testimony against him.

*Question.* Had there been any whippings of colored men by disguised persons in that county other than what you have named?

*Answer.* I recollect of no whippings at all; I recollect no outrages now except what I have stated.

*Question.* Had there been any parading of disguised men in the county? I do not use the word "parading" technically.

*Answer.* Only what I have stated with reference to Price, and the killing of Williams.

*Question.* I mean men exhibiting themselves in disguise on the public highway when they did no damage?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not heard of any parades of that kind at all, except in the cases mentioned.

*Question.* It was previous to this meeting that these colored men had been kidnapped and carried back to Alabama, was it not?

*Answer.* About a month previous, I think. In regard to that I may be very much mistaken. It may have been more or it may have been less.

*Question.* You have testified that Clopton said in substance, "We are going to be attacked;" was there any general apprehension on the part of the negroes that they were going to be attacked?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know of any reason for such an apprehension.

*Question.* Had there been any threats against the negroes on the part of the white people?

*Answer.* None that I had ever heard.

*Question.* These colored men were arrested charged with incendiary speeches within a month after two or three men had been taken without authority and carried out of the State, there being no effort to prosecute them for that proceeding. Is there the same disposition to prosecute men for outrages upon colored people that there is to prosecute for outrages upon white people?

*Answer.* Well, as a general thing, I see no disposition in the officers of the law or in the people to prosecute colored men for offenses that they would not prosecute white men for. I think a good many offenses are committed by colored men, and by white men too, for which they are not prosecuted when they ought to be.

*Question.* Was Judge Bramlette a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were any other white men killed in the riot that occurred upon that trial?

*Answer.* No, sir; no white men were killed, except Judge Bramlette, and I think he was killed accidentally.

*Question.* You do not think any one fired at him?

*Answer.* I think Warren Tyler fired at Brantley, the witness, and struck Bramlette. That is simply my opinion. Other persons think he shot at Bramlette.

*Question.* On that occasion there was a colored policeman killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State the circumstances under which he was killed.

*Answer.* I can state no circumstances, except that I saw him lying dead, or almost dead. I think he was killed by a stray shot in attempting to run from the court-room into the sheriff's office.

*Question.* How many shots altogether do you suppose were fired in the court-room?

*Answer.* It is very hard to tell, because a man was not in a condtion to note those things very well. I think there were as many as thirty shots.

*Question.* Did the colored people fire any shots?

*Answer.* It is said that the colored people in the rear of the house and to one side of it did fire some shots, although I know nothing about it. I saw one ball which had struck the wall and which must have come from the rear of the house, where the colored people were, but I could not identify any man that fired.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did you see that shot fired?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* How do you know how far it was shot?

*Answer.* I do not know how far it was shot; but from the indentation it made in the wall, I infer it came from the rear of the room.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* The three colored men under arrest were killed, a colored policeman was killed, and these acts were followed by the burning of Aaron Moore's house and the burning of a colored church. Did the colored people rise up in arms and fight back? Was there any general riotous behavior on their part in resentment of these acts?

*Answer.* No, sir; the colored people were very quiet, I thought, so far as I know or have heard.

*Question.* Did they rise up afterward to resent these acts?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is it your opinion, then, that the "incendiary speeches" of which you spoke had much effect upon them?

*Answer.* My opinion is from what I know of the colored population of Meridian, and what I knew of Warren Tyler and Bill Clopton, and what I saw that night, that there was an attempt on the part of Clopton to get up an armed force and make some demonstration against the white people; and that while a portion of the negroes were willing to join in that demonstration, a great many would not join in it, and that there was not concert of action enough to get up any general attack on the white people, though it is said by very reliable persons whom I know that during the progress of the fire they saw a considerable body of men drawn up on one of the streets in military order and with arms.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Please give the names of the persons from whom you obtained that information?

*Answer.* Mr. George W. Covert saw the men drawn up in military order with arms, and also Mr. Adams; I believe his name is Isaac. So they stated.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Suppose a company of twelve or fifteen negroes had come from the State

of Alabama and taken by force a white man from your State, without authority of law, what effect would that have produced upon the white people of Meridian?

*Answer.* I should think it would have produced some excitement.

*Question.* Would it have produced more excitement and riotous behavior than the similar conduct of white men, in abducting negroes, produced upon the colored people?

*Answer.* Well, it might have done so.

*Question.* Would the people have permitted such a thing?

*Answer.* I hardly think they would. I do not know, but I do not think they would.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Suppose that such a band of negroes, after having successfully done such a thing, should come back to Meridian for more white men, what do you suppose the white people there would do?

*Answer.* Well, I do not think they would allow them to do it.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Would they have taken the law into their own hands, if necessary, in order to prevent it?

*Answer.* Well, I think they would; but that would depend upon the character of the persons they came for, and the character of the charges they made against them, I presume.

*Question.* Well, suppose a precisely similar case to that which occurred; suppose it was a simple charge of larceny upon which there had been no legal proceedings—a charge which any man might trump up to suit his purpose.

*Answer.* Well, I should think if the man they undertook to carry away was a man of good standing and character, and held in esteem at all by the white people, they would resist anything of that kind.

*Question.* Let me carry the supposition a little further. If three white men had been arrested upon some charge of improper speeches, or indeed any charge short of one of the most heinous character, and if one of them had been assaulted by a witness upon the stand, and had fired under the same circumstances as those under which Tyler is alleged to have fired, and if this had been followed by the killing of all three of those white men by the negroes, the killing of a white policeman by the negroes, and the burning of a white man's residence and of a church belonging to the white people, would the white people have behaved themselves as well during those occurrences and afterward as the negroes behaved on the occasion in question?

Mr. VAN TRUMP. The question assumes that the man on the witness-stand commenced the affair.

Mr. POOL. Was not that so; was not Tyler assaulted first?

Mr. VAN TRUMP. The witness has described the occurrence.

*Answer.* I have told what the assault consisted in.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* I will ask you as a lawyer, and also as a witness, whether Tyler was not assaulted?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I should think it would be considered an assault.

*Question.* Then it is no assumption now?

*Answer.* It is purely a legal question. I do not know whether the mere taking up of a stick at that distance and starting toward a man would be an assault.

*Question.* I will not split hairs on that point. I will say an attempted assault, followed by the murder of all three of the prisoners. Suppose such an act had been committed by the negroes upon white men, and that thirty shots had been fired in the court-house, would the white people have submitted in as quiet and orderly a manner as the negroes did?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know that they would; but that would depend upon the previous character of the men who were killed, and the relations in which they stood to the community.

*Question.* Would the white people have suffered the negroes to have killed any three white men in that way, and burned houses and churches afterward?

*Answer.* I do not know that they would. They might have done so, if the men were men of bad character and extremely obnoxious.

*Question.* Is it not your opinion that such an occurrence would have been followed by the killing of a great many negroes?

*Answer.* I think that probably it would.

*Question.* The purpose of the question is simply to exemplify the fact, which I believe to be true, that the negroes are disposed to be orderly, and not disposed to resent ill-treatment.

*Answer.* As I have already stated, from my knowledge of the negroes, (and I was raised in a slave State,) if no improper influences are brought to bear upon them, I consider them as quiet and peaceable and easily controlled as any race of people I know anything about.

*Question.* But notwithstanding such influences, did not the behavior of the negroes on this occasion show that they were then and there, under the circumstances, more orderly than you would have expected the white men to be under similar circumstances?

*Answer.* You mean after the riot?

*Question.* Yes, sir, notwithstanding the bad influences of which you speak?

*Answer.* I think that they were more so than white men would have been, on account of the superiority of white men and their superior intelligence and disposition to resent. I think that can be accounted for to a great extent by the difference between the two races upon a similar state of facts. The inferior race will submit to a great many things that the superior race would not submit to. That ought to be considered in answering a question of that description.

*Question.* The white people consider themselves a superior race?

*Answer.* I suppose they do.

*Question.* Do you not think yourself that that is the cause of a great deal, if not most, of the trouble which is now occurring, and which we are now investigating?

*Answer.* Because the white people consider themselves superior?

*Question.* And that the negroes have been raised to an equality with them?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think that the troubles between the white people and the negroes grow altogether out of the fact that the white people consider themselves the superior race.

*Question.* And the negroes have been raised to an equality with them? I put both facts together.

*Answer.* I think the negroes having been put upon a civil equality with white people throws them in a relation they did not occupy before; and being brought into contact in the business relations of life with white men, more difficulties are likely to grow up between them. In that way difficulties grow up that are not of a political nature, but which are construed into difficulties of a political nature.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Difficulties of a character that could not by any possibility arise in a state of slavery?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You said that Price was advised to leave, as you thought, because it was feared that his presence at the trial would produce a disturbance?

*Answer.* I said, I think, that I understood from the republicans, so far as I understood anything, (and I do not think I spoke to anybody about it but Mr. Smith,) that they thought it best for the community that Mr. Price should leave. I said but very few words to Mr. Smith about it.

*Question.* Was no reason assigned why they thought it was best for him to leave?

*Answer.* I do not know that Mr. Smith gave me any particular reason; I met him on the street, and the conversation came up, and he told me Price would leave; that the republicans thought it best and had so advised him; and he showed me a note addressed to him, which he would have read to me, I suppose, if I had asked him to; but I did not ask it.

*Question.* Was it not feared that those Alabamians would attempt violence upon him in case he was discharged?

*Answer.* I do not know; he did not give me any reason.

*Question.* From the state of things there, do you or do you not think it likely they would have done so?

*Answer.* About that, of course a man has got nothing but a mere opinion; a man hardly knows how to answer a question of that kind.

*Question.* Was there ground to apprehend it?

*Answer.* I suppose that if he had been discharged after the investigation was had, there would have been a good deal of feeling, and perhaps indignation, at the fact.

*Question.* Was there ground to apprehend that those Alabamians had come there for the purpose of doing him violence in case he was discharged upon that examination?

*Answer.* Well, as I said before, they came there alleging as a reason for it that Price had said that he would not be committed to jail, or give bail; that he would resist if the justice of the peace so determined his case; and I think it probable that if he had been discharged there might have been a difficulty.

*Question.* If those Alabamians had done him violence on his discharge, would not that probably have led to violent acts on the part of the colored men, and a general disturbance?

*Answer.* I think it likely it would; but I want to make this statement: I do not believe that the people of Meridian would have permitted those Alabamians who came over there to have interfered with the trial of Price. If his trial had taken place, I think that the people of Meridian would have taken charge of that matter, so far as the law authorized them to do so, and they would not have allowed the interference of

people of Alabama with it. I know there was great indignation expressed by the people of Meridian generally at the fact of those Alabamians coming over there with arms in their hands on account of that trial.

*Question.* As calculated to disturb the peace of the community?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it not an extraordinary proceeding?

*Answer.* It was an extraordinary proceeding; but those things are sometimes done when they think it best for the community.

*Question.* Did you ever hear before the war of men taken up in the way in which those negroes were taken up and carried back to Alabama, by men coming over from another State? Was such a thing ever done before the war?

*Answer.* No, sir; before the war I did not live in Mississippi; I said that I recollected, as I thought, one case in which men had been arrested in Mississippi and taken off to Alabama, without any requisition from the governor; and now I recollect of a man charged with murder having escaped from a county above us, and they pursued him into Alabama, arrested him, and took him across the line.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Without a requisition?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* That was a continued pursuit?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Is not that according to the rules of the common law in case of a capital felony?

*Answer.* I do not know that you would have the right to cross the State line without a requisition. It would be beyond the jurisdiction of the State.

*Question.* But in a case of capital felony has not every private citizen the right to arrest upon his own authority without a warrant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he has, as I understand the law.

*Question.* And by continued pursuit cannot citizens in such a case cross the county boundaries?

*Answer.* They can cross the county boundaries, but whether they can cross the boundaries of the State is the question.

*Question.* Is the case you just mentioned the only case you ever heard of?

*Answer.* That was the second case. I do not think that as a general thing one State would complain of a man from another State being arrested just over the border, and taken back without a requisition, especially if it turned out afterward that he was guilty.

*Question.* It is considered disreputable in Mississippi for a white man to associate habitually with negroes?

*Answer.* By associating with negroes on terms of social equality a man loses caste in society there, as I should think he would do anywhere.

*Question.* Do not men who do that generally do it with some unlawful or disreputable purpose; and is not that one reason why it is considered disreputable?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know; I cannot say about that. I think it likely they would do it for some rather disreputable or degrading purpose.

*Question.* Would it be possible for a white man, who did that habitually, as Price was said to have done it, to find white men to associate with him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think that a man who habitually associates with negroes upon terms of social equality would find respectable white people who would associate with him upon terms of social equality.

*Question.* If he should select his associates in that way, he would have to stand by those associates, and would have no others?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has there been any effort on the part of the colored people to thrust themselves into social equality with the white people about Meridian, so far as you have observed; or are they disposed to keep their places?

*Answer.* I do not recollect any instance of colored people attempting to thrust themselves upon white people on terms of social equality in Meridian.

*Question.* There has been then, on the part of the colored people about Meridian, no claim of social equality—no effort to thrust themselves into social circles with the whites?

*Answer.* I do not recollect any particular instance of that kind.

*Question.* The negroes themselves have behaved properly and discreetly in that respect, so far as you have seen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think they have, so far as I have seen. I have myself always been upon the most friendly terms with the colored people.

*Question.* It is very easy to maintain friendly terms with them without having the social relations of which you speak?

*Answer.* Very. I have always gotten along with them very well.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Did Clopton, a short time before he was murdered, go to see the governor?

*Answer.* As I understood, he had just returned, a day or two, or two or three days, before, from a visit to the governor.

*Question.* What did he go to see the governor for?

*Answer.* I do not know what he went for.

*Question.* What was it alleged he went for?

*Answer.* I do not know that I ever heard the reason alleged. I only know that he went to see the governor, by its being proved that he said in his speech that he had been to see Governor Alcorn and got no satisfaction.

*Question.* Was it in reference to these difficulties that were going on?

*Answer.* It is likely it was; but I do not know.

*Question.* You have said that Clopton was a turbulent and bad man; that he had had many difficulties; was drunken and disorderly; do you know anything about that matter?

*Answer.* I have not often seen him drunk; but he was rather a boisterous, violent man.

*Question.* Have you any personal knowledge of any difficulties that he had had, or do you speak from mere rumor?

*Answer.* I do not know that I saw him in any personal difficulties; but I know from his having been in court several times that he has had difficulties frequently with persons.

*Question.* White or black persons?

*Answer.* Sometimes black persons, but generally white.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* How long have you been practicing law in Meridian?

*Answer.* Since August, 1865.

*Question.* From what State did you go there?

*Answer.* From the State of Missouri. I joined the confederate army, and when the war ended I was left there. I could not practice my profession in Missouri on account of the test-oath, and for that reason I did not return. I located in Meridian.

*Question.* You are then what they call a carpet-bagger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose you might call me in one sense a carpet-bagger; but I did not go there to get an office from the freedmen.

*Question.* Your county is a large republican county, is it not?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* It voted for Alcorn, did it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it voted for Alcorn; but if you class the vote by the relative strength of the white and colored voters they are about equal.

*Question.* Are there no white republicans there?

*Answer.* Very few.

*Question.* Was not Judge Bramlette a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The mayor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the other man who wanted the mayor's office—the man who was turned out?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The sheriff?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When was this Mississippi Ku-Klux act passed?

*Answer.* I think it was passed in 1870. It was passed by the legislature that adjourned a month or two ago.

*Question.* The legislature elected when Mr. Alcorn was elected?

*Answer.* I think it was passed by that legislature.

*Question.* That is considered a moderate republican legislature, is it not?

*Answer.* I think it is quite ultra in some respects. I do not think it a moderate republican legislature.

*Question.* Mr. Alcorn carried your county by a very heavy majority?

*Answer.* He did. That was because the white people would not take an interest in the election, and would not vote.

*Question.* He got 1,523 votes against 970?

*Answer.* One-third of the white people did not vote.

*Question.* You consider the legislature which passed the Ku-Klux act a very extreme legislature. Do you not think that the Ku-Klux act was justified by the circumstances?

*Answer.* I think that an act of that kind ought to be passed, and I think that men who go about in disguise in that way ought to be punished.

*Question.* There were facts existing in your State, according to your opinion, which called for that kind of legislation, were there not?

*Answer.* I do not know that there were facts of that kind existing. It was believed by many persons that there were.

*Question.* Did not you believe it?

*Answer.* Well, I think that there were persons that went about sometimes in disguise, from all I can learn; but I cannot say that I believe there was a regular organized band of Ku-Klux anywhere in the State.

*Question.* Regular or irregular, do you not believe the Ku-Klux have been and are in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* Well, I have no knowledge of there being organized bodies of men called Ku-Klux. I believe there are sometimes persons who go about in disguise and commit crimes.

*Question.* But you have no belief as to whether there are Ku-Klux in that State?

*Answer.* Well, I did not say that I had no belief.

*Question.* I asked you for your belief.

*Answer.* Well, I believe that there are persons who go about in disguise; and I suppose persons who are disguised are called Ku-Klux—are generally so regarded.

*Question.* Is it not generally believed among men of all parties that there are Ku-Klux there?

*Answer.* It is generally believed among the colored people there; and some among the white people believe it.

*Question.* Do democrats generally deny it?

*Answer.* Democrats generally deny that there are organized bodies of them that have regular meetings and regular proceedings.

*Question.* I do not see whether it makes much difference whether they have regular proceedings or not, if they gather together in bands and commit outrages; do you?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do they deny the occurrence of such things?

*Answer.* They do not deny that persons in disguise go about at times and commit crimes; and those persons are generally regarded as Ku-Klux, and so called.

*Question.* You say that the mayor was generally charged with being partial in his office to the colored people there. Is it not a part of his duty to keep order in Meridian?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To protect the citizens against lawlessness and violence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say that a band of men came over from Alabama on several occasions and took colored men out of Meridian into Alabama without warrant of law?

*Answer.* I did not state that they came on several occasions.

*Question.* You said that they took one man on one occasion, and two afterward.

*Answer.* No, sir; I stated that on one occasion a body of men came over, as they alleged, to be present at the trial of Price, and when they got off the cars they discovered one or two freedmen, who they said had committed a larceny in Alabama, and they arrested them, and when they went away carried them with them.

*Question.* They arrested them and kept them in confinement till they went back?

*Answer.* I presume they kept them in confinement; I do not know where they kept them. I also stated that on one occasion previous to that a deputy sheriff came over and arrested a colored man, and if he had any requisition I do not know it; I never heard it stated that he had a requisition.

*Question.* If he had had a requisition the man would have been arrested, the question of his identity tried, and if he had been adjudged to be the man, he would have been taken back?

*Answer.* That would have been the regular proceeding.

*Question.* There was no such proceeding?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was simply arrested, put on the train, and carried off.

*Question.* Now, is there not a law of the State of Mississippi punishing such proceedings as that? Is there not a law against kidnapping?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is a section of the old code.

*Question.* The code of 1857?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That law is section 36, articles 186, 187, and 188, making it a penitentiary offense for a man to carry another out of the State against his will without warrant of law?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then those men committed that offense, did they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, according to the letter of that statute, it would seem they did.

*Question.* Is it not, according to the spirit and purpose of the statute?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but suppose the men who were taken over there were really guilty of larceny—were tried, found guilty, and punished.

*Question.* Does that make any difference?

*Answer.* So far as the letter of the law is concerned, it would not.

*Question.* Would it be any defense if those men were indicted and tried in the State of Mississippi for kidnapping?

*Answer.* It might be a mitigation.

*Question.* But would it be a defense?

*Answer.* I do not think it could be set up as a legal defense; but it might be a reason why a grand jury would not find a bill, because, although the letter of the law might have been violated, yet through that means the guilty would have been punished.

*Question.* Would you excuse a grand jury for not finding a bill on the ground that the men had been charged with an offense in another State?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know that I would; but it would be quite a mitigating circumstance.

*Question.* Did the mayor do anything to protect the colored people or to cause the punishment of these men?

*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of.

*Question.* Were not the colored people dissatisfied with the mayor because of his course in that respect?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they were or not; but the mayor did, about that time, I think, and it was said for that reason, apply to the governor or to the proper authorities, and had some United States troops sent there. They were kept there a day or two and then sent away.

*Question.* Was it not after the fire that the troops came there?

*Answer.* My recollection is that some troops were brought there a day or two after these men were taken and carried to Alabama?

*Question.* United States troops?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How do you account for so many men being in the court-house armed on that trial?

*Answer.* Well, on account of the excitement at the fire on the Saturday night previous, and the riotous and hostile demonstrations of Clopton and other colored men, danger was apprehended by the white people; and for that reason I think the white men armed themselves generally. I think so.

*Question.* Are there a good many colored people living in that county who came from Sumter County, Alabama, on account of the troubles there?

*Answer.* All I know about that is that I have understood that after Price came there he influenced a good many colored people to come from Sumter County, Alabama.

*Question.* Was it not alleged that there were Ku-Klux in Sumter County, Alabama, so that for that reason the colored people thought themselves safer in Mississippi?

*Answer.* The reason I heard given for it was that Price induced them to come.

*Question.* You did not hear the other reason assigned?

*Answer.* I never heard the other reason. I have heard it charged that there were Ku-Klux in adjoining counties of Alabama.

*Question.* In Sumter County and other counties adjoining?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you in Meridian consider this section of the code against kidnapping, which I have quoted, to be a dead letter?

*Answer.* No, sir; we do not consider it a dead letter.

*Question.* I understand from your testimony that you enforced the law against searching colored men's houses without a warrant, and looking for pigs?

*Answer.* I learned from Joe Williams himself that an indictment was found against him as a justice of the peace, (the particular charge in the indictment I do not know,) because he verbally authorized some white persons or colored persons (I don't recollect which) to go and search colored persons' premises for a pig, and gave no warrant in writing.

*Question.* So that colored men's pigs are protected?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It would seem from that that there is a disposition to discriminate in favor of a pig rather than a colored man?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that there is a disposition to discriminate in favor of a pig.

*Question.* Of which do the democrats think the most, their pigs or the free negroes? In other words, do they think more of their property or of their colored fellow-citizens?

*Answer.* As a matter of property I suppose they consider most the pig; but I do not believe that there is a respectable white man there who thinks more of a pig than he does of a human being.

*Question.* I infer from this that there must be some bad men in the democratic party there?

*Answer.* There are bad men there as there are in all other communities.

*Question.* Even in the democratic party?

*Answer.* Even in the democratic party.

*Question.* Can you name some of them?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know that I can name them.

*Question.* You know who they are, do you not?

*Answer.* I do not know that it would be advisable to single men out and call them bad names. I should think such a question as that would not be insisted upon.

*Question.* You have very freely given the names of bad colored men, and said all you could against them, although they are dead. I have asked you for the names of some bad white men, and you decline to give them. I do not press the question.

*Answer.* I gave the names of bad colored men because they were charged with crime, and were on trial for crime, and were killed in a riot. You asked me to give you the names of white persons who were bad men, against whom no such charges had been made, and I declined to do it.

*Question.* Were not the violent acts committed at that riot done by bad white men?

*Answer.* I believe there were acts committed that night by bad white men; for instance, the burning of the church, the burning of Aaron Moore's house, and the killing of those three negroes taken from the custody of the sheriff. I think every man condemns that.

*Question.* One had his throat cut after he was shot?

*Answer.* I understand that Clopton's throat was cut after he had been shot.

*Question.* Did not bad men do those acts?

*Answer.* I should think it would be quite an unfeeling man who would cut a man's throat (however bad a man he might be) after he was wounded. I do not think any respectable man justifies the burning of the church and Aaron Moore's house, and the killing of those negroes. On the contrary, it was unanimously denounced at a public meeting held the next day; that is, the burning of the church and the house.

*Question.* Who is supposed there to have done those things?

*Answer.* Which things?

*Question.* Those outrages you have just mentioned?

*Answer.* I believe, and it is generally believed there, that men who are not citizens of Lauderdale burned Aaron Moore's house, burned the colored Baptist church, and took those three men at night from the custody of the sheriff and shot them.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that those men from Alabama did it?

*Answer.* Men who were strangers there, and were probably from Alabama. I will not say they were from Alabama when I do not know it as a fact.

*Question.* Is there no belief as to who cut that man's throat?

*Answer.* Some persons may know; I do not know. I never heard any particular person charged with it.

*Question.* Do you belong to any organization of white men?

*Answer.* I belong to a conservative or democratic club.

*Question.* Is that a part of the organization of the democratic party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It is a club we have had organized there for some considerable time.

*Question.* Is it a part of the regular organization of the democratic party, or is it a side club?

*Answer.* You may call it a part of the regular organization.

*Question.* Do you belong to any other organization of white men?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not.

*Question.* Do you belong to the order of Pale Faces?

*Answer.* I do not belong to that order; I do not know anything about it.

*Question.* Do you belong to the order of the Knights of the White Camelia?

*Answer.* I do not belong to that order, and do not know anything about it.

*Question.* You do not belong to any of those secret organizations?

*Answer.* None of them.

*Question.* Is that democratic club secret?

*Answer.* Any person could go to their meetings who wanted to; we do not exclude persons at all.

*Question.* What are your terms of admission? What are the qualifications required of a member?

*Answer.* He must convince us that he is a democrat, that he believes in the same principles that we do, and has the same objects in view that we have.

*Question.* Are any colored men admitted into it?

*Answer.* I do not know of any colored men being in it. Very few colored men act with the democratic party down with us.

*Question.* Would a colored man be eligible?

*Answer.* I suppose he would be.

*Question.* Has the club any constitution?

*Answer.* Well, it has been so long since I attended it (it is some time since the last election) that I do not know much about it. They did have a constitution then. Their regular meetings are not held now. They had a constitution and by-laws, such as those

clubs usually have, providing for the election of a president, vice-president, secretary, treasurer, &c.

*Question.* Did it have any means by which one member could recognize any other?

*Answer.* There were no signs or grips, or anything of that kind.

*Question.* No passwords or anything of that sort?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did the constitution contain any obligation that one member of the club should aid another in trouble?

*Answer.* It did not contain those things.

*Question.* Nothing of the sort?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was a political club, gotten up in the usual way of political clubs. They are generally gotten up just preceding an election; and after the election is over they hold no regular meetings.

*Question.* To your knowledge, is there any secret organization or society of white men in that town or county?

*Answer.* There may be; I do not know the fact myself.

*Question.* Have you reason to believe it?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* This democratic club of which you speak is simply an old-fashioned club, such as every political party has in order to keep together—an organization without secrecy or anything of that kind? You simply expect all who come there to be democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* I understood you to say that this charge against Price for abusing negroes was within the last six months?

*Answer.* I think it was in January or February.

*Question.* Then it was within the last six months?

*Answer.* I think it was.

*Question.* And that was dismissed by the officers of the law, by consent on both sides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The court there, in the administration of justice, was disturbed by the threatened, if not attempted, assault by a witness under examination upon Tyler?

*Answer.* Well, as I stated——

*Question.* Was it not the fact that the disturbance began by the witness attempting to go to Tyler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was a part of what created the disturbance.

*Question.* And two of the negroes who were charged at that time were killed in consequence of the proceedings that occurred afterward?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And three more who were arrested after the fire were also murdered in the same way by some one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then Moore's house was burned and also the colored Baptist church?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And some time prior to that Williams had been killed in that county?

*Answer.* Some six months or more before.

*Question.* And at least three negroes were carried away out of the county unlawfully?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Now, has there been any arrest or trial of anybody for any one of those offenses?

*Answer.* You have reference to the Williams matter?

*Question.* I have reference to all the occurrences I have named. Price was arrested, of course. But for the disturbance of the court, for the killing of two of the negroes who were on trial and of the three who were subsequently in the custody of the sheriff, for the burning of Moore's house and the church, for the carrying away of those negroes, or for the killing of Williams, has anybody been arrested or tried?

*Answer.* In each one of those cases some persons were charged and underwent examination. Judge Leachman held to bail a number of persons, as will be shown by the testimony taken before him; he held them to answer to the circuit court for what they did on the day of the riot. A young man, whose name I forget, was arrested, charged with having something to do with the killing of Joe Williams. That matter was brought before Judge Bramlette. There was no evidence against him, and he was discharged.

*Question.* In view of these facts and these results, do you still adhere to the opinion you gave in the beginning of your examination, that the law is as faithfully adminis-

tered in Mississippi, and that life and property are as secure there as in any other part of the United States?

*Answer.* Well, when I said——

*Question.* I simply want to know whether you adhere to that opinion given in the beginning of your testimony.

*Answer.* When I said that the criminal law was executed there as well as the criminal law is executed generally in the country, I did not mean to say that there were not any more men killed there than there were in some other parts of the country. I simply meant to say that whenever crimes are committed, there is an investigation had, as much so as in the country generally.

*Question.* In view of these facts occurring within the period you have indicated, do you still adhere to the opinion that the execution of the law is as efficient and life and property are as secure in the State of Mississippi as in other parts of the United States?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know that I will state that life is as secure there as in other parts of the country so far as regards the number of men who are killed; but I mean to say that investigations are had and attempts are made to find out who are guilty, as much so there as generally in the country. I believe that there are more men killed in some localities of the Southern States perhaps than there are elsewhere.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Do you not believe from the information you have, and from official data which you may have read, that there are more child-murders in the city of Boston alone than there are murders of all kinds in the State of Mississippi, from one end of it to the other?

*Answer.* Well, if the reports I see in the newspapers and periodicals are true, I should think that there were.

*Question.* In other words, different communities have different orders of crime?

*Answer.* Certainly.

*Question.* A fellow who would go into a man's house in the garb of a preacher and seduce his daughter, and a doctor who would go there and produce abortions, would, in your estimation, be as bad Ku-Klux as the fellows who go in the night and whip people?

*Answer.* I should think it would be equally bad crime.

*Question.* As different communities have different orders of crime, your people have always been, perhaps, more violent than some other communities?

*Answer.* We had more cases of killing before the war than there were in the Northern States. I suppose every man will concede that fact.

*Question.* When a man is called a liar in your community, he is apt to fight back instead of suing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but so far as criminal acts are concerned, I do not know that more of them are committed in the States that were formerly slave States than in the Northern States.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* In all your reading with reference to Boston, or any other city of the United States, have you learned of any organized body of men, in any such city, for the purpose of committing crime, or of defending or excusing it; I mean the crime of abortion or any other crime?

*Answer.* I do not know that I have learned from my reading that there is any organized band of persons there whose object is to commit crime or bring about abortions.

*Question.* Or to defend those who do commit crime?

*Answer.* No, sir; but I have read a great deal about the common habit of physicians and others of procuring abortions, and especially in the New England States.

*Question.* Do you believe that there is no body of organized men in the State of Mississippi for the purpose of committing crime or of defending it?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not believe that there is a body of men organized in Mississippi for the purpose of committing crime and of defending those who do commit it, though there may be. I cannot say I believe there is a body of men organized for that purpose.

*Question.* What do you understand to be the objects of the Ku-Klux, if they are organized?

*Answer.* Well, I have always understood that the Ku-Klux originated in Tennessee; that it was brought about by the odious political condition of the country as to the white people; that it was to protect the white people against outrages committed upon them by the opposite party.

*Question.* Did you get that information from anybody who was a member of it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have simply understood that.

*Question.* You have no positive information about it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have no positive information in regard to it.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* In your section of the country can a democratic negro vote the democratic ticket without being persecuted by his negro brethren?

*Answer.* Well, I have known some to vote the democratic ticket who were not interfered with. I have heard of instances of their being interfered with; and I have heard freedmen say that they were afraid to vote that ticket, that they might be interfered with.

*Question.* By those of their own color?

*Answer.* By those of their own color. That was a year or two ago. I wish to make one explanation in reference to my testimony. I do not want to do anybody injustice. I have been asked during my examination how the fire at Meridian originated, according to the opinion of the people generally; and I said that the people generally believed that it originated in Theodore Sturges's house, and that the owners of the house had something to do with the origin of it, or were cognizant of the fact. Now, Mr. Theodore Sturges is a man that I have respect for; and while there are some people who believe that, there are, I suppose, a good many others who do not believe it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were there not as many people who believed otherwise, taking the whites and blacks together?

*Answer.* Probably there are. The statement I made before on this subject I would like to have left out of my testimony.

The CHAIRMAN. The statement you have just made in explanation will appear as part of your examination.

---

[See page 115.]

*A full report of the testimony taken before the Hon. R. Leachman, judge of the sixth circuit court, district of the State of Mississippi, on the examination of the cases of The State vs. James A. Brantley and others, charged with a riot in the city of Meridian, Mississippi, on the 6th of March, 1871.*

THE STATE OF MISSISSIPPI, *Lauderdale County:*

W. S. PATTON, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian and am marshal of the city. I was present when a riot took place in this court-house on the 6th of March, 1871, as an officer of the court.

Several persons had testified. It seems that Warren Tyler and others had been charged with disorderly conduct, and were being examined before Judge Bramlette. Mr. James Brantley was called to the stand. His testimony was short. I think Captain Ford told him to be seated. I think he stated he had heard either Tyler or some one had stated that Tyler had used certain language: cannot give the language. Mr. Brantley attempted to take his seat, and Tyler told him to keep the stand. Mr. Brantley had taken his seat. I told Mr. Brantley to get up, and he immediately arose. Tyler said he wanted to bring in two witnesses to impeach Mr. Brantley's testimony. When that remark was made, Mr. Brantley reached over and got hold of my stick, which was lying on the table. I caught hold of Mr. Brantley; told him he must desist. He made but little if any effort to get away from me; we were standing in that position when the first pistol was fired. I was holding him. I do not know who fired the first shot. It came from the direction of the door leading from the court-room to the sheriff's office. The reason I think it came from that direction is, I heard the report. Was not excited in the least. Bramlette fell dead, shot through the left side of the head. Warren Tyler was standing at the door, the rest were sitting down. Judge Bramlette's left side was turned to that door. The last I saw of Warren Tyler after he had risen, he was standing near that door with a pistol in his hand. Gus. Ford fell not long afterward; did not see him fall. He was shot in the right side. Don't know where Ford was when the first pistol was fired. I think I am sure Judge Bramlette fell at the first fire. I did not see a flash or smoke from Tyler's pistol. The firing became general throughout the house and from all parts of the house: persons were breaking out in every direction, and getting under benches. I did not see a pistol fired. I only heard the reports. I saw no one armed with pistols but except that mentioned. I was engaged in trying to quell the difficulty. I saw no one armed. I could not name a man who fired a gun or made any demonstration, either white or black, except those mentioned. The difficulty in the court-house did not last, I think, exceeding a minute. I don't suppose there were over one hundred and twenty-five in the court-room. I think there were more negroes than white folks. I believe almost all the crowd made their exit by the usual entrance. I don't think it was more than five minutes before the house was clear. I remained in the court-house. I saw Judge Bramlette lying dead near where he had been sitting as justice of the peace. Gus. Ford was lying in the sheriff's office in a dying state. Billy Clopton, alias Dennis, was shot in the knee, in the body, and in the mouth. The next I saw I looked out of the window of the sheriff's office, and saw

a large crowd in the vicinity of my office, about two hundred yards off. This was a few minutes after the court-room had been cleared. I did not recognize anybody in that crowd. I could not tell whether they were armed or not. I don't think there was much noise in the crowd. I heard some hallooing and guns fire after I came back into the court-room. Cannot tell how many shots were fired. The reports were scattering. I do not know what they were shooting at. I do not know what became of Warren Tyler. The last I saw of him during the riot he was standing at the door leading to the sheriff's office. I saw him about an hour afterward lying dead in the back room of Sam Parker's shoe-shop. Parker's shop is about two hundred yards from the court-house. It was a little dark in the room, and I saw blood on his face and breast; supposed he had been shot. I did not see him any more, and made no further examination. I suppose it was three or half-past three when the riot commenced, and it was about half-past four when I saw Tyler's body in the back room of Parker's shop. About this time everybody seemed a little excited, but no very great disorder or violence was prevailing. A short time before this I had all the drinking saloons in town closed. I knew Marion White and Isaac Lee; don't think I knew Henry Johnson. I saw Isaac Lee, Marion White, and a man called Henry Johnson that evening about 5 o'clock, before sunset. I saw Isaac Lee on Johnson avenue, in front of the court-house, and saw Marion White and a man they called Henry Johnson going up the steps leading to the court-room. I saw them in the sheriff's office on the following night about supper-time, and they were under arrest. I found them next morning on the opposite side of the railroad, in a pine thicket. They were dead. I do not know how nor when they left the sheriff's office, nor who took them out. The way I came to know these parties were dead, about 4 o'clock on the morning of the 7th instant an unknown man came to me on the street, and asked me if I was, or are you General Patton, and if I was not city marshal. I told him I was. He then said, "You don't know me, but I know you. I am from Georgia, but am now living, or am from Alabama. I will leave on the train in about half an hour. If you will go across the railroad, back of a little store-house in a pine thicket, you will find three dead negroes." I found the negroes shot, but don't know by whom. I know nothing about the burning of Aaron Moore's house and the Baptist church; I merely saw them burning. I did not see Mr. James A. Brantley, or any other persons whose names I know, take any other part in the riot in the court-house than I have detailed. I did not see Mr. James A. Brantley, or any other persons whose names I know, in the crowd about Sam Parker's shop. After the burning of Aaron Moore's house Mr. Williams and myself started in that direction, and saw the colored Baptist church burning. We went to the church; found no one there except some negroes removing their things from their houses. Some of the city special police came up. We had started back, when a half dozen or a dozen unknown persons came up, and we left. I did not see Mr. James A. Brantley, or any other persons whose names I know, there except those mentioned.

W. S. PATTON.

---

WEDNESDAY MORNING, *March* 15, 1871.

SAMUEL PARKER, (colored,) being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I live in Meridian; I am a shoemaker; I was not in the court-room at the time of the riot; I was in my shop. When the shooting occurred in the court-room I went out of my shop to the corner, and looked down toward the court-house, and saw men running toward my shop. I saw Warren Tyler coming to my shop the other way with his arm over two men's shoulders; I don't know who these men were; I know of no others following him. Mr. Brantley did not follow him nor any other person I knew. A minute or two afterward some persons hunting for him asked me if Warren Tyler was in my shop, among them Mr. Wash. Brantley. I told them he was not in my shop. This was Mr. Wash. Brantley, but not the Mr. Brantley who is now on trial. There were none others that I knew. I saw several armed at that time; I saw two or three men trying to shoot me as I came out of the shop with Mr. Wash. Brantley, and a large crowd were pushing into the door, but did not recognize them, as I was excited; I did not see Mr. Brantley shoot at any one or commit any violence; I saw nothing of the burning of Aaron Moore's house or the Baptist church; I was up-stairs in Hobson's store, and only saw the light of the fire; I was up-stairs because I was afraid of being killed, as they had shot Tyler in my house, and I had told them that he was not in there. My shop is about three hundred yards from the court-house. I did not hear any noise at the court-house; I saw nothing that was going on on the streets; I heard men on horses and shooting all night. From the time of the disturbance through the night the shooting and noise was incessant. I saw among them Mr. Robert E. Coleman and Mr. Hugh Wilson. Did not know any others.

Cross-examined:

Did not see Mr. James A. Brantley at my shop at all. I saw Mr. Hugh Wilson first on the sidewalk near my shop. He went in the direction of Hobson's store. I do not know from what direction he came. When I first saw him he was on the sidewalk, and

inquired where Warren Tyler was. This was about a minute after I saw Warren Tyler leaning on two men's shoulders. I did not know that Tyler was in my shop. I do not know who the men were with Warren Tyler. They were black men. I knew then that Judge Bramlette was killed. I met Hobson near the mayor's office, who told me. He said he did not know who shot him. He said Warren Tyler and several others had shot in the court-house. I asked him if Warren Tyler had killed Judge Bramlette. Hobson said he was so frightened he did not know. The reason I asked this was that he first mentioned that Warren Tyler had shot. I heard others say that there was shooting in the court-house before Hobson told me; do not know who they were. They were colored people. I have been living in this town going on four years. There were women and men who had gathered on the corner, looking as I was. Do not think they had been in the court-house, but don't know. I had not seen Warren Tyler before I had this conversation with Hobson. I told the men who inquired which way Warren Tyler had gone; one of those who asked was Hugh Wilson. Mr. Robert E. Coleman, sr., tried to shoot me, and was prevented by his son, who took hold of his gun. Others tried to shoot me as I ran out of the house after going in with Mr. Wash. Brantley. I saw them pointing their pistols at me, crying, "Shoot him, shoot him." No one shot at me that I know of, and the reason was I kept a white man between me and them. I rubbed right against some of them. There were none but white men around me. They tried to catch hold of me but could not. Inside the store one caught at me and pulled off my hat; supposed he was trying to catch me. I was not present at the meeting in the court-room—at the public meeting which took place Saturday evening previous to the fire. I was present at the fire Saturday night; saw Bill Clopton there. He was drunk, I think, walking around with a stick. I heard him say, "Let it burn." I am not certain whether he said to the colored people, "Don't help put out the fire." He was talking a good deal, and when he commenced talking that way I left him. I did not see him try to stop any one from helping to put out the fire. I did'nt hear him say, "Now is our time." I did not hear him call for a meeting of the colored people. After the fire had stopped, I went to my shop; did not meet with them that night, and did not see Warren Tyler at the fire nor know where he was. I do not know whether or not the men who inquired for Warren Tyler at my shop had orders from the sheriff to arrest him.

SAM PARKER.

---

NELSON HODGES, (colored,) being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of this place and a merchant. I was not present when the riot took place in the court-room.

Examination suspended.

---

LEMUEL HOBSON, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a merchant. I was present in the court-room when the riot took place; was sitting on the third seat from the railing. Mr. Brantley was on the stand. Mr. Brantley said he was passing down the street and he passed Warren Tyler; he did not know him, but the defendant was the man. Brantley asked Warren what was going on, and Tyler replied that the white folks were getting scared. Mr. Brantley said he contradicted this, and called him a liar twice. Mr. Ford told Brantley then to be seated. Warren Tyler then requested Brantley to keep the floor, as he thought he could introduce two witnesses who would impeach his testimony. Mr. Brantley asked him what he said, and Tyler repeated it again. Then Mr. Brantley made for a stick lying on the table. General Patton, who was standing by, seized the stick, and told Brantley that he could not do that. And I thought, after General Patton told him that, it was over, and Mr. Brantley was obeying what General Patton had told him. At that time, while General Patton was preventing Mr. Brantley from using the stick, Warren Tyler was walking off toward the door leading to the sheriff's office. As he walked, he seemed to carry his hand toward his pocket. There were some men between me and him then, and the next I heard was a shot. At that time shooting began all over the house, and I fell down under the bench, and lay there until it was all over. I heard General Patton exclaim, "Gentlemen, these things will not do; here is Judge Bramlette lying here dead." I saw no one armed. I lay under the bench until the crowd had dispersed, and then went to my store and found my wife alarmed and crying, thinking I had been killed at the court-house. There was no one after Tyler at that time; they were all coming up into the court-room to see Judge Bramlette. I went to my store, closed the front door, and put my head out of the window. Mr. Hugh Wilson was on the pavement, and told me to come down and open the door. I did so. He had several others whom I did not recognize; asked me if Warren Tyler was in my store. Some of them were armed. Thought Mr. Wilson

had a stick or a gun; do not know. He told me to come out. Being excited, and seeing a number of men with guns around the door, I refused to do so. I was standing in the door and Mr. Matt Christmore took me by the collar, told me if I did not come out I would get shot, and pulled me out. He seemed to be advising me. Some one I did not recognize took me by the head, put a pistol to my temple, and told me to get down in the ditch. I had then completely lost my mind. At this Dr. A. H. Smith ran up and told them to let me alone, that he did not think I knew anything about Warren Tyler. The crowd was crying that Warren was in there, and that if I did not tell, shoot him, and I gave up thinking they were going to shoot me. Dr. Smith shoved the men off and shoved me away, telling me to go into my house. They then all left me. The crowd appeared to be very angry and excited. They were shouting, "If he does not tell where he is, shoot him." I cannot tell how many there were, probably twenty-five; not a hundred. They were alarmed and excited at the death of Judge Bramlette. Everybody was pursuing Warren Tyler, saying that he had killed Judge Bramlette. The conduct of the crowd and the noise they made alarmed myself and wife very much. My wife was crying up-stairs, when I went up the second time. Do not know where the crowd went. From the time it commenced at the court-house the disturbance continued until about 9 o'clock that night, when it seemed to become quiet, until, about 1 o'clock, the bell rang for fire. I got up and saw the light. There were persons riding about on horseback from that time till day. I did not leave my house, as it is my custom to remain at home after closing up. I do not know what became of Marion White, Isaac Lee, and Henry Johnson. I do not know of any one who was engaged in killing of those parties. I know of no one who was armed or who committed an assault during that night. About a half hour after I got away from the crowd, I saw Warren Tyler brought out of Sam Parker's shop dead, and his body was carried off in a cart by his step-father.

Cross-examined:

The sound of the first pistol fired came from the door leading to the sheriff's office. I cannot say who fired it. I had just seen Warren Tyler moving toward that door, carrying his hand in his pocket. I was prevented from seeing Warren Tyler, when the first shot was fired, by several persons rising from their seats, between him and me. I think there were two pistols fired from that door. I suppose I heard a dozen or twenty shots fired in the court-room. I cannot tell whether any were fired from the rear of the room or not. As I went up home somebody asked me what was the matter. I replied, somebody has killed Judge Bramlette. I did not call any names, because I did not know who had shot. I did not tell Sam Parker that Warren Tyler and several others had shot in the court-room. I was not present at the public meeting Saturday, but was at the fire Saturday night. I did not see Billy Clopton that night. I did not see Mr. James Brantley at any time with the crowd. The crowd assembled at the corner about five or ten minutes after the shooting at the court-room.

Reëxamined:

At Parker's shop I made the remark that there was shooting at the court-room, and that somebody had killed Judge Bramlette. The crowd there, when I first came, were all colored men and women. I do not know whether Sam Parker was there or not.

LEMUEL HOBSON.

---

FREDERICK BASS, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a farmer. I knew Isaac Lee. I saw him on the street during the disturbance, in front of the court-house, and he appealed to me for protection. I went toward and asked him what was the matter. He told me he had been shot while climbing a fence. I casually looked at his wounds, and appealed to the crowd; told them I knew the old man; that he and his family had worked on my farm for years. From my knowledge of his general good conduct, I was confident he had nothing to do with the difficulty. The crowd opened and let him go. I told him to go to Threefoot's shop, and I would come and examine his wounds. As he turned from me, some one exclaimed, "Stop; what have you here?" They tapped his coat, put their hands in his pockets, and pulled out two large pistols. Of course, I could not interfere any further. Had some difficulty in appeasing the indignation of the crowd against me for interfering. Some remarked that they thought I was justified in attempting to save him. They took him and carried him into the court-house, saying they were going to turn him over to the authorities. I saw no more of him. I could not swear to the identity of any one in the crowd. I think it was immediately after the disturbance in the court-room, about 3 o'clock in the afternoon.

Cross-examined:

It was not more than fifteen minutes after I heard of Judge Bramlette's death that

I saw Isaac Lee in the crowd on the street. He told me he had been shot. I think he told me he had been shot in getting over a fence, and my impression was, it was the fence in rear of the court-house. The pistols found on him were two large brass-mounted dragoon pistols, as I think. When these were found on him, I at once thought he had come to town with the intention of participating in the disturbances, and interfered no further. I don't remember that I recognized any person in the crowd, except Isaac Lee.

FREDERICK BASS.

---

Dr. REDWOOD, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I reside in Meridian, and am a physician. I was not in the court-house when the difficulty occurred on the 6th of March. I saw the whole town in commotion, but did not go near Sam Parker's shop, and saw no crowd make an attack on Warren Tyler. I know William Clopton, alias Dennis. I was called to the court-house that evening to see some wounded men. I saw Clopton, who was lying in the sheriff's office, bleeding from wounds. I saw no violence done him, for the reason that I turned my back and walked off. I cannot identify any one in the crowd. I examined Clopton's wounds. He had about five gun-shot wounds, one of which, in the chest, I think would have proved mortal. I know nothing of the fire of Moore's house or the Baptist church. I know of no one who had any connection with the killing of Marion White, Isaac Lee, and Henry Johnson.

Cross-examined:

I turned my back to keep from seeing any violence done to Clopton. The whole town got in a stir immediately after the difficulty in the court-room. I made a superficial examination of Judge Bramlette. I think the ball entered the left side of the head, from the wound itself, but would not state positively, for the reason that I did not examine particularly.

---

MARSHALL WEIR, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and have been a policeman for two years. I was present on the 6th of March when the riot took place in the court-room. I had been there about ten minutes. I did not know who had been on trial. Mr. Ford asked Mr. Brantley what Warren Tyler had said. Mr. Brantley was on the stand as a witness. After Mr. Brantley had told what Tyler had said, Tyler then asked the court to let him introduce two witnesses to impeach what Mr. Brantley had said. When Warren said that, Mr. Brantley reached for a stick lying on the table. General Patton caught hold of him and said, "Don't do that." While I was looking at Messrs. Patton and Brantley, a pistol went off, the report of which seemed to come from between the doors leading into the sheriff's and chancery clerk's offices. I don't know who fired that pistol. After the first, everything seemed to be silent for about a minute. Then the firing became general. I cannot identify any one who shot. The first language I heard, after the first shot, was from General Patton, who commanded the peace. This is all I know of the riot in the court-house. Immediately after the firing ceased, as I walked out, I met Mr. Hugh Wilson leaning on the banisters of the stairs, leading from the court-house door. I remarked to him, "Mr. Wilson, this is very bad." He replied, "Yes, Marshall, it is." Mr. Wilson was not armed. I know no man who was armed around the mayor's office, or who went into Sam Parker's, or who shot Warren Tyler. I had gone home. I knew Marion White and Isaac Lee. I did not know Henry Johnson. I saw Marion White, Isaac Lee, and a man I supposed to be Henry Johnson dead in a pine thicket across the railroad. I don't know how those came to be in that pine thicket. I did not go nearer to them than twenty feet. They were lying on their faces dead. I first found out they were dead about 8 o'clock on Tuesday morning, after the riot; did not see the parties under arrest at the sheriff's office; know nothing of what caused the death of these parties; know nothing of the burning of the Baptist church or Aaron Moore's house, except that I saw the light between 12 and 1 o'clock; know nothing of the occurrences about the court-house and the sheriff's office on the night of the 6th, or the parties engaged.

Cross-examined:

The pine thicket mentioned is across the railroad at the foot of Lee avenue, about a quarter of a mile from the court-house; was at the fire on Saturday night and saw Clopton there. At that time he was talking a good deal, and seemed about half drunk. He was cutting up considerably.

his
MARSHALL + WEIR.
mark.

NELSON HODGES, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a merchant. I was at my store after the riot at the court-house, and in about ten minutes a large crowd came there, and as I was frightened and did not know what was the matter, I closed the doors. After I closed the doors, some one outside told me to open the doors. I opened the doors, and went out, after Mr. White told me they would not hurt me. A number of the persons said Warren Tyler was in there. I said, "Gentlemen, you can go in and see; I give you the privilege of searching." There seemed to be about twenty-five. Some had guns. The crowd seemed very angry and excited. They searched around, and the next thing I heard was shooting in Sam Parker's shop. I am not positive how many shots there were. There were more than three shots. I was very much frightened by the appearance of the crowd and the disturbance I had heard. The people in the house where I was were very much frightened, and a lady up-stairs was crying and hallooing that they were going to kill her. None of the crowd made any threats against me or assault on me, that I know of. Some in the crowd said that we were good boys; not to hurt us, and they left. I knew Marion White and Isaac Lee. I did not know Henry Johnson

Cross-examined:

Sam Parker's shop is adjoining my house. I did not know who was in there when the crowd was around. The lady who was crying up-stairs was Hobson's wife.

his
NELSON + HODGES.
mark.

---

THOMAS J. PELTON, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

On the evening of the disturbances I was at home. Apparently there was a great deal of disturbance. Men were passing about armed. I was not assaulted; saw no guns fired and no assaults committed on others. I saw strange faces in the city, but knew none of the names of the persons. They all had guns, and were taking more interest in affairs than is usual with strangers. I do not know that there were more strangers in town than usual. I know nothing of the burning of the Baptist church and Aaron Moore's house. On Monday evening, after the disturbance at the court-house, I was sent by the sheriff to get some arms out of a house, and was met by a body of armed men, who ordered me to leave the city before sunrise next morning. Mr. James Gully was one of them. I was sent after the arms, I suppose, to get them out of the hands of the negroes. The arms were at a house just this side of the colored Methodist church. The house was owned by a negro named Fairlee; did not execute the errand, but knowing that I was an obnoxious man, went home to keep out of danger; did not see any one go after Warren Tyler; know nothing of the three negro men who were found in the pine thicket.

Cross-examined:

It was about a half or three-quarters of an hour after the difficulty in the court-house that I went on the errand for the sheriff; didn't know of any guns being at Fairlee's house; do not know of any guns being kept anywhere, except for sale. Sturgis generally kept about thirty guns in his store for sale.

*Interrogatory:* Did you and Sturgis, or either of you, not admit that Sturgis had armed the negroes on the night of the fire; was this admission made, near Sturgis's house, in the presence of Hugh Wilson, John Lewis, John Kline, and others?

*Answer.* I did not, and neither did Sturgis in my presence.

I had reasons to believe that the negroes would be armed on the Saturday night of the fire. I believed that they would be armed, because the report went out that Bill Dennis was killed, and I thought that would cause a general fight. I have great influence with the negroes, and had a great deal to do with them. Bill Clopton was looked on by me as the leader of the negroes. On the night of the fire, I heard him use threats against the whites, but did not hear him call on the negroes not to help put out the fire. He said to the colored people, "The damned Alabamians have come over here to burn us up, and it had as well begin now as at any time." If there was any firing about the town when the fire commenced, I do not remember it. Firing was so general all over town, at all times, that I did not notice it. There was always a great deal of firing in the western, northern and northeastern parts of town, in neighborhoods principally inhabited by negroes. I have been a policeman about two months, and have attended mayor's court regularly, and know of no arrests made for shooting. It was almost impossible to make the arrest. I spent the night of the 6th on the corner opposite the brick steam-mill. There is where my family lives. I had been in Travis's bar-room about seven minutes when the alarm of fire was given on Saturday night. I had come directly from home, after eating supper. On the day after the difficulty in the court-house, I was in town concealed. I hid myself to save my life.

There was no violence, nor no one hurt, that I know of, on Tuesday, the day I was hid. I was told to leave before sunrise, and parties came to my house and repeated the same thing, and that was the reason I thought my life was in danger. I think Colonel Horn saved my life on Monday. No one had threatened my life on that day. After that I passed through the crowd by the court-house, and was not molested.

Reëxamined:

If there was an armed guard about the colored church, I know nothing of it. I know nothing of an armed guard around Moore's church. Sturges had only one gun not for sale, a Spencer or Henry rifle, which he kept in his room. I know nothing of Sturges arming the negroes on the night of the fire. The reason, I suppose, Colonel Horn saved my life is, the people were very much excited, and he requested me not to go into the crowd, but to step into some one of the stores, which I did. He did not assign any reason for warning me. I stated that I was obnoxious to a majority here.

Re-cross-examined:

The people were not excited about me, but may have been excited about Judge Bramlette's death.

T. J. PELTON.

---

BEN FRANCE, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a barber. I was present in the court-room about the time the difficulty commenced on the 6th. Do not know who fired the first shot. I saw no one shoot; saw no pistols drawn nor other weapons. I heard the first pistol report. It was somewhere about the door of the sheriff's office. As soon as it was safe, I got one white man before me and one behind me, and went down. I got between them for fear of being shot. I went straight to Johnson's grocery, near the mayor's office, about fifty yards from Sam Parker's shop. The door of Johnson's grocery was shut, and I couldn't get in, the boys having got scared. I saw men running in the direction of the court-house with guns. Saw none going toward Parker's shop, and heard no firing there. Saw no men, white or black, with guns about Parker's shop. Know nothing of the crowd that attacked Parker's house and shot Warren Tyler. When I reached Johnson's grocery and found the door shut, the people were much excited and the neighborhood in a state of terror. I left Johnson's and went around on Commerce street, where I met Captain Payne, and asked him to go home with me, which he did. I live about a quarter of a mile from town. I remained at home two days, and know nothing of occurrences of that night.

Cross-examined:

I do not know who was standing where the first shot came from. Saw Tyler leave the table and go in that direction; saw no one else go in the direction of the door mentioned. It seemed that that was the door from which the first shot was fired; don't know that I heard more than one shot from that door, but heard one; saw Judge Bramlette lying on the floor about a half minute after the shot was fired. I got under a bench, and happened to look in that direction after all the firing had ceased, and cannot tell whether he fell at the first shot or not. No white men attempted to interfere with me. Do not know that the boys were scared, but they afterward told they were, on account of the firing in the court-house. I judge the people were terrified and excited, because men with guns were going toward the court-house; saw Mr. Thompson, a white man, who told me I need not be uneasy. None of the men with guns molested me in any way.

Reëxamined:

Everybody seemed excited and terrified. The reason I asked Mr. Payne to go home with me was, that I was scared. I saw no one running about to get out of the way. I went into a Dutchman's grocery, and he told me I had better get out of there; that I would not be safe. He seemed very much excited.

Re-cross-examined:

I was frightened at the court-house, and did not get over it until the whole thing was over.

Reëxamined:

I might have gotten over my fright much sooner if I had not seen men with guns running about.

his
BEN + FRANCE.
mark.

R. J. MOSELEY, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am sheriff of this (Lauderdale) county. I was not present in the court-room at the commencement of the alleged riot on the 6th of March. I was at the mercantile house of Randall, Brown & Co. I immediately went to the court-house on hearing of the difficulty. I did not come immediately in the court-room. It could not have been over two minutes after the alleged riot, as I came hurriedly from Randall, Brown & Co's. I then heard that Warren Tyler had shot Judge Bramlette in the court-room and made his escape. I saw a large crowd gathering on the corner armed, and I summoned everybody there to arrest Warren Tyler. I then heard firing in the direction of Sam Parker's shoe shop, after which the crowd returned and announced that Tyler was killed. The citizens then tendered their services to me to aid in keeping the peace, and I deputized Captain Henderson, Colonel Layton Biese, E. V. Early, Robert EColeman, Hugh Wilson, W. A. Payne, Major Randall, and others, and ordered that all parties, white or black, be disarmed, who were not deputized by me or acting under authority. I simply summoned every man to assist in the arrest of Warren Tyler. At the time I made the deputation to arrest Warren Tyler, there was already a large crowd in the direction of Parker's shop, some of them armed. At that time the crowd were looking in different directions for Tyler. It was impossible for me to recognize any one in the crowds, as the whole town seemed to be out. It was probably three-quarters of a hour after the difficulty in the court-house that I came into the court-room and into my office. I saw Judge Bramlette lying dead in the court-room and William Dennis and Gus. Ford lying in my office. Dennis was alive, wounded, and Ford in a dying condition. I was not in my office at the time, and did not see William Dennis, alias Clopton, thrown from the verandah. I saw him on the ground, but did not know how he came there. I know no person who was engaged in throwing him from my office. Isaac Lee was carried into my office, and Marion White and Henry Johnson in the clerk's office. It was my understanding that they were put there for protection. I instructed Mr. Aleck Wilson to see that no violence was done them, and he told me he would have a sufficient crowd to protect them. I do not know when these parties were taken out. I was at home until 11 o'clock, and from that time making arrangements to protect Sturges and get him off. At the time I left the court-house, Lee, Johnson, and White were there, and with them Messrs. Lilly, Wilson, Belk, and perhaps twenty others, to guard them. My intention in coming up was to see that they had sufficient protection. That was the last time I saw them until next morning, when I saw them dead, on a dray, across the railroad, after the inquest. I know nothing of the burning of Moore's house and the church, only I saw the fire from my house.

Cross-examined:

I do not know that an inquest was held, but I ordered one. At the time I made the deputation to arrest Tyler, there were not only a crowd in the direction of Parker's shop, but in every direction encircling the block. There had been no violence or disturbance committed before I issued my order for the arrest of Warren Tyler. The citizens showed me no disrespect as an officer, but yielded obedience at once. The crowd I found, when I came down to the court-house, were standing in Sidney street and on the corners. It was five or ten minutes after I issued my order before I heard any shots toward Sam Parker's shop. They had to go about two hundred yards. I thought the guard I left with Lee, White, and Johnson, was sufficient for their protection. When I returned next morning and found them gone, I found marks of violence on my office door and on the front door leading into the court-room, which was broken open. I don't know and have never heard how nor by whom they were taken out. On the morning of the difficulty I received two notes from Warren Tyler, one of a threatening character. The notes were substantially as follows, to the best of my recollection; they are lost or mislaid, and I have searched for them, and cannot find them:

Mr. MOSELEY, *Sheriff:* Mr. James Brantley took occasion to insult me in the street, and called me a damned lying son-of-a-bitch, without any provocation whatever. Such treatment I will not and cannot stand.

Respectfully,

WARREN TYLER.

Dated March 6.

That I received while the mass meeting of citizens was going on, before the trial at which Judge Bramlette was killed. I have not seen any armed bodies of negroes around town, but have heard a great deal of shooting at night. I issued an order after the fire Saturday night for the arrest of William Dennis, alias Clopton, and for the disarming of all citizens except those under my orders. I issued the order for the disarming of every one on account of representations made to me by Mr. Joshua Smith of the incendiary character of the negro meeting at the court-house, on Saturday evening previous to the fire. Warren Tyler and William Dennis on Saturday morning asked me for the use of the court-house for themselves and Aaron Moore, and I granted it, on the condition that they would hold an orderly meeting. I was off in another part

of the city during the meeting, when Mr. Smith told me that if I did not go down there would be bloodshed, or words to that effect. The citizens have always been obedient when I have attempted to exercise any authority as sheriff. I did not see Mr. James Brantley doing anything wrong, or any other parties on the day of the difficulty.

Reëxamined:

I saw no armed body parading the streets previous to the difficulty. Warren Tyler told me he wanted the hall for the purpose of making speeches to reconcile the colored people against any removal, and other difficulties. Moore said he wanted to make a speech because Clopton had made a fool of himself, and he wished to allay the excitement. The part of Tyler's speech I heard referred to myself. He objected to my removal because, if I was turned out, a democrat would be appointed who would have the support of the white people, and would be able to keep down excitement when the radicals could not, and this would give the democrats an advantage. A colored man told me on Sunday night, after I had issued my orders, that he was arrested and a cap or two bursted in his face. The said man was found on the street armed.

The last note I received from Warren Tyler was not of a threatening nature. It was only to urge me to have the court convened, as he wanted to get through and go about his school.

R. J. MOSELEY.

---

DRED FINLEY, being sworn, deposed as follows:

I know very little of what occurred on Saturday, but I saw Aleck Joseph, and understood that there was going to be some demonstrations—a squad of colored people going to march and beat the drum, and I advised him not to do it. This was on Saturday, on the evening of which the fire occurred. I heard the drum beating that evening. Aleck Joseph was a policeman. I heard that night, about dark, that they had been making speeches at the court-house. About an hour afterward I heard an alarm of fire, and that it was Mr. Sturges's house. I remarked that some one had done that to create an excitement. Mr. Wilson and Mr. Goods came to my shop on Sunday, about 10 o'clock, and said that a meeting would be held on Monday, and certain parties had to leave here, such fellows as Warren Tyler and Billy Clopton. I went home and told Warren Tyler that there was going to be a meeting on Monday, and that he would be notified to leave; that they had Old Bill, and he would never get away; and advised him to leave, as there was too much prejudice against him. He replied that he hadn't infringed the law, and if he couldn't live here he could die here. Warren went down town, and when he came back said he had got the programme, viz: that he, Clopton, Pelton, and Sturges had to leave. He said the sheriff told him to stand square, and to send him ten or twelve responsible colored men to stand guard over Billy Clopton, as they had only some half-grown boys in charge, and that any body could take him away from them. He went and got the men. I do not know who they were. It was reported the second time, about a half hour afterward, that an armed body of men were passing my house, when Warren seized a gun and started for the door. I told him not to go out; that they might be under orders hunting for some one. I supposed the passing of the men, and his not knowing what they were after, caused his excitement. After the excitement began on Monday, I went into my shop and commenced closing up. I saw a good many armed and others getting arms. There was no assault made on me, except that Colonel Horn came up to me and took me by the collar, apparently drawing his gun. I told him that I had nothing to do with the affair, and his son Jere, who had a gun, and was standing behind him, said, "Let's go on," and they passed on. I went back into my shop and staid until I heard firing in the direction of Parker's shoe-shop. As the crowd was returning from that direction, I heard some one ask, "Have you killed him?" and a person, whom I took to be Mr. Belk, replied, "We have killed him as dead as hell." I then heard a hurrah on the balcony of the sheriff's office; saw men there, Mr. James Sanford being the only man I recognized who was standing with his gun pointing downward; did not know what he was aiming at. Afterward I came up and saw Bill Clopton lying on the sidewalk. I also saw Isaac Lee standing by wounded, apparently in the arm and thigh. Several persons wanted to kill him, when General Patton said, "Let me have him, I will take care of him," and took him off. As I went home I met a number of armed white men, but they did not interfere with me that night.

Cross-examined:

No one before, during, or since the excitement offered to do me any violence, except on the occasion mentioned. I have been uniformly treated kindly here. I saw no one offer to do violence to any of the colored people on the streets. I saw a few colored people standing on the streets. I saw white men, armed, pass by them without molesting them. I was present at the meeting of the white people on Monday morning. No one was ordered away at the meeting. I am Warren Tyler's step-father. I went home

to dinner Monday and told my wife, who was his mother, that he would be killed that evening. She asked me to tell him to come home; that she had his things fixed up for him to leave, and wanted him to leave immediately. I told her that I had said all I was going to say to him. I have often asked him, and his mother has done so repeatedly, to desist from the course he was pursuing, or it would result in his death. I have heard no one threaten his life. When I saw Sanford stooping over the balcony with his gun, I was standing on Murdock's corner, about a hundred feet distant. About as many men were standing on the balcony as could stand on it. Clopton was lying on the upper side, opposite from where I was. When I saw Sanford he was next to me, and I saw from his hips up. His side was toward me. I did not recognize any others on the balcony. Mr. Belk, when he returned from Parker's shop, was on foot. I live about two hundred yards from the church, that was burned down, and about eighty yards from the one now standing. I have never seen men armed standing around the colored church, because I never went to church at night. Have heard of them, and the reason given was, that they were afraid of being fired into. I have heard off and on of their having pickets around the church, during preaching, for three months past These churches have never been fired into that I know of. I have never heard any one threaten to do so. Aaron Moore generally preached in the Methodist church. He was the pastor in charge. I do not know whether he ordered pickets to stand guard, or whether they volunteered. I heard a great deal of firing in that neighborhood during the Saturday night of the fire, and other nights, too. It mortified me as much as any body else. I think there was more firing that night than usual. I heard the bell of the colored church ring the night of the fire, after the fire; did not know what it meant. On Monday morning Warren Tyler, so I heard, told the school children that he was giving them the last lesson he ever expected to give them; that he expected to be killed; that he was not going to leave unless law could be shown for it. I heard him say that there were speeches made on Saturday evening; that the meeting was peaceable; that the object of the meeting was to keep the Alabama Ku-Klux from coming here, and that some white people were present who seemed satisfied with what was done. Warren Tyler went to the fire that night, and carried a pistol with him; he always carried a pistol.

Reëxamined:

At the meeting of the white people, on Monday, the general tenor of Mr. John W. Smith's speech was rather inflammatory. He seemed to be of the opinion that there were some people of whom the community were tired, and that if the people resolved that they should leave, they would have to go. He was making a speech at the time. Though he didn't call any names, any one could tell who he was talking about. Mr. Shearer said the people were tired of Mr. Sturges. When I told Warren that if he did not desist from his course he would be killed, I alluded to his being fast and headstrong in the expression of his opinion. The firing at night has been general for years, and it is almost impossible to detect the guilty parties. I have been a policeman, and know how it is. The persons on the balcony did not seem to be excited, but were merry and laughing.

DRED FINLEY.

---

W. S. PATTEN was present when an inquest was held on the bodies of White, Lee, and Johnson, by Justice Cole. No witnesses were examined on the inquest and examination. There were sixty jurors present, and other persons, white and black. Lee's and Johnson's wives were present. Mr. Prewitt and J. C. Dobbs and Adams were on the jury. I think Belk was there also, and John Draughn. The conclusion of the jury was that White came to his death by gun-shot wounds in the breast; Lee by wounds in the head; Johnson same. The bodies were lying on their faces, not mutilated. Saw wounds on the breast of Marion, supposed from buck-shot, and in the heads of the other two with single balls.

Cross-examined:

I saw Aleck Joseph, and had a conversation with him on the 4th of March. I heard the drum beating down near his house. I expected they were going to have a muster. My object in going to him was to induce him not to march his troops through the streets. He promised not to do so. He failed to comply with his promise, and marched his company through the principal streets, himself and Billy Clopton at their head. He was a policeman under my orders. I was present a part of the time at the meeting of the blacks on Saturday evening, and had inquired its cause. I was told it was a meeting of the negroes, and "you rebs" had better keep away from there. When I came up into the court-house Billy Clopton was speaking. His speech was calculated to produce on the minds of his hearers that they must stand up to each other, and if officers failed to carry out the laws, they must be carried out, and that he was not satisfied with the result of his visit to Jackson. I heard Warren Tyler's speech. His

speech I thought very inflammatory, and calculated to produce discontent. He said, "We Loyal Leaguers must stand together," and illustrated what they must do by telling what the Indians did. "When one of their number was killed in town they came and took revenge, whether they got the right man or not." He then called for a show of hands as to whether or not they would stand to each other. The crowd, or nearly all of them, expressed their assent by raising their hands. When he took the stand he reached around, unbuckled his belt, and laid a pistol on the stand by him. Considerable applause greeted his appearance. I heard Aaron Moore speak after Tyler. A portion of his speech was very conciliatory. A part of his speech was inflammatory. He said Sodom and Gomorrah had been destroyed, and perhaps before many days this town would be laid in dust and ashes. The close of his speech was calculated to produce bad feeling and mischief. I was at the fire that night, and saw Billy Clopton. When I called on some negro men to help pull down a house to arrest the flames, and they were willing to do it, Clopton came up and told them not to do it. I told him it was my order, and he replied he was as good as I was, and would obey none of my orders. I went toward him and he left. I saw him rearing about fifteen minutes afterward, in a crowd of thirty or forty negroes near the Jones House. Pelton was there and probably had him under arrest. I told him if he would go home and stay there, I would not arrest him. He promised to do so. The next I saw of him he had been knocked down, and was lying in front of the burnt buildings about fifteen minutes afterward, in a different direction from his home. I did not see Warren Tyler at the fire. During the difficulty at the court-house on Monday I was present, and my attention was called to Tyler as he went toward the door leading into the sheriff's office. When he stated to Brantley that he wanted to introduce witnesses to impeach his testimony, his manner was very sarcastic, defiant, and insulting, as I thought. The diagram attached was made by myself, and is correct.

WM. S. PATTEN.

---

L. D. BELK, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and deputy sheriff of Lauderdale County. I was not in the court-room when the difficulty commenced. I was in the sheriff's office when the firing begun. I saw only one person armed at the time of the difficulty—Warren Tyler. I saw no violence offered any one in the court-room, or going out of the court-room. I was present on the streets all the time subsequent to the difficulty. Did not see Warren Tyler shot. Was near the house, in the back room of which he was killed, but cannot identify any one who shot him. Judge Whittaker was with me most of the time. I do not remember who else were outside. I cannot tell who came out of the house after the killing of Tyler. I myself went in after he was killed; saw him dead, and came out and locked the door, and told the crowd to fall into line and come to the court-house, which they did. There were forty or fifty shots fired in Parker's house—a great many. I think I heard some one say, "Kill him;" may have heard it said two or three times. I also heard men cry out, "Arrest him; don't kill him." The crowd, or a great many of them, seemed angry and excited. Cannot say which was the prevailing cry; think it was about a stand-off. I saw no acts of violence done by the crowd to any one in the streets. The guard put over Marion White and Henry Johnson, as special deputy, was Mr. Aleck Wilson, with instructions to get a sufficient guard. Do not know who he summoned. Lee was afterward put under his charge. I have no idea how they got out of the house. I had been requested by men who knew I was worn out, from being out two nights previous, at the fire and with Clopton, to go home and take some rest. I was not at the fire of Moore's house or the church. Do not live near them. Saw no bands of armed men going in that direction Monday night. I know of no violence done to any one that night. Know nothing of the killing of Henry Johnson, Marion White, and Isaac Lee.

Cross-examined:

I was sitting at the desk in the sheriff's office when the difficulty commenced, and saw Warren Tyler standing in the door leading to the court-room, with his face toward where Judge Bramlette was sitting, and his arm extended in that direction. The firing was going on at that time. I saw Tyler as he passed through the sheriff's office, and took hold of him. I attempted to detain him; as I came up to the door of the sheriff's office, he passed in and backed up into a corner. I took hold of him, and he wrung loose from me, and went out on the veranda and jumped out into the street. I then started back to the court-room, and as I got to the door of the sheriff's office, I met Gus. Ford falling toward the door, with his hands up. I went immediately in pursuit of Tyler, and called on every one I saw to assist in his arrest. I so ordered and considered that the crowd on the corner by Parker's shop were acting under my authority. I remember meeting several, and informing them that Judge Bramlette was killed, and Tyler had broke custody. I saw Mr. Moseley one time, I think, on the

street, just before Tyler was killed. I called on citizens to get arms and assist in the arrest. From the state of feeling previous to the difficulty, I deemed it necessary, when it begun, that citizens should arm themselves. During the excitement, I gave further orders to the citizens in reference to keeping the peace and patroling the town. The citizens were all obedient to my orders as they could have been. I did not state, in answer to any one, that Warren Tyler was killed as dead as hell, nor use any such language. I was asked if he was dead, and I replied, "If you were to see him, you would think so." I did not state to Tyler on Sunday that the guard over Bill Clopton were nothing but half-grown boys, and anybody could take him away from them. I did not tell him on that day that I wanted the colored people to stand square, and that I wanted him to send me a guard of ten or twelve responsible colored men; did not speak to him at all that day. I had, as I considered, a sufficient and responsible guard over Billy Clopton from Saturday night up to the difficulty on Monday. I had no difficulty in detaining or protecting him during that time. The exclamations made in the pursuit of Tyler I understood to arise from the excitement caused by the killing of Judge Bramlette, the escape of the prisoner, and considered them the involuntary exclamations of an excited crowd. The people were entirely obedient immediately before and after the killing of Tyler. I saw no violence or attempt at violence on any person on the streets, after the killing of Tyler. I saw a good many colored men mixing promiscuously through the crowd on the streets during the excitement, and there were no offers of violence to any of them. I remember that Judge Whittaker came to me, and asked me how many citizens I wanted, and assured me that they would obey my orders. I think he was acting in behalf of the citizens, and by their request. This was near, and rather in the rear of Parker's shop. He was not armed that I saw.

Reëxamined:

I do not know whether Tyler fired or not while he was standing in the door. Tyler got from the veranda down to the ground. The veranda is fifteen or eighteen feet from the pavement. I did not have the prisoners in custody who were on trial Monday. I announced from the veranda, as soon as he got loose from me, that the prisoner had broke custody. I did not see the sheriff for some time after I went down stairs. I myself told the citizens to arm and go after the prisoner. The guard over Clopton Saturday and Sunday nights was not composed entirely of young men. The guard was at no time composed almost entirely of young men. I saw Clopton's body after he had been brought up from the street. He was then breathing. I saw Clopton about the time he struck the sidewalk. I was standing on Johnson street. I saw none of the men who were standing on the veranda at the time. I saw no further violence. The reason I supposed Clopton's body came from the veranda was, I knew he had been put in the sheriff's office before that. I was standing about forty feet from the pavement under the veranda. What attracted my attention to the spot was, I heard the body strike the pavement very hard.

L. D. BELK.

———.

D. C. SMITH, sworn, deposed as follows:

I was Theodore Sturges's clerk, employed by him at his store, and recognized him as my employer. Mr. Wm. Sturges was not his partner, that I know of.

Cross-examined:

I was at Sturges's store on Saturday, previous to the fire, and most of the day. There was a fire in the store that morning; none that evening that I know of. It was below stairs, in the rear of the building. The stove-pipe went into a brick flue in the upper story. There was no fire-place or exit for fire from the pipe up-stairs, twenty feet from the front of the store. I left the store that evening at the usual time of shutting up—about dark. When I left the store there were three parties at the store—Edward Sturges, Theo. Sturges, and Mr. William Hurlbutt. I think William Sturges was there that evening. Do not know when he left. The alarm of fire was heard by me after I had gone home and eaten supper. I think it was between a half hour and an hour after I had left the store. The only disorderly conduct that I heard that night was Clopton making a noise in the rear of where Mr. Sturgis's goods had been placed. I called him to leave; that we did not want his noise there. I do not remember anything he said. I heard two or three guns, I thought, in the direction of the Jones House.

Reëxamined:

I supposed there was between ten and twelve thousand dollars' worth of goods in Sturges's house when the fire occurred. Saw none removed before the alarm of fire. Some goods were brought in that evening, purchased from various parties.

D. C. SMITH.

Dr. REDWOOD re-introduced:

When I turned my back, and went out of the room where Billy Clopton was, there were no shots fired, and I heard none after I left the room.

Cross-examined:

I made no examination of the wounds of Judge Bramlette, other than a mere casual one, and not entitled to any weight as a professional examination.

GEO. E. REDWOOD, M. D.

---

T. A. LILY, sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a school-teacher. I was present on the 6th of March, when the difficulty occurred in the court-room. I was guard a few minutes, or supposed I was, over Henry Johnson, Marion White, and Isaac Lee. I belonged to a squad, commanded by Major Randall, who was acting as special deputy of the sheriff, and was ordered to meet at the court-house at 7 o'clock in the evening. I staid there probably fifteen minutes, and left. I merely staid to relieve Mr. A. R. Wilson, who said he wanted more men to guard the prisoners. I saw four men guarding only two prisoners, and I went down to where Major Randall was forming his squad. I do not know the four men who were guarding the prisoners. I don't think I could identify them now. I think they were men who have been about town for the last two or three months. Do not think they were strangers. I should say that it was about half after 7 o'clock when I saw the four men guarding the prisoners alluded to. After the difficulty in the court-room, I immediately started home after my gun, and came back to the court-house with it. I started up Sydney street and went into a workshop, a short distance from the court-house, to look for Tyler; while there, I heard some one halloo, "There he goes," and immediately afterward I heard firing on Rhodes street. As I came out, I met a crowd returning from Rhodes street, and some said he had been killed, but don't know who made the remark. I saw Mr. Belk and Judge Whittaker there, and nearly all the men about town seemed to be there. I think I heard about thirty or forty guns fired around Parker's shop. I know nothing of the burning of Moore's house and the colored Baptist church. I know nothing of the killing of Marion White, Isaac Lee, and Henry Johnson.

Cross-examined:

I have been absent from the city, teaching at Lockhart, since Christmas, and for the last eighteen months have been from the town, more or less. When I was requested by Mr. Wilson to guard the prisoners, I thought it was for the purpose of detaining them. I thought four men were sufficient, was the reason I left and went to my own command. The reason I went after, and got my gun, was that from the conduct of the negroes from some days previous, and during the difficulty at the court-house, I thought it was necessary to arm myself in self-defense. From the conduct of the negroes at the fire I expected a general attack on the whites, and suspended my school for two days on that account. The persons I saw after the firing, and after I heard that Tyler was dead, seemed to be acting under Mr. Belk, and falling into line and going to the court-house. They yielded implicitly and promptly to his orders, so far as I heard. Judge Whittaker and Major Randall were acting in the interest of peace, and were trying to get the crowd to the court-house, and succeeded, in connection with Mr. Belk. I saw a number of negroes on the street, and saw no violence offered to them, nor to any one. This pursuit occurred immediately upon the killing of Judge Bramlette and the escape of Tyler. I was in town on Saturday of the fire. I went to the fire. I was watching some goods for Hurlbutt, and saw Bill Clopton with a colored boy about sixteen years of age, who had a merchant's letter book, copying brush, &c. Heard him tell the boy to carry the book home, and bring him his shot-gun. Immediately after that, I heard Clopton remark, "God damn it, they have burnt out Sturges, and they have burnt out themselves." A few minutes afterward, he met Aleck Joseph, and after leaving him, started towards the southern depot, and remarked, "God damn the white people; God damn all of them; if they want war, let them have it." It was generally understood that three young white men had been shot at, one of them in going to, and the others in coming from the fire. I was aware that there was a general apprehension for several months past in the community, among the whites, of a difficulty with the negroes, and this apprehension grew out of the continuous firing at night, in neighborhoods principally settled up by negroes. The prisoners I saw in the court-house were in the circuit clerk's office. I did not go into any other of the rooms.

THOS. A. LILLY.

---

ANN ANDREWS, sworn, deposed as follows:

I knew Isaac Lee. I saw him on Monday evening of the 6th of March. Saw a white man shoot at him that evening, a little this side of his house. Do not know the

man who shot at him. There was a man riding with him. Know neither of them; have not seen him since, and do not know whether Lee was hit or not. I am a stranger in town.

Cross-examined. *Question by the Court*:

Isaac Lee lives this side the colored Methodist church. The man was on foot who shot at him. The man who fired the gun was about forty yards off from him. Lee had gotten about fifty yards from his house in the direction of town. The man who shot called on Lee to stop once, but he kept on running. I was nearly scared to death. Do not know whether Lee had any arms on him or not. The man who shot was toward Isaac's house, and Isaac was toward town. Isaac Lee was about a hundred yards from me when the man shot at him. The man did not interfere with me or the family. Have been here about a year. Live in about two squares from the colored church, in the house with Isaac Lee. Do not know of pickets being stationed around the church.

her
ANN + ANDREWS.
mark.

---

HARRIET BARBOUR, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I live in this place. Have lived here ever since the cars commenced running here. Know Isaac Lee; I lived near him. Saw him on the evening of the 6th of March, and saw a man, who I do not know, shoot at him near my house. He was struck in the arm. Would not know the man who shot him were, I to see him; I was so frightened I didn't notice him. Saw the burning of Mr. Moore's house; saw no one there, but saw men standing on the hill near Colonel Shannon's house, about fifty yards from the burning house.

Cross-examined:

I have lived in the neighborhood of the colored Methodist church for about three years. There has been right smart shooting around there for the last three months. There was some shooting up there on Saturday night when the fire commenced. The Methodist church bell was rung Saturday night after the fire. The bell was rung to send men down to guard Billy Clopton; and there were white men between Rush's stable and the guard-house. Do not know that any men went to the church when the bell rung. I heard a black man say he wanted men to go down to guard Clopton. Do not know who he was. I reckon the ringing of the bell was a signal; that was what it was rung for that night. I do not attend the Methodist church; I attend the Baptist church. They had guards out around the Methodist church Sunday night. After the killing of Warren Tyler, two white men, one on horseback and one on foot, went into Isaac Lee's house, and Isaac ran out and jumped over the pickets. Saw no arms on him. The men ordered him to halt. He continued to run, and they fired on him. They offered me no violence. I saw Warren Tyler the night of the fire. He came up home, and went to bed while the fire was burning. Saw him before the ringing of the bell. I heard some men say he went to bed. Heard it next day. Some one asked if he was at the fire, and the reply was that he went to bed. I have frequently heard people say that Warren Tyler was very violent in his expressions toward the white people, but have not conversed with him myself. Isaac Lee was shot in the elbow, right in front of my door; when he was shot, I saw his elbow give way.

her
HARRIET + BARBOUR.
mark.

---

CHARLES MCELROY, colored, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I live in Meridian; am porter for the Ragsdale House. I saw the crowd around Parker's house. I do not know who fired in the crowd, and cannot recall the names of those who were there. I saw no acts of violence done to any one that Monday evening or night.

Cross-examined:

While the crowd was there I saw Mr. Belk there all the time. I also saw the sheriff ride up afterward. Mr. Belk came up with the crowd. I saw a few colored people standing around, and saw no violence offered them. I also saw some colored people in the crowd, but do not know that anything was done to them. I had always been treated kindly by the white citizens.

his
CHARLES + MCELROY.
mark.

GEORGE RIGGINS, colored, being duly sworn, deposed as follows:

I live in Meridian; am a barber. I was present in Finley's shop when Mr. Hugh Wilson told old man Dred, last Sunday week, that there would be a meeting, and parties would be ordered to leave; that Dred was deeper in it than he thought, and if he, Dred Finley, did not mind, he would be one that would have to leave. When the disturbance was going on, I was very much frightened; went into the back room of the shop; then went home, and did not come out until Tuesday morning.

Cross-examined:

My alarm was at the beginning of the difficulty in the court-house. I think Mr. Wilson asked Dred why he didn't make Warren Tyler do better, and asked him why he didn't take a stand for order here, saying that the white people supported him. I don't recollect whether he said there might or there would be a meeting. I was shaving him at the time, and he did not call the names of Tyler and Clopton; did not use the names of any person. I have always been treated kindly by the white people here. I have never seen any other treatment except to those who were disorderly and trying to keep up a fuss. When Dred went into his back room, he only remained there a short time and returned to the front room.

his
GEORGE + RIGGINS.
mark.

---

GEORGE MASON, colored:

I live in Meridian, and am a barber. I was in the shop when Hugh Wilson and Dred Finley had some conversation. The conversation was about a meeting to be called on Monday, and that certain parties had to leave, I believe.

Cross-examined:

I think he said the meeting would be held on Monday. He called no names, but only said certain parties. George Riggins was shaving Wilson at the time. I was up on Front street on Monday, during the excitement. No one attempted to do me any harm. I think I heard Mr. Wilson speak to Dred Finley about Warren Tyler. I heard him ask Dred Finley why he did not take a stand for order. Dred replied he did all he could. I think Mr. Wilson asked Dred why he did not try to make Warren Tyler do right, and Dred replied he could not control Warren.

GEORGE MASON.

---

SAM PARKER recalled:

I have been in the back room of my shop after the shooting. Saw scars of two or three bullets on the walls and door. Found Warren Tyler's pistol next morning. It had not been shot off, but three caps had been bursted on it. I found it under my bed. There was only one bed in the room. Mr. Wash. Brantley came and got the pistol, saying that he thought it was Mr. Moseley's. At the time of the shooting, or just before it, I heard Mr. Wash. Brantley, from the inside, say, "Here he is, under the bed!" This was about a half minute before the shooting commenced. I do not know that there was a single pistol fired before the crowd ran in.

Cross-examined:

When I heard Mr. Brantley say, "Here he is," I ran out, and the crowd ran in. There is one large hole through the back door, seemingly from a gun-shot, on the outside. I described the pistol to McDaniel, a colored man, who said the pistol was his, and that Warren Tyler had his pistol. Brantley told me that some of the men who were in the house said that Tyler shot at him the evening of the killing.

SAM PARKER.

---

HARRY MASON, being sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a resident of this city. I was here on the night of the 6th of March. I was at my house right near Aaron Moore's house when it was burnt. I saw a crowd of white men going toward his house before it was burnt. They were armed. They were there about seven o'clock; went away and came back about 8 o'clock. The fire occurred about two hours after they left the last time; know nothing of the origin of the fire. I was sitting in my house and saw a couple of men go down to where Aaron Moore's house was burnt, and get some fire to set fire to the church. Saw their faces when the fire lit up. They were white, but did not recognize them. Saw a crowd of

white men come over the hill, from behind the hill, after the church commenced burning. The men who had fired the church joined them. They staid until the church commenced burning. Cannot tell who they were. My wife was with me at that time. I did not see any one do any violence to anybody that evening and night.

Cross-examined:

My mother, George Moore, and his wife were with me after the burning of Moore's house. I know that there were bodies of men protecting the city that night. I knew that bodies of men had been appointed to patrol the town that night. I saw no one about Moore's house when it commenced burning. My house was within fifteen steps of Moore's. I had been asleep, when the fire awoke me. I was very much alarmed. Moore's wife left before dark, and hadn't been back that I know of. I was in Moore's house on Sunday, and he had a great deal of furniture in his house. She left all the furniture in there. When I woke up the fire had just begun to burn well. I got up on the top of my house, and staid there until Moore's house was burned up. I used water to prevent my house from burning. White men came up, and made the other boys help me keep my house from catching on fire. I do not know whether the doors or windows of Moore's house were open or not. About half of the house, the old part, was burnt before the white gentlemen got up there. He kept his furniture in the new part of the house. If his furniture burnt up, it burnt in the new part. I do not know that the furniture had been taken out. I sat up the rest of the night, and was in and out of my house after the fire all night. The two men who set fire to the church came from a direction east of my house—from the direction of John Cole's. They set fire to the church on the east side. They staid there till the church got to burning well, and then went west, over the hill; whistled, and were joined by a crowd. They met the crowd on the brow of the hill, about a hundred and fifty yards, or further, from where I was. They had guns. They stood and talked until the church had burned considerably, and then went off toward town. A good many citizens went up to the fire and a lot of Alabamians. The church was about a hundred yards from where I live. I know the Alabamians; have known them long very well. One of them used to clerk for Mr. Fallon and one for Mr. Keeton, and the others live over there and bring cotton here to sell. One of them clerked for Mr. Fallon last fall, and one of them for Mr. Keeton last fall. Don't know their names. I have hauled cotton from the scales to the depot for some of those I know to be Alabamians. Don't know their names. They did nothing but stand there and talk and look at the fire. My head is addled now, my mind mixed, and I can't answer the questions. I never knew of any pickets being put around the Methodist church. I was at church Sunday night, and if there were any armed colored men around the church I didn't see them. About a hundred white men, with guns, come up there that night. On the night of the fire, Saturday night, I was at the fire working, helping Sturges and Rosenbaum & Gully. I was not with an armed body of men near the Jones House. After the fire I went home; did not go to the church. Do not know who shot at parties going to the fire. This is the first I have heard of it. I saw Billy Clopton at the fire. Heard him cursing, but paid very little attention to him; had nothing to do with him.

Reëxamined:

There were four men, citizens, who said they were police, up there. They came to the church after it was burning good, and the fire bell had rung. The Alabamians, whom I knew, were in the crowd that came up after the fire commenced; do not know whether they were the same who came over the hill or not. After the burning of Aaron Moore's house, I locked my door because I was afraid. These four police guard were Wiley T. Coleman, Mr. J. O. Charles, a clerk of Mr. Wolff's—don't know his name—and the other I do not know. Mr. Wiley Coleman and his squad made the colored men help me save my house. Mr. Patton and Mr. L. D. Williams were there when Moore's house was burning.

his
HARRY + MASON.
mark.

---

JOE SHARP, colored, being sworn, deposed as follows:

I am a citizen of Meridian; a laborer by occupation. I was not in the court-house on the evening of the 6th, when the difficulty began. I was in Meridian on that evening. I had a chill at that time, at Mason's shop, which is between the court-house and Parker's shop, but nearer the latter. I saw Warren Tyler that evening, on a ditch between the court-house and Parker's shop. Heard no firing that evening at the court-house. I was sick, and went out to attend a call of nature, and met Warren on the ditch. He hallooed to me to come to help him. I went to him. He said to me, "For goodness's sake, help me; I am shot." I saw blood running from his hip. I was too weak to help, and got two men to help him. Don't know them. The two men helped him.

I followed on till they got to the store of Mr. Peters. They flung him in there. I went on, and did not stop until I got to the railroad. I made no halt at the store. I saw nobody after him, and no crowd coming in that direction, nor noise on the streets. I saw no pistol on him; he had a belt on him. This is all I know about it. I knew nothing of Marion White, Isaac Lee, and Henry Johnson being under arrest at the court-house that night, or of their being shot beyond the railroad. Know nothing of the burning of Moore's house or the church. Saw no acts of violence that evening or night. I had a chill about sundown, and went home and staid that night. There is one store between Peters's store and Parker's shop.

his
JOE + SHARP
mark.

---

JOHN LONG, colored, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a drayman by occupation. I was in the city when the disturbance occurred on Monday evening and night. Don't know what took place in the court-house; was not there. I know nothing of the prisoners, Lee, White, and Johnson. I live right across the street from Aaron Moore's house. Was there that Monday night. Saw no men coming near there (Moore's house) shortly before the fire. I lay down and went to sleep; when I awoke the house was in full blaze; after awaking, I looked out and saw the house burning; I saw only two men on horses standing there. Don't know whether it was set on fire or not; never was inside the house; I sat up about an hour afterward; the first I knew of the fire of the church, the roaring of the fire waked me; I opened my door, looked out, and saw that the top of the church was in a light blaze; I saw some white men standing out there, but don't know who they were—about four or five men; they were all on foot; don't know whether they had guns or not; don't know who fired the church, nor of an armed band coming up to the church from the hill; I know of no act of violence done to any one that night.

Cross-examined:

I have been here since the surrender; no one interfered with me on Monday; was at Broach & Brown's when the difficulty began; have always been treated kindly by the white people. I go to the Methodist church at night; know of no guards being placed around there; was in town when the fire begun on Saturday night; heard no guns as the fire began; have heard repeatedly, for the last three or four months, that Warren Tyler and Billy Clopton were very evil disposed toward the whites, and liable to get up a difficulty between them.

his
JOHN + LONG.
mark.

---

JOHN COLE, colored, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian; working streets is my occupation; I know nothing of the difficulty in the court-room; was there a few minutes before it began; I saw no armed men there; did not leave for fear of a difficulty, but went to my work; saw nothing of the occurrence on the streets nor anything of the killing of White, Lee, and Johnson. I live near the church and next lot to Aaron Moore; I was in my room asleep, when some women came in and woke me up, saying Moore's house was on fire; the house was falling in when I woke up; saw no armed men around the house; afterward three men rode up who knew me, and said they would help me if I thought there was any danger of my house burning; don't know who set the house on fire; I have no idea; after I saw there was no danger of my house burning I went to bed; I know very little of the church burning; I slept until day the next morning.

Cross-examined:

The men who rode up and offered to help were Messrs. Wiley Coleman, McAlpin, and McDonald. No one offered to do me harm that night or at any other time. Have always been treated well; was in Moore's house on Sunday; there was some furniture in the new part of the house; when I went home from work on Monday, about half an hour by sun, Moore's wife was there; also Bell Aiken, a colored teacher; she staid all night; Mrs. Moore left after supper; I told her I didn't apprehend any danger; that I had done nothing, but she could go if she wanted to; I don't know where she went; I saw no armed men passing near or about my house that night.

Reëxamined:

I know nothing of Mrs. Moore taking her furniture out of her house. Bell Aiken had her trunk at my house when I got home that evening. She staid at Mrs. Moore's and usually kept her trunk there.

his
JOHN + COLE.
mark.

PETER FAIRLY, colored, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of this place, and a carpenter by trade. I was in town when the difficulty arose; know nothing of the facts in the court-house. Know nothing of White, Lee, or Johnson, either their capture or killing. I know of no acts of violence to any one that night; went home and to bed. I know nothing of the burning of Moore's house; it was falling in when my wife woke me up and told me of it. I heard no one say that they knew who set the house on fire; know nothing of the burning of the church. I saw it falling in. I saw no one about it, but some colored people running about the streets. Don't know who they were. I saw no whites there; saw no armed men coming from over the hill behind the church.

Cross-examined:

I staid the evening of the difficulty at my work. No one showed any disposition to hurt me at all. There were a great many people passing all the time. Three colored people remained with me. Six or seven had been with me. No injury was offered to them. No one interfered with me on my way home that evening. Have been here four years; never was interfered with. There has been a great deal of shooting around the colored churches; so much so, that I was afraid to step out at night. I was at home when the fire begun on Saturday night; didn't come down. Heard a great many guns fired off when the alarm of fire was given in the neighborhood from my house to the fire. The course of Billy Clopton and Warren Tyler was calculated to lead to difficulty between whites and blacks. I kept out of their company on that account. Have been appealed to by the whites, Shearer and others, to intercede with Tyler and Clopton about this firing off of guns at night; have done so until I was forced to desist for fear of personal violence.

Reëxamined:

There had been, for perhaps a month, a great deal of firing at night, and perhaps no more that night than usual. There were three guns at my house, one my own, and the others belonged to a widow lady in town; were given to me to sell. Neither had been loaded since they had been there.

his
PETER + FAIRLY
mark.

---

JOHN CHRISTY, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of no place; am a minstrel by profession, traveling over the country; I have been here for four or five weeks. Was in Meridian during and when the difficulty begun; know nothing of the occurrence in the court-house. I know nothing of the killing of Isaac Lee, Marian White, and Henry Johnson. Saw no acts of violence to any one that night or at any time. The party who escorted Sturges off was a sheriff's party; they were keeping him from being harmed. Took no tobacco from Moore's house the night it was burned, and was not there. I was in the Phœnix Hotel that night when the church was burned; was in there twice that night. I had in my possession, for about two months, a pistol taken from Moore's house. The pistol was taken out by the sheriff's party. Never had in my possession tobacco taken from Moore's house. About eighty were in the company, and drank by squads. I don't know who were in the company; I know none of their names. It was about three or four o'clock in the evening when the pistol was taken out. I don't know Aaron Moore nor where he lived. The house that I saw was a white framed house, opposite the church; have heard it was burnt. I was not there after that time. I went into the house with about nine more. Don't know what their names were. The front room had a fine Brussels carpet on the floor; there was also a trunk and a couple of chairs in there, and one bedstead; two other rooms were furnished about as well—two beds and two trunks in one of them. Found no arms in there but a pistol. Have seen nor had in my possession any arms that came out of that house except the pistol. There was nothing brought out but the pistol, and did not hear them say that any others were discovered there. When I went in and came out of the Phœnix Hotel, I saw no armed men on the corner. Saw about eighty who had been to escort Sturges off, and none others. Know nothing of the killing of White, Lee, and Johnson. Don't know them; never heard of it; only heard of the death of Tyler, Clopton, Bramlette, and Ford. I saw Clopton fall off the porch; he was not dead then. I was out in the street, opposite, at that time, going to see Mr. Sturges. I did not look up to the balcony. Other men touched me, saying that he had fallen off the porch. I don't know who he was. I came from Mobile here.

Cross-examined:

At the time I went up to Moore's house was soon after he had broke custody and the difficulty in the court-room, and to arrest him if he could be found, and to search for arms.

Reëxamined:

I saw persons start after Moore; don't know the number—much under fifty and more than two or three. I paid no attention. I know nothing of a message being sent from this town to any quarter that evening or at any time. Don't know any who went after Moore when he went off from here.

JOHN CHRISTY.

---

GEORGE MOORE, colored, being duly sworn, testified:

I live here, and am a barber. I was in Meridian when the difficulty began, but was not in the court-room, and know nothing of the scenes there, nor about White, Johnson, and Lee. I don't live near Moore's house. Know nothing of the fire of Moore's house. I saw it burning; don't know anybody who does know of it.

GEORGE MOORE.

---

CHANIE COLE, colored, being sworn, testified:

I live near Moore's house, and was in my house when the fire occurred. I was asleep; heard the fire popping; woke up John Cole, and told him of the fire. Mrs. Moore was not there then. Don't know whether any furniture was moved out before the fire or not. I was not in the house that evening. I went in the yard and saw the furniture, as usual, from the open doors; carpets were on the floor. When Moore's wife came to my house that evening, she brought nothing but a child, and it was after the report of the disturbance in town. She was scared to death; all of us were. I first found the church was on fire from the noise of the fire. I know nothing of an armed band of whites coming up from behind the church, and know nothing of two men setting the church on fire. Don't know who set it on fire.

Cross-examined:

No one troubled me that night. Aaron Moore's wife left my house about dark. I don't know where she went to that night; I didn't see her after that. The alarm down town is what frightened us all. I live about half a mile from the court-house.

her
CHANIE + COLE.
mark.

---

MARY COLE, colored, being sworn, testified:

I was near Moore's house when it was burnt. I live near it. It was almost burnt when I found it out. I was asleep at the time. I don't know anything of the church being burnt. Don't know of any harm being done to any one during that evening or night, or of two men setting the church on fire.

her
MARY + COLE.
mark.

---

LOUISE MASON, colored, sworn, testified:

I was near Moore's house on the night of the burning. I was asleep and the fire awoke me. I staid up until the church was burnt. I saw two men go to where Moore's house was burnt, and take a chunk of fire apiece, and walk into the door of the church fronting toward town, and put the fire down between the two doors in the back of the church, close to the wall. This I judge from the light. A good many came up there after the fire began, but I didn't know any of them; saw bands come up from all directions to the church; from the back way, front way, and every way. I heard no signal. A great deal of whistling was carried on among them, like they were mocking a partridge. I don't know the names of the two men who fired the church; they were white, as I saw from the moonlight. I saw no acts of violence on any one that night.

Cross-examined:

I am Henry Mason's wife. The men with the chunks in hand went inside; did not set it on the inside. I saw no can in their hands. I saw them just as they were picking up the fire; they raised up the chunks and went right on to the church. They didn't stop or stoop down to pick up anything that I saw. I was looking at them all the time. Didn't see the men come out; they must have gone out at the other end of the church. I saw them no more that I know of. Harry was there in my room lying down. I told him of the two men; he came to the door, looked out, went back, and

came out no more. When I told him, the men were going toward the church with the fire. Harry knew nothing of them, as he was lying down. He was not looking out of the window, for the curtain was down and he could not see through it; the curtain was dark colored calico. I don't know whether he stood there until the men got into the church or not. As soon as I saw the church was on fire, I looked for Harry, and he was in bed again. He did not, I am certain, stand there until the church got to burning, nor was he up when the men got the fire from Moore's house. When I called him up the second time, he went over to his mother's house to help take out her goods. No one tried to harm me.

Reëxamined:

While standing in the door I did not look back to see if Harry was then in bed, until I called him. If the curtain had been raised any one could have seen the end of the church and any one who was going into the door. The fire flashed up suddenly and made a big blaze, as though powder had been thrown down there.

her
LOUISE + MASON.
mark.

---

ANN COLE, colored, sworn, testified:

Harry Mason came over to my house during the burning to help carry out the things I saw the church when it caught on fire, and saw that they were white men who set it on fire, but don't know who they were. It flashed up suddenly as soon as the fire was put down. I know nothing of Moore's house burning. Don't know of any acts of violence done to any one up there.

Cross-examined:

Was in my house, at the door, when I saw the men fire the church. The men were about thirty steps from the church when I first saw them. They had the fire in their hands. I saw them by the moonlight. They were walking from the direction of Moore's house when I first saw them, sideways to me. They were about forty steps from me. I can tell a white man from a mulatto man by moonlight by his walk; that is the way I told them. I can't explain the difference in the walk, but there is a difference. I saw no can in their hands. I staid in my door until the fire began. They did not come out of the door through which they entered, I am certain. If they had come out of that door I think I would have seen them. When I called for my son to help get my things out, he came as soon as he could get on his clothes. I don't know that it was the two men who fired the church, but I heard whistling.

Reëxamined:

There were two doors to the church on the same face of the house. Other men came up during the time it was burning, but don't know that the men who fired the house were there or not. The fire on one corner of the house had gone up to the roof before I called for help. It burnt very rapidly.

her
ANN + COLE.
mark.

---

NATHAN CLEMENTS, colored, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and a carpenter. Was in town when the difficulty occurred. I saw Tylor after he was shot. Saw no one shoot him; heard the guns. I saw the men come out of Parker's shop, but don't know the names of any but Mr. Hugh Wilson, Mr. Coleman, and Mr. Belk. All the young Colemans were there, and some came out of the house; I know not which. They were Mr. Robert Coleman's sons. I saw Dred Finley during the difficulty. I saw Mr. Shearer, who was shot in the hand and said there was shooting in the court-room, but didn't know who they were. I saw Mr. Horn. He drew his gun on Dred Finley, saying, "You all have started it, and we will end it." Dred then said I have nothing to do with it, and Mr. Horn said, "Show me the son of a bitch who has." He said nothing more, but passed on with his gun and troubled him no further. His son Jerre was not with him at that time. I saw Horn that evening about half an hour by sun, near Aaron Moore's house, with the company of Captain Henderson. Jerre with him then. I saw Henderson's company up there again between 8 and 9 o'clock at night. I know no one but Henderson, whose voice I recognized. They went up to Moore's house. They staid about half an hour or three-quarters. I don't know that they came back again that night. I heard men passing all night; couldn't go to sleep, because I was in dread all the time. The fire had caught the old part, and not the new part, of the house when I first saw the flames. I had been painting the house; had a good deal of paint in the house, and could have saved it, but was afraid to go there. I met Isaac Lee at the brick mill; we

went home together. He was afraid to remain at his work, he said. As we went on I saw a company of men. I stopped, leaned against the fence, and heard some one say halt. I looked round and old man Lee was running. The gun fired and Lee's arm fell. The men running after him were Mr. Henry Swann and Ike Adams. Lee ran across the street into Mr. Houston's yard. I saw no more of him until I had to bury him. I also buried White. I saw Johnson. The body, when I saw it, was not mutilated.

Cross-examined:

I passed through the crowd up near Parker's shop. No one interfered with me at all. It was hardly five minutes after the firing of the guns in Parker's shop until I saw Wilson, Mr. Coleman, and sons near the shop. I don't know but that they were going in to look at the body. There was a great many around there. I did not see Wiley Coleman at Parker's shop; another one, a young man just grown up, was not there. The men all left and came toward the court-house. I was standing from the shop, between fifty and one hundred yards, on the ground. I was on the corner opposite the mayor's office when I saw Mr. Wilson and Mr. Coleman and sons. Horn never took hold of Finley, that I saw, by the collar or any other way. I was looking at them. About 8 o'clock Henderson's company left Moore's house, and about 12 I woke up and the old part of the house was burning rapidly up through the roof. Both of the men after Lee were on horses at the time he was shot in the arm. I was standing against the fence with my back to Lee. I heard halt, halt, and then the gun fired. I looked around saw Lee's arm fall. The two men on horseback were at least fifty yards apart, and about forty or fifty yards from Lee. Lee was before one of them and side of the other. I saw two men; don't know that anybody on foot was with them. The men coming up the street leading to the colored Methodist church did the firing at Lee. They were about fifty yards from me when the gun fired. The firing was done about fifty yards just above me. They were going from me at the time, and did not get any closer to me. The one who came around was the one who fired the gun—Mr. Henry Swann. Ike Adams was also on horseback, was there on horeback, coming up the street. I thought Mr. Swann was trying to protect Lee, for he threw his hand up for them not to shoot at him; this was near the house of Mr. Houston. I did not see Lee when he was arrested. Lee's house, from where I was standing, was about forty or fifty yards. I saw Lee running from there. I don't know what made Isaac Lee run.

Reëxamined:

I saw Robert Coleman, Dunn, and Swann at the shop of Parker. I don't know whether he was arrested or not. I didn't see Lee draw any pistol upon them.

his
NATHAN × CLEMENTS.
mark.

---

JEFFERSON DAVIS, colored, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian; have been here four months; was here when the disturbance began, but was in bed sick. Don't know Isaac Lee, but saw a man running, and the children said it was Isaac Lee. Two men were after him, and hallooing for him to stop. Mr. Adams, a policeman, was one of them. He was on foot, the other man was on horseback. I did not see the shot but heard the gun. The man on horseback could have shot, but didn't that I saw. No horse that I saw was near Mr. Adams. I live near Isaac Lee's. This took place in front of my house. The man on horseback might have shot before I got up. He had a double-barrel shot gun.

Cross-examined:

Mr. Adams was not on horseback. The man on the horse I did not know. The men hallooed to him, stop, stop, before they shot, and then I heard the gun fire. I then got up and saw Lee running. The man on horseback ran up within twenty yards of him, but did not offer to shoot him. I don't know what Lee had been doing before I heard the order to stop, stop. Both followed him on to Houston's yard. I saw him go in. I don't know where Moore's house is, and know nothing of the two fires on Monday night or Saturday night.

his
JEFFERSON × DAVIS.
mark.

---

TIM HOMER, being sworn, testified:

I am conductor of a freight train on the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad, southern division. I am not conductor of the passenger train which came in and out on the night of Monday and morning of Tuesday. Freight train is due at Meridian at

5.40 p. m., and leaves 5.15 a m. The conductors change at Meridian; the one who came in on the 10 o'clock train Monday night did not go back the next morning at 2.35. Don't remember who came in that evening. There are two conductors, Messrs. Waldron and Marsh. I think Mr. Waldron came in that evening. A train leaves Meridian at 12 o'clock at night for Selma. No body of armed men came in on my train that evening. A good many men went out next morning. Some had guns and some had pistols. The first one or two, I think, got off at Toomsuba, some Cuba, York, and Eutaw. Toomsuba is in Mississippi. The others are in Alabama. The men that I knew were Mr. Norvell and Pres. Nash, Livingston, and Doc. Reynolds, of Eutaw, and, I think, Bob Fewell and Charlie Bouyer, of York, and Mr. William Lynn, of Cuba.

Cross-examined:

I don't remember who had arms. I think some of the men were armed. Mr. Fewell and Bouyer, who got off at York, are employés of the road, and were going back. Mr. Nash, also, of Livingston. I don't know who got off at Toomsuba—not acquainted with them. I have passengers nearly every morning going out. There is a passenger and a second-class coach, and I frequently have a crowd of men going out with me. Most men travel with arms; some with guns and some with pistols, and have been since I have been on the road. I noticed nothing unusual on the part of the passengers on that trip. Frequently have as many as were on that trip.

Reëxamined:

There was shooting out at the windows that morning, but that frequently occurred at other times. Very often I bring in the same parties that were on the train. Sometimes these would shoot, at other times, and sometimes others.

TIM HOMER.

---

ANDY WALDRON, being sworn, testified:

I am conductor of a passenger train on the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad. I was on the train which went out on Monday, March 6. A body of armed men came in that evening. I did not go out Tuesday morning. Mr. Marsh went out. The men numbered about thirty-five or forty. Some had guns and some had pistols, and some were not armed at all. Some came from Eutaw, Livingston, York, and Cuba. I know very few names. I saw Mr. Norvell after I got here, but don't remember whether he came on my train or not. I saw on the train Preston Nash, and think I saw Joe Reynolds, but couldn't say positively; Robert Fewell and Bouyer. I saw Mr. Morgan Lynn. I don't know William Lynn. I remember no others on the train. I gave them one car to themselves; so I didn't recognize many of them. Those mentioned came in that party. They all, those mentioned, got off together at Meridian, unless they got off at the last station and came up into town.

Cross-examined:

I had no unusual crowd that evening. The above-mentioned stations are regular passenger stations. The car the crowd got in was the only coach attached to the train except the second class from Eutaw to York. Meridian is the terminus of the road, and all got off together here. Passengers always come up to town when they get off except those who stopped at the Ragsdale House. Passengers usually travel with arms. There was nothing unusual in the getting off the train.

Reëxamined:

The crowd was not excited, nor had they been drinking. They met other persons here at the depot, and no more conversation than usual. I don't know whether they came to town in a body or not.

A. WALDRON.

---

J. W. COLE, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and am a clerk; I was in town during the difficulty; I am the magistrate who held the inquest over the bodies of Judge Bramlette and Gus Ford in the court-room. L. D. Williams and A. R. Wilson were introduced as witnesses at the inquest. The jury were as follows: L. K. Latham, W. M. Rush, F. Levy, G. L. Thompson, D. Rosenbaum, J. J. Griffin, J. W. Turner, Josiah Thomas, C. I. Sherman, Henry Sherman, R. Lamphere, and a J. McFarland. The finding was as follows: "We, the jury, find that Judge E. L. Bramlette came to his death by a pistol shot in the hands of one Warren Tyler, the shot taking effect in the left temple and passing through the head." The same jury sat over the body of Gus Ford. The verdict was as follows: "We, the jury, find in the case of Gus Ford that he came to his death by a pistol or gun shot from the hands of some unknown person or persons." The shot took effect in the right side. I held the inquest over the bodies that were found beyond the railroad about two hundred yards, on the south side, and at the head of Lee street. No physicians were present.

J. W. COLE.

J. A. McDonald, being sworn, testified:

I was in town during the difficulty; was in a sheriff's posse when I went to a house and told that it was Moore's. I was at the court-house when the alarm was given of the fire of Moore's house, and got on my horse, and went there as quick as I could. I met no one that I know of as I went up there. The main part of the building had not fully got on fire when I got there. I staid there until I saw that there was no danger of other buildings catching from it, and then I went away. I don't remember the time of night the fire occurred. I went from the fire to the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad depot.

Cross-examined:

I never saw the house of Moore before that night. The rear part was on fire when I got there. The front door was open. I looked into the house and saw no furniture. I think I would have seen it, such as tables, chairs, and bedsteads, if it had been in the room. I saw some plunder just beyond his house about fifteen or twenty yards. I saw no furniture taken out of the house. If there was any furniture taken out it was taken out before I got there. I was about the first one who got there after the fire began. I urged the blacks to come out and help to protect the houses near by from catching on fire. The house was pretty well burnt up when I left. Don't know that my party went to the Alabama and Chattanooga Railroad depot; rather think they did not.

Reëxamined:

There might have been a carpet on the floor of Moore's house. It is possible that there might have been furniture; but I looked closely; my attention was called to it by some one saying, "Moore has not lost anything; he has fifteen hundred dollars insurance on his house, and there is no furniture in there that I can see." We were on horses and looked in at the doors and windows to see if there was any furniture, but did not go into the house. I saw some plunder about fifteen or twenty yards beyond Moore's house, in the middle of the street, in front of another little shanty. I saw an old negro woman who said it was hers, and that she did not live in this town.

J. A. McDONALD.

---

W. M. Rush, being sworn, testified:

I was on the coroner's jury who sat over the body of Judge Bramlette. I looked at the wound on one side. The edges of the wound were in. It was the left side of the temple. I had my finger upon the wound.

W. M. RUSH.

---

C. I. Sharman, being sworn, testified:

I examined the wound on the head of Judge Bramlette. The ball entered from the left side. I have been a practicing physician.

Cross-examined:

I was in the court-room when the affray began, and was sitting about six feet from Judge Bramlette, just behind James Brantley; I saw Tyler; he was sitting to the left of Bramlette, near by, just before the firing began. When the first shot was fired, Tyler was near the door leading to the sheriff's office, which would make him on Judge Bramlette's left. I saw Warren Tyler fire the first shot that was fired in the court-room, near the door leading into the sheriff's office. The first shot killed Judge Bramlette, and was fired by Warren Tyler. I saw him, Bramlette, fall over at the first shot. I am not certain that Tyler fired more than one shot. I heard several shots from the direction of the sheriff's office; and Tyler retreated in that direction. I saw Gus. Ford falling near the door leading into the sheriff's office. At that time Warren Tyler had retreated from that door towards the sheriff's office. There is a door leading into the sheriff's office, opening towards the door where Gus. Ford was falling; so a person inside the sheriff's office could shoot a man standing where I saw Ford falling. The distance between the two doors is three feet. The hall between the court-room and the sheriff's office is about four feet wide. At the time the pistol was fired, which killed Judge Bramlette, Brantley was some three or four feet out of the range from Tyler to Bramlette; a little to the left and front. Tyler was within some fifteen or twenty feet from Judge Bramlette when he shot. Gus. Ford was a policeman.

Reëxamined:

I saw the flash and smoke of Tyler's pistol. I saw pistols in the room, but don't know now who had them. I was excited and trying to take care of myself.

C. I. SHARMAN.

A. B. WAGNER, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and was in the city when the difficulty began. I was not in the court-room, but was in my shop at work.

Cross-examined:

I was aware of an excitement existing here since the fire on Saturday night, and a general apprehension on the part of some civil officers and citizens of a collision between the blacks and whites. The sheriff had put on a special police to preserve the peace. Mr. Belk was present with the people that I saw on the streets, and who were acting, as I thought, under his direction and order. It was understood at that time that Tyler had killed Bramlette, and was fleeing from justice, and they were in pursuit of him. There has been a great deal of disorder amongst the negroes for several months, by firing and carrying guns at night. It was my opinion, from my knowledge of the general conduct of the negroes for some time past, that when I heard the difficulty in the court-room, a general riot had begun on the part of the blacks, and so much so, that I went immediately to my house and got my gun and pistol. I know, from hearing of it, that certain young white men, Messrs. Williams and Hodges, had previously been arrested by the negroes, let loose and shot at.

A. B. WAGNER.

---

J. J. SHANNON, being sworn, testified:

I was present during the afternoon and night of the difficulty. The only acts of violence I saw during the affray, was Billy Clopton falling from the balcony of the sheriff's office. Don't recollect who they were, but there were people upon the veranda. I was at the depot that night; two trains came in while I was there—the Alabama and Chattanooga and the M. & O. Railroad trains. There were about twenty or twenty-five persons armed, came in on the Alabama and Chattanooga train. They came out on the platform, and I left them there. They were all together when I left. I saw no more of them. I went home; did not recognize any of them.

Cross-examined:

Others got off the train that evening, but my attention was particularly called to them, as they yelled (two or three of them) when they got off the train. There had been, for several times, considerable apprehension, on the part of the whites, of a collision between the races. There has been a great deal of firing off of guns at night. I have heard volleys of guns fire near my house. From my house to Moore's house is about two or three hundred yards, and to Isaac Lee's house is about two hundred yards. I saw no evidence on the part of the citizens to disobey the sheriff. There was considerable excitement and confusion. The deputy sheriff was with the crowd of citizens, and they seemed to be acting with him to capture Tyler. At the time I heard the firing in the court-room, I suppose, from my knowledge of the state of affairs, that a fight had begun between the whites and blacks.

Reëxamined:

I had a pretty good opportunity of knowing the sentiments on both sides. There was a good deal of alarm and apprehension on the part of the whites, from the shooting at night, and what was said to be the talk of some negroes. The shooting that I heard every night was in that part of the city inhabited by the blacks. I heard as many as twenty guns one night near my house, and one apparently in my back yard. There was a bitter feeling against certain black people on account of their reported threats, to the effect that they would burn the town and kill the white people; that there would be a big fight between the races. The negroes were Billy Clopton, Isaac Lee, and Warren Tyler. I heard this from a black man living next door to Lee, whose name is William Shaw. He is a truthful and honest negro. I heard of the threats made by Isaac Lee against the whites since his death, and of the others before.

J. J. SHANNON.

---

WILEY COLEMAN, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and was present in the city when the difficulty began. I did not go into Parker's shop. I don't think I saw in the shop. I don't know what took place in there. I don't know who went into Parker's shop or who came out. I heard no exclamations inside the shop.

Cross-examined:

My brother, Marcellus, was not in town that evening at all; Dolon was not there either. These are all the brothers I have grown, except one. My father did not attempt to shoot Sam Parker that I saw. He seemed excited and talking loud, as

were a great many of the crowd. I did not interpose at any time to prevent my father from shooting Parker, or any one else. As soon as I saw the fire of Moore's house I galloped up there, being on horseback, and the rear of the house was on fire; the front had not caught. There was no furniture in the house that I saw. I was on my horse and could see through one door and the windows. There was at that time, and for some time past, a considerable apprehension of a general attack from the blacks.

Reëxamined:

I saw in the middle of the street a pile of something, bedding, &c. It looked to be about fifteen feet long. The doors were not broken open that I know of. One door, I know, was closed, and I think one was open. I don't remember to have seen any more doors.

W. T. COLEMAN.

---

R. L. HENDERSON, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of Meridian, and was in command of a squad of men during the difficulty. Don't remember who they all were. Christy and Spinner I remember, and also a young man by the name of Smith. We went, the last time, to Moore's house in the evening. I was near the Phœnix hotel when I saw the fire of Moore's house. I then went up towards the fire to the Presbyterian church. I supposed it was set on fire to draw the people from this portion of the town, and did not allow a man to go to the fire. I gave permission to a few to go as far as Sturges's corner. I think the whole squad went to the Presbyterian church. We did not remain there longer than half an hour and returned to the hotel. I was acting under orders from the sheriff, and I was acting very cautiously and guardedly.

R. L. HENDERSON.

A. R. WILSON, being sworn, testified:

I was in Meridian on Monday, the 6th day of March, and in the court-room. I saw one pistol fire, which was fired by Warren Tyler. This was the first shot fired in the court-room. I had two prisoners in my charge that night, but don't know their names. Mr. Belk turned them over to me and told me to get a sufficient guard. I took them up into the circuit clerk's office and got two or three to assist me in guarding them, whose names I don't know. I remained with them until the sheriff came down from supper. I then told him I would got my supper, and left for that purpose, and told the sheriff that the prisoners were under the charge of those men. I did not return to take charge of them. I live at Toomsuba and went to the depot to take the train for home. I don't know what became of the prisoners. I didn't see any armed men come in on the train from Alabama. I heard two or three halloo when the train arrived, as you usually hear at depots on the arrival of trains. I didn't see the 5 o'clock train from Meridian pass Toomsuba the morning of the 7th of March.

Cross-examined:

I was sitting, when the difficulty began in the court-room, on the right hand side of the door leading into the sheriff's office. Tyler was opposite and about two or three steps from me. I saw him draw his pistol, present it, and fire in the direction of where Judge Bramlette was sitting. I didn't see Judge Bramlette fall. No one was between myself and Tyler when he fired. I noticed the relative positions of Judge Bramlette and Brantley. Brantley was to the left and in front of Judge Bramlette, about three or four feet, when Tyler fired. Brantley was then three or four feet from a direct range from Tyler to Bramlette.

A. R. WILSON.

---

THOMAS ALLEN, being duly sworn, says:

I am not a citizen of this place, but was here on Monday night, the 6th of March. I was a guard over two negroes in the clerk's office. I was placed over them by the deputy sheriff, and remained there from about 7 o'clock until 11 o'clock. I know none of the parties who were guards; they were all strangers to me. I have been here only about three weeks. I only volunteered my services for a short time. I wanted my supper, and called from the window for relief. Two men came to relieve me and I left; don't know the two men who came up and relieved me. The young man, don't know his name, who was on guard with me, left also, when the relief came. It was about 11 o'clock when I left the circuit clerk's office. There was no officer, that I know of, in charge of the two negroes when I left. I did not return to where the two negroes were any more that night.

THOMAS ALLEN.

The following witnesses for the defense being introduced and sworn, say as follows:

J. W. McMULLEN, being sworn, says:

I live at Meridian; am deputy clerk in the chancery clerk's office, which is in the court-house. I was in the court-room a part of the time on Saturday evening, March 4, during a public meeting held there by the blacks; a part of the time I was in the chancery clerk's office and on the streets. There were about two hundred persons in the court-room at that meeting. I suppose there were some six or eight whites in the room. Public speeches were made by William Dennis, alias Clopton, Warren Tyler, and Aaron Moore. Dennis was the first to speak. The object of the speech ostensibly was for peace, but the gist of his harangue, while it was not against any particular political party, was against the white race, and occasionally against the democratic party. Don't remember the expressions used, but the language was of such a nature as to create in my mind considerable alarm, and to such an extent as to induce me to retreat into the chancery clerk's office and report to J. R. Smith the impressions that were made on my mind by the harangue then being made by William Dennis, and made me remark to Smith that Dennis had a crowd, whom he was addressing, perfectly under his control, and that I was afraid, or at least was apprehensive, that if he had so ordered, the crowd would even come in and murder me in the chancery clerk's office; that if Clopton would just say there were "White men in the room, go for them," they would have obeyed him, irrespective of party. Then Smith said he would go and see the sheriff and get him to stop it. Smith then left the office. I remained until Dennis was through with his speech. I considered Clopton's speech very inflammatory from what I heard of it. The negroes, in their applause, were laughing, seemingly in response to the sentiment expressed by the speaker. The next speaker was Warren Tyler, who mounted the stand, and before he commenced his harangue, unbuckled his pistol from his waist and laid it on the stand with great sang froid. I became alarmed and left the court-room and did not remain to hear his speech, but went out on the streets. I feared that some violence might be committed on the whites present. I returned, however, about the time he was closing. He seemed then to be speaking in a run of good humor, but criticising the acts of the whites and the democratic party or Ku-Klux, which created considerable laughter among the negroes. Aaron Moore spoke next. As he was going up I caught him by the sleeve and told him to please make them a peaceable speech. My object in so telling him was for him to correct the bad impressions and ill feeling that I thought had been engendered by the previous speeches. His speech was of such a nature as to create in my mind the opinion that he was in full sympathy with his race, but did not think that he said anything particularly violent. I sent around to Aaron Moore for him to introduce a resolution to the effect that no more shooting should be carried on by the blacks. The resolution was not introduced. I heard the expression in reference to Sodom and Gomorrah, but don't know which one of the speakers used it. It was to the effect that Sodom and Gomorrah had been burned up, and possibly might be repeated. I heard one of the speakers use this language: "Take the Indian style; if one is killed they will have one to pay for him." There were other illusions made to the effect that if the town burned down let it burn. I don't know who said it, but think it was Tyler.

J. W. McMULLAN.

---

THOMAS EVANS, being sworn, testified:

I was in the court-room on Saturday, March 4, at a meeting held by the blacks. I heard the close of Clopton's speech and part of Tyler's. Clopton's speech seemed to inflame and excite the negroes, and his object seemed to be to put other negroes forward and keep on the good side himself. He wanted it to appear as if he were for peace, but at the same time stir up strife among the whites and blacks. Tyler seemed to be against the whites all the way through. He abused them tremendously, and the audience applauded him. They were principally colored, only six or eight whites present. Some of the remarks of Clopton was: "I have some seven or eight hundred dollors here, and expect to die here, and that Ku-Kluxing had to be stopped." Warren Tyler said that every white man was a Ku-Klux, and would cheat a negro when he could, and especially when he got him in figures he would be sure to come out amongst the noughts. Tyler took off his pistol and laid it on the stand when he come out. Tyler said there had been several insults to him from the whites, and if any more did it he would slap them in the face, and advised them to do the same. This remark was applauded.

THOMAS EVANS.

---

Captain L. H. KERLEE, being sworn, testified:

I was present in the court-house when a meeting was held on the 4th of March by the blacks. I heard a part of Clopton's speech, and a part of Tyler's speech Tyler

introduced a resolution for the self-protection of their race against the white people or the Ku Klux. He then read a list of Ku-Klux outrages, beginning with Adam Kennard, and then Joseph Williams, and Kiser, who had a mark that would follow him to his grave. All this was received with great applause. He afterwards stated that his life had been threatened, and the next time he heard of it he would get his six-shooter, hunt the man up who threatened it, and walk his log.

L. H. KERLEE.

---

J. R. SMITH, being sworn, testified:

I was at work in the chancery clerk's office when the meeting was being held. Judge Gibbons and McMullan told me that the speeches were inflammatory and incendiary, and Gibbons said he was apprehensive at that time that there might be trouble in the court-room, and suggested leaving for safety, and went down with me. As I stepped to the door I heard Dennis saying something about the Alabamians, and that they (the negroes) would take things into their own hands. I thought it was prudent to notify the sheriff, and did so.

J. R. SMITH.

---

J. L. DUCK, being sworn, testified:

I live in the northwestern portion of the city. I was here during the fire on Saturday night; I was at home when the alarm was given, and came to the fire. As I came down I saw two colored men; I know only one of them by name—Ned, I think—Ned Horn. I heard a conversation between them about Sturges' store-house burning, and heard one say: "Don't you understand that; don't you understand nothing?" About that time they saw me, and ceased. I met another colored man, with a pistol in his hand, who said there was a big fire down in town, but was afraid to go down there because there was so much shooting. I had just heard several guns fire in the direction from which he had come. I saw William Sturges; Marshall Weir, colored, was with him; I first saw them in the street, near Theodore Sturges' corner, coming down Lee street toward the fire. My house is about six hundred yards from Sturges'. I had come at least six hundred yards after I heard the alarm when I saw Billy Sturges going to the fire. I had some conversation with Sturges about the fire. Sturges and Weir were walking leisurely along, and seemed to be talking about something else; the fire could be distinctly seen from where they were. I asked him how and where the fire originated? He said he had no idea—none in the world. He then said his brother, who had recently come here, was grieving over $200 that he had up stairs, and was afraid to go up there for fear the roof might fall on him. As soon as the alarm of fire was given that night, firing of guns began simultaneously in those districts settled by negroes. I went home about 12 o'clock, after the fire was arrested. After I got home the negro Methodist church bell rang, and in about twelve or fifteen minutes I saw armed colored men running towards the church; I saw but two parties of armed men, in number, about seven or eight. As they left the church that night, several armed blacks passed near my house, and about thirty or forty shots fired off. There had been for several months a great deal of disorderly conduct on the part of the blacks, by firing off guns at night; the firing at night, I supposed, was by the blacks; in the day, I saw them. The firing for several days previous to the fire on Saturday night was very considerably increased. Myself and family were alarmed on account of this firing, and excitement caused by the fire, and asked that a guard or patrol be sent to protect that part of the city. I have passed by the church, but not very near; never saw armed guards there, but have frequently seen armed colored men going to and passing from those churches. I heard of the meeting of the blacks in the court-house, either during or after the fire on Saturday night, and that it was an inflammatory and incendiary meeting. There was in the minds of the public here a general apprehension that there might be a collision between the blacks and whites, growing out of the fire on Saturday night and the general disorderly conduct of the blacks.

JAMES L. DUCK.

---

JAMES MARTIN, sworn, testified:

I live in the western part of the city, down the Jackson railroad. I came to the fire Saturday night; I met Bill Clopton as I came to the fire; I saw him while the fire was burning fire off his pistol two or three times on the street leading to his shop; I heard him cursing and rearing considerably that night. I saw two negroes, as I returned from the fire, armed, and standing near the Jones House, and about one hundred and fifty yards from the fire.

JAMES MARTIN.

J. G. FLOURNOY, being sworn, testified:

I was here the night of the fire; I went first to Hurlbutt's store; then immediately to Sturges'; the fire had not burned through the ceiling overhead when I got there; there was no fire in the lower story—it was overhead, next to Hurlbutt's store, fifteen or twenty feet from the front; the fire seemed to be some eight or ten feet in length on the wall, and some three feet wide, extending from the wall; I saw through the ceiling. I heard some threats as I went to the fire, which were made by a negro man, and about this: "Damn her! burn her up! burn her up, boys! Damn old Meridian! she has given us a heap of trouble; burn her all up to-night!" This language seemed to be very earnest. About that time a negro approached him and told him to hush; and he said: "If you put your hands on me, I will kill you." I then pointed out the negro to Mr. Everman, a policeman. That evening, about 5 o'clock, I was standing in my store door; I heard a negro man say to another: "There will be crowds of people upon the streets to-night, all night." This was on Front street, the same street on which the fire occurred. He further said that there would be crowds of people, both white and black, all night. There was a good deal of anxiety in the minds of the whites at that time, caused from the angry course pursued by the negroes.

J. G. FLOURNOY.

---

H. J. CARTER, being sworn, testified:

I was in this place on the night of the fire. While going I met a number of negroes going in the direction of the African church, in a different direction from where the fire was. This was while the bell was ringing the alarm of fire. I heard them talking, but didn't understand what they said. I saw four negroes standing near my house after the fire was quelled, and as I went into the house they discharged their guns—four shot in the air. I went then with a young lady to the next door, and returned and went into the house, when another shot was fired which struck the paling in front of the window. I saw the sign of two buckshot next morning. Later in the night I heard a good many shots fired near by, and a good deal of loud and angry talking. I stepped out and heard some of the language. It was light enough to see that they were negroes. Heard one say in a loud voice, "Get your guns." Another said, "Our guns are over yonder;" one said, "Somebody has got knocked down;" and another said, "You'll see whether they ever get back or not." Some one in that crowd said to a negro woman, as they passed her cabin, "You'll hear the roll-call before day." The throng moved rapidly toward the church, and I heard the bell ring in about five minutes. I stated that I did not understand anything the negroes were talking about, as I went to the fire. I did speak to one of them, asking him if he was going to the fire. He said, "I am going to take care of myself;" he was very short about it, too.

H. J. CARTER.

---

W. G. PRINGLE, being sworn, testified:

I live about eight miles east of Meridian. I was here on Saturday, March 4, and left town about 2 o'clock that day. Isaac Pringle, colored, left with me. I met, about one and a half miles from town, armed negroes coming into town. I saw as many as five or six in one crowd. They were armed with guns, some of them; my impression was that they all had guns. I came to town often; never saw such before. I saw, in all, coming armed to town, about or at least fifteen. I learned that about one hundred colored men have left the vicinity from which these colored men came since the difficulty here.

W. G. PRINGLE.

---

ISAAC PRINGLE, colored, being sworn, testified:

I was in town, with Mr. Pringle, on Saturday, the 4th instant, and when out with him, I met armed negroes coming to town, about a mile and a half from town. I think there were, at least, fifteen.

his
ISAAC × PRINGLE.
mark.

---

FELIX LEVY, being sworn, testified:

I was in town the night of the fire, on the corner of Lee and Sydney, which is one square from where the fire began. I saw the smoke coming out of Sturges' store before the alarm was given. I then gave the alarm. I saw William Sturges about that time; met him just above the Jones House, going from the fire. I ran back and called him by name, and told him his house was on fire. I was about twenty yards from him. I

called to him with a loud voice and said his house was on fire. He made no reply; never turned back. He was walking his usual gait. He did not quicken his pace when I told him. I saw him on Sunday, after the fire, and asked if he heard me tell him his house was on fire, and he answered, "yes," and that he was going home after the key. Didn't hear Sturges give any alarm of fire, either before or after I notified him. When I met Mr. Sturges he was about one hundred and fifty yards from his store. There was a large volume of smoke coming out of the store-house when I discovered it, and in about five or ten minutes the fire was flaming through the roof. I staid at my market-house; saw one armed negro coming to the fire, it was Billy Clopton.

F. LEVY.

---

L. B. EVERMAN, sworn, testified:

I was up near the Jones House after the fire; saw a body of armed negroes there, while the fire was still raging. Clopton was among the crowd, and seemed to be the controlling spirit among them. There were a great many threats made against the whites, and said that the whites had set fire to Sturges' store because Sturges was a friend of theirs, and were willing to see the town burn; that poor Billy Sturges had been burned out now by the damned rebels, and that they would see that they got even; that they were willing to take part against the whites, and burn the town up. I was there about an hour or two trying to keep down a disturbance; don't remember of seeing Pelton that time. Everybody seemed to be armed that night. Most everybody, for the last month or two, have been carrying side-arms, perhaps prompted by the feeling between the blacks and whites, and apprehension of danger produced by continued shooting at night. I have been a policeman and know there has been considerable alarm on the part of the whites for some time back.

L. B. EVENMAN.

---

MARY CULTY, being sworn, testified:

I was in this city on Saturday, the night of the fire, and living on the corner of the block that was burnt, and in the rear of Sturges' store, about two rods; there was no house intervening. I saw three persons in the back door, who usually staid in the store. They have waited on me in the store. They closed the store as if for night. I went then into my own house, and about, or between, fifteen and thirty minutes after this the alarm of fire was given. I then came again to my back door and heard persons walking in Sturges' store. The fire was then coming through the roof, the flame about the size of a flour barrel. I heard explosions as of kegs of powder while the house was burning.

her
MARY + CULTY.
mark.

---

Mrs. HATTIE SCOTT, being sworn, testified:

I was living in the same house with Mary Culty. The alarm of fire was given at fifteen minutes after seven, by my clock. I went into the kitchen after the alarm. I had a carpet on the floor; had no coal oil on the place, except that in the lamps, which were taken out without loss. When I took up the carpet it was saturated with coal oil; the kitchen was situated next to Sturges, and the back door could not be fastened and stood open all the time.

HATTIE SCOTT.

---

A. G. FREIDERITCE, being sworn, testified:

I was in town on the night of the fire, and was among the first who got there, and before the flames burnt through the roof of Sturges' store. The front door was closed. I stood there a short time and some parties broke open the door and began to take the things out. One of the first who came out with goods was Pelton; did not see him go in, and think I would have seen him if he had gone in with the others. I have felt, in my own mind, certain that Pelton was not one of those who went in at the front door, for I was looking to see who would take the goods out. The fire was next to Hurlbutt's, and in the up-stairs of Sturges' store, about two or three feet from the wall, and nearer the front than the rear of the store. I was in the court-room leaning against the wall, near the door leading to the sheriff's office, when the difficulty began. I saw who fired the first pistol-shot; it was a negro they called Warren Tyler. I saw

him when he rose from his seat, stepping toward the door and drawing his pistol. I could see Judge Bramlette and Warren Tyler well. Tyler drew his pistol when about a step from the door. I think Tyler aimed at Judge Bramlette, from the manner he presented his pistol. I think there were about seventy-five blacks in the court-room, in the rear. There seemed to be a pause of about five seconds from the first shot, and then the firing became general.

Cross-examined:

I saw the smoke from Tyler's pistol. I was to the side of Tyler, about six feet from him. After the pause, and as soon as the firing began, the negroes went out of the court-room. I don't know how many went out or how fast. I went into the chancery clerk's office as soon as the firing began.

Reëxamined:

I saw Bramlette's head drop on his right shoulder at the first shot; heard shots all over the house.

A. G. FREIDERITCE.

---

ROBERT WEST, being sworn, testified:

I was at the fire. I saw Wm. Sturges lock his door, and in about fifteen or twenty minutes after, I saw the smoke and heard the alarm. Wm. Sturges told me that his brother had $1,000 burnt up in his house. He said the fire began between his house and Hurlbutt's, in the upper story. Saw a body of armed negroes near the Jones House that night; they were few in number. I saw Clopton fire off his pistol about three times. He was cursing, swearing, and talking angry, saying if the God damned white people wanted war let them come out, we are as ready now as we'll ever be. The general understanding is that Clopton, Tyler, and Moore are the leaders of the negroes here.

R. E. H. WEST.

---

J. D. KLINE, being sworn, testified:

I was in the court room when the difficulty began; saw Tyler draw his pistol three or four feet from the door leading to the sheriff's office. I was standing where I could see him until he ran into the sheriff's office. After getting to the door it appeared to me that he rested his pistol on the facing and fired; then Judge Bramlette fell. I am certain that Tyler aimed at Bramlette, as Brantley was about three or four feet out of the range, and Tyler rested his pistol on the facing of the door. I was where I could see Tyler well. I saw Hugh Wilson on the street after the escape of Tyler, and before Tyler was shot; he, Wilson, had no arms that I saw. I noticed Judge Bramlette's wound; am a physician, and give my opinion that the ball entered the left temple. The examination was hurried. A number of shots came from the rear of the house.

Cross-examined:

Don't know who fired in the court-room except Tyler. I started into an alley in the rear of Parker's shop, when Hugh Wilson told me not to go in there. We were then acting under the deputy sheriff, Belk. Brantley had given in his testimony, when Tyler told him to keep the stand; that he wanted to introduce two witnesses to impeach his testimony. Brantley asked him what he had said, and Tyler repeated it. Then Brantley went towards the table and caught hold of a stick which was lying on the table, and advanced about two feet when Patton caught him. Tyler then was retreating towards the door and said, don't you hit me with that stick, Mr. Brantley. He spoke in a threatening tone of voice. When Tyler fired, Patton had Brantley tight and fast. I saw no exertion of Brantley to get loose from Patton. Tyler did not shoot at random. I marked the special coolness of Tyler. He steadied himself at the door before he fired. Some people shoot wide of their mark, but I don't think Tyler did.

J. D. KLINE.

---

G. S. COVERT, being sworn, testified:

When I came to the fire I saw Clopton in front of Sturges' store. Heard him say it was a white man's fire, let it burn. He repeated it open, with cursing, saying, God damn them, let it burn. I saw Wm. and T. Sturges take him one by each arm. William told him he was talking too much, and that he must go home. I asked Wm. Sturges why he was not arrested; he gave me no reply. Near the Jones House I saw a

large crowd of negroes; they nearly blackened the streets. A white man was in the crowd apparently threatened by them. I ran into the crowd and called a halt. I saw Pelton there in the crowd, for the first time, and Billy Clopton. The white man who seemed to be threatened by them was asking for the arrest of Clopton, saying that Clopton had shot at him five or six times. Clopton said he was a God damn liar; he never had shot. I asked Pelton why he did not arrest him; he either did not hear me or paid no attention to me. Pelton then had Clopton by the arm and was talking to him. Adams then came up; I thought he was a policeman. Adams asked Clopton what was the matter, and Clopton slapped him on the breast, saying, damn you, don't ask me what's the matter. The negroes then cocked their guns, and said they would stand by General Clopton. I pushed guns out of my way, and asked Adams if he needed any help to arrest the man. I then went down on Front street and told every white man I saw, that if they did not go over to the Jones House there would be some white man killed by the negroes. I went back alone about five minutes afterward and the crowd had left. They made many threats that I have not stated.

G. S. COVERT.

---

Mrs. JOHN RUSH, being sworn, testified:

I live on Lee street, next door to Rush's stable. Was at home when the fire occurred. Heard the alarm of fire given that night, and came out immediately. I saw William Sturges, (white,) Marshall Weir, and two other negroes and a white man whom I didn't recognize, pass up the street toward the residence of Sturges, from the direction of the fire. They were not traveling the way he usually went home, that time. He was across the street in the common, near the Catholic church. He usually passed on the sidewalk near my house. The moon was shining very bright that night. Sturges was passing across the common, and not in a direct route from the store to his house. The route he usually traveled was the direct route. I saw him plainly, and am well acquainted with him by sight, and saw him every day passing my house. William Sturges had an arm-full of account books; one of the negroes was carrying a box, painted green, and about the size of tin boxes usually kept for valuable papers. It seemed to be pretty heavy. They were walking a little faster than the usual gait. The alarm of fire then was general. I could see the fire when I first saw Sturges and company. The fire could have been seen from where they were. They did not turn their heads, but continued in the direction of Sturges's house. Did not notice the alarm of fire.

V. E. RUSH.

---

H. N. BERRY, being sworn, testified:

I was present on Saturday evening, March 4, at a public meeting held by the negroes in the court-house. Heard the speeches of all that spoke. I heard Clopton say in his speech that they were going to organize themselves in a body, and that they would displace the present officers and put in officers who would do their duty, or do it themselves; and that if the people didn't mind the city would be in ashes in less than three weeks. These grievances seemed to be that the people had come over here from Alabama, and the officers had failed to arrest them. He spoke of war, and said they were talking of war between the whites and blacks, and to let it come; now's the time; or something to that effect. His speech was filled with such as the above, and I considered it inflammatory and incendiary, and excited the whites present very much, and alarmed them. Tyler spoke of a good many blacks having been killed, and that the time had come for them to take things into their own hands; and illustrated it by saying that if the Indians lost a man they would have a man, whether they got the right man or not. And that the democratic party were Ku-Klux; that he had been advised to leave here, and the next man, white or black, that advised him to leave, he would slap him in the mouth; this is the black man's country; that they had built the houses, the railroads, and cleared off the forests. When all this was done the white man was figuring them to hell. I considered his whole speech made up of inflammatory and incendiary phrases. I think it alarmed the whites present. I heard Moore say if there was a city like Sodom and Gomorrah, Meridian certainly was. It was said, in this connection, that unless steps were taken for their protection, this city might be burnt up, as the other speakers had said, for if there ever was a Sodom and Gomorrah in the world, Meridian certainly was. Moore said, we will take the sign and signal of the old Loyal League, (you all know that,) and you must be prompt. All you that are going to stick to it, let it be known by raising your hand. Most of them raised both hands, and yelling. The meeting was composed of negroes, except some ten or twelve.

H. N. BERRY.

W. A. PAYNE, being sworn, testified:

I started to the fire when the first alarm was given, and got there just as it was burning out through the top of the house. The fire broke out next to Hurlbutt's, about half way the store. Did not see Sturges when I got there. I know nothing of the cause of the fire. The fire was in the second story of the building.

W. A. PAYNE.

---

WM. SHAW, colored, being sworn, testified:

I know Isaac Lee very well; he lived near me. I saw Isaac Saturday evening of the fire. The night of the fire and after the fire I met Isaac Lee. He asked me if I had heard that Billy Dennis had been killed. I told him no. He said, why don't you go and get your gun and go down there to protect him? I told him I had no gun. He asked me if I had an axe. I told him I had, but was not going down there to put myself in danger for him. He then left me and went up to the colored Methodist church, saying he was going up there after men to go down town after Billy Dennis or Clopton. I heard the bell of the church ring soon after, and saw about a dozen colored men going in that direction. I have often heard Isaac Lee using threatening language about white people here in town, especially when he was drinking; when sober he was a civil man.

his
WM. + SHAW.
mark.

---

W. W. SHEARER, being sworn, testified:

I came into the court-house a few moments before the difficulty commenced. I think I can say, positively, that Warren Tyler fired the first pistol-shot. I was looking right at him, my attention having been called in that direction by Mr. Brantley seizing the stick. The people here were getting very much excited on Saturday night of the fire, and had been somewhat excited for some time before. I mean the excitement increased on Saturday night and Sunday following. On Monday I don't think it grew any less—still continued. The excitement was occasioned from rumors of the conduct of some turbulent negroes—Warren Tyler, Aaron Moore and others: some white men also. Sturges and Pelton are the white men I refer to. For months past there has been a great deal of shooting about my house. It was very annoying; frequently heard shots passing through the trees. Did not expect to be shot myself, unless from a stray shot. I think Aaron Moore, Warren Tyler, Henry Johnson, Billy Clopton, Wm. Sturges, and Tom Pelton were the leading influential men among the negroes here. During the night of the fire some one told me that Billy Clopton was very turbulent, and requested me to go to the mayor, Wm. Sturges, and request him to stop Clopton. I did so and Sturges left me, going in the direction of Clopton.

W. W. SHEARER.

---

T. R. MCCORMICK, sworn, testified:

As I was going from the fire on Saturday night, just as I got to the gate in the rear of Sturges' dwelling, leading into his lot, I saw a wagon, and a negro come running up and said Clopton had been killed and we would have revenge, and called for guns. The negro jumped into the wagon and commenced handing out guns. I saw about a dozen negroes and I passed on. The wagon was turned as if going into the gate in Sturges' back yard. There had been considerable shooting around my house which alarmed my family. I heard guns rattling in the wagon as if there might have been half a wagon load. I became alarmed and went on.

THOS. R. MCCORMICK.

---

R. N. REA, being sworn, testified:

I was shot at by some one on my way home the night of the fire. I was at that time opposite the old residence of Mr. Ball, going home from the fire. The party that fired the gun was some seventy-five or eighty yards from me. One shot struck me on the knee and one on the finger. I heard the other shots striking the palings beyond me. G. T. McInnis was with me at the time I was shot.

R. N. REA.

G. T. McINNIS, being sworn, testified:

I was with Rea going home from the fire, and was also shot; one shot struck me on the hand and one on the neck. There was but one shot fired at us.

G. T. McINNIS.

---

H. M. SWANN, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of this place. I went to the fire on Saturday night. I was shot at as I was going to the fire, or I suppose so; the ball whistled close by me while I was passing Kling's shop. I saw four men standing there in the shade of Kling's shop; I think they were black. There was considerable firing all over town when the alarm of fire was given. I was in town on Monday after the difficulty. I was not on horseback after the difficulty occurred. Ike Adams was not on horseback that I saw; I saw him on foot. I was standing in front of the house of Thos. W. Coleman, talking to him and Mr. Ball when the gun shot that wounded Isaac Lee, as I suppose, was fired. From Coleman's house to the African church, upon a direct line, is about three hundred yards. The first time I saw Isaac Lee that evening was after he had passed through Mr. Houston's yard, and was coming on through the lot in rear of Mr. Houston's and making his way toward town. I have heard that my life had been threatened by the negroes, because I had helped to arrest Price here.

Cross-examined:

I supposed the shot I heard while standing with Coleman and Ball was the shot which wounded Lee, because the only man I saw in the direction of where I heard the shot was a man on a gray horse coming from that direction with a gun in his hand and going towards Mr. Houston's. I afterward saw Isaac Lee coming from the direction of Mr. Houston's lot through McRay's lot, shot through the arm; dont know the man on the gray horse, he did not come up where we were. Ike Adams may have been on horseback that evening and I not know it.

H. M. SWANN.

---

T. E. WILLIAMS, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of this place. I was arrested one night about 9 o'clock, near the colored Methodist church, by negroes while walking along the street. There were about fifteen in the crowd that arrested me; some had guns; don't know whether they all had guns or not; I noticed in several places one or two negroes standing as if upon guard. They were standing upon the corners of the streets. Mr. Hurlbutt Hodges was with me, who is another white man. They questioned us and released us, and after we had gotten off about ten steps they fired off some guns. There was no light in the church, but the doors of the church were filled with people. This arrest was made about a week before the difficulty; Warren Tyler was in the crowd that arrested me, and seemed anxious that we should be killed.

T. E. WILLIAMS.

---

HURLBUTT HODGES, being sworn, testified:

I am a citizen of this place; I was present with T. E. Williams, and was arrested with him near the Methodist church; I have been present during his examination, and the facts that he deposed to are true.

F. HURLBUTT HODGES.

---

ALEXANDER MITCHELL, colored, being sworn, testified:

I live in this place and do business at the Vicksburg Depot; I was there the evening of the fire. I saw the house on fire about 7 or half-past 7 o'clock. I went to the fire when I saw it. It appeared to me to be between Mr. Sturges and Mr. Hurlbutt's stores. I saw inside of Sturges' store as soon as I got there, and the fire was blazing down stairs. Myself and Ben Coleman, colored, were the first that got there, and when I got there Sturges' door was thrown open. I could see the blaze through Hurlbutt's window, but saw none above the top of the house. I saw smoke coming over the top. At that time there had been no general alarm of fire given, and I heard but one cry fire. When I went to Sturges' store and saw the door open and two men in the store, one standing on the counter and one near the door, I attempted to go in, but was told

not to go in there by those men. I don't know whether they were white or colored men. I went back towards home and met Mr. Taylor at the corner of Hurlbutt's store, who told me to break Hurlbutt's door open, which I did. Saw the two men run out of Sturges' store and go off when we broke open Hurlbutt's door.

his
ALEXANDER + MITCHELL.
mark.

---

J. R. PHILLIPS, being sworn, testified:

I am a practicing physician in this place. I made an occular examination of the wound of Judge Bramlette. My conviction was that the ball entered the left temple.

J. R. PHILLIPS.

---

JACK WILLIAMS, being sworn, testified:

I cut Warren Tyler's hair the evening he was killed. He stated then that if he was killed that evening he wanted to die looking like a gentleman, and that he expected that would be the last time I would ever have a chance to cut his hair. I saw that he had a pistol on then. He was not in my shop when I cut his hair, but up in a colored bar-room. He left me and went immediately up into the court-room. The pistol was a navy six.

his
JACK + WILLIAMS.
mark.

---

J. O. CHARLES, being sworn, testified:

I was at Aaron Moore's house while it was burning. The fire had burnt up the old portion or the north wing of the house, and was just getting into the new part of the house. The back doors were closed, the front doors were open; the windows had no blinds and the sash were down. I looked into the house; I was about twenty-five feet from the house. I saw no furniture in the house. It was a bright, moonlight night, and a great light from the fire. I could see through the building from the light of the fire. If there had been any furniture in the house I had a good opportunity to have seen it. If it had been well furnished with furniture, I certainly would have seen it.

Cross-examined:

There might have been carpets on the floor, but I hardly think so. I observed the house closely for furniture, but saw none.

J. O. CHARLES.

---

R. T. HANCOCK, being sworn, testified:

I live in this place and am a printer at the Mercury office. I was in town on Saturday night of the fire. I heard several guns that night. As I went to the fire I was shot at. About three hundred yards from the fire, just as I turned the corner of a fence, a negro rose up and fired at me, the ball grazing my hair. I kept on to the fire. There were several other guns fired immediately from about the same place.

R. T. HANCOCK.

---

JERRE HORN, being sworn, testified:

I live in this place. I was here on Monday evening, the 6th of March. I was with my father, A. G. Horn, on that evening. I did not see him take hold of Dred Finley. I was with him when he spoke to Finley while standing near Finley's shop. He made no attempt to take hold of him, or shoot or strike him. I was looking at him at the time.

Cross-examined:

I was with my father all the evening. I know he could not have taken hold of Finley without my seeing him. I was up at Moore's house about 7 or 9 o'clock p. m., with Captain Henderson's squad; was not there at any time later than that. It was the squad of Captain R. L. Henderson; he was there with his squad. I saw several go into Moore's house, but don't know their names. Don't know of any one breaking up any furniture. I think they broke a glass in getting into the house. The windows and doors at that time were all fastened. The squad staid about ten or fifteen minutes and then left. Didn't hear them say why they went in, but think they went in to hunt for Moore.

JERRE HORN.

Mrs. W. C. DOBBS, being sworn, testified:

I live in the northern part of the city, about a quarter or half a mile from the court-house. I was at home on Saturday the 4th of March when the fire occurred. I came out on the street that night. I saw one negro man during the fire. I heard a good many negro men talking. They seemed to be going, some toward the African church and some toward town. I heard a good deal of firing off of guns that night, some and most of them towards the African church, and some on the other side of town. I heard the negroes say they were glad. The questions were asked so low that I did not hear them, and heard them ask if they were going to town and heard answer that they would risk going to the top of the hill. I have seen several fires since I have lived here; the conduct of the negroes at this last fire was different from heretofore. The streets heretofore have been thronged with negroes rushing to the fires; on that night the negro man I saw was going in a direction from the fire and he had a gun upon his shoulder. The indiscriminate firing of guns during the fire was very unusual. The firing of guns that night and the conduct of the negroes gave me considerable alarm.

L. L. DOBBS.

---

Mrs. JUDITH TRUWIT, being sworn, testified:

I live near Mrs. Dobbs; was at her house the night of the fire and was present with Mrs. Dobbs on the street. I heard Mrs. Dobbs' testimony and my recollection is the same in substance as hers. There is no fact that I recollect of that occurred that night that she has not stated. There were several ladies with Mrs. Dobbs and myself that night. The conduct of the negroes that night alarmed me and those present with me.

JUDITH TRUWIT.

---

W. C. FORD, being sworn, testified:

Was present in the court-room during the trial of Warren Tyler, Bill Clopton, and Aaron Moore, on Monday, March 6. They went out of the court-room at least twice during the progress of the trial, and the last time they went out I requested Judge Bramlette to have them brought back and kept here. I was the attorney prosecuting for the State. After the court was broken up by the death of Judge Bramlette, the prisoners, Moore and Tyler, escaped from custody during the progress of the trial.

W. C. FORD.

---

L. D. BELK re-introduced:

I was present on Saturday night of the fire. I was very busy at the fire until after it was arrested. Mr. Walker and myself went round to Hurlbutt's corner. We were standing there talking of the fire, when my attention was called to the loud talking of Bill Clopton. The first word which attracted my attention was directed to the porter of the Phœnix Hotel. He said, "You damned paper-collar hotel boy, why are you not at your post or place?" I heard no answer from the boy to whom these remarks were directed. I then heard Dennis or Clopton say, go and get your gun or guns; said then to Mr. Walker (Clopton and the boy had then started toward the Jones House) that this boy who was walking off with Clopton was a good boy. Mr Walker said to me, if I knew him, to call him back. I did so. The boy stopped and turned around. Dennis then took the boy by the arm and told him to come along with him. I then told Mr. Walker to call the boy; he did so, and the boy came to us. Clopton pleaded with the boy not to come to us. Clopton went, perhaps, twenty steps further up Lee street, where he met with a crowd of negroes, perhaps some fifteen or twenty. They began to talk among themselves and to fire off their guns; some ten or fifteen shot, may be more. I then suggested to Walker that, as that looked very ugly, we had better talk to some of the citizens and the police. I felt alarmed, and that it was necessary for the police to be on the alert; Mr. Walker is the district attorney. Billy Clopton was considered here as one of the leaders of the negroes.

L. D. BELK.

---

J. A. CAMERON, being sworn, testified:

I was in Meridian the night of the fire. I saw armed bodies of negroes, some twenty or twenty-five, near the Jones House that night, about seventy or eighty yards from where the fire began. Mr. Charles Wilson was with me. He asked them what they were there armed for. They hesitated at first to give an answer. He repeated the question, and they said they were there to give the white people a fight, if they wanted one. This was about half-past 9 or 10 o'clock. They seemed to be organized.

J. A. CAMERON.

R. J. MOSELEY re-introduced:

I arrested Warren Tyler about 10 o'clock on Monday morning. I examined for arms when I arrested him. I allowed him to go to the barber-shop and be shaved and have his hair trimmed. I don't think I examined him for arms after that and before his trial commenced.

R. J. MOSELEY.

---

J. H. WINNINGHAM, being sworn, testified:

I was in the court-room during the difficulty. I was standing in front of the fire-place, which is opposite the door leading into the sheriff's office. I saw Tyler as he retreated toward the door. I am certain that there were at least three pistol-shots fired from that door. One ball struck my clothes, about the third shot; it came from the door leading into the sheriff's office. As Tyler retreated to the door he had a pistol in his hand.

J. H. WINNINGHAM.

---

JACK WILLIAMS re-introduced:

When Bill Clopton struck the sidewalk I was in my shop door, immediately opposite the court-house. At that time Jim Sanford was at my shop door.

Cross-examined:

I cannot say whether Mr. Sanford was on the veranda or not immediately after Clopton was falling from the veranda. I know he was not there at the time Clopton was falling off. He had just been talking to me, and had stepped off and was talking to some gentlemen on the street when Clopton struck the sidewalk. I saw Clopton catching at the railing of the balcony, but did not look up to see who were standing on it. I think there were one or two on the balcony; there may have been more. Tyler passed through my shop after the shooting in the court-house. I think Tyler was shot when he passed through my shop. When the first pistol-shot was fired, I said I expect Warren Tyler's shot. I saw him throw something down on the balcony which I took to be a pistol. He let himself down from the balcony; fell on his feet on the pavement. He then came towards me with his hands on his hip, limping, and said, "help me, Jack." The pavement is made of brickbats. From the balcony to the pavement it is about fifteen feet. I know James Sanford well, and have known him a long time.

his
JACK + WILLIAMS.
mark.

---

GEORGE MOORE re-introduced:

I know James Sanford well. I was in my shop on the opposite side of the street from the court-house. The door was open and I saw Bill Clopton when he struck the sidewalk under the veranda. James Sanford, at that time, was standing at my shop door. I am certain that Sanford was not in the court-house or on the veranda when Clopton fell from the veranda. Sanford staid at my shop nearly five minutes after Clopton struck the sidewalk before he left. He had no gun at that time. When he left there he went down the street toward the hotel.

Cross-examined:

I didn't see him stop and talk to anybody. He went down the street from my shop. I saw him pass the corner; didn't see him any further. He went down on the same side of the street with my shop. I did not see any persons on the veranda, because I was at work and didn't have time to look up. I could not see up in the veranda from the chair in my shop. The chair was about six feet from the door. I was shaving a countryman who had brought cotton in. At the time Clopton fell over I was cutting the countryman's hair. I was nearly done when Clopton fell from the veranda. It took me about an hour to complete my job on the countryman. Mr. Sanford did not stand at my door until the job was complete. I did not see any one on the balcony during the half hour; I was studying about making money. No one else was being shaved at that time in my shop. I did not leave the countryman until I was shaving him to go to the door. I could not see the corner without going to the door. I knew Mr. Sanford was on the corner, because I heard him talking there. I did not see Tyler go through my shop.

Reëxamined:

Sanford was talking at or near my shop to some men just before he started up on the street. I know him well. I know the tone of his voice; could distinguish the tone of his voice until he reached the corner.

his
GEORGE + MOORE.
mark.

Mrs. J C. HOWLETT, being sworn, testified:

I live in this place; I am acquainted with Mr. James A. Brantley; I was here during the excitement. We occupy a part of the same house with Mr. Brantley. Mr. J. A. Brantley was at home Monday night; he was sick; also Tuesday and Wednesday nights.

JENNIE C. HOWLETT.

---

A. MCALPIN, being sworn, testified:

I was at Moore's house shortly after the fire began. I saw no furniture in the house in that house. I had a good opportunity to see; one of the doors was open and no blinds to the windows. I looked for furniture. The light from the fire on the north part of the house gave a good light, so I could see plainly in the rooms. I would have seen furniture had there been any in the rooms.

A. MCALPIN.

---

W. P. EVANS, being sworn, testified:

I was present at the examination of Warren Tyler, William Clopton, and Aaron Moore, before Judge Bramlette, on the 6th instant. I noticed Warren Tyler particularly, knowing his character; I do not believe he had any weapons at the time the trial commenced. He left the court-room twice before the firing commenced—the first time with Aaron Moore and William Sturges; the second time with Aaron Moore. Upon his return the second time, I noticed he was armed, and called Captain Ford's attention to the fact.

W. P. EVANS.

---

THO'S W. COLEMAN, being sworn, deposed:

I was in Meridian on Monday, the 6th instant, after the death of Judge Bramlette, some time in the evening. I was standing in the street running in front of my dwelling-house, and not far from it, talking to John T. Ball, when H. M. Swann came up to us. While he was there, we heard the report of a gun toward the colored Methodist church, and some three hundred yards or more from us. The street runs east and west that we were standing in, and passes eastward in front of the house known as the McKay place. The McKay house is about two hundred and fifty yards from where we were standing. As soon as the report of the gun was heard, Mr. Swann left us and proceeded up the street toward the McKay house; myself and Ball moved up the street a few steps. Mr. Houston's house and the McKay house and lot could be seen from where we stopped. I saw Mr. Swann go up in front of the McKay house directly after leaving us, and about the time he arrived there I saw a negro man coming out of Houston's lot into the McKay lot, and saw him go up to some men, three or four in number, who were standing in the street in front of the McKay house. Some of the men seemed to take him in charge, and started toward the court-house with him. I was too far to hear any words that may have been spoken. I heard afterward that the negro man was named Isaac Lee. I do not know Isaac Lee by sight. I heard but the one gun fire at that time, and know Swann did not fire that. He was not on horseback then.

THOS. W. COLEMAN.

---

M. H. WHITAKER, being sworn, deposed as follows:

I was present at the trial of J. A. Moore, Wm. Dennis, alias Clopton, and Warren Tyler, in the court-room, before Judge Bramlette, on the 6th of March, 1871. I saw Tyler and Moore leave the court-room once or twice during the progress of the trial. After they returned to the court-room Tyler changed his seat, and sat down near to the left of Judge Bramlette. His (Tyler's) face was then toward me, and I saw his pistol buckled to his waist. I saw no pistol about Tyler's person previous to his leaving the court-room, as above referred to. Tyler might have had on a pistol previous to his leaving the court-room, and I not have seen it, previous to his going out of the room; his back was toward me, and I could not examine his person for arms as well as I could after he returned, for the reason as before stated; that his face was toward me after his return into the court-room.

M. H. WHITAKER.

---

M. H. WHITAKER, upon examination by the court, stated that Moore and Tyler were absent from the court-room about four or five minutes, I think, and after their return to the court-room about fifteen minutes elapsed before the first pistol was fired. Moore and Tyler were sitting very near each other when the disturbance began.

M. H. WHITAKER.

B. B. WINDHAM being sworn, testified:

I live northwest from Mr. Sturges's dwelling, some two hundred and fifty yards. I was at home when the fire occurred, and went down to it as soon as I could after hearing the alarm. I met Mr. Sturges and five or six negro fellows on Lee street, near his brothers', Theodore Sturges's, dwelling, and going in direction of his house. They were coming as if from Sturges's store; the store was then on fire. They were walking rapidly and carrying, all of them, some bundles. The place where I first saw them was about one hundred and fifty yards from the front of John Rush's house and about four hundred yards from Sturges's store. I could see the fire from where I met them. I asked Sturges who was burning, and he said Sturges and Hurlbutt, but he did not stop his pace at all. There has been a great deal of firing of guns here at night, but I think there were more on the night of the fire than usual. Firing in the negro district was very unusual during a fire in the city. I have resided here for many years, and present at several fires, and never knew of the firing of guns, during a fire, in the city before. The firing of guns commenced simultaneously with the alarm of fire.

B. B. WINDHAM.

---

W. Y. PETERS, being sworn, testified:

I live in Meridian; was here the night of the fire. I saw Bill Sturges about ten or fifteen minutes after the fire commenced. I started to the fire and met him near Lowenstein's house. There were five or six negroes with him. Bill Sturges had some books—ledgers or something—the negroes had bundles, and were going in the direction of Theodore Sturges's dwelling. Lowenstein's house is just across the street from Sturges's dwelling. Sturges's house is about four hundred yards from where the fire began.

W. Y. PETERS.

---

E. V. EARLY, being sworn, deposed as follows:

I am agent of the Phœnix Insurance Company, of Hartford, and I did, on the 13th day of February, 1871, insure a policy to J. Aaron Moore, against loss or damage by fire to the sum of $500, upon his dwelling-house. The policy was written in the name of his wife, Mary R. Moore. I did not deliver the policy until Monday morning, the 6th of March, at 9 o'clock, a. m., at which time he called at my office to get it, and stated that owing to the unsettled condition of affairs he would rather have it himself.

E. V. EARLY.

---

THE STATE OF MISSISSIPPI, *Lauderdale County:*

I, Robert Leachman, judge of the sixth judicial district of the State of Mississippi, acting as a committing court in the above-stated cause, do hereby certify that the foregoing pages contain the testimony of the witnesses as deposed to before me on said trial; that said testimony was reduced to writing in my presence and in the presence of the witnesses respectively, and read over to said witnesses and approved and signed by them in open court and in my presence, and with the documents accompanying constitutes all the testimony in the said cause.

Given under my hand and seal this the 29th day of March, 1871.

[SEAL.]

ROBT. LEACHMAN.

---

THE STATE OF MISSISSIPPI, *Lauderdale County:*

I, Robert Leachman, judge of the sixth judicial district of the State of Mississippi, and acting as committing magistrate in the above-stated cause, after hearing the testimony, do hereby order that G. W. Brantley, Hugh Wilson, and Robert E. Coleman be held to answer before the grand-jury at the next term of the circuit court, on a third Monday in April, 1871, to answer the State of Mississippi on the charge of unlawful assembly, or any charge the grand-jury may see fit to prefer against them, in a bond of two hundred dollars each, with good and sufficient security. That J. F. Sanford and Isaac Adams be likewise held in the sum of five hundred dollars each, to answer a charge of assault with intent to kill, or any charge the grand-jury may see fit to prefer against them; and that A. G. Horn be likewise held in the sum of one hundred dollars to answer a charge of assault, or any other charge the grand-jury may see fit to prefer against him.

[SEAL.]

ROBT. LEACHMAN.

WASHINGTON, D. C., *June* 29, 1871.

M. H. WHITAKER sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* At Meridian, Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you resided there?

*Answer.* Immediately at Meridian?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* About three years.

*Question.* How long have you been a citizen of the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* About eighteen years.

*Question.* What is your profession?

*Answer.* I am a practicing lawyer at Meridian.

*Question.* Give us any information which you have derived from your practice as a lawyer, and your intercourse with the citizens, bearing upon the manner in which the laws are executed in the State of Mississippi, and the extent to which life, person, and property are secure there.

*Answer.* I think that, as a general thing, the laws are executed tolerably well, as well, I believe, as I have ever known them to be executed since I have been old enough to take notice of such things.

*Question.* Have you any facts bearing upon that general question which will be of service to the committee?

*Answer.* Have you reference to the criminal law particularly?

*Question.* Our inquiry is directed, in general terms, to the efficiency of the execution of the laws, and the security of life, person, and property. That will reach, of course, both the civil and the criminal law. Give us any facts which, in your judgment, will enlighten the committee upon that question in any of its bearings.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have known the criminal law violated there, and the violators of the law have not been punished.

*Question.* Is that in exceptional cases?

*Answer.* I think so; those are exceptional cases.

*Question.* To what cases do you refer especially?

*Answer.* I refer more particularly to a case that occurred in our county—the killing of some parties.

*Question.* Who were the parties?

*Answer.* There was a case that occurred at Toomsuba.

*Question.* When?

*Answer.* It was some time during the first of the year, I think.

*Question.* Under what circumstances?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know, only from what I hear; I suppose I can relate that.

*Question.* Give us whatever information you have that you deem reliable. We do not want anything in the shape of mere rumor.

*Answer.* I heard that this man had been killed by some parties in the night-time—this man Williams; but I never heard who those parties were.

*Question.* Who was Williams?

*Answer.* He was a member of the board of supervisors.

*Question.* White or colored?

*Answer.* He was colored.

*Question.* Was he an obnoxious man in any respect?

*Answer.* He was a very obnoxious man.

*Question.* In what respect?

*Answer.* He attempted to adjust matters between parties there that he had no authority for doing; and he would menace and threaten the whites, so I understood. That is all from information, just as the other is. Indeed, I heard that he was obnoxious to both white and black at that place. There were several indictments pending against him in the circuit court, which, perhaps, would have him tried at the ensuing term of the court if he had not been killed.

*Question.* They would have been tried?

*Answer.* I presume so; he was under bond for his appearance.

*Question.* He was under bond?

*Answer.* I think so, at the time.

*Question.* The prosecution was pending at the time?

*Answer.* Several indictments, so I heard.

*Question.* In your judgment, could justice have been obtained in the courts?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* Were the persons visiting him those who desired to take vengeance upon him without waiting for the process of the law?

*Answer.* I never heard why he was visited, except that he was obnoxious to both white and black; that was the character I heard of the man. He had been in

the habit, once a week, perhaps, of drilling a company of blacks at that place; he seemed to be a captain, or a chief of a squad or company; and I am informed by the white persons that he did it threateningly and menacingly.

*Question.* Was he killed in open day or at night?

*Answer.* In the night-time, I think.

*Question.* Were the men known who killed him, or were they in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they were disguised or not; they were not known.

*Question.* What information have you on that point?

*Answer.* The information I have on that point is this: that the parties who committed the assassination had a black man to guide them to the place—to direct them to the house of Williams. This colored man who guided them, or acted as pilot, called this man Williams to his door, and told him he wanted to see him; when he came to the door he was shot. That is my information on that point.

*Question.* Is it your information that those men were disguised?

*Answer.* I cannot state whether I ever heard that or not; it may have been so or it may not.

*Question.* From whom did you learn that a black man piloted them there?

*Answer.* It was common talk there about the court-house; I think the man was carried up there as a witness before the grand jury. I think a great many white persons talked to me about it. I never talked with him at all.

*Question.* That is, with the man who piloted them there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it your information that he was constrained to go or that he went unwillingly?

*Answer.* My information is that he perhaps did not go very cheerfully.

*Question.* Was any bill found against any parties for killing Williams?

*Answer.* I do not know; that was at the last term. No one knows anything about indictments directed against parties until the parties are arrested, except the officers of the court.

*Question.* That court was held in your town, Meridian?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I am not an officer of the court, and therefore could not know whether indictments were found or not.

*Question.* You are a practicing lawyer at the bar there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do not your grand juries return their bills publicly?

*Answer.* They return them publicly, but they are handed over to the clerk of the court, who is sworn to keep them secret.

*Question.* Are they not entered on the docket?

*Answer.* They are entered on the docket, State *vs.* ———; the name is not given, for the parties might escape if they heard of it.

*Question.* Does not the clerk enter the name, as State *vs.* A. B.; whatever the name of the party may be?

*Answer.* No, sir; or if he enters any name it is a fictitious one.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Is it generally understood in the community that bills were found against some of the parties connected with the murder?

*Answer.* I have never heard anything said about it; it is a matter that cannot possibly be known.

*Question.* The names of the parties might not be known, but it might be known that bills against some parties had been found?

*Answer.* If that was the case, I think I should have heard of it; I have never heard of it at all.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that no bills were found?

*Answer.* It is a very hard matter for me to say. I never had any conversation with the colored man who acted as pilot.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* As a matter of practice, the grand jury return their findings in writing, and they go into the custody of the clerk?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he is instructed not to expose them until the parties are arrested.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* He is directed to lock them up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You do not know whether or not any parties have been arrested on that charge?

*Answer.* If so, I have not heard of it.

*Question.* Would you not have been likely to have heard of it?

*Answer.* I think I would.

*Question.* When was the court held?

*Answer.* Last April, the third Monday.

*Question.* You say the colored man who was summoned to go with them, testified before the grand jury?

*Answer.* I was told by persons attending court that he was there and made his appearance before the grand jury, and testified in regard to the parties. I was not there and did not see him.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What were those indictments for against Williams?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know what they all were for; I think it was, perhaps, for malfeasance in office.

*Question.* You do not know?

*Answer.* That is my recollection; I never saw the indictments; I was not engaged in the prosecution on one side or the other, and never examined the indictments.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was not one of them for giving some sort of authority for the search of a colored man's house for a stolen pig?

*Answer.* It seems to me I have heard something of that sort; but I do not know enough about it to state positively. I would also state, in reference to the indictments against Williams, that it is my impression that there were perhaps some indictments preferred against him for letting out convicts, contrary to law, for building of bridges; perhaps letting them out himself, being authorized by the board, and taking the contracts himself, which I think was in violation of the law; swindling in reference to the public bridges of the county, letting them out at very enormous prices; also adjusting matters between parties as a magistrate, and so forth.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Those were the classes of misdemeanors in office with which he was charged?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* Are there any other special cases to which you wish to refer, as illustrating your general remark about the execution of the law? If so, go on and give them.

Mr. BECK. Before the witness proceeds, let me say one thing, and I may just as well do it here as at any time. This witness has been called at the instance of General Blair, and he [illegible] about the general history of that country. It seems to me that his testimony would be more intelligible to Congress and the country if, instead of putting the details of various cases on it, he would first give his general views in regard to the security of life, person, and property, and the manner in which the races conduct themselves toward each other. He can then go into details, instead of having his testimony chopped all to pieces from the start. I throw out this general view for the consideration of the committee.

The CHAIRMAN. I put a general question to the witness, and if there is any chopping up of his testimony it is not my fault.

Mr. BECK. We are all doing it.

The CHAIRMAN. I would prefer to have the witness to go on and give a general statement.

The WITNESS. I am willing to answer any question I can.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Then go back to the first general question and state in regard to the execution of the laws, and the security of life, person, and property, in your State.

*Answer.* I think that, as a general thing, the laws are executed, as I said before, about as well as they were previous to the present state of affairs down there, at least so far as I have observed. Before the war I was rather young and did not participate in these things much; I was not practicing law before the war. But so far as my observation has gone, I think the laws of the State of Mississippi are now enforced as well as they have heretofore been, in the section of the country in which I live. There were isolated cases heretofore, which were never reached because of the inability of witnesses to identify the parties who violated the law. It is impossible in some cases to identify the parties who commit these outrages.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are you through with your general statement in answer to the general question?

*Answer.* I cannot say anything more in answer to that question; that is a full answer, as I understand it.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* You had a great big riot there of some sort or other, did you not? Why not tell us about that, and the causes which led to it from beginning to end, without being asked a hundred questions about it; you had an occurrence of that sort, and instead of having it dragged out of you by questions go on and tell us all about it.

*Answer.* Just as the members of the committee desire; I will go on and make a full statement now, as far as I can, or I will wait for questions to be asked me. Shall I proceed, Mr. Chairman, to make the statement?

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Certainly; we expected you to make it in answer to the general question put to you. We take it for granted that when this question is put to a gentleman of the bar he does not need to be prompted all the time by special questions.

*Answer.* I do not know the course of examination which the committee has been pursuing. I did not know but you asked particular questions.

*Question.* Take up the statement and go on with it.

*Answer.* I think that some time in February a colored man by the name of Kennard came over to our town, and, I think, three or four white men came with him—no, some fifteen or twenty men came with him, I suppose—to prosecute one Price.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Came over from where?

*Answer.* From Sumter County, as I understood. I did not know any of the white men who came over with him.

*Question.* From Sumter County, Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Go on and give a detailed statement as far as you can.

*Answer.* Kennard had made an affidavit against Price for a violation of a statute of the State of Mississippi, enacted for the punishment of persons traveling in disguise, or being disguised and perpetrating any crime. The affidavit was based upon this statute. Upon consultation with Kennard, who employed me as one of the counsel to prosecute Price, I gathered this information from him. He stated that a short time previous to that—I do not remember exactly how long it was—Mr. Price and some colored men—he supposed them to be colored—came to the house in Meridian where he was sleeping and took him out of bed, carried him to the limits, or perhaps a little outside of the limits of the corporation, and whipped him severely. He showed me the scars upon his back and upon his person generally. He stated also that after they had stripped him and whipped him—they had left his clothes a little distance from him—all but two of them went back to where his clothes were, for what purpose he did not know; I asked him particularly about that. While they were gone, and he was left in the custody of two men, he ran and made his escape; they shot at him, but failed to hit him. Shall I state how this party identified Price?

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Go right on, and state it all.

*Answer.* He told me that he had known Price in Sumter County for a long time, and that he and Price belonged to the same league; that he was very familiar with his voice; had known him for a number of years; that he had for a disguise some thin black covering over his face, but he could see through it when he came into the room where he was, and he saw the white wrists of the man. He said the others were black men, to the best of his belief. When Price was arrested, he was taken before a magistrate and bound over in a bond of $200 to make his appearance before the same magistrate at some future day for a preliminary examination, which was perhaps the Friday following; I think it was Friday that was set for the first trial. That was the day that Kennard came over from Sumter County, Alabama, with these fifteen or twenty men, perhaps, and one or two colored witnesses, to attend this trial of Mr. Price. These men came from Alabama with guns. I did not know any of them; they were all strangers to me. When I rode up to my office, I saw these men standing there in front of the post office, with their guns on the sidewalk; I made an inquiry who they were, and what they were doing there, and some one told me they had come over there with Kennard and the two colored witnesses, to protect them; that they were afraid the colored people of Meridian would mob them because they were there as witnesses for the State against Mr. Price.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What is Price's politics?

*Answer.* He was a republican, I understand. Well, I advised that those men should put their arms down and have nothing to do with the matter; that I thought these colored men could remain there at my office, and we could hold the court up there, and no disturbance would be had; that we could do that.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Were they white men or black men who had come over from Alabama?

*Answer.* Those with arms?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* They were white men. Well, those men were prevailed upon, perhaps an hour after I got there, to put their arms away; they put them away, and no disturbance occurred. Still we apprehended that there might be trouble, knowing the character of Price and this man Tyler, who was a colored man, and who went with him all the time, and seemed to be his next friend. We were apprehensive that some trouble might grow out of the fact that those men had come there armed; and the negroes seemed to be excited and mad about Price being arrested. Upon consultation, therefore, with the counsel for the defense, we concluded that it would perhaps be best for the case to be continued until some future day, and try to get these men from there, and have our trial without their presence. Consequently, upon that statement, the cause was continued for one week, I think; and the original bond already taken by the magistrate for the appearance of this man Price was increased from $200 to $800, and he gave the bond. At the next trial, or on the day set for the trial the next time, one of the witnesses for the State was sick, and did not come. I therefore moved for another continuance until the following week, and the continuance was had. Before the day for the next trial came on, Mr. Smith—Joshua Smith—who testified here day before yesterday, came to me and told me that he was very apprehensive that if that trial came on, there would be serious trouble between the whites and blacks.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Smith was a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he is a republican. I asked him why. He told me that Mr. Price had said that if upon that trial he was required to go to jail in default of giving a bond, he would then and there commence shooting, and that he had some thirty colored men who would be there armed and see him out. His counsel then told me privately to put me upon my guard, because I was employed to prosecute, that Mr. Price had told him this same thing, and had even gone so far as to tell this gentleman, who was his counsel, that when that was required of him he must stand aside, for he did not want to hurt him, for he would then and there commence shooting. A day or two after Mr. Smith told me about this, and after this gentleman who was defending Mr. Price told me the same thing, Mr. Smith showed me a letter he had written to Mr. Price, advising him to leave the place, and assigning as his reasons in that letter that it would be for the peace of all in that community for him to leave and remain away; that he had rendered himself very obnoxious to the community, had gotten up a bad feeling between the whites and blacks there, and that it would be decidedly the best thing that could be done for the community for him to leave and forfeit his bond. He asked me what I thought about it. I told him that if Price had said these things—and I could not doubt it, for he had told me that he had said it—and I had been informed that Price was a very desperate man, and a man of undoubted courage, and he would carry his threats into execution; and from the opinion I had of Mr. Price, under all the circumstances I advised that he take that course, or rather I approved of it; I was an employed counsel, and not acting in any official capacity for the State, and therefore I approved of that course, and Mr. Price did leave.

*Question.* Before you leave the Price case and go to the next stage of the proceedings, I want to ask one question: You say that Kennard said that while he recognized Price, he believed the persons with him were black men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he told me so.

*Question.* Please state the habits of this man Price, as to his associations there with the people, white or black.

*Answer.* He associated exclusively with the colored people.

*Question.* Was he remarkable for that?

*Answer.* He was remarkable for that. I never saw him with a white man in my life until after he was arrested, except that once on the train I saw him sitting in a car with white persons. I never saw him at Meridian associating with white persons at all.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* What was Price's business?

*Answer.* He was teaching school at Meridian.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* White or colored?

*Answer.* A colored school.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Go on with your narration.

*Answer.* I would state this in connection with this Price trial: the third time set for

the trial I went into the court-room; the magistrate opened his court, though we were generally satisfied that Price had left; I was not, however, informed positively that he had left. I went around to the court-room to attend the court in the event he should be there. When I reached there I waited awhile and he did not come, and the court was adjourned. As I went down the steps leading up to the main entrance of the court-room I met this man Warren Tyler coming up the court-house steps. I met him about midway of the steps. I was going down and he was going up. He was armed, and besides fire-arms he had a club-ax in his hands. What his business in the court-room was I do not know. He attended the trial; every continuance that was had he was there every time. This occurred, I think, about the 1st of February—all this matter in regard to Price that I have been relating. There was no more trouble then in that regard.

*Question.* This prosecution against Price was nolle-prossed, or disposed of in some way?

*Answer.* It was not nolle-prossed. I supposed the magistrate returned to the clerk of the circuit court the bond that was given by Mr. Price, and a forfeiture was taken against Price and the securities at the ensuing term of the circuit court; that was the regular course.

*Question.* The bond he had given, as I understand it, was merely for his appearance before the magistrate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is true. Well, it was forfeited. I was thinking about a bond that would be taken by the court, not by the magistrate. This bond was taken in the vacation.

*Question.* We have had the testimony of several witnesses about this matter; and I have understood from all the witnesses heretofore that it was an agreement that the case was to be considered as at an end when Price left.

*Answer.* I do not know whether there was any agreement with the officers of the court; I had none; I simply talked and conversed with Mr. Smith.

*Question.* Well, what was understood between you and the counsel on the other side as to what should be done with the case?

*Answer.* That so far as we were concerned Mr. Price could leave; we could not do anything. The only course that could be taken was for the court to take a forfeiture upon his bond, against him and his securities.

*Question.* Was it understood that if Price did not appear his bond was to be forfeited, or only that the case was to be stopped?

*Answer.* I think the general understanding between the counsel and Mr. Smith was that there would be no further trouble about it; that was my understanding. What course the court would take with it I did not know.

*Question.* You think that, in point of fact, a forfeiture was taken of his bond?

*Answer.* That would be the regular course.

*Question.* What was done?

*Answer.* I really do not know.

*Question.* What I want to ascertain is, what was done.

*Answer.* I do not know whether the court took a forfeiture or not. I had no understanding with the court about the matter; none in the world.

*Question.* That ended the Price case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Now, go on. What we want to get at is what is called the Meridian riot, in all its phases.

*Answer.* As I have stated, that Price matter was along about the 1st of February. There seemed to be existing a bad feeling.

*Question.* There has been stated here by other witnesses a fact which it may be perhaps as well to ask you about now. During the pendency of this Price case, did the Alabama men, when they came over to Meridian, take anybody back with them to Alabama?

*Answer.* That was the first day fixed for the trial of the Price case.

*Question.* They were there only once?

*Answer.* Only once. The second time Kennard came over only two or three men came along with him—the gentleman to whom he formerly belonged and one or two friends came with him. They had no arms.

*Question.* I am speaking of the armed men.

*Answer.* I understand they did. I do not know those men; I am not acquainted with a solitary one of them; I only saw them as I went to my office, and passed through a little squad of them on the sidewalk.

*Question.* What I want to get at is this: some of the witnesses have stated that those armed men from Alabama seized a couple of colored men, or perhaps three or four, and carried them back to Alabama.

*Answer.* I understood they carried them back with them.

*Question.* Three colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and that they took them back there, and it seems to me one of them was put in jail, and the others were working on the farms of the parties who were on their bonds for their appearance at court.

*Question.* Did you understand that they had been seized and carried to Alabama under any legal process?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any process.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Were the colored men carried back to Alabama the witnesses that had been brought over there to appear against Price?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think not. It seems to me that when these men who came over with Kennard got off the train at Meridian, one or two of them discovered some men who had been violating the law in Alabama—what particular statute of Alabama they had violated I never learned—and they took possession of them, arrested them, and took them into custody, and I was informed that they carried them back to Alabama; and my understanding or impression is, that perhaps they put one of them in jail in default of a bond, or something of that sort, and the others were working on the farms of those who were on their bonds. That was the information I received from an acquaintance of mine, who seemed to know about these things. I do not know whether those are facts or not.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Did you understand whether these colored men, whom these armed Alabamians took away with them, went back willingly, or were they arrested and taken back?

*Answer.* My understanding is that they were arrested and taken back.

*Question.* Now, go on.

*Answer.* Well, on the 4th of March, Saturday evening, there was a mass meeting of the colored people in the court-house at Meridian, and from the information I gathered from the testimony that was afterward taken, and from other information, and from the fact that some parties were arrested, I understood there were some incendiary and inflammatory speeches made on that occasion by three colored persons.

*Question.* Give their names.

*Answer.* Warren Tyler, J. Aaron Moore, a member of the house of representatives of the legislature of the State of Mississippi, and William Dennis, *alias* Clopton. I was informed that their speeches, as I said before, were inflammatory and incendiary; and that got up an alarm among the few white persons who were about the court-room and were present, that there would be trouble arising from the speeches that were then being made by these persons. Mr. Smith informed the sheriff of those speeches, and advised him to put a stop to them.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* What Mr. Smith; a witness here?

*Answer.* Mr. Joshua Smith, who testified here day before yesterday. Whether the sheriff reached the court-room or not before the meeting adjourned I cannot tell. The meeting adjourned, however, late in the evening; and upon going down upon the streets they organized themselves into what might be called a military company—at any rate in military order.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Who did that; the colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and with fife and drum marched around the streets of Meridian. I think some of them had swords buckled around them, and perhaps some had pistols; I do not remember seeing any with guns.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* There had been no military parade by them that day as a simple military parade?

*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of. About—well, I scarcely know what time it was. I was not in town during the fire. But in the early part of the night, a fire broke out in Meridian, which, it seemed, from the language used by the speakers, would be done at some future time. The fire burned up one block of buildings; it originated in Mr. Sturgis's store; the testimony seems to show that it originated there. When the fire broke out, and the white people were going to the fire, and a great many colored people also—because before that, at every fire that ever occurred there when I was present, the colored people were very kind and helped a great deal in saving the property of the people and extinguishing the fires; and some aided on this occasion, so I am informed—but while the white people and some of the colored people were going to aid in saving the property in the building and to extinguish the fire, if possible, some white persons were shot at; and some were shot at in going from the fire; perhaps one or two were struck. It seems that as soon as the fire broke out, and the fire-bell alarm was given, this man Clopton, a colored man, took steps to prevent the negroes from aiding in extinguishing the fire, or to save any property except that of Mr. Sturgis; perhaps they were advised to save that; I think that is the opinion. He had a great

deal to say about the white people; he said that it was a white man's fire and their property, and let it burn; that if they wanted war, let them have it; that now was as good a time as any; something of that sort. This is information I gathered afterward, for I was not present at the fire.

*Question.* You live out of town?

*Answer.* I live a mile and a half from town. I would state that this testimony was detailed upon the judicial investigation of the riot. I was one of the counsel for the defendants in that investigation. I was counsel for one Brantley, who was arrested for riotous conduct. This man Clopton was abusing the white people so, and trying to incite the colored people against the white so much, that I think the sheriff ordered him to be arrested; and he was accordingly arrested, and put in the custody of some persons, I do not knew who or how many. As the testimony in the investigation showed, large squads of colored people were seen about in portions of the town in an organized form, with arms. One witness before the investigation testified that they were asked what they were doing there in an organized body and with arms, and what they were going to do with their arms, and that they would not answer the question when first put to them; that the question was again put, and they said they were going to fight the white people, if they wanted a fight; and they then turned and left them. I think, as far as I could gather, that perhaps after the fire was over everything quieted down rather. There was a great deal of firing during the night in different portions of the town, especially in that portion inhabited by the colored people. And the testimony showed that there had been a great deal of firing in that portion of the town for several months before the fire. On Monday the white people called a meeting to consult with each other as to the proper course to pursue in the matter, so as to reconcile the bad feeling that was then being gotten up, being engendered, it seems, by the teachings of this man Price. They passed resolutions condemning the course that Mr. Sturgis, the mayor of the town, had pursued, and the course that Mr. Price had pursued, and condemning the generally riotous conduct of the people on that night, both white and black. They appointed a committee of safety, of which committee I was the chairman. The duty of that committee was to consult with the sheriff and the officials of the county as to the proper means to be adopted to secure peace between the whites and blacks, and to prevent any further disturbance; and if the sheriff desired any special officers, any special deputy sheriffs, or anything of that sort to act under his charge and direction, it was the duty of this committee to tender to him just such men as he wanted—men who were reliable, prudent, and discreet, regardless of any political opinions they might entertain. That was on Monday morning. They also appointed a committee to wait on Governor Alcorn, and ask the removal of Mr. Sturgis and some other persons there then holding office in the county. They waited on Governor Alcorn; and Mr. Joshua Smith, who testified here day before yesterday, was on that committee.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* On which committee?

*Answer.* On the committee to wait on Governor Alcorn. There was a committee, however, that I neglected to name, appointed by this meeting to investigate the origin of the fire; to investigate the matter as fully as they could. They investigated it as far as they could; they had witnesses before them, both white and black; and they made a report that from the testimony they had obtained they could arrive at no positive clew of the origin of the fire, but that the testimony seemed to cast suspicion upon the person who owned the premises; that was Mr. Sturgis, the brother of the mayor. I do not know that the testimony led them to believe that he did it directly, but that it was perhaps done through his connivance, or something of that kind; that he gave it countenance. That was the opinion with a great many after this committee made this report.

*Question.* A question right there: if the fire was set, or caused to be set, by Sturgis, what was his supposed motive for burning up his own property? To get the insurance?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have heard this advanced as two of the motives he might have had; I do not know, I cannot say what his motive was.

*Question.* I merely asked you what was the theory of those people who believed that Sturgis himself caused the fire to be set. What motive did they ascribe to him?

*Answer.* The general theory was that Mr. William Sturgis, the mayor, had been, as the mayor, instilling into the hearts of the colored people for a long time bitter feelings of hatred against the white people, and that he had gone so far as to advise the colored people to this course, even to burn up his own property, or his brother's property, and then to accuse the democrats of burning it, for political effect. That is the theory of some; whether it is a correct theory or not, I cannot tell. Another theory was that, in connection with the political effect it might have and the odium it might cast upon the democratic party in that section of the country, Mr. Sturgis would also get his insurance money.

*Question.* Another question right here on that point. Did Sturgis or his friends claim or charge that the fire was set by democrats?

*Answer.* No, sir, not that I have ever heard of; the colored people thought it was set on fire by the democrats.

*Question.* But you are not aware that Sturgis and his friends ever made any such charge?

*Answer.* No, sir; I am not aware that they made any such charge.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did not Sturgis leave immediately after that?

*Answer.* He left on Monday night after the fire on Saturday night.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Is it understood that he left in order to cast odium on the democracy?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not so understand it.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Is his brother still there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; merchandising in the place now.

*Question.* Was he in partnership with the mayor?

*Answer.* No, sir; he said and his brother said that he had no interest in it only as clerk.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* The title to the store was in his name?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, in the name of Theodore Sturgis, the brother of the mayor.

*Question.* Go on with your narration of events.

*Answer.* On Monday night, after this meeting of the white people——. However, I will take up the trial, as that comes first in order. These parties, Aaron Moore, Billy Dennis, *alias* Clopton, and Warren Tyler, had been arrested; or rather Clopton, *alias* Dennis, was arrested on Saturday night, and had been retained in custody up to that time. And during Monday Tyler and Moore had been arrested, some time during the morning, and they were arraigned before the magistrate, Mr. Bramlette.

*Question.* On Monday?

*Answer.* On Monday evening, after this meeting of the white people. They were charged with delivering and uttering inflammatory and incendiary speeches at the court-room on the Saturday evening previous, on the 4th of March. I was not engaged either for the prosecution or the defense, but I walked around there after the trial had commenced. I really did not know that they had been arrested until I walked around there after the trial had commenced. When I went I saw that a trial was progressing, and I took my seat in rear of Warren Tyler. Mr. William Sturgis was sitting near Warren Tyler, and seemed to be advising and counseling with him during the progress of the trial. After I had been there a short time, the best of my recollection is, that Messrs. Moore and Tyler and William Sturgis left the court-room, Mr. Sturgis going out of the court-house. I remember that rather distinctly, because I was sitting and leaning up against the wall of the court-room, and had my foot up against the end of the bench; and as it was in his course going down the aisle, I moved my foot out of the way as he went by; I remember that. He went in that direction, and Messrs Moore and Tyler went out of the door that leads into the hall between the court-room and the offices, and also into the sheriff's office. I do not know whether they merely went into that hall or into one of the rooms; I did not notice that particularly, though I noticed that the trial was suspended for a short time. They came back, and Tyler changed his seat and sat down by the magistrate. I have here a diagram of the court-room, and the position of the parties at the time of the trial; and if the committee will allow me to use it, of course they can have the benefit of it. I am not a very good hand at drawing diagrams, but I made this so as to enlighten the committee as far as possible as to the positions of the parties.

*Question.* You testify that you made this diagram, and that it is correct?

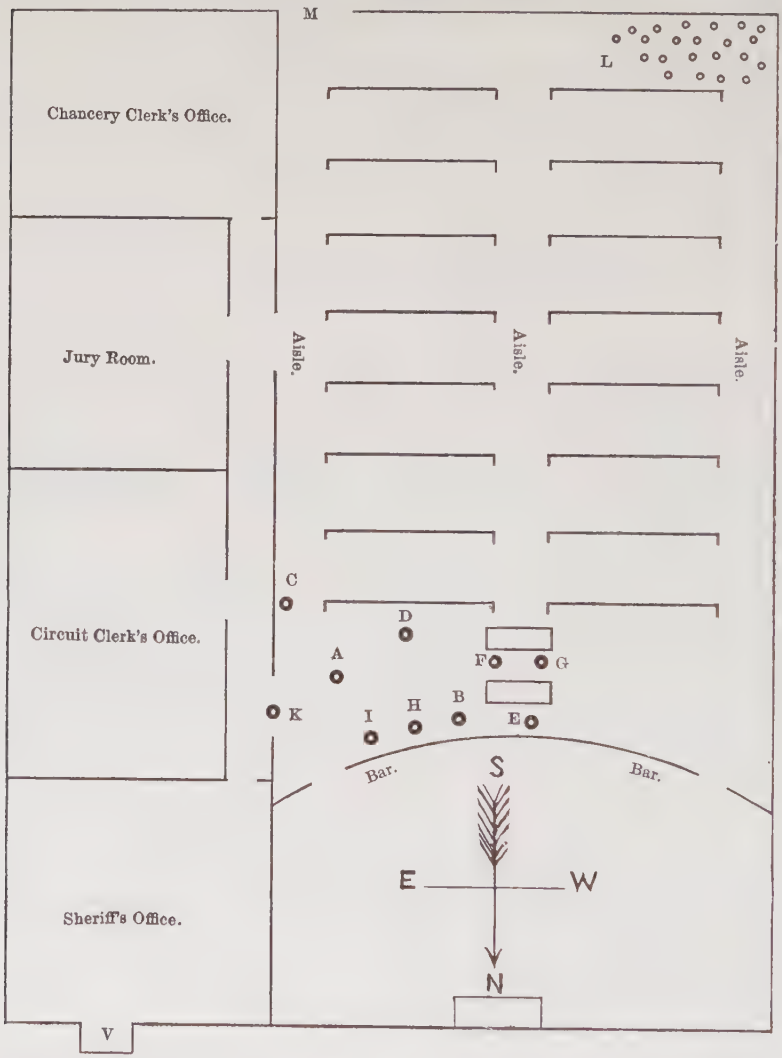
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then let it be incorporated in your testimony. [See next page.]

*Answer.* I am willing to do so. The main entrance to the court-room is in the south end of the building. My first position when I came into the court-room was a little south of the door leading to the sheriff's room, and near the east wall of the court-room. Tyler was a few feet from me in front. As I have said, a short time after I went into the court-room, Mr. Sturgis went out of the court-house, going up the aisle past me, and Tyler and Moore went out of the door near me, either into the hall adjoining the court-room, or into one of the offices opening from that hall. To the best of my recollection, they were gone four or five minutes. When they returned Tyler took his position to the left of the magistrate, with his face turned obliquely toward me, and so that I could see the front of his person. The magistrate was facing to the south, facing toward the main entrance of the court-room, and with his chair up against the railing of the bar. I afterward changed my seat, and took a position near where Tyler was sitting when I first entered the court-room. After Tyler returned, a

witness was introduced on the part of the State; think his name was James A. Brantley. His testimony was in substance this: That during the meeting of the white citizens,

*Plan of court-room floor at Meridian.*




A—Tyler's seat before he left the court-room.
B—Tyler's seat after his return to court-room.
C—Seat of M. H. Whitaker before Tyler left court-room.
D—Seat of M. H. Whitaker after Tyler's return.
E—Seat of Magistrate Bramlette.
F—Seat of city marshal.
G—Position of witness Brantley.
H—Seat of J. Aaron Moore.
I—Seat of Dennis *alias* Clopton.
K—Position of Tyler when first shot was fired.
L—Colored people standing.
M—Main entrance to court-room.
V—Veranda from which Tyler leaped and Clopton was thrown.

or when they were assembling, I do not remember which, he was walking down the street and passed or met Tyler, and he asked him what was going on up-stairs, or something of that sort, and Tyler remarked that the democrats were getting scared, and were going to hold a peace meeting; that he, Brantley, replied that it was a damned lie; that they were not scared, or something of that sort. That was his testimony as I remember it. I cannot remember the exact language, but that was the substance of it. I think the counsel for the prosecution asked Tyler and the other defendants if they wanted to ask Brantley any questions. Perhaps Brantley had

turned around and was walking back toward his seat to sit down, or was in the act of sitting down, and defendant, Tyler, told him to take the witness-stand again.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) It seems to me that as we are not trying any of these parties, but merely endeavoring to ascertain generally the cause or causes of the riot that took place, there is not much benefit to be derived from exact measurements of feet and inches.

Mr. BLAIR. This testimony is very important, as showing how the riot commenced.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) Of course anything showing the general occasion of the riot is important.

Mr. BLAIR. That is what we want to know.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) My suggestion was that we are not trying any of the parties for the riot.

Mr. BLAIR. I think we are trying all of them.

Mr. VAN TRUMP. We are trying the whole State of Mississippi.

Mr. STEVENSON. I hope she is not responsible for it.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Well, go on with your narration.

*Answer.* The witness, Brantley, had been standing rather between the two tables in front of the magistrate, at the end of them, and the city marshal was sitting between the two tables. When Brantley came back and detailed his testimony, Tyler remarked to him, "I will introduce two [or three] witnesses to impeach your testimony, sir."

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did he make that remark to Brantley or to the justice?

*Answer.* To Brantley, and in my opinion it was done in rather a defiant and insulting manner. Brantley asked him what he said. Tyler was sitting in his chair when he first made this remark, and he rose from his seat and repeated what he had said; at the same time moving toward the door that leads into the sheriff's office, which was on the left of the magistrate. While he was moving in that direction, I saw him carry his hand to his pistol.

*Question.* To his pistol or to his pocket?

*Answer.* To his pistol. I saw a belt around his person when he returned to the court-room and changed his seat.

*Question.* Did you see any pistol on him?

*Answer.* I think I did; I saw none before he went out, because his back was toward me, and I could not have seen it if he had had one then.

*Question.* You mean that he carried his hand to where you supposed his pistol was?

*Answer.* I saw his pistol before he got up from his seat; I was looking at it, and thought it strange that a man on trial should be there with a pistol.

*Question.* What sort of a pistol was it?

*Answer.* It looked like a navy pistol; I did not see the muzzle of it, for it was in its sheath, but I saw the breech of it. I will state here, just in that connection, that as Tyler repeated his statement when he rose from his seat, Brantley gathered up a walking cane, a hickory stick, I think, that was lying on the table immediately in front of the magistrate, and made two or three steps, perhaps three or four steps—I do not know exactly how far——

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Advancing toward Tyler?

*Answer.* Not exactly in the direction of Tyler, but in the direction he would have to go in order to pass by the tables. It was evidently his object to reach Tyler. He made three steps rather quickly toward Tyler with his stick. The city marshal, William S. Patton, who was sitting near the other end of the table, caught hold of Mr. Brantley after he had taken about three steps. A very short moment, a very short time after the city marshal arrested the course of Brantley, a pistol was fired; who fired it I cannot tell.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Was it instantly?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, almost instantly. When Patton, the marshal, caught hold of Brantley and told him to stop, I threw my eye around toward the marshal and Brantley, taking my eye off Tyler for a moment; and while I was looking at them, a pistol was fired from the direction of the door.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Did you look around and see the smoke?

*Answer.* I looked around instantly and saw the smoke of the pistol; I did not see the pistol fired, but I saw the smoke right by the door.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Do you mean that Tyler had reached the door when the first shot was fired?

*Answer.* He was standing right in the doorway when I looked around and saw the smoke of the pistol, and was in the act of turning toward the sheriff's office.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* The smoke was between you and Tyler?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Nearer to Tyler?
*Answer.* Right at him, as I thought.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Were there any persons between you and him?
*Answer.* None at all.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did he have his pistol in his hand when you saw him at the door?
*Answer.* I do not remember whether he had a pistol in his hand or not; he was in the act of turning, with his face in the direction of the sheriff's office.
*Question.* His position was such that he might have had a pistol in his hand without your seeing it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Go right on with your account of what took place
*Answer.* After the first pistol was fired, almost instantly there was an indiscriminate and promiscuous firing in the court-room. I suppose that the number of persons there would range from one hundred and fifty to two hundred, perhaps about an equal number of whites and of blacks. There were a great many blacks who were standing in the south end of the court-room, next to the wall, back of the west row of seats, and a great many were sitting on the seats on the west side of the court-room. The other side, the seats on the east side of the court-room, was occupied by the whites, and a few benches on the west side, in front, were also occupied by whites.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* At what particular moment did you observe that Judge Bramlette was killed?
*Answer.* As soon as this first shot was fired and the promiscuous firing commenced, it alarmed me very much, and I moved from the place where I was when Brantley gathered up the stick, and went back to the eastern aisle of the court-room, and walked, I suppose, some eight or ten steps toward the main entrance of the court-room.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Over on the white side, as you call it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. I was nearer to that aisle than to any other, and I walked back there because that aisle leads directly to the main entrance of the court-room. When I had gone that far I heard William S. Patton, the marshal, halloo out that a good man had been killed, and begging them to quit firing. I immediately turned around and walked back to the table to see who had been killed. When I reached there I saw Judge Bramlette lying dead. It seems he had been killed instantly.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Where was he hit?
*Answer.* In the left side of his head.
*Question.* While sitting there as presiding magistrate in what direction was the left side of his head?
*Answer.* To the east.
*Question.* Toward the door where this Tyler was?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. Having become still more alarmed than I was before, I turned around and walked back in the direction I first started, making toward the main entrance of the court-room; and as I passed the door at which I last saw defendant, Tyler—the door that leads to the sheriff's office—I turned my head and looked through there and saw a colored man, who I afterward learned was named Ford, lying upon the floor; he seemed to have been shot.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* On the floor in the sheriff's office?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; just inside the door. By the time I did all this the firing had about ceased. I suppose there were about twenty or thirty shots fired in the court-room; that is, as well as I can approximate to anything of that sort in the excitement and fright of such an occasion.
*Question.* You were more concerned to get out of there than to count the shots?
*Answer.* I wanted very much, indeed, to get out, but I could not do so, because the way was blocked. About the time I did all this and had walked a few paces the firing

ceased. I looked toward the main entrance and saw the colored people running down the stairs.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* The court-room is in the second story of the building?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* The whites were nearest the door when the firing began?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; except those standing up against the wall.
*Question.* Where did the firing seem to come from, what you saw and heard of it?
*Answer.* It seemed to be promiscuous; all over the whole court-room, it seemed to me.
*Question.* In what direction did the shots seem to be aimed?

The CHAIRMAN. (Mr. Poland.) I seems to me it would be better to let the witness get through with his account.

Mr. STEVENSON. Very well.

The WITNESS. While these colored people were going down the stairs—I do not think they had all got down; at least I had not been able to get out because of the crowd—quite a crowd came running by me and said that defendant Tyler had made his escape; that he had jumped off the veranda on to the sidewalk; and the crowd run on ahead of me; I was about the last man, or among the last, that got down out of the court-house; because after they passed me I stopped a moment; I think I perhaps had a little conversation, a word or two, with the city marshal, in reference to Judge Bramlette, who had been killed. I then went on down the stairs and out on the sidewalk. There were a great many persons running in a direction rather northwest from the court-house, asking where Tyler was, stating that he had killed Judge Bramlette. They went over to the block immediately across the street from the court-house, I think to the farthest side of the block next to the street. In a very short time I heard firing, and I went over close to the spot with the deputy sheriff. You will discover, from the testimony in that investigation, that I was there with him endeavoring to keep down the excitement as much as possible. I then went back toward the court-house, and there I learned that Tyler had been killed, which I supposed was the fact when I heard the guns firing, though I did not know where Tyler had gone. Yet this crowd was on ahead of me, and I supposed they knew where he had gone and were following him. I did not go very near the house; I did not see Tyler then, nor did I see him afterward. Then, as chairman of this committee of safety, I advised with the deputy sheriff as to what was best to be done to keep down the excitement among the people. Several had been shot; I did not know how many; I did not know to what extent persons had been killed, except that Judge Bramlette had been killed, and I had seen this colored man lying in the sheriff's office; I did not know who he was at the time. The deputy sheriff said he wanted additional force, that is, special police; and he wanted me, as chairman of the committee of safety, to give him such men as he wanted; I told him that whoever he wanted they were there, and I felt authorized to speak for the citizens and say that if he called upon any man to serve as a special policeman, or as a deputy sheriff, to keep down the excitement and restore quiet, he would very cheerfully serve him in that capacity. We then went on up the street in the direction of, but to the east of, where Tyler had been killed, and there we saw a large crowd. The deputy sheriff and myself got some men into a solid body; they were scattered about before, and we took them down toward the court-house. The report to me was, and it was the general information, that when this commenced and the colored people ran down, they were going immediately to the church where they held their Loyal League meetings, and where I was informed they kept their arms. That is only information; I did not know as to the facts; but the opinion was that they were going there to arm themselves and come back. Hence it was that the deputy sheriff and myself had this consultation, to restore peace as far as possible, and to protect the town against the assaults of those armed bodies if they should return. When we got down there he took this little squad or body of men that we had got into an organized shape, and marched them down to the court-house, and then divided them off into little squads to patrol the town, with orders to take arms from both whites and blacks wherever they found them, except those who were authorized by the sheriff to act as special deputies for him. Whether that was done or not I do not know; I left very shortly after that and went out home. However, I am getting on a little too fast. When we went back to the court-house with this squad of men to be divided off into little squads, I threw my eye up to the veranda of the court-house, that is, the veranda that overhung the sidewalk from the sheriff's office; and when I did so I saw a man just in the act of falling, leaving the edge of the veranda, and I heard him fall on the sidewalk.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* The veranda is in the second story?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and overhung the sidewalk of Johnson avenue, as it is called.

afterward ascertained that it was Billy Dennis, *alias* Clopton; he goes sometimes by one name and sometimes by the other.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he dead?

*Answer.* I did not go right up to him to see; I could not do it; in fact I did not see him afterward, certainly not to identify him; I saw the physician who was called to examine him and take charge of him as a physician, and I asked him who it was and if he was seriously hurt, or would die from his wounds if he had received any; and I remarked at the time that I thought that fall was enough to kill any man without anything else. He told me that he thought perhaps the wounds were very dangerous, the gun-shot or pistol-shot wounds; that is my recollection of the information I got from the physician who examined his wounds.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you see any persons throwing him from the veranda?

*Answer.* I saw persons standing upon the veranda, but upon my word and honor I cannot tell who they were; I saw the man just about the time he was leaving the edge of the veranda, and I was so shocked and horrified at the idea of throwing a man over in that way that it just unhinged me.

*Question.* Without regard to who the parties were; were they throwing him over?

*Answer.* I think they threw him over, or he was rolled over. Perhaps if they had thrown him they might have thrown him over the banisters.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Was there a railing to this veranda?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he go over the railing?

*Answer.* He went under it, I think, from the fact that he was just leaving the floor as I threw my eye up that way.

*Question.* Could a man be thrust through under the railing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I think so; I do not think there was any upright post in the center of the railing, only at the corners; he might have been thrown over, but the impression made upon me at the time was that he was rolled under, and not thrust over; it would amount to the same thing.

*Question.* You thought from the position you saw him in, that he rolled off, not of his own will, but because of what was done by somebody else?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was exactly my opinion, and it is yet, that he was rolled over, not by any exertion of his own, but by force of some others.

*Question.* Go on with your narration of what else occurred that day.

*Answer.* There is a kind of interregnum; I will have to state now only what I was informed. A very short time after the falling of Clopton, *alias* Dennis, from the veranda to the sidewalk, I left the town and went out home; it was about sundown, I suppose. My home is about a mile and a half from town. The next morning, when I came into town, I learned that Mr. Aaron Moore's residence had been burned during the night of that Monday, and also the colored Baptist church of that place. There was a meeting of the citizens called, and resolutions were adopted by that meeting condemning, in the severest terms, the burning of those buildings. And a committee was appointed, as I remember, to investigate the origin of the fires, and if any testimony could be obtained by which they could arrive at a clew to the parties who were engaged in burning those buildings, such steps were to be taken as were necessary to bring them to trial. I think the committee reported, perhaps a day or two after that, that they could not ascertain how the fires originated; but I think they reported that the firing of the church was evidently the work of an incendiary.

*Question.* Let me ask you right there a question: How near was Moore's house to the church that was burned?

*Answer.* I really cannot tell you; I do not know where that church was; it was up on the hill, and I have never been there or near there.

*Question.* What I want to ascertain is this: Whether the fire from one building could communicate to the other.

*Answer.* No, sir; it could not have done that.

*Question.* They were not near enough to each other for that?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* There must have been, then, two separate fires?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I will give the committee a theory in regard to this matter; whether the theory is correct or not is another thing. The theory there in regard to the burning of the church, and also the burning of Moore's house, is that some parties went up there and burned the church, believing, when they did so, that it was Aaron Moore's church, where the Loyal League met, and where they were said to keep their fire-arms. It is my opinion that no citizens of Meridian burned those buildings, because, if they had intended to burn the church at all, they would have burned Mr

Moore's church; and all the people who live there know the Baptist church from the Methodist. That is the theory upon which I go that it was done by some stranger.

*Question.* By somebody who does not live in your town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my judgment.

*Question.* Right in that connection, have you such information as induces you to believe that there were persons brought there that night in any numbers from abroad?

*Answer.* I would state this: I was out home, a mile and a half from town, that night; but I have been informed that persons came there during the first part of the night, that there were strangers seen in town, and those strangers were not seen there the next day. The supposition is that they came in during the night and left during the night; the consequence was that I did not see any of those strangers.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* From where were they said to have come?

*Answer.* I think it was the general supposition that they came from Alabama. A train comes in from Alabama during the night, and one leaves for Alabama early in the morning.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Was it supposed that they were the same persons or a portion of the same persons who were over there at the time of the trial of Price, a month before?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have never heard that. I have heard this: that there might have been a man, (I really do not know his given name, but I think they called him Reynolds;) this man Reynolds was arrested there in Meridian, by the white persons, after all these disturbances and these fires had occurred.

*Question.* Arrested for what?

*Answer.* I think it was supposed that he set fire to these buildings.

*Question.* He was arrested for that?

*Answer.* For that; but they could not substantiate the charge, the testimony was not sufficient; the only testimony that was against him was that he went into a drug-store during the night, and wanted to buy some oil.

*Question.* During that same night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did Reynolds live in the town, or was he an Alabama man?

*Answer.* No, sir. He seems to have been a bird of passage; sometimes he claims Livingston as his home, and, at other times, he claims some other place as his home. I heard a gentleman from Livingston talking about him the other day, and I was talking to him ——

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Where is Livingston?

*Answer.* In Sumter County, Alabama.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Was Reynolds one of the persons over there at the time of the Price trial?

*Answer.* If he was, I do not remember meeting him; I do not know him ——. I was going to say I did not know him when I saw him, but I believe I do. I have seen him perhaps twice, and I would perhaps recognize him now if I were to see him. There were other parties, and I am reminded of it, perhaps, by the connection. Some time during the night there were three colored men taken from some office in the court-house, I think, perhaps, the office of the circuit clerk, where they were in the custody of some men. I think the testimony shows that there were four men at one time, and two at another time, who had charge of them; I do not remember exactly what the testimony was in that regard. At any rate, it seems that they were taken from the custody of the persons who were guarding them, and were murdered. In the investigation, made before the circuit judge, the marshal testified that on Tuesday morning, some time before day, some person, then unknown to him—but it seems he had his suspicions as to who he was; I do not know upon what they were founded or based—some one came to him, and asked him, "Are you General Patton, the city marshal?" Patton replied, "I am." This unknown man, with his hat, as the marshal said, pulled rather over his eyes, said to the marshal: "I know you, but you don't know me; I know you as the city marshal; I am a Georgian, but I now live in Alabama; I am going to leave in a very short time, but if you will go to"—designating a certain spot on the Mobile and Ohio Railroad—"you will there find three dead colored men." The marshal accordingly went there, and found them.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Was that on Tuesday morning?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Those were the three colored men in charge of the keepers in the court-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* How many guards were around these colored men?

*Answer.* I do not remember whether there were two or four, as I remarked a moment ago.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Does that complete your account of the disturbance?

*Answer.* I think so; so far as the important facts are concerned touching the riot.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You say that when the first pistol was fired in the court-room you turned and looked in the direction from which the fire came, as indicated by the sound, and saw Tyler standing in the door-way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that you saw the smoke coming from that door?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The door leading in the direction of the sheriff's office?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there any one else in that direction that you saw?

*Answer.* None to obstruct my view; there were some white men sitting between where defendant, Tyler, was and the main entrance, about the time the first shot was fired.

*Question.* Could that shot have come from them?

*Answer.* Well, it is possible that it could have come from them, but not at all probable, because when I looked around, and I looked almost simultaneously with the firing of the pistol, not simultaneously of course, but as soon after as I could, I saw the smoke right in the door-way.

*Question.* There was no smoke where those white persons were?

*Answer.* There were no persons near enough to have left a smoke in the door-way, from the firing of a pistol, that I could see.

*Question.* What was your conviction in regard to the person who fired that first shot, from what you saw at the time?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the irresistible conviction on my mind was that the first shot was fired by defendant, Tyler, that is, from the circumstances I have just related, and the smoke of the pistol immediately after I heard the first shot.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Now, to go a little back, I want to ask you a few general questions. The colored people held a meeting on the Saturday night before the riot. What was the difficulty with the colored people; what was it that they were complaining of?

*Answer.* It was Saturday afternoon they held their meeting, not Saturday night.

*Question.* Well, I am referring to the meeting before the fire in Sturgis's building.

*Answer.* Well, sir, the testimony went to show that while their speeches were incendiary and inflammatory ——

*Question.* I am not asking about the speeches, but what were they complaining of?

*Answer.* In those speeches they said that Ku-Klux had been coming over from Alabama, and the officers of the law would not protect them; so they would protect themselves—take the laws into their own hands; that is the testimony of some of the witnesses before the investigating committee.

*Question.* What did you understand was referred to by "Ku-Klux coming over from Alabama;" what particular transaction?

*Answer.* That had reference to these parties who came over with Adam Kennard, the party prosecuting Mr. Price, and the two colored witnesses.

*Question.* Did it refer to the Alabama men taking off some colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they claimed in that meeting that if the authorities and officers of the law would not protect them against such things they must protect themselves?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was it; that was in connection with these inflammatory speeches, using incendiary language, which was detailed by the witnesses on that occasion.

*Question.* Did you understand that they complained of anything else, except a lack of protection by the authorities against these Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; my understanding was that they complained against all the white people.

*Question.* What was the complaint?

*Answer.* I really do not know what the particular charges or complaints were; only that there seemed to be a bad feeling; they seemed to have a hatred toward the white people.

*Question.* For what?

*Answer.* I do not know, unless they had been taught by Mr. Price to hate them.

*Question.* What did they complain that the white people had done or omitted to do?

*Answer.* They did not, as I know of, say that the white people generally had omitted to do anything, but perhaps they said that these men who came over there and took these colored people away from Meridian ought to have been arrested.

*Question.* I want to ascertain, so far as you know from any information which you have, what it was that the colored people were dissatisfied about.

*Answer.* I think the dissatisfaction was from the fact that these men came over there from Alabama and took the colored men away from Mississippi.

*Question.* You think that was the substance of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and they seemed to think that the officers, perhaps, did not discharge their duty by arresting those parties. I would say here that the white people condemned them.

*Question.* Were any measures taken to redress in any way that wrong?

*Answer.* No, sir; they could not well take these matters into their own hands when the officers were there and did not take any steps to do it. Mayor Sturgis was there, the sheriff was there, and all the county officers were there.

*Question.* You have spoken about this Mayor Sturgis and Mr. Price having exercised a bad influence upon the colored people, and incited them to do things that were wrong. Now, so far as you know, or so far as you have any credible information, what wrong thing, or wrong course, did either of those men advise the colored people to do or to take?

*Answer.* I do not know as to any particular advice that they gave them. But when Mr. Sturgis first went there, and for some time after he went there, and even for a while after he was mayor, the colored people and the white people got along together very smoothly and quietly, without any serious troubles, only so far as they might arise at any time between individuals of any color. But after he had been mayor for some time—I do not exactly know how long—we could see a marked difference gradually growing up among the colored people in their demeanor toward and treatment of the white people.

*Question.* What did they do?

*Answer.* They would treat them very insolently upon the street; would not meet them with that cordiality that they had shown before.

*Question.* Did they commit any outrages upon the white people?

*Answer.* O, no, sir; not that I know of; none openly.

*Question.* They were not so civil as they had been before?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that you believe, or have any information, that Sturgis or Price advised the colored people to commit any unlawful act upon the person or property of the white people?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I cannot say that; but I believe this——

*Question.* You can say that, if you believe it.

*Answer.* I am not going to say that I believe what you state; I am going to say something else. I believe this, that Mr. Price and Mr. Sturgis, in order to carry out their own purposes, for their own self-promotion, or something of that sort, endeavored to teach the colored men that the southern white men were not their friends, but their enemies, and taught them to hate us; that is my impression.

*Question.* Do you think they carried that so far as to advise them in any way, directly or indirectly, to commit any unlawful act upon any white man or upon his property?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know of any particular instance of that sort; but I am inclined to believe that they——

*Question.* Have you any credible information of any instance of that sort?

*Answer.* I can state this in connection with that Price and Kennard matter: There were two young men, or boys rather—white boys—who were going from town over home the night that this man Kennard was whipped; they had been to a debating society in town. They were riding along the road, and a crowd came up to them——

*Question.* What are the names of those young men?

*Answer.* One was named Simms, and the other was named Kilpatrick; I do not remember their given names; I do not know them. They said they were ordered to halt; theydesignated the place where they were ordered to halt as the place that Kennard designated as the one where he was whipped. They commenced cursing them and abusing them, and they ran their horses up the road, and the crowd fired at them as they ran. The supposition, from the circumstance that that was the same place where Kennard says he was whipped and outraged, the place where these boys were shot at, or near the place, between that and the town—the supposition is that it was the same crowd that did it.

*Question.* It was the same night, was it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is the idea about their being ordered to halt?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* Was it supposed that they fired upon them with intent to injure them?

*Answer.* The boys said that the balls whistled very near them, but they could not tell whether they were intended to hit them or not; they did not hit them.

*Question.* They heard the balls?

*Answer.* That is what they said.

*Question.* Was any proceeding instituted against anybody for that?

*Answer.* They did not know who they were. The day after that this man Price was arrested upon the affidavit of Kennard.

*Question.* But nobody was ever arrested for firing upon the young men?

*Answer.* No, sir; they did not know whom to arrest; there was no way to get at it, except the circumstance I have just related to you.

*Question.* You have no evidence whether that, or any act of the kind, was advised by the mayor?

*Answer.* I have no personal knowledge of it.

*Question.* Have you any belief that he advised any such act?

*Answer.* My opinion is that the advice and teachings of Mr. Price and Mr. Sturgis to the colored men were of such a character as would be calculated to incite the colored men against the whites.

*Question.* What I want to get at is, not whether they advised colored men that they were as good as white men, &c., but whether you believe that Mayor Sturgis ever counseled the colored people to commit violence upon the persons or property of white men?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that he ever advised any such thing.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* But you do believe that their advice tended to incite the negroes against the whites?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and to stir up a bad feeling between the two races.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was alleged to have been the cause for the whipping of Kennard by Price and others?

*Answer.* Well, nothing. I asked Kennard if Price had anything against him: he came up in my office and told me about it; he was hunting for the district attorney, the prosecuting attorney, in the first place.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* I think we shall get along a little faster if we wait until one member of the committee gets through with the witness, and take our turns. What was Kennard over there for?

*Answer.* My information was this: That he came over there to try and get some colored men to go back to Sumter County and work. They had left their farms there, and had come into Meridian in quite large numbers; they had left the farms where they had been working, and it was almost impossible for farmers to get hands; that is the information I got; he came over to see if he could exercise his influence with them, and get them to go back.

*Question.* To persuade them to go back?

*Answer.* To persuade them to go back on those farms, saying that Price had induced them to come from Alabama in quite large numbers—I do not know how many—having in view, perhaps, the mayoralty of the city—to make them voters before the election rolled round; that was the ostensible reason assigned.

*Question.* Did you understand that this man who came over from Alabama was a deputy sheriff in Alabama?

*Answer.* I so understood; he told me himself he was a deputy sheriff?

*Question.* Did you understand he came over to Meridian for the purpose of arresting anybody?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not; I have not understood so.

*Question.* As you understood it, he came there for the purpose of persuading some men to go back to their employers?

*Answer.* I think that is what Kennard himself told me in my office. I did hear this about it: That while he was there, perhaps, there was some man who had committed an assault and battery with intent to kill, or something of that sort, upon a colored man, whom Kennard saw, and the police of the town of Meridian got after him to arrest him, and shot at him. I do not know what became of the case afterward.

*Question.* Did you understand that this man Kennard arrested, or undertook to arrest, anybody when he was there in Meridian?

*Answer.* The inference that I drew, from the conversation that I had with Kennard, was, that he pointed out this man, identified him, and pointed him out to the police.

*Question.* Some of your Meridian police?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: I think it was some of the colored police who were after him.

*Question.* You did not understand that he undertook to make any arrest himself?

*Answer.* I did not so understand it; that might have been the true state of facts, however, but I do not know it to be so; he did not so state it to me.

*Question.* Did you understand that this matter about legal proceedings against Price had anything to do with the Meridian riot; that any part of the proceedings had anything to do with that, except the taking off of these men into Alabama by the men who came from Alabama? Did the legal proceedings against Price have anything to do with the subsequent disturbance or riot at Meridian?

*Answer.* I understood that the colored people there were very angry against Price for leaving.

*Question.* Angry with whom?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know; I suppose they were angry with those who had advised his leaving.

*Question.* You say that his leaving was suggested by his own political friends?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you understand that this meeting that was got up by the colored people had any reference to their dissatisfaction with Price's going off?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not so understand it; I understood that they were dissatisfied with his leaving?

*Question.* The substance of their complaint and dissatisfaction was, that the officers of the law did not afford colored men protection against unlawful acts; that they did not arrest these white men or Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That seemed to be the drift of their speeches—that is, a portion of them.

*Question.* Now, a word or two about this transaction in the court-house. You think that Judge Bramlette was killed by this shot which you supposed was fired by Tyler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that is my opinion, although I do not know it; I did not see the pistol fired, and I did not see the judge fall.

*Question.* Of course you have stated all your reasons for believing that. Is it your belief that Tyler intended to kill Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* I am inclined to believe that he intended it, and I will give you my reasons for so believing. When Brantley moved between those two tables, in the direction of Tyler, I suppose Brantley must have been four feet from Mr. Bramlette, the magistrate, out of the range of any person firing at the magistrate from the door where I last saw defendant, Tyler; if he had wanted to shoot at Brantley it would have been, perhaps, four feet out of the range of Judge Bramlette. The magistrate also stated, before the trial, that he had attempted to advise Tyler to go on peacefully and quietly, and to try to get along well with everybody, and not stir up any strife between the races; that Tyler got mad with him for it, and said that the next white man who advised him to do any such thing, he would slap in the mouth. Judge Bramlette remarked, before he went up there to hold the court, that he did not like to do it, because Tyler was to be there, and he was mad with him.

*Question.* What was the politics of Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* He was a republican.

*Question.* Was he a man of good reputation.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Had he the ill-will of any individual?

*Answer.* No, sir; on the contrary, both parties liked him.

*Question.* If Tyler intended to shoot him, you think it was on account of his own personal ill-will toward him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do not think it was anything else.

*Question.* You believe that Tyler shot him?

*Answer.* That is my belief.

*Question.* Is that the general accepted opinion in your town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think quite a number of witnesses that saw him fire——

*Question.* Is that the belief of the colored people?

*Answer.* I do not think they believe it; the majority of them do not; some few may believe it.

*Question.* That is not their version of it?

*Answer.* I think not, although I never heard one speak of it in my life.

*Question.* What do you understand to be the general opinion among the colored people as to who shot Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* I do not know, only that they do not believe that Tyler shot him; that is what I have heard, though I have never heard one of them speak about it at all; I have been informed that they did not believe that he was shot by Tyler.

*Question.* The complaint made against Tyler and these other men, who were then on trial, was that they made incendiary speeches?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* Was that prosecution under some statute of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I think so—for inciting a riot, something of that sort; for using incendiary language; I think there is a statute of that sort.

*Question.* For what were the three colored men arrested, who were killed during the night?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know what they were arrested for; I did not know they were arrested until they had been arrested and killed. I will say this, that this man Isaac Lee was there in the court-house; I do not know whether the others were there or not; and when Lee went down-stairs several white persons went to him, and I think they were about to arrest him, when a white man, Doctor Bass, for whom Isaac Lee was working, came up and told these white men not to trouble him, to let him go; that so far as he knew, he was a peaceable and good, quiet negro. They did let him go, but it seems that just as he started off they discovered fire-arms on his person; they examined his coat and found one of these large brass-butted pistols in each side of his coat; he had just come down from the court-room. That is the last I heard of him; but I understood they took him into custody and delivered him over to the sheriff.

*Question.* What about the other two?

*Answer.* I do not know when they were arrested, or under what circumstances they were arrested.

*Question.* Nor what for?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you understand that any warrant was issued against any of them?

*Answer.* None at all, that I know of.

*Question.* Did you understand that the sheriff, or anybody else, had any process under which they were arrested?

*Answer.* No, sir; none that I know of.

*Question.* But for some reason or other some one did take them into custody?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they were taken out by some one during the night and murdered?

*Answer.* That is my information.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* At what time of the night?

*Answer.* I cannot say; if I have ever heard I do not remember; I judge it was perhaps in the latter part of the night, but I do not know.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* At the subsequent examination before Judge Leachman, was there any endeavor made to ascertain who did this? I understand you were counsel in that investigation.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; after this riot, this man Brantley, who made at Tyler with the stick, was arrested upon the same charge that the others had been arrested upon, for giving rise to the riot that had occurred in the court-room, for that was the beginning of it. Upon his trial all the facts were brought out in regard to that riot.

*Question.* That was the hearing or examination before Judge Leachman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there anybody else under arrest before Judge Leachman except Brantley?

*Answer.* There were several parties arrested during the progress of the trial.

*Question.* For participation in the disturbance?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In the course of the examination before Judge Leachman, did they attempt to ascertain the facts in relation to the killing of these three colored men; was that specially made a subject of examination?

*Answer.* I think the officers attempted to do so, or tried to do so; and the citizens gave them whatever assistance they could, but not in a judicial way until this investigation took place.

*Question.* Was it a part of the object of that inquiry before Judge Leachman to ascertain who killed these three colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the object of the investigation, as I understood it, was this: To take testimony regardless of the rules of testimony; to take all the testimony that could be drawn out against Brantley in commencing this riot; to take all the testimony that could be reached from any source, white or black, in regard to any particular transaction or occurrence that took place during the riot, the fires, everything about the killing of these three men, and the shooting of Dennis, *alias* Clopton, and Tyler.

*Question.* Were they able to discover who killed these three men?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was there all the time——

*Question.* Were they able to ascertain who killed Tyler and Clopton?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were not able to do it.

*Question.* They could not find out anything about it?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* And have not to this day?

*Answer.* No, sir. The State was represented by the district attorney of that district, and an attorney employed, as I understand, by Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* You appeared for the persons arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, simply at the request of the citizens, that there might be a full investigation of the whole matter. The citizens were anxious that the origin of the fire should be investigated.

*Question.* They were not able to discover on that examination who set the fire?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They examined into the cause of the fires at Sturgis's store, the Baptist church, and Moore's house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they could not find out who set any of them on fire?

*Answer.* No, sir; as near as I can remember, the testimony of one of the colored witnesses in regard to the origin of the fire, or rather the first that he saw of it, was that he was standing near the railroad depot, where he was employed.

*Question.* Are you speaking of the fire at Sturgis's building or the church?

*Answer.* The fire at Sturgis's building. He said that when he saw it he ran down there, and was among the first who did see it; that when he reached the storehouse of Sturgis he started to run into, and did run inside, the door; that he saw two men there, one near the door and another sitting on or standing near the counter, I do not know which; he said that the fire was burning in the second story, and he told them that the house was on fire; they told him to get out of there, or something to that effect.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did he know either of those men?

*Answer.* He did not know either one of them. He said one of them had heavy black whiskers; and William Sturgis had very heavy black whiskers.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* So far as the description went, it answered to Sturgis?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that was all.

*Question.* Now, in regard to the other fire, the fire at Moore's house and at the church; were those two buildings burning at the same time?

*Answer.* I do not know which was first burned; that testimony was drawn out, but I do not remember what it was.

*Question.* They were burned the same night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But whether at the same time, you do not know?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not.

*Question.* You say the good, sober people of your place, of all parties, disapprove of all these acts of violence, the killings and burnings.

*Answer.* Yes, sir, they disapproved of it; they disapprove of any violations of the law.

*Question.* And they are anxious to bring the perpetrators of those acts to justice?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has it occurred to you as a little singular that with all this anxiety on the part of the good people there, and with all the endeavor that has been made, nothing has been found out yet?

*Answer.* It does look a little remarkable, yet it is so; I speak from experience. I was in the court-room when the firing commenced, and as many pistols as were fired in the court-room, I could not tell you to save my life who fired a single shot.

*Question.* Except Tyler?

*Answer.* I did not see him fire.

*Question.* You say you saw enough to satisfy you that he did fire?

*Answer.* I do not know; after the firing commenced everybody became alarmed.

*Question.* So far as you have any knowledge or belief, nothing has yet been discovered that furnishes any likelihood that the perpetrators of any of these acts of violence will be brought to justice?

*Answer.* I have never been able to learn of any clew being had to the origin of the fire or the killing of these men.

*Question.* In the outset of your testimony you told about the killing of a colored man in another place, a man who was a justice of the peace, I believe?

*Answer.* He was a supervisor.

*Question.* He was also a justice of the peace?

*Answer.* I think that in some respects they have the authority of a justice of the peace.

*Question.* You do not understand that he held the office of justice of the peace?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* But the office which he did hold authorized him to exercise some of the powers of a justice of the peace?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Nothing has been discovered in relation to who perpetrated that act?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have been informed that the white people of that neighborhood

have made dilligent inquiry, and tried to find out about this thing, but they have not been able to do it.

*Question.* How far is that from your place?

*Answer.* About fifteen miles.

*Question.* In the same county in which you live?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was the name of that man?

*Answer.* Joseph Williams.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Some witness has spoken here about a transaction of a similar character in Lauderdale.

*Answer.* Mr. Smith was talking to me about that yesterday, but I cannot remember the circumstances.

*Question.* Do you remember generally about the case?

*Answer.* I remember that there was one person shot and lost his arm, and perhaps one of them was killed; there seems to have been a general muss among them; but I do not remember about it.

*Question.* Is it your recollection that that was done by a band of men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not recollect whether they were in disguise or not.

*Question.* It has never been discovered who did it?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any other acts of men in disguise in your county, bodies of men, I mean?

*Answer.* No, sir, I believe not; I do not now remember any other.

*Question.* You think that, upon the whole, acts of violence in your county against the criminal law are as certainly and promptly punished as they are in other peaceable communities?

*Answer.* They are, if those who commit them are found out; that is the difficulty. I stated this, that as a general thing the criminal law is as well executed now as prior to this time and prior to the war; because there are many instances, not a great many either, in our own immediate section, where outrages have been committed, and it is impossible to get any clew to the persons who have committed them.

*Question.* Do you think that the difficulty of ascertaining who committed any of these acts of violence that you talk about has been in any degree aggravated by the fact that there was something of a political nature about them, which caused them, perhaps?

*Answer.* I have heard that there was such an organization, but if there is I do not know it.

*Question.* That is not my inquiry. It was in regard to the difficulty of ascertaining who has committed these various acts of killing and burning, &c. Do you think that it is more difficult to ascertain who committed those acts in consequence of there being a political element in them?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I believe this: I believe that if there is an organization of that sort down there, its tendency would be in that direction.

*Question.* Do you think there is?

*Answer.* I do not; well, I only base my opinion upon this, that I have never heard of one; at least, I have heard of one, but I have no evidence of there being an organization of that sort.

*Question.* I am not speaking of there being an organization. Has there not been in all these disturbances, in these killings and burnings, this riot, &c., something of a political character?

*Answer.* Well, sir, only this far, that the great majority of the white people belong to the democratic party, and the great majority of the colored people belong to the republican party; and when this riot commenced it seemed to have been, as it were, a conflict between the whites and the blacks; so far, it was political. But I saw a great many colored men on the streets on that day, during the riot, and they were not interfered with at all.

*Question.* And they did not interfere?

*Answer.* No, sir, not at all; they did not take any hand at all.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Right at that point: What class of colored people were interfered with?

*Answer.* Do you mean in the court-house?

*Question.* No, sir.

*Answer.* Do you mean outside?

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Allow me a moment. You have stated how far this difficulty partook of a political character. Now, do you not think that the fact that it did, to that extent,

partake of a political character, is one reason why it is impossible to find out who have committed these acts of violence?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not. I think the difficulty is in this, that the people were so excited and alarmed that their minds were confused in regard to any particular person or any particular act that was done; I know that seemed to be the situation of every witness, both white and black, that was introduced on the investigation.

*Question.* You think it was the confusion incident upon these transactions?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I think so. I never thought myself I could be so excited or confused in a place of that sort that I could not remember something; but it is an absolute fact I cannot do it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I want to ask you the question now that I propounded a little while back. What was the reason, if any was assigned, for Ku-Kluxing Kennard by Price?

*Answer.* Shall I state the information I received from Kennard?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* The information that he gave me in that regard was this, that he and Price belonged to the same League, in Sumter County, Alabama.

By Mr. VAN TRUMP:

*Question.* Do you mean the Loyal League?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and that he (Kennard) was the head of the order at that place, I think, and that Price tried to get him to use his influence with the colored people to go out and plunder the white people; that he declined to do it, would not do it, and quit the League, and afterward voted the democratic ticket. That is what Kennard told me. One of the colored witnesses who went to Meridian with Kennard at the time of the prosecution of Price, told me that he heard Price make some threats in regard to Kennard, and said that he had better get out from there before night, or something of that sort.

*Question.* I understood you to say substantially in your testimony that the escape of Price from the prosecution that was instituted against him was connived at?

*Answer.* By whom?

*Question.* In the first place, it was proposed by his own counsel?

*Answer.* No, sir; you have misunderstood me. I said this, that in consequence of some threats and declarations made by Price after he was arrested, he having said that if he was required to give a bond or to go to jail unless he gave one, as soon as that was done then and there he would commence shooting, and that he advised his counsel to stand aside, for he did not want to shoot him; he said that he would have perhaps thirty or forty well armed colored men there to stand at his back; he having told this to Mr. Smith, a witness who was here day before yesterday, Mr. Smith came to me with a letter he had written addressed to Mr. Price, and read it to me, and asked me what I thought of it. In that letter he stated to Price that he, Price, had brought about a state of very bitter feeling between the whites and blacks at that place, and that if he remained there trouble between the whites and blacks would be inevitable; that his presence, more than anything else, would lead to it; and he advised him for the peace of the community and the good of that section of the country to leave the place. He asked me if I would approve of that. I told him that I was simply employed as counsel, but that, under the circumstances, if Price had made those declarations, I not only thought it would perhaps be for the good of the community, but of all classes, that he should leave; that knowing Mr. Price to be a desperate man, as I had heard him to be, I would not like to appear in the prosecution at all; and I therefore approved of it. But there was no connivance, that I know of, on the part of any official, none in the world. Whatever became of the bond I do not know. I had no conference with the officers of the court about it. My conference was entirely with Mr. Joshua Smith.

*Question.* Then there is no doubt about the fact that you and Mr. Smith both agreed that it was best not to try him on account of his desperate character, and the desperate threats which he had made?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we agreed fully upon that.

*Question.* So, in fact, justice in that instance was overawed by his violence?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* It was impossible to bring this man Price to justice in that community, for Ku-Kluxing the negro Kennard, by reason of the intimidation which he brought to bear?

*Answer.* I will not say that; I cannot say it. I would say this: I will not say there was any particular intimidation. While I had myself some apprehensions, as the prosecuting attorney, I do not know that the community was intimidated. But it was the opinion of those of us who consulted together that it would be best for the colored people, and best for the white people, for this man to leave; because he had made such declarations; and we believed from his character as a man, that if the trial did come off, and he was required to give a bond or to go to jail in default of a bond, he

would bring about a disturbance of a very serious character. He had already announced that he would have thirty or forty armed colored men there to back him.

*Question.* You say that Mr. Smith wrote a letter, telling him that he thought it best for both colored and white people that he should go?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you suppose any such motive as that operated upon Price; that is, the good of the community that he had already disturbed?

*Answer.* I cannot say as to what effect this letter had upon him. I must say this, that he did not want to go at the first start; he hesitated about going.

*Question.* Did he not go to escape punishment for his crimes?

*Answer.* I cannot say that; I do not know whether he did or not; he left by the advice of his friends, while he was under the charge.

*Question.* Left his bondsmen to pay his bond?

*Answer.* Left his bondsmen upon his bond; but whether he left for the good of the community or to evade the penalties of the law, or anything of that sort, I cannot say.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did you hear anything about Alabamians threatening to come there to Price's trial?

*Answer.* No, sir; that had been stopped. They only came over once, and it was distinctly understood that they were to come no more.

*Question.* You did not hear that they threatened to come there and see Price tried?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not, except the first time they came over, when I saw them armed; I never heard that they were to come back the second time. I supposed myself, and I understood, that they would remain away.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You had postponed the trial in order to get rid of their presence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The first time I made a motion in court for a continuance of the trial, and I gave the court distinctly to understand that that was my object.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* May not Price have apprehended that if he stood his trial they would come there; and that if he was acquitted, they would commit violence?

*Answer.* It is possible that may have been his apprehension; but I never heard of any intention on their part to come there after the first time.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You have stated the cause of the quarrel between Price and Kennard to have been that Price attempted to draw Kennard into his thieving operations?

*Answer.* That is what Kennard told me.

*Question.* And that he inflicted this punishment upon Kennard for that reason?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That was the charge?

*Answer.* I would state that that was not the only reason that I heard of: I heard several reasons assigned—perhaps three of them. The first was that Kennard declined to go into an arrangement of that sort with Price; the second was that Kennard voted the democratic ticket at the last election, before this riot occurred; and the third was that he had gone to Meridian, where he was trying to get these colored men, whom Price had induced to come from Sumter, to go back there and work on the farms.

*Question.* Those were the grounds for the assault of Price on Kennard?

*Answer.* Those were supposed to be the causes of his whipping him, as stated to me by Kennard himself.

*Question.* Do you suppose that Price dreaded an exposure of his character by this trial; that he dreaded that his thieving plans which he had proposed to Kennard would be exposed, as well as the fact that he had punished Kennard by Ku-Kluxing him?

*Answer.* I would say this, in answer to that: That if the things stated to me by Kennard were true, it is very probable that he disliked or feared an investigation of the case.

*Question.* Well, Kennard was a competent witness to prove the fact?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he was a competent witness to prove the fact.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* I want to ask a question: Up to the time that this difficulty broke out between Price and Kennard, had there been any unusually bad feeling or trouble existing between the white and colored races in or about Meridian?

*Answer.* I would say this: that, so far as I had been informed—I did not stay in town at night——

*Question.* I mean all about there in that county.

*Answer.* I was informed that for several months before this riot occurred there was a

continual firing among the colored people in town during the night-time in those parts of the town mostly populated by colored people.

*Quesiton.* That was while Sturgis was mayor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there an ordinance of the town against indiscriminate firing at night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the management of the city and its police under the control of the mayor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And yet he permitted the negroes to do all these things?

*Answer.* I do not know whether it was permissively done or not.

*Question.* Were they punished for it?

*Answer.* At any rate, it was not stopped. I think one of the policeman testified, in the course of the investigation, that not a single person had ever been arrested, either white or black, for that offense. He said it was impossible to catch them; that they would fire a pistol and run and get out of the way in the dark.

*Question.* Was it generally understood by the people there, after Price made his declaration, that if he was sent to jail in default of bail he would commence shooting immediately, and that he had forty colored men, armed, to stand by him—was that generally believed to be true?

*Answer.* It was not generally known at that time.

*Question.* Was it believed by those who knew it?

*Answer.* Those who heard of it believed it; but the community at large had not heard of these things; they were things that had not been spoken of a great deal. Mr. Smith and some others knew of them, and we consulted with each other privately about these things, for we did not want the community to know what we advised; we did not believe it would be of any service or good.

*Question.* From the information you had, did you believe that Price had that number of negroes ready to aid him in violating the law, and to commence this indiscriminate shooting if he was convicted?

*Answer.* If he said he would have them there I believe he would.

*Question.* He did say it?

*Answer.* I believe he said it.

*Question.* Do you believe he had that number of negroes there that he could control?

*Answer.* I do; I think that he had a sufficient number that he could get there in the court-room.

*Question.* Not only to defy the law, but to shoot those he wanted shot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you suppose that state of feeling, that lawlessness, that willingness to follow their leaders on the part of the negroes, had been brought about by the teachings of Sturgis and Price?

*Answer.* I think so; more especially by Price. I judge so from the feeling that seemed to grow upon them, especially after Price went there.

*Question.* Were your negroes ignorant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; uneducated. This man Tyler had a limited education; he was the assistant teacher of a colored school there with Mr. Price.

*Question.* Were the most of the negroes of that character who would be apt to follow any leader who had obtained their confidence?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* And you think that Price had that?

*Answer.* I think that Price had the confidence of the colored people.

*Question.* Have you stated what was his character in that community?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know particularly; from all I could learn his character was bad, so far as a bad influence over the colored people was concerned.

*Question.* Was that also the general character of Sturgis?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; recently, not when he first went there; for when he first went there he was a friend of the colored man, and never advised him to do anything wrong that I know of.

*Question.* Did you state whether at the time this first shot was fired Tyler was in any danger of being struck by Brantley, or was the distance between them so great that he could not have been hit?

*Answer.* He could not have been struck then, he was too far off; and besides the city marshal had hold of Brantley.

*Question.* Had Brantley then ceased making any effort to pursue him?

*Answer.* The marshal testified that Brantley made no strenuous effort to get away after he got hold of him. I looked that way but I could not testify clearly whether he made efforts to get away or not.

*Question.* Did you speak of the fact of Kennard voting the democratic ticket having been one of the causes of the attack on him by Price?

*Answer* That is what he told me.

*Question.* What is the rule there when negroes undertake to vote the democratic ticket, as to their treatment by their colored brethren?

*Answer.* As a general thing they would treat them very badly.

*Question.* In what way?

*Answer.* They would threaten to whip them or kill them, or something of that sort.

*Question.* Was that common in all cases where negroes voted the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I have known one or two colored men to go up and quietly vote the democratic ticket, or not so quietly, for, of course, there was some excitement; but there was no violence attempted against them. They would threaten them before they did it that they would do so and so to them, if they did not vote with their race.

*Question.* Was there any general intimidation exercised toward the colored men who desired to vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I thought so; I have had them tell me that they desired to vote that way, but they had been threatened that if they did it they would be used badly.

*Question.* So far as your information extends, is there any such general organization as the Ku-Klux in that part of Mississippi?

*Answer.* Not that I know of; there may be, but I do not know it.

*Question.* From all the information that you have, do you believe there is anything more in your part of Mississippi than men disguising themselves for the purpose of committing particular acts—an organization by the men who commit an act for that particular occasion?

*Answer.* My idea about that is, and has been ever since they commenced it, that these disguised bodies of men in that section of country are no more nor less than desperadoes, reckless men, wild men, regardless of their own lives and the lives of any other person, white or black; that is the way I have viewed it; that they occupied no position in society, or anything of that sort; that they are outlaws. Of course, I believe any man would be an outlaw who would go into such a thing. I do not believe that any good citizens of that country belong to any such organization, or would go into an organization of that character.

*Question.* No more than you believe that the Ku-Klux who went with Price to Ku-Klux Kennard had any organization outside of the men who were engaged in that transaction?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They assume a disguise only for protection?

*Answer.* That has been my idea about it.

*Question.* Is that your idea now?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that these things are gotten up for the particular instances.

*Question.* What was the character of Tyler and Clopton and the three negroes who were killed; what was their general character?

*Answer.* They were looked upon as very bad men—men who would give bad advice, who would use all their efforts to get up a bad feeling between the two races; that is what I understood their character to be.

*Question.* You stated that Mayor Sturgis and this colored man, Tyler and another colored man, Moore, I think, went out of the court-room just before the shooting began there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they subsequently returned; did they return together?

*Answer.* No, sir; Mr. Sturgis did not return.

*Question.* Prior to Tyler going out with Sturgis, did you observe any pistol upon him?

*Answer.* No, sir; but I would state that perhaps I could not have observed it if it had been upon him; before he went out his back was toward me.

*Question.* Was it not a large pistol that you observed on him when he returned?

*Answer.* I could not tell what the size was very well.

*Question.* Would it not have shown itself through his coat?

*Answer.* It might have done so, and it might not; a man having on a pistol buckled behind him in that way can adjust his coat so as not to show it when he sits up straight.

*Question.* Did not the sheriff disarm Tyler just before the trial?

*Answer.* I think the sheriff testified that he disarmed him perhaps a short time before he went in there; I do not remember that exactly, but I think that is his testimony.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was it believed that Tyler got that pistol when he went out with Sturgis; that Sturgis procured a pistol from him?

*Answer.* That was the impression, that he armed him when he went out. Some of the witnesses testified that they saw no belt, or anything of that sort, upon him before he went out, but saw it after he returned, as I have stated.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* One question about the character of these men who commit offenses; you say they are outlaws, men without position or responsibility in society. How is that

reconciled in your community with the fact that the wrongs they commit are generally excused or accounted for on the ground that they are committed against men who have offended against the law? For instance, take Williams, who you say had committed misdemeanors in office.

*Answer.* I understand that only in this way: From what I know of the white people down there, I am satisfied that no good citizens—and I think the most of them are good citizens, and want peace and quiet—I am satisfied that no good citizens would go into anything of the kind; I do not think anybody would do it except outlaws.

*Question.* Is it the practice in your country for outlaws to take upon themselves, at the risk of their own lives, to punish other men who have violated the law?

*Answer.* It is not very generally that these things occur in our immediate section of country. But I take it for granted that when they do occur the violators of the law, the perpetrators of the deeds are no more nor less than outlaws. I look upon them as such, and the majority of the people look upon them as such.

*Question.* Well, if so, and they visit people who themselves are offenders against the law, where does the instigation of the act come from?

*Answer.* I do not know, I cannot explain that.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Pursuing that thought, what have these outlaws, as you suppose them to be, to gain by killing people and whipping people?

*Answer.* I do not know, unless it be that it is just a reckless and lawless disposition among some people down there. My opinion is that these outrages are sometimes committed by colored people as well as by white people. I cannot name any instance where white people have done it, or where black people have done it, except in this case of Price. I believe it is a little mixture of both; I think it is bad men of both parties who are engaged in these outrages.

*Question.* What profit do the outlaws make by these things generally?

*Answer.* I do not know; I cannot answer for the motives of men who would commit deeds of that sort.

*Question.* How do they make their living?

*Answer.* I do not know who they are; if we knew who they were, then they would be prosecuted as outlaws. I cannot tell you what they do, for I do not know who they are.

*Question.* Where do they get their horses?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* How does it happen that the people there do not pursue, arrest, and prosecute such offenders, who are supposed to be reckless outlaws?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the people down there, the good citizens, have never been able, so far as I have been able to learn, to get any clew by which they could be guided in bringing these men to punishment. For instance, this man who I heard of being killed at Toomsuba, Joe Williams, by men in disguise—or whether in disguise or not I do not know—that case was not known until the next morning. That was a little scattered village there, and after this man was killed at night it seems that scarcely anybody knew it until these men had time to get away.

*Question.* Was there any pursuit made?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Was there any attempt made to follow their tracks?

*Answer.* I do not know that there was.

*Question.* Have you heard of any pursuit being made in any of these cases?

*Answer.* I never have.

*Question.* Except this transaction of Price?

*Answer.* There was no pursuit made in that case; he was there in the place, he did not flee.

*Question.* In regard to this riot, how many shots do you suppose were fired?

*Answer.* I think there must have been—though I was excited, as I have stated already—after the firing commenced, I have supposed that there were about twenty or thirty shots altogether.

*Question.* Was the firing all at once, in a volley?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* How long did the firing last?

*Answer.* A very short time; I do not know how long.

*Question.* Was it over directly?

*Answer.* In a very short time.

*Question.* How many persons do you suppose fired?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* Judging from the rapidity of the fire and the number of the shots, how many persons do you suppose fired?

*Answer.* It would be impossible for me to make even a supposition about that, because the firing was going on all around over the court-house.

*Question.* It was all over the court-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and popping about in that way, I could not tell.
*Question.* The shots were scattered about all over the court-room?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Has anybody confessed that he fired a pistol there?
*Answer.* I have never heard a man confess it.
*Question.* Nobody has admitted any such thing?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* You never have heard of anybody having admitted it?
*Answer.* I have not heard of it.
*Question.* Has anybody said that anybody else fired a pistol there?
*Answer.* I heard one man say that he was shot at, but he did not know who it was; he could not identify the man.
*Question.* And, so far as you know, nobody has said that anybody else fired a pistol there except Tyler.
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* How do you account for the fact that in a crowded room like that so many shots could be fired in all parts of the room, and nobody would be willing to tell that he himself had fired a shot, or that anybody else had fired one?
*Answer.* I cannot account for it only in this way, that when that promiscuous firing commenced—for when the first pistol was fired it was followed almost instantly by a promiscuous firing by twenty or thirty people—if all the balance were like me, except those who participated in it, they were frightened and excited. That is my reason for saying that I am not able to say that any particular person fired a pistol; I did not see anybody fire a pistol.
*Question.* You were not in the crowd who were firing?
*Answer.* I was in the court-room.
*Question.* Were you not back on the benches from which the main part of the shots came?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Do you suppose it possible that that firing could have been done by people all through the crowd, and the people in the crowd not know anybody who did it?
*Answer.* Well, sir, as I said before to the Chairman, it was something rather remarkable; I must say it, although it is so with me too.
*Question.* Can you account for it in any other way except by supposing that those who were in the body of the crowd and did see the firing, suppressed the fact?
*Answer.* In the crowd?
*Question.* Yes.
*Answer.* It may be the disposition of some to suppress it, but it was not my disposition.
*Question.* Of course not.
*Answer.* I do not know that any disposition of that sort prevailed in the crowd; if there was, I do not know it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Would not the fact that you were not in the crowd have enabled you better to see who fired the shots than those who were in the crowd from which those shots were fired?
*Answer.* I do not know whether it would or not; if I could stand off and be perfectly cool and calm, I might tell who fired the pistols; but I was in the midst of pistol-firing all around me.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* You were looking out for the balls?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; not taking any part in it except that of a looker-on, and not much of that. I cannot say who did it.
*Question.* What is the state of feeling there generally among the people; what is their sympathy when a colored man is injured by a white man?
*Answer.* When anything of that sort is done the majority condemn it in the severest terms.
*Question.* What do they do?
*Answer.* They do not do anything; individuals cannot do anything; I do not know anything that has been done particularly, except in the matters connected with the riot.
*Question.* And in that case they shot?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And when one colored man was killed, they killed some more. What did you do when this man Clopton was tumbled over the veranda there? You saw the men up-stairs?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You had been appointed the chairman of the committee of safety?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you go up to see who those men were?
*Answer.* No, sir, I did not.
*Question.* Why did you not?
*Answer.* I do not know that it was part of my duty to go up there.
*Question.* You did not conceive it to be your duty to go up there?
*Answer.* The sheriff was there, the deputy sheriff was there.
*Question.* Where were they?
*Answer.* Out on the streets.
*Question.* Did they see the same thing?
*Answer.* I do not know whether they saw it or not.
*Question.* Were they in front there?
*Answer.* They were there, and a large crowd was there.
*Question.* Did anybody go up-stairs?
*Answer.* I do not know that anybody did.
*Question.* Did you endeavor to get anybody to go up-stairs?
*Answer.* I did not.
*Question.* Were you afraid to go up alone?
*Answer.* It did not occur to me.
*Question.* It did not occur to you to go up there and see who threw that man off the veranda?
*Answer.* Not being an officer of the county, and the officers being there, I did not conceive it to be my duty to go up there. The first thing that occurred to me when it was done, was to find out who it was who fell from the veranda. I thought it a very great outrage, shocking, horrible to see; I so conceived and viewed it.
*Question.* Did you say so?
*Answer.* I did.
*Question.* To whom?
*Answer.* To a number of persons.
*Question.* At the moment?
*Answer.* At the moment.
*Question.* Did anybody go up there?
*Answer.* I do not know.
*Question.* Did you endeavor to get anybody to go up?
*Answer.* I did not. A physician went there and examined him, and when he came out I was standing there waiting to see him about it.
*Question.* What was done with that man afterward?
*Answer.* I understood he was carried back into the sheriff's office, and that his throat was cut.
*Question.* Did you understand who did that?
*Answer.* No, sir; I did not. I was not in town that night, and have never been able to learn.
*Question.* How long have you lived in Meridian?
*Answer.* A little over three years.
*Question.* Were you not there during the war?
*Answer.* I was at Marion, about seven miles above there.
*Question.* In the same county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Were you in the war?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In what capacity?
*Answer.* As lieutenant colonel part of the time.
*Question.* In which army?
*Answer.* The army of North Virginia.
*Question.* On which side?
*Answer.* The confederate side, the southern side, or the rebel side.
*Question.* Has there been any change since the war closed in the sentiment of the people there toward the Government?
*Answer.* I think so.
*Question.* What is the general tone of sentiment there?
*Answer.* Well, sir, so far as I know and believe, it is that the great majority of the white people are willing to render perfect obedience to the Constitution and the laws as enacted by the Congress of the United States and by the State government.
*Question.* The Constitution as it is?
*Answer.* The Constitution as it is.
*Question.* Including all the amendments?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You take a new departure?
*Answer.* We take it as an accomplished fact.
*Question.* Were you in the first legislature after the war?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have never been a member of the legislature.

*Question.* Who is regarded, down there in Mississippi, as the democratic leader? I believe that is Jeff Davis's State.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but he is not regarded as leader.

*Question.* Do the democracy still adhere to him?

*Answer.* They do not; they do not approve of his conduct in all things.

*Question.* He was popular before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and during the war.

*Question.* And immediately after the war?

*Answer.* Of course their sympathies were with him, but they do not look to him as a leader?

*Question.* They do not?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think not.

*Question.* Was he not the most popular citizen you had there at the close of the war?

*Answer.* Perhaps he was.

*Question.* Do you remember an address to the President of the United States which the legislature of Mississippi issued at that time?

*Answer.* I remember something about it, but I do not remember the language of the address.

*Question.* The legislature did issue an address?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is my recollection that they did.

Mr. STEVENSON. I wish to introduce now this paper, a copy of the address of the legislature of Mississippi to President Johnson.

Mr. BLAIR. I object to it; it has about as much to do with this investigation as the case which I made the other day against Mr. Wallace selling negroes into slavery.

Mr. STEVENSON. I want to introduce the address of the legislature of Mississippi to the then President of the United States, approved November 8, 1865, and entitled a memorial to the President of the United States in behalf of Jefferson Davis. I also wish to introduce an act of the legislature, passed at a subsequent time, to appropriate $20,000 for the defense of Mr. Jefferson Davis. I offer these documents in order to show the sentiment of the white people of the State of Mississippi at that time toward the chief rebel, and as bearing on the testimony of this witness, who says that that sentiment has since been modified.

Mr. BECK. I endeavored the other day to introduce some documents in regard to John B. Callis, of Alabama. If this is offered, I will call the yeas and nays on it, in order to see how much of that sort of thing is going to be done.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) Is it proposed to prove by this witness the fact that such an address was issued by the legislature and such a law was enacted?

Mr. STEVENSON. The witness has said already that he knew of such an address being issued. I want to introduce an authentic copy of that address, as reflecting upon the testimony of this witness, showing what the state of feeling then was, which he says has now been changed.

Mr. POOL. I would raise the question whether that is germane to the investigation with which we are charged?

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) It does not seem to me that it is within the scope of our inquiry. And more than that, if these documents are found to be in any way material for the committee to use in making up their reports, the official documents published by authority are the proof of that fact. I do not think we have any occasion at all to have them put in here at this point.

Mr. STEVENSON. I will not press my motion against the judgment of the chairman.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) These documents are in proof in such a way that the committee are cognizant of them, if they see fit to use them.

Mr. STEVENSON. In order that my motion may be understood, I will say that the address to which I refer will be found on page 280 of the acts of the legislature of Mississippi of 1865; and the act of appropriation will be found on page 422 of the acts of 1866 and 1867.

Mr. POOL. If this witness had been a member of the legislature that passed these acts, it might, in some view, have been proper to introduce them.

By Mr. STEVENSON:

*Question.* Did you approve of these acts when they were adopted?

*Answer.* I would inquire what is the substance of them?

*Question.* The memorial prays for the release of Jefferson Davis from imprisonment.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I approved of that.

*Question.* Had it the universal approval of the white people of Mississippi at that time?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* The act appropriates $20,000 for the defense of Mr. Jefferson Davis. Did you approve of that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: approved of that.

Mr. STEVENSON. I again offer these documents as bearing upon the opinions of this witness.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) I do not think there is any occasion to put them in as a part of the evidence before the committee.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you not know, as a part of the history of the country, that Mr. Greeley, and many other persons supposed to be good republicans, were very anxious for the release of Mr. Davis?

*Answer.* I was so informed at the time.

Mr. STEVENSON. I ask a vote on my motion to introduce these documents.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) As to the admissibility of that statute and that address as evidence?

Mr. STEVENSON. The witness having said that he approved those acts, I offer them as affecting the opinions of this witness.

Mr. POOL. Does the witness know that the legislature of Mississippi did pass such acts?

Mr. STEVENSON. He has said so.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) It does not seem to me that this species of inquiry has any bearing, really, upon the investigation which this committee is set to make. We are directed to ascertain what is the present condition of the country there; whether the laws are executed, and, if they are not executed, it is proper for us to inquire into the reasons why. But to go back five or six years, and inquire into what the legislature did upon the subjects referred to in this act and this address, I think is not at all pertinent to our inquiry. But the question is, Shall the judgment of the Chair stand as the judgment of the committee?

Mr. STEVENSON. If the question is to be put in that way, I will not demand a vote.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In relation to the teachings of Sturgis and Price, of which you have spoken, I want to know something about the condition of society there before that time—before they taught the people, as you say, to hate the white folks.

*Answer.* I think that, as a general thing, the white people and the colored people were getting along very finely, and seemed to be upon very amicable terms; there were quiet and peace in that immediate section. It is true there might have been some little personal altercations and difficulties between white men and colored men.

*Question.* Was there a feeling of love on the part of the white man toward the negro?

*Answer.* A feeling of love?

*Question.* Did they love them?

*Answer.* I think they felt an attachment to them; I do not know that they had love for any particular colored man.

*Question.* Is it not rather a feeling of fear that has possessed the colored people from the time of slavery down?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Was it not the idea that these negroes were assuming a condition of independence that alarmed the white people there, as you say?

*Answer.* I think not. Having been with them a great deal, I know the colored people generally felt attached to their old owners, in whose families they were raised.

*Question.* That is not the point. I am asking about the condition of society generally, and not in that particular community. I want to know if the feeling of the black man toward the white man heretofore has not been somewhat that of fear and dread, and the feeling of the white man toward the negro a feeling of superiority, of command, of authority, and if the feeling does not continue yet, to some extent, with both the whites and the blacks?

*Answer.* I believe this: that the colored man feels his inferiority, and that the white man feels his superiority; and the one feeling his superiority and the other his inferiority, it would have more or less influence upon them, that is, so far as fear and awe are concerned. But I would state, in the same connection, that, as a general thing, the colored people down there feel an attachment for the southern white men with whom they have been raised; and, had it not been for the teaching of these persons we have spoken of, and their efforts to alienate them from the white people, they would still be attached to them; and there are some still attached to them in that way.

*Question.* You think the feeling of the negroes toward the whites, in that community, was different before this riot than in most of the communities through the South?

*Answer.* No, sir; my experience is that there was a feeling of attachment on the part of the colored man to the white man, all over the Southern States, until he was taught differently.

*Question.* You said the colored people did not help as much in putting out the Sturgis fire as they had formerly done?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* How much help did they use to give; did they do the chief part of the work?

*Answer.* A great deal; they helped tear down the buildings and put out the fire.

*Question.* Did they do most of the work?

*Answer.* No, sir; they worked together with the white men.

*Question.* Did they not work with the white men in the case of the Sturgis fire?

*Answer.* No, sir; they kept away, in some instances.

*Question.* Was there not a large number of negroes working at that fire?

*Answer.* I was informed that there was not, compared with the number who had helped at previous fires; I was not there myself.

*Question.* Was that a cause of irritation?

*Answer.* With the whites?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* No, I do not think it was; they thought it strange and wrong. And then those guns were fired.

*Question.* Was any white man hit during the fire?

*Answer.* I think there were two men struck in going home.

*Question.* Who were they?

*Answer.* One was named Ray and the other was named McInnis.

*Question.* Do you know who shot them?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Where were they shot?

*Answer.* One was shot across on the neck, and the other on the arm, perhaps.

*Question.* Were they wounded seriously?

*Answer.* No, sir, not much; it seemed to be a shot-gun that was fired, and the shot scattered and struck around them.

*Question.* You say that during the fire Clopton took off some of Sturgis's goods, but the goods of no one else?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so it was said.

*Question.* He was arrested; what was he arrested for?

*Answer.* For his talk about there, for saying that it was a white man's fire, and if they wanted war, let them have it.

*Question.* You say you were chairman of the committee of safety, and consulted with the sheriff for the purpose of getting quiet and orderly men to act as deputies and keep the peace?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Who were on that committee?

*Answer.* John McKinzin, Samuel J. Randall, R. F. Hueston, and myself.

*Question.* What were the politics of those men?

*Answer.* They were democrats.

*Question.* Were there any colored men on that committee?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Where did this committee act?

*Answer.* Well, sir, we had no time to act before this riot took place; we were appointed in the forenoon, late in the forenoon.

*Question.* At what time?

*Answer.* I do not know; perhaps between 10 and 11 o'clock, and this occurrence took place in the afternoon.

*Question.* Had you any meeting of the committee?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You had no time for that?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you have a meeting after the occurrence of the riot?

*Answer.* No, sir, we did not.

*Question.* Why did you not have one on that day?

*Answer.* This riot occurred in the afternoon; it was all confusion over the town during the balance of the evening, until I left and went home. Perhaps it was the next day we had this meeting; I am not certain as to the particular time. We had no particular meeting with ourselves; we met with the sheriff when we met at all, and asked him if he wanted any assistance.

*Question.* Did you not think it was a good occasion on that evening for the committee to meet?

*Answer.* It was all excitement, and everything going so fast we did not have time to meet. I could not have got my mind to have thought of calling a meeting together in all that excitement and confusion.

*Question.* You have spoken about the sheriff and you consulting together to protect the town and getting out patrols.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; to restore quiet and peace.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* That was on Monday evening after the riot had occurred, and after I heard the firing of those guns, up about this place where Tyler was supposed to have gone, in that direction; I had not seen him after he left the court-room; never had got any sight of him again. But after that firing I went to the deputy sheriff and said, "Now, if you want any man to assist you in restoring order and quiet, and to protect the town against these colored people, if they come down in a body, armed, from their church, just name to me the men you want, or rather go and select such as you want, and they will serve you cheerfully, for I suppose they will do whatever you ask them to do in restoring quiet and peace."

*Question.* This protecting the town that you speak of was protecting the white people?

*Answer.* It was protecting the town; there were colored people on the streets at that time who were not interfered with.

*Question.* Did you do anything to protect the negroes?

*Answer.* Those men who had participated in the riot had gone up the hill in the direction of the church.

*Question.* My point is this: was not this matter of protection a protection to the white people alone?

*Answer.* I did not so regard it.

*Question.* Were not the negroes disarmed a day or two before that?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* Did you not hear such a report in circulation?

*Answer.* I heard so; but I understood that the sheriff emphatically denied it; that when he gave an order to disarm persons it was to disarm white and black.

*Question.* Did not they disarm a great many of the negroes before that?

*Answer.* I understood that there were some arms taken away from them during the night.

*Question.* You say that Lee was disarmed?

*Answer.* I suppose so; he was taken in custody.

*Question.* Had the committee of safety any apprehension in regard to the safety of those men who were arrested that night?

*Answer.* I was not aware those men were arrested until the next day; I was not in town that night.

*Question.* As you were the chairman of the committee of safety, did you not feel it your duty to remain in town?

*Answer.* I had a family a mile and a half from there, and I thought too much of the safety of my family to remain away from them.

*Question.* Did you think they were in danger?

*Answer.* I was not willing under any circumstances whatever to be absent from them during the night, not under any circumstances.

*Question.* Has that state of alarm continued with you?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question* It was just at that time?

*Answer.* Everything is perfectly quiet at Meridian now, so far as I know, and in that whole section of country, so far as I know.

*Question.* Did any of the other members of the committee of safety do anything that night?

*Answer.* If they did they never informed me of it.

*Question.* Was any effort made to prevent the burning of the colored church or of Moore's house?

*Answer.* They were burned the night following the riot. I went out home about sundown, and got there about dark—a little before, perhaps—and did not return to town until the next morning. Whether that committee acted or not before the next day I am not able to say.

*Question.* You never heard of their doing anything?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is very probable that they did not know anything about the arrest of these men.

*Question.* You spoke of furnishing the sheriff with any number of armed men that were necessary that Monday evening?

*Answer.* Not armed men—that was not the proposition.

*Question.* What was the proposition?

*Answer.* It was this: That if he needed any deputy sheriffs or special police to restore quiet and order, and to protect the town from any incursion that might be made by those men who had gone in the direction of the church, where their arms were said to be stored, any of the good citizens there would aid him in doing it, and I told him he had better deputize them.

*Question.* Did it not occur to you that, in order to keep the peace there, it would be proper to have some colored men on the committee to act with you, in order to keep the colored people quiet as well as the white people?

*Answer.* I do not know; perhaps it might have been better, but there were very few about the streets; almost the whole population you could see on the streets were white.

*Question.* Had some good colored men been appointed on that committee at the the committee was appointed, would it not have been a wise and politic thing?

*Answer.* Perhaps it would; but there were none in attendance at our meeting.

*Question.* No colored men attended the meeting?

*Answer.* Very few; not more than three or four.

*Question.* You say a committee was appointed to investigate the origin of the fires. Who were on that committee?

*Answer.* I think S. A. D. Steele was one of them; the others I do not remember.

*Question.* Were the names of that committee published in the newspaper?

*Answer.* I think they were, as well as the resolutions.

*Question.* Do you know whether there were any negroes on the committee to investigate into the origin of the fires?

*Answer.* I think not; I do not think there were any negroes on any committee at all.

*Question.* Was that committee also composed of democrats?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they were all democrats or not; I do not remember who were on that committee, except the man Steele. He is the only one I do remember, but I remember him from the fact that his office adjoins mine, and I remember that a meeting of the committee was called at his office.

*Question.* You were not on that committee?

*Answer.* No, sir. There was a committee, which Mr. Smith was on, appointed to wait upon Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* Did you learn from any reliable authority how many men seized those three colored men and murdered them?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* What did the guards say about it?

*Answer.* They could not find out who were the guards—however, I am mistaken about that; there was one of the guards introduced, but he is a man I never saw before there in my life.

*Question.* Was he appointed by the sheriff?

*Answer.* It seems so.

*Question.* Where did he belong?

*Answer.* He said he had been there several weeks.

*Question.* Do you know what his name is?

*Answer.* It is given in the testimony taken before Judge Leachman.

*Question.* Is he there now?

*Answer.* I think I saw him there a short time since. He said that the men who came in—he did not state the number that I recollect of—were strangers to him; and, in fact, he seemed to be a stranger in town himself.

*Question.* Did not the sheriff know who were the men he had set as guards over these colored men after they were arrested?

*Answer.* He says not in his testimony, I think; he says that he left them in possession of his deputy.

*Question.* Did his deputy know who they were?

*Answer.* It seems not; some of them had gone to supper, all but one, and left them in charge of men who were not officers, and they were taken out at that time.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was the sheriff a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the deputy sheriff a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so considered and regarded there.

By Mr. COBURN;

*Question.* Are they now republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* At what time of night were these men murdered?

*Answer.* As I stated before, I do not know.

*Question.* What was your information?

*Answer.* It must have been after midnight perhaps, from what I learned; I do not remember hearing of any particular time. I think the testimony of the deputy sheriff, or the sheriff himself, shows that he left and went to supper about eleven o'clock, and it must have been after that. It may be that I got the impression from his testimony that it must have been after midnight.

*Question.* Is it understood that a large number of men, or a small number of men, came there and seized them?

*Answer.* It is understood that a number of men seized them; I do not know whether it is understood that it was a large number or a small number, because there is not enough known about it by the citizens of that place to enable them to judge.

*Question.* You say it is not known whether the guard was overpowered, or whether they merely betrayed the prisoners, or what was done?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not; but judging from the testimony of the sheriff, or the deputy sheriff, they must have been overpowered, because I think he states there that the doors were battered down. I know that one of the doors was battered down; I think the prisoners were perhaps in that office, but I am not positive about that.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You say that, at the time Williams was murdered, they impressed a black man to go and show them where he lived?

*Answer.* So I heard; I suppose they impressed him into the service.

*Question.* Would that indicate that the parties who committed that crime were strangers in that locality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the first idea that struck me.

*Question.* This man Williams was a magistrate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And his locality was well known to the community there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that would indicate that his murder was committed by strangers?

*Answer.* Yes.

*Question.* If his being obnoxious to that community was the cause of his being murdered, how do you account for strangers coming there to kill him?

*Answer.* I cannot account for it at all; I cannot account for the killing at all.

*Question.* It has been given in evidence before us that the supposition or understanding is that this Ku-Klux organization has camps in different localities, and that when a camp in a certain locality makes a decree against some one living in that locality, the decree is to be executed by their confederates belonging to some camp in a different locality. Would not the circumstances indicate that such was the proceeding in this case of Williams?

*Answer.* I do not know; if there is any such organization, I do not know its workings; I do not know how they manage these things. It has been a matter of astonishment to me that such outrages have been committed.

*Question.* What I mean to ask is this: would it not indicate that the murder of Williams was conducted somewhat in that way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if that is their plan of operations, it is probable it was.

*Question.* Is Moore a member of the legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from our county.

*Question.* It was his house that was burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I would like to make a statement in regard to his house. The testimony, as taken in the investigation, taken before Judge Leachman, shows that some white men who were on special police duty on the night that the church and the house were burned, so soon as they discovered the fire, ran up there. There were a number of colored men standing around, and one of the witnesses had some property near the house that was burning, a colored man, and these other colored men would not go and help him; and the white people came there, and persuaded them to go and help save the property. This man who testifies says that he looked into this house of Mr. Moore, into his front room, where, as other colored witnesses have testified, there was generally some furniture, and there was no furniture in the room; it was bare of furniture. The fire had not yet reached that part of the house; it was burning in another room. Some of these witnesses saved their property in that way. And it is said that Mr. Moore had insured his residence perhaps a month previous to that, and had never called at the insurance agent's office to get his policy until the Monday morning before the burning of his house at night. When he went there, he remarked to the agent, that he had better take his policy, because he did not know what might happen. That is the testimony of the insurance agent.

*Question.* That was after the burning of the Sturgis building?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You said the negroes accused the white people of setting the Sturgis building on fire?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the brother of Sturgis, the mayor, also a republican?

*Answer.* William Sturgis, the mayor, is a republican; I do not know what his brother is—a sort of a negative man. Theodore Sturgis, the man to whom this property belonged, I do not know what he is.

*Question.* Can you account for the fact that there were so many armed men in the court-house on the day of that trial? Did they not seem to have gone there generally armed?

*Answer.* No, sir; there were no arms that I saw, except pistols, and I did not see any pistols at the time the trial was going on, except the one I saw on defendant Tyler. But a great many men around there go armed all the time, both colored and white, with little derringers in their pockets. It is a state of society, I regret to say, that exists among us, but it is so. Men go armed, a great many of them; but a great majority of

the people do not. Whether there were more armed on that occasion than usual, I cannot say; I do not think so.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Have the people in the country generally got guns?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, most persons have guns.
*Question.* Black and white, both?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do they have supplies of ammunition?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What are the guns for?
*Answer.* For hunting; common shot-guns, bird guns, that is all I have seen, except now and then I have seen an old musket carried by a colored man.
*Question.* Do you know facts enough to justify you in stating why they all have these arms?
*Answer.* You have asked me that question, and of course I must answer it. The white people always had arms, always kept one or two guns about their premises, for squirrel-hunting and bird-hunting. The colored people all have guns, I suppose, for the same purpose; and I might say they make very good use of them in killing stock. I know they killed some of mine, that is, I suppose so; and a great many have been tried for killing stock, tried by colored juries, and have been convicted. A great many cases of that sort have occurred.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* I would like to know why Mayor Sturgis left Meridian and has not returned?
*Answer.* Well, sir, after I left, in the evening of Monday, and when I came back the next morning, I was informed that he had been visited by some of the citizens there.
*Question.* What class of citizens?
*Answer.* I do not know; I understood that they were good citizens, and they advised him to leave; told him that he had rendered himself obnoxious there; that he, in connection with others, had gotten up this trouble; that they were perhaps the prime cause of it, and it would be best for him and the community that he should leave. He acknowledged to those men who visited him that he had done wrong; said that he had used an improper influence over the colored people, and that he was willing to leave. And I understood he asked some of them to escort him to the depot; he seemed to be afraid that he would be killed; how his fears originated I do not know; whether there were any menaces or threats in regard to him that evening I do not know; if there were it was after I left. They escorted him to the depot, a squad of men. I do not know how many; and when the train arrived he went on board the train, and they sent two men with him to take care of him, so that no accident or mishap might befall him. They went, I suppose, twenty miles on the railroad with him, nearly to the edge of that county.
*Question.* Do you know whether he was warned to leave by a certain day, or his life would be taken?
*Answer.* If he was so threatened I was not aware of it.
*Question.* Mr. Williams, of your county, was killed in the manner which you have detailed, and somebody else was killed at Lauderdale Springs?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* There had been on two occasions colored men taken from Meridian and carried back to Alabama?
*Answer.* On two occasions?
*Question.* Well, your testimony is that on one occasion colored men were really kidnapped without authority of law, and carried back into Alabama by Alabama men. And you say that two young men had been attacked on the streets of Meridian at night, and fired at?
*Answer.* I did not say they were attacked.
*Question.* Well, halted outside of the town?
*Answer.* When they were going home from the debating society; yes, sir.
*Question.* You say that at the riot all three of the defendants were killed?
*Answer.* No, sir; Moore was not killed.
*Question.* The man you saw lying on the floor of the sheriff's room was not Moore?
*Answer.* No, sir; it turned out to be a man named Ford.
*Question.* Two of the defendants were killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and one man was shot in the hand, and one man was shot through the pantaloons.
*Question.* And afterward three men were killed during the night, having been taken from those in whose charge they were left by the officers?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And the house of the member of the legislature from your county, and a colored church, were burned?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Now, has anybody been punished for any of these acts?

*Answer.* No, sir; and if any indictments have been found by the grand jury I am not aware of it.

*Question.* Yet you say that the criminal law is as well executed in Meridian as in any other part of your State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I only say it is executed now as well as it ever has been there. I would say this, that the law is executed whenever the parties committing the acts are prosecuted; but when it is not possible to ascertain who they are, it is not possible to carry out the law.

*Question.* With the exception of the two young men returning from the debating society, all these outrages that you have spoken of have been committed upon colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, but not on republicans; this colored man Kennard is not a republican.

*Question.* I had not mentioned the Kennard case; I was going to speak of that separately. The colored men complained that all those things showed an indisposition on the part of the officers of the law to protect them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the fact of those men going over with Kennard, some fifteen of them, more or less, and they armed with double-barrelled shot-guns, I think gave rise to a feeling of that sort.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* All the other occurrences took place subsequently to that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Suppose a company of armed negroes had come from Alabama and taken three white men in your town upon any alleged charge against them, and carried them back over the State line, without any authority of law, kidnapped them, would there not have been a general uprising of the white men there?

*Answer.* I will answer that question in this way: it is my opinion that if colored men had come over there and arrested men who were known to be bad men, bad characters, violators of the laws of Alabama——

*Question.* And white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and white men. I have no idea that the good citizens would have interfered; none in the world. Upon the other hand, if the citizens had believed those men were innocent, then they would have interfered.

*Question.* You do not know how the colored men considered these three who were kidnapped?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Do you not think it would have been better for that community, especally for the white people and property-holders there, to be jealous and vigilant in maintaining the rights of the colored people under the law, and to manifest a disposition to protect them against these outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I do; and I think the most of the people there are willing, and always have been, to do so.

*Question.* Being willing is one thing: manifesting their willingness by acts is another. Would it not produce a very good effect upon the state of society there if they were to manifest that willingness by acts?

*Answer.* You will bear in mind the attitude in which they are placed.

*Question.* That is what I want to get at.

*Answer.* The most of them are democrats, and any movement they make in that direction seems to be misconstrued as a political movement. All the offices being filled by republicans, if they decline to discharge their duties, the citizens are at their road's end. But I assure you it is my honest conviction that the good people there, and most of the people are good citizens, are ready at all times, are willing, whenever called upon, by their countenance to sustain and aid the laws and see that they are executed.

*Question.* I asked your opinion as to the matter of policy.

*Answer.* I think it is a matter of policy, as well as of duty.

*Question.* They ought to manifest it by acts.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think ——

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are not the officers there radicals?

*Answer.* All, except some of the members of the board of supervisors, who were appointed by Governor Alcorn, upon the removal of Sturgis and the members of the board of supervisors at the instance of the committee who waited upon him, and Mr. Smith was a member of that committee.

*Question.* If the officers were to call upon the white people to protect the colored people from such arrests, would they not do it at once?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they would readily render any assistance the officers wanted.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* As you seem to understand very well the relations of the races one to the other, I will ask you if the white people are not much more swift to resent an insult or indignity from a colored man than they would be from a white man?

*Answer.* I rather think they are; and from the force of education.

*Question.* And are not the colored men less swift to resent an indignity from a white man?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* When you said there was a change in their demeanor, was it a change in that respect?

*Answer.* A change in their disposition to resent?

*Question.* To resent an indignity or affront from white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; however, there was nothing I could see in my every-day walks upon the street for them to resent. But I noticed that on the streets they would not treat the white people with whom they came in contact as they had formerly treated them.

*Question.* Is it not a natural state of feeling on the part of the white men to resent an injury or insult from a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know any way to break down that disposition?

*Answer.* Time may wear it out; and when the colored man comes to be educated, and his children after him, it may bring about a different state of things.

*Question.* Does not that necessarily produce, in these Southern communities, a sort of tone in the public sentiment that is dangerous?

*Answer.* I do not think so. There are some few white men there who would strike a colored man for any sort of provocation, while others would not, but would talk to him just as they would to a white man, and endeavor to avoid these things as much as possible. I think the majority of them would act in that way.

*Question.* Would not the danger of collision arising from that feeling be greatly enhanced by outrages of this sort on colored people—these bands of disguised men taking them out and whipping them, and things of that kind?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am of the opinion that whenever trouble arises between colored men and white men, there will be bad men on both sides who will go in and endeavor to take matters in their own hands, and carry them to excess, while all good people, both white and black, cannot restrain them, for they do not know who they are.

*Question.* I want your opinion whether or not the men who go in disguise and commit these outrages upon colored men are not dangerous enemies to the peace and security of society?

*Answer.* I think they are. I do not think that men of that character, either white or black, are of any advantage or benefit to any community or society, but rather a disadvantage.

*Question.* Do they not keep those communities in constant danger and dread of a collision between the races, bordering, perhaps, on a war of races?

*Answer.* Heretofore at Meridian, before these troubles, we never apprehended any danger in our immediate section. While there had been two or three instances, of which I have already spoken, which met the prompt disapproval of all the good people, the good citizens of both classes, just before and during the riot, there was an apprehension upon the part of everybody that there would be a greater outbreak, a general disturbance, a conflict of races. But since that time everything has been perfectly quiet and peaceable.

*Question.* Did not that state of excitement at that time, which bordered upon a collision between the races, result from the killing of Williams, the kidnapping of those negroes, and other such acts against the negroes?

*Answer.* I do not think that was the only cause, by any means.

*Question.* I did not say it was the only cause.

*Answer.* I think this Price matter had a great deal to do with it. The mere fact of Price being arrested seemed to aggravate and excite the colored people. I think that had something to do with it.

*Question.* I call your attention to these things as showing that there was an explosive state of society there, as showing that it required the attention of good citizens to keep it down.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Now about the Kennard matter. Was not Kennard accused of coming over from Alabama and taking a colored man and carrying him back?

*Answer.* No, sir. As I said before, my information was this: that Kennard came there to try to get some negroes who had left Alabama, under the influence of Price, as I was informed, to go back and work on the farms. The white people had got him to come over there, as I understand, because he had stood high with the negroes, and

had a great deal of influence with them. While there, and trying to get some of these colored people to go back, he happened to see on the streets of Meridian a colored man who had violated some statute law of Alabama, I suppose; I did not ask him what it was. He pointed out this man to one of the colored policemen of Meridian, and when he went to arrest him, the colored man ran, and the policeman fired on him and perhaps wounded him, I do not know how seriously. The taking away of the colored men was done by white men, not by Adam Kennard; it was done when Adam Kennard came over to attend court on the first day appointed for the trial of Price. He came over with two colored witnesses, and these white men came over to protect them, because they had expressed a fear that the negroes at Meridian were so much excited and angry that they would do them harm.

*Question.* Did not the colored people believe that Kennard had sworn against Price because of personal animosity against him?

*Answer.* I have never heard one express any opinion of that sort, only that they were very angry because Price was arrested.

*Question.* Was the reason assigned for their anger, as you call it, that he was the only man arrested in the county charged with committing an outrage in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not remember hearing anything of that sort.

*Question.* Did they not connect the fact of his arrest with the fact that other outrages had been committed by disguised bands of white men several times before, and no white man had been arrested for it, and that the arrest of Price was the first arrest that was made?

*Answer.* They may have done so; it is very probable they did, because that was the first arrest of that sort that had ever been made.

*Question.* Was that not one of the reasons why it was thought best that Price should leave, without pushing the matter further?

*Answer.* No, sir; the motive for his leaving, for his being advised to leave, as I understood it, and as Mr. Smith told me, was that, from what Price had said, and the threats he had made, whenever that trial took place it was almost inevitable that there would be a very serious disturbance between the whites and the blacks; because Price had said that he would not submit to being bound over under a bond to appear in the circuit court, neither would he go to jail for not giving bond.

*Question.* Did he make those threats because he said he was innocent, or because he was the first person arrested, or because he thought he could not get justice?

*Answer.* I think that his idea was that he was innocent.

*Question.* That it was a malicious persecution?

*Answer.* I have never heard that he said he could not get justice, because the man before whom he was to be tried was considered by all classes as a very just and honorable man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* And he was a republican besides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe myself he is an honest man.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Price alleged that he was innocent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I think so.

*Question.* Did he allege that Kennard was swearing against him because they were enemies?

*Answer.* I never heard that. I heard that he said he was innocent; that it was a false charge, or something of that kind; I do not know exactly what he said.

*Question.* Were there any other witnesses against Price except Kennard?

*Answer.* There were two colored witnesses against him; one of them a witness to prove the fact that he had heard Price make some threat against Kennard, and say that it would not be well for Kennard to remain there that night, or something of that sort.

*Question.* Have you heard of men in numbers and in disguise showing themselves upon the public highways in that county within the last twelve or eighteen months, on more occasions than one?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* In some of the interrogatories put to you by Senator Pool, it was assumed that this riot, and the shooting in the court-house, were outrages upon the part of white men against colored men, and you seemed to assent to that as a fact. Do you regard that so?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Have you ever had a civil election in the State of Mississippi for general officers?

*Answer.* We had an election for members of the legislature; all our county officers are appointed; we have not had an election there for county officers for a number of years.

*Question.* Your members of Congress and other officers that you have elected, were elected under an election held by General Ames?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is an election ordered for next fall.

*Question.* And your county officers are appointed by the governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Who is himself a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so.

*Question.* So that the great bulk of the men who constitute your county officers are the appointees of a republican governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Do you consider the killing of Ford an outrage upon a colored man?

*Answer.* Well, sir, there are different suppositions about that. I have heard, and I think some of the witnesses so testified, that Tyler shot more than once; that he shot as he ran through the sheriff's office; that he first went up into a corner of the sheriff's room; the deputy sheriff testifies that he was in there when Tyler went in, and the deputy sheriff caught him by the collar, but Tyler gave a surge and broke away from him and ran out on the veranda; and I think the testimony shows that he shot several times, first in the door of the court-room, and once or twice, or more, in going from there to the veranda. And it is the supposition of some, perhaps some of the witnesses state, that Ford was passing into the door of the sheriff's room, and might have been shot by Tyler when he fired back at the white people; not that Tyler did it intentionally, but that in shooting in that direction Ford suddenly came within his range of fire.

*Question.* That is, that Tyler killed Judge Bramlette and Ford also?

*Answer.* That is the supposition of some, but not of all, by any means. I really did not know who Ford was.

*Question.* Where did Clopton come from?

*Answer.* He lived there, in town.

*Question.* Had he been raised there?

*Answer.* I think he was raised in Alabama; I am not certain.

*Question.* You spoke of Dennis, alias Clopton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How was that?

*Answer.* Clopton was the name of his former owner; but when he came to register he adopted the name of Dennis. He was as often called Clopton as Dennis.

*Question.* The alias was not taken as a cloak for any former crime?

*Answer.* Not at all.

*Question.* Do you consider the killing of Clopton and the throwing him over from the balcony an outrage upon a colored man?

*Answer.* I do; upon a colored man or anybody else.

*Question.* Do you consider the killing of those three men who were taken from the custody of the officers who had them in charge an outrage upon colored men?

*Answer.* I do, most emphatically.

*Question.* Do you consider the burning of the colored church there an outrage upon colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; more especially upon colored men, but also an outrage upon the community.

*Question.* Then it would be safe to assume that there were outrages against colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and at the same time the outrages were committed against the good citizens of the community.

*Question.* Do you know whether it was supposed in Meridian that telegrams were sent to men in Sumter County, Alabama, to come there Monday night?

*Answer.* It was supposed so, and efforts were made to ascertain how that was; but it seems that the operators would not tell.

*Question.* They refused to answer?

*Answer.* I do not know. I was talking with some citizen, and he said that some effort had been made to find out, for nobody wanted them.

*Question.* None of the good citizens?

*Answer.* Certainly. It was said afterward that there was a man passed through there who caused this telegram to be sent. I am satisfied that no good citizen of that town sent it.

*Question.* It would not have been the act of a good citizen?

*Answer.* No, sir; because we are fully able to take care of ourselves.

*Question.* If such a telegram was sent, it was responded to?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; because somebody came; or it may not have been in response to that.

*Question.* Would that indicate to you that there was some organization by means of which persons from a distance are called in to aid in case of an emergency?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think it is even *prima facie* evidence, because if one neighborhood of whites should telegraph to another neighborhood that they had got into a difficulty with colored people and wanted their assistance, they would not hesitate to give it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Suppose it was announced in some county that a negro had shot a judge of the circuit court of another county?

*Answer.* I think very likely they would have come over without being asked.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* I heard that a telegram was sent; that was the reason I asked you the question.

*Answer.* It may have been that it was sent; and it may have been, as General Blair suggests, that the people over the line heard of it, and came without being sent for.

*Question.* The good people of your town did not want them?

*Answer.* No, sir; we did not want them.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 3, 1871.

J. F. SESSIONS sworn and examined:

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) As this witness has been called at your instance, Mr. Blair, you will please commence his examination.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* I live in Franklin County, Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you resided in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I was born in that county.

*Question.* Were you a member of the last legislature?

*Answer.* I am a member of the present legislature.

*Question.* It has been stated here by a witness, Mr. French, that you were a member of the committee of investigation of the riot that took place at Meridian, in your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was a member of that committee.

*Question.* Was the whole of the testimony which was taken before that committee printed?

*Answer.* The testimony taken before the committee was printed; and in addition to the testimony taken by ourselves, we adopted the testimony taken before Judge Leachman, a week or two previous to the time when we investigated the riot at Meridian.

*Question.* Was that incorporated into the testimony taken before your committee and made part of your report?

*Answer.* It was; and the understanding of the committee was that we would not enter into an examination of the matters testified to before Judge Leachman to any great extent; we would confine our investigation to matters outside of them, and to questions outside of that investigation.

*Question.* That is to say, that you would not attempt to go over the ground covered by the evidence taken before Judge Leachman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You examined as to other matters?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; other matters as far as possible. We did, to some extent, go over the same matters.

*Question.* Was there any written report accompanying the evidence taken by the committee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was a report agreed upon by all the members of the committee; it was in substance that the committee appointed by the legislature had investigated the riot and submitted the testimony in writing, without expressing any opinion thereon.

*Question.* From your familiarity with the testimony in the case, in your opinion what was the origin of the riot?

*Answer.* Well, sir, it is somewhat difficult to say what was the origin of the riot, or rather what were the causes that produced the riot. I can state, according to the testimony, how the riot began. I think one of the chief causes producing the riot was the Ku-Kluxing, as it was commonly called, of a colored man named Adan Kennard, by a man named Price, together with others associated with him.

*Question.* You think, then, that the ill feeling which culminated in the riot at Meridian originated in that transaction?

*Answer.* I do to a great extent.

*Question.* What was the immediate origin of the riot?

*Answer.* According to our investigation, my view of it, the immediate cause of the riot was this: Certain persons were being tried before a committing magistrate there, Justice Bramlette, and during the investigation, after one of the witnesses had given in his evidence, one of the accused parties named Tyler said to the witness that he wished him to remain on the stand until he could introduce two witnesses to impeach his testimony. Thereupon the witness seized a stick lying upon the table in front of the justice of the peace and started in the direction of this man Warren Tyler, but was seized by the marshal. After he was seized by the marshal——

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:) I would suggest that we have incorporated in our testimony all the testimony that was taken by this committee of the Mississippi legislature in regard to that riot. Is it worth while to recite that testimony over again? This gentleman of course knows nothing about it more than is stated in the testimony.

Mr. BLAIR, I do not desire to encumber the record, I want to know what the impressions of the witness were from hearing all the testimony.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:) You want to get at his conclusions?

Mr. BLAIR: Yes, sir.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:) I think that might be done without narrating all that the witnesses said upon that investigation.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I will ask you the question distinctly; was it the impression of the committee that Tyler fired the first shot?

*Answer.* That was my impression; I think the evidence fairly warranted that conclusion.

*Question.* It is said in the testimony before us that this negro, Adam Kennard, was said to be a deputy sheriff in Sumter County, Alabama; was that the case?

*Answer.* It was so testified to before us, that he was a deputy sheriff of Sumter County, Alabama.

*Question.* It is also said that there were statements taken down, and when the witnesses were called before your committee, they failed utterly to testify to the facts which they had stated in private before members of your committee; do you know anything of any such circumstance as that?

*Answer.* I do not; there were no statements taken, no evidence taken by the committee except such evidence as was taken in the presence of the whole committee from witnesses under oath, that I know anything about. If any other evidence was taken it was without any orders or authority from the committee, and without the knowledge of the committee.

*Question.* Do you know whether there is such an organization in your State as the Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* If there is such an organization, I know nothing of it.

*Question.* Mr. French, when he was on the stand here, testified—I will read what he did say:

"*Question.* In your conversations with democrats of good standing, respectable, intelligent gentlemen, what view did they take of these outrages? Give us the views which were expressed on one side and the other, of these outrages, so that we may be able to get at the public sentiment on the subject.

"*Answer.* Parties such as you have described, democrats of good standing, were always opposed to them. When anything of that kind occurred, members of the legislature of that party appeared to regret it as much as anybody could. I have talked very freely with them in regard to these matters, and they appeared to regret these outrages as much as any person could regret them. They said they were done by parties who were irresponsible, lawless men. I have talked with two members of the legislature about these matters and about an organization of this kind, and as to what their opinion was about it. They said their opinion was that there was such an organization, and that it was for political purposes and effect; but that they were not in favor of it; that they had never belonged to it, and had no knowledge themselves of any persons who did belong to it; but they were perfectly satisfied that there was such an organization; and one of them stated further that he believed the organization was established for political purposes."

And in reply to interrogatories in regard to the two democrats who had made these statements, he mentioned you as one who had said to him that you believed there was such an organization, and that it was understood to be for political effect. Did you ever make any such statement to Mr. French?

*Answer.* I did not, that I have any recollection of.

*Question.* Did you have the opinion that there was such an organization, and that it was an organization for political purposes?

*Answer.* Not that there is existing in Mississippi now such an organization. There may have existed heretofore in the State a secret political organization to advance the interest of the party opposed to the republican party. But that there is such an organization in Mississippi now I do not know; if there is, I am not aware of its existence.

*Question.* The present legislature of your State has passed a law donating the stock of the State in the Central Mississippi Railroad, I believe it is ——

*Answer.* The New Orleans, Jackson, and Great Northern Railroad.

*Question.* That stock was given by act of the legislature to a Mr. McComb, was it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the stock owned by the State in the New Orleans, Jackson, and Great Northern Railroad, as well as the stock owned by the State in several other railroads, was given by an act of the legislature to the New Orleans, Jackson, and Great Northern Railroad, the value of which amounted, I am credibly informed, to something over $250,000.

*Question.* The cash value.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; at the time it was given.

*Question.* Nominally it was much larger?

*Answer.* Nominally it was several hundred thousand dollars more; I cannot state the exact amount.

*Question.* Was there any consideration at all for the surrender of that stock?

*Answer.* None except this: The New Orleans and Jackson road was required to be completed from Canton to Aberdeen, I think, or to some certain point on the line, provided the counties along the line each subscribed $7,000 per mile, I believe, for the road in their respective counties.

*Question.* How was the passage of this act making the donation secured?

*Answer.* Well, sir, it is impossible for me to state how it was procured; I know the bill passed; and it was thought by a great many members of the legislature, myself included, that it was wrong and improper to pass an act giving such a large amount of property owned by the State absolutely to any railroad.

*Question.* By what vote was it passed?

*Answer.* I do not recollect; it was by a very considerable majority.

*Question.* Was it a party vote?

*Answer.* Not strictly; a few democrats who lived along the line of this projected road voted for the donation, stating that if they lived elsewhere, they would oppose it; but as they lived along the projected line they would vote for it.

*Question.* How was that legislature composed?

*Answer.* There was a large republican majority in it, I think over two-thirds republican.

*Question.* Did many of the members hold offices and positions other than as members of the legislature?

*Answer.* Some of them did; some of the members of the legislature were sheriffs of the counties which they represented; others were treasurers of the counties; others held such offices as members of the board of supervisors, &c.

*Question.* The boards of supervisors are the supervisors of elections?

*Answer.* No, sir; they have the county police in charge; county legislature would probably express the idea better than any other term.

*Question.* Was there an apportionment bill passed by the legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was an apportionment bill, the first since the military apportionment under which the present legislature was elected. It was passed at the close of the last session of the legislature.

*Question.* What was the character of that apportionment?

*Answer.* I thought that in some cases it was very unjust. Heretofore in Mississippi each county has been entitled to one representative at least in the legislature. By this apportionment bill ten counties were deprived of separate representation, and were consolidated, two together in each case, and given but five members, one for two counties. I know one instance, that of Wayne County, in which the persons entitled to vote were over 900; yet it was deprived of separate representation. Warren County was given five representatives, the fifth being for a residuum of some 700 voters; while Wayne County was deprived of separate representation, although in that county there were about 900 voters.

*Question.* What was the politics of Wayne County?

*Answer.* My recollection is that the registered white voters are in the majority.

*Question.* How is it in Warren County?

*Answer.* In Warren County the blacks are largely in the majority.

*Question.* How long was your legislature in session?

*Answer.* We have had two sessions during a term of two years; in 1870 the session was begun in January, and lasted for several weeks, and then it adjourned until after the State was admitted. It reconvened early in March, and remained in session until the 21st of July, I think. The present year the legislature met on the first Monday in January, and remained in session until the 13th day of May.

*Question.* What is the pay of the members of the legislature?

*Answer.* The pay has been during the whole of the present term $8 per day and forty cents a mile going and returning.

*Question.* How does that compare with the pay of members prior to the war?

*Answer.* It is greater than the pay of members previous to the war, according to my information.

*Question.* Are the sessions longer now than formerly?

*Answer.* I suppose they are much longer than ever heretofore in the State.

*Question.* Was there a bill passed by the legislature of your State to lease the penitentiary of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that attended with much discussion and excitement?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it gave rise to considerable discussion, and was the cause of great excitement in the legislature. It was commonly supposed there, and generally believed, that the passage of the bill was secured by bribery. The substance of it, as I recollect, was, that the penitentiary should be leased to a man by the name of Richardson for a period of fifteen years, he to be paid by the State the sum of $18,000 per annum, and also $120,000, I think the sum was, for which he was required to erect a cotton factory and certain buildings, and at the expiration of the fifteen years he is to turn over to the State the whole thing in good condition, and he is allowed to work outside of the walls of the penitentiary all the convicts that are not sentenced for murder, rape, or arson.

*Question.* Did I understand you to say that he was to be paid $18,000 a year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And $120,000 to build a factory?

*Answer.* To erect certain buildings.

*Question.* And he is simply to turn them over to the State at the end of his term in good condition?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To have all the profits that he could make out of the labor of the convicts, both inside and outside of the walls?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all he could make in the mean time during the fifteen years.

*Question.* Was there any competition for this contract?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, there was great competition for it; other parties proposed to do the same work, and to erect the same buildings, for about one-half the sum proposed by Richardson, I think; and other parties proposed to pay the State so much for the labor of the convicts.

*Question.* What was the debt of the State of Mississippi before the war?

*Answer.* I cannot state the exact amount of the State debt before the war, but I have a memorandum here of the amount of the debt when this administration came into power on the first day of January, 1870.

*Question.* What is that?

*Answer.* I can give the amounts I have on that memorandum; on the 1st day of January, 1870, the amount of the State debt was $211,735 38.

*Question.* What is it now?

*Answer.* On the 1st day of January, 1871, the debt was $867,736 43, and on the 1st day of June, 1871, it was $1,247,431 99.

*Question.* Was the increase of the amount between the 1st of January, 1870, and the 1st of June, 1871, for the mere ordinary expenses of the State?

*Answer.* The ordinary expenses of the State, and, in addition, certain repairs on the capitol buildings and on the executive mansion; and an extension ordered of the park to the lunatic asylum, which has not yet been constructed.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you embrace that appropriation in your calculation of the debt?

*Answer.* The appropriations for the capitol and for the executive mansion, I think, are embraced in the debt as I have stated it; I do not think that for the lunatic asylum is embraced in it, because that work is not yet done.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The balance of this sum of money, after deducting the appropriation for the repair of the capitol building and the governor's mansion, all goes to the ordinary expenses of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I suppose so; what would come under the denomination of ordinary expenses.

*Question.* How does that tax compare with the tax imposed and the amounts appropriated previous to the war?

*Answer.* I think it is much larger, though I am not familiar with the amount appropriated annually previous to the war; I was quite young then, and not familiar with public matters.

*Question.* Do you know what the amount of tax was previous to the war; the rate of taxation?

*Answer.* No, sir, I could not state definitely what the rate was.

*Question.* What is the rate of taxation now?

*Answer.* Well, in some localities it is quite large, in others not quite so much. The

State tax is one-half of one per cent. on the dollar for all property; in some counties it is very large, and in others much less.

*Question.* In what counties is the rate so very large, and upon what does it depend?

*Answer.* The county tax depends altogether upon the board of supervisors who have the power to levy the county tax, and the special tax, as it is known; that is, all other taxes for special purposes, and the school tax. I think that in my county the whole county and other taxes amount to not more than 250 per cent. of the State tax, the State tax being one-half of one per cent. In the county of Issaquena the whole county tax and other taxes amount to 800 per cent. of the State tax.

*Question.* That grows out of the construction of the levees, does it not?

*Answer.* No, sir; there is a tax of 15 cents an acre for the construction of the levees. In Issaquena the tax is 800 per cent. for county and other purposes, and 15 cents an acre besides for the construction of levees.

*Question.* How is the school tax levied?

*Answer.* The school tax is levied by the board of supervisors in conjunction with the board of school directors.

*Question.* Who appoints the supervisors; or are they elected?

*Answer.* They are made elective by the constitution, but until a general election is ordered they are required to be appointed by the governor; all existing boards of supervisors have been appointed by the governor, by and with the advice and consent of the senate.

*Question.* How are the school directors appointed?

*Answer.* The school directors are appointed by the boards of supervisors.

*Question.* So that these two boards, the board of supervisors and the board of school directors, have a right to levy taxes for school purposes in each county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the board of supervisors, as I understand the law, levy the tax at the request of the board of school directors; the directors submit their estimate of the amount necessary in the county, and the board of supervisors make the levy.

*Question.* Has there been much complaint in the State about this school tax?

*Answer.* I think that in some of the counties there has been considerable complaint that the tax is too large. The law under which the tax is levied limits the boards to a certain per cent. for the purpose of paying school-teachers, and for the purpose of building or buying school-houses.

*Question.* What, in general terms, is the condition of the State as regards its quiet and peace, and how are the laws executed within the State?

*Answer.* Well, sir, so far as my knowledge extends, the State is quiet and peaceable; the laws are enforced, and property and life are secure as they ever have been in that country, or, as I suppose, they are anywhere else, according to my observation.

*Question.* You have heard, as a matter of course, these clamors about Ku-Klux outrages there and elsewhere. How do the people of your State regard those things; as realities, or as the clamor of designing politicians?

*Answer.* Well, sir, they usually regard it as the clamor of designing politicians, as you say. There are no Ku-Klux outrages in my section of the State, and no outrages throughout the State, so far as my knowledge extends, to warrant any excitement upon the subject, or any more than would be common, perhaps, in any other country.

*Question.* Are persons convicted and punished who are guilty of crime; are they brought to trial and convicted and punished?

*Answer.* They are brought to trial and punished so far as my observation extends. In my own county, there has not been a single homicide since the war that I can call to mind, except in one instance, and that was the case of a colored man who killed his wife during the present year; there has not been a single man sent to the penitentiary from my county since the surrender, nor a single man hung.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You are a native of the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I am, and of the county which I represent in the legislature.

*Question.* What is your profession or occupation?

*Answer.* I am a lawyer.

*Question.* Do you belong to the democratic party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were you connected in any way with the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I was in the confederate army.

*Question.* A word or two in regard to this Meridian affair; you say that in your judgment the difficulty there arose primarily from the Ku-Kluxing of the colored deputy sheriff who came over there from Alabama. How long before the Meridian riot did that happen?

*Answer.* I think it was about three weeks; in my opinion, that was one of the chief causes of the riot.

*Question.* At the particular time when that riot took place they had this man Tyler and some other men on examination before Judge Bramlette, had they not?

*Answer.* They had.

*Question.* What was the charge against them?

*Answer.* I think the charge was riotous conduct.

*Question.* Was not the charge against them that they had made incendiary speeches at a meeting the Saturday night before?

*Answer.* Perhaps that was connected with the other in the charge.

*Question.* Was not that the charge upon which they were being examined?

*Answer.* I cannot state distinctly whether that was the specific charge or not.

*Question.* I believe all the witnesses who have testified upon the subject have agreed that such was the case.

*Answer.* It may be so, I cannot state.

*Question.* Do you remember, from the evidence, that there was a meeting of the colored people held on the evening of the Saturday before the riot?

*Answer.* There was.

*Question.* What did you understand was the occasion of that meeting; what did they get together for?

*Answer.* Well, according to my understanding, they were excited somewhat about the proposition to remove some of the officers in Meridian; that was one of the causes of the assembling. And I think the fact of this Price outrage was another cause.

*Question.* Did you understand that the colored people were at all disturbed in consequence of the attack that had been made upon the colored deputy sheriff who had come over from Alabama; were they dissatisfied about that?

*Answer.* Well, I think that was one thing that excited them; I think this man Price did excite them on that subject.

*Question.* It was claimed, was it not, that this man Price was the man who got up that attack on that colored man?

*Answer.* It was claimed that Price was one of the parties who committed the attack upon this man Kennard, together with some colored men who aided him.

*Question.* Then the colored people were not disturbed by reason of any attack being made upon this colored man who came over from Alabama; they were on Price's side, were they not, in that controversy?

*Answer.* I suppose so. As I understood from the testimony, this man Kennard was charged with taking certain colored men away from Meridian and carrying them back to Sumter County.

*Question.* That is what I want to get at. A band of men came over from Alabama at one of these trials, a band of armed men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I think the same parties came over at the time this man Price was to be tried, to protect persons who were to be at the trial in some way; and when that party went back they carried certain colored men back with them.

*Question.* Took them away without any law, without any process?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so I understand.

*Question.* Was not the fact that some men had come there and taken away to another State some colored men without any process of law, and nothing had been done about it—was not that the very thing that disturbed and excited the colored people; was not that why they had their meeting?

*Answer.* From what I heard there during the investigation, I do not think that would have caused the difficulty. I believe the difficulty was caused by certain parties there in Meridian operating upon the feelings of the blacks, making representations to them which perhaps were not warranted by the facts.

*Question.* Price had left the place and gone away before this riot occurred?

*Answer.* I think he had; but there were other men there who I think did all they could to excite ill-feeling between the whites and blacks.

*Question.* Was not the very thing which the colored people were excited about the fact that these men from Alabama had taken two or three colored men, without any law or any process, and had carried them to Alabama?

*Answer.* I have no doubt that had some effect.

*Question.* You say that, from the evidence, you are satisfied that this man Tyler was the man who fired the first shot on the occasion of that riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I was.

*Question.* Are you satisfied that it was the shot that he fired which killed Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* Did you suppose that he intended to kill Judge Bramlette?

*Answer.* Well, there was nothing clear in the evidence upon that point; there was only this, that Judge Bramlette and a party named Brantley, with whom the conversation occurred immediately preceding the shooting——

*Question.* Brantley was the witness?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The witness and Judge Bramlette were near together; but it was stated by several witnesses that they were not so near together that to fire at one man would be likely to kill the other. From that I came to the conclusion that Tyler fired at the justice of the peace; however, he might have fired at the witness, Brantley.

*Question.* Was there any evidence of any hostility that he felt toward Judge Bramette?

*Answer.* I do not know that there was any testimony to that effect before the committee, but I know it was so stated in Meridian.

*Question.* There was an ill-feeling between Tyler and the justice of the peace?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* This Justice Bramlette was a republican, was he not?

*Answer.* He was called a republican, but I think he was what is known as a conservative republican.

*Question.* If Tyler fired at all, if he intended to fire and shoot any one, is it not a reasonable supposition, was it not your belief, that he intended to fire at the man who was trying to make an attack on him?

*Answer.* That was my belief, until I heard that there was some ill-feeling between him and the justice of the peace.

*Question.* You say there was no evidence of that?

*Answer.* There was no evidence before our committee, but I heard that in Meridian; I will not say whether it was in committee or out of it that I heard of it.

*Question.* We have had the testimony of various witnesses who were there, who know all about that transaction, and I do not think it worth while to inquire further about it. Now, a word as to what Mr. French testified to in regard to a statement made by you and others. He said that these outrages which had been committed by disguised men were reprobated and disapproved by respectable men of the democratic party, and he named you among others. Was that true?

*Answer.* It is true to this extent, that whenever those outrages did occur I did not approve them.

*Question.* Exactly.

*Answer.* I have no recollection of ever having had any conversation with Mr. French on the subject. But I will state that such is my opinion.

*Question.* So far as that kind of outrages have been committed, you did disapprove them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; wherever they have been committed I disapproved them.

*Question.* That is your sentiment now, and that has been your sentiment?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you feel confident that you never expressed that judgment in the hearing and presence of Mr. French?

*Answer.* I have no recollection of any such expression.

*Question.* Have you ever concealed your sentiments on that subject; have you not been open in your expression of disapproval?

*Answer.* I do not recollect a single instance where I have expressed my disapproval; but I state now that wherever any lawless conduct occurs, if it does occur, I disapprove of it.

*Question.* Have you never heard of any such lawless conduct?

*Answer.* There have been instances of lawlessness apparently well authenticated. That I disapproved of; I say now I disapprove of it.

*Question.* Have you not always expressed your sentiment of disapproval?

*Answer.* I may have expressed it; I do not recollect now.

*Question.* You have never attempted to conceal your sentiments on that subject?

*Answer.* I have never made any attempt to conceal them.

*Question.* You are open and public in your disapproval of it?

*Answer.* Perhaps that may convey a wrong impression. If my opinion was asked about it, I would disapprove of it.

*Question.* Has it not been a matter very much talked of in your State?

*Answer.* Not much; it is looked upon there as rather ridiculous, as gotten up for political effect, as bogus.

*Question.* Have you not heard of many well-authenticated cases where bands of disguised men have whipped men, and in some cases killed them?

*Answer.* I have not—not of many of them. I have heard of some instances where it was stated that bands of disguised men had committed outrages; but of my own knowledge I do not know of any such case.

*Question.* I am not asking you of your knowledge; but have you not heard of instances of that sort which you believed to be true?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the cases that I have heard of in Mississippi have occurred a long way from where I live. It would be hard for me to say whether I believed some of them to be true. I think that to some extent the statements made in relation to certain outrages are true.

*Question.* And to the extent that they are true, you disapproved them?

*Answer.* Certainly I do. Where parties commit these outrages I do disapprove them.

*Question.* You say now you think that is all over; but was there not a time in your State when there were a great many of such occurrences?

*Answer.* I do not know of a time when they were any more numerous than they are now.

*Question.* You think there is as much of it now as there has been at any time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in my section of the State. I am not a very good witness on that subject on one side or the other. In my section of the State there never have been these outrages to any extent, and there are not now. The alleged outrages occurred in a different part of the State.

*Question.* Have you never heard of any bands of disguised men in your county?

*Answer.* None committing depredations.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of bands of disguised men being out at night for any purpose?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Not at all?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You have never heard of any disguised men in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir, except that I have known of the existence of political organizations there in 1868; they were in disguise in their meetings, but nowhere else.

*Question.* They held meetings, and were in disguise?

*Answer.* During their meetings, yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the object of that organization?

*Answer.* It was during the canvass for the adoption or rejection of the constitution in 1868, and for the election of a governor in my State.

*Question.* Why were they in disguise in these meetings?

*Answer.* Well, it was a kind of political organization in which they were required to be in certain uniform, and they appeared in that uniform during the meeting; that I know—nothing more than that.

*Question.* Were their faces concealed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the object of that?

*Answer.* There was no object stated; they merely appeared in disguise in their meetings.

*Question.* Have you any idea what was the object of that?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know that there was any particular object in view; perhaps it was to give it some air of importance, sanctity, or something of that sort.

*Question.* Were they armed as well as disguised?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Was this a general practice?

*Answer.* Not that I know of, sir. What I speak of is a little society that was originated by somebody there in the village, which was the county seat of my county. They took a certain oath; I have forgotten what it was; the organization did not last more than two or three weeks. They appeared in a certain uniform during that time, which uniform embraced a disguise as part of the uniform. Immediately after the election the whole thing disappeared, and was never revived in that county.

*Question.* Can you give us any idea of what the motive for that disguise was?

*Answer.* The motive was, I suppose, to give it an air of mystery, perhaps to give greater importance to it in the estimation of the members.

*Question.* Did you happen to belong to that organization?

*Answer.* I did.

*Question.* Do you know that such a practice obtained in other places?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Do you know whether it did or not?

*Answer.* I do not. I believe I attended two or three meetings of it, but I saw it amounted to nothing, that it was foolishness, and I no longer met with it.

*Question.* Have you heard of anybody in your State being killed by a band of disguised men, and in the night-time?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* You have heard of no instance of that sort?

*Answer.* None that I can call to mind now.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of anybody in your State being taken out in the night time by a body of disguised men and whipped or beaten?

*Answer.* I heard of an instance that occurred in an adjoining county a year or two ago.

*Question.* What county was that?

*Answer.* The county of Jefferson.

*Question.* What was that transaction?

*Answer.* It was some party there, a white man, who was objectionable for some reason that I did not understand; he claimed to have been maltreated and abused by a party of disguised men, in the night.

*Question.* Do you believe that such a transaction as that did take place?

*Answer.* O, I suppose he was abused, yes, sir; but there was nothing political in it that I know of; he was maltreated.

*Question.* Have you heard of other instances of men being whipped or beaten by disguised men, any other instance in the State anywhere, that came to your knowledge authentically, by information which is credible?

*Answer.* I know of no other instance that was well authenticated. I have seen it stated in the newspapers that a man named Huggins had been whipped in Monroe County; of that I know nothing except the newspaper account.

*Question.* He was a United States officer, collector, or assessor?

*Answer.* He was a United States officer of some kind, and a supervisor of public schools in the county.

*Question.* Do you believe the statement is true, that a body of disguised men did take him out in the night and abuse him?

*Answer.* I have seen nothing of it but the newspaper account.

*Question.* Do you believe it to be true?

*Answer.* I think it probable that he was whippped or abused in some way.

*Question.* Do you know what was the alleged reason for doing it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I heard various statements about it. I think, though, that it was caused by some difficulty in relation to their county schools; perhaps the man made improper distinctions between the whites and the blacks, and there was dissatisfaction about that.

*Question.* What improper distinctions did he make?

*Answer.* I do not know; I cannot state the particulars.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything more than that he gave colored children the same advantages that he gave white children?

*Answer.* Well, I have heard that he expended the school funds very recklessly, incurred much greater expenses than were necessary.

*Question.* He was extravagant in his expenditure of the money?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; extravagant in his expenditures.

*Question.* Did you hear it claimed that he misappropriated or embezzled the school fund, or anything of that sort; or only that he was extravagant in his expenditure of it?

*Answer.* I do not recollect any particular instance of embezzlement. In fact, I paid but little attention to his case at all; it was in the northern part of the State, and I live in the southern part of the State, and I know but little about the matter.

*Question.* A word now in relation to the legislation about railroads in your State. The interest which the State had in the road was given to the owners of the road?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was not given up to the owners of the road; it was given up to McComb, of the New Orleans and Jackson Railroad; he was the president of the road.

*Question.* The State surrendered its interest to the railroad company?

*Answer.* The State surrendered all the interest it owned in the New Orleans and Jackson Railroad, together with all the interest that the State owned in other railroads, surrendered it all to the New Orleans and Jackson Railroad.

*Question.* On condition that the company should complete the road?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; to extend it to certain points in the State.

*Question.* On the ground that it would lead to the public advantage?

*Answer.* The extension of the road would no doubt be for the advantage of the State.

*Question.* That was not made a distinct party question in the legislature, was it?

*Answer.* No, sir; not as regards those who lived along the line of the road.

*Question* Can you tell us how many democratic members voted against that proposition?

*Answer.* I think they all voted against it, except those who lived upon the line of the projected road.

*Question.* Did all the republican members vote for it?

*Answer.* O, no, not all of them.

*Question.* Some of the republicans voted against it?

*Answer.* Some of the republicans voted for it, and some of the republicans voted against a great many dishonest appropriations, in my estimation.

*Question.* The majority voted for that railroad proposition?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It was not made a party question?

*Answer.* Not strictly a party question. As I have said, there were some democratic members, who lived along the line of the road, who voted for it.

*Question.* Has that legislation ever been made a pretext for any lawlessness or violence on the part of anybody?

*Answer.* Not at all. There is very little lawlessness in my State.

*Question.* If there has been any lawless act of violence committed on anybody, it has not been in consequence of anything which your legislature did in regard to that railroad?

*Answer.* I think not.

*Question.* Nobody has ever pretended that?

*Answer.* I think not.

*Question.* You told us about a contract authorized by the legislature in relation to the State penitentiary?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that made a party question?

*Answer.* It was, with the exception of one or two democratic members who voted for it.

*Question.* Did all the republicans vote for it?

*Answer.* Not all of them.

*Question.* So that they did not divide on the question according to party lines?

*Answer.* The democrats were unanimous against it, with perhaps one or two exceptions; I will not state positively.

*Question.* And the republicans were unanimously in favor of it, except that some voted against it?

*Answer.* I did not state that the republicans were unanimously in favor of it, but that the democrats were unanimously against it, with one or two exceptions. As to the republicans, some were opposed to it, but a great many were in favor of it.

*Question.* You cannot say that that was made a party question?

*Answer.* No, sir; not strictly speaking.

*Question.* Those who voted for it claim that this contract was more advantageous to the State than any other that was proposed?

*Answer.* Some of them with whom I conversed claimed that.

*Question.* They claimed that, whether it was true or not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has the legislation on that subject ever been made a pretext on the part of anybody for any lawlessness or violence, or has any grown out of it?

*Answer.* I do not know that any lawlessness has grown out of it; I do not think any lawlessness exists in the State more than here.

*Question.* I am not speaking about that. If there is any it has not grown out of that legislation?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* You never heard anybody claim that?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* In your county what is the number of voters?

*Answer.* About 1,200.

*Question.* In all, black and white?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is the proportion between the blacks and whites?

*Answer.* They are very nearly equal; there is very little difference.

*Question.* Has there been perfect freedom of expression of political opinions in your county?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* By everybody, of all parties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Nobody has been molested or disturbed there on account of his political opinion?

*Answer.* None that I know of.

*Question.* Every man has been left perfectly free, so far as you know, to vote just as he pleased?

*Answer.* So far as I know.

*Question.* And to argue political questions just as he pleased?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think that has been so in all parts of the State?

*Answer.* So far as my observation has extended.

*Question.* Have you heard of anything in the State——

*Answer.* I have heard a great variety of statements by the party opposed to that to which I belong—by the republican party.

*Question.* I want to have you state whether, in your judgment, that same freedom which exists in your county exists in all parts of the State?

*Answer.* I would not like to express an opinion about counties that I know nothing of.

*Question.* I ask your opinion, based upon the information which you derived from the public press.

*Answer.* I have no information of any case where they were not allowed to express their opinions as they saw fit, and not allowed to vote as they saw fit. I have seen statements to the contrary.

*Question.* You have heard it charged that there was not perfect freedom in other parts of the State?

*Answer.* I have heard it so charged, and I have seen statements to the contrary before the congressional committee here in 1868.

*Question.* You have heard different opinions expressed about that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard different statements about it.

*Question.* Are you able to swear that you believe it has been perfectly free and open in all parts of the State for everybody to vote just as he pleased, without molestation?

*Answer.* That each man is allowed to vote without molestation?

*Question.* Yes; do you believe that has been so in all parts of the State?

*Answer.* That that has been so?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* Well, I think that each man has been allowed to vote as he pleased, without molestation, generally throughout the State. There may have been cases; I can speak of none of my own knowledge or from information; I would not say that cases have not existed where intimidation has been used. I know of no such cases.

*Question.* Do you think the colored people throughout the State feel perfectly free and easy to vote for the republican ticket if they want to, everywhere in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I think so, so far as my observation there extends; I think, though, there is some difficulty occasionally in their voting the other ticket.

*Question.* The great majority of the colored people are on the republican side?

*Answer.* O, yes, they are generally on the republican side. But there is a very warm feeling on the part of the colored people against those colored people who voted any other ticket than the republican ticket.

*Question.* The great mass of the colored voters think it an exceedingly foolish thing for a colored man to do, to vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* The great mass of the colored people think it is their duty to vote the republican ticket, as they are directed to do, and as they ordinarily do.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* I understood you to say that you thought that at one time there was an organization in the State of Mississippi, of what is popularly known as the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That I said I thought there was such an organization?

*Question.* At one time.

*Answer.* I do not think I said any such thing.

*Question.* Then I misunderstood you if you did not. You were speaking of what Mr. French has testified to here.

*Answer.* According to my recollection the question was, if I did not condemn acts of lawlessness wherever they occurred, whether by parties in disguise or not; and my answer was that I did.

*Question.* Do you believe there ever was in the State an organization of what is publicly known as the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I have known no such organization.

*Question.* I did not put the question in that form. I asked you if you believe that there ever existed, in the State of Mississippi, since the surrender, such an organization as is popularly termed Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That is a very general term. What do you mean by "popularly termed Ku-Klux?" What kind of an organization is that? If you will be more specific, I will give a definite answer to the question.

*Question.* Do you not understand what is generally meant by the term Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* If it means an organization that is in disguise, I will state in answer to that question, that I have known of a political organization in 1868, in which they wore disguises. If it is asked whether I know anything of an organization in the State that committed outrages, whether in disguise or not, I will state that I know of no such organization.

*Question.* What was the disguise that was used by the society to which you referred?

*Answer.* Of which I spoke a while ago?

*Question.* The one to which you belonged.

*Answer.* It was a white gown worn by the members.

*Question.* What else?

*Answer.* A white hat.

*Question.* Do you mean by a hat, a disguise over the face?

*Answer.* A cap over the head.

*Question.* Were there any horns upon it?

*Answer.* O, no, sir; no horns upon it that I know of. I will state all I know about this disguise and this society. Some parties stated to me that there was a political society—I have forgotten what they called it—being organized to secure the success of the opponents of the republican party, and I was asked to join it, and I did so. That was a disguise or uniform that was worn in their meetings, and, so far as my knowledge extends, only worn during the meetings; the only object of it, so far as I could see, was to organize and electioneer during the election of 1868.

*Question.* How extensive was that organization in your State?

*Answer.* I know nothing of it beyond my own village; and I know nothing of that particular organization except for two or three weeks; it lasted no longer than that.

*Question.* Do you know there is such a city as London?

*Answer.* I have heard so.

*Question.* I asked you if you knew it.

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Do you believe there is?

*Answer.* I believe there is.

*Question.* You say that you do not know of your own knowledge that there is such an organization, extending beyond your county, of the same character as the one in your village?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Knowing is one thing; do you believe that the organization extended further?

*Answer.* I do; I believe it extended further, but how far I do not know. I never had any communication with any organization outside of the county or outside of my own village. It is merely a supposition of mine, that it did extend further; I think it reasonable to suppose that it did.

*Question.* Have you ever seen men who told you that they were members of the organization beyond your county?

*Answer.* I think the parties who brought the organization there, stated that they were members of the same kind of organization somewhere else in the same county.

*Question.* Did you find any member of the legislature who was a member of a similar society?

*Answer.* I did not; I had forgotten all about it when I came to the legislature; nothing of the kind existed, so far as I knew, when I became a member of the legislature.

*Question.* Did you speak to any members of the legislature on the subject of these Ku-Klux outrages?

*Answer.* I suppose we have frequently spoken about it.

*Question.* Members of your own party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. But I have never heard of any organization anywhere else than the one I tell you of, in 1868; and I knew of that no longer than the time I spoke of.

*Question.* What was that organization called of which you speak?

*Answer.* I have forgotten the name; I think it was called the Knights of the Black Cross, though I am not positive about that.

*Question.* Did you ever hear them called Pale Faces?

*Answer.* I never did, that I recollect of.

*Question.* Did you ever hear them called the White Brotherhood?

*Answer.* No, sir. Some man came to the town where I live, a short time after they started this concern to which I belonged, and attempted to start something else, which he called by some other name. But some of the young men became disgusted with it, and rode him out of town on a rail, and that was the end of it.

*Question.* Was he a democrat?

*Answer.* He claimed to be one.

*Question.* Why did they ride him out of town on a rail?

*Answer.* They thought he was an impostor, and they took that mode to get him away.

*Question.* Did they do him any other injury?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Did you have any oath in that organization to which you belonged?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, there was some oath to be taken; what it was I have forgotten.

*Question.* What was the purport of it?

*Answer.* According to my recollection, it was an oath of fidelity to the Constitution, to prevent innovations upon the Constitution, and to endeavor to secure the success of the conservative party. That was the substance of it, according to my recollection.

*Question.* Opposition to negro suffrage?

*Answer.* Nothing of that kind that I recollect of.

*Question.* What do you mean by innovations upon the Constitution; the Constitution of the United States, or the constitution of the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* The Constitution of the United States.

*Question.* That was in 1868?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was not the constitutional amendment granting suffrage to colored people pending at that time before the people of this country?

*Answer.* It was not pending in that State at that time.

*Question.* That was previous to its adoption?

*Answer.* It was previous to its adoption by that State, yes, sir.

*Question.* Did your oath say opposition to any innovation upon the national Constitution?

*Answer.* The oath was to support the Constitution, and to adhere to it, and to prevent its violation. There was no oath to prohibit any amendment to the Constitution, or to oppose any amendment to the Constitution, that I recollect of.

*Question.* Was the oath to support the Constitution of the United States as it then was, or as it was before the war?

*Answer.* As it then existed.

*Question.* Did you have passwords?

*Answer.* I am not sure whether they had them or not; they may have had passwords I do not recollect distinctly.

*Question.* Do you not recollect any password that they had?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Would you recollect a password of that organization if it was repeated to you?

*Answer.* I do not think I would; it did not exist there in my town more than two or three weeks.

*Question.* Did they have signs of recognition?

*Answer.* I believe they had some.

*Question.* Do you recollect any of those signs?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Would you recognize them if they were to be shown you now?

*Answer.* I do not think I would. About all I would recognize would be their rather peculiar garb that they wore at the time.

*Question.* Was there an organization similar to yours in the adjoining county?

*Answer.* None that I know of.

*Question.* Did you ever mention the fact that you belonged to an organization that wore disguises to any person who did not live in your county?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Did you ever have any conversation upon that subject with any one?

*Answer.* Not that I recollect of. I have known of the existence of no such organization since 1868, and then I did not know of its existence beyond the limits of my own village.

*Question.* You say there was a case in the adjoining county, where a man was outraged by a disguised band?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the case I spoke of a while ago, the case of a white man in Jefferson County, the county adjoining mine. He claims to have been taken out at night and whipped by some disguised white men.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any similar case in the county?

*Answer.* In Jefferson County?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of a similar case in the county of Amite?

*Answer.* I recollect having seen a paragraph in some newspaper recently, about some disturbance there, but what it was, or any of the particulars about it, I cannot state; I have no distinct or positive recollection about it; but I recollect that there was something stated in the newspaper, a short time before I left home, about some disturbance there.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any outrage in the county of Jackson?

*Answer.* I have not; that is some distance from where I live.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any in Lawrence County?

*Answer.* That is a neighboring county; I have heard of no disturbance there.

*Question.* Have you seen accounts in the public press of disguised men in the county of Lawrence?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* Have you heard of any in the county of Newton?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* Have you heard of any in the county of Jasper?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any in the county of Noxubee?

*Answer.* I have not. I have seen statements frequently in the republican newspaper, the State organ, published at Jackson, of disturbances, but where they occurred, or the particulars about them, I cannot state. A great many I took to be of no importance, and not true at the time I saw them.

*Question.* How far is the county of Oktibbeha from your county?

*Answer.* That is up towards the northern part of the State; I live in the southwestern part of the State.

*Question.* Have you heard of any such occurences up there?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* Did you mix with the republicans of the legislature and talk with them frequently?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Members representing different portions of the State, counties in different sections of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you never hear them speak of outrages committed in their localities?

*Answer.* I do not recollect any instance. I do not recollect to have ever heard any complaint on the part of members of the legislature about outrages throughout the State. The fuss made about it was chiefly on the part of the newspapers of the State.

*Question.* What is the county that joins Wayne, and which with Wayne is entitled to a representative?

*Answer.* Greene County, I think.

*Question.* How many voters has Greene Country?

*Answer.* I cannot state distinctly. I think it has some five or six hundred voters.

*Question.* It has five or six hundred voters?

*Answer.* I think so, I will not be positive; I only speak from memory.

*Question.* Are you sure that it has over 450 voters?

*Answer.* I will not state positively that it has over that, though I think it has.

*Question.* What is the voting population of Wayne County?

*Answer.* I am confident the voting population of Wayne County is between 700 or 900.

*Question.* What is the other county that borders on Wayne?

*Answer.* I believe that Clark County is the next county to Wayne on the north.

*Question.* What is the vote of that county?

*Answer.* I do not recollect; it is sufficient to entitle it to one representative.

*Question.* Do you not know that it is over 1,300?

*Answer.* I think it is over 1,300, but I do not know that it is; it is quite a populous county.

*Question.* Is there any county that borders on Wayne that has a less vote than 1,100?

*Answer.* I cannot state.

*Question.* The vote of five or six hundred, supposing the vote to be so large in Geeene County, would not entitle that county to a representative?

*Answer.* Not according to the ratio adopted. I think the ratio was about 1,400. But previous to that time every county had been entitled to one representative, regardless of population.

*Question.* Greene County was obliged to be put with some other county, was it not?

*Answer.* Not obliged to be. I think they ought to have given Greene County a separate representative.

*Question.* For 500 voters?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When the ratio was 1,400?

*Answer.* I think that each county ought to have had one representative, regardless of the number of voters.

*Question.* Suppose they had fixed upon a different rule to be applied all over the State, such a rule as was adopted, making the ratio of representation some 1,300 or 1,400, would it not have been necessary under that rule for Greene County to have been put with some other county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if it had been established as a rule of apportionment that counties should be consolidated, then it was necessary that Greene County should be consolidated with some other county.

*Question.* There was a ratio adopted?

*Answer.* I know there was a ratio adopted, just as there is a ratio for congressmen, I suppose.

*Question.* That ratio necessitated the consolidation of some of the counties in your State, did it not?

*Answer.* I do not think it necessitated the consolidation of counties any more than the ratio of representation for members of Congress necessitated the consolidation of States, when any State has not population enough for one representative, according to the ratio of representation.

*Question.* If counties were consolidated, then Greene County must be joined with some other county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was not Wayne, the county adjoining it, which had the least number of votes?

*Answer.* I think not.

*Question.* Which was the county?

*Answer.* I think the county west of Wayne had less population.

*Question.* I mean adjoining Greene County.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think that Perry had a less number of votes than Wayne County.

*Question.* What county was consolidated with Perry?

*Answer.* I do not know; some county was; I know that Perry has not a separate representative. Greene and Wayne counties were consolidated. I would ask what is the county west of Perry?

*Question.* It is Marion County.

*Answer.* I think that probably Marion County was consolidated with Perry County.

*Question.* According to the ratio of representation, Wayne County had a little more than one-half of the number fixed upon as that ratio?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Why was it so very bad that Wayne and Greene Counties should be consolidated?

*Answer.* It is so very bad in this view of the case, that Wayne with about 900 voters—I will not state precisely the number——

*Question.* You say it has between 700 and 900?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Wayne, with that number of voters, was denied a separate representative, while Warren, after being allowed four representatives, with a residuum of somewhere about 600 voters, was granted a fifth representative for those 600 voters.

*Question.* How far is Warren County from Wayne County?

*Answer.* Wayne County is on the eastern border of the State, and Warren County is on the western border.

*Question.* They had no connection, one with the other?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Wayne is a very large county, is it not?

*Answer.* Not very large; I think it is not a very populous county.

*Question.* How many representatives did it have?

*Answer.* It had one representative in the legislature.

*Question.* In the present legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. May be you are thinking of Warren County.

*Question.* Yes, that is the one I mean.

*Answer.* Warren has four representatives in the present legislature. It is the county in which the city of Vicksburg is situated. By the new apportionment Warren is entitled to two senators and five representatives; they give Warren County two senators, and they give De Soto and Tunica together two senators. Although De Soto has a larger number of voters than Warren County, yet they give Warren County two senators, and refuse to give De Soto County two senators, but place it with Tunica County and give the two counties two senators.

*Question.* Warren County embraces the city of Vicksburg?

*Answer.* It does, but it has a smaller number of voters than De Soto County.

*Question.* Is the ratio of representation fixed by your constitution?

*Answer.* It is not.

*Question.* Is there anything in your constitution which requires that one county should have at least one representative?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* And no ratio of representation for the house or the senate was fixed by the constitution?

*Answer.* No ratio was fixed; it only states that the number of representatives shall not exceed so many for the lower house, and that the senate shall not exceed such a proportion of the members of the lower house.

*Question.* How many members have you in the lower house?

*Answer.* I think one hundred and twenty-five; I will not be positive.

*Question.* How does the constitution say those members shall be apportioned?

*Answer.* According to the population, but the ratio is not fixed; that is the question you asked me.

*Question.* Your constitution says that the number of representatives in the lower house shall be one hundred and twenty?

*Answer.* Thereabouts.

*Question.* And that they shall be apportioned according to population?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, according to population.

*Question.* How, then, in accordance with your constitution, could you give each county a representative, should it have less than its ratio of population?

*Answer.* Well, I do not think it was intended that any county should be deprived of separate representation. According to my view of the constitution, it was merely intended that each county should be entitled to one representative, and that in addition to one for each county, the representatives should be according to population.

*Question.* Your idea is that members should be first apportioned according to the number of counties, each county given one, and that the balance should be apportioned among the counties according to their population?

*Answer.* My idea was that it was not the intention of the framers of the constitution to deprive any county of separate representation.

*Question.* How are your senators apportioned?

*Answer.* The provision of the constitution requires that the senators shall not exceed a certain proportion of the representatives, I believe one-third.

*Question.* Are senators apportioned among the people in the same way as representatives?

*Answer.* According to population, yes, sir.

*Question.* You said that the county of Warren had fewer voters than the county of De Soto?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The county of Warren embraces the city of Vicksburg?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has the county of De Soto a greater population than the county of Warren?

*Answer.* The county of De Soto has a greater number of qualified voters, according to the returns furnished the legislature by the secretary of state, and, I think, has a greater number of inhabitants.

*Question.* You think it has a greater population?

*Answer.* I think it has a greater population.

*Question.* Has the city of Vicksburg increased in population during the last year?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* You say it has?

*Answer.* I think so; that is my opinion.

*Question.* Has it increased rapidly?

*Answer.* It has increased more rapidly than any other town in the State, perhaps.

*Question.* Is it generally believed that it is now growing, and likely to continue to grow, with great rapidity?

*Answer.* That is the common opinion.

*Question.* Do you know what bearing that had upon their idea of justice when they were fixing the apportionment, to last for many years, and gave this additional representative to Warren County?

*Answer.* I do not think it had any bearing. I think the fact that Warren County was largely republican had more bearing than anything else.

*Question.* You said it was generally believed that the penitentiary bill was procured by bribery. When you said "generally," did you mean by republicans as well as democrats?

*Answer.* I think so; I think it is believed by republicans as well as democrats.

*Question.* Do you mean generally by republicans?

*Answer.* I will not say it is generally believed by the republicans.

*Question.* Doubtless some may believe it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard some express their opinion in that way. I do not know whether a majority of them believe so or not. I think, though, it is very commonly believed in that section of country.

*Question.* You said that the man who took that penitentiary contract engaged to feed the prisoners, to take all the expenses off the State for $18,000 a year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the State to pay him $18,000 a year for fifteen years.

*Question.* And he was to take all the expenses off the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but the State delivered over to him all the existing work-shops and grounds, and all the prisoners, and he is to be allowed to work, outside of the walls, all the prisoners not sentenced for murder, rape, or arson.

*Question.* He agreed to do that for fifteen years?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, for $18,000 a year. And then he was required to erect a factory, and turn that over to the State at the expiration of the lease, for which the State was to pay him $120,000, I do not know at what time; I think that was the amount.

*Question.* Are there a large number of colored men sent to the penitentiary?

*Answer.* I think so. This party who has leased the penitentiary is now working a large number of them on his plantation in the Mississippi swamps.

*Question.* Have you many persons in Mississippi able to work in a cotton-factory, skilled hands?

*Answer.* I suppose the number of skilled hands is very small.

*Question.* Are the colored people in your State in any numbers skilled in that branch of business?

*Answer.* I judge not. The lessee of course would have to instruct the convicts in any skilled labor of that sort.

*Question.* Was that the understanding, that he was to build a factory and instruct the convicts?

*Answer.* There was no provision requiring him to instruct the convicts; he was to construct the factory building, and turn it over to the State at a particular time; but he was to use his own discretion whether he was to instruct the convicts and avail himself of their labor or not.

*Question.* Why do you believe that the accusation against Price led to the riot at Meridian?

*Answer.* I believe it had a great deal to do with causing the riot there. This man Price, who was one of the parties alleged to have Ku-Kluxed, as it is called, this negro Adam Kennard, seems to have had considerable influence with the negroes about Meridian, and I think he did all he could to create a bad feeling there. And I think other parties did what they could to create bad feeling there.

*Question.* Did not that difficulty with Price occur long previous to the riot?

*Answer.* Only a few weeks; about three weeks, I think.

*Question.* Did he leave before the riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe it was a tacit understanding between the prosecution and the defense there that he should leave in order to avoid any difficulty.

*Question.* Were there any white men killed during that riot?

*Answer.* Judge Bramlette was killed.

*Question.* Was any one killed but the judge?

*Answer.* I think no other white man was killed, but one or two were wounded.

*Question.* How many colored men were killed?

*Answer.* I think five or six.

*Question.* Were any houses burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; three houses were burned, including the burning on Saturday night, and perhaps more than three.

*Question.* I am not speaking of the burning on Saturday night.

*Answer.* Are you speaking of the houses burned after the riot?

*Question.* Or during the riot; it continued all night.

*Answer.* Well, the testimony before us was that Moore's house was burned, and also the colored Baptist church.

*Question.* Was Moore supposed to be a friend of the negroes?

*Answer.* Oh, yes; he was a negro himself.

*Question.* Was it a negro church that was burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but not Moore's church.

*Question.* Did the negroes take any part in the riot, burn any houses, or commit any outrages?

*Answer.* I know of no houses burned by negroes; I think they committed an outrage in beginning the riot.

*Question.* You mean the shot fired by Tyler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was anything further done by the negroes during the riot?

*Answer.* Nothing further that I know of; I suppose they exchanged shots, during the trouble in the court-house, with the whites. Only one white man was killed there, and perhaps one or two were wounded. The testimony is that they fired on white persons on the Saturday night preceding.

*Question.* I am speaking of the riot. Do you know that any colored man fired a shot in the court-house, except this man Tyler?

*Answer.* I do not know it; I think there was testimony of some one leaning on the mantel-piece; I do not recollect the name; I merely recollect the circumstance that some colored man fired at him, and the shot struck the mantel-piece. But what the name of the witness was, or the party who fired, I do not recollect.

*Question.* Did he know the name of the party?

*Answer.* I do not think he did; he said some black man fired at him.

*Question.* Were you able to find out the name of a single man who fired on that occasion?

*Answer.* I will not be positive, except as to Warren Tyler; I do not recollect the name of any white man who fired.

*Question.* Were any men killed outside of the court-house that night?

*Answer.* Three were killed that night, and this Warren Tyler, who fired the first shot, was killed immediately after the riot.

*Question.* How many were killed in the court-room?

*Answer.* Judge Bramlette was killed in the court-room, and a negro man named Ford; some think he was killed by some of the shots fired by Tyler; he was a policeman there.

*Question.* He was killed in the sheriff's room?

*Answer.* According to my recollection, he was killed in the court-room.

*Question.* Bramlette and Ford were killed in the court-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and Clopton was wounded, and his throat was cut afterward.

*Question.* He was thrown from the veranda?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, immediately after the riot. Bramlette and this negro Ford were killed in the court-room; this negro Clopton was wounded, and shortly afterward killed; Tyler was killed in a barber's shop, or tailor's shop, or shoe shop, shortly afterward; and three others were killed the night following.

*Question.* The night of the same day?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did the colored people manifest any disposition to take part in the riot; did they take any part after leaving the court-room?

*Answer.* No; I do not know of any disturbance by them after leaving the court-room; I do not think now of any part taken by them.

*Question.* How then could this Price matter have led to the riot in which the colored people seem to have taken so little part?

*Answer.* I think they took considerable part in it until they were shown by the demonstrations at the court-house and immediately afterward, and by the action of the sheriff, that they could not accomplish anything. The sheriff summoned a posse consisting of a large number of the citizens of Meridian, which went to the shoemaker's shop where this negro, Warren Tyler, was killed; he was killed by the posse of the sheriff.

*Question.* Do you think the men who killed those three negroes during the night were influenced in doing so by the Price difficulty?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I cannot say what influenced those men who killed the negroes during the night; I think it was an act of lawlessness entirely unwarranted; I do not know what influenced them to do it.

*Question.* Do you think the men who burned the school-house and burned Moore's house were influenced by the Price difficulty?

*Answer.* No, sir, not that I know of; and I do not know whether they were white men or black men who did that burning.

*Question.* Did you ever hear it charged that the black men burned that church?

*Answer.* I do not think I ever heard it. But there were some conjectures there that Moore, having recently effected an insurance on his house, might have had something to do with the burning of them; but I do not know of anything to substantiate that view of the case.

*Question.* Were there not a parcel of men from Alabama who came over armed to attend this trial where the riot originated?

*Answer.* To attend the trial during which the riot originated?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* I do not know that there were. There were men from Alabama who I think came over at other times; I do not know that any were there at the time the riot commenced. I think men came over at the time Price was to be tried for assaulting Kennard. I have no recollection of any person who came over on the 6th of March, when the riot occurred.

*Question.* Did I understand you to say that you thought the Ku-Klux organization, or anything in that form, had been disbanded in Mississippi, and did not exist at this time?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not make any such statement. I simply stated that I belonged to a secret political organization in Franklin County, in 1868, about which I have testified. As to a general organization, known as Ku-Klux, or any other secret political organization general in its character throughout the State, I know nothing.

*Question.* Do you know of any society, club, or combination of men for political or party purposes in the State of Mississippi at this time?

*Answer.* Secret society?

*Question.* Yes; that is kept secret among its own members.

*Answer.* No, sir; I know of no secret society or any organization there for political purposes, except the Loyal League. I have heard of that; but I do not know of that personally.

*Question.* Do you know of any such now existing?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Did you get colored votes when you ran for the legislature?

*Answer.* I am told I did; I am satisfied I did get some.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* I believe I received about seventy-five in my county.

*Question.* What was your majority in your county?

*Answer.* I think it was one hundred and fifteen.

*Question.* Was your opponent a white man or a colored man?

*Answer.* He was a colored man.

*Question.* Were there any disturbances during the election?

*Answer.* None at all.

*Question.* Everything passed off quietly?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How do you account for your getting seventy-five colored votes when your opponent was a colored man?

*Answer.* I suppose seventy-five voters preferred me to the colored man. I have heard a great many black people of the county say that this colored man who ran against me was totally incompetent to represent the county; he was a man who could not read or write.

*Question.* Was there any outrage committed upon the colored men who voted for you?

*Answer.* No, sir, none at all, or against those who voted for him; there was no outrage in my county.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* You spoke of certain persons having brought this secret society to your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Who were they?
*Answer.* I do not recollect.
*Question.* What county did they bring it from?
*Answer.* I cannot state that either. I merely recollect that some time during the canvass of 1868 I was solicited to join a political organization there, and I did so.
*Question.* Who of your citizens belonged to that organization?
*Answer.* There were a considerable number of them.
*Question.* Can you give some of their names?
*Answer.* I recollect H. Magee and H. Cassedy, who, I think, belonged to it.
*Question.* Do you recollect any others?
*Answer.* There were a number of others who belonged to it; I will not be positive who belonged to it and who did not.
*Question.* Give us the names of some more.
*Answer.* I think that S. F. Williams was a member, though I will not be positive; and I think S. L. Scott was a member.
*Question.* Do you remember any more?
*Answer.* I do not believe I can state the names of any others. There were a great many who were members of the club there, of that organization.
*Question.* I would like to have you give all the names you can remember.
*Answer.* I could not do it and be definite at all; it would be simply guess-work to give any other name.
*Question.* What were the names of the officers?
*Answer.* I do not recollect what were the names they were designated by. I know I held one of the offices myself; I think I held the principal office in it, but what was the name of the office I will not be positive.
*Question.* Were you the president of it?
*Answer.* For a while I was.
*Question.* How long?
*Answer.* For one or two weeks, until the thing died out.
*Question.* Were you there when the society began, when it was organized?
*Answer.* No, sir. I was not one of the first members who went into it; but I think I was initiated within a few days after it first originated there.
*Question.* When you were acting as president of the society did you have any communication with any other society?
*Answer.* I did not.
*Question.* Did you have any communication with a president of the society in the capital of the State?
*Answer.* I did not. The only thing we did while I was a member of it, while I presided over it, was to endeavor as far as possible to counteract the efforts of the Loyal League in the county, and to secure the defeat of the republican candidates. It was brought about by the existence of the Loyal League there at that time.
*Question.* Did you ever belong to any other secret political organization?
*Answer.* I did not.
*Question.* Either before the war or afterward?
*Answer.* I did not.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 15, 1871.

JOHN R. TALIAFERRO sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Where do you live?
*Answer.* In Noxubee County, Mississippi.
*Question.* That is on the east side of the State—on the Alabama line?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In what place do you reside?
*Answer.* One mile and a quarter from Brooksville, seven miles northwest from the county seat, Macon.
*Question.* On the railroad?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; on the line of the Mobile and Ohio road.
*Question.* How long have you resided in that place?
*Answer.* Four years and eight months.
*Question.* Where did you live before that?
*Answer.* Before the war I lived in Baltimore City, Maryland.
*Question.* Are you a native of Maryland?
*Answer.* I am a native of Virginia.
*Question.* Were you in the army during the war?

*Answer.* I was in the confederate army
*Question.* Were you an officer?
*Answer.* I was.
*Question.* What office did you hold?
*Answer.* I was a captain.
*Question.* And after the war you settled in Mississippi?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What is your business there?
*Answer.* Planting.
*Question.* Have you held any office there?
*Answer.* No, sir, I have not; I have not sought political reputation at all.
*Question.* We desire to ascertain from you the condition of affairs in that State, and especially in that portion of it where you reside, as to peace, order, and the execution of the laws; whether offenses are committed there which are not punished, whether the laws against crime are enforced or not, and especially whether any crimes have been committed in your section by bodies of men going about in disguise. State what you know in reference to this subject.
*Answer.* I may as well say that things are in rather a bad state in my immediate county, Noxubee, and the counties adjoining, Kemper, Lowndes, and Winston. I suppose there have been from fifteen to twenty murders committed in my county within the last nine months.
*Question.* How long has this state of disorder prevailed there?
*Answer.* Ever since I went there. I found that state of things existing there when I went there, more than four years ago; not so bad, though, as it has been the last eight to twelve months.
*Question.* We want more particularly to inquire in reference to the state of things at the present time, say within the last year.
*Answer.* Do you mean in regard to the number of murders, the parties who were murdered, and everything of that kind?
*Question.* Yes, sir.
*Answer.* Well, sir, I know of seven negroes who were killed within the last four months. There have been no whites killed at all—that is, not by any organized band, or anything of that kind. There has been only one white citizen murdered in our county within the last twelve months that I know of. He was assassinated at Sugar Lock depot, on the railroad. That is supposed to have been a family or personal affair.
*Question.* You say that, within the last four months, seven colored men have been killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and there has never been any one arrested for it at all.
*Question.* Were they all killed at one time?
*Answer.* No, sir; at different times—a week, or perhaps two weeks intervening. I know of three who were killed inside of fifteen days.
*Question.* Give us the particulars of each case.
*Answer.* The last negro who was killed was Sam Koger. He was killed by a body of men who went to his house at night.
*Question.* Where did he live?
*Answer.* About two miles from Brooksville, on the plantation of Mr. Ben Maneese.
*Question.* State all the particulars of that case, as you have understood them.
*Answer.* The negro was arrested on suspicion of having stolen some meat from a widow lady; he was examined by the magistrate, Justice Carpenter, and discharged. He was then interrogated by a soothsayer from Lowndes County, and told that one thing and another had been found by a soothsayer from the stars. The negro of course did not confess anything; he said he was innocent. The following Saturday night these parties—about thirty of them—visited his house, and demanded admission. He refused to grant it. They broke open the door. The negro was shot in seven places. He did not die until the following Tuesday.
*Question.* Was this body of men who killed him disguised?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I saw them myself.
*Question.* He had been discharged by the magistrate?
*Answer.* He had been acquitted by the magistrate.
*Question.* Were you acquainted with this negro who was killed?
*Answer.* I knew him.
*Question.* Do you know what his reputation was?
*Answer.* He bore a very good reputation. He was a very good farm hand. He was an ignorant freedman.
*Question.* Do you know of any other charge being brought against him except this one on which the magistrate discharged him?
*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any other charge being brought against him.
*Question.* Has there been, to your knowledge, any attempt to ascertain who these men were who killed him?
*Answer.* None whatever. Governor Alcorn's appointees, somehow or other, are not

very zealous in regard to such things in our county. In fact, they say they are afraid.

*Question.* Give as the particulars of another case.

*Answer.* There was a negro killed over on the far edge of the county toward Winston; that is west of me.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* About three months and a half ago.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* His name was Hopkins.

*Question.* State the particulars in relation to that.

*Answer.* He was a negro preacher. They wanted to prevent him from preaching. They went to his house, took him out and whipped him. He hallooed very loudly and alarmed the neighborhood; and they thought the better way would be to kill him, which they did.

*Question.* Was that done by a body of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State another case.

*Answer.* About four months or four months and a half ago there was a negro killed by the name of Dick Malone.

*Question.* Where did he live?

*Answer.* On what is known as the Malone plantation. It was rented by a Methodist minister—Parson Baldwin. He was killed at night.

*Question.* About how long ago?

*Answer.* About four months and a half ago, if I recollect aright. Those things are so very common that it did not impress itself fully on my mind.

*Question.* State the particulars.

*Answer.* They went to this Malone place to, as they said, "straighten out the niggers;" that is to chastise them. This negro was a blacksmith, who was very well known in the neighborhood and looked upon as a first-rate negro. He had worked for a number of planters around there in the immediate neighborhood, and was looked upon as a negro of good character.

*Question.* Did you you know him personally?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I knew him personally.

*Question.* Did you hear any charge against his character?

*Answer.* Never.

*Question.* Do you understand whether any offense was alleged against him?

*Answer.* None whatever. After they had whipped out a good many negroes on the plantation, they started off. This negro wanted to find out who they were, and he walked out of his cabin along the road.

*Question.* They whipped several negroes that same night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and on the same place. But this negro, Dick Malone, had not been whipped. They started off, and he went a little ways along the road, probably one hundred and fifty yards from his house, and stopped on the side of the road to see them pass. He was shot while standing there.

*Question.* Was there any allegation of any sort against him?

*Answer.* None whatever, that I have ever heard of. There was no attempt made afterwards to inquire into the matter at all. That same night one or two plantations were visited. Mr. Wilbanks' plantation was visited, and the negroes whipped there.

*Question.* By this same band, do you suppose?

*Answer.* By this same band.

*Question.* Do you know how large a body of men this was?

*Answer.* There are said to have been about eighteen to twenty. I did not see them that night. I was sitting up with a corpse in the town of Brooksville.

*Question.* How far was this occurrence from where you live?

*Answer.* About three miles.

*Question.* This was done by a band of men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many negroes were taken out by that band and whipped on that night?

*Answer.* I suppose as many as twenty-five or thirty, at the two plantations.

*Question.* Did you understand why it was done?

*Answer.* Merely as they called it there, to "straighten" the neighborhood—to make the negroes subservient, and make them fear them.

*Question.* Was there any charge against the negroes who were whipped?

*Answer.* None whatever. I never heard of any charge being brought against them except it may be that they were a little free spoken, or something of that kind. I never heard that they had committed any overt act of any kind.

*Question.* Had there been any rising or outbreak among them?

*Answer.* No, sir. These men whipped them indiscriminately, men, women, and children.

*Question.* State any other case of killing that you remember.

*Answer.* There was a negro school teacher who was killed and thrown into a well, over in the eastern part of the county. That was said to have been done by men from Alabama.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* About six months ago.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I have really forgotten what his name was; I think it was Chestnut—George Chestnut.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It happened some twenty miles off, in the eastern part of the county, adjoining Alabama.

*Question.* Was he teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was killed and thrown into a well.

*Question.* Was this done by a band of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was said to be.

*Question.* What allegation was there against this man?

*Answer.* It seems that he had taken some little interest in politics in the Alabama elections; some county elections that were held in Pickens County, Alabama; he had gone over from Noxubee County, Mississippi, to electioneer.

*Question.* Of what politics was he?

*Answer.* He was a republican.

*Question.* Was it the understanding that this body of men who killed him and threw him into the well came over from Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the supposition. It was never really known what State they were from.

*Question.* Did this colored man belong there, or had he come from some other place?

*Answer.* He had come from Alabama originally; he used to live in the lower part of the State, I believe.

*Question.* State any other case of killing.

*Answer.* Well, there was a negro killed near Sugar Lock, between seven and eight months ago.

*Question.* In what part of the county is that?

*Answer.* Below Macon, in the southeastern part of the county, on the line of the Mobile and Ohio Railroad.

*Question.* What were the circumstances of the killing?

*Answer.* He was said to have been doing some considerable talking as a politician: it was thought better to silence him, and they did so.

*Question.* Was there any charge against him besides talking politics?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any other charge against him.

*Question.* Did you know him personally?

*Answer.* I did not; he resided some distance from me.

*Question.* What were the circumstances in relation to his killing?

*Answer.* They simply went to his house at night (these things are always done at night) and called him out. He refused to come, and they broke open the door and murdered him. Then there were four places visited right in my immediate neighborhood—Mr. Crosby's, Mr. Hinton's, Mr. Jackson's, and Mr. Price's, all gentlemen farmers there.

*Question.* They are the owners of four farms or plantations?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* By whom were those plantations visited?

*Answer.* By men in disguise.

*Question.* When?

*Answer.* It has been about three months and a half or four months ago. There was no murder committed there. These men were all bachelors except one, who was a widower; and each one of them had a cook or a woman living about the place. They took out the negro women and whipped them.

*Question.* Was that all they did?

*Answer.* They whipped them very severely; that is all.

*Question.* Did they whip any of the men?

*Answer.* No, sir; they simply whipped these women because they said they were living in *crim. con.* (I believe that is the expression) with these white men.

*Question.* But they did not whip the white men?

*Answer.* No, sir. If they had whipped the men, it would have been very well, I suppose. They had been living together for a long time—some five or six years. Mr. Hinton had been living with one of the women eight or ten years—previous to the war, and during the war.

*Question.* Was it understood that he cohabited with her?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and that he had children by her; and they thought it would benefit the other negroes in the neighborhood to "dress them up," as they call it—to whip them out, and order them to leave.

*Question.* Was it supposed in each of those four cases that the colored women were living in the same way with the owners of the place?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that each of the negro women cohabited with the owner of one of the places.

*Question.* Have you named all the instances of the killing within the last year that are within your memory?

*Answer.* I do not exactly call to mind just now others. There have been, though, from fifteen to twenty murders in the county.

*Question.* Within a year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that they have all been committed by bands of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, by disguised men, with the exception of one. I may make one exception. A negro who was on his way home from Macon was waylaid and murdered at night—it has never been known by whom—whether disguised men or not. But the majority of the murders have been committed by disguised men.

*Question.* Was it supposed that the negro whom you just mentioned was killed for the sake of robbing him?

*Answer.* It was supposed so. It was thought that he had sold his cotton, and had money, which I dare say was a correct supposition, and that he was killed by persons for his money.

*Question.* You think it probable that in that case the man was killed for the sake of pecuniary gain?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, for plunder.

*Question.* Was that the fact in regard to the killing of any of the others?

*Answer.* None whatever, that I have ever heard of. In fact the majority of them were very poor; and there was no chance to get anything from them.

*Question.* How many negroes do you suppose have been whipped by bands of disguised men within the last year in your county?

*Answer.* Well, that is a very hard matter to say.

*Question.* Have whippings been frequent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have a great many more been whipped than murdered?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, of course; because whenever they go to a plantation to whip, they whip all—men, women, and children.

*Question.* From what you have learned, have these disguised men, when they go about, a uniform disguise—are the various bands disguised alike?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, generally speaking; it depends upon the neighborhood. Almost always they adopt the same disguise, which is a long white robe; if it is not white it is generally black; it depends on the location. For instance, a Klan may start from Macon robed in white, and one from Brooksville robed in black.

*Question.* Have you seen any of these bands?

*Answer.* I have.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* Not a great while ago—two months and a half ago.

*Question.* State the circumstances of your seeing them and their appearance.

*Answer.* I saw them when they went out on the occasion of the murder of the negro, Koger, that I spoke of just now. There were twenty-seven of them then. I counted them.

*Question.* Where were you?

*Answer.* I was on the roadside.

*Question.* As they went by?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was between 8 and 9 o'clock at night that they passed.

*Question.* From which way did they come?

*Answer.* They came down the road. They came out of the swamp. There was a swamp between where I lived and Maneese's place. I was coming from that neighborhood; I had been visiting over there, and was coming from there when I met them.

*Question.* Do you mean that when they came out of the swamp they were away from the road?

*Answer.* O, no, sir; they came right out into the main highway.

*Question.* Did they seem to have been in the swamp, or did they come along the highway that led to the swamp?

*Answer.* They came out of the swamp into the main road. They always meet in such places. I have seen them in their meetings.

*Question.* You saw them when they came into the highway?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I saw them when they came into the road. I met them, I suppose, about one hundred yards from where they came upon the road.

*Question.* Did they see you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You were traveling along on the highway and you met them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. The moon was shining very brightly.
*Question.* Did they say anything to you?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they told me to "keep dark." Of course I took them at their word, and did so.
*Question.* Did they require any promise from you?
*Answer.* No, sir; none whatever. I was known by all of them.
*Question.* Did you know them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I did. I knew them personally.
*Question.* Did they have on their disguises?
*Answer.* They did.
*Question.* How did you know them?
*Answer.* I knew them by their voices.
*Question.* Where were they from?
*Answer.* From my county. Some of them were near neighbors of mine—men that I meet always every day.
*Question.* Do you suppose they were aware that you knew them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they all spoke to me and called me by name—at least the bulk of them did. I do not know that each one individually did.
*Question.* Was there any conversation about where they were going?
*Answer.* No, sir; not at all. I did not ask any questions. I would not have been answered if I had.
*Question.* They went on and killed this negro?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they killed him that night—that is, they shot him that night. He did not die till the following Tuesday.
*Question.* Is that the only time you have seen them?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Tell us all the occasions when you have seen them.
*Answer.* I have seen them at least a dozen different times. They have rode through the plantation where I live—have passed right by my house.
*Question.* Substantially this same band of men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* This band that you have seen so many times is composed of men living right around in your county?
*Answer.* My neighbors.
*Question.* How long is it since these bands of disguised men began to ride about in this way?
*Answer.* It has been more frequent within the last twelve months. Up to a year ago they did not make so many parades. They made several parades, though, right through the county town of Macon at night.
*Question.* How long ago did they begin to appear?
*Answer.* About three years ago; but it is mainly within the last year that they have made more frequent displays and parades.
*Question.* And they have killed fifteen persons within the last year?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* One of those you think was killed by parties for the purpose of gain?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You have no knowledge whether a band of disguised men killed him or not?
*Answer.* No, sir; it was not supposed that it was a band of disguised men that killed him, because he was murdered passing along on the road alone. Our clerk and sheriff know these things as well as I do, or better.
*Question.* You believe that you know substantially the men who composed this band at various times?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* To what political party do they belong?
*Answer.* They belong principally to the democratic party, I am sorry to say; in fact, all of them.
*Question.* Do you know any republican who belongs to the band?
*Answer.* I do not. As I understand, no republican is ever permitted to join them, and no man who was in the Federal service.
*Question.* Did any republican ever want to join them?
*Answer.* I never heard of one that wanted to join.
*Question.* What do these men declare to be their purpose in carrying on these operations?
*Answer.* They say it is for the purpose of law and order, for mutual protection. They say they have no confidence in Governor Alcorn's government, and I am sorry to say it is a little weak.
*Question.* Who is the sheriff of your county?
*Answer.* Mr. Moore is now the sheriff. Mr. McHenry was the sheriff while these depredations was being committed.

*Question.* Who appointed McHenry?
*Answer.* He was appointed by Governor Alcorn.
*Question.* Was he a republican or democrat?
*Answer.* He was originally in the confederate service. He is said to be a republican. It is hard to tell what he is.
*Question.* Was Mr. Moore, your present sheriff, appointed by Governor Alcorn?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a brother-in-law of Alcorn's
*Question.* What are his politics?
*Answer.* It is hard to tell. He used to be a democrat. He is a little wishy-washy He is said to be a very inefficient officer.
*Question.* Does he call himself a republican?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he does now.
*Question.* You spoke of a clerk of the court; who is he?
*Answer.* A young man named Roberts.
*Question.* Who appointed him?
*Answer.* He was appointed by Alcorn also. Major Smith was formerly our clerk. He is now our State senator. He resigned in favor of Roberts.
*Question.* Is Roberts a republican?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was, however, in the confederate service.
*Question.* Is there a prosecuting officer for your county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Who is he?
*Answer.* Mr. Dismukes.
*Question.* By whom was he appointed?
*Answer.* By Governor Alcorn.
*Question.* Is he a republican?
*Answer.* Well, it is hard to tell what he is.
*Question.* Does he call himself a republican?
*Answer.* He does now, I think.
*Question.* For the killing of these fifteen men within the past year, and the great number of whippings and scourgings that have have taken place in your county, has anybody been prosecuted or punished?
*Answer.* No one has ever been arrested.
*Question.* Has any attempt been made to arrest or prosecute?
*Answer.* There has been no investigation whatever.
*Question.* Has there been no effort?
*Answer.* None whatever.
*Question.* Why not?
*Answer.* It is hard to say. I suppose it is through fear; it is said to be through fear.
*Question.* If you have any theory or judgment about the reason why crime has been committed to so great an extent and nobody has been punished, give us your view of the matter.
*Answer.* I say it is through fear. The officers do not feel disposed to interfere. They act through fear altogether.
*Question.* How do you know that?
*Answer.* I judge so from the fact of no arrests being made.
*Question.* Have you heard anything said about it?
*Answer.* I heard the clerk, Mr. Roberts, speak of it. He said that it is impossible tc arrest any one in the county for such crimes as that.
*Question.* Did you ever talk with your prosecuting attorney in regard to it?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever talk with your sheriff about it?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* You say you suppose that fear is the reason of there being no prosecutions?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What is your judgment as to whether your local officers could safely undertake to ferret out and prosecute these offenses?
*Answer.* I am free to confess and sorry to say that it cannot be done in Noxubee County.
*Question.* Do you think the fear of which you speak is well founded?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do.
*Question.* You say that these men themselves say that they do these things in the interest of law and order—to keep things peaceable?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What is your judgment in relation to the real purpose?
*Answer.* My idea is simply that they do it to keep the negroes down, as it were—to keep them submissive, and make them acquiesce in any move that they want to make
*Question.* What do you mean by that?
*Answer.* In regard to political affairs, or anything else—either political or business affairs.

*Question.* Do you think it is intended to operate upon the fears of the negroes, and prevent them from voting the republican ticket?

*Answer.* I do. I do not think anything about it. I have heard negroes say (in fact, I have heard these men speak of it themselves) that when they were whipped they were told always to do as they said at the peril of their lives.

*Question.* What have the negroes said to you as to the declarations of these men to them? Did the men say anything to them about politics?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, of course; they were always told to vote the democratic ticket.

*Question.* What has been the effect of this sort of administration of "law and order" on the colored people?

*Answer.* Well, sir, we have had no election to decide anything of that sort. We have not had any election since Alcorn was elected. We are to have an election this fall.

*Question.* Alcorn's election was when?

*Answer.* In 1869.

*Question.* What time in 1869?

*Answer.* The winter of 1869.

*Question.* Do you mean two years ago last winter?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that election free?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there no attempt to prevent anybody from voting as he pleased?

*Answer.* None whatever. Everybody voted as he pleased at that time.

*Question.* If an election were held now in your district, how do you think it would be?

*Answer.* Well, I think it would go democratic beyond a doubt.

*Question.* What was the vote in your county two years ago?

*Answer.* It was largely republican; I forget the exact numbers; but the negroes are largely in excess of the white population.

*Question.* There are many more colored voters than white?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; both in my county and the county above me. It is not so much the case in the county on the west—Winston.

*Question.* The colored men very nearly all voted the republican ticket?

*Answer.* A large majority of them. We have two colored representatives from my county.

*Question.* When you speak of a large majority of the negroes voting the republican ticket, do you mean that substantially all voted that ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many colored men in your county vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I do not suppose that over fifteen or twenty voted it at the last election.

*Question.* Is that as many as you think would vote the democratic ticket, if every man was at liberty to vote just as he pleased?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many white republicans are there in the county?

*Answer.* There are a few—not over one hundred, if that many. I would be safe in saying there are not more than seventy-five.

*Question.* And you believe that if there were an election now, your county would go democratic?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Why?

*Answer.* Because I think the negroes would vote the democratic ticket through fear.

*Question.* You have spoken about your own county, and the number killed there. How has it been in counties adjoining?

*Answer.* I have heard of two or three murders being committed in Winston County; that is the adjoining county on the west.

*Question.* Within what time?

*Answer.* Within the last year.

*Question.* Were they killed by bodies of disguised men?

*Answer.* They were said to be. In Lowndes County—the county north of ours—there have been some eight or ten murders committed.

*Question.* By these bands of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are said to have been.

*Question.* How as to the county south of you?

*Answer.* In Kemper, I think there have been six or seven that I have heard of.

*Question.* Within the last year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And killed by bands of men disguised?

*Answer.* They are said to have been killed by disguised men.

*Question.* How is it about whipping in these other counties?

*Answer.* Numbers have been whipped. That is a very common occurrence.

*Question.* Does it seem that the same organization of men going about in disguise and committing these acts exists in all these counties?

*Answer.* It does in these counties I speak of right on the Alabama line. I do not know of any other counties so well. The counties I speak of are Tishemingo, Alcorn, Oktibbeha, Lowndes, Winston, Kemper, Lauderdale, and my own county of Noxubee.

*Question.* Have the victims of these killings and whippings been generally colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have never heard of but one white man, and that was done, I think, rather under a mistake. They took him out to try to make him confess a crime that he was not guilty of.

*Question.* Did they kill him?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did they whip him?

*Answer.* No, sir; they only hung him.

*Question.* Did he die from the hanging?

*Answer.* No, sir; they put a rope around his neck and drew him up two or three times.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* About three miles from Macon.

*Question.* In your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That was done by a party of disguised men. They thought he had committed a robbery, but he was afterwards exonerated by the entire community as not guilty. In fact, he is now bringing suit against the parties who accused him of doing the stealing.

*Question.* Have the men who have been killed or whipped by these bands of men been all members of one political party?

*Answer.* They are said to be.

*Question.* Universally?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has that, so far as you know and believe, been always the case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So far as you have information in regard to the character of those men who belong to this organization, of what party are they?

*Answer.* I am sorry to say they belong to the democratic party.

*Question.* Without exception, so far as you know?

*Answer.* Without exception. I do not know of any republican who belongs to any such organization. The republicans are not permitted to join it.

*Question.* Have you any information in relation to the character of this order—its mode of organization, the extent of it, how it is officered, and its plan of operations?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Give us all the information you have upon that subject.

*Answer.* In our county they have what they call captains of bands, and first and second lieutenants, just as they have in a regular military company; and they are all understood to coöperate with each other in the adjoining counties.

*Question.* How did you learn this?

*Answer.* I found it out by attending one of the meetings once myself.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* In Noxubee County.

*Question.* When?

*Answer.* About nine months ago. I was solicited to join it. I attended one of their meetings. I was introduced by a member, it being thought I was one.

*Question.* State what took place at this meeting.

*Answer.* I only heard moves made by gentlemen belonging to it that such and such negroes needed attention—needed waiting on; and they were waited on by the same party.

*Question.* How many men were present at that meeting?

*Answer.* I suppose about forty.

*Question.* Where was it held?

*Answer.* In a swamp on the banks of the river.

*Question.* The men were not disguised?

*Answer.* Not at all. The meeting was held in the day-time.

*Question.* Did they have their disguises there?

*Answer.* No, sir; those are never used, except at night.

*Question.* Only when they are going to operate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you know all of the men who were present at that meeting?

*Answer.* I knew a majority of them. Most of them I knew personally; some I did not know personally, but by sight or by name.

*Question.* Some lived some distance from you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some lived in the extreme upper end of the county.

*Question.* You understand that the organization is by counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by counties.

*Question.* And that they have an understanding that one county organization may call upon an organization in another county?

*Answer.* Certainly, to do any deed they wish done in their county, which is generally accomplished in that way.

*Question.* Explain fully what you mean in that regard.

*Answer.* For instance, the band in Lowndes County would call upon the band in Noxubee County to do any deed or perform any act that they wished done in Lowndes County. Those gentlemen of Lowndes County would remain at home on the night when the deed was committed, so as to prevent any suspicion resting upon them. In Noxubee County, when they wanted anything done—any large raid—they would call upon Lowndes County, or Kemper, or Winston, or upon some of the Alabama counties—Pickens, for instance.

*Question.* So that the men who went and did the particular act would be strangers in the vicinity?

*Answer.* Of course; that is generally the case. If the weather is very bad and the roads bad the men do not hesitate to go themselves, without calling upon their neighbors; they go and accomplish the thing themselves.

*Question.* So that it is understood that whenever, in consequence of the character of the deed, the organization of one county is called upon to go into another, it is to obey such call?

*Answer.* It is understood so always.

*Question.* Did you understand whether there was any higher organization than the county organization?

*Answer.* I never heard of any. It was said at the same time that a gentleman you had before you some time ago was a chief of the organization. I never knew anything about that.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who was that?

*Answer.* That was General Forrest. I do not know it to be a fact.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You have heard such a rumor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was told so.

*Question.* But you learned nothing of that by attending their meetings?

*Answer.* I was told by the captain of the band that Forrest was the head of it. I do not know that to be a fact. I merely know that he told me so.

*Question.* This was told you by the captain of a band in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. General Forrest, you know, has been having his headquarters in Mississippi, at Columbus.

*Question.* He is engaged in building a railroad?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is building a railroad at present.

*Question.* Were you initiated into any system of signs or passwords?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Tell us all about that.

*Answer.* Their sign of recognition at night, when two parties are going in opposite directions, is for one party to exclaim, "Hail!" The other party answers, "Hail who?" The first party says, "Mount;" the other party replies, "Nebo;" which makes the words "Mount Nebo;" which is the countersign at night. The signal for distress, as, for instance, when in any little town or village a member gets into a difficulty with any one not belonging to the Klan, is "Kosciusko." There is a symbol of recognition by which to recognize one on the street. For instance, I take my right hand and draw it across my chin. The other person, if he is a member, takes hold of the left lapel of his coat and shakes it. In the town above me they use the word "Avalanche," instead of "Kosciusko."

*Question.* Is that all you can state in reference to that matter?

*Answer.* These are about all the signals that they make use of.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What is the grasp?

*Answer.* Just an ordinary shake of the hands; there is nothing peculiar in that at all in my county.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They just shake hands in the ordinary way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What is the sign for getting into camp?

*Answer.* You generally go without any sign. They meet in a swamp or in the woods, and parties generally go together. If a man goes by himself he is known by

the countersign. Of course, this sign, "Mount Nebo," is just the same in camp as anywhere else.

*Question.* Is there any sign of recognition between the parties when they casually meet?

*Answer.* I have already stated that when members meet on the road or street one puts his right hand to his chin and the other party takes hold of the left lapel of his coat.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You learned all this from members of the order themselves, when you attended this meeting?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were you instructed in all this?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that the only meeting you ever attended

*Answer.* No, sir; I have been to two or three other meetings; but that is just about the way all are conducted. They meet generally once every two weeks. When they meet to-day, for instance, in Noxubee swamp, the captain appoints a meeting two weeks from to-day at some other point he may designate—such a man's woods, or such another place in the swamp.

*Question.* You understand that at one meeting they ordinarily fix upon the time for the next meeting?

*Answer.* They always do.

*Question.* And at those meetings any move to be made is brought forward?

*Answer.* Any gentleman just gets up, as he would in any other body.

*Question.* Suppose they have occasion to meet "in vacation," as lawyers say, that is, between the times of their regular meetings?

*Answer.* Then they are called together by their captain, who sends around some member and notifies them.

*Question.* He sends an ordinary messenger?

*Answer.* A man just mounts his horse and rides around.

*Question.* At any of these meetings which you attended, were any of these acts committed in your vicinity agreed on—any of these whippings, murders, or anything of that sort?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State what occurred in reference to that.

*Answer.* At this meeting which I attended, the negro Malone's case was acted upon. It was not resolved at the meeting to kill him, because it was not known that it would become necessary. It was proposed, however, to go to Wilbanks' plantation and to Malone's place and whip them out—"straighten them," as they call it.

*Question.* What was said in that meeting about the need of doing that; what had the negroes been doing?

*Answer.* Well, they merely thought they were rather too free.

*Question.* Free in what respect?

*Answer.* Well, in every-day occupations; they worked when they pleased, and let it alone when they pleased.

*Question.* They did not work steadily enough?

*Answer.* They did not work steadily enough; some of the neighbors objected to it; Mr. Wilbanks is a man of rather peculiar habits himself—is disposed to be a little insane; and it was said the negroes on his place were too free; and on this Malone place, which this Methodist minister leased, he subleased the land to negroes; they were farming it upon shares.

*Question.* Each man was at work for himself?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, or in little squads; they would form partnerships among themselves.

*Question.* What interest did the men of this band feel in having those negroes more diligent?

*Answer.* They thought it would be the better plan not to have the negroes rent land at all, so that they could always control the labor themselves.

*Question.* The system on which they were working was not satisfactory?

*Answer.* It was rather displeasing to them.

*Question.* Was anything said in any of these meetings about the political effect of what they were doing?

*Answer.* I never heard any move of that kind; it was always understood, though, what the political cast was to be.

*Question.* You did not hear that question discussed in any of the meetings you attended?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard it discussed at all, because that was one of the fundamental principles they went on it was not necessary to discuss it, because it was understood.

*Question.* Have you heard any members of the order talk about the purpose of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What did they say

*Answer.* It was simply to make the negroes vote democratic; that is all I can tell you about it.

*Question.* Was that the common talk among them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the every-day talk.

*Question.* You think the effect of the operations of the order would be to produce just that result?

*Answer.* I do, in that immediate section; and I do not hesitate to say so.

*Question.* In these other counties of which you spoke, has there been, so far as you know, any effort to prosecute?

*Answer.* I have never heard of any of the parties being arrested at all.

*Question.* In no one of the adjoining counties?

*Answer.* In none of the adjoining counties whatever.

*Question.* Do you know of any effort to do it?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not; there were some parties arrested in Alcorn County, adjoining the State of Tennessee, a short time ago; I saw them at Oxford at court; there were two men arrested for whipping a negro very severely.

*Question.* Did those two men act as part of an armed, organized, disguised band?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They are now in jail at Oxford, Mississippi.

*Question.* In what court were they indicted?

*Answer.* In the United States court; I was there attending court; I was sent here from there.

*Question.* In what capacity were you attending court?

*Answer.* As a witness before the grand-jury; the letter I brought you from the foreman states that.

*Question.* As to what transaction were you a witness?

*Answer.* In regard to Ku-Kluxism.

*Question.* You were called as a witness before the grand-jury to prove just what you have stated to us?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You were not a member of the grand-jury yourself?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was not; I was simply summoned there as a witness.

*Question.* And the grand-jury found bills against two men in the county of Alcorn for an outrage committed in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and they found true bills against thirty odd men in my county; and I see by the papers this morning that the marshal is there now making arrests.

*Question.* For some of these transactions you have spoken of?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Those bills have been found in the United States court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What are your politics—republican or democrat?

*Answer.* I am a democrat.

*Question.* You vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I always have done so, except when I voted for Alcorn; I voted for Alcorn in preference to Dent.

*Question.* Have you held any public position?

*Answer.* Never. I never had any aspirations in that way. I went to Mississippi to go to work, which I have been doing ever since I have been there.

*Question.* Have any of the victims of the Ku-Klux outrages been democrats?

*Answer.* I never heard of any outrages perpetrated on any democrats.

*Question.* What has been the general conduct of the negroes in the section of country of which you have been speaking?

*Answer.* The negroes have behaved themselves very well; I have never found any fault with them at all.

*Question.* Have there been any barn-burnings?

*Answer.* I have never heard of but one crib being burned in the county. That was supposed to have been burned by some negroes in regard to the division of some corn. They thought they had rather been defrauded.

*Question.* Has there been any parading of negroes with arms in their hands?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; our Loyal Leagues. They have not done it for twelve months.

*Question.* These outrages have occurred since the League stopped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a majority of them. There has not been a parade of the Loyal League in my immediate neighborhood for twelve months. The last was at Brooksville, where we had a sort of riot. They have pretty much stopped parading.

*Question.* Are there any accusations among the people in that section of the country against the administration of the State government?

*Answer.* Well, it is said to be very weak. I never heard any other expression made use of.

*Question.* They say that Governor Alcorn is a weak governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Weak in what respect?

*Answer.* That he has rather inefficient officers, in my county particularly.
*Question.* Do they accuse him of corruption?
*Answer.* I have never heard any such open accusation brought against him.
*Question.* Have you heard any accusation of corruption against his officers?
*Answsr.* It was said that our sheriff was a very corrupt officer.
*Question.* Your present sheriff?
*Answer.* No, sir; McHenry.
*Question.* He has been removed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. Our present sheriff is said to be very inefficient. I do not know anything about him. He has not been there long enough to let us really know what he will be.
*Question.* How is it in counties around you?
*Answer.* It seems to be pretty much of the same character; it is said that the sheriffs particularly are inefficient.
*Question.* Do you mean inefficient in regard to other offenses than Ku-Klux offenses?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; in regard to making arrests; they seldom or never make any arrests.
*Question.* Are negroes allowed to sit upon juries in your courts?
*Answer.* They are.
*Question.* Do they sit upon juries?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You say the negroes are generally orderly and quiet?
*Answer.* I have always found them so. I never go to court unless compelled to go.
*Question* When I say "orderly and quiet," I mean elsewhere than at court. Are they orderly and quiet generally in the county?
*Answer.* Generally speaking they are. Some of them of course become a little intoxicated at the little villages around; but as a general thing they are very quiet.
*Question.* The cases of intoxication are exceptional?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have never known them to commit any disorderly acts except to get a little intoxicated.
*Question.* Do they treat white people respectfully?
*Answer.* I have always found it so.
*Question.* Do they take off their hats when they meet white people on the road?
*Answer.* Generally speaking they do; almost all the old plantation negroes do.
*Question.* What necessity is there then for taking them out and "regulating" them?
*Answer* Well, I cannot see any.
*Question.* Can there be any purpose other than influencing their votes?
*Answer.* I do not know, unless it be to intimidate them, to keep them from renting land, so that the majority of the white citizens may control labor in that way.
*Question.* You spoke of those orders issued from one county to another. Do you mean that a camp in one county makes an order to another?
*Answer.* Sends a request.
*Question.* Which is first passed upon in camp?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and then a messenger is sent. Nothing is ever written at all; they never write anything.
*Question.* These requests from one camp to another are in regard to important movements?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In regard to minor movements, such as whipping a few negroes, does the organization in one county send to the organization in another county?
*Answer.* No, sir; as a general thing they do it themselves, right at home.
*Question.* But if any heinous offense, such as a murder, is to be committed, they send to another county?
*Answer.* As a general thing they do.
*Question.* Have you ever known any orders to be received from an adjoining county by the camp in your county, to go over and attend to matters?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did the camp in your county respond to the order, and go over and do the act indicated?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they did.
*Question.* Do you know whether there is any general State organization, with State officers?
*Answer.* I really cannot say. I only know as to the counties around me.
*Question.* Is there any one chief officer of the whole county?
*Answer.* There is always a chief of the county. There are generally four or five bands in the county. The largest band is generally supposed to predominate; and the commanding officer of that ranks any other officer in that county.
*Question.* Is there any general State officer?
*Answer.* I do not know of any; but as I remarked a while ago, I was told of a gentleman who was the chief of it.
*Question.* Where did you understand this organization originated?

*Answer.* In Tennessee.

*Question.* What was the purpose of the organization

*Answer.* Political.

*Question.* For the purpose of controlling the vote of the colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear who originated it?

*Answer.* I understood that General Forrest was the originator of it. I do not know how true it is.

*Question.* Did you hear that any other men were connected with the origination of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of other prominent men in Tennessee; General Brown was one.

*Question.* Did you hear this from members of the order?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Members of intelligence and information?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They were ordinary working men like myself; ordinary farmers.

*Question.* Is this thing confined to the rabble, the mean, trifling men of the county; or are members of this order men of substance and character?

*Answer.* Well, I am sorry to say that in my county it is rather the better class, the best men in the county.

*Question.* How do they justify among themselves the commission of murder in this way?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I really cannot tell you. They do not, of course, want to commit murder when they go to do these whippings; but if a negro resists, on the spur of the moment he is killed.

*Question.* Do they not know that to take men out of their houses at night and scourge them in this way is a very heinous offense?

*Answer.* I suppose they do it from the fact that they have the power to do it on their side.

*Question.* State in detail the order of proceedings in one of those meetings. Is a motion made that they shall go to a certain man's house and pay him one of these visits?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is he mentioned by name?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Somebody makes the move, and the captain puts the question.

*Question.* Is the question discussed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if it is necessary it is discussed.

*Question.* Is there sometimes opposition to the proposition?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the reasons are given *pro* and *con*?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And then the question is put to vote?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* If it is carried by a bare majority is that sufficient?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* A majority decides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the majority decides.

*Question.* And when a question is so decided must all the others obey and take part?

*Answer.* Of course.

*Question.* Is that a part of the obligation which they take?

*Answer.* Certainly.

*Question.* Can you give the substance of the oath which the parties take? They take an oath, do they not?

*Answer.* They take an oath, but I cannot give it to you. I never took the oath.

*Question.* You do not know the full substance of that oath?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard discussed or mentioned in any of the meetings, the Government of the United States, and their feelings toward it?

*Answer.* No, sir; down there amongst us in the backwoods, we very seldom have anything to say or do with the Government of the United States. It is very seldom spoken of. We speak of Alcorn altogether.

*Question.* Did not a great many democrats vote for Alcorn at the last election?

*Answer.* They may have done so in various other counties; not a great many did in mine. I voted for him myself in preference to Dent.

*Question.* Dent was the democratic candidate?

*Answer.* The conservative candidate.

*Question.* Do you know whether the Ku-Klux organization, as it is called, has a general State password?

*Answer.* I know that the words I have mentioned are used in four or five counties around there.

*Question.* What are those words?
*Answer.* Mount Nebo.
*Question.* That passes you in that locality?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; it passes me in my county, and in any of the counties adjoining: Winston, Lauderdale, Kemper, Lowndes, Oktibbeha, and also Pickens County, Alabama.
*Question.* Were you ever yourself on one of those raids?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was notified to go and did so.
*Question.* State how you proceeded. Did you start from the place of meeting of the camp?
*Answer.* No, sir. We generally have some rendezvous that we start from.
*Question.* Were you present at the rendezvous?
*Answer.* I was. I was told to meet them there, and I did so.
*Question.* Did they all meet in disguise?
*Answer.* We did not meet there in disguise; we put the disguises on after we got together.
*Question.* Was that in the woods?
*Answer.* In a swamp.
*Question.* A secluded place?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* How many men met there?
*Answer.* I suppose between twenty-five and thirty.
*Question.* There they disguised themselves?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What was the purpose of the raid that night? Where were they going?
*Answer.* They were going to whip some negroes.
*Question.* Was that by order of the camp?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* There had been a previous order?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; it had been agreed on in a meeting.
*Question.* By a regular vote?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, I was told so. I was not at the meeting.
*Question.* Tell us how you proceeded after starting on the raid?
*Answer.* We marched along in the road just as a company of cavalry would. Every man was disguised and armed with side-arms and pistols.
*Question.* Were officers in command?
*Answer.* Certainly.
*Question.* Who was in chief command?
*Answer.* The captain.
*Question.* What other officers did you have?
*Answer.* Two lieutenants.
*Question.* Did the lieutenants command distinct portions of the men?
*Answer.* No, sir; the captain generally commanded the whole of a small body like that.
*Question.* Were the commands of the two lieutenants separate from each other?
*Answer.* No, sir, they rode along the road with the whole command. When they got to the place they were going to, one of the lieutenants would take a squad and surround the house.
*Question.* And another lieutenant would take another squad?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and surround another house.
*Question.* Were there any other officers?
*Answer.* I never knew any other officers.
*Question.* You knew no officers lower than lieutenants?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* You proceeded to the house of this negro?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What time of night was it?
*Answer.* About 1 or 2 o'clock in the morning, I suppose.
*Question.* What did they do when they got to the house?
*Answer.* They took the negroes and whipped them.
*Question.* Before you got there, did you meet anybody on the highway?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* How did you get the negroes out of the house?
*Answer.* They made them come out by force.
*Question.* Did they break open the doors?
*Answer.* In some cases they did.
*Question.* How many negroes were whipped that night?
*Answer.* I believe there were nine.
*Question.* On different plantations?
*Answer.* All on one plantation—at different cabins on the plantation.
*Question.* What were they whipped for?

*Answer.* They were whipped because they were renting land. That is all I ever knew.

*Question.* Was that the reason alleged for it in the camp when the order was passed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that if they were made to give up this land they were renting, they then could be hired by white planters.

*Question.* Was anything said to any negro that night about voting?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were the negroes told they must vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were told they must vote the democratic ticket.

*Question.* Suppose a negro is in the habit of voting the democratic ticket, is he free from such visitations?

*Answer.* I have never heard of one such being visited at all.

*Question.* What was the manner of whipping the negroes? Were they stripped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, almost always.

*Question.* Stripped to the skin?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* With what were they whipped?

*Answer.* With ropes or hickories or anything of that kind.

*Question.* What was the largest whipping given to a negro that night?

*Answer.* I do not think more than forty or fifty lashes were given in any case.

*Question.* Were they laid on hard?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Hard enough to break the skin?

*Answer.* I think one or two negroes had the blood cut from them.

*Question.* Were any women whipped that night?

*Answer.* Two women; there were seven men and two women.

*Question.* What were the women whipped for?

*Answer.* Merely because they were hallooing and making a noise.

*Question.* You were whipping their husbands and they wanted you to desist?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were they whipped on the bare skin?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were any children whipped that night?

*Answer.* I did not see any.

*Question.* Is this a fair sample of the raids that occur?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is a fair sample of their operations, to the best of my knowledge and belief.

*Question.* Have you heard other raids spoken of by those who were participants in them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that the way you get your knowledge of this being a fair sample?

*Answer.* The one I have just spoken of I was on, and other raids I have heard spoken of.

*Question.* Did they give an account of the matter, agreeing substantially with what you saw on this raid?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What induced you to disclose these things?

*Answer.* Nothing except that I thought it would be for the good of my country.

*Question.* You did it from a sense of duty?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think the organization ought to be broken up; I know it is very detrimental to my county.

*Question.* Does it interfere with the labor of your county, and with the general order and prosperity?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it does interfere very seriously with labor.

*Question.* Is there a feeling of intimidation and fear on the part of the colored people of that county?

*Answer.* There is.

*Question.* Does it affect whole families?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Women and children?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know whether any of the colored people sleep out of their houses at night?

*Answer.* I have known negroes to sleep out of their houses for nights and nights. I have known every negro on a plantation to leave through fear that they would be visited. For instance, they visit one plantation to-night. The negroes as a general thing are very ignorant; and frequently the negroes on the adjoining plantation leave every one of them the next night, and go to the woods. I have known the negroes at home to do it.

*Question.* You mean those upon your own plantation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then there is a general feeling of dread and terror?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and it frequently makes it a very hard matter to get labor in our section.

*Question.* Were you summoned before the grand jury in the United States district court or circuit court?

*Answer.* The United States district court for the northern district of Mississippi? I live in that district.

*Question.* Who is the judge of that court?

*Answer.* Judge Hill. The district attorney is Colonel Wells.

*Question.* Have any complaints been made to the governor of the State about these things?

*Answer.* I have been told that such things have been brought to his notice.

*Question.* Has he made any effort to suppress them?

*Answer.* I have never heard of any being made.

*Question.* Was the district court which you attended disturbed during its sittings?

*Answer.* By outside pressure?

*Question.* By members of this band?

*Answer.* No, sir; there were twenty-seven men there on trial from Monroe County.

*Question.* Was there any disturbance of any kind in court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the United States marshal, Mr. Pierce, was very badly handled by Colonel L. Q. C. Lamar.

*Question.* Who is he?

*Answer.* A lawyer of some note in Mississippi; an old Mississippian. He knocked the United States marshal down in court.

*Question.* Is Colonel Lamar a democrat?

*Answer.* He is said to be.

*Question.* Was he defending the prisoners?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What did he strike the United States marshal for, in court?

*Answer.* I did not see the occurrence; it occurred two days before I got there. It was said the marshal was attempting to enforce order. The judge had called for order. Colonel Lamar was very rude in his remarks, and very angry. His assistant counsel, Judge Gholson and Colonel Dowd, both censured him very severely for it. He was stricken from the rolls. But I have noticed since I came here that he has been allowed to practice again.

*Question.* Was he imprisoned for contempt of court?

*Answer.* No. sir.

*Question.* Was he fined?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was merely stricken from the rolls.

*Question.* And then restored?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there any armed demonstration in court following this occurrence?

*Answer.* There was some little demonstration on the part of the prisoners; but I rather think it was against Colonel Lamar. They were very much afraid, and Judge Gholson and Colonel Dowd were also, that he would injure their cause, as he did, no doubt, very seriously. There were troops there, of course, to prevent any outbreak.

*Question.* There were United States troops protecting the court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; two companies—one of infantry and one of cavalry.

*Question.* Were they there for the protection of the court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, for the protection of the court, and to guard the prisoners. They have a very insecure jail there, They had the prisoners in a corral or stockade.

*Question.* That was the first case of arrest for any of these Ku-Klux outrages?

*Answer.* That is the first trial that has been brought to my notice at all.

*Question.* Do you know whether Judge Hill has been threatened?

*Answer.* I never heard of it.

*Question.* Do you know whether the district attorney has been?

*Answer.* Colonel Wells told me that he had heard such rumors.

*Question.* What did they threaten him with?

*Answer.* They threatened him with death.

*Question.* What is the penalty on members of the order for violating their rules or disclosing the secrets of the order?

*Answer.* Death.

*Question.* Have you ever known a member to be punished for that?

*Answer.* I have never heard of one; not in my county. I heard there was a man who disappeared very suddenly in the county west of me—Winston. I never knew whether it was true or not.

*Question.* Who was the man who disappeared?

*Answer.* His name was Giles, I think, though I do not remember.

*Question.* Was he a member of the order?

*Answer.* He was said to have been.

*Question.* You did not know him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not many acquaintances in that county.

*Question.* Why was it said that he was made away with?

*Answer.* It was said that he informed on them; I think he became angry and said something of the kind on a drunken spree.

*Question.* These men who were arrested and brought before the United States court, were they from your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; in our county they are now arresting them.

*Question.* Are the troops there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have been sent there. The men that I speak of as being tried at Oxford were from Monroe County, a county north of me.

*Question.* When you were called to appear before the grand jury, was it known that you were going to make disclosures in regard to the order?

*Answer.* I suppose so. They knew that I would be upon my oath, and would be compelled to tell everything I knew.

*Question.* Had you told in your county what you were going to do?

*Answer.* I did not. I did not know I was going to be summoned till the day before I was.

*Question.* You did not procure yourself to be summoned?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not. It is the first time I was ever summoned before a grand jury.

*Question.* Were other members of the order summoned at the same time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did they go before the grand jury?

*Answer,* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did they make disclosures?

*Answer.* No, sir; they did not.

*Question.* How did they avoid making disclosures?

*Answer.* I really cannot tell. I do not know what took place in the grand jury room.

*Question.* Was there any obligation placed upon members of the order that they were to commit perjury in court, if necessary, and swear in favor of each other?

*Answer.* They were always to swear for one another.

*Question.* Without regard to truth?

*Answer.* Without regard to truth or anything else.

*Question.* That was part of the obligation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. These men who were summoned before the grand jury went there before I did. I understand they have since been arrested on true bills found against them.

*Question.* Do you think it would be safe for you to go back to that county?

*Answer.* I am going back. I suppose I shall run some risk; but my interests lie there, and I am going back.

*Question.* You say there are troops there now?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but whether they were there or not, I should go back.

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* In Noxubee County, a mile and a quarter from Brooksville.

*Question.* Have you any means of defense at your house—arms or anything of that sort?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have a pretty good double-barreled shot-gun, and a pistol.

*Question.* How many negroes have you on your plantation?

*Answer.* Forty-two, I believe, all told.

*Question.* How many men?

*Answer.* Twenty-three men.

*Question.* Do you rely upon them to help you in case of need?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, if it were necessary; but I do not know that I shall have to call upon them. I have a partner there, a gentleman who was formerly a squire in that State.

*Question.* Have you learned from your connection with this order that they are afraid of being fired into when they go out?

*Answer.* No, sir; they never fear anything of that kind. They make rather a ghostly looking sight, and they don't fear much being fired into.

*Question.* Do you think they would make an attack on anybody if they thought they were going to be fired into?

*Answer.* Certainly; they would defend themselves, of course. But when twenty-five or fifty men ride along the road at night, with gowns and other disguises, making the men look some two or three times as tall as they naturally are, it is not reasonable to suppose that many people are going to fire into them.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are you a member of this Ku-Klux order?

*Answer.* I never took the oath. I never connected myself with but one organization in Mississippi, and that was to put down horse-thieves; that was just a neighborhood organization, of about twelve or fourteen of us, shortly after I went there.

*Question.* Did any member of this Ku-Klux order take an oath?

*Answer.* I have been told so by men themselves that took it. I have been requested to join, and take the oath, but have never done so.

*Question.* You went out once on a raid with them?

*Answer.* I did.

*Question.* Did the other members know that you had not taken the oath?

*Answer.* Some of them did. I was called upon two months ago to attend a meeting to connect myself with the order; in fact, they said I must do it; that if I did not, my case must be attended to. I told them I did not propose to do anything of the kind; that I was a free man; that I had gone there to work for my living, had been trying to do so, and expected to continue it. I refused to join.

*Question.* Were you on any other raid than the one you have spoken of?

*Answer.* I have never been on any other. I have seen them, though, very frequently, when they were on raids. I have seen them pass my house. The road runs right by my house.

*Question.* Did you assist in murdering any of those men whom you have mentioned as being murdered by these bands?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was no murdering done the night I was along; only whipping. I did not do any of that either. I went along as a spectator.

*Question.* Is it usual for them to take spectators along?

*Answer.* No, sir; not as a general thing; but I was known to have been in the confederate army, to have been under General Forrest in the war. I was looked upon by the community, I believe, as a good citizen; I always enjoyed that reputation, and I was solicited to join. The reason I went that night was more to gratify my neighbor, an intimate friend, than anything else. He belonged to the order, and he vouched for me.

*Question.* Did you go for the purpose of disclosing the operations of the organization?

*Answer.* I did not; I merely went through curiosity to see how they did conduct things. I had heard and read a great deal of Ku-Kluxism, and I wanted to see how the thing was done.

*Question.* You frequently attended their meetings?

*Answer.* I have been to three or four of their meetings.

*Question.* Is it usual for them to have spectators at their meetings?

*Answer.* No, sir; some of the old citizens of the county—old men—are invited sometimes to attend. I always went upon invitation. One of the meetings was held on my place. I did not know it was to be held there until some men came to my house and told me.

*Question.* How did you happen to be summoned to Oxford before the grand jury?

*Answer.* I think our deputy sheriff, Colonel Simeon Orr, or Major Whitfield, of Columbus, had me summoned.

*Question.* Did they know anything in regard to your knowledge of the operations of this order; had you communicated your information to them?

*Answer.* I had spoken to Whitfield about it. He and I were intimate. He was summoned to Oxford at the same time I was, or just ahead of me.

*Question.* You saw the band that killed Koger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I met them in the road at night.

*Question.* Did you see them kill him?

*Answer.* I did not.

*Question.* How did you know that they killed him?

*Answer.* One of the gentlemen who went along told me.

*Question.* Did you give information of it immediately to the authorities?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not.

*Question.* You took no steps to have them brought to justice?

*Answer.* No, sir; there never have been any such steps taken at all.

*Question.* You took none?

*Answer.* No, sir; they could not have been arrested in the county at all.

*Question.* Was any attempt ever made to arrest them?

*Answer.* I never heard of any attempt being made in my county.

*Question.* How do you know that such an attempt would not have been successful?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the officers say that it is through fear; that they have not got a sufficient number of men to do it.

*Question.* A very large majority of the men of the county are republicans?

*Answer.* Freedmen.

*Question.* Are they not republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Give us the names of the men that you knew who belonged to the order in your county.

*Answer.* Am I compelled to do that?

[The committee, after consultation, decided, no member objecting, that the question should be answered.]

*Answer.* The captain of the organization in my immediate neighborhood is Charles M. Doss.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* Eight miles from Macon, in Noxubee County.

*Question.* In what direction from Macon?

*Answer.* Rather southwest. His first lieutenant is Benjamin Walker.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* Hardly three-quarters of a mile from Mr. Doss—on the adjoining plantation. The second lieutenant is Glower Triplet. Do you wish now the names of the privates?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* William Doss; his son, John Doss; his brother, James Doss; Jasper Featherston, Britton Moore, Joseph Hunter, Daniel Holbrooks, John and Joe McMorris, William P. Stovall, Cornelius Foster, Van Hinton, Sam Magee, George Jones, James Burch, Scott Williams, Taylor Williams, Max Williams, Thomas Cockerell, Dent Cockerell, George Kirby, John Williams. There are others. Do you wish me to proceed?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* William Morton, Doctor Featherston, Neil Featherston, John Wootten, Frank Glass, DeWitt Farmer, Mr. Lucian Wilbanks. There are two gentlemen who formerly belonged to the order, but have withdrawn; they are Frank Harper and William A. May.

*Question.* Have you named all that you know who belong to it?

*Answer.* No, sir; there are plenty more of them. I would name Madison Brooks, Harding Brooks, William Helm, Jehu Kirksey, Cicero Kirksey, William McMorris, the father of the two boys I have named; William B. Jones, Richard Edwards, Thomas Cook, Rufus Farmer. Those are all I think of just now around in my immediate neighborhood.

*Question.* Were those men in the company you spoke of that went to kill Koger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* All of them?

*Answer.* I do not know that all were present when they went to kill Koger; some, I think, were not there.

*Question.* Was the captain there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The two lieutenants?

*Answer.* Only one of the two lieutenants; the regular lieutenant, Triplet, was not there; he lived in the far part of the county; Cockerell was acting as first lieutenant that night.

*Question.* Which of them told you about the killing of Koger?

*Answer.* Daniel Holbrooks.

*Question.* Did he live adjoining you?

*Answer.* He lives about a mile and a half or a mile and three-quarters from me.

*Question.* Who did he say killed Koger?

*Answer.* I do not know; they never tried to know who did anything of that kind; I do not know that any one ever knew which one of them killed Koger; I never knew any man say who killed any one on a raid, except once; and that was the killing of the negro Dick Malone. He was only shot once.

*Question.* Who killed him?

*Answer.* It was said the captain did it.

*Question.* Was Hopkins killed by this band?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* By the same band?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a portion of them. I do not know that all of them were there. I was not there myself.

*Question.* Did they tell you they killed Hopkins?

*Answer.* John Wootten told me. He said he was along.

*Question.* You said there were some fifteen men killed in your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You gave the names of some four or five of them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Can you give the names of the others?

*Answer.* I really do not know who they were. They were negroes; and I would just hear of them as negroes being killed.

*Question.* You do not know that they were killed?

*Answer.* Well, it was known throughout the county; I was told that they were killed. It was published in our county paper that a negro was found killed on such a plantation.

*Question.* Killed by whom?

*Answer.* Killed by bodies of disguised men.

*Question.* It was so stated in your newspapers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the Macon Beacon.

*Question.* In every instance that you have mentioned?

*Answer.* No, sir, not always. I have been told that the editor of the Beacon, Mr. William Ferris, belongs to a Klan of that kind in the town of Macon. I do not know that to be a fact.

*Question.* You assert, then, that you never took the oath, and never actually joined the order?

*Answer.* I never did. I cannot tell you what the oath is. I know that the penalty attached to it is death. That is what I have been told by members.

*Question.* You attended their meetings three or four times?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have been in their camp three or four times.

*Question.* Did they speak freely before you?

*Answer.* They did so without hesitation. There were merely moves being made as in a lodge—merely an intention expressed that they would do thus and so.

*Question.* Were they aware of the fact that you were not a member?

*Answer.* Some of them were, as I have stated a while ago. Some of them objected to my knowing as much as I did without taking the oath; and about two months and a half ago they called a meeting on my case, as they said, to have me brought before them, and to have me join, which I did not do. I never joined them, and I never intend to. If a gentleman of his own free will and accord tells me anything, I listen to him, of course. I have a neighbor, a friend of mine, whom I have heard making use of these very signs, and signals, and passwords which I have given here. I have known him to do so in visiting at nights.

*Question.* Did you use the signals to pass the party on the night that negro was killed?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not. I was hailed, and I hallooed my name immediately. I was known to all those gentlemen. My position was known in the county by my neighbors. They passed along and made some passing jocular remarks, that they were out on a tramp, and all that, and wanted me to go along.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Were you invited to go into that camp by some of the members?

*Answer.* I was.

*Question.* Was the fact that you were known to be an earnest democrat of that county a reason, probably, why you were invited?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and that I was known to have been in the confederate army, I suppose.

*Question.* And that you came from Virginia, and were a southern man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* All these things taken together gave you the position you occupied?

*Answer.* Precisely.

*Question.* And when you accompanied them upon that raid, when whipping was done, that gave them still more confidence in you?

*Answer.* Certainly.

*Question.* Some of them knew at the time that you had not joined?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think it was the impression among others of them that you were a member?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them thought I was. The captain was allowed to swear in anybody outside of a lodge meeting. He could swear in a member in the presence of three members.

*Question.* Do you suppose it was the general impression that you had been sworn in?

*Answer.* I suppose so.

*Question.* And when they found out that you had not been, they called a meeting on your case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There is never any writing on a case of that kind. I know that this man Holbrooks made a list or roll, and it created a disturbance, and came near breaking up the organization.

*Question.* The rule was not to put anything in writing?

*Answer.* They never put anything in writing. If they wished to communicate, for instance, with a party in New York or San Francisco they would send a special messenger. Of course, they would not have any business in those localities; but I mean to say that that is the way the thing is done.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* How were the officers of your county chosen? By whom were they appointed?

*Answer.* They were appointed by Governor Alcorn, the last set that we have. I think he removed every one that Ames appointed. There may be still in office one or two justices that Ames appointed.

*Question.* All the former set of officers were appointed by Ames?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Ames removed all that Gillam appointed; and I think that Alcorn did the same in regard to those appointed by Ames.

*Question.* So that your county officers are appointees of either Ames or Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they are all believed to be republicans?

*Answer.* They are all believed to be republicans—they are looked upon as such.

*Question.* Your judge, your district attorney, and your other county officials are all regarded as republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is the case the same in the counties adjoining yours?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do not know any democrat at all holding a position in any of the neighboring counties.

*Question.* So that the whole judicial power of that portion of the State is in the hands of Governor Alcorn and his republican friends?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I know very little about polities. I never meddle with anything of that sort at all.

*Question.* And whatever inefficiency there is in the execution of the laws of the State falls upon the officials so appointed?

*Answer.* I should think so. I know very little about public men or public affairs. I am a plain farmer, and went to Mississippi for the purpose of carrying on that business.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Speaking of the inefficiency in the execution of the laws, do you mean to say that the judicial officers of a county can do everything in relation to the detection and punishment of crime?

*Answer.* I stated a while ago that they could not arrest any one in my county, because these men whose names I have given you are all our most prominent citizens.

*Question.* Then this inefficiency, this lack of punishment of crime, is not entirely due to the inefficiency of the officers?

*Answer.* It is not entirely due to that.

*Question.* Is there not considerable intimidation experienced by witnesses?

*Answer.* It is rather on account of fear, as I stated previously. I must say, though, that some of the officers are very inefficient men.

*Question.* What is the position in society of these men who are said to belong to this Klan or secret organization?

*Answer.* They are looked upon as the best citizens of the county. They are all property-holders, with the exception of one or two of the younger ones, who are minors.

*Question.* What is their general age?

*Answer.* They take no one under eighteen years old.

*Question.* About what are the ages of the men you have named?

*Answer.* Almost all of them are middle-aged men.

*Question.* You say that old men are often invited to attend the meetings of the order. Is it or is it not the fact that the politics of these men as democrats has something to do with their being invited?

*Answer.* Of course it has.

*Question.* Do you know whether or not they, as democrats, know of and encourage this organization?

*Answer.* They are said to be the helpers—the main-stay. The older men are invited in to assist in getting the others out of any trouble they might fall into.

*Question.* The question was asked you whether or not the republicans and freedmen are considerably in the majority in that county?

*Answer.* The freedmen are in a majority.

*Question.* Are they armed?

*Answer.* Some of them have guns and fowling-pieces—in fact, a great many of them. I think that almost all of my negroes at home—all the negroes who work for me, pretty much—have shot-guns or something of that kind.

*Question.* Has there been any disarming by the Klan?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have taken away pistols and things of that kind from them.

*Question.* Is there any system of disarming?

*Answer.* I do not know of any regular system. There was a little riot at Brooksville, last February a year ago, which came very near being a very serious thing. At that time there were some thirty or forty pistols taken away from them—single-barreled pistols.

*Question.* State whether the members of this secret organization have arms, and what sort of arms.

*Answer.* All have pistols.

*Question.* Any particular kind?
*Answer.* Generally five-shooters.
*Question.* New arms?
*Answer.* Certainly.
*Question.* Where do they get their supply?
*Answer.* They buy them at the stores.
*Question.* Do they buy them themselves?
*Answer.* Yes sir. There are plenty of arms to be had there; almost every store keeps pistols for sale.
*Question.* Are they armed with anything besides pistols?
*Answer.* No, sir. Generally, when this whipping goes on, the fellows, they say, carry clubs. I saw some of them have clubs or sticks.
*Question.* You have, of course, conversed somewhat with these men about the numbers of the organization in Mississippi and elsewhere. Can you say from your recollection anything on that point?
*Answer.* No, sir, I cannot. The organization extends through the northern and northeastern portion of our State. In the lower counties, along on the river, and in the Yazoo country, you seldom hear of them; the negroes are so largely in the excess of population that they never have anything of that kind down there. My county and Lowndes County are the only two counties having an excess of negro population where any such organization exists. In the county below me, Lauderdale, there are not so many negroes; and the case is the same in Kemper.
*Question.* Is it, or is it not the fact that the white people there are afraid of violence from the negroes? Are the white people under terror on account of the negroes?
*Answer.* Some of them are. As a mass I cannot say they are. They pretend not to be, and a great many of them say they are not.
*Question.* Do they not feel a superiority to the negroes?
*Answer.* Oh yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you think there is really any terror among them, or is it a matter of pretense?
*Answer.* Among the whites?
*Question.* Yes, sir.
*Answer.* I suppose some of them may fear the negro; some men are naturally timid anyway.
*Question.* Have the negroes ever made a raid upon the white people, or ridden around the country to intimidate them?
*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of anything of that kind. I never saw but one demonstration on the part of the negroes, and that was about March, of last year, at Brooksville, when one of their Leagues was interfered with.
*Question.* What was the nature of the interference?
*Answer.* I was not in town myself at the time; but I went that night to the village, and everything was in an uproar and excitement. One of the gentlemen whose names I have given you, Mr. Farmer, attempted to pass through the line on his horse, and a negro prevented him from doing so—stopped him. It is a little town—just a depot, and one street or road. Farmer wanted to pass and the negro caught hold of his horse by the bridle, and kept him back. Farmer then went and got off his horse, and attacked the negro. The negro rather got the upper hand of him, being stouter. He threw him on the ground. Then the negro got up and ran. Farmer pulled out a pistol and commenced shooting at him. That night Farmer was arrested and carried to Macon. It brought together quite a number of citizens from adjoining counties. Our lieutenant governor was present; he came up from Macon. General Forrest also came down from West Point and made a speech to pacify the negroes, and to pacify the whites also, which fortunately had that effect, and we did not have any outbreak.
*Question.* That was the only appearance of anything like an uprising among the negroes?
*Answer.* That is the only thing that I have seen in the way of a riot in our country. That was the occasion when the negroes were disarmed. They were disarmed by captain Franks, with his company from West Point. They came down, of course, as citizen-soldiers.
*Question.* What is the fact as to negro schools in that county?
*Answer.* Well, we are just about to introduce them now—free schools.
*Question.* You have had no free schools for negroes?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Have you had any free schools for anybody?
*Answer.* We have had no free schools at all until the last legislature passed a bill to that effect. There has been a white school opened at Brooksville, and there will be a negro school opened in my neighborhood in a very short time.
*Question.* Do you think these Ku-Klux organizations are general throughout the State?
*Answer.* There are plenty of them through the northeastern portion of the State—

Lowndes, Winston, Kemper, and Lauderdale. I do not know as to other counties because I have not been there. I simply know that these things do exist. I have met these men from various counties. In the fall of the year, after laying by crops, people visit about a good deal, because they do not have anything else to do. The whites do not work much in my country. It is a very rare thing to see a white man at work on a plantation.

*Question.* Is it a common thing, when members of these organizations meet on the road or at any other place, to make the sign of recognition?

*Answer.* If they want to converse upon this subject, I am told they recognize each other as members. But they do not generally make use of these signs very often, unless it is for the purpose of conversing in regard to the business of the society, from the simple fact that if they did the signs would become very common.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 17, 1871.

W. W. CHISOLM sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* I reside at De Kalb, in Kemper County, Mississippi.

*Question.* Is De Kalb the county town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the county seat.

*Question.* And that is on the east side of the State, on the Alabama line?

*Answer.* That is one of the line counties of the State, near the middle of the State, north and south.

*Question.* And on the Alabama line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How long have you lived there?

*Answer.* I have lived in the county about twenty years; eighteen or twenty years.

*Question.* Are you a native of that State?

*Answer.* I am not; I am a native of Georgia.

*Question.* You have resided in Mississippi for twenty years?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hold any official position before the war?

*Answer.* I did; I was elected to the office of magistrate there when I was very young, but twenty-one or twenty-two years old. And before the war I was also elected to the office of probate judge.

*Question.* For this county of Kemper?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Had you anything to do in the late war?

*Answer.* I was not in the war; I was in the militia a short time. I went out with what they called the sixty-day troops from my State, in 1863 or 1864, I believe.

*Question.* Do you now hold any office in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am sheriff of that county.

*Question.* How long have you held the office of sheriff?

*Answer.* I have not been sheriff more than about twelve months. I was disfranchised, because I had held the office of probate judge. I went out of office, of course, under the reconstruction acts, and my disabilities were not removed until the last Congress.

*Question.* Did you hold the office of probate judge during the war?

*Answer.* I did until 1862. I was again elected probate judge in 1863, and held the office at the close of the war; I was reëlected after the war, and held the office until I went out under the reconstruction acts.

*Question.* You were unable to hold the office of sheriff in consequence of having had some connection with the rebellion?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I took the office about a year ago; my brother was sheriff for two years, and I ran the office, but only as deputy; he could take the oath and I could not.

*Question.* The object of this committee is to ascertain the condition of communities in the late insurrectionary States; whether person and property are safe and secure there; whether the laws, especially the laws against crime, are enforced, and, if not, why they are not; and especially whether crimes are committed by bodies of disguised men going about at night. Will you state to us what is the condition of your county in the respects I have indicated?

*Answer.* Well, sir, in my county there have been a great many crimes committed; several persons have been killed there since the surrender, and there has been a great deal of lawlessness in the county.

*Question.* It is perhaps not necessary to go back to the time of the surrender and make any minute statements. What we want to get at is the condition of the county

now; and of course we must go back some little time to determine that. But we want to inquire more particularly about the condition of things within the last year or two.

*Answer.* Well, sir, probably within the last year or two it has been more quiet in my county than in most of the counties bordering on my county. In fact there is a very large element there who are in favor of having the law executed. There were a great many men arrested and carried off from that county just before the State went back into the Union.

*Question.* By the military authorities?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, by the military authorities. That gave the county considerable quiet for a long time; those who were opposing the law became considerably alarmed and very much demoralized.

*Question.* About what time was it that those men were arrested and taken away by the military?

*Answer.* It was in the spring of 1869.

*Question.* Two years ago last spring?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them were kept four or five months, and one of them I have never seen or heard of since.

*Question.* He never has come back?

*Answer.* He never has come back.

*Question.* Perhaps we may as well confine the inquiry to since the time when your State government went into operation.

*Answer.* Well, sir, since that time I do not think there have been any murders committed in the county; I do not recollect of any since the organization of the State government. There is a very large element of white men in the county, native southern men, who have belonged to the law and order class, as they call it, and who are very much opposed to anything like lawlessness, and have assisted those who tried to execute the law in that county.

*Question.* What time was it that the State government went into operation?

*Answer.* I believe it was twelve months ago last January—no, it was February. There has been some considerable rowing in that county since.

*Question.* You think that since that time no lives have been taken in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir, there has not been a life taken that I know of, but there was a man shot there twice—yes, there was a man killed there in a public fight; but everybody knew who did it, and the man who killed him is there to stand his trial.

*Question.* It was done in the day-time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, in the day-time; it was just a general fight. There has been a man shot there since then, and there have been some raids in the county since that time.

*Question.* Who was the man who was shot?

*Answer.* Captain Rush.

*Question.* What were the circumstances of that case?

*Answer.* He was a captain in the confederate army, and went through the war, and was a gallant soldier, as everybody said. Since the surrender he has belonged to what we know there as the radical party. He was shot, I believe it was last November or December—no, it was this year; it was in March last that he was shot; while going to his house from the court-house somebody shot him from behind the church.

*Question.* In the night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, in the night.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Do you mean this last March, or March a year ago?

*Answer.* This last March; I think that was the month; it has been since January, I know.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Was he shot more than once?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he was shot twice; shot with a double-barreled gun. He was about ten steps from his gate when the first gun was fired at him. He then made a bulge for his gate, and they fired at him again, just as he got to his gate. It was the first shot that hurt him the worst; when they fired at him the second time some of the shot went into the house, and came very near killing his wife.

*Question.* Those two shots were both fired on the same occasion?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Does anybody know whether there was a band of men there?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was the first man that got to Rush's after he was shot; I was at the court-house when I heard the shot. We were trying to secure a person at the time Captain Rush left the court-house. I had seen a great deal of maneuvering going on among men whom I regarded as very bad men in the community. Just at dark I told Captain Rush that I thought he had better look out, that I thought there was going to be another raid in our county, that I saw some maneuvering going on there that I did not like. I told him that I thought we had better go to the jail and do all we could, and get back home before dark.

*Question.* Who was the man in jail?

*Answer.* He was a man by the name of Hunger, a colored man. He had been put in there for breaking into a house.

*Question.* He was in the jail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he had got nearly out two or three times. He seemed to be a very powerful man. Captain Rush said to me just as he left, "Judge, you stay here until the workman has done all he can do to the jail, and I will go home, for I do not feel very well." His house was perhaps seventy-five yards from the jail.

*Question.* Was he an office-holder?

*Answer.* He was deputy sheriff under me.

*Question.* He had the care of the jail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he looked after the jail more than I did, and did more work about the court-house than I did.

*Question.* Was the court then in session?

*Answer.* No, sir; but it was to be in session a week after that.

*Question.* You spoke of a great many people being about there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were citizens of the town, who, having heard of this negro's ability to get out of jail, and how many locks he had broken, were over there, looking at it, until we heard the first gun fired. When we heard the gun fired in the direction of Rush's house, I jumped up and said, "Rush is killed." Then another gun was fired, and I ran out on the steps in the direction of his house. His wife hallooed about that time, and I ran on down to his house.

*Question.* You said you had discovered some suspicious movements there that day?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I had informed him and three others there that evening, that there was something wrong going on there; that the men who had concocted these schemes there before were concocting them again, and I requested three different men to have their guns prepared for a night's fight, if it was necessary to make it.

*Question.* What were these suspicious movements which you saw?

*Answer.* They were mainly in seeing a number of men collected in the back of the store of Mr. Gully, a gentleman there, whom I think every man in the county, irrespective of party, regards as a man who does not care anything about having the law executed.

*Question.* Who were these men collected there; men belonging in the place or from abroad?

*Answer.* There were several men from out in the country; two of them brothers of this man, and several other suspicious characters; and there was one other man in town that day I did not know at all; I tried to find out who he was, but never did.

*Question.* Why did you suspect them of hostility to Captain Rush?

*Answer.* I suspected them of hostility to any man who they thought was opposed to lawlessness, and to men rioting and doing things illegal and wrong in the county; more especially to Rush, because of course he and they were not friendly, as they are not friendly to any man who does not agree with them.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Agree with them in what?

*Answer.* In politics.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You say Captain Rush was a republican

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* These other men are not republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir, they are not republicans.

*Question.* How badly was Rush hurt by that shot?

*Answer.* He was very badly hurt; the middle finger of his right hand was shot off, and he was shot through the groin and through the upper part of the abdomen, but the shot did not go to the hollow. Four shot struck him, but his pocket-book and knife turned the shot, and I think saved his life. His right hand was in his pocket when he was shot.

*Question.* That was in last March?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have there been, during the last year, any bodies of disguised men going about your county?

*Answer.* I have not seen any; I only can state what I have heard.

*Question.* State any information that you have which you consider reliable?

*Answer.* Several men have told me that they have seen men in disguise who were riding about the county.

*Question.* What have you heard of their doing?

*Answer.* Well, they attempted to whip a man on Colonel Powers's place, two or three months ago.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* In the northwest portion of the county. The band was fired into by the

negroes on the place, and they left; one of their men was supposed to be killed; I do not know anything about that, but that was the supposition.

*Question.* If he was killed or wounded he was carried off?

*Answer.* He was carried off to a neighbor's house. I will tell it just as I got it. The old man whose house he was carried to told me that he was carried there and buried the next morning very early.

*Question.* The man told you so?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; old man Slaughter told me so.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What is Slaughter's given name?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Did he know who the man was that was carried to his house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he told me his name; I think it was Evans, but I will not be positive; he was a brother to one man I had arrested before that.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Arrested for what?

*Answer.* For killing a negro.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Was this a body of men who were disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were disguised, so parties told me that saw them; of course, I never saw them.

*Question.* How much of a party was there of them?

*Answer.* I think only about ten of them.

*Question.* You say this man who was killed was a brother of a man whom you had arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I had arrested him for killing a colored man.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* That was before the State went back into the Union.

*Question.* About how long ago?

*Answer.* It has been perhaps two years ago; General Ames was in command of the department at the time.

*Question.* Was that colored man killed by a body of disguised men?

*Answer.* Well, yes, sir; that was the report I got, but I never saw them, of course; and they recognized among these men a brother of this man Evans.

*Question.* And you had some men arrested for that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I had some men arrested upon that charge; but I will state, however, that those men were released; they were carried down to military headquarters, and I understood they were released and went back home; I do not know anything about that, but I understood so.

*Question.* Have you heard of other operations of these disguised men in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not heard of any operations of disguised men; there has been a large crowd of men from Alabama, who came over to my town, but they were not disguised.

*Question.* Tell us the story about that.

*Answer.* Well, the third night of November last—I believe it was the third night—I will tell my prognostication of their coming. I told several men in town that evening that there was some deep scheme being laid for the perpetration of some diabolical outrage in the county again. Among the men whom I told this was this man Captain Rush; another was Thomas Hampton, who was an old citizen of the county, and a democrat; another was Mr. Rosenbaum, another old citizen of the county, and a democrat.

*Question.* What had you seen to make you think so?

*Answer.* I had seen a meeting of this crowd of men in secret conclave; I did not see as much as others reported to me whom I had confidence in.

*Question.* These were men in your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was reported to me that these men had been meeting for a week and a half, every day, in secret, in town, and had locked themselves up; they never came about the court-house. One of them was never known to come to town unless he went to the court-house, except when he wanted nobody to see him. He was always very friendly to me when he met me. This man had not been about the court-house, and I told Rush, the only republican, and Hampton and Rosenbaum and some one else, the evening before they came there, that there was some terrible outrage to be committed in the county, and that every one of them might look out; that I did not know who it was to be, but I supposed some fellow's head was to be taken off. I remarked that I hoped it would turn out to be nothing, as a great many of their other plans did. I was very busy during the evening of that day, and I went home late that evening.

*Question.* Was your office in the court-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That night I was not well at all; I am frequently bothered with asthma, and that night I was bothered very badly with it, and did not get to sleep until about 3 o'clock, I suppose.

*Question.* How far do you live from the court-house?

*Answer.* About three quarters of a mile. About three I was relieved and went to sleep, and slept very soundly. About half an hour before sun, the next morning, a colored boy came in and waked me up. He had been a slave, but was not much more of a colored boy in appearance than I am. He had been driving for me since the surrender. He came into my room at that time and waked me, and told me that old Aunt Charlotte, who lived over on the hill about fifty yards from where I lived, had told him that there was a body of armed men between my house and the town, in the bushes there, and that they had been there ever since two hours before day.

*Question.* Between your house and the court-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. When the boy told me that, I said to him that I supposed they were some men who had been drinking, and were down there making a noise, and had alarmed old Aunt Charlotte. After getting up and looking to see what time of day it was, I turned to go to bed again. The colored boy started out, and when he got to the door he said, "Judge, the old woman thinks she is positive about those men, and she is very much alarmed; had you not better see something about it?" Said I, "Hezzy, you go and see who they are; if they are men who are there, and you know nothing about them, and they are armed, come back and we will go after the damned rascals." I think that is just about the language I used. I laid down and went to sleep again, until about an hour after sun, when my little boy came in and woke me up and told me that my breakfast had been waiting a good while for me. I got up and ate my breakfast, and then started for town, still not thinking that these men were there. As I went out of the gate, going out in the direction of DeKalb, I met this boy and another boy from Neshoba county, whom I had arrested.

*Question.* You had arrested the boy?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I had arrested him, but had released him to stay at my house until the Neshoba court met. I met them at the gate, and I saw that this boy himself was very much excited. He said, "Judge, there are twenty-five or thirty men over there after you." Said I, "What in the devil are they after me for?" He said, "I do not know what they are after you for." I said, "Where are they?" Said he, "They are gone on in the direction of DeKalb." Said I, "Hezzy, you go by and tell Joe and Tom and April to get their guns and come up to town just quick as they can."

*Question.* Who were they?

*Answer.* They were colored men living on my place. I went back into the house and got my gun, and then I went to the court-house. I did not go the regular way, however, but I went another way. When I got into town the people were very much excited. In fact, before I got there I heard that several notes had been sent to my house; they went by the big road, and of course I did not get them.

*Question.* Notes sent to you to inform you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I got to town and asked the people what it meant; everybody said they knew nothing about what it meant.

*Question.* What had they seen?

*Answer.* They had seen these men; they had been in town, came through there about an hour before day, some of them said, going in the direction of my house; they had no idea where they were going, and thought it was a body of soldiers.

*Question.* Were they on horseback?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, all on horseback. They said that as they came back they halted at John W. Gully's grocery and got a gallon of whisky, and then left town. The first boy they seized—the boy I had there from Neshoba County—said that they arrested him about daylight. He was going back to my house, and they arrested him on the far end of the line of the town.

*Question.* As he was going to your house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they asked him what his name was and where he was going. He told them he was going to the house of a man by the name of Judge Chisolm. They asked if I was not the sheriff of the county. He said he did not know anything about that, that he had never been in De Kalb until three days before that; that a man had come up to Colonel Power's place, brought him down there and put him in jail, and that a man called Judge Chisolm came there and talked to him, and then took him out of the jail and told him to stay at his house until the court was held at the city of Philadelphia; that he would tell him when that was and send him up there. They asked him if I did not come that way in coming to De Kalb; he told them I did. He was asked if I could get to De Kalb by going another way, and he said not that he knew of. They asked him what time Judge Chisolm usually went to De Kalb, and the boy said that generally about sun-up, sometimes before. One of the crowd then struck him with a stick and said, "God damn you, you are playing off on us; you know he goes to town sometimes by this trail-way." He appealed to them and said he had not

been there but three days, and knew nothing about going to De Kalb by any other road. They proposed to hang him to make him tell, but a man they called the captain, he said, interfered and told them this man might be telling a correct tale, that he might have just come there and might know nothing about what was there at all. When this other boy went out from my house to see who they were——

*Question.* The one you sent out?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were in the bushes, and he said that when he got within twenty steps of them, while he was not on the lookout for them, and before he saw or knew anything about them, they had up their guns and pointed in his direction, and told him to come to them; and, of course, he went. They asked him his name, and he told them. The first question, after they asked his name, was where I was, and he said I was sick. They asked him if he did not live with me, and he said he did. They then said, "How is it he is sick this morning, when he was not sick last evening?" The boy said he knew I was not sick the evening before, but he had just left me in bed sick. They wanted to know if I was not going to De Kalb; he said he did not know anything about that, that he only knew I told him I was sick, and that he did not suppose I was going to De Kalb that day. They were along the road that leads to my house, about fifty yards along on the side of the fence. The men took him down to the other corner, to a crowd of men, and called a man that they called captain—no other name—who was in the bushes, and said to him, "Here is a boy that lives with this fellow, the sheriff; he says he is sick." The captain and this lieutenant (the boy said they called him lieutenant, he did not know his name) went off and talked a few minutes together. He heard one of them say, "What will we do now?" The lieutenant said to the captain, "We can do nothing without going to the house;" and the lieutenant then said, "Well, I am not going to the house." The captain said, "Neither am I, by God." They then called their men up, sat these boys down on a log, and ordered them not to tell one word that had been said to them or they would kill them; one of them took out a watch and told them the time of day, and told them to remain there one hour as near as they could guess; said that they were going down to Saluda Creek, below town, and were going to stay there until Saturday night, when they would come back to town. That is what they said to the boys.

*Question.* How far is Saluda Creek from town?

*Answer.* It is one mile from town.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What day of the week was this?

*Answer.* That was on the 4th day of November, I think on Friday.

*Question.* They were to remain there until Saturday night?

*Answer.* They told the boys they were going to remain there all the next day until night; they did not do it, though.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* And then they were coming back again?

*Answer.* They said they were coming back to town again. I got up a crowd of fifteen men, white and colored, and followed them to the Alabama line, to Paineville, in Sumter County.

*Question.* Was that over the line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I followed them over the line and waked up a groceryman, as I supposed they would stop there to get a drink. He told me that a number of men had been through there, but that none of them stopped there only long enough to get whisky.

*Question.* When did you get to Paineville?

*Answer.* About an hour before day, Sunday morning.

*Question.* How far was that from De Kalb?

*Answer.* About thirty miles.

*Question.* You did not overtake the party?

*Answer.* I did not see one of them. I stopped where they got dinner, and saw where they had killed a great many chickens and dogs, and one thing and another, in the road.

*Question.* That party of men you supposed were from Alabama?

*Answer.* I am satisfied they were from Alabama, in my own mind.

*Question.* They were not disguised?

*Answer.* No, sir; none of them had on any disguise at all. They were all armed; the people generally thought the most of them had double-barreled guns, but there might have been other kind of guns. They had guns and had pistols on them.

*Question.* They came openly there?

*Answer.* They came through in the night, but went back there in the day-time.

*Question.* Rode back through the town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, rode back through the town in the day-time. They organized at Gainesville, in my county, so a gentleman there told me. He said that a crowd of men left there about 8 o'clock in the evening, and that they had been in the swamp all the day before.

*Question.* Did you learn anything about their purpose?

*Answer.* Nothing, save what I have told you as to their purpose—not a thing. I will say what I told to the people in town when I went among them that morning. There was a good big crowd around, of course. I told them these men had come there to assassinate me; that they had never seen me, knew nothing about me, but that they had come there to murder me, and had been brought there by John W. Gully and his crowd to get me out of the way. I then said to the crowd: "I am a man who wants to follow the law, but I appeal to you and to all men who regard me as a gentleman to do this one thing, when I am murdered to kill Gully and his whole crowd."

*Question.* Gully lives in De Kalb?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Said I, "These men know nothing about me; they are simply hired to come here and assassinate me."

*Question.* Did you learn whether this crowd of men, when in town, had any communication with anybody there?

*Answer.* They were into Gully's grocery; I do not know of any communication they had with anybody.

*Question.* They stopped at Gully's grocery?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What communication they had with him you do not know?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about it at all. I will say, however, that Gully does not keep his grocery himself, and I do not know that he was in his grocery at the time. He had been out in the direction these men came from for three or four days. To tell you the truth, a man who belongs to some of their klans had told me to look out that evening; that is one feature of the business. I have been there since I was sixteen years old, and a great many men who do not agree with me tell me a great many things.

*Question.* Who do not agree with you in politics?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have nothing to do with politics, only I exercise the right of a free man to do what I think is right. I have not voted since the surrender, but I exercise my privilege of saying what I think is best for us; outside of that I have nothing to do with politics.

*Question.* Are you understood there to be a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am regarded as a leader of the radical party; that is what they call me, while I do not think I am a radical at all. I may be, for men have different notions as to what constitutes a radical.

*Question.* And from some of your personal friends of the opposite party you had some warning?

*Answer.* I have a great many personal friends in the county, who have known me always, and they gave me this notice.

*Question.* So far as you know, these men who came from Alabama were strangers to you?

*Answer.* They were. I have no idea I would know one of them if I were to see him now.

*Question.* Had you anything to do with these men in Alabama?

*Answer.* Not a thing in the world. I am not at all afraid of the same crowd coming back after me. I have been informed since then from the same source, that these men say they were entirely misled as to the way things were in my county; that they thought the white men were all opposed to me, but when they got there they found more white men indorsing me than the man who brought them there, and that they did not propose to interfere with me.

*Question.* Do you know anything about any organization in your county of what is commonly called Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I only know from others; I cannot speak from my own personal knowledge at all. I only know from others, and I have even learned something about it since I have come here. One of the prominent men belonging to the opposite party told me the evening before I left home that there was an organization there, but he told me not to use his name. I asked the question directly. Said I to him, calling him by name, "I do not ask you politically nor in any other evasive manner, but I ask you to tell me as an honest American citizen, if there is not an organization here in this county for the purpose of controlling elections and intimidating the colored vote and the white vote, too." He told me to come to his office after supper, and he would see me then. I went to his office after supper, and he told me there was such an organization, but I am not going to give his name; I do not tell that as testimony; I only tell it as he gave it to me. At the proper time he may be before the committee, if they go down to that State. He is a leading democrat in my county, and from the position he occupies he ought to be a leader of the democratic party in the county.

*Question.* He said there was such an organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I asked him what was its object. Said he, "It is to defeat the radical party." That is just his answer.

*Question.* Which is the largest, the white population or the colored population, in your county?

*Answer.* It is about the same.

*Question.* How is it about the voters; which has the largest number, the whites or the colored?

*Answer.* The voters are about the same; the registered vote stands about the same with regard to color.

*Question.* How did the vote stand in the election; which party has the majority?

*Answer.* Well, sir, we carried the county by two hundred and seventy-five, I believe, on the last vote.

*Question.* A republican majority of two hundred and seventy-five?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The bulk of the white men vote on the democratic side?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And all, or nearly all, of the colored people vote the republican ticket?

*Answer.* No, sir; there are a great many colored men who vote the democratic ticket. I know several of them who canvassed the county for the democratic ticket. Of course, they carried no colored votes with them, because after making their speeches they would take the crowd out and tell them they were hired, and that of course broke their influence with the colored vote.

*Question.* Colored men made speeches on the democratic side?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there were more speeches made in my county on the democratic side than there was on the republican side, so far as the colored men were concerned.

*Question.* They did not inspire the colored people with any great confidence in them?

*Answer.* No, sir; they would tell them, after they got them out, that they were hired.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You mean that the colored speakers would tell them that privately?

*Answer.* That is what the colored people told me. I know they carried very few of them.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* The great bulk of the colored voters vote the republican ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In my county there are probably fifteen hundred colored voters, and I do not suppose that, making a very liberal allowance, there were fifty colored men in the county who did not vote the republican ticket, or have not done it heretofore, and I reckon they will do it again. I want them to vote just as they please, let it be republican or democratic.

*Question.* You have taken a very active part against all these demonstrations of lawlessness?

*Answer.* Well, yes, sir, I have, to the very best of what I thought was right, and for the good of the people generally.

*Question.* You have been very active in your office of sheriff, in trying to put down all lawlessness?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I was just as active before I was appointed. I held no office for a long time on account of my disabilities, and perhaps I took a greater part in politics then than now; that is, in trying to get the State back, and to get us all reconciled as we once were under the old Government.

*Question.* In reference to this organization in your county, do you understand that it is something that has been in existence for some time, or is it something new?

*Answer.* My understanding is, and that is the reason why I asked the question of this gentleman, that it was rather a new thing, that it was on a rather different scale perhaps from the organizations of men who had been committing depredations there.

*Question.* Is there any state of alarm, growing out of these acts, among the colored people?

*Answer.* There is, and not only among the colored people; there is a great deal of fear with the white people.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* White republicans or white democrats?

*Answer.* White republicans. There has not been any democrats troubled, in my county or in the State, that I know of.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Against whom are these acts of lawlessness directed?

*Answer.* Well, sir, they are generally directed against the men who control the opposite party to the democrats, particularly when they have been in my county, and, so far as my observation goes, when they have been in my State; they have been so in Lauderdale county, and in other counties adjoining mine.

*Question.* What do you know about the state of things in the counties around your county?

*Answer.* Well, sir, in Winston County these men control and govern the vote, just

exactly as those men who ride about at night want them to; there is no organization there only the democratic party, and they are generally favorable to it.

*Question.* What is the county north of you?

*Answer.* Winston County and Noxubee County are both north of mine; they both join my county.

*Question.* We have had a gentlemen here, Mr. Taliaferro; does he live in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* He did live there, but I do not know where he lives now; he had a cousin living in my county.

*Question.* What do you know about the state of things in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* I know very little; I hear of a great many men being killed over there, but I do not know that it is correct.

*Question.* By whom are they killed?

*Answer.* By men in disguise, in the night.

*Question.* You have heard of these transactions in Noxubee, and of many men being killed there?

*Answer* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of others being whipped there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that so in Winston County?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; the thing goes just as they want it in Winston; there is very little opposition to them in Winston County, they carry everything before them.

*Question.* You spoke of Lauderdale County; which way is that from you?

*Answer.* It is south of me, and adjoining my county.

*Question.* Is the same thing common in that county?

*Answer.* I was in Meridian about three weeks ago, and staid there a day. I talked with some of the most prominent men in Meridian; a great many of them came to the tavern when they heard I was there, and we had a good long talk that night. The general impression was that the republican party, or as it is termed down there, the radical party, would have no ticket in that county at all.

*Question.* For what reason?

*Answer.* They thought perhaps it would cause another riot, or something of that sort, if they had one. I saw one of the representatives from that county, Mr. Moore, while I was in Jackson; he told me he never expected to go back to that county any more; that he had been advised if he went back there he would be killed.

*Question.* That county heretofore has given a republican majority?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it went about five hundred republican at the last election.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Moore is the colored man who was in trouble there about that riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* A member of the legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a member of the legislature.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* It was in Jackson that you saw him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has never been back to Meridian since he got out of there.

*Question.* Since the time of the riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He walked from Meridian to Jackson; he told me that he was not going back there. I asked him what was he going to do with his property there, and he said he reckoned he would sell it, but he did not know; he had not concluded at that time what he would do with it. I asked him about that because a gentlemen who wanted to buy some property down there told me to ask him. I asked him more on that account than anything else. He said he had not determined whether he would sell it or not, but he supposed he would, for he could never go back there to live.

*Question.* Have there been attempts to discover who it was that fired at this Captain Rush?

*Answer.* There has been no attempt, except what I have made myself, and so far as I am concerned I have wholly failed.

*Question.* You have not been able to discover who did it?

*Answer.* I tracked two men from the church out in the direction of some young men's houses, who lived out there; but there was nothing sufficient for me to have them arrested on, because the tracks got into the plantation, and I could not really follow them.

*Question.* In relation to bringing persons to punishment who commit this kind of offenses, do you think that fear of them has any effect in preventing their being discovered and punished? Are the people afraid to testify against them?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know anything about that, only what the men tell me that they know things they would not tell even to me.

*Question.* Why would they not tell you?

*Answer.* They said that they were afraid; that they had to live there, they were poor, and could not afford to have this class of men opposed to them—that is, mad with them.

*Question.* Do you believe it is true that they are afraid?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have no reason to believe otherwise, because I know there is enough there to make a man very much alarmed about his safety, if he does not coincide with some persons there. I will say, however, that I do not think the body of men in my county are disposed to be lawless at all. I think in my county a large majority of them are opposed to any lawlessness. But the great trouble seems to be this with them: they cannot recognize the fact that the only way to put down lawlessness is to prosecute those who commit the offenses. They seem to rather choose to take the chances and go along and have nothing to do with it at all, while, in fact, I know that they do not sympathize with it.

*Question.* Why do you suppose it is that so large a body, whom you think are really opposed to it, will not do anything about it?

*Answer.* Well, sir, they are men who have nothing to do with politics, save to vote; they are generally farmers, or merchants, who attend to their daily avocations. There is a terrible opposition when a man takes hold of anything that is opposed to any of these outrages that are committed, and a man's property, and perhaps his life, may be in danger.

*Question.* They do not want to incur the displeasure of these lawless men?

*Answer.* They felt very diffident about taking hold of these things. They tell me sometimes, "You are in it; they will kill you anyhow before they quit you, and you must go through with it; but we do not want to get ourselves into any trouble; while we sympathize with you, and believe really what you believe is right, and feel as you feel about these violations of the law, we do not want to commit ourselves in any way."

*Question.* They do not want to incur the displeasure of those men?

*Answer.* No, sir; they say, "You know what you have suffered and endured, you and your friends; and we would have to undergo the same thing, perhaps, and not be as successful as you have been." I will say for the people of my county that they all to a man treat me just as clever as I want anybody in the world to treat me; I am not afraid to go to their houses; I am treated gentlemanly and kindly by them, and no man would be permitted to come into their houses, if they could prevent it, and arrest me, or treat me wrongfully.

*Question.* They are personally friendly to you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and would not want to see anything done to me that was wrong.

*Question.* Still they do not want to give you any aid?

*Answer.* They say that they feel they would not be doing their families justice if they did so. I will say further, however, that I never have summoned anybody but democrats to help me arrest anybody. I summoned some democrats to help me arrest a man out there, who had shot a deputy sheriff of mine, and they went very cheerfully with me; but there was a clamor raised against them, by this very same crowd of men, and the next day we came very near having a general riot in our town on account of it.

*Question.* When was it that this deputy sheriff was shot?

*Answer.* Last December.

*Question.* What was he trying to do?

*Answer.* He was trying to arrest a man in my county, who had committed a violation of the law, a Mr. Williams. He was not a Ku-Klux at all; it was not a Ku-Klux outrage, or anything of that sort.

*Question.* Was there opposition made to his arrest?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he refused to be arrested.

*Question.* And you raised a posse to arrest him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; when my deputy came back slightly wounded, I raised a posse and went after him. I never got him, and I have not heard of him since.

*Question.* You say that came near producing a riot?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; when we got back home it was very late at night. The men who went with me, except one, were all democrats, young men of the first standing in my town. News was brought to them even before they got to town, that Mr. Gully, Dr. Fox, and other men in town, had said that they hoped they would get their damned heads shot off for going with such a man as me, a damned radical, to arrest a gentleman.

*Question.* What had that gentleman done?

*Answer.* He had insulted a lady of our town.

*Question.* You say this came near producing a riot there?

*Answer.* It did. The next day, about 12 o'clock, a boy came running to my house and said that I had better go down in town, that there was going to be a general fight. When I got there I found four or five young men, who went with me, there with their

double-barreled guns, and other men who were in sympathy with them. In fact, they were of the first families of the town, these young men were. I asked them what was the matter. They said they did not intend to let any man say they were a God damned set of low-down scoundrels for going to do what they conceived to be their duty, to execute the law.

*Question.* Who was it that was making this fuss with them?

*Answer.* Gully and Dr. Fox were the leaders of the crowd. I told them that we must have quiet and peace there, but that if anybody had insulted them and had done anything wrong to them, said I, "I will fight notwithstanding I am sheriff; I am not sheriff enough to have you run over at all." When Dr. Fox saw that I was in town, and a big crowd coming around me—a man brought me a double-barreled shot gun—Fox put his head out of the den they stayed in and said, "It is a damned infernal lie, none of us said anything about you, or any of those men who went with you yesterday; and these boys are getting a stir up in this town for nothing." Said I, "Fox, while I have my own opinion as to what you said, come out here and declare that publicly and all will be right." He came out and said, "The man who said I said anything about you, or the men who went with you yesterday, tells a damned infernal lie." Said I, "That is satisfactory, boys; it does not make any difference as to what anybody may tell you now, they may go to him now." And then Gully wrote a note stating that he had not said anything about it.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Is Gully the man who keeps the grocery store?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. Pool:

*Question.* Was Mr. Rush shot at because of what was going on at the jail, in your judgment?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* It had no connection with it?

*Answer.* No, sir, it had nothing to do with that; at least I do not think it had, of course I only speak from my belief about it.

*Question.* You spoke of Dr. Fox putting his head out of what you called the den; what do you mean by "den?"

*Answer.* It is the place where these men generally congregate, the back room of this man Gully's store.

*Question.* You say you have heard of disguised men riding about, showing themselves at night in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I have heard of them; I have never seen them.

*Question.* Have you heard of them repeatedly?

*Answer.* I have not heard a great deal of talk about it, as I stated in the beginning of my examination, since the State was received back into the Union.

*Question.* Have any colored men been whipped in that county by disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a great many of them have come to me and said they were whipped by disguised men.

*Question.* What did they tell you about it?

*Answer.* They said the men came to their houses, took them out and whipped them.

*Question.* At night?

*Answer.* At night.

*Question.* How many such cases do you suppose have occurred in the county within the last two years?

*Answer.* Only about three or four cases of whipping in my county; four, I think, to my recollection.

*Question.* What sort of colored men did they whip; were they leaders among the colored people?

*Answer.* All except one of them were regarded as very good colored men; one of them was said to be a rascal.

*Question.* Were they men who took much part in politics?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; one of them was a very active man, the first they whipped; they whipped him very severely; his name was Henry Greyer.

*Question.* Did they tell him what they whipped him for?

*Answer.* Because he went around with the God damned radicals; they said that, God damn him, they would let him know they controlled that country, and not his sort. That is what he told me; now of course I did not hear the conversation.

*Question.* Was anything said to the other colored men who were whipped?

*Answer.* Only one other colored man told me that they said anything to him on the ground of politics. While they were whipping him, they asked him what the radicals had ever done for him, how much money they had ever given him, or how much meat and bread they had ever given him, and why it was that he was damned fool enough to be controlled by the radical party.

*Question.* Have any white men been whipped in that county?

*Answer.* One, but not within two years; that was more than two years ago.
*Question.* Who was he?
*Answer.* Thomas W. Adams.
*Question.* Was he whipped by men in disguise?
*Answer.* My understanding was that they were in disguise.
*Question.* What did they whip him for?
*Answer.* I am not able to answer the question as to what they whipped him for.
*Question.* Did you learn what they said to him when they did whip him?
*Answer.* I think his tale is that they told him he was clerk of that damned, infernal nigger convention, and that they thought they would give him a little whipping to make him be like a nigger, in fact, as he wanted to go with them, that they would learn him how to take a lash like a nigger.
*Question.* He was clerk of a negro convention?
*Answer.* He was deputy clerk, or something of that sort, of the constitutional convention that we had there. I suppose that was what they alluded to.
*Question.* You mean the convention that framed the constitution?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* He was clerk of that convention?
*Answer.* I believe he was deputy clerk; possibly it might have been clerk.
*Question.* That was a regular convention?
*Answer.* It was the regular convention that framed the constitution under which the State now is.
*Question.* Was it soon after he returned home from the convention?
*Answer.* It was some time after he came home; it was after the first vote was taken on the constitution, and the constitution defeated.
*Question.* Where is he now?
*Answer.* Living in the county, at the same place.
*Question.* Did he ever find out who whipped him?
*Answer.* I do not know that he ever found out who whipped him. He had an idea of who they were, and reported some young men to the military, and they have left the country, and have not been back there since.
*Question.* What standing had those young men?
*Answer.* They were men of ordinary standing in the community. One of them was a doctor's son, and another was the son of a gentleman once in very good circumstances there.
*Question.* Is there less of that riding around in disguise and whipping people in your county than in other counties?
*Answer.* I think so.
*Question.* To what do you attribute that?
*Answer.* I think it is to the terrible opposition that my people have against anything of the sort, democrats and all. Everybody knows that so far as my town is concerned, save these four men—this man Gully, his son, his grocery-keeper, and another gentleman there—all the people in my town are opposed to anything of that sort.
*Question.* Do you think those men who ride in disguise and do these whippings come from an adjoining county?
*Answer.* No, sir; I think the most of the whippings that was done was done by men in the county. I think that the gang or crowd of them was greatly broken, but I think they are reorganizing now. That is the understanding with me.
*Question.* Broken up by your exertions?
*Answer.* Broken up by the military; I reported them.
*Question.* Did the military go down there and interfere with them in your county?
*Answer.* They captured lots of them; I went with them myself and pointed them out
*Question.* You think that stopped them?
*Answer.* I think so; they have not done a great deal since.
*Question.* Previous to that time they were going about whipping?
*Answer.* They were terrible.
*Question.* What did they do previous to that time?
*Answer.* They killed about six men, and regularly every week they whipped one or two in the county somewhere.
*Question.* White men?
*Answer.* No, sir, they never killed a white man in that county.
*Question.* They killed negroes?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And whipped negroes?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* One or two a week?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* When was that?
*Answer.* Over two years ago, when the military had control.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* The military went in there and got some of them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; since that they have been tolerably quiet, except the men from Alabama, and at Colonel Powers's plantation.

*Question.* Have you an idea that these men have stopped this on that account?

*Answer.* I have talked to them since they were released. They said that some men had told them a great many things, but did not do them much good when they were in the clutches of the military, but let them suffer there; and they were now in favor of letting the thing go, and allowing the negroes or anybody to control that wanted to; that they did not want to get themselves into trouble again.

*Question.* They said that men had promised to defend them, and had not done it?

*Answer.* They did not say that. They said that men had told them a great many things that they had failed to comply with when they were arrested; that the leaders and the men who had got them into it were at home all the time, had kept their own necks out of the halter, while they suffered.

*Question.* Did they name who those leaders were?

*Answer.* Some of them told me some of the names.

*Question.* What names did they give?

*Answer.* Mr. Gully was one.

*Question.* He was one that had got them into it?

*Answer.* That he advised them to break up this negro party.

*Question.* What other man did they name?

*Answer.* They said that Dr. Fox spoke rather favorably of it.

*Question.* Did they mention any others?

*Answer.* Yes; they named others.

*Question.* Were those they named all democrats?

*Answer.* They were all democrats.

*Question.* Were they leading democrats in the county?

*Answer.* Well, they think they are; I do not know whether they are or not.

*Question.* Have you ever known a democrat in the county to be attacked by these disguised men?

*Answer.* I have never known a democrat to be attacked by them anywhere in the world, or interfered with, except in broad open day. There was a very prominent democrat in my town who was killed, but he was killed in open day.

*Question.* Not by disguised men?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You have never known one interfered with in your county by these disguised men?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Or in any other county?

*Answer.* I have never heard of any.

*Question.* Do those men fear any attack from disguised men?

*Answer.* I do not think they do; I suppose they think they are like on a bed of flowers. I do not know whether these men now know whether they are republicans or democrats, so far as that is concerned. I have been very much impressed with the idea that the regular Ku-Klux are broken up in my county.

*Question.* Broken up by the military?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was my idea, until this gentleman said what he did to me. Well, since I came here this man Taliaferro told me that it was a different organization going on in my county now; that it was an organization all over the North, as well as the South. I do not know that he knew anything about it.

*Question.* You mean they were reorganizing?

*Answer.* No, sir; he said this organization now was not upon the same plan that the Ku-Klux were; that it was a political organization; that is what he told me.

*Question.* Did he give you the name of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he said that it was called "Seventy-Six." I asked him who was the head-center of it, and he said that he thought that Frank Blair was; I know nothing about it myself; I am only telling you what Taliaferro told me since I have come here. And I felt very much relieved by what he told me. I think may be this organization going on there is such an organization; I care nothing about an organization if it is not lawless; let them organize and elect their men if they can.

*Question.* He said the "Seventy-Six" organization was not for the purpose of violence at all?

*Answer.* That is what he told me; that it was not for anything except to have the democratic party thoroughly organized to carry the elections. I told him that was all right enough.

*Question.* He said it was entirely different from the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* He said it was, and I am disposed to think that may be that is what is going on there now, if he is correct.

*Question.* That may be what that man referred to when you went into his office.

*Answer.* It may be.

*Question.* And you feel relieved that it is such an organization?

*Answer.* I do, because I would rather contend against anything else than the Ku-Klux, as they come at your house when you are not expecting them. I am perfectly willing for them to organize for political purposes; if they will say they are not going to interfere with anybody unlawfully or wrongfully, I care nothing about the organization, while I may have my opinions as to political organizations.

*Question.* Have any of the negroes in your county who vote the democratic ticket been disturbed by these bands of disguised men?

*Answer.* Not a single one that I know of.

*Question.* Is there a general feeling, amounting to an understanding, on the part of all classes of citizens, that if a republican should change his politics he will be safe?

*Answer.* Well, sir, it has been told me that I would; I do not know what is the general feeling there; but it has been told me that if I would just not say a word, that was the proposition made to me, that if I would just sit in my office and say nothing, all would be right, that I could hold any position I wanted.

*Question.* Who is the most active republican colored man in your county?

*Answer.* The most active republican in my county is Bill Nave.

*Question.* Is he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he lives on the eastern border of my county, and is a man of some education.

*Question.* Does he apprehend any danger?

*Answer.* I saw him on the 4th of July, and he told me that he had slipped off and got to De Kalb then, that he had started for De Kalb twice and had been interrupted.

*Question.* Interrupted by whom?

*Answer.* By men; he said they were covered up, and he ran back.

*Question.* Does he feel under any apprehension?

*Answer.* He says he is very apprehensive, and does not propose to take any part in politics, as he says in a little paper down there.

*Question.* What sort of a paper?

*Answer.* It is a democratic paper. At least, he resigned the office of magistrate, and he told me that is what he resigned it for.

*Question.* Did he make a publication in the paper?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and the piece stated that he wanted some white man appointed, he told me that is what he did it for.

*Question.* He said that he is done meddling with politics?

*Answer.* No, he did not say in the article in the paper anything about that. The article says this: That William Nave has sent in his resignation; it is supposed that the radical judge will have some other negro appointed, but William Nave says he wants a white man appointed; that politics does not suit him, and that he is going to have nothing more to do with politics.

*Question.* Did William Nave say he authorized that statement to be made?

*Answer.* He says he never authorized it, but that he told them he resigned because he was apprehensive he might get into trouble, and that he thought it was best for him not to be magistrate in the present state of feeling there with those white people; that if there was a case came up before him, they would say, "Damn it, we will have nothing to do with a damned nigger," and that they would not be tried before him. He told me on the 4th of July that he thought for his safety he would resign—that it would be better for himself and his family for him to resign the office.

*Question.* I understood you to say that he told you he was done with politics?

*Answer.* No; I did not say that. I said the paper stated that; but he did not tell me that. He told me that he was fearful to have anything to do with politics in the coming canvass, unless he had some protection. I said to him, "Why, you certainly can protect yourselves; there are about three colored men to one white man." He said that it was not like white man against white man. I told him that I knew that was the fact. He said if he could stay in De Kalb it would be all right; that they would not trouble him there; that they were afraid of the democrats there, and would not come there. I recommended a white man to Governor Alcorn, a very clever man, and one who tells me a heap of things in that country.

*Question.* Suppose this colored man, Nave, was to change his politics, and declare himself in favor of the democratic party, do you think he would be safe?

*Answer.* I think he would be perfectly safe, entirely and clearly safe.

*Question.* If he would do that?

*Answer.* He would be entirely, clearly, and positively safe, because the colored men have not bothered any white man. While they are a little high-strung among themselves, when a colored man says he is a democrat, yet they have not touched any man. If he should change to be a democrat, no white republican would say anything to him.

*Question.* Would this colored man be safe from the Ku-Klux if he changed?

*Answer.* He certainly would; there is no doubt about that in my mind.

*Question.* Could any other colored man in your county purchase his safety in the same way?

*Answer.* I think every single man in the county could be perfectly safe and secure, so far as the Ku-Klux is concerned, by being a democrat.

*Question.* You say the colored men are a little high-strung on men of their own color who vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* They are, but they have never touched one.

*Question.* You have heard of their abusing colored men by words?

*Answer.* They have.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any colored man abusing a white man for voting the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* Never in my life.

*Question.* They do not attempt to Ku-Klux white men for voting the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* No, sir; they have been slaves until very recently, and they are not like men who have been free always, not by a great deal. Unless they have some men to tell them how to go on, they do not know how to resist white men; that is the trouble about the matter.

*Question.* Is that the reason why the Ku-Klux can do what they do with impunity?

*Answer.* I do not think they do.

*Question.* If you had as many white men republicans ——

*Answer.* If I had as many white republican men in that county as there are democratic white men in the county, they would not touch a republican. They have not done it any way, except the men I have told you of, and they shot Rush.

*Question.* You think these Ku-Klux operate altogether upon the opposite party?

*Answer.* I can look at it in no other light, from the fact that nobody upon the democratic side has been interfered with by them. I asked the question in Meridian and Jackson. I asked men there to tell me of the first single democrat in the State interfered with by the Ku-Klux. I have not heard of a single one. Well, then, taking it for granted that there must surely be something in it, I suppose they do it for the purpose of controlling the vote.

*Question.* How do people regard it generally down there?

*Answer.* I do not think there is a man in my town, not a single man, but what regards it just in that light.

*Question.* Do the democrats in your town regard it so?

*Answer.* They tell me so. I only know what they tell me, and the democrats there talk very freely to me.

*Question.* They do not deny that it is political?

*Answer.* They do not indorse it—never did.

*Question.* But they do not deny it is political?

*Answer.* They say that is what it is for—to put the democratic party in power.

*Question.* That is well understood where the operations are going on?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so.

*Question.* Have you any colored preachers in your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is a colored preacher there, at least he lives there; he is sent there on a circuit, I believe they call it; his headquarters is in my town.

*Question.* Has any demonstration been made against him?

*Answer.* None at all. I do not know what his politics are. I do not know whether he is a republican or a democrat. He comes to my office very frequently; but I say nothing to him about politics.

*Question.* Have any churches been burned in your county?

*Answer.* Two churches; but I do not know whether politics had anything to do with it.

*Question.* Were they churches where colored people worshiped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In what part of your county were those churches?

*Answer.* In the northeastern corner of the county.

*Question.* You have not had any schools established in your county?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; we have schools in our county.

*Question.* Colored schools?

*Answer.* Yes.

*Question.* Have any colored school-houses been burned?

*Answer.* A couple; that is, I mean since the State has come back into the Union; I do not mean before that. I will state this, however: I had a circular from Governor Alcorn, requesting me to give him information as to all these things. I sent for the teachers of these colored schools, who were both southern white men, to give me all the information they could as to the burning of those colored school-houses. They both told me that they thought one individual, from Alabama, had come across the line and burned them; that they did not think the citizens in the immediate neighborhood indorsed it, because they furnished houses for them to commence teaching again.

*Question.* Have you heard of any church occupied by white people in your county being burned?

*Answer.* Not one.

*Question.* Have you heard of any school-house being burned where white children were taught?

*Answer.* Not one, that I know of. I saw a letter to one man who was teaching a colored school, purporting to be from the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* What did that letter say?

*Answer.* It went on to tell him, if he did not quit teaching, what they were going to do with him; that is, if he did not quit teaching that negro school.

*Question.* What did they say they would do with him?

*Answer.* Take him out and give him a whipping.

*Question.* Has any other teacher been threatened?

*Answer.* No other in the county, that I know of.

*Question.* How have the colored people in the county behaved themselves since the war?

*Answer.* As well as any set of men in the world just turned loose could possibly behave. I think they have behaved better in my county than in most of the counties. There was a good big meeting of the colored people on the 4th of July, and there were a great many white men there in town. I asked them publicly to point out one single violation of law that a colored man had committed in the county since the surrender, unless it was to steal something, as some of the white men have done occasionally.

*Question.* You mean petty thefts?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. And no man said that he knew of anything.

*Question.* You say the colored men have behaved remarkably well?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, in my judgment better, perhaps, than in most other counties.

*Question.* Is that the general impression among people in your county?

*Answer.* I think so; I think the white people in my county are very well pleased with their behavior.

*Question.* Have you heard expressions from the democrats there to that effect?

*Answer.* I have in my town. I heard old Tommy Davis, who is regarded as a leading democrat there, say so a few days before I came from home. He came into my office and asked me what I proposed to do at the next election, and I did not give him any positive answer. He remarked, "I would like very well to have you do something to stay in the county; I have known you ever since you were a boy; and the people of this county, while they do not like your politics, think you are honest in what you profess; the colored people of this county have been remarkably good; they commit no violations of law, and they want to be religious, and some of them are trying to get an education; and I would like very well to have you do something to stay in this county." That is what he remarked to me. I then remarked to him that I expected I would stay there; that I had a great deal of real estate in the town; I told him that all I had was there in the county, that my friends were all there, and that I had nothing to say against the people of Kemper.

*Question.* Did he express any apprehension that you were about to leave the county on account of fear of these men?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think that, hearing I had been summoned to come here, he thought I would make arrangements while I was here to leave the State. Several had asked me if I intended to make arrangements to leave the State while I was gone.

*Question.* Did they intimate that they thought your being summoned here would make it dangerous for you to return?

*Answer.* Well, sir, yes.

*Question.* That because you were summoned here it might be necessary for you to remain away from there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. A man in office there, of as much respectability as any man in the State, a democrat in the circuit clerk's office there, told me when I left the court-house—he put his head out of the window and spoke as if he did not want others to hear him—he told me to be very cautious while I was gone, and to be very particular in coming back home. This was his remark precisely: "There are bad men in this county who would freely give $5,000 to see your head off to-day." He probably did not want what he said to be heard.

*Question.* You consider him friendly to you?

*Answer.* I consider him as an intimate friend to me personally, not politically.

*Question.* You did not understand him to say that for the purpose of keeping you from coming here?

*Answer.* No, sir, not at all, because he was rather anxious to come with me, and if he had had money enough he would have come. He is the clerk there, a son of old Dr. Chamberlain, of our county. Old Dr. Chamberlain is not a democrat, but his son is, and he was appointed by my recommendation; and he would be elected if my vote would elect him, notwithstanding he is a democrat, for he is a good, true man.

*Question.* Did you ever know anything of these disguised men in your county before the war?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You never heard of any crimes committed by disguised bands in the night, of that kind, before the war?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of such thing before the war.

*Question.* It is something that has been gotten up since the war?

*Answer.* I never heard of anything of the sort in my section of the country before the war.

*Question.* Did it occur before the negroes were allowed to vote?

*Answer.* These whippings? No, sir; a negro was never whipped in my county in this way before they were allowed to vote.

*Question.* It has been gotten up since they were admitted to the ballot-box?

*Answer.* In my county it has; I do not know about the rest of the South. There was not a negro touched in the county before they went to the ballot-box, except in the ordinary way—to put them in jail as you would a white man if he had done anything.

*Question.* You never heard of the Ku-Klux until the negroes were admitted to the ballot-box?

*Answer.* No, sir; not until the first election was over.

*Question.* In that election they voted the republican ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the most of them did; a few did not.

*Question.* The Ku-Klux started after that?

*Answer.* That is my understanding.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who is this man Gully?

*Answer.* He is a great, big southern bully.

*Question.* You have had some quarrel with him, have you not?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; certainly I have.

*Question.* I thought so, from the way you brought him in on all occasions. What have you quarreled about?

*Answer.* Well, he is regarded as the leader of the crowd that comes to my town. Mr. Taliaferro told me that he was the president of the shebang—the high priest of the concern in my county.

*Question.* Is that what you and he quarreled about particularly?

*Answer.* I never knew anything else for us to quarrel about.

*Question.* Was it not about some matters of a note or a forgery matter?

*Answer.* No, sir; that had nothing to do with it; we were quarreling before that came up; we had had one or two rows before that thing ever came up.

*Question.* You had a row before that thing came up?

*Answer* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* That only made it worse?

*Answer.* I suppose so; but I do not know that it did; it did not amount to anything that I know of. There never has been the scratch of a pen against me in the county, if that is what you want to get at, and there has been everything, from rape down, against him.

*Question.* What was this allegation which he made about you?

*Answer.* He made a charge against me there, after we had split, that I was trying to fix up for Moseley, of Lauderdale, to get some Government cotton.

*Question.* That you were trying to fix up to get some Government cotton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* From whom?

*Answer.* From the Government.

*Question.* How did he say you were trying to do that?

*Answer.* He said that the man who was on the affidavit never made the affidavit. He never said that, however, until after the man died, you understand.

*Question.* Was that all that he said?

*Answer.* The God of Israel only knows what he said; I do not know anything about that; that is what I heard him say. I know the courts never bothered me about it. If there is a scratch of a pen against me in the courts I have never been able to see it, and I have been there since I was sixteen years old.

*Question.* You think the God above might know what he said?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; He might know a great many things; nothing, though, upon that subject, so far as I am concerned.

*Question.* What was the allegation? That you had committed forgery in forging a name?

*Answer.* That is just what I told you, that he said the man had never signed the paper whose name was on the paper.

*Question.* Who was the man?

*Answer.* His name was Moore. I have been in Kemper County since I was sixteen years old, never have left it, never have failed to attend a court, and am there to-day, with nothing on God's green earth against me in the court, or anywhere else, that I know of, except what Gully says.

*Question.* I thought you and he were somewhat acrimonious.

*Answer.* Yes. That did not start the thing at all; we were out before that, and he thought he would take that start on me to break me down. But that built me up, or it did a great deal toward it, because they saw he was trying to take advantage of me. Of course everybody in the county knew that Gully had got three or four hundred bales of Government cotton, and that I had nothing to do with it. This paper said so—that I had nothing to do with it—it was simply made before me as an officer.

*Question.* You say everybody knew he had got a lot of cotton?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; so far as that is concerned, he did not deny it himself. He was sheriff there during the war, had a great deal of Government cotton that he had sold to the confederate government; and under the regulations of the surrender, as we understood it down there, that cotton was to be turned over to the United States Government. But he run the cotton off, and never turned it over to the United States Government at all, none of it. He told me himself he had got over two hundred bales. Understand me, now, this cotton he had sold to the confederate government; he had never sold it to the United States at all. But after the surrender he did not turn the cotton over to the United States Government, as it was understood there we were bound to do, but run it off and squandered it and used it himself. No, sir, there are no charges against me for getting any cotton, or making any effort to get any, so far as I am concerned.

*Question.* That cotton was his own which he had sold to the confederate government?

*Answer.* It was cotton he had bought for the confederate government, with money furnished him, as an officer of the confederate government, to buy botton with, for the confederate government. He had bought it from various persons in the country for the confederate government, and turned over none of to the Federal Government. He was holding it at the time of the surrender; the confederate government had called for none of the cotton it had purchased in the South, I believe. And at the time of the surrender, as we understood there, we were to turn over to the Federal Government the cotton that belonged to the confederate government.

*Question.* He did not turn it over?

*Answer.* No, sir. I did not have any fuss with him about that, so far as that was concerned.

*Question.* Generally he is a pretty bad man, is he not?

*Answer.* Well, I think the people think so, both democrats and republicans; that is my opinion about that; I think they regard him as a very bad man. He has some money yet, because he does not pay his debts, and lives in a palatial house, and all his property is in the name of his son. I suppose that is very easy to do in this country; but I only refer to him, (there are other men there besides him,) as the head-center of the concern; that is why I referred to him, not because I care anything more about him than I do about any other little man in the county, because he is a very small man there. I only referred to him because other men told me that he is the head-center of the concern there. There is Captain Ward there, a lawyer, and all those men who were democrats; if I wanted to refer to a man to injure him I might go for them. This other man I do not regard as anything, while I might regard them as a power.

*Question.* Taliferro, you say told you about this new departure, this new organization?

*Answer.* Yes; he told me there was a new organization. I asked him how it was they were organizing in my county again, and he said there was a new organization in my county now, and in all the States; he said that Captain Early, of Meridian, was the head of it in that section of country; that Thomas Graham, at Forrest, was one of the high priests. I asked, who is the head-center in the United States; it must have a head-center somewhere besides down there in Mississippi; and he said Frank Blair was the head, as Forrest was the head of the old one. I do not know anything about General Forrest's transactions in the Ku-Klux business; I do not know anything about that.

*Question.* Why did not he testify before the committee as to this new organization?

*Answer.* Who?

*Question.* Taliaferro.

*Answer.* Lord! I don't know. I do not know that there is a word of truth in all he says; I only hope it is so, that is, that it is upon a different basis from the Ku-Klux, so that they do not propose to interfere with anybody, except to try to control elections, and that is all right. I know nothing about it, and I do not know that he knows anything about it.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Did I understand you correctly as saying that there has not been a man killed by disguised men in your county since the State was organized?

*Answer.* Since it went back into the Union, no one that I know of.

*Question.* Since the adoption of your new constitution?

*Answer.* Not one, that I know of in my county, by disguised men.

*Question.* How many cases of whipping do you remember since that time by disguised men?

*Answer.* There have been about four reported to me.

*Question.* And it was not known whether the shooting of Captain Rush was done by disguished men or not?

*Answer.* It was done in the night; I suppose not more than two or three men were there, and I do not suppose they were disguised. They shot him behind a church and ran right off into the swamp.

*Question.* That is about the extent of their operations in your county, so far as you know?

*Answer.* That is about it.

*Question.* Two of the negroes who were whipped you say were good negroes, and one was a bad fellow?

*Answer.* I say none of the negroes that have been whipped, since the State was organized, had any allegation against them; I said that one of the negroes whipped in my county had an allegation against him that he had been stealing.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* That was further back?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Of course all the negroes say there is nothing against them?

*Answer.* Yes; but I do not mean that; I mean I have inquired in the neighborhood.

*Question.* You have had large experience with the negroes, and you know that it is true, no matter what has been done, whenever anything is done to them they deny that they have done anything?

*Answer.* Of course, and I believe that is the case with white men.

*Question.* I see by the papers day before yesterday that Governor Hoffman went to the penitentiary at Sing Sing, and out of seventy-five applications for pardon seventy-three said they had done nothing. That is human nature, is it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And to make out as bad a case as the man can against the parties who injure him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They reported a case of a negro woman who had been badly whipped, near Scooba, but I could not get any of the particulars of that at all. This man Nave told me he had no doubt it was so, but he did not seem to understand whether it was Ku-Klux or how it was done. A parcel of men, in the night, had whipped her very severely, and carried her back to a place where she had formerly worked, and Nave told me he thought it very probable that she would die.

*Question.* There was no politics about that?

*Answer.* I do not know; I do not pretend to say who did it.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* That is not included in the four you named previously?

*Answer.* No sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* As to the education of your negroes there, do I understand you to say that a great majority of the white people there want them to be educated?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* And that when a school-house was burned, white men and democrats furnished another house?

*Answer.* That is what the teachers told me.

*Question.* Is it not generally regarded by your people that the best way to make them useful is to educate them and help them along?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* All parties agree to that?

*Answer.* I think so, as a general thing.

*Question.* Is it not the fact that many of the buildings they use have been built by the aid of the white people?

*Answer.* I do not think so; I think they have generally built them themselves, except a house or two that the United States bought for them while the Bureau was in operation down there in my town. There is a northern lady teaching in one of those houses.

*Question.* What is the number of colored voters in your county?

*Answer.* I think about fourteen or fifteen hundred colored men are registered there and can vote, and about the same number of white men.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you say that Mr. Gully said, after Mr. Moore had died, that he had not signed that paper?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did Moore sign that paper?
*Answer.* He did, most assuredly, or I never should have put it out.
*Question.* He signed it in your presence?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You were the officer before whom he took the oath?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Has Gully ever been indicted in your courts?
*Answer.* I sort of think he has.
*Question.* How many times?
*Answer.* I do not know how many times.
*Question.* Has he been frequently indicted?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, and was arrested by the military several times—once on a charge of rape on a poor, innocent white girl in the county, and he said it cost him ten thousand dollars to get through with that.
*Question.* Has the United States Government ever commenced any proceedings against him about the cotton?
*Answer.* Not a bit.
*Question.* Is Mr. Taliaferro a democrat?
*Answer.* He says he is; he told me so, but I do not know what his politics are. I know his uncle was, and refused to let me make a speech there at Scooba in a house he had control of when I went down there.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 19, 1871.

A. P. HUGGINS sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)
*Question.* Where do you live?
*Answer.* I live at Aberdeen, Mississippi.
*Question.* In what county?
*Answer.* Monroe County.
*Question.* How long have you lived there?
*Answer.* I first went to the county of Monroe in October, 1865.
*Question.* Have you resided there since that time?
*Answer.* I was out of the county about eighteen months, in the Freedmen's Bureau.
*Question.* You went there in 1865, and for eighteen months you were an officer of the Freedmen's Bureau?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, and not in that county during that time; all the rest of the time I have been there.
*Question.* For that eighteen months you were not in that county?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* In what county were you during that time?
*Answer.* Jackson was my post most of the time, but I was under military orders and went to different places.
*Question.* Where were you raised?
*Answer.* I was born in Ohio, but raised mostly in Michigan.
*Question.* Were you in the Army during the war?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; very nearly four years.
*Question.* What position did you hold in the Army?
*Answer.* I held several different positions, from private up to captain, and then I was brevetted lieutenant colonel.
*Question.* After this eighteen months' service as an officer of the Freedmen's Bureau did you then return to Monroe County?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; as assistant assessor of internal revenue.
*Question.* Have you held that position ever since?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I hold it now.
*Question.* Who is the assessor of that congressional district?
*Answer.* Mr. A. P. Shattuck.
*Question.* Is there more than one assistant assessor in that county?
*Answer.* No, sir; I have five counties in my division.
*Question.* Monroe County is one of them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; my headquarters is at Aberdeen. I am also school superintendent for that county.
*Question.* At what time were you appointed assistant assessor?
*Answer.* In the month of May, 1869.
*Question.* And when were you appointed superintendent of schools?
*Answer.* In the month of August, last year, 1870.

*Question.* You were appointed to the office by the State board of education?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What are your duties as superintendent of schools?

*Answer.* Well, sir, our school system is just organizing, or it was at that time, the first we have ever had in the State of free schools. My duties are to start the schools, help organize them; I was one of seven men who had the perfecting of the whole school arrangements of the county; I was president of the board of school directors; there were six other men with me.

*Question.* How were they appointed?

*Answer.* By the board of county supervisors. Each man of that school board really had more to say in the board than I had; I had no vote unless there was a tie.

*Question.* You were merely the president of the board?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were you to preside in the meetings for the selection of the school-houses?

*Answer.* That was a common duty imposed upon the board; the board would direct me to look after that.

*Question.* I am speaking of the duties of the board; you were to provide school-houses and teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and make every arrangement necessary to start the system of free schools in that county.

*Question.* How are those schools supported?

*Answer.* By taxation mostly.

*Question.* By taxation upon the people of the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; our State law regulates that. We were allowed to levy a five-mill tax for a teachers' fund and a ten-mill tax for a building fund.

*Question.* That was the extent to which you were authorized to impose taxes for school purposes.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Within that limit this board determined how much should be expended?

*Answer.* About three-fourths of the amount authorized by law was what they determined to raise; about ten and a half mills.

*Question.* A trifle over one per cent.?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That was the extent of the assessment you did make?

*Answer.* We made the estimate; we had no right to levy taxes; that was the duty of the board of supervisors.

*Question.* You made your estimate, and they assessed the tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but the assessment has never been made or collected.

*Question.* It has never been collected?

*Answer.* No, sir; the Ku-Klux gave the board orders not to do it.

*Question.* The supervisors neglected, for some reason or other, to assess the tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the tax has never been assessed or collected.

*Question.* Will you now proceed to state how things went on in the county after you went there; what was the state of affairs there?

*Answer.* All the time?

*Question.* Well, from the time you went there as assessor, which was in 1869.

*Answer.* I first went there as a planter; I planted in the county when I first went to the State.

*Question.* Did you buy a plantation?

*Answer.* No, sir; I rented one of some fifteen hundred acres, and planted very largely there.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* In 1865 and 1866.

*Question.* When you first went there you rented a plantation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; rented a large one, and planted very extensively.

*Question.* Well, begin back to that time in the history of your operations in that State, and tell us how you got on.

*Answer.* During the years 1865 and 1866 there was comparatively little trouble in that county; I was not interfered with until the close of the year 1866. I had expressed my opinion very freely in the towns about me; I had been refused admission into the church; that was the only thing really that occurred during the year; I was not recognized as a Christian at all.

*Question.* What church had you proposed to join?

*Answer.* The Baptist church; I have been a member of that church a great many years. I will state about that, as it is brief. I proposed to join the church when I first went there in 1865; I saw the pastor of the church, and he stated for his church that he thought there would be no difficulty about it at all; that I was a Christian, and he thought it showed a very good desire on my part to unite with the church and work with the people. He told me to call the next Sabbath at the church and I would be received; I then lived ten miles from the town. I called there, and the pastor told me

that they had reconsidered the matter; he told me this while public service was going on; that I had done them wrong; that being in the Federal Army, I had done a wrong to the South; that I must repent of it, and must show I had repented of it. I left the church very quickly upon such a statement as that; got up and walked out; I showed no disrespect, only in leaving.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What is the name of that preacher?

*Answer.* Rev. Mr. Chambliss; I think he is now at Maysville, in Kentucky.

*Question.* Give his name in full.

*Answer.* I do not know his name in full; I only know him as the Rev. Mr. Chambliss; he left there and went to Kentucky.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They considered that a blot on your Christian character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they said I would not be allowed to join unless I would say I had committed a wrong, which I could not do. I called on the pastor after that to withdraw my letter entirely from the church.

*Question.* You presented a letter from the church in the North to which you had formerly belonged?

*Answer.* I took a letter from the church that I was a member in good standing. The minister told me that I would have to say I had committed a wrong; that the people were excited at that time; that they had not come to the point of receiving northern members. I asked him what they would do with northern Christians; he said they would have to establish a church for themselves. While I am on this church matter I will say that on my return, after I was appointed revenue assessor, they appointed a committee of three men to wait upon me, one of whom was a deacon of the church, and to ask me to unite with the church; they said they had watched my course, that they had nothing to complain of; that I was a consistent Christian man from all they could see; and they asked me to unite with them and to attend the church, and wanted that I should drop the whole thing. I did not do it. I was married at little over a year ago; my wife was also a Baptist; when I returned with my wife they appointed another committee to wait on us and ask myself and wife to unite with that church. We went to the church, hired a pew, and we have attended there regularly since, but we have not united with the church. I state that to show that they reconsidered their opposition upon the matter; that it was nothing I had done in the community to make them complain of me.

*Question.* In all this they made no objection to your character as a Christian man?

*Answer.* None at all; if they had, they would not have asked me to unite with them afterward.

*Question.* This last invitation was within the last year?

*Answer.* It was in April, May, or June—probably May or June—1870, that they came to me.

*Question.* A little more than a year ago?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I hired a pew in the church and have gone there regularly since then.

*Question.* You have been a regular attendant upon the church?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a regular attendant; and I have subscribed to the church.

*Question.* Have you ceased to carry on your plantation?

*Answer.* I gave that up in the commencement of 1867; I sold out entirely.

*Question.* You only carried it on for two years?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; 1865 and 1866 ended my planting operations in that county.

*Question.* After that did you live in the town of Aberdeen?

*Answer.* After I went back as assistant assessor I lived in the town of Aberdeen. After I went to Aberdeen as a revenue officer, nothing transpired at all in a political way. We have had several elections there; I was a republican and known to be, and I was a sheriff during the election under General Ames. They got into a bad muddle there, and asked me to take the office of sheriff and get them out of it, and hold the election. The democrats were as pleased with it as the republicans.

*Question.* How long did you hold that office?

*Answer.* About six weeks only.

*Question.* Just for the election?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there any complaint by anybody of the manner in which you administered the office of sheriff?

*Answer.* No, sir; not at all.

*Question.* Was the election quiet?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and the wealthiest democrats in the county went on my bond; there was no trouble at the election.

*Question.* The election was quiet and peaceable?

*Answer.* Very quiet; I never saw a more quiet election in the North.

*Question.* When was that election?

*Answer.* In November, 1869.

*Question.* Did you go about in any of these five counties in your district?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I only had two counties at first, Monroe and Itawamba; there were three other counties added to them about December, 1870.

*Question.* Those two counties composed your district when you first went there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I went through them as much and as thoroughly as any assistant assessor probably could do; I visited all portions of them, and made my assessments.

*Question.* What counties were added to your district?

*Answer.* Prentiss, Alcorn, and Tishemingo.

*Question.* When were they added?

*Answer.* About December, 1870, or January, 1871; just about the commencement of the year; I think in December.

*Question.* You went about in those two counties in the performance of your duty as assessor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I went thoroughly among the people, and was as much among them as any one, probably, that lived in the counties; my duties called me there.

*Question.* Did you have any difficulty?

*Answer.* I had some difficulty in Aberdeen in regard to the assessment of taxes, but not more than any other assistant assessor would have had, perhaps; I had some difficulty with some liquor-dealers, or something of that sort.

*Question.* Nothing unusual?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did any quarrel grow out of that?

*Answer.* Well, one case was so bitter that they did quarrel with me; a large lawsuit grew out of it in the town, and threats were made against me.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was the lawsuit?

*Answer.* It was a case in the revenue service; I assessed a man as a wholesale liquor-dealer; he refused to make his returns, and I assessed him.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* He claimed that he was not liable to the tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I claimed that he was.

*Question.* You assessed him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was ordered to make the assessments, and I had to bear the brunt of it.

*Question.* There was a suit about that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is in the United States court now.

*Question.* It is now pending?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The suit was whether he was liable or not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; whether he was liable or not was the real question.

*Question.* That was in the town of Aberdeen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* After those three counties were added to your district, did you go about in those counties?

*Answer.* I never did. They were added at a late season in the year, and most of the assessments had been made. I should not have gone into them until the regular annual return came on, which was in March.

*Question.* You had no occasion to go into them?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* The time had not come for making assessments?

*Answer.* No, sir. I have since been in them. In June I made all the assessments in those counties.

*Question.* Did you have any difficulty in making assessments in those counties?

*Answer.* I had United States troops with me all the time; I do not pretend to go without them when I go about much. The first troubles that commenced in our section, with the Ku-Klux, were in August, 1870. A band of fifty masked men went to the jail, which is seven miles from Aberdeen, and took from there three colored men—Saunders Flint and his two sons, who were grown. Saunders Flint, the old man, got away from them.

*Question.* What were they in jail for?

*Answer.* They had had a difficulty in the county with three white men, and had come to blows; they were taken before the justice of the peace, and these colored men were placed in the jail; their bond was fixed at $500, and they could not give it, and were placed in jail.

*Question.* Bound over for trial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* On a charge of assault and battery?

*Answer.* I suppose so; I do not know; it was merely a fight between the men.

*Question.* Was anybody killed?

*Answer.* No one was injured at all, only broken heads; no one was killed. The old man escaped; as they were riding along he slipped off and got into the woods.

*Question.* As they were taking them from the jail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. These fifty masked men went to the jail and took them out, and the old man escaped. The others we did not find for some ten days; it was very warm weather, and when we found them they were very much decomposed. We found them some twelve miles from there. They had been shot and killed; we examined them as far as we could.

*Question.* You found them twelve miles from the jail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That was the first Ku-Klux outrage, and it scared the people generally. The trial in that case came on directly; the old man recognized five of the persons; he got away and came to Aberdeen. Then two of the men, who were in jail at the time, recognized some three persons.

*Question.* Three other persons?

*Answer.* No, sir; three of the same. Those three were arrested and tried. Well, I think that their cases were dismissed in January; that is, they had all Ku-Klux men in sympathy with them on the jury.

*Question.* Were they tried in court?

*Answer.* They were tried in the circuit court of the county.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was it a State court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a State court. I think they were dismissed in January, but I am not positive of that; it was the court before February.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* On what ground were they acquitted?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I cannot tell you. I heard the evidence myself; it was as positive as men could swear; they swore they knew them and recognized them. Old man Flint said that they were his neighbors, and he knew them; but the jury-men were all men in sympathy with them.

*Question.* Was there an attempt to prove an *alibi*?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; and they dismissed them; they did not find them guilty of anything at all. Then the republicans and all the rest were asked to give something to pay the lawyer's fees for defending them; I was asked that myself. The release of these persons in January emboldened the Ku-Klux. Everything had been comparatively quiet until that time.

*Question.* This first transaction, the taking of the men out of jail and shooting them, was in August, was it?

*Answer.* That was in August, 1870; but the trials were really not concluded until about January.

*Question.* The trials of the men for doing that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In February our real tribulations with the Ku-Klux commenced.

*Question.* Saunders Flint was the name of the old man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Joe Flint was the name of one of the two who were killed; I do not remember the name of the other. On the 1st of February a party of armed men went about five miles north of Aberdeen and took Alfred Whitfield, a colored man, and whipped him until he would say that he would vote the democratic ticket; I do not know how many lashes they gave him; I saw the man himself afterward, and he told me the circumstance.

*Question.* Was he severely beaten?

*Answer.* He was very badly beaten; his back was badly pounded up. On the 3d of February an old freedman, whose name I do not now remember, was beaten by the same parties, and in about the same way; he was not made to promise to vote the democratic ticket.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* He lives near the Lee County line, in the northern part of the county.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Were they disguised men that did this?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all the cases I will now give you were by men in uniform.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They were all regular Ku-Klux performances, as you understood?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. On the 10th of February they went on the other side of the river.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Tell us when you got the stories from the negroes themselves and when you got them from other people.

*Answer.* Tell who I heard them from?
*Question.* Tell who you heard them from.
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* In all the cases you have given you obtained the information from the parties themselves?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you obtain the same information from anybody else?
*Answer.* In the case of Alfred Whitfield I heard it from white people in the neighborhood, and I saw the back of Alfred Whitfield myself.
*Question.* He had something to show?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. On the 10th of February Jack Dupree, who was the president of one of the republican clubs in the county——
*Question.* Where did he live?
*Answer.* Near Ross's mill.
*Question.* How far from Aberdeen?
*Answer.* Some eight or ten miles.
*Question.* Which way?
*Answer.* Southeast from Aberdeen, and across the river Tombigbee. Some sixty disguised men took him from his house, and from his wife, who had been confined not two weeks before with twins, and who had a child about a year old beside, (there were three small children;) they took him from his bed, took him out into the yard, stripped him of his shirt and drawers, all the clothing he had on, and beat him there in the yard. They then took him some five miles, making him walk part of the way, and part of the way allowing him to ride one of their horses; took him into the woods some distance and beat him until he was nearly dead, as a witness stated at the Oxford court; they then cut him open from the throat to the straddle, took out all his insides, and then threw his body into McKinley's Creek, that runs near Ross's mill. His body never has been found. I was sent there myself by the judge of the court. The man who went with me did not know there was a stream near there, but he took me to a place where their horses were held, and he stated that they came back and told him that he was cut open entirely, and his heart and insides all taken out.
*Question.* Who told you this?
*Answer.* The witness who turned States' evidence at Oxford.
*Question.* Was he one of the party?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he held the horses and heard the cries of the man. They came back and told him that they had cut him open and taken his insides out.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Who was that witness?
*Answer.* Joseph Davis.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Did you know the colored man?
*Answer.* Do you mean the man who was killed?
*Question.* Yes.
*Answer.* I knew him very well.
*Question.* Was he a respectable man?
*Answer.* He was a leading man in the neighborhood, and was a respectable man among them. He was a man who drank some whisky, and I had heard before that he was rather a boisterous man; but he was a man who was trusted as president of a club, and was a leading man among them.
*Question.* Did you ever hear him charged with having committed any offense or crime?
*Answer.* No, sir; not at all; nothing of the sort.
*Question.* Is it claimed that he had been guilty of any crime?
*Answer.* No, sir; not of any crime or of any offense, only that he was boisterous.
*Question.* He was rather a noisy republican?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a noisy republican, and would speak his mind. On the 9th of March I went into that same neighborhood myself, and visited the place where Jack Dupree was killed. On the 8th of March I went to the house of a man named Lafayette Willis, a large planter in the neighborhood, and staid at his house over night.
*Question.* You went there on your business as assessor?
*Answer.* On business as assessor, and also as school superintendent. I visited several schools that day, and also made assessments for internal revenue; I did both; where I went into a neighborhood where that was to be done, I did it, for I was then making up my annual list. I went there on the 8th of March, and on the 9th I made some assessments.
*Question.* To whose house did you go?
*Answer.* I went to the house of Mr. George R. Ross; I met him at a school, and he

invited me to go home and stay with him that night; I had known him before. On the night of the 8th I staid at Mr. Willis's, three miles from Ross's mill.

*Question.* And on the night of the 9th you went to Ross's and staid?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was a great deal said; I was with the Ku-Klux some three-quarters of an hour, I suppose. I would like just to state the conversation as it occurred, or you can question me.

*Question.* State the transaction fully; begin and give us the whole of it.

*Answer.* I was warned during the day of the 9th that the Ku-Klux had been riding the night before for me. It was very stormy, and the wind was very high, and it had rained very hard on the night of the 8th. A colored man, knowing that I was there, came to me the next day and told me that some Ku-Klux had been out, and that some colored men had seen them; that they had been at Mark Troup's place, where they had understood I was to stay. The colored men asked me to go out of the country, for they knew that the Ku-Klux would get me if they could. I laughed at their fears, and had no idea that they would attack a United States officer. During the day I attended to my duties; and at 9 o'clock that night I was in bed at Mr. Ross's house. At 10 o'clock I was awakened by a loud call out of doors upon Mr. Ross for "the man who was in the house." I stepped to my window, which was on the ground floor, and saw that the premises were completely covered with men dressed in white; I knew then I was with the Ku-Klux. Mr. Ross had by this time come out onto the porch. On their demanding me, he came to the door of my room, which opened on the porch, and told me that his premises were literally covered with men demanding me; that they were Ku-Klux, and that they wanted me to come out. I told him I would not go out. I then stepped where I could see the men; I opened the door myself, and stood where I could see them. I asked them if it was me they wanted, and what they wanted of me. They answered that their business was with me altogether; that they were Ku-Klux, or the law-makers of that country, and that they wanted to talk with me. They told me that at a regular meeting of their camp my case had been under consideration, and that they had certain warnings which it was necessary for them to give me. They said that as I was in their power, like all other men, I must obey and come out. I told them that I did not recognize their power over me, and that under no circumstances would I venture out; that I had heard of the Ku Klux before, and knew of their deeds, but had thought I was safe from them. I told them, then, that if I could do anything to hasten their departure, to get them away from the house, I would do so, as the family was scared; that if they had any warnings to give me I would hear them, and then do just as I chose about obeying them. They answered that they could not do that, that it was against the rules of their camp to give their warnings in the presence of women and children. I told them that that being the case, it was useless to argue any further, that I would not go out. I then stepped inside and shut my door. They then became very furious, and ordered Mr. Ross to bring me out; told him that he was as much under their orders as I was; that he must understand that they made the laws there, and that he must obey them as well as myself. They then told him that if he would not bring me out, to place a light in my room; I supposed, of course, that they wanted to see through the window and shoot me probably. They found that all their threats, &c., were useless in that way, and then they went off in one corner of the yard and consulted. After a time they came back with a terrible whoop, saying they would burn the house. I saw them light a fire, as I supposed for the purpose of kindling a fire at the house, and they went on the other side of the house out of my sight; I cannot say what they did there.

*Question.* You saw the light?

*Answer.* I saw the light of the fire they kindled. Mr. Ross came to me then and asked me to leave the house; said that his family was frightened; that his wife was in spasms; that his children were terribly frightened; and he asked me to leave the house for his family's sake. I told him to quiet his family's fears, that I would certainly save his house, that I would not let them go to that extent. He said, "These men are desperate men, and I wish you would try to make terms with them, because I don't want anything like death to happen here if it can be helped." Mr. Ross said that to me. I then stepped to the door again, and opened it, and asked them if they would make me any promise. They said they merely wanted to talk with me. I asked them what promises or pledges they would make; they said they would pledge me that I should not be injured in any way at all; that they would not only pledge me that, but they would pledge Mr. Ross; that all they wanted was merely to give me the warnings they had been directed to give me; that that was all they had to do with me at that time, that their decree did not go any further than that. I asked them to give their pledges to Mr. Ross and to give me assurances that I would not be injured. They said, "Not a hair of your head shall be injured; we are now as anxious as you are to get through this business, and let the fears on the part of the family cease." I had not much confidence in their promises and assurances; I knew what kind of men they were. But I am satisfied now that my parleying with them and their pledges did really save my life; I am satisfied of that from what I have heard since from those who knew the Ku-Klux and their mode of operation.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was Mr. Ross a republican?

*Answer.* No, sir; one of his sons is now arrested as a murderer in one of these cases

*Question.* As a Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I told them that if they would promise me all that, and pledge Mr. Ross, then if they would go out of the yard, I would go down to the fence and talk with them and hear their warning, if they could give it to me there. They agreed to it very heartily, and all hurrahed, "Let's go out of the gate." As they passed out of the gate I numbered them hastily; there were about one hundred in the yard at the time, very nearly a hundred went out.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Were all in the yard, or were more outside?

*Answer.* There were about twenty who came up afterward to the horses; there were one hundred and twenty in the crowd altogether, as I numbered them. The gate was closed, and I went down to the fence. The night was as bright as a moonlight night can well be. I looked at my watch, and I had no difficulty in telling the position of the hands of my watch. When I got down to the fence I asked the chief if he would now state my little bit of warning, that I wanted to hear it and be gone. He said the decree of the camp was that I should leave the county within ten days, and leave the State; that I could not stay there. He then gave me the decree, pronounced it out in a very pompous manner, and said it was given at a certain place, and registered in some corner of hell; I never did get the name exactly.

*Question.* The location of the register's office there you do not remember?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not remember. He told me that the rule of the camp was, first, to give the warning; second, to enforce obedience to their laws by whipping; third, to kill by the Klan altogether; and, fourth, if that was not done, and if the one who was warned still refused to obey, then they were sworn to kill him, either privately, by assassination, or otherwise. I was then warned again that I would have to go, that I could not stay there, that there was no such thing as getting around one of their decrees; that if I undertook to stay there I certainly should die. They repeated again that I could not live there under any circumstances; they gave me ten days to go away. They said that during that time I must relieve them from all the taxes of the county.

*Question.* From the United States tax?

*Answer.* Well, sir, everything; they included everything; they said the taxes of the county. I reminded them that I could not possibly be held in any way responsible for any tax except the revenue tax and the school tax; that the State and county taxes really amounted to three times all the other taxes. They said I could take them off, and they knew it; that I had got to do it, and to promise them that I would do it. I asked them if the tax was my offense, or what my offense was. They said that I was collecting obnoxious taxes from southern gentlemen to keep damned old radicals in office; that they wanted me to understand that no laws should be enforced in that country that they did not make themselves; that they did not like my general radical ways a bit; that was the charge they gave against me. In fact, they treated me very courteously, except the beating they gave me; but otherwise I was not insulted or treated unkindly at all.

*Question.* They were civil in their manner?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were civil. One of them commenced to curse; he began, "God damn," and was going to say something, when the captain stopped him, and said that he should not do that; that all they wanted of me was to get me out of the country; they said they did not like my radical ways anyway. I asked them if their operations were against the radical party; they said they were; that they had suffered and endured the radical sway as long as they could; that the radicals had oppressed them with taxation; that they were oppressing them all the time, and that I was the instrument of collecting the taxes; that they had stood it just as long as they could, and that this was their way of getting rid of it; that they were bound to rid themselves of radicals, or else kill them, or if it took the killing of them, or something to that effect. There was a colored school and a white school in the neighborhood. I knew most of the men there were from that neighborhood; I asked them with reference to Mr. Davis's school; that was the white school, where I supposed the most of their children were attending; I asked them if they were not satisfied with his school; they said, "No;" that they liked Davis well enough as a teacher, but that they were opposed to the free-school system entirely; that the whites could do as they had always done before; that they could educate their own children; that so far as the negroes were concerned, they did not need educating, only to work. They said they had no objection to Davis at all, but that they could manage their own affairs without the State or the United States sending such as I was there to educate their children, and at the same time to educate the negroes too. After the conversation on the school subject closed, one of them said, "Well, sir, what do you say to our warning? Will you leave?" I told them I should leave Monroe County at my pleasure, and not until I got ready. The captain then said

to me, "Sir, you say you will not leave; you will not obey our warning." I said I would not obey; that I would leave when I got ready, and not before; that I would not be driven from any place. The gate was then thrown open, and the fence was climbed by twenty men in a moment. I was surrounded and disarmed; the pistol that I had had until that time was taken away. They then took me between an eighth and a quarter of a mile down the road, and came to a hill, where they stopped; they they then asked me if I was still of the same opinion—that I would not leave the country; I told them I was; that I would not leave. I reasoned with them a little; I told them I was like every other man; that all I had was there; that this was a very sudden thing, and that I would rather die than say that; that I would not say it under any circumstances. They said they should hate very much to interfere with me; that they had made promises to Mr. Ross and myself; that I had really not been obnoxious to them only in the tax line, and that they would not like to interfere with me, for they counted me as a gentleman; that they did not want to interfere with me at all; that all they wanted was to get rid of me from the county and from the State; that I could not stay there. They then said, "You cannot stay at Jackson; you must leave the State." Mr. Ross saw that they really intended to treat me badly.

*Question.* Was Mr. Ross along?

*Answer.* He was along; he went with me. He said, "Remember your promise; you must not do anything to harm the man at all; your promise is out." After they had said that they remembered their promise, I warned them to beware what they did, and told them that I never would let go of them; that if they left me alive I would certainly do what I could; that I was a United States officer, and would not take any such treatment without doing what I could to get redress; that it was not safe for them to do what they were doing. They ordered me to take off my coat, which I refused to do; they then took it off by force. After that they asked if I consented to leave, and I still refused. They said that if I would promise them, I should go back to my bed and sleep quietly, and they would all go on home; they really urged in every way that it was possible for men to do to get me to promise to leave the county and the State without any violence. They then showed me a rope with a noose, and said that was for such as myself who were stubborn; that if I did not consent to leave I should die, that dead men told no tales. At this time I saw a man coming from toward the horses, from where I then supposed, and where I afterward knew the horses were; he had a stirrup-strap some inch and a quarter in width, and at least an eighth of an inch thick; it was very stout leather; the stirrup was a wooden one. As he came up he threw down the wooden stirrup and came on toward me, and I saw that he was intending to hit me with the strap, that that was the weapon they intended to use first. He came on, and without further ceremony at all—I was in my shirt sleeves—he struck me two blows, calling out, "One, two," and said, "Now, boys, count." They counted every lash they gave me. The first man gave me ten blows himself, standing on my left side, striking over my left arm and on my back; the next one gave me five blows. Then a fresh hand took it and gave me ten blows; that made twenty-five. They then stopped, and asked me again if I would leave the county. I still refused, and told them that now they had commenced they could go just as far as they pleased; that all had been done that I cared for; that I would as soon die then as to take what I had taken. They continued to strike their blows on my back in the same way until they had reached fifty. None of them struck more than ten blows, some of them only three, and some as low as two. They said they all wanted to get a chance at me; that I was stubborn, and just such a man as they liked to pound. When they had struck me fifty blows they stopped again and asked me if I would leave; I told them I would not. Then one of the strongest and most burly in the crowd took the strap himself and gave me twenty-five blows without stopping; that made seventy-five; I heard them say, "Seventy-five." At that time my strength gave way entirely; I grew dizzy and cold; I asked for my coat; that is the last I remember for several minutes. When I recovered myself they were still about me; I was standing; I do not think I had been down; they must have held me up all the time. I heard them say, "He is not dead yet; he is a live man yet; dead men tell no tales." But still they all seemed disposed, as I thought, to let me go; I heard no threatening, except what passed a few moments afterward. They all passed in front of me, or a great number of them—I will not say all—and drew their pistols and showed them to me; they told me that if I was not gone within ten days they were all sworn in their camp, and sworn positively, that they would kill me, either privately or publicly. They then asked me where my office was; I told them my office was at the court-house in Aberdeen. They said they would kill me either privately or publicly; that they would be sure to do it if I did not leave. These men were all armed with the same style of pistol, those that passed before me; before they got through I had completely recovered my senses, and I noticed everything particularly, and saw that all had the same style of pistols, what appeared to be about six-inch revolvers. Their clothing I noticed especially; I was with them a long time; it was as light as the moon could make it. Their clothing was all of the same pattern and form; they were all cut and made garments. Their face-pieces were

very defective; if I had known the men personally, I could have recognized nearly all of them. I did recognize several of them, and swore against some at the Oxford court. They were countrymen, men I had not had much to do with. If I had known them, I could have recognized twenty persons, at least, their face-pieces were so very defective.

*Question.* What was the style of their dress?

*Answer.* The gown they had on came just about half way down below the knee; it was cut rather like a tight night-gown, and was close fitting over their coats, and slashed up on each side, so as to allow them to step well. There was a band around the waist, and all up and down, in front of their gowns, were the same sort of buttons; that struck me as another singular thing; they were all pearl buttons. Their head-piece, the front part of it, was a piece of cloth rounded to a point, and came down to about the pit of the stomach, long enough to cover the beards of most of them; but I saw the beards of several of them, even under that, those who had long beards. In these face-pieces were large round holes for the eyes, two inches across; they were very large, and, in fact, in one instance, the face-piece moved, and I saw and recognized the man through the eye-holes; the hole for the mouth in the face-piece was a very large hole. Around those mouth-holes and eye-holes were rings of red, to make them look like blood; I do not know what they were stained with. The back part of the head-piece, when placed around in front, came down just over the eyebrows; when riding, or not at their work, they always put their head-pieces on with the long piece back, and the back-piece in front, in order to give them unobstructed view.

*Question.* This piece which hung down before the face was attached to the cap?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was all in one piece. They could turn it around, and let the long round piece hang down behind when they were riding; many times they have been seen in that way in the county.

*Question.* What was the color?

*Answer.* The color was pure white; there was no difference in the color.

*Question.* Cap and gown both?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. One of them stepped up to me and asked me, "What do you think of domestic; don't you think it right cheap?" and he took hold of his garment, and unbuckled the belt, and I observed as closely as I could how the gown was made. He said, "What do you think of domestic; don't you think it right cheap?" I suppose he meant to refer to the great quantity which they had in use. The Ku-Klux then left me, and went off as if they had been stealing sheep; they were very down about it; I do not think they felt as if they had accomplished what they intended. When they went away, they really slunk away; they showed no further disposition to insult me, or to do anything to me; they left me there alone on the hill with Mr. Ross. Mr. Ross was present all the time, and he can tell as straight a story, I presume, as I can in regard to this whole matter; if any question should come up, he would be a good witness. He was not a friend of mine at all—not a political friend; I staid at his house, and paid him for staying there; when I staid anywhere in the county, I usually paid for it.

*Question.* You say you recognized several of these men?

*Answer.* I recognized two of them in the crowd, and they are now under arrest.

*Question.* Where did they live?

*Answer.* They lived in that immediate neighborhood.

*Question.* In the neighborhood where you then were?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you any objection to stating their names?

*Answer.* No, sir; their names are John S. Roberts and John Porter.

*Question.* What sort of men are they?

*Answer.* Roberts is the son of one who was formerly one of the wealthiest men in the neighborhood; I suppose young Roberts is heir to a plantation of eleven hundred or twelve hundred acres of improved or open land.

*Question.* Is his father living?

*Answer.* No, sir; the father is dead.

*Question.* How old is young Roberts?

*Answer.* I suppose he is about twenty-five years old. I knew the man pretty well, and I would have recognized him if he had not been marked in any way; but he has a large red scar or mark on his neck, which runs up into his face, a red place, which I suppose he has had from birth.

*Question.* He was marked so that you recognized him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I knew him well. Porter is a man of poorer family, but he is a respectable man in the neighborhood.

*Question.* Is he a man of some property?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a small property.

*Question.* How old a man is he?

*Answer.* I think he is about the same age as the other, about twenty-five or twenty-six years old.

*Question.* Did you think you knew others of them?
*Answer.* I could have recognized them if I had known them before; I saw their faces well enough.
*Question.* They were strangers to you?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I could not tell who they were.
*Question.* Those two were the only ones that you recognized so as to feel confident of them and to be able to swear who they were?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is there any village or town anywhere near there?
*Answer.* No, sir; the nearest town at all is Aberdeen.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did Mr. Ross recognize any of them?
*Answer.* Well, sir, I have not seen Mr. Ross since then.
*Question.* You have not seen him since?
*Answer.* He was very badly frightened indeed, and would say nothing at all to me the next morning.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Is it an ordinary farming country about there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Then such a number of men as were in that party must have been gathered from over considerable territory?
*Answer.* They live very densely there, except a few who live in the fork of the river, as we call it. You go out some five miles from Ross's mill and it is a poor country, where the people live very thickly. A majority of the men were within probably ten miles of the place. There are two rivers there that were very high at the time; I should have gone on to Aberdeen on the 9th if it had not been for the very high water. It had rained on the 8th, and the rivers were very high; I probably should have gone to town if it had not been for the high water. The Buttahatchie is a very swift stream, and the Tombigbee is a large river at that point; and they could not come from Alabama or from other parts of Mississippi very well at that time.
*Question.* There were no bridges there?
*Answer.* No, sir; only ferries; there was a long ferry on the Buttahatchie, three or four miles across.
*Question.* You think these men must have all lived within the immediate district about there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Have you stated all you wish to state about that occurrence?
*Answer.* I wish to state one thing more that both Mr. Ross and myself noticed. When he warned me that night, he said, "These men are not drunk; they are not in whisky at all, and you had better sleep in the gin-house; if they go now and get drunk and come back, they will kill you sure enough."
*Question.* That is after they had assailed you?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; we both recognized that they were not drunken men. I do not drink liquor myself, and I can recognize the smell of it as quickly as any one.
*Question.* He advised you not to go back to the house to sleep?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; as they were not drunk at the time. He said, "If they go to William Walton's store and get drunk, and then come back here, they will kill you."
*Question.* How far was that store from there?
*Answer.* About two and a half miles; they went in that direction when they went off.
*Question.* Did they all seem to be supplied with horses?
*Answer.* They were all with horses; that is, I did not see all the horses; I got on the hill as they went, and saw them at the foot of the hill; the horses were clothed in white as well as the men—all that I saw. I could not swear positively that they were all mounted, but I think they were all mounted, every one of them.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Were the horses all disguised?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; all had white cloths over them. They took my pistol from me that night and gave it to Mr. Ross, and told him to keep it for me and give it to me. Before they left they went to Mr. Ross and told him they wanted the pistol; they said, "We don't want to steal it from you; we are not that kind of men; but we do not want him to have it again to-night. We will leave it with Mr. Miller." Mr. Miller is the miller at the mill. They left the pistol there for me, and I got it, and have it now. That shows that they were not for thieving—that they were not drunken, or anything of that sort, but were merely bent on getting me away. They were a much different class of men than I ever supposed I would meet in a Ku-Klux gang; many of them were genteel persons, men of cultivation, more or less. Of the twenty-eight that are arrested and are at Oxford, or who were there, the most of them were gentlemanly fellows and well-educated men.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND :)

*Question.* How many of them joined in the conversation?

*Answer.* The conversation was mostly carried on by the captain himself.

*Question.* He was not one of the two men you recognized?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not know the captain. They have the captain of the gang, and he is under arrest, but he was not known to me.

*Question.* You suppose he was the man who was in command there that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was the same gang.

*Question.* Who does the captain they have got turn out to be?

*Answer.* He is a young man who lives in the neighborhood, a Willis, a nephew of the gentleman I staid with on the night of 8th of March; his name is Plummer Willis. He has been arrested, on the testimony of other witnesses, in a murder case.

*Question.* What sort of a man is he?

*Answer.* A young man of rather fast habits; but he was not drunk that night; he is a young man, about twenty-three or twenty-four years of age, finely educated, and belongs to one of the first families of the country.

*Question.* In all of their proceedings there with you everything was perfectly orderly and regular?

*Answer.* There was perfect order and the most thorough discipline. The little difficulty that was at the head of the column, in pushing me and carrying me along, was the only thing that disturbed the line at all. It was under as fine and as thorough discipline as you ever saw a troop managed in your life. It shows that they had marched before, and knew what discipline was.

*Question.* You say several of them used the strap in whipping you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there some mode of designating the next man to do it?

*Answer.* Well, it was usually from behind me, and I could not see how it was done; no names were called; they just seemed to stand there and be ready all the time, and they seemed to be very anxious to get a chance at me; there seemed to be plenty of hands to take hold.

*Question.* You heard no order given about that?

*Answer.* I heard this, "Now another," or something like that; but I did not hear any special order calling upon any one.

*Question.* Nobody who was called upon seemed to refuse?

*Answer.* O, no, sir.

*Question.* Did you go back to Mr. Ross's that night?

*Answer.* I staid at the gin-house.

*Question.* You took his advice, and went to the gin-house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I did not care to get with them again; I was of the opinion that he was, that if they came back again and were drunk, I would not get off with my life.

*Question.* Toward the end of this beating you say that you became wholly or partially insensible?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a sickness or dizziness came over me.

*Question.* Were the blows administered with force and severity?

*Answer.* O, with the utmost vigor, with the strong strap that they had. My back was in a terrible condition. The physicians examined me afterward, and their statement could be obtained, I suppose.

*Question.* The blows were all on your back or shoulders?

*Answer.* Entirely upon my back; there were no bruises upon any other part of my body.

*Question.* What was your condition for some time after that?

*Answer.* It was as weak as you ever saw a man who had a back. I wished to go right on to Jackson and to come on here, but the doctor stated to me and to my friends that it would not do.

*Question.* Did you return to Aberdeen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I returned to Aberdeen in my buggy; I had one at the time, with two horses; and I rode into Aberdeen on Thursday. On Sunday evening I left town and went to Jackson, and staid there several days, and then about a week after came on here. My condition was such at that time that I traveled only during the day, and laid over every night on my way here; I could not travel all the time.

*Question.* Have you thoroughly recovered now?

*Answer.* Entirely so, I think; the spine was affected, being the seat of the nervous system, and I was affected very much for the time being; I feel strong now, though; not at all affected by it.

*Question.* Has this organization, or this body of disguised men, gone through with any further performances?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I can give you a few of them.

*Question.* Well, proceed.

*Answer.* On the same night that I was interrupted, about five miles from me, on the

other side of the Buttahatchie, and of course, I suppose, by a different Klan, or a part of that Klan who could not get across the river, Mr. Farmer, teaching a colored school there, was whipped very severely, and they broke up his school entirely.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was Mr. Farmer a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* That was by a body of men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And from what you learned about them did they have the same uniform as those men who visited you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the same uniform.

*Question.* You think that the river was in such a condition, between where you were and where Mr. Farmer was, that it must have been another body of men?

*Answer.* Another body of men. A part of our county lies on that side of the river; the river is not the dividing line.

*Question.* You do not think it could have been the same men who visited you?

*Answer.* No, sir; they could not have crossed the river.

*Question.* How far from where you were did you say that was?

*Answer.* About five miles.

*Question.* What time of night was it?

*Answer.* It was about midnight.

*Question.* And they could not have gone over there after they left you?

*Answer.* No, sir, even if they had had the inclination; it was nearly 11 o'clock before they left me.

*Question.* What did they say to Mr. Farmer when they whipped him?

*Answer.* They told him he must leave his school; that he could not teach the colored school there.

*Question.* Was there any objection to him except his teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* No, sir; not at all. Mr. Farmer was a very intelligent man; he was an exception among the teachers of colored schools generally; he was a bright and intelligent man.

*Question.* Did you know the man well?

*Answer.* Not very intimately; I had met him.

*Question.* Was he a man of character and respectability?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was a man who would pass in almost any society as a cultivated man.

*Question.* Did he leave there?

*Answer.* He left; he was driven away from his school entirely. On the 11th of March, that was Saturday night, Aleck Stewart was whipped in the same neighborhood.

*Question.* In the neighborhood of where you were whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. His evidence was this: he had sued a white man the fall before; I have seen him, and heard his testimony before the court. He states they told him that night that it was because he had sued Mr. McNeice.

*Question.* He sued him for a debt?

*Answer.* He sued him for wages due him.

*Question.* He claimed that the man owed him for wages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they told him that darkeys were through with suing white men, getting their rights in that way; at least so he states.

*Question.* Do you know that colored man?

*Answer.* Very well.

*Question.* Is he a respectable, honest man?

*Answer.* He is a hard-working, quiet man; he is not a leading man at all. His offense was suing Mr. McNeice; they did not want him to do it. At that time there were about fifty or sixty Ku-Klux present. The freedmen about there had made up their minds that they would watch for the Ku-Klux and fire into them if they saw any more. It was a distressing state of affairs; the killing of Dupree, the interruption of myself, and the breaking up of their schools, had had a very demoralizing effect upon the freedmen. There were some seven or eight of them who took their guns, and knowing they were riding, followed them up and placed themselves in position. As they were whipping Stewart, the colored men fired into them, and one of them was probably killed; he died very mysteriously afterward, but I could not swear that he was killed. It was the opinion of the neighborhood that that was the way he came to his death.

*Question.* He died in some way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Immediately after that?

*Answer.* That was Saturday night, and I think he died on Sunday.

*Question.* The next day?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; others were wounded, one in the hand, and he is arrested and is now at Oxford; he was said to be one who got his wound at that time. Another was hit in the heel. Well, the firing was pretty sharp by the freedmen; the Ku-Klux returned it for a time, and then gave the command to "squander," which seems to be their word for dispersing. The moon was very bright; the freedmen had placed themselves so as to be at different points in the road, in order to see as many as possible. They had been shrewd in that respect; they swore against twenty-two of those who were there that night. They had disrobed themselves of their white garments and had taken to their horses.

*Question.* Did they throw away their uniforms?

*Answer.* They took them off and folded them up, but did not leave them behind. The negroes also had men to fire in among those who were holding the horses, and that demoralized them entirely. Many of their horses were also recognized. On the 14th of March, in another part of the county, about ten miles north of Aberdeen——

*Question.* In an opposite direction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was another klan there, I suppose; they had been seen, and their dress is different from the others, in having holes cut in the dress, or black pieces sewed on; black pieces stitched on in the form of a letter O. Their uniform is black on the white; that seems to be all the difference in the uniform.

*Question.* The general color of the uniform is white?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. A freedman by the name of Alfred Skinner was attacked there by a band of disguised men. He defended himself from his house, and they filled his house with shot. Persons who were sent there to investigate the matter have testified to the fact that there were shot there in the house, plenty of them. They did not get him out.

*Question.* They did not succeed in driving him out of the house?

*Answer.* No, sir; he fired on them, and they did not get him. In the same neighborhood Joe Atkins was taken out by the same band. He was told that he was a radical, and made to hug a sapling—to take hold around the sapling and hug it while they whipped him severely; they beat him very badly. I have seen him myself, and talked with him. He left the neighborhood, as also did Alfred Skinner, and came to Aberdeen.

*Question.* He came into the town for the purpose of getting away from these men?

*Answer.* For the purpose of protection; they dare not stay there; they are frightened. On the same night that Aleck Stewart was whipped, they also whipped a colored man who had been in the Federal army during the war. He had left the place he was living on without the consent of the planter, and had hired himself out at another place. He was whipped, and told that that was what he was whipped for—for leaving his place without the consent of his employer. On the 29th of March a band of some seventy or eighty—the statements in regard to the number are different—went to the house of Aleck Page, a colored man, between three and four miles from Ross's mill, and surrounded the cabins of the other freedmen on the place. They went into his house, took him from under the bed, where he had taken shelter, made his wife get up and cut the bed-cord from the bed, bound him, and took him some four miles from home. There they whipped him and beat him until he was nearly dead, as in the case of Jack Dupree. They then hung him until he was quite dead, and afterward broke in his head with an ax, and buried him with the rope around his neck. These twenty-eight men who were under arrest at Oxford were arrested for that outrage, on the testimony of Fanny Page, the wife of the murdered man, Joe Davis, who turned State's evidence, and Henry Hatch.

*Question.* Were Davis and Hatch both members of the Klan?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And both present on the occasion of the killing of that man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Joe Davis swears that he was the first man who took hold of him, and pulled him out from under the bed, and that he was with him when he was killed.

*Question.* What was that done for?

*Answer.* It is impossible to tell. I knew Page; he was one of those inoffensive men—rather a young man.

*Question.* Was there any allegation against him?

*Answer.* He was a republican, that was all. He lived in the "Hills," rather in the poor section of the country.

*Question.* Was there any allegation of crime or improper conduct of any sort against him?

*Answer.* I have not heard a word lisped against him, and I was in Oxford during the whole of the trial.

*Question.* There was no pretense of criminality on his part?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was a perfectly quiet and inoffensive man, so far as I have heard.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do I understand you to say that there was a trial in Oxford of this case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; twenty-eight men were arrested, and true bills were found against them for the murder of Aleck Page.

*Question.* That was simply the offense for which they were indicted. They have not been tried?

*Answer.* They have been tried on a writ of habeas corpus; Judge Hill tried them; this was the testimony given in the case.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* That was not a final trial of the case?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* It was an examination into the affair?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The judge heard the case; he demanded the evidence of the prosecution, and they tried to prove alibis. The whole of the evidence was given in the case before Judge Hill. I myself made the arrest of twenty-eight men; they were from my county.

*Question.* Are they now in custody?

*Answer.* No, sir; the most of them have been bonded. In our State, in certain cases of murder, they are allowed to be bonded. These men have been bonded, as all men usually are in the State.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Did you have United States troops to assist you in making the arrests?

*Answer.* I think there were five or six United States troops; I was a deputy marshal.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They stand bound over for trial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; twenty-eight of them are bound over for trial in the December court.

*Question.* What did Davis and Hatch, the two men who were in the band, and who have testified, say that it was done for?

*Answer.* Joe Davis and Henry Hatch were both of them sworn against, by the wife of this man Aleck Page; they were arrested and then turned State's evidence. Joe Davis is a colored man.

*Question.* That is, she testified that they were with that party of men?

*Answer.* That they were with the crowd, yes, sir. Joe Davis is a colored man, and almost the stoutest man I ever saw among the colored race. He is of an immense frame, very strong and stout. His statement was to the effect that they came to him and told him they wanted him to go as a Ku-Klux. He told them he did not want to go. They put a knife to the vein in his throat, and told him to decide then either to go and take the oath and be a Ku-Klux, or to die that instant. He says that under the circumstances he went with them, and that he was at the murder.

*Question.* They compelled him to join the band and go with them, and help do this deed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He says he has always done the heavy work; that he has been with them since that on other occasions.

*Question.* He was made a kind of executioner?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; put ahead where there was danger. If any man had been shot that night by the negro who was killed, it would have been the man who pulled him out from under the bed; Joe Davis was made to do that.

*Question.* Did either Davis or Hatch say anything as to the object of killing this colored man?

*Answer.* They say they were compelled to do it.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Is Hatch a white man?

*Answer.* Hatch is a colored man.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They were compelled to go; but what did they say was the object of killing the man?

*Answer.* I have never heard them say. I had charge of them as prisoners; I went back there with Joe Davis; he said he knew where the body of Jack Dupree was. I was with him a great deal; I never asked him the question, and I never heard him say that there was any charge against Aleck Page at all.

*Question.* You do not know what those men had against him?

*Answer.* No, sir. I knew the man Aleck Page; I knew that he was a very quiet man; he was a yellow man.

*Question.* He was a harmless, inoffensive man?

*Answer.* He seemed to me always to be so.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did they find the body of Aleck Dupree?

*Answer.* No, sir. McKinley's Creek was near the place, and it was very high in February, and the supposition is that they would not have gone into the woods and swamp to bury him, but that they threw the body into the creek, which was high.

*Question.* What does Davis say about it? Did he say the body was thrown into the creek?

*Answer.* He says he does not know; that was not in the neighborhood where he lives. He said that they cut the body open. Now, if they cut the body open, and took the insides out, and took him right to the creek, which was swollen at the time, the inference is that they took the insides out in order to make the body sink.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Are there any other instances of outrages that you can state from reliable information?

*Answer.* I have not got them noted down exactly in the order of their dates. There was one Abraham Wamble, a colored preacher, who was taken from his house, in the northern part of our county, in the neighborhood where those other outrages were committed, on the 20th day of May.

*Question.* Do you mean May last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; on the 20th day of May last. He was shot seven times. His body was found and a coroner's inquest held. His family and neighbors saw the men who murdered him; they testified that they were masked men who did the murder.

*Question.* Did they state how large a body was present?

*Answer.* From fifty to sixty.

*Question.* Did they wear this same kind of uniform?

*Answer.* The same kind. This man Joe Davis says he was in that crowd; that they went from the southeastern part of the county to the northern part of the county and committed the murder.

*Question.* Why did they kill this colored preacher?

*Answer.* Well, sir, that is another case I cannot tell the reason for.

*Question.* Was there any allegation against him?

*Answer.* Not a thing in the world. He was a preacher, and a modest, quiet man. I had met him several times.

*Question.* Did you ever hear any charge against him?

*Answer.* Only that he voted the radical ticket.

*Question.* Did he preach to colored people?

*Answer.* Altogether to colored people; he was a colored man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did you hear that he was killed because he was a radical?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard that on several different occasions.

*Question.* From whom did you hear that?

*Answer.* From men who lived in the neighborhood where he lived.

*Question.* Did they state that those men killed him because he was a radical?

*Answer.* No, sir, they did not state that; they stated that the only offense they knew of against him was that he was a radical.

*Question.* That is an entirely different thing. The question that was asked you was entirely different from that.

*Answer.* I stated that I did not know anything against him only that he was a radical. I have seen twenty men from that neighborhood since then.

*Question.* Do these men state that it was because he was a radical? Do they pretend to know that he was killed because he was a radical?

*Answer.* They said this: That he was a preacher, and had taken an active part in politics during the campaign; they did not state that they knew the white people had anything against him.

*Question.* Were they negroes that you talked with about it?

*Answer.* Not altogether; I talked with white men from his neighborhood.

*Question.* The most of them were negroes that you talked with?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the most of them. There were but very few white men in that neighborhood.

*Question.* I want you to state whether any of them said they knew the reason of his being killed?

*Answer.* I stated that at the first, that I did not know that any of them knew positively why he was killed.

*Question.* It was simply a surmise upon their part?

*Answer.* Simply because he had taken that stand, that made them speak as they did.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Can you state any other cases?

*Answer.* The man on whose place he lived, Mr. Marshall, says himself, that he did

not know of a more quiet, well-disposed man in the neighborhood than Abraham was. He told that to the commanding officer of the troops there.

*Question.* Is Mr. Marshall a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Is he a democrat?

*Answer.* A very bitter one.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did he assume that he was killed because he was a radical?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not say that.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Give the name of some white man that did say so.

*Answer.* I do not even say that Mr. Marshall told me, but that he told the commanding officer of the troops. There was a great deal of talk about it as I came into the county. I had been absent for two months.

*Question.* I want the name of some white man who said so.

*Answer.* I cannot give you the name of any white man who told me about it.

*Question.* Did any white man tell you that he was killed because he was a radical?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did any negro tell you so?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* No white man told you so?

*Answer.* No white man said positively that he was killed for that.

*Question.* Did any white man tell you that he was killed because he was a radical?

*Answer.* No, sir; I cannot say that any white man did.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Can you give any other case?

*Answer.* Tom Hornberger was taken from his house at night, by between thirty and forty men, it was supposed, and killed; he was fairly filled with shot. That was about the 1st of April.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* In the same neighborhood where Wamble was killed, about two miles from the place.

*Question.* Did you know that colored man?

*Answer.* I did not know him personally.

*Question.* Do you ever hear why he was killed?

*Answer.* No, sir; that was done during my absence.

*Question.* Is it alleged by anybody that you know of that he had been guilty of anything wrong?

*Answer.* No, sir; Tom Hornberger was not a leading man at all—a simple citizen of the country.

*Question.* State any other case that you can.

*Answer.* On the 4th of April, a man by the name of Peter—something—I have not his last name, was whipped, with his neck under a rail, until he would say that he was a democrat; that was in some other neighborhood. The freedmen have told me of that; it is all freedmen's testimony; the freedman himself, the man who was whipped, told me.

*Question.* They whipped him until he would say he was a democrat?

*Answer.* They would not let him take his neck out from under the rail until he would say that he was a democrat, and would vote the democratic ticket the next time.

*Question.* Did he get converted by that process?

*Answer.* He did say he would vote the democratic ticket. About this time two of the members of the school board, who had voted for an estimate for a tax for school purposes, were notified by the Ku-Klux leaders to leave the board, and they did so; they were given so long a time to go off, and told that they would be dealt with if they did not go.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* They resigned?

*Answer.* Dr. Ebart resigned; Mr. McCoy did not.

*Question.* Who notified them?

*Answer.* They received Ku-Klux notices; one of them lived in town.

*Question.* What was the nature of those notices?

*Answer.* I saw one of the notices. It commenced with large flourishes, a triangle, &c., at the top. It went on to tell him that he had been guilty of standing up for free-schools; he was a teacher of a Union school in Aberdeen, a white school; that it was necessary for him to leave; that he would be required to go off the school board; that

it did not look well for him to be a teacher, and also a member of the board; that if he was not off at a certain time he would be dealt with, and then it was signed "K. K. K."

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He was a teacher and at the same time one of the trustees?
*Answer.* He was a member of the school board.
*Question.* So that he could pay his own salary?
*Answer.* He was one of the seven men who composed the board.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* If I understand it, there were six men who were really members of the board, and you were ex-officio the president of the board, with no vote except in case of a tie?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is so. About that time all the teachers on the east side of the Tombigbee River were called upon and notified to close their schools, and all the schools were closed; there was not a school taught out on the east side of the river.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* After what date?
*Answer.* About the 1st of April. They went around on different nights, and I could not give the dates of all.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Who gave those notices?
*Answer.* The Ku-Klux went in a body and called upon the teachers. For instance, Miss S. A. Allen, a lady at Cotton Gin, told me of the performances there.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Who was she?
*Answer.* She was a northern lady from Geneseo, Illinois, sent down there by the Missionary Society, and employed in a free school.
*Question.* How many called upon her?
*Answer.* About eighty came, as she states. Some of them went into her room without any notice; I do not know how many went in; that was on Monday.
*Question.* What time of night?
*Answer.* About 12 o'clock, about midnight.
*Question.* After she had retired?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* They asked her if she would close the school on Wednesday; she was frightened, and told them that she would; they told her that she must close it; that if they came again, they would not let her off so easily. Miss Allen made this statement to me herself; she is highly educated and an accomplished lady.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* How many of those teachers were there on that side of the river who were thus visited?
*Answer.* There were some twenty, I think, on the east side of the river. Most of the schools on the west side of the river, the side that Aberdeen is on, were notified to close, and many of them did close. There were twenty-six in all that were interrupted.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* State if there was anything further in regard to that interview with Miss Allen.
*Answer.* That was all I think of. She said she told them that she would be obliged to leave; that she was not protected, and would go. They said it was all right; that if she went they would not interfere with her any further, but if she did not go, or if she came back, they would not treat her as quietly as they did then. They went into the room and lighted a light.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* They broke up all the schools in the county?
*Answer.* They broke all up on the east side of the river; none there finished their terms. They visited Mr. Ebart, at Aberdeen; he was a southern man, and there was no objection in the world to him that I know of. They went to him and told him that he must get out of there; that they would allow him to teach a school there if he would make it a pay school, and not expect anything from the school board.
*Question.* Make it a private school instead of a public school?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. They told him he could teach on at that rate, and if the people refused to send their children or to pay him, he could just speak about it in the neighborhood, and they would find it out and make them pay him.
*Question.* They would collect the money for him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they would collect the school money for him. That was Mr. Easton Ebart to whom they told that. They notified Mr. Posey and Mr. Jones in the same way. I could tell you all the names if necessary; several of them were notified that they must close their schools.

*Question.* I do not know that it is necessary to give all their names.

*Answer.* There were twenty-six schools interrupted and three school-houses were burned.

*Question.* Burned openly by this band?

*Answer.* Miss Ward taught near the city of Okalona, on the west side of the river; she went on Friday morning to her school, and found that the books were all piled up under the trees, and with them a bottle of kerosene oil. And there were tracks enough there to assure her that there had been a good gang of men there the night before. No one saw it done.

*Question.* The house was burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. No charge was ever made against Miss Ward or her school; it was a white school.

*Question.* No one saw the house burned?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* The appearances indicated that there had been a great many persons engaged in it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In the same neighborhood Mrs. Anna Dance, a white lady, was teaching a white school, and her school-house was burned. Mr. Hanstine was teaching a colored school; he was notified by the Ku-Klux that he must leave; he was living in a very densely settled neighborhood of colored men. He gave out that he would be prepared himself, and that he should not close his school, but would go on with it. They came the next night or so, and burned his school-house, and left a notice on a tree that if he undertook to teach any longer they would burn the house he was boarding in. But Mr. Hanstine taught his school under these circumstances; he built another school-house in the yard of the house where he lived.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Who is Mr. Hanstine?

*Answer.* He is a man from Polo, Ogle County, Illinois. I can give you the names of all the teachers driven out. The number of schools interrupted was twenty-six.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* I hardly think it is necessary to do that.

*Answer.* The Rev. Mr. Galloway, who preaches in the southern part of our county, was called upon, and notified that he must not preach any more.

*Question.* Is he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a white man and a college graduate.

*Question.* To what denomination does he belong?

*Answer.* He is a Congregationalist.

*Question.* Is he a northern man?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was born in the county adjoining the one I live in. They told him he must stop his preaching; that they wanted him to get out.

*Question.* Did a body of men call on him in the night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he staid at my house on the 25th of June, and told me about it at the house. They have called on him twice, once in April and once in June. He still preaches there. They have left him notice after notice, and have called on him twice, but they do not kill him.

*Question.* What objection have they to his preaching?

*Answer.* He preaches to the freedmen; that is all he knows.

*Question.* Have they ever objected to his religious doctrines, or his style of preaching, or to anything, except that he preaches to the colored people?

*Answer.* Not that I know of. I do not know that they know what is the difference between Congregationalism and Methodism.

*Question.* They do not object to him as a man in any way?

*Answer.* Not that I have ever heard. He told me that it was because he was a republican, and preached to the freedmen. I have also been to his house. I think I was there on the 21st of June.

*Question.* He has not suspended preaching?

*Answer.* No, sir. He was also a teacher of a colored school in his neighborhood.

*Question.* You have no taxes for the support of preachers?

*Answer.* No, sir. On the 6th of April, at Starksville, in Oktibbeha County, another Methodist minister was driven out; his name was D. McLachlan.

*Question.* What was he?

*Answer.* He was a Methodist preacher, and had been there for about a year, preaching under the Northern Methodist Church. They called upon him, a crowd of them, on two different occasions; the first time he refused to go, but finally was driven away, and is now at the Methodist headquarters, at Holly Springs; I have seen him.

*Question.* No violence was done to him?
*Answer.* No, sir. They came to him and told him to leave there; they said that he could not stay.
*Question.* Was the notice to leave with a threat of compulsion or violence if he did not leave?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. I saw Mr. McLachlan himself; I knew him a year ago. He told me that they threatened him with assassination if he staid there.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Did he say that the object of those threats was indicated?
*Answer.* No, sir. I did not ask him.
*Question.* There was no reason given?
*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* The object was to make him go away?
*Answer.* The object was to drive him from the community.
*Question.* Was there any objection to him in any way that you understood?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know of any. I talked with him very freely; he is a very quiet man. He was educated at Oberlin. At one time he taught a school at Aberdeen. On March 30, a man, who is in this city—I saw him this morning—was called upon by a band of Ku-Klux in Chickasaw County, the county adjoining mine, and taken out and given one hundred and seventy-five lashes, and made to leave.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Who was he?
*Answer.* His name is McBride.
*Question.* Was he a teacher?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was he teaching a colored school?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Is he a white man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a very well-educated man.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* What had he been doing?
*Answer.* I do not know. I met him at Oxford, and I met him here this morning. He was certainly taken out by this band, and given a good sound thrashing, and driven away from there, and he has never been back. I understand that occurred at Sparta, Chickasaw County. With reference to the school-tax of Monroe County, that never has been collected, because the excitement ran so high there after I left; the board of supervisors were notified they should not make the assessment.
*Question.* If I understand it, the school-board, of which you were president, made an estimate of the amount necessary to be raised for school purposes?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and handed that estimate to the board of supervisors.
*Question.* You say that estimate was one cent and half a mill over on the dollar?
*Answer.* It was about that amount?
*Question.* That was for the whole expense of schools in the county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was a long way within our limit; we could have gone to fifteen mills on the dollar.
*Question.* It was only about two-thirds of what the law would have allowed you to raise, if it had been necessary?
*Answer.* That is all.
*Question.* That tax was never raised?
*Answer.* No, sir; it was never collected; our teachers are without their pay.
*Question.* It never went into the hands of the collector at all?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Is that the only tax with which you had anything to do in any way, except to assess United States taxes.
*Answer.* I merely assessed United States taxes; I had nothing to do with making the taxes.
*Question.* And you had nothing to do with collecting it?
*Answer.* No, sir; I merely made the assessments.
*Question.* And that you did according to the laws of the United States
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I tried to do so all the time.
*Question.* You assessed no taxes, except such as the statutes of the United States required?
*Answer.* Nothing at all; no charge has ever been made or hinted that I ever did otherwise.

*Question.* That was all you had to do with the taxation in any way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you stated all the operations of these klans in your county?

*Answer.* I think I have with reference to my own county?

*Question.* When did this Klan make its latest appearance in your county?

*Answer.* I think the latest appearance in my county was on the 22d of May, two days before I returned to the county. There never has been any whipping or anything else done by them since I got back there this last time. But in Lowndes County, an adjoining county, within a half mile of the line, a man was whipped on the 17th of June.

*Question.* By one of these bands?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. And the Rev. Mr. Galloway was visited in June last.

*Question.* It was a body of disguised men who waited on him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was right along on the county line.

*Question.* Without going so minutely into the details as you have in regard to your own county, will you state how it has been in the counties about you?

*Answer.* The county of Lowndes lies near; it is an adjoining county. The Buttahatchie River in some of its course divides the county of Lowndes from Monroe. In the county of Lowndes they have not had so much trouble with their schools; they have not had so many broken up, but they have had some trouble there.

*Question.* Have people been killed there?

*Answer.* People have been killed and whipped there, but I do not know the circumstances.

*Question.* You have authentic information that satisfied you that these bands have killed people, and whipped people in Lowndes County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And have made similar attempts there to break up the schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They did this in Lowndes County; the estimate for school-taxes was handed to the board of supervisors, and they made an assessment for taxes. Afterward the excitement got so high, the Ku-Klux were riding and threatening so much, that the tax was entirely rescinded, even after a part of it had been collected.

*Question.* That stopped the collection of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and they handed back what had been collected. They have no troops there; it is worse in Lowndes County to-day than with us.

*Question.* Let me ask you about the estimate you made in your county which you put in the hands of the supervisors to be assessed. Was that an opinion or an estimate merely of the expenses for school-houses and teachers in your county?

*Answer.* It is just what it would have taken, every cent, without allowing any margin at all. The excitement was so high that the whole board said, if we could just pay the teachers and have the school-houses, that would be all we would do.

*Question.* In the expenditure of money for school-houses and teachers, was there any unnecessary wastefulness or extravagance?

*Answer.* The only building we bought of importance was one in Aberdeen, for which we paid $6,000.

*Question.* How large a town is Aberdeen?

*Answer.* According to the last census, it had four thousand inhabitants. That was the most extravagant expenditure we made. We afterward built some houses in the district. One of them, I think, cost $5,000.

*Question.* In my village, of the same size, we have spent $50,000 on a school-building.

*Answer.* The purchase of that school-house at Aberdeen caused a great deal of trouble; it made some feeling at the time.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What do your country school-houses cost on an average that you have built?

*Answer.* About $300 each.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You say that generally the expenditures for school-houses and teachers were nothing unnecessary or extravagant?

*Answer.* It was just what we must have to pay expenses.

*Question.* In your judgment, would the expenditure of the money that you would have had, if the assessment had been made and the tax collected, been a judicious and prudent expenditure?

*Answer.* I certainly think so. I have been raised where we had good schools, and I think I understand the system well.

*Question.* You have spoken of one county near you, Lowndes County, where this organization has been. Have they had these organizations in other counties around you?

*Answer.* In Noxubee County, south of Lowndes County, the lieutenant-governor of

the State lives. They have a very large organization of Ku-Klux there, and they called upon him on one occasion.

*Question.* We have had a witness from that county, and it is not necessary to have a statement about that from you. You understand, generally, that this organization has existed and has committed outrages in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In that county, in Lowndes County, and also in Chickasaw County, west of Monroe County.

*Question.* Have these organizations committed any outrages in any other counties in that portion of the State?

*Answer.* The counties I have mentioned during my examination are all the counties in which this organization has been that I think of. That is about where the trouble is in our State. It is up and down the line of the Mobile and Ohio Railroad, right along on the Alabama border. I was at Oxford during all the investigation, and was freely with the officers of the court and with the grand jury. I do not think there were many complaints from other portions of the State.

*Question.* You say that in your county there were some men arrested for the murder of these two Flints, and that they were tried and acquitted?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have there been any prosecutions in the courts of your county for any other offenses committed by this band?

*Answer.* That is all. The acquittal of those parties discouraged the people, and they have not even gone into the courts at all about this matter.

*Question.* Was this strengthening of the influence of the organization in your county such that the local courts and authorities there, right in the midst of that influence, were unable to enforce the law?

*Answer.* They could not have done it under any circumstances, until the troops arrived there.

*Question.* Do you think that fear of these bands deterred people from either prosecuting or testifying in such cases?

*Answer.* It did both.

*Question.* What is the state of mind among the colored people, among the republicans, both white and black, but especially among the colored people, which is produced by these operations?

*Answer.* The excitement was the most intense I have ever seen under any circumstances. The demoralization among the colored people was perfect. We have very few white republicans there; most of the republicans are colored people. The excitement reached the distressing point. I never in my life saw so high an excitement in any other place as there was on the 8th and 9th of March, when I was in the neighborhood where these murders had been committed.

*Question.* Was the excitement which was among the colored people mainly the excitement of fear?

*Answer.* The most abject fear; they dared not even go to town.

*Question.* You spoke of several instances where they had left their homes and gone into the town, to get away from the operations of these bands. Has there been much of that?

*Answer.* Considerable of it. The men would find their way into the city, and apply to the commander of the troops, and he would send out soldiers and bring in their families. That has been done several times.

*Question.* Of all those persons whom you have named as having been killed, whipped, or otherwise abused, which was the largest number, the democrats or republicans?

*Answer.* Not a democrat has been attacked in the county; not one.

*Question.* They have been entirely republicans?

*Answer.* Entirely.

*Question.* So far as you know the persons who belong to any of these bands, what are their politics?

*Answer.* They are all, without exception, democrats, those that have been arrested; others have been charged with it who have not been arrested.

*Question.* So far as you have any personal knowledge of those who belong to these bands, what are their politics?

*Answer.* They are democrats.

*Question.* What has been the tone of opinion about these things among the people there; what sort of an opinion have the republicans had and expressed about these organizations and their operations?

*Answer.* They have denounced them, under the circumstances, of course, for they have been against republicans.

*Question.* Does the other side denounce them too?

*Answer.* Men who voted with the democratic party at our last election have taken ground against the Ku-Klux outrages; but the great majority of the people are in full sympathy with the Ku-Klux.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What sort of people?

*Answer.* White people. I saw it as plainly as I cared to see it when I made the arrests. These men were arrested for murder, and a true bill was found against them in the United States court. But the people could not have done more for them if they had just returned from a campaign in the war. When they were released on bond and went home, they were received with shoutings, the firing of cannon, and every demonstration that could possibly be made by the people. They tried to get bands of music to welcome them, but they would not come. The sentiment of the intelligent white people of that county is in their favor.

*Question.* There does not seem to be an abhorrence of such acts?

*Answer.* No, sir. The most of the people must have known the circumstances under which the acts were committed. Everybody knew that the indictments against them were for murder in the first degree. Still the demonstrations were made to get up sympathy for those men.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* If you were now to have an election there, do you think this state of things would have any effect upon the voting?

*Answer.* It is intended to have an effect by the Ku-Klux; but the Ku-Klux are, in a measure, so demoralized now in our county——

*Question.* What has demoralized them?

*Answer.* The great thing is the support the Government gave to me when I was here last March, in sending troops there. They see that the Government is still in existence, and is going to protect the people. Then the arrest of these men has been detrimental to them more or less. It is more or less expensive to carry on suits, and the people do not care to go on with these things so much.

*Question.* They do not think it so entirely a one-sided affair as it was?

*Answer.* No, sir. If an election was to come off to-morrow in Monroe County, I think, with the exception of a few neighborhoods, the people would vote their minds; but it was not so three months ago.

*Question.* Suppose an election had taken place before these efforts of the Government, these prosecutions, and these arrests, how then?

*Answer.* You could not have got five hundred republican votes in our county; you could not have got a freedman to vote in that county. The republican vote in our county is almost altogether the colored vote. In one precinct there are twenty-one white voters and seven hundred and odd colored voters; and even in that precinct they would have been so demoralized that it would have been almost impossible to have got them to vote.

*Question.* Do you mean twenty-one white voters in all in the precinct, or twenty-one white republican voters?

*Answer.* Twenty-one white voters in all. That portion of our county is very wealthy; the land is prairie land, and the population there is almost altogether freedmen.

*Question.* What is the number of voters in your county?

*Answer.* I think it is not far from five thousand.

*Question.* Do you mean the registered voters?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And about what is the population of white voters and colored voters?

*Answer.* I think there are some twelve hundred more colored voters in the county than white voters.

*Question.* About how many white republicans are there in the county?

*Answer.* I think you can count less than twenty.

*Question.* In the whole county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we have very few indeed; not enough to hold the offices of the county.

*Question.* Have you had more, or is that as many as you have had there at any time?

*Answer.* That is as many as we have had.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You had to hold two or three offices yourself?

*Answer.* I answer you frankly, I did hold two offices at one time, and hold them now. At one time I was asked to act as sheriff of the county, when I was then holding two offices, and I did it for the time being.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You have about held your own of white republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I want to state another thing: I would not slander anybody, nor do I wish to; but the idea that is entertained that there are no confederate soldiers in the Ku-Klux Klan is a very mistaken one; many of them were arrested, and many of them are known to belong to the Klan about as well as if they had been arrested;

indictments have been found against them as Ku-Klux; many of them are confederate soldiers, and they served in the confederate army.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How is the school-tax assessed?

*Answer.* It is assessed by the board of supervisors.

*Question.* You are superintendent of schools there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You make an estimate of what is wanted, do you not?

*Answer.* The school board, the board of school directors, make the estimate. The superintendent has no control of affairs separate from the school board; what is done has to be done by the school board entire, or by a majority of them.

*Question.* The superintendent is a member of the school board?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but in making an estimate of expenditures in the county, he is only one of seven, and really has no vote at all, unless there is a tie in the board.

*Question.* By law, this making the estimate devolves upon the school board?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How is that board appointed?

*Answer.* By the board of county supervisors.

*Question.* By whom are the county supervisors appointed?

*Answer.* By the governor of the State.

*Question.* You say there is a limit to the amount of tax that may be levied for school purposes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is that limit?

*Answer.* Five mills on the dollar for the purpose of paying teachers, for the teachers' fund, and ten mills on the dollar for building purposes.

*Question.* That makes fifteen mills in all?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That is levied upon the property?

*Answer.* That is to be levied upon the property of the county.

*Question.* It is not a poll tax in any shape?

*Answer.* The poll tax goes to the school fund; but the tax we have been talking about is a direct tax, levied by the board of supervisors under the laws of the State; the poll tax is a direct tax levied by the State.

*Question.* The amount raised by the poll tax is distributed to the counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it goes to the board of school directors.

*Question.* This school tax is levied directly by the board of supervisors upon the property of the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Those supervisors derive their appointment from the governor of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The tax levied in your county is the full amount allowed by law?

*Answer.* No, sir; our taxable property in the county was about $4,000,000; we asked for a little less, I think, than $30,000, less than three-quarters of one per cent.; the limit fixed by the law is one and a half per cent.

*Question.* Who fixes the valuation of property for taxable purposes?

*Answer.* That is done by the assessor of the county; the assessor goes around and makes his assessments the same as in any other State, I suppose. The school board have nothing to do outside of making the estimate of the amount needed for school purposes, and handing it to the board of supervisors. When we have done that, our duty is performed.

*Question.* And it is obligatory upon the board of supervisors to raise that amount?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if we are within the limits of the law.

*Question.* If you were in excess of what the law allowed, they would not do it?

*Answer.* No, sir; they would not do it.

*Question.* You say the complaint by the persons there was that they were compelled to support these schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was more excitement got up on the school tax than on any other question, with the exception of the railroad tax, and I do not know that I will even except that. We also had a railroad tax in the county.

*Question.* How was that levied?

*Answer.* That was voted upon the county by a direct vote of the people; there was a fifteen thousand dollar railroad tax to be collected.

*Question.* That was voted by the people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in November of last year.

*Question.* By the people who had no property to be taxed as well as by those who had?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was voted by the people of the county. It was General Forrest's road, and it received the most hearty sanction of all the democrats in the county.

*Question.* In what sense is it his road?

*Answer.* It is the Memphis and Selma road, the one of which he is president. There was a great deal of feeling got up on the railroad tax, and also a great deal on the school tax, or upon the school system.

*Question.* The school tax was not voted by the people?

*Answer.* They had a very good chance to vote in the elections when they voted for members of the legislature; the school law was made by the legislature of the State.

*Question.* Which one; the last one?

*Answer.* All the school law we have was the legislation of the State legislature.

*Question.* The last legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How much chance had the people to elect that legislature?

*Answer.* The people to elect that legislature?

*Question.* How much chance had the people in the election of members of that legislature; what had they to do with that?

*Answer.* I can only speak with regard to my own county; I know there never was a more untrammeled vote cast in the State since I have been there than the vote in 1869.

*Question.* Were there not a large number of people entirely excluded from the right of suffrage?

*Answer.* Under the fourteenth amendment?

*Question.* Under the reconstruction laws.

*Answer.* Those were the only ones.

*Question.* That excluded very nearly the entire white population?

*Answer.* Not in my county; it excluded very few in my county; most of the people voted at the election in 1869, certainly.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* That was the election held under General Ames?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

Mr. BLAIR. It excluded every person who had ever taken an oath to support the Constitution of the United States and held any office; that was construed by the military authorities who executed that law, to exclude the sexton of a church.

Mr. POOL. In what State?

Mr. BLAIR. In Louisiana, for one; and every man who had ever been a justice of the peace or a constable was excluded.

Mr. BECK. And a supervisor of a highway.

Mr. BLAIR. It is absurd to say it did not exclude almost every man of intelligence or education in the community.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What is the white population of your county?

*Answer.* I cannot tell exactly; I do not know.

*Question.* Can you guess somewhere about what it is?

*Answer.* The whole population, children and all, I should suppose was not far from ten thousand.

*Question.* Of whites?

*Answer.* No; I am mistaken in that; there are but about five or six thousand whites.

*Question.* How many blacks?

*Answer.* Probably nine or ten thousand; I presume it is very likely there are sixteen thousand inhabitants in the county.

*Question.* You have, therefore, very nearly twice as many blacks as whites?

*Answer.* Perhaps not twice as many, but not far from that.

*Question.* All the property is pretty much owned by the white people in the county?

*Answer.* Almost altogether; there are but few colored men who own property there.

*Question.* You say you had twenty-six schools in that county?

*Answer.* We had many more than that; there were twenty-six interrupted.

*Question.* How many schools did you attempt to establish in your county?

*Answer.* About sixty in all.

*Question.* Your proposition was to tax the property holders of the county to build those school-houses and supply teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the school law of the State—what everybody proposed to do.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Did that include schools of both colors?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* All the tax had to come out of the white people, of course?

*Answer.* Not all. If a man owns a cow in our State he has to pay a school tax; all property is taxable; there is very little exempt. Colored men own some stock, but not

much land. The great majority of the tax of Monroe County came out of the white people.

*Question.* Was it supposed that the building of sixty school-houses, and the employment of that number of teachers, the keeping up of that machinery, with the people impoverished, as your people had been, was a reasonable thing to do in one year?

*Answer.* We thought it was very moderate indeed. There were not sixty school-houses to be built; we only asked for about $9,000 for school-house purposes; the rest was for the payment of teachers. But there were more white schools in our county than colored schools.

*Question.* How did you come to be a United States officer and a State officer at the same time? Was there no incompatibility in the positions?

*Answer.* The appointment was made; I suppose the fact was well understood by the Department; I cannot answer for that. I know that almost every United States officer has at different times held minor State offices.

*Question.* At the same time with the other offices?

*Answer.* At the same time, a great many of them; I will not say all.

*Question.* Is that the rule in any northern State? Did you ever know it to occur in any except the reconstructed States?

*Answer.* I am not sure that I have seen it so much in the northern States.

*Question.* Did you ever see it there at all?

*Answer.* I do not know that I have; I do not remember.

*Question.* Is there nothing that you know of in the laws either of the United States or of the State of Mississippi to prevent a man from holding a Federal office and a State office at the same time?

*Answer.* Nothing that I know of.

*Question.* Since you went to that county you have held the office of Bureau agent?

*Answer.* No, sir; I beg your pardon.

*Question.* Since you went to Mississippi, then?

*Answer.* I served in Mississippi as a Bureau officer.

*Question.* For what length of time?

*Answer.* Some eighteen months, I think.

*Question.* In the employ of General Howard?

*Answer.* I was in his Bureau; but I have never served as a Bureau officer in the county of Monroe.

*Question.* Since you have been in the county of Monroe you have been sheriff, superintendent of schools, and United States assistant assessor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was sheriff for the extreme period of six weeks.

*Question.* You say you have not over twenty white republicans in the county?

*Answer.* I do not think we have.

*Question.* And never have had?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* What are your judge, sheriff, and clerk of the county; are they republicans or democrats?

*Answer.* We are classed with other counties so far as judges are concerned—both the chancellor and the circuit judge.

*Question.* What are they?

*Answer.* The circuit judge, I think, is a republican; the chancellor was always accounted a democrat.

*Question.* Who appointed him?

*Answer.* Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* All your officers are appointees of Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Every officer in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Governor Alcorn was elected by the people as a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I said every officer was appointed by Mr. Alcorn; I will qualify that; I really was appointed by the State board of education.

*Question.* The members of the State board were appointed by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* No, sir, they are elected. Judge Morris, whom you had here yesterday, was one of three members of the State board of education.

*Question.* They are all republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, elected by over 40,000 majority.

*Question.* So that all the official machinery of your county is republican, in one form or other?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, it is a republican county.

*Question.* Your judges, sheriffs, clerks, and others, of course, have the control over the selection of the juries, have they not?

*Answer.* Our sheriff never was accounted a republican in the world; I do not know that he ever voted the republican ticket.

*Question.* I did not ask you that question.

*Answer.* The officers, of course, have the control and selection of juries.

*Question.* That is the question I asked you. You have told me what your officers were. Therefore, in the trial of causes your judge and the officers who select your jurors were either the appointees of Governor Alcorn, or were themselves elected as republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that is correct.

*Question.* You spoke of one man who was killed, who was the president of a republican club. What do you mean by that, what sort of a club?

*Question.* Well, sir, it is a republican organization; the parties merely get together and sign a paper. There is no oath at all in the Monroe County clubs, none given or taken; they are just merely local organizations among themselves. And the man who was killed was the president of one of them.

*Question.* The machinery of those clubs is pretty much run by you fifteen or twenty white men?

*Answer.* Well, the republicans run the republican clubs.

*Question.* Well, do you fifteen or twenty white men control the clubs or not?

*Answer.* I cannot say that they control them; I do not know that I have ever seen that club in my life.

*Question.* What per cent. of your negro population can read and write?

*Answer.* A very small per cent.; I do not think we have more than a hundred colored voters in the county who can read; it is a very small proportion.

*Question.* Did the two men who turned State's evidence at Oxford make any confession until after it was proved they were the guilty parties.

*Answer.* Not until after they were arrested as Ku-Klux; they were arrested upon the charge of murder.

*Question.* Did they make any confession until after the wife of the man who was killed—he was killed, was he not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did they make any confession until after the wife of the man who was killed swore to their identity?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* It was proven against them first before they made any confession?

*Answer.* The indictment was found against them.

*Question.* She had been before the grand jury and identified them, before they made any confession?

*Answer.* That is the fact, as I understand it; I was not before the grand jury, and I cannot tell exactly whether the indictment was found on her testimony altogether or not. But it was her testimony that caused the indictment of the men, I think; there is no question about that.

*Question.* And it was after they were indicted, after she had sworn against them, that they turned State's evidence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They were both colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did she identify anybody but those two men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, several.

*Question.* How many white men did she identify?

*Answer.* I think she identified eight or ten men.

*Question.* You are speaking of her testimony before the grand jury?

*Answer.* I cannot say much in reference to the testimony before the grand jury, for I did not see that testimony; but I heard the testimony given in the court.

*Question.* You heard her testify in the court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It was after these men turned State's evidence that you heard her testify?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What she testified to before they turned State's evidence you don't know?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You never heard how many she identified before the grand jury?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* What excuse, if any, did those men give for not having confessed before they were identified?

*Answer.* They told me that they were afraid; that is all.

*Question.* Were they any more afraid before identification by her than afterward?

*Answer.* They were assured protection by the officers of the court.

*Question.* After it was proved on them?

*Answer.* They were told that if they confessed they would be protected against any outrage; nothing further than that. They were protected then, while before they were not; that is all I know. They lived in the community, and if they had told before it might have cost them their lives, or a great deal of trouble.

*Question.* You say the men who were tried for that first case of killing were acquitted?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; those who were tried for killing the two Flint boys.
*Question.* The judge who tried them was a republican?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And the officers of the court were republicans?
*Answer.* They were appointed by Governor Alcorn.
*Question.* And yet, tried in a court of that sort, with that class of officers, they were acquitted—found not guilty?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* They were tried by a jury selected by republican officers, were they not?
*Answer.* They were tried by a jury selected by the authorities of our county.
*Question.* You think that acquittal was in the face of the evidence, and in violation of it?
*Answer.* I do; I heard the testimony myself.
*Question.* Has that testimony ever been printed?
*Answer.* No, sir, not that I know of.
*Question.* What was the name of your judge?
*Answer.* Judge Boone.
*Question.* What is his first name?
*Answer.* I do not remember his first name.
*Question.* Is he judge of your circuit now?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was any fault found by him with the verdict in any way?
*Answer.* I never talked with him on the subject at all; I could not tell you.
*Question.* You just have your own opinion that the jury perjured themselves, and found a false verdict?
*Answer.* That is my opinion.
*Question.* Did the judge deliver the law properly to them?
*Answer.* I do not know, I was not there at the time.
*Question.* You heard the trial?
*Answer.* I heard the three men testify before the court.
*Question.* Did you hear all the testimony?
*Answer.* I did not hear all the testimony about the *alibis;* I heard some of it.
*Question.* How do you know, without hearing all the testimony, whether the verdict was a true one or not?
*Answer.* That is my opinion.
*Question.* You did not hear all the testimony?
*Answer.* It is my opinion that it was an incorrect verdict.
*Question.* You do not know what was proven for the defense?
*Answer.* No, sir; I could not know what was proven, unless I heard it all.
*Question.* If a negro was to swear that at a quarter past 3 o'clock to-day [pointing to the clock] I had killed a man in Georgetown, and Judge Poland and the other members of this committee were to swear that at that time I was sitting in my seat here, and I was acquitted on that testimony, would you say I was wrongfully acquitted?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* How do you know but what just as strong evidence as that was given there?
*Answer.* I do not know; but I understand that all the men in the Ku-Klux organization are sworn to protect each other.
*Question.* Do you understand that all the white men in your country are liars, and all the negroes tell the truth?
*Answer.* No, sir—certainly not.
*Question.* Do you believe all the negroes there tell the truth?
*Answer.* No, sir; of course I do not.
*Question.* Then, if a respectable white man should go up and swear to a state of facts inconsistent with the statement of a negro, which would you believe, the white man or the negro?
*Answer.* I should want to hear both sides of the testimony, and then make up my opinion about it.
*Question.* You do not do that in this case; you did not hear both sides; so you have just told me.
*Answer.* I told you that I did not hear all the testimony for the *alibis.*
*Question.* Yet you come here and swear before this committee that in your judgment that jury perjured themselves.
*Answer.* I state that, in my opinion, that was an incorrect verdict; I cannot state it any more plainly. I heard the evidence, and I have understood how the organization is governed in that respect. I have stated that is my opinion of the verdict, and I swear that is my opinion.
*Question.* You do not know whether those men who were on trial had anything to do with that murder or not?
*Question.* I was not with them; I merely heard the evidence for the prosecution.

*Question.* And all the evidence you have given here, except in your own case, was from hearsay, the tales of other people.

*Answer.* Certainly; I was not at any other Ku-Klux raid but my own.

*Question.* You say that you had been in the exercise of your duty at all times, strictly within the line of it, and had never given any just cause of offense to anybody, in the management of your affairs?

*Answer.* I do say so most positively; there never has been any charge made against me in all the troubles that we have had in my county.

*Question.* When did you make up this little book from which you were reading the cases you stated here?

*Answer.* The items in my own case I put down directly after the thing occurred; I think it was either on the Saturday or the Sunday after.

*Question.* And the other items which you read—when did you put them down?

*Answer.* I put them down at different times as I got them. I transferred them to this book all at one time.

*Question.* How long were you acting as deputy United States marshal?

*Answer.* About two weeks.

*Question.* Still holding all the other offices at the same time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So that you then were holding three offices at once?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was a special deputy to make these arrests.

*Question.* What property do you own in the county?

*Answer.* Most of my property is personal property.

*Question.* Do you own any real estate in that county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not; I might have owned some if I thought things were going to be more settled.

*Question.* The fact is that you do not own any?

*Answer.* I do not own any in the county.

*Question.* Do you own any in Misssissippi?

*Answer.* No, sir. I will state that I planted very largely there in 1866. I have taken a great deal of money into that county and used it there.

*Question.* What was the amount of tax that you expected to collect from the people of that county for school purposes?

*Answer.* It was between twenty-nine thousand and thirty thousand dollars, I think; that was the estimate handed to the board of supervisors, and it has never been changed.

*Question.* The bulk of the property of the people consists in real estate, does it not?

*Answer.* I expect it would be safe to say the bulk, the majority of it; but I think the personal property and the real estate are very nearly equal; that is what I remember from looking at the personal lists of the county.

*Question.* Are the people of your county all wealthy now?

*Answer.* Many of them are; they pay large incomes; that is the way I judge; I know what their taxes are to the Government.

*Question.* Are those Oxford trials still progressing?

*Answer.* No, sir; the *habeas corpus* case was closed, and the men were released on bonds.

*Question.* How many of them were held?

*Answer.* I think they were all released.

*Question.* How many were held to bail?

*Answer.* I think twenty-eight of them were.

*Question.* Are they all white people, except those two who turned State's evidence?

*Answer.* No, sir; there are four colored men out of the twenty-eight.

*Question.* There were two colored men in the same raid, besides the two who turned State's evidence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How came they to be mixed up with the whites in raids of that sort?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you; I know that one of them was always said to vote the democratic ticket, the only one I know out of all the crowd.

*Question.* Has anybody ever come to you with any complaint and admitted that he had done wrong, or that there was any reasonable cause for interrupting him?

*Answer.* I do not know that ever any one did. Under what circumstances?

*Question.* Under any sort of circumstances.

*Answer.* About these Ku-Klux matters?

*Question.* Yes; did any of these people who came to you ever admit they had done wrong?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that any ever did.

*Question.* They all know you are a leading republican?

*Answer.* A great many of our colored people know me as a republican in that county.

*Question.* All who come to you know you are a republican?

*Answer.* Certainly.

*Question.* And they come to you, when they come at all, to get your aid and assistance?

*Answer.* They frequently come to me with their stories and troubles.

*Question.* And they make their own republicanism very clearly known to you when they come?

*Answer.* If they are, as the most of them who are attacked are, if they are generally leaders, I know whether they are republicans or not; if they are leading men in their neighborhoods, I know it.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* I will refer for a moment to the trial in the Flint case; I will ask you if there were any colored men on that jury?

*Answer.* Not one.

*Question.* They were all white men?

*Answer.* All white men.

*Question.* Do colored men usually sit upon juries there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have in every other case in that county since the order of General Ames was issued, allowing them to sit on juries; that case is the only exception.

*Question.* Does anybody have the selection of the jury, or are their names drawn from a box?

*Answer.* This was a special *venire;* I suppose the officers of the county drew the names.

*Question.* Were you present when they were drawn?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Mr. Beck spoke of there being a republican judge and republican officers. Do the republican officers have the selection of the juries?

*Answer.* They have the drawing of the *venire;* that is all.

*Question.* A list of names is put in the box, and it is all chance who are drawn out?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Those men were on trial for murder?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know how many peremptory challenges the defense had?

*Answer.* I do not; they exhausted their challenges.

*Question.* Did they challenge any colored man as a juror?

*Answer.* I do not know; I cannot state that positively.

*Question.* But it was so arranged in some way that they were all white men on the jury?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you any reason to believe that any one on that jury was a member of the Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* I did not know many of the men.

*Question.* You say they attempted to prove an *alibi*?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that a common resort of the Ku-Klux when they are brought up for trial?

*Answer.* That is the only case we have had in our county; I cannot speak with reference to other cases, except the Oxford case; they tried it there.

*Question.* They tried to prove an *alibi* in that case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say it is your understanding that there is an oath taken by the members of the Ku-Klux Klan that they will swear for each other?

*Answer.* That is my understanding.

*Question.* Could they well swear for each other in any other way than to prove an *alibi*?

*Answer.* In the trials?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* They could not swear otherwise without confessing that they were present when the outrage was committed?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is that the reason why you put little confidence in their proof of an *alibi*?

*Answer.* That is one ground for my opinion: then I have no confidence in their trial by our State courts; I believe they will do everything to get their own members on the jury; that was really the foundation of my opinion.

*Question.* And will perjure themselves by swearing to an *alibi*?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I heard the testimony there, and it was very plain and positive: there was no equivocating at all; three men swore positively that those were the men, and they saw them.

*Question.* You say their success in getting clear in that case, where the evidence was so positive against them, seemed to embolden the Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* It seemed to let them entirely loose upon the people.

*Question.* Did you see that manifested in the demeanor of men in that county?

*Answer.* Not so much in that way.

*Question.* But shortly afterwards these outrages again commenced?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was any further effort made to bring anybody to trial for these offenses?

*Answer.* There never has been in that county; that seemed to put a *quietus* on all efforts of our courts to do anything.

*Question.* In the trial in the United States court at Oxford, you say the wife of the party who was killed identified these colored men, and some white men besides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Had you known Joe Davis or Hatch before?

*Answer.* I had seen Joe Davis; I never saw Hatch before.

*Question.* How did Joe Davis vote at the election?

*Answer.* He was a republican.

*Question.* He stated that he was made to go with them.

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that he was forced to go in with them.

*Question.* And in the raids he was put ahead and made to take the first of the danger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He was made to take the man from under the bed that night, so that if any shot was fired by him he would get it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it alleged in that county that those were colored men who disguised themselves and their horses, and went around and committed these crimes?

*Answer.* I saw an article in one issue of the Aberdeen Examiner which said that the whole Klan seemed to be colored men.

*Question.* That is a democratic paper published there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was stated while I was in Washington here that Mr. Ross thought he recognized a negro's foot in the crowd; and another incident was brought out to make them think that a colored man was in it. And the paper said that it seemed that the whole Klan were colored men.

*Question.* That was said in a democratic paper at the time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was any apology offered in the paper for it, any palliation for such offenses?

*Answer.* It said many things in their favor, yes, sir; it used all its efforts toward upholding the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Did that paper claim that the Ku-Klux organization was composed of colored men, or simply that this company that went about were colored men?

*Answer.* It said that the Ku-Klux Klan seemed to be composed of colored men.

*Question.* And still it was in the habit of apologizing to some extent for their outrages?

*Answer* Yes, sir. Many of the press in my State uphold the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Do any of the republican press uphold them?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Did you see many of the men who were after you that night; did you see enough of them to be able to state whether they were colored men or white men?

*Answer.* There was no colored man there. It was stated by this Joe Davis that there were no colored men in the crowd that night.

*Question.* He was not there?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were their hands disguised?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You could tell whether they were white or colored in the moonlight that night?

*Answer.* I could have told, certainly.

*Question.* They were all white?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I could see their boots and pants, and I could judge from their hands and feet whether they were genteelly dressed persons; most of them were genteel people besides being white people.

*Question.* Could you not tell from their language whether they were white or colored?

*Answer.* Certainly I could.

*Question.* Can you not tell a colored man in the dark by his language?

*Answer.* Generally; yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the language of those men that of white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and cultivated men.

*Question.* Mr. Ross was the man with whom you stopped that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he suppose they were colored men?

*Answer.* He said he thought he recognized one as a colored man by his feet; he said he could tell a negro's foot wherever he saw it, even if it was in a Ku-Klux costume.

*Question.* Did he say whether there were more than one there?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Was the chief of the Klan who attacked you dressed differently from the others?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were any orders given in their marching?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; to close up, to keep time, and to be quiet; those three orders I heard.

*Question.* You say there is a general state of terror among the negroes there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Before the United States authorities went there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was any terror manifested among the white democrats?

*Answer.* Not at all.

*Question.* They did not seem to be at all afraid of them?

*Answer.* Not at all.

*Question.* Suppose the Ku-Klux had been colored men, would not the white people have been afraid?

*Answer.* Certainly they would.

*Question.* Have you any idea at all that this trumped-up matter about their being colored men is anything more than a mere sham?

*Answer.* I am satisfied of that, from the men that I saw; they were all white men.

*Question.* Do the white people in that community even allege that they were colored men?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They do not allege it in the community?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* That allegation in the democratic paper was an exception?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is the population of your county?

*Answer.* I am not prepared to state exactly; I think, though, as I told Mr. Beck, that it is some sixteen thousand; not far from that. There are five or six thousand whites, and I think some eight or ten thousand colored people.

*Question.* Is that a rich, prosperous community?

*Answer.* We are divided by the Tombigbee River; a portion of the county is very rich land. On the east side of the river there are mostly poor men, the hill people, as we call them; but in the fork of the river, where I was, the lands are better and the people are more wealthy. Monroe County is a county of cultivated and educated people, and well to do.

*Question.* Wealthy people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, intelligent, wealthy people.

*Question.* Was the school tax of $29,000 an onerous tax on that people?

*Answer.* I thought it was very light. We did not go to near the limit that was allowed us by the law, and it was as little as we could get along with.

*Question.* If you had gone to the extent of the law the amount would have been much larger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, about $50,000.

*Question.* Nearly double the amount for which you asked?

*Answer.* Just about double.

*Question.* You did not go to more than one-half the extent the law allowed?

*Answer.* No, sir; that could be very easily told; the property was valued at $4,000,000, and we asked for only $29,000; that was not more than half what the law allowed us to take.

*Question.* Have there been any Ku-Klux outrages in counties adjoining yours? I think you said there had been.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of the instances I gave were in adjoining counties.

*Question.* Did those persons who confessed in the Oxford case that they were members of the Klan, give the signs and passwords of the order?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never asked them, and I never understood anything of that from them.

*Question.* Did they say anything about its being an organization that extended beyond that locality?

*Answer.* They did not seem to know anything about that. They stated that they went in the Klan across the river where this man Abraham Wamble was murdered; that was the only time they said they were across the river.

*Question.* Have you ever talked with white people there who were democrats about this outrage upon yourself?

*Answer.* Not much, very little.

*Question.* Did you ever converse with them about the operations of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* A great deal before them.

*Question.* What seemed to be the general tone of sentiment among them in regard to it?

*Answer.* They treated it as a sort of a joke, they treated it very lightly; when they first commenced their operations there they would laugh at them; the people stated that it was only boys' fun; the whole disposition of the community seemed to be to laugh at it. And on the 8th of March, before the 9th, when I was attacked, Mrs. Willis was talking about them, and called them the regulators, and asked me jokingly, if I was not afraid of them. The whole tenor seemed to be to laugh and joke at the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Was that Willis family a democratic family?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a very respectable family; I do not think they would have anything to do with the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Did the negroes treat it as a joke?

*Answer.* That was the time when I stated I had never seen such excitement in my life?

*Question.* The negroes were frightened?

*Answer.* They were perfectly panic stricken. This family was a very wealthy family, and had a great deal of land to work. Mrs. Willis said that their operations had demoralized their freedmen, so that they could not get them to work, and their crop was going to be injured, if not ruined, for want of work; that there was such a state of excitement there that the freedmen would not work.

*Question.* Do the colored people seem to be encouraged to work better, and to feel more secure, since the United States Government has put its hand upon this matter?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the crops are going ahead now.

*Question.* What was the effect which these arrests produced upon the white people when you went down there?

*Answer.* It was very calming; they seemed to be very much afraid of the United States authorities; very fearful.

*Question.* Was there any demonstration made in favor of the prisoners after you took them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; when I came into town they were treated with great respect, and some enthusiasm, but still they were more or less careful how they expressed it. One family took the whole band of Ku-Klux home with them to dinner.

*Question.* You mean the prisoners you had arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they asked if they could have the privilege of taking them home to dine with them, one of the first families in town, the most wealthy; I gave them the opportunity to give them a good dinner. The feeling was that of sympathy with the Ku-Klux, but it was not really much disrespect to the Government authorities. But on their return from the investigation the demonstrations went even further than before; they fired a number of cannon, had speeches, and a general jubilee, when they returned on their bonds.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What is the name of the county in which you said the school tax had to be refunded?

*Answer.* Lowndes County.

*Question.* How much of it had been collected?

*Answer.* I think about one-third of the tax, whatever it was; I think their tax was not far from what ours was.

*Question.* How was it that the commissioners and officers refunded it?

*Answer.* The board of supervisors?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I cannot tell you only as it was told me by the superintendent of the county. He told me they were frightened into it; that the people made such a fuss; that the Klan made so much trouble and so many threats, wrote them so many notices, and worked upon them as they usually do, that it demoralized the board of supervisors, so that they rescinded the tax and paid back the amount which had already been collected.

*Question.* Do you know any other instance in which officers of the law have been demoralized by these operations?

*Answer.* Wherever there is an officer in our part of the country that officer is demoralized.

*Question.* With what respect do the people treat the courts? Have you ever seen any instance in which the court was treated with contempt?

*Answer.* I think the United States court at Oxford received a good share of contempt on the 21st of June.

*Question.* How was that?

*Answer.* Colonel Lamar, one of the counsel for the defense, was speaking, I think, and

a United States witness came in. Lamar demanded that that witness be arrested, and said that he had given him some insult on the street in the morning. The court seemed very much at a loss to know what it might mean.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Was it a colored witness?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was a white man from Noxubee County. The court did not order his arrest at once, and Mr. Lamar became very much excited and commenced abusing the judge and defied the court; he made the remark twice that he defied the court, and the district attorney arose to excuse the witness. Lamar told him to shut up, to hush up, and sit down, and drew a chair on the witness and struck him. The marshal stepped up to defend the witness, or to quiet the disturbance, and Lamar gave him a blow with the fist on the side of the head that knocked him down. He then went on with the most abusive tirade against the United States authorities, against the Federal minions, as he styled them, brought down there to trample them under foot; abused the court and all the officers of the court. The prisoners jumped over the bar and rolled up their sleeves; and the students of the university there cheered, as did the citizens, at the speech of Lamar.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* How many prisoners were there?

*Answer.* Twenty-eight.

*Question.* And they jumped over the bar and rolled up their sleeves?

*Answer.* As if going in to have a good time.

*Question.* Did they try to escape?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were going to help Lamar and to clean out the court. The troops who were in charge of the prisoners came in and quelled the excitement. I have not been in the courts, with the exception of the Ku-Klux trials in Monroe, for six or eight months; and no insults were offered to the court at that time.

*Question.* Have the colored people in the county done anything, as a class, or generally, against the whites, against the democrats, to arouse their animosity, and cause anything like this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* At the time our troubles commenced last August there was no election to be held; it was in a time of most profound peace in that county. The school law had not begun to be agitated at all, and there was no question at all about politics. I have always accounted for it as the effect of the Alabama elections, as the results of the troubles gotten up there.

*Question.* What is the general demeanor of the colored people of that country toward the whites?

*Answer.* They have always been very quiet, and are now as quiet and as peaceably disposed as any people I ever saw, and I have been in many counties; they are obedient and civil.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 18, 1871.

JOSHUA S. MORRIS sworn and examined:

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* At Jackson, Mississippi.

*Question.* That is the capital of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How long have you resided there?

*Answer.* I have lived in the State about twenty years. I was born in Tennessee.

*Question.* You have always lived in the South?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Your profession is that of a lawyer?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hold any public position before the war?

*Answer.* I was a justice of the peace and a postmaster at one time.

*Question.* At Jackson?

*Answer.* No, sir; at Port Gibson.

*Question.* Have you had somewhat extensive practice as a lawyer?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you practiced in different counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Through how many counties has your practice as a lawyer extended?

*Answer.* Three or four.

*Question.* About in your own vicinity?

*Answer.* In the vicinity of Port Gibson, where I resided.

*Question.* How far is Port Gibson from Jackson?

*Answer.* I think about sixty miles.

*Question.* In which direction?

*Answer.* South. It is about half way between Vicksburg and Natchez.

*Question.* Do you now hold some official position in your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am attorney general of the State and reporter of the decisions of the supreme court.

*Question.* How long have you held each of those positions?

*Answer.* I have been attorney general from the time when the present government of Mississippi went into operation; I was appointed reporter of the decisions of the supreme court soon after the court organized; I do not recollect the exact date. I believe I was installed into office as attorney general on the 10th of March, 1870.

*Question.* This committee is directed to inquire into the condition of the late insurrectionary States, especially in reference to the execution of the laws for the protection of person and property—how far those laws are efficiently executed; whether person and property are secure; whether any crimes which are committed against either are properly punished, and whether offences of any sort have been committed by disguised bands of men; whether such offenses have been prosecuted and punished, and, if not, why. We would be glad to have you state your views with reference to the present condition of your State, including any facts which may be within your knowledge; and in ascertaining what is the present condition of the State, it may be necessary, of course, to run back some time.

*Answer.* There has been since the war, as there was during the war, a good deal of disturbance in our country. I believe that during the first three years after the surrender there was a good deal more lawlessness than there has been since (though there has been considerable since) resulting from the disorganized state of society consequent upon such a war. Murders have been committed rather more frequently than before the war; and, although I never saw, so far as I know, what are known as Ku-Klux—though I have never seen any disguised men at large anywhere and have seen very few outrages perpetrated myself, yet from information gathered from newspapers and current report, I have been led to believe, and do believe, that there was a great deal of violence up to about the close of the election held in the State in 1868. Since that time I believe it has been a little on the decrease, except perhaps in certain localities. I have been confined at Jackson by my official duties almost entirely and continuously for the last eight or ten months; I have not been abroad in the State at all, and have no personal knowledge of outrages having been committed.

*Question.* We do not require a witness to confine himself to matters within his personal knowledge. You will please state any information in reference to all these subjects which you may have derived in any mode that you consider authentic.

*Answer.* Outrages have frequently been brought to my attention by information; and I have seen facts stated by newspapers of both parties, and commented upon so as to convince me very thoroughly that there have been outrages perpetrated in the State. For the last few months—perhaps four or five months—I have not had any particular and reliable information of outrages having been perpetrated in other regions than those along the Alabama line, in the first tier or two of counties bordering on that State.

*Question.* State any instances or particulars of which you have information showing the state of affairs in those counties?

*Answer.* The information which I have received has been somewhat contradictory; but I think it is admitted by all that there have been murders committed in those vicinities. Men have been taken out of their houses and whipped by bands of armed, disguised men, numbering sometimes one hundred or more. Do you desire me to mention particular cases?

*Question.* Yes, sir; name any instances that are within your recollection, or of which you have information.

*Answer.* One of the most noted instances of which I have heard is the case of Mr. Huggins, in the county of Monroe, who, it is said, (and I have never heard it denied.) was at a late hour of the night taken from the house of a citizen with whom he was stopping, carried a short distance from the house, and there flogged by a band of men.

*Question.* Who is Mr. Huggins?

*Answer.* He is a gentleman of northern birth whom I have slightly known for probably over two years. He was filling the two positions of county superintendent of education under the State government, and revenue officer, or deputy revenue officer, of the United States.

*Question.* He was an assessor or collector?

*Answer.* He was one or the other, I do not know which. I do not know the extent of the damage that they did to him further than that I understood he was stripped partially or totally, flogged, and ordered to leave.

*Question.* Did you understand the pretext for this?

*Answer.* I do not recollect; but it was on account of his being a "carpet-bag office-holder," I think, or something to that effect.

*Question.* You have known Mr. Huggins for two years?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know anything against his character in any way?

*Answer.* Nothing.

*Question.* Have you heard anything but that he is a man of good character—respectable in every way?

*Answer.* I never heard anything derogatory to him.

*Question.* You never heard any intimation that he had not on all occasions demeaned himself as a gentleman?

*Answer.* I have been favorably impressed with his demeanor as a gentleman from the limited knowledge that I have had of him; and I have never heard anything derogatory to his character.

*Question.* This office of county superintendent of education which he held—is that an elective office?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was appointed by the State board of education, of which board I am a member.

*Question.* Were you a member at the time he received his appointment?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. As attorney general I am *ex officio* a member of the board of education of the State. It is made by law the duty of this board to appoint superintendents of schools for all the counties.

*Question.* And by that board Mr. Huggins was appointed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say the objection to him was that he was a "carpet-bag office-holder?"

*Answer.* It has been understood that objection was made to the manner in which he influenced or induced extravagant appropriations for school-houses. I am a little doubtful about that; I have heard two stories in reference to it. One was to the effect that it had been said that they had nothing against him, but that he should not collect the internal revenue. Another story that I have heard was that they objected to the manner in which he influenced or induced extravagant appropriations of money from the school fund of the county for the building of school-houses. I do not know which of these statements is correct or whether either is.

*Question.* Or both?

*Answer.* Or both; it may be that both are.

*Question.* We have had various theories and statements in relation to the treatment of northern men who have gone South. Some people say they are welcomed and well treated by everybody; others represent differently. State what you know upon this point.

*Answer.* As a rule, I do not think they are welcomed or treated very cordially.

*Question.* How do the southern people feel in reference to northern men going down there and having anything to do with politics?

*Answer.* They are very much prejudiced against northern men who come there and interfere with politics, unless they interfere in accordance with their views. If they interfere in accordance with their views, the general prejudice which exists against northern men since the war yields somewhat, and they are vastly more welcome and better treated than when they take an opposite view in politics and interfere in behalf of the opposite party.

*Question.* Can a northern man be as fierce and active a democrat as he chooses to be, without any objection?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* But suppose he adopts the opposite view, and is active in politics as a republican?

*Answer.* In the first place there is a prejudice (which is very natural after such a war) against all northern men *prima facie*. If the people there do not know something particularly commendatory of him, they are prejudiced against any northern man, and that prejudice is intensified—grows into hostility and persecution sometimes—if he interferes with politics adversely to their views.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* You mean if he goes with the republican party?

*Answer.* If he goes with the republican party—if he opposes the democrats. If, however, he is a democrat, or if he does not meddle with politics at all, and they are satisfied of that fact, they treat him well, passably well at least. The more he does in favor of their political views, the better they treat him, and the more welcome he is in the community.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* There is no objection to his being a politician, and an active one, if he is on their side.

*Answer.* None in the world. Leading democratic politicians have sometimes brought

men, white and colored, from abroad to engage actively in politics on their side. The case of Mr. Dent was a case in point. I think he was induced by democratic citizens of the State to come there and run for governor. Not being a citizen of the State, as I have every reason to believe, and never having paid a cent of taxes in the State in his life, he was induced, as I believe from information, to come to that State to become a candidate for governor on the ticket which was largely supported by the democratic party there. They also supported on that same ticket other northern men—one for treasurer, one for auditor, and one for lieutenant governor. They also supported on the same ticket an ignorant colored man for the office of secretary of state.

*Question.* That was at your last election?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the election held in 1869.

*Question.* But suppose that a northern man going down there is active as a politician on the republican side; how is he treated?

*Answer.* He is proscribed, as a general rule?

*Question.* Is he welcomed in society? Is he socially treated well?

*Answer.* Not at all; neither he nor his family.

*Question.* How do you account for this difference?

*Answer.* Well, sir, it is the pleasure of the people on account of their views. They regard the United States Government, and especially the party in power, as being intensely malignant against them, and disposed to persecute them; and they are disposed to resent it in that way, having no other. In this, too, they are very much encouraged, misled, or deceived by leading politicians who were active in bringing about the late war, who, since the surrender have been leading democrats, and who, as a general rule, were not in the army, but skulked from service in the field. I do not believe there is a very deep or wide-spread feeling of bitterness against northern men, or even northern republicans, among the great masses of the people, if they were let alone.

*Question.* You think that the feeling is encouraged and helped on by that class of leaders?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, by many of that class of leaders, and by newspapers—I do not say all the newspapers, nor all the newspapers of any particular party, but a large number of newspapers published in the State.

*Question.* Do you mean the newspapers of one political party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I mean the democratic newspapers, or, as they are sometimes called, "conservative," which means exactly the same thing.

*Question.* This term "carpet-bagger" is, I suppose, considered a term of reproach and disgrace?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so.

*Question.* Is that term applied to anybody else than northern men down there who take the republican side?

*Answer.* I think republicans sometimes apply it to northern men who take the democratic side.

*Question.* The republicans try to retaliate a little?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is said in jest or in retaliation. I think democrats apply it almost universally, and in the most offensive way possible, to northern men who come there to take the republican side, and to no others.

*Question.* If these northern men who take the republican side undertake to make political speeches or addresses, what success do they meet with; how are they treated?

*Answer.* They are either treated with silent contempt, or they are worse treated.

*Question.* Which is the more common mode?

*Answer.* They are treated either contemptuously or violently; and I reckon the most common mode is to treat them contemptuously, though they are occasionally treated with violence, insult, slander, and persecution.

*Question.* Do you know of any instances where men attempting to make republican speeches have been treated with violence, or prevented from speaking?

*Answer.* Since the passage of the reconstruction laws, I have been present on only a very few occasions when they were treated with personal violence. I was present on one occasion when a gentleman named Barry, now a member of Congress from Mississippi, was, when speaking, interrupted and insulted so violently, frequently, and continuously that he had to desist and go away. I was present at another time (I did not witness the affair except at a considerable distance) when a northern man who was on the stand (he had been speaking, I believe, and had got through, though I am not certain about that) received a blow from a brickbat, thrown probably at some other one of the republican speakers; and by this blow his leg was broken. That was in 186-. The other instance which I have mentioned was in 1869. I have been present upon other occasions when persons in the audience used noisy, violent, and insulting language, so as to make it almost impossible to speak; but on the other hand I have been present when the speakers made their addresses with perfect freedom, more frequently perhaps than when they were thus interrupted.

*Question.* Were the class of people who entertained opposite notions or views present on such occasions, or did they keep away?

*Answer.* They mostly kept away, except in small numbers. I have been present and participated in discussion sometimes when there was a fair, full discussion between speakers of opposite sides, with some, but very little, interruption. All the interruption was directed against the republican speakers; none of any serious consequence, so far as I have known, was directed against the democratic speakers.

*Question.* Has it been generally true in your State that the republicans, both black and white, have allowed democratic speeches to be made without any molestation whatever?

*Answer.* I never knew of an instance (though there may have been instances) in which republicans interrupted in any manner an opposing speaker. I was once present (I believe it is the only occasion of that kind in my life) when some of the republicans in the audience were complained of by the speaker, and I, being engaged in the debate, arose and appealed to those of them who belonged to my side to be orderly, and they immediately subsided into perfect order, and interrupted no more.

*Question.* Have republicans, either white or black, as a general rule, made any objection to the freest discussion of political affairs?

*Answer.* None within my knowledge.

*Question.* You have stated the case of Mr. Huggins. Please state any other instances which have come within your knowledge (going back to the time of the formation of your State government) where violence has been done by these bands of disguised men.

*Answer.* In the town of Meridian, in Lauderdale County, a county fronting on the Alabama line, there was, some time during last spring, a riot, in which from eight to thirty persons are said to have been killed, including one white man, the balance being colored. All who were killed were republicans, as I am informed. No one who was not a republican was injured, so far as I know or ever heard.

*Question.* We have had several witnesses here, on both political sides, who reside in that town, and we have also the evidence taken before Judge Leachman and a committee of the legislature; and hence it is not necessary for you to give a minute history of the Meridian affair.

*Answer.* I know nothing about it. I was not present at the time, and have not been there since. My knowledge in reference to it is limited entirely to hearsay.

*Question.* Can you state any other instances that have come to your knowledge?

*Answer.* There were the cases of two schoolmasters from the eastern part of the State—one from Oktibbeha County, and I forgot what county the other was, but it was one of those eastern counties. Those two men came to Jackson to complain to the governor and myself of outrages that had been perpetrated upon them by armed and disguised men, who had beaten and maltreated them to such an extent that they could not continue their schools without personal danger as they thought. They were advised to go to a United States commissioner in the district in which the outrages were perpetrated, and to institute prosecutions, which they did. I believe the cases are now, both of them, undergoing investigation in the United States court.

*Question.* When were these acts committed upon these two teachers?

*Answer.* I cannot state the date; but my impression is that it was in the month of May or June of this year. Another instance that I might mention is a case that occurred in the town of Pontotoc, in Pontotoc County, where an armed band was fired into one night and one of their number killed and several wounded. They had come, according to my information, to attack Colonel Flournoy, a noted republican of that town.

*Question.* The editor of a republican paper there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He is the editor of what is considered the most violent republican paper in the State.

*Question.* He is an active and positive man?

*Answer.* Very.

*Question.* Do you recollect any other cases?

*Answer.* I do not at present recollect any very recent cases. To what time do you wish me to go back?

*Question.* Perhaps there is no occasion to go back further than the organization of your State under the present State government. Our purpose is to ascertain the present condition of affairs.

*Answer.* These that I have mentioned are the most recent cases, and the only ones I remember which are comparatively recent. I believe there have been frequently others which have been brought to my notice, which have occurred since the election. The mayor of the town of Brookhaven was murdered by persons unknown.

*Question.* Did you understand that it was done by a body of men in disguise?

*Answer.* There is no information as to whether they were disguised or not. Nobody saw them commit the act. I think they crept up to a window and threw a brick in. The mayor of the town, who was sitting inside, received from this brick a blow on the head from which he languished in an insensible condition for, I believe, several weeks, and finally died. I believe one or more of the offenders have been arrested and are now in jail. I speak now only of such cases as are attributed, and properly attributable, to

political causes. There have been frequently other outrages arising from other causes; occurring sometimes between men of the same party, and of the same race, white or colored.

*Question.* We wish to inquire more particularly in relation to the operations of these bands of men who go about in the night-time in disguise.

*Answer.* I have mentioned all that I recollect at this moment on the subject. But I have heard generally that where they do not perpetrate actual outrages upon individuals they go about the country and terrify the people by their disguises and their threats.

*Question.* From your information and the knowledge you have derived in all ways, are you satisfied that these organized bands exist in that portion of the State?

*Answer.* I think they exist in certain localities. I think there is a vast majority of the counties of the State in which no organization exists at the present time.

*Question.* The organizations do not prevail so much as formerly?

*Answer.* Not so much as formerly.

*Question.* From all the information you get as to these bands, the nature of their acts, and the persons against whom they seem to direct their efforts, what is your judgment as to their purpose; what do they design to accomplish?

*Answer.* I think their purpose is mainly political; to get clear of officers who are obnoxious to them, and to control in their favor the political action of the people.

*Question.* Have their operations in your judgment any special reference to influencing the vote of the colored people?

*Answer.* I think that probable. There has been no election since November, 1869, in which they could desire to influence votes.

*Question.* But you had the experience of the election in 1869?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the previous election in 1868?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were not operations of the same kind then going on more extensively than since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; very much more extensively in 1869 than now, and much more extensively, I think, in 1868 than in 1869.

*Question.* Is this gradual suspension of operations due, in your judgment, to the fact that no election has been pending since then?

*Answer.* It is very probable.

*Question.* What has been the effect actually produced by the operations of these bands upon the colored people; how do they feel in regard to them?

*Answer.* Where these influences reach them they are very much paralyzed in their opinions and their actions and very much afraid to vote or speak.

*Question.* Do they feel that they are in any danger from these bands of men if they act or speak with the republican side?

*Answer.* They seem so to feel from what they say and from the way they act.

*Question.* You say you believe the purpose of these organizations is political; do their operations all seem to be directed against men of one political side or one political party?

*Answer.* I have never heard of anybody being molested or threatened except men of one political party. I will say, however, that they doubtless do consider other matters. I think it probable that they sometimes punish alleged offenders against the laws. When they go out on a raid of that sort they take into the scope of their operations everybody that is objectionable; but it has so happened, according to the best of my observation, that republicans, white or colored, are generally the victims.

*Question.* Republican offenders are much more apt to suffer at their hands than those of their side?

*Answer.* I have never heard of anybody else suffering at their hands.

*Question.* What has been the tone of your presses of the two political sides upon this subject?

*Answer.* On the republican side the tone of the presses has universally been denunciation of these outrages; and on the other side some of the papers, admitting their existence and publishing their exploits, have denounced them in the most unmeasured terms. Some few of the democratic papers have done that. But a great many of them, if they say anything about them, rebuke them very faintly indeed. In one instance I saw in a leading paper "Advice to our friends," as they called them, not to send these carpet-baggers out of the State in the future to tell their tales of persecution and to misrepresent southern people; but it said, it is better to let them stay; from which I infer, if I may be allowed to state it, that the meaning was, it had better be put out of their power to leave the State and tell of these outrages.

*Question.* Was that the clear signification of the article?

*Answer.* I think so; I so understood it.

*Question.* Has the tone of the politicians of the two sides corresponded with that of the papers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it has been universally the same, so far as I know.

*Question.* Have republican presses, republican men, and republican speakers, uniformly denounced any such organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so far as I know; and so have the democratic speakers sometimes. Decent, considerate, reflecting men on their side I have heard sometimes touch the matter and rebuke it, rather faintly though.

*Question.* Are they the rule on that side or the exception?

*Answer.* They are the exception.

*Question.* In all this class of outrages that have been committed by these bands of disguised men, to what extent have they been punished or brought to trial and conviction?

*Answer.* There has always been a disposition, so far as I know, among the citizens whose duty it was, to bring these men to punishment; and that extends throughout the State; I mean since the organization of the present government, and from the governor down to the humblest officer. So far as my knowledge goes they have done their best, and manifested the best disposition possible to bring these men to condign punishment; but their success has been very imperfect. There has been great difficulty in obtaining proof, sometimes because it is very difficult to find anybody who can testify specifically to the identity of the persons; at other times through the operation of fear.

*Question.* The very manner in which the outrages have been committed has, I suppose, made it to a considerable extent difficult to ascertain who are the offenders?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. As in house-burnings, or midnight assassinations, the first great difficulty in the way is to discover the author.

*Question.* The very object, I suppose, of the disguise, is to conceal the identity of the perpetrators?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and of going under cover of night.

*Question.* Do you think the inability of the officers to bring these men to punishment has been increased by the fear that has been created among the people? Are the people afraid, in many instances, to disclose what they know?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the officers have been afraid in some instances to attempt to bring the offenders to justice; and if they pretended to attempt it, it was only in a very perfunctory manner, just to get clear of the odium which would attach to them if they made no effort. Then, in some instances, witnesses have been afraid; they have so told me. I might have mentioned another case, in which some armed and disguised men appeared at the plantation of Lieutenant Governor Powers, in Kemper County, I think. They were fired into, and one of them killed. They perhaps had whipped one or two negroes there, or in the neighborhood. I have no knowledge myself of the occurrence, but I had a letter in regard to the matter from Lieutenant Governor Powers a short time before I left home.

*Question.* That was a recent case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was in the month of June, I think.

*Question.* Has the difficulty of ferreting out these offenses been in any degree magnified or increased by a feeling of approbation of these things among a considerable portion of your community who are not in fact engaged in them?

*Answer.* I do not know that there has been any particular approbation. The democratic newspapers of the State, and the politicians of that school, seldom admit the existence of any such order anywhere. I have heard very intelligent men express the belief that there was no such organization in existence now, and that none ever existed there or anywhere else in the country.

*Question.* Do you think that such expressions result, in a measure, from a willful shutting of their eyes to the facts?

*Answer.* I think so in many cases. Perhaps it is not so with the mass of the people. The mass of the white people of Mississippi are anxious to have peace; and although they are misled and deceived, and perhaps sometimes induced to do wrong, I think the blame for that belongs to the leading politicians of the State, or at least to a great many of them. Some of the very class of the people I speak of—many perhaps—belong, I have no doubt, to these secret organizations; but they have been misled into it; they have been deceived by persistent and systematic misrepresentations of the object to be accomplished, and of the necessity for such an organization; and this has always been done, as I believe, by leaders of the democratic party.

*Question.* You have said that you believe this organization, to some considerable extent, was intended to operate on the colored voters, to create fear and intimidation among them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and to produce subordination.

*Question.* What is the general feeling among your people, and especially among the class of leaders that you speak of, in regard to negro suffrage?

*Answer.* I believe that the general feeling among leading politicians is that negro suffrage results from a usurpation of power by the Federal Government. Many of them think, and some openly claim, that it will endure only so long as the present party shall

remain in power; that when the democracy get into power this thing will be reversed, and the negro will cease to be a voter; that the amendments to the Constitution—those at least relating to the subject of negro suffrage and disqualification of white people for office—will be abrogated.

*Question.* That is one of the things to be cured?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And while the evil continues they want to make it as light as possible?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Then there is another class who do not say that, but who, while they declare it a usurpation, say they are willing to let it stand, and consider it as a final settlement of the question. The more ingenious men, I think, hold out such professions as that. I do not know how honest or dishonest their professions of that sort are, but that is what they say.

*Question.* How has negro suffrage operated in your State?

*Answer.* Well, sir, on account of the want of education, information, and experience, the negroes, as a race, are scarcely fit for suffrage as an abstract proposition. They have learned, within the last few years, a great deal, and are now vastly more fit for it than they were at the beginning. But before they had the right to vote in Mississippi, the prospect was that they would be exterminated.

*Question.* Why?

*Answer.* The most extremely unfriendly legislation in regard to the negro was enacted by the legislature that went into power in the fall of 1865.

*Question.* State something of the condition in which the colored people were put by that legislation.

*Answer.* As a slave, the negro was protected on account of his value; humanity went hand in hand with the interest of the owner to secure his protection, to prevent his being overworked, underfed, insufficiently clothed, or abused, or neglected when sick. But as a free man, he was deprived of all the protection which had been given to him by his value as property; he was reduced to something like the condition of a stray dog. In that condition the laws which were made for his government applied in some cases to him alone, and not to the white people. In some cases acts which, when committed by a negro, were penal, were no offenses at all when committed by a white person. The negro was forbidden to rent land; yet he was required to be at work and have a permanent home within six weeks, or some such time, after the passage of the act of November 25, 1865. There was also passed a law authorizing the apprenticeship of minor negroes wherever the parents were unable or unwilling to support them; and in such cases, the old owner was to have the preference. If a negro contracted to work, and did not work, or went away without fulfilling his contract or serving out his term of employment, he was liable to arrest by anybody; and there was a reward to be paid by his employer, which was charged to the negro and taken out of his wages. He was liable to be committed to jail for not working; but there was no law to enable him to collect his wages. The laws which had been passed in Mississippi during the war, and those enacted by this same legislature, hedged up the way of creditors desiring to make collections. Those laws were doubtless intended to apply to commission merchants and others who had large claims against the southern people, the latter being impoverished by war and unable to pay. But those laws, in fact, applied in many respects to the collection of the negro's wages. There was a summary remedy to compel the negro to work, and an impracticable remedy, amounting really to nothing, for the collection of his wages. Thus the matter stood. These laws, very bad on their face, were executed with great barbarity in many instances. And there were severe laws passed directed against the negro for not paying his taxes. If he did not pay his poll-tax he was a vagrant; and there was a very severe and stringent law on the subject of vagrants. Negroes were not allowed to own arms or ammunition.

By Mr POOL:

*Question.* Those laws were all passed by the legislature that met after the close of the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. And there was another provision which revived and declared in force all the laws which had been in operation at the time slavery was abolished in respect to slaves, free negroes, and mulattoes. Among those old laws, thus revived by the legislature of 1865, was a law which declared any assemblage of, I think, five persons an unlawful assemblage, and which authorized an officer to arrest and punish colored people when so assembled. I state the law only from memory; I have not looked at it for a long time.

Mr. BLAIR. I do not think it worth while for the witness to go into a statement of the laws. We have the law-books to refer to if we need to consult them.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) I think, as this gentleman is a professional man, a lawyer of the State of Mississippi, he should be allowed to state, substantially, what the law was.

Mr. BLAIR. There is a much better mode of getting at the law than by parol testimony.

WITNESS. I think so too. I state the law only from memory, and my recollection may not be perfect.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* It is not expected that you will give anything more than a general statement of the law.

*Answer.* I will state, generally, that the laws were very unfriendly to the negroes. Under the provision to which I have just referred, the negro could be punished for keeping a school, or for attending a school, or any religious or any other kind of meeting. I never knew any to be punished under this law; but it could have been done. The laws for binding out apprentices and regulating labor were very harshly enforced, and so were the laws in respect to the possession of fire-arms. Most of these laws were repealed or modified by the same legislature which passed them; but not until after the passage of the civil-rights bill by Congress, and not until the military commanders of that region had forbidden the enforcement of those laws, and not until cases had been transferred from the courts of the State to the courts of the United States.

*Question.* Under the civil-rights bill?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The county courts and inferior tribunals declared the civil-rights bill to be unconstitutional, and refused to enforce it or be governed by it; but the cases were in some instances taken out of the hands of those courts and carried to the Federal courts. I took one or two cases of that sort into the Federal courts.

*Question.* What was the result of that legislation and the action which was had under it, as to the actual condition of the colored people?

*Answer.* The legislation of the State of which I have just been speaking was deplorable in its effects upon the colored people. The right to vote, the various measures which have been passed by Congress for the protection of the colored people, and the constitutional amendments, have raised the condition of those people vastly in every way. They behave better, work better; and I believe they are almost universally well disposed toward the white people, particularly their old masters and families, to whom they have no dislike except as to their politics.

*Question.* You say they are rapidly improving and becoming more fit for the exercise of suffrage?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are more moral, more industrious, better citizens in every way than they were before.

*Question.* Are they, as a general thing, ambitious to learn and become intelligent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The children go to school, as do also many of the adults, and they learn rapidly. I have seen colored children learn as rapidly as I ever saw white children learn. Going along the street I have seen little fellows of an age at which you would hardly expect white children to read, spelling the signs on the doors; and I have seen them reading books and newspapers. I have occasionally visited their schools and heard them recite, and they show a great degree of improvement. I believe that the people of Mississippi generally are improving now. I think that, notwithstanding they have had a great deal of misfortune, loss, and ruin throughout the State, resulting from the war, they are now substantially in a better condition than they were before the war. They have not so much money, but they are more disposed to work and get along; and I think there is a better state of feeling toward the freedmen. The old politicians, though, will never get over it—never in the world.

*Question.* They will never believe in the new order of things?

*Answer.* Never. They have been turned out of office; many of them have no prospect of getting into office again unless something almost equivalent to a revolution should occur, and they are very bitter. I do not mean all of them; I mean a great many of them. Some of them are very kind and reasonable about the matter, and do not manifest much concern about obtaining office or about politics—never say anything about it; but I think a majority of that class are most intensely bitter in their feelings against the Government.

*Question.* And are they very clamorous?

*Answer.* Not particularly so. They are when they speak at all on the subject. Some of them, when they do speak, try to revive by the most unscrupulous means all the animosities of the past; and it is the counsel and conduct of such men as they that brings into existence, I think, the lawlessness of the State, and these lawless bands of men. I think that if the people as a mass were let alone; if they were told the truth, and not deceived and misled, these secret organizations would very soon cease to exist altogether in the State.

*Question.* Has there been any complaint, and if so, to what extent, in relation to the administration of affairs by your State government and the officers under it?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; there have been great complaints, some of them I presume well founded, but always in an exaggerated form, and most of them having no foundation at all.

*Question.* Your officers were not all good men?

*Answer.* No, sir. Under the constitution of our State, it is made the duty of the governor to appoint nearly all the officers till an election can be held. The governor appointed all the officers except the superintendents of education for the counties, who were appointed by the State board of education. It is utterly impossible for a governor, or a State board of education, located at the capital of the State, and relying altogether upon indirect information as to the qualifications of appointees, to get the right men. I have sometimes thought it was an accident when we did get the right sort of men.

*Question.* Has the condition of things, in that respect, been constantly improving?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* How has it been in relation to the financial administration of your State government?

*Answer.* There have been occasionally in the State government and in the county governments individual cases of extravagance, recklessness, and dishonesty. These, as I think, were only exceptions to the general rule.

*Question.* Has there been in fact any very considerable complaint in relation to the expenditure of money, or the expenses of your State government?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir. The expenditures of the government have been complained about a great deal by the opposition press and politicians, and, in some instances, I have no doubt, with justice; but there has been great exaggeration on this subject; and I think that, considering the condition in which the State government was at the time the present administration went into power, and the necessity there was for the expenditure of money for the building and improvement of public edifices, the refurnishing of the capitol and the governor's mansion, and for the asylums, &c., the present has been as economical an administration as was common before the war. The expenditures have been, I believe, more than those of any previous administration; but, then, the necessity for expending money has been greater than ever before, because of the increased population, and the increased necessities of the government, consequent upon the long night of ruin and inaction that had lain upon the State during the war; and owing also to the ravages of war throughout the State.

*Question.* Your present State administration took the State and State affairs in a pretty dilapidated condition?

*Answer.* Completely dilapidated. The capitol building itself was regarded as being unfit for occupancy and unsafe, and many persons believed it impossible to make it safe, but it has been improved at an expenditure of seventy to eighty thousand dollars, until it is really a better building than it ever was.

*Question.* Has a large share of this complaint about extravagant expenditures, &c., come from those men who had been the leaders and rulers of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The complaints have generally emanated from men who were resolved to complain and find fault, in any event, and in many cases before they knew what was going to be done.

*Question.* How will the recent administration of financial affairs in your State compare with the financial administration under those men who make this charge, or their political associates?

*Answer.* It compares well and favorably. The Government of the United States committed to the hands of these same men and their associates large donations of money and lands for educational purposes, for internal improvements, &c., nearly all of which they squandered and stole—a very small percentage of which was ever appropriated to the objects designed by the Government in the donation.

*Question.* State, in a general way, some of the financial exploits of those gentlemen.

*Answer.* They borrowed, I think, five or six or seven million dollars some years before the war, squandered it, and then repudiated the debt. Settlement is now demanded; and payment will be insisted upon, I think, from now until it shall have been paid, or some definite action taken in the matter. The amount, I think, is somewhere in the neighborhood of $18,000,000; and I think that millions of those other funds donated to the State were squandered. All this was in addition to the taxes which they collected and disposed of. I do not think the taxes are now any more onerous than they were then, except in individual instances where boards of county supervisors have been exorbitant in the levying of taxes. The basis of our taxation is infinitely more just and less oppressive to the whole body of tax-payers than it ever was before.

*Question.* The supervisors levy the taxes for school purposes?

*Answer.* For school purposes, and for other purposes of the counties—for bridges, court-houses, &c.

*Question.* You have stated that there seemed to be efforts to operate upon the vote of the colored people by terrorism. Are there in vogue other modes by which the colored vote is attempted to be influenced in other ways than by legitimate argument?

*Answer.* There is misrepresentation; and there are threats of withdrawal of patronage, employment, and the like.

*Question.* How extensive is that?

*Answer.* In the year 1868 it was almost universal. I have myself been present when

it was done, and my means of information have been ample. I think it was almost universal throughout the whole State for negroes to have the attempt made upon them to control them by appeals to their pecuniary interest—by threats of discharge from employment, and threats of expelling them from lands which they were cultivating, or driving them off plantations on which they had growing crops or interests in growing crops.

*Question.* Are the great mass of the lands in your State owned by men of one political side?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, mostly.

*Question.* Give any particulars you may know in reference to the manner in which the thing is done.

*Answer.* All this that I speak of was in 1868 and 1869—before the elections of those years. In 1869 these threats were somewhat relaxed. General Ames was there in command. He had caused it to be understood that he would see to it that the men who violated the law and attempted to control votes by illegal means should be punished. Those restraining influences did not operate to the same extent in 1868. Consequently, in that year those threats were general and wide-spread; in 1869 they were not nearly so much so.

*Question.* What was the mode of operations in 1868?

*Answer.* They would just say to a negro, "Vote with these radicals, and you shall not live on my land; I will never let a radical nigger stay on my place." At that time the taxes were being collected, and their collection was made a means for the control of the negro vote. The poll-tax was enormous—from six to eight dollars a head—and there was a large tax on guns and dogs. Negroes generally had those three taxes to pay. Almost every negro had a gun and a dog; and all of them between twenty-one and fifty-five years of age had to pay a poll-tax, which was two dollars to the State, and four or five dollars to the county, varying with the county in which the tax was levied. The collection of these taxes was used as a means of compelling the negro to vote the way he might be required to vote by his employer.

*Question.* What was the process?

*Answer.* One way (I do not know whether it was universal; it was very common in the part of the State where I lived, which was densely populated by negroes) was for the sheriff who collected the taxes to act in conjunction with the employer; and just as the sheriff was about to take the last horse which the negro had, or his last skillet, or other article of household property, the owner would come to the relief of the negro, and agree with him that if he would vote the democratic ticket, he (the employer) would be responsible for the taxes. I have known that to be done. I do not know whether it was general or not; but I think it was general throughout the State.

*Question.* Do you think those influences were productive of results to a considerable extent?

*Answer.* Very often they were; but in many instances they were counteracted by information and advice given to the negro, which he believed and on which he acted. But the negroes often promised—where that sort of strategy was adopted they were compelled to promise—that they would vote the democratic ticket; but they did not do it.

*Question.* They did not always keep those promises?

*Answer.* They very seldom kept them in that part of the country. As the enthusiasm increased with the approach of election day, they became determined that they would vote the republican ticket at all possible hazards; they did do it, and multitudes of them were afterward discharged and driven from their places of employment.

*Question.* As a rule?

*Answer.* Very frequently.

*Question.* Which ticket do the colored men want to vote?

*Answer.* I do not believe there is a colored man in the State of Mississippi who wants to vote the democratic ticket, or ever did want to vote it, though some of them did vote it.

*Question.* If a colored man does vote on that side, it is under some pressure?

*Answer.* It is done under some improper influence—either a bribe, a threat, or something of the sort. The negroes have been deceived many times; they have been deceived by having the wrong ticket given to them when they could not read.

*Question.* They all feel, even the ignorant class among them, that they owe their freedom and their right to the ballot to the republican party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The negroes, so far as I can judge from their actions and their expressions, love the Government of the United States, and they love it because it gave them their freedom. They consider republicanism the same thing as the Union, and believe that when they are voting the republican ticket they are voting for the Union and for liberty to themselves and everybody else, and that when they vote any other ticket they are voting against liberty and against the Government. That is my conception of what the negro thinks about voting.

*Question.* That is his philosophy of the matter?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* This class of leaders that you have spoken of—what in your opinion is their real *status* with reference to the Government?

*Answer.* I do not think there is much love of the Union among that class of men, or much love of the Government. I do not think there is much desire on their part for the perpetuity or the honor of the Government. Different men among them differ in that respect. Some of them would like the Government of the United States, if they could have what they regard as their fair share in its administration, in its offices and its honors. But, as it is, they are not friendly to the Government of the United States.

*Question.* You speak of the particular class that are laboring under disability with reference to holding office?

*Answer.* No, sir; I speak of those who were politicians and who have controlled public sentiment in Mississippi for years past.

*Question.* And who are now actually out of power?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. A large portion of those who are disfranchised are among the best and most loyal men in the State or country. The disfranchising provision applies to many men who were loyal to the Government, and whose disqualification arises from the circumstance that they held, perhaps some years before the war, some petty office, (for instance, justice of the peace or judge of the county court,) and then did some little in aid of the confederate cause. Some of them went into the field and fought. Some of them who did not do that did some other act which incapacitated them for taking the oath which they were required to take in order to register as voters, except by committing perjury; and they would not do that. Many men who are not disfranchised, and never were, are just as great enemies to the Government—greater, in fact, than many who are disfranchised.

*Question.* Then you think the line as to loyalty of sentiment does not follow the line that separates those under disabilities from those who are not so disqualified.

*Answer.* No, sir, not at all. I think the disability clause in the Constitution of the United States did not strike the men it was intended to strike, and that it struck a great many men whom it was not intended to strike. I know men who before the war held the office of justice of the peace, or some other little office, (held it by a mere accident, or casualty, if you may so express it,)—men who were opposed to secession and anxious to the last hour to remain in the Union, but who, when their State went out, regarded it as their duty to go with the State, whether the State was right or wrong. Some of them went into the field and fought through the whole war, believing all the time that they were required to do so by a feeling of loyalty and allegiance to their State; that it was their duty to do it, notwithstanding they did not believe in the policy which had brought on the war; and when the surrender came they were willing to surrender, and their surrender was absolute and without any mental reservation. This, I believe, was the case with a majority of the confederate soldiers, and indeed nearly all the lower ranks who were not under the control of unscrupulous politicians or office-hunters. Then came the disfranchisement, and disqualification for voting. A great many who were disfranchised are among the leading republicans of Mississippi. Others are not republicans at all, but moderate, decent conservative men, most anxious for the restoration of the relations of the State to the Government and for peace—who regret very much that they ever had anything to do with the war or that there ever was a war. Then there are some democrats—men who consistently vote the democratic ticket, but who have none of the bitterness of which I spoke—men belonging politically to what may be called the middle class, taking little part actively in politics, but still decided in their opinions. I think the republican party lost more by disfranchising any portion of the southern leaders than they ever gained, because they made a hero of every man they thus disqualified. Many a man who would have had no influence at all perhaps with the people, but who would have been simply a played-out politician, was, on account of his disfranchisement, able to enlist sympathy for himself in the minds of the people.

*Question.* If these gentlemen were relieved from this martyrdom you think the effect would be beneficial?

*Answer.* I think so. I think that if the disabilities of every man in the South were removed it would have a good effect.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* Do you know what the war debt of the State was?

*Answer.* No, sir, but it was vast.

*Question.* How large do you suppose it was?

*Answer.* I should dislike to undertake to make an estimate. I have no knowledge about it, except that the amount was very large.

*Question.* Fifty million dollars?

*Answer.* I do not know; I reckon not that much.

*Question.* What is the present debt of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I do not think the present debt, leaving out that which existed prior to the incoming of the present administration, is more than $1,000,000, or $1,200,000.

*Question.* You do not think the debt has been increased more than that amount by the present administration?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think it has been increased that much. I have no data at all on that subject; but my general idea is, that that amount would cover it.

*Question.* Are the colored men of Mississippi in favor of general amnesty?

*Answer.* I believe they are; especially the southern colored people.

*Question.* You mean the freedmen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There are some northern "carpet-bag" negroes in the State, who are very unlike the native negroes—those who were formerly slaves.

*Question.* Do you think the white people of Mississippi are in favor of allowing negroes to continue to vote?

*Answer.* I do not think the old politicians are.

*Question.* Do you think a majority of the white people of Mississippi would, if they had their way, allow the negroes to vote?

*Answer.* I think they would, if they had an understanding of the matter. You see there are multitudes of the middle and lower classes of white people of Mississippi who never hear but one side of political questions. If a political speech is to be made on the other side, all means, fair and unfair, are resorted to to keep the white people from going to hear it. They do not hear discussions; and they are induced to believe that republicanism means social equality; that, if a man is a republican, he must necessarily be in favor of white people and negroes marrying and associating on terms of perfect equality in the social circle. That idea is persistently enforced by leading democratic politicians upon the middle classes of the white people; and while many of them do not believe it, many of them do.

*Question.* Are the leading politicians who are under disabilities in favor of allowing the negroes to vote? Are they in favor of negro suffrage?

*Answer.* I think the people of Mississippi—I speak of the masses of them—are disposed to acquiesce in that measure and not disturb it, especially if they are let alone and allowed to understand the facts about it.

*Question.* Are these men who are clamoring about the disabilities imposed upon them in favor of allowing the negroes to vote? Would they allow them to vote if they had the power to prevent it?

*Answer.* Many of them would not, and many of them would. As I remarked a while ago, the disfranchisement includes very widely different classes of men in respect to politics.

*Question.* I speak of those leaders who were disfranchised and who are complaining so much of their disfranchisement.

*Answer.* I think that all who are disfranchised are disposed to complain about it more or less; and I think some of them are willing to acquiesce in negro suffrage, while others are determined to miss no opportunity now or hereafter to endeavor to break it up.

*Question.* You have not a doubt that it would be a good stroke of policy on the part of the Government of the United States to pass a general amnesty bill?

*Answer.* I think that it would be a matter of policy for the Government. So far as regards keeping men out of office, let that be done at the ballot-box, and not by personal proscription of individuals.

*Question.* Do you suppose that more men are disfranchised in Mississippi by the Constitution of the United States than are practically disfranshised by the acts committed by the Ku-Klux and the dread following their operations?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not thing there are half so many.

*Question.* You think there is more real disfranchisement by the Ku-Klux than by the constitutional amendment?

*Answer.* Let me consider about that; I do not want to be hasty. I think the number of men disfranchised in Mississippi does not exceed, on an average, twenty-five to a county; I do not believe there are so many. As to the number who are disfranchised or prevented from voting by Ku-Kluxism, there are in some counties none at all, and never have been. But in some counties, if an election were now held, great numbers of republicans, mostly colored, would be prevented from voting. And there are a great many white men who would vote the republican ticket who never say anything about it publicly, who are afraid of the odium, the denunciation, the persecution, the deprivation of patronage, the loss of social position, which would follow their voting in that way, and therefore they do not do it, though they would be glad to do it. They do not say anything about the matter except privately, to individuals. I have many times had people talk to me in that way.

*Question.* You say that practically in the aggregate there are more men in your State prevented from voting through fear of the operations of the Ku-Klux than there are men under disabilities by the Constitution of the United States?

*Answer.* I think it probable that the number is largely more.

*Question.* Would you not think it good policy on the part of the Government of the United States to take whatever measures may be requisite to remove the disability on both sides?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it would be good policy to remove the disabilities imposed by the fourteenth amendment, and to try to relieve, as far as possible, the other disabilities to which you allude. I think that time will wear away the latter. I think that we are improving in that respect in our State already.

*Question.* Have there not been some proceedings in the United States courts of your State against the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and I think they have had a salutary effect.

*Question.* Have the State courts failed to check the operations of this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* I think they have—not because of any want of disposition to do it, but because of the impracticable character of the attempt.

*Question.* Do you know anything of some trials which have been recently going on at Oxford?

*Answer.* No, sir, nothing except what I have seen by the telegraphic reports. I know that some of the men are those that I alluded to a while ago as having been arrested. The arrest of some occurred about the time I left home some days since. They were charged with maltreating the schoolmasters whom I have already mentioned.

*Question.* Is it not common in many counties of Mississippi, especially upon the line of the railroads that run down from Tennessee, for colored men to be whipped by these disguised organizations of men?

*Answer.* Not that I know of along the line of the road. The road runs across a corner of the State, from Corinth, on the north side, to Meridian. In some of the counties through which the roads pass I believe these outrages have been reported.

*Question.* Where these Ku-Klux exist do you hear that it is common for colored men to be taken out and whipped or otherwise maltreated?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* I notice that in giving instances you named no outrage upon any colored man.

*Answer.* I included colored men in those who were killed in Meridian; and using the word "men," I included them in the other cases I mentioned.

*Question.* But when you gave names, you did not mention the names of any colored men; I observed that those you named were white men.

*Answer.* I do not know the names of the colored men.

*Question.* The great body of the outrages actually committed have been upon colored men?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* In counties where the Ku-Klux operate, is it common for them to operate principally upon colored men?

*Answer.* That is my information—principally upon colored men. They take them out and flog them, sometimes hang them, sometimes put them to death.

*Question.* Are you a native of Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir, of Tennessee.

*Question.* How long have you resided in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Twenty years.

*Question.* Did you hear, before the war, of organizations of disguised men operating in this way?

*Answer.* Never.

*Question.* Did you hear of any such thing until the negroes were allowed to vote?

*Answer.* Never in that State.

*Question.* Is there complaint among the white democrats of Mississippi against the reconstruction policy of Congress?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, there has been a great deal of complaint.

*Question.* Is the main point about which they complain that the negroes have been allowed to vote, and have, with a few white men, taken control of the State government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they complain that the negro was clothed with the right of suffrage, and that the right was taken away from white people.

*Question.* Nobody was deprived of the right of suffrage by the constitutional amendment?

*Answer.* No, sir; but by the reconstruction laws; and the fourteenth amendment contained a disqualification for holding office.

*Question.* All men now vote in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; except the classes who could not before the war.

*Question.* Suffrage is uniform?

*Answer.* Suffrage is general there now.

*Question.* Is there complaint that in the reconstruction of the State the great body of the negroes, with a few white men, were enabled, by voting together, to get control of the State government?

*Answer.* That is the great cause of complaint; that is the sore point with the leading democratic politicians of the State; that is the main cause of discontent with them.

*Question.* It is of that they mainly complain?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is there any way to correct that ground of complaint except by influencing the colored men to vote with the democrats?

*Answer.* None that I know of.

*Question.* Do you think these Ku-Klux organizations were gotten up for the purpose of correcting that evil?

*Answer.* I do not know what the organization was gotten up for, but I have been led to believe that it was gotten up for the purpose of resisting republican rule and taking satisfaction out of men obnoxious politically. That has been my impression.

*Question.* Do you think it is composed entirely of democrats?

*Answer.* I do not think any republican belongs to it; I never heard of one who did. I do not think any colored man belongs to it. I think the men who belong to it are either men of no party, who do these acts from wanton wickedness, or else they are actuated by political purposes. I think that whatever encouragement they receive from outside is for political purposes.

*Question.* You say that no such organization existed in the State of Mississippi until the negroes were allowed to vote?

*Answer.* No, sir, no such organization existed till then.

*Question.* And the great evil that these men complain of is that the negroes, with a few white men, have been enabled to take charge of the State government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That evil having arisen, this organization for the first time sprang into existence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do not know how it came otherwise.

*Question.* Is there any ground of complaint at which sensible men would aim such an organization, except colored suffrage?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there are individual cases of villainy and rascality.

*Question.* Are not the laws adequately enforced in those cases?

*Answer.* I think they are.

*Question.* Then they do not call for such an organization as this?

*Answer.* Well, men seek that means of redress—unnecessarily, but still they seek it.

*Question.* Do they seek it only when republicans are the men who have been guilty?

*Answer.* Those are the only ones.

*Question.* Do they resort to such means upon democrats?

*Answer.* Never, so far as I have heard.

*Question.* Does not that raise in your mind a presumption that this is a sort of pretext, under color of which they attempt to influence voting?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from all the facts I can learn I suppose the inference you state would be what any one would draw, the premises being established.

*Question.* Taking the legislation of 1866 and 1867, to which you have referred, in reference to the negroes, and considering the harsh manner in which some features of that legislation were executed, what would have been the condition of the negro if such measures had been allowed to go on unchecked?

*Answer.* I do not see how he could have existed in the State for any considerable length of time.

*Question.* I understood you to say that such measures would have amounted to his extermination?

*Answer.* Well, I think it would have been exceedingly difficult for him to have lived in the State; that is what I meant by saying the negro would have been exterminated.

*Question.* Would such legislation have placed him in a worse condition than when he was a slave?

*Answer.* Infinitely worse; because when a slave he was protected as property, and the interest of the master was powerful to secure to the negro humane treatment; and the owners of the slaves were many times very humane men.

*Question.* So that you think if the emancipated slaves had been allowed to be subjected to such legislation, so enforced, they would have been placed in a worse condition than before the Government liberated them?

*Answer.* Infinitely. Their freedom would have been a curse to them, because it would have deprived them of the protection which had been given to them by their value as slaves.

*Question.* If, then, there are evils growing out of the correcting legislation of Congress, which has given to the negro suffrage and equal rights, are not the men who undertook to reduce him to such a condition responsible to some extent for such legislation?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* You think their course made the action of Congress necessary?

*Answer.* That is my view.

*Question.* Is the government of Mississippi now measurably as well administered in its various details as it was before the war?

*Answer.* I think it is. Its administration is a great deal more difficult now than it was before the war. There was no difficulty before the war in administering the government as it was then administered. Our people were never very prompt in punishing crime, unless it was theft, house-burning, assassination, or some other villainous act. Where there was violence growing out of whisky and newspaper articles and "a fair fight," they were disposed to let it be winked at. The government was administered in a slip-shod manner; I say it with great respect to the people of Mississippi, because I am attached to their interests and honor as much as any man in the State. They were lax in administering the law where there could be any sort of a pretense that the man might have been guilty of the offense charged and still be "honorable," as they understood that word; while they were fierce and prompt in administering the law on a thief, a house-burner, a murderer, an assassin. But since the war it has been vastly more difficult for the government to keep on its legs—I mean since the present government went into operation. There have been embarrassments on every hand. There has been more opposition and contempt instilled into the minds of the people for government and for law than ever before the war. Before the war people were taught to respect the judges, the courts, and public officers generally. Now they are taught, so far as the influence of certain parties can go, to have no such respect. Another thing which I desire to state (for I am anxious to tell all that I know about this matter) is that since the present government of the State went into operation many of the officers throughout the State have not been elected by the people. The people have elected their governor and a few of the principal State officers, together with members of the legislature; but their sheriffs, constables, magistrates, county treasurers, assessors—in general all local officers—have been appointed. Sometimes men who have been sent into a county with their commissions in their pockets were never in the county before; knew nothing about the people and possibly were not known to anybody residing there. The people had a contempt for such men; it was natural; I had a great contempt for them myself. I thought that in this respect a mistake was made. I thought it would be better that the positions should be given to men even of less qualification or merit, but residents of the county, and therefore identified to that extent at least with the people. None of these local officers were elected by the people. The boards of supervisors, who levied the taxes, were appointed by the governor. The supervisors appointed the county directors of schools. The people had nothing to do with the selection of these officers. The superintendents of schools were appointed by the State board of education, sitting at Jackson. The magistrates, constables, sheriffs, &c., were appointed by the governor. Those officers thus appointed were often regarded, even by good men, loyal men, republicans, as being interlopers who had come among them merely to stay as long as they held office, and to leave as soon as they ceased to hold office. This has been a fruitful source of discontent.

*Question.* What sort of a supreme court have you?

*Answer.* A very fine supreme court, I think. One of the judges was a practicing lawyer in Mississippi for nearly thirty-five years. He was elected by the people to Congress in 1865, but, with the others then elected, was refused a seat. He has always been a man eminent for his honesty and learning.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What is the name of that judge.

*Answer.* Chief Justice Peyton. Another of our judges is Judge Simrall—a man almost universally esteemed, and deservedly so, by all classes of people, before, during, and since the war, especially by the most refined, cultivated and intelligent of the people. He was once a professor of the law school in Louisville, Kentucky. The third member of the court is Judge Tarbell. He was a general in the United States Volunteer army, who came to Mississippi and settled soon after the war. He is a man of unblemished reputation and fair legal attainments. These three judges constitute our supreme court.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* What is the character of your circuit judges?

*Answer.* Some of them are good men, some tolerable, and a few of them very poor—poor excuses for judges.

*Question.* How many circuit judges have you?

*Answer.* Fifteen.

*Question.* Are they in the main good men?

*Answer.* I think so. I think that as a class they are as good men as we were in the habit of having before the war, or nearly so.

*Question.* Have those judges been the objects of abuse and denunciation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the newspapers; some of them have—not all of them.

*Question.* In the democratic newspapers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; no others that I know of; and not half of them.

*Question.* Have the supreme judges been attacked?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have been attacked; and though I do not know that they have

been directly accused of corruption, they have sometimes been very severely and unscrupulously criticised for their decisions.

*Question.* Was the abuse of a coarse and slanderous character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think it was; with respect to some of the judges of the supreme court the abuse has been of a coarse and filthy kind.

*Question.* Calculated to weaken the influence of the court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And bring the administration of justice into contempt?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There is one of the circuit judges whose circuit court in one or two of the counties is habitually called a "circus." For instance, the newspaper will announce, "Next Monday Alderson and Joe Bowie will open their circus in this town"—Alderson being the circuit judge and Mr. Bowie the district attorney.

*Question.* Are they men of good standing?

*Answer.* They are men of good standing.

*Question.* Are they men of ability?

*Answer.* I cannot say that they are men of a very high order of ability; they are passable.

*Question.* The newspapers of that county speak of the court as a "circus"?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that calculated to detract from the influence of the court and render it less able to enforce the law?

*Answer.* O, yes.

*Question.* Do you think this abuse of the court is aimed at weakening its power?

*Answer.* It is aimed at bringing it into contempt. It is known that such is the natural effect; and I presume that men intend the natural consequences of what they do or say.

*Question.* Do you suppose that any part of the purpose is to prevent the prosecution of these organized bands of men who have committed violence?

*Answer.* I do not think it is, because there are no Ku-Klux there at the present time, as far as I know. At the time of the election of 1868, as I believe, they were in most of the counties of that district; but there are none there now, I think.

*Question.* From the general information which you get in your intercourse with the people, including leading men from all parts of the State, you being located at the capital, what is your idea as to the existence of this organization as a State organization?

*Answer.* I do not think it is a State organization at present; but I think it is very likely to become such, if no check should be placed upon its operations; that is to say, it will exist, I think, in many more counties of the State than it does now, between this time and the election which comes off in November.

*Question.* Do you think the State courts can check it?

*Answer.* I doubt it, sir. The State courts do not meet frequently enough to do that; and there are plenty of men who would commit outrage and violence with a firm expectation that they would be acquitted in the State courts, as they possibly would be on account of the difficulty of making proof.

*Question.* Have they more fear of the United States courts?

*Answer.* I think they have.

*Question.* You think that bringing prosecutions in the United States courts has a more repressive effect?

*Answer.* I am inclined to that belief.

*Question.* You spoke of the democrats bringing men from outside the State—"carpet-baggers" as they are sometimes called—into the State and making candidates of them when they were on their side?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And I think you named four such who were put on the general State ticket?

*Answer.* They were all "carpet-baggers;" and one I believe was imported into the State expressly for the purpose of being run upon that ticket.

*Question.* And he headed the ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; on an agreement made before he came into the State, that if he would come there and run for governor, they could elect him and would do it.

*Question.* How do the democrats reconcile that action of theirs with their denunciation of "carpet-baggers" on the republican side?

*Answer.* I cannot explain that.

*Question.* Do they attempt to do it?

*Answer.* No, sir; a great many of them now deny that they did so; I think they are ashamed of their attempt to deceive and mislead the people; I think they regret it because it is now very plain to the people that such was the attempt; and the people are disposed to distrust these men; the masses of the people had as much contempt for Dent as they had for any other "carpet-bagger."

*Question.* And the undertaking failed too?

*Answer.* The undertaking failed to the extent of nearly forty thousand votes.

*Question.* Do you think that failure has something to do with their being ashamed of it?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; that has all to do with it. Then, you see, they having deceived the people in that instance, the people will suspect them of deception in any other trick or strategy that they may get up for the purpose of electing a democrat on a republican platform. They undertook to elect these candidates on a republican platform.

*Question.* Did you not say that the democrats had a colored man on their ticket as the candidate for secretary of state?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they nominated the first colored man who was ever nominated in Mississippi for a State office.

*Question.* He was on their ticket at the last election?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was an almost totally illiterate ex-slave; it is said he could not read; I do not know whether he could or not.

*Question.* And they ran him for the office of secretary of state?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are they opposed to colored men holding office?

*Answer.* O, yes; I think so, unless they can control them absolutely after getting them into office.

*Question.* Have you any reason to believe that any party leaders in your State are connected with these Ku-Klux organizations?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have no reason to believe that they are members, or that they are not, except that some of them are very decent gentlemen; and I think the Ku-Klux organization is a disgraceful thing, and that therefore they would not belong to it.

*Question.* You have never resided in a community where these organizations were perpetrating their outrages?

*Answer.* Well, I cannot say that I ever saw any; but I think it is likely that there have been outrages perpetrated two or three years ago in some places where I lived. I always resided at Port Gibson until I removed to Vicksburg, two years and a half ago; and since I have been attorney general of the State I have resided in Jackson most of the time. I think it very likely that there have been individual cases of outrage committed in some of those places; but I do not know anything about it myself.

*Question.* Do the people of Mississippi feel that they were relieved from any burden by the action of the United States in prohibiting the payment of the confederate war debt of the State, amounting to from thirty to fifty millions?

*Answer.* I suppose they do.

*Question.* Suppose they had not been relieved, andthat debt were now resting upon the people, and they were taxed to meet it, would they have been in a condition to do so?

*Answer.* They could not have done it. I believe they would have repudiated that debt. They could not have paid it.

*Question.* You think it a very great relief to the people of Mississippi that the payment of that debt was prohibited?

*Answer.* I so consider it. I think that, as old Governor McNutt says, it was a good way to leap the chasm. We got rid of the debt by somebody else's action; not our own.

*Question.* You talk of repudiation. Your people had some experience in that direction before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the immaculate government, the members and supporters of which have complained so much of the present government. The present government has had nothing to do with that, one way or the other.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* This man Huggins was, you say, a superintendent of schools in Monroe county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Does your law give to a superintendent of schools the authority to levy and collect taxes?

*Answer.* No, sir; not at all. He was a superintendent of schools, and was also an officer of the United States internal revenue; a deputy or assistant collector, I think.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Under the authority of the United States?

*Answer.* Under the United States Government.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How is the school tax levied and collected?

*Answer.* An estimate, which is required by law to be made by the board of directors for the county, is placed before the board of supervisors, and they levy the tax.

*Question.* Do you mean the State board?

*Answer.* No, sir; the board of county supervisors.

*Question.* Does the superintendent of the schools collect the tax?

*Answer.* No, sir; he has nothing to do with the levying or collection of the tax. He supervises the schools.

*Question.* Does he disburse the taxes?

*Answer.* No, sir; he does not disburse them. He has nothing to do with the taxes or the revenues. The sheriff is *ex officio* tax collector. He collects the school tax along with the other taxes for the State and county.

*Question.* This man, however, was a collector of revenue?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; United States internal revenue. That is my impression, and I believe so from the fact that I understood when they whipped him he was told that he should not collect that revenue. I infer from this that he was a collector of revenue.

*Question.* That was the declaration made to him by the persons who whipped him?

*Answer.* So I am told.

*Question.* They whipped him on account of his being there to collect United States taxes?

*Answer.* That is one account. I have heard another, which is that they wanted him to leave because he had used his influence to induce an exorbitant expenditure of money, requiring an exorbitant taxation.

*Question.* Then nothing was said about his being a "carpet-bagger?" The simple objection to him was that he had advised the levy of an exorbitant tax?

*Answer.* I do not know whether there was anything said about his being a "carpet-bagger" or not. He was a "carpet-bagger," though; that is to say, he was a northern man. I knew him before he went to that county.

*Question.* You say that some of the parties appointed by the governor to local offices were not residents of the counties in which they were appointed—were "carpet-baggers" in that sense, and therefore objectionable?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them did not live in the county until they went there to hold office. Not only the governor, but the board of education, by whom the school superintendents are appointed, have, in a few instances—a very few, however—appointed men of that class.

*Question.* They are objectionable on that account?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Even republicans object to such men being appointed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; many republicans do, but others have insisted that it was necessary to do it, because there was nobody in the county who would take the places. I know of some counties in which there have never been any applications for the appointment of county superintendent; men have been recommended, and have had the appointment tendered to them, but have declined. In such cases as that it is probable that unless the appointment were given to somebody not residing in the county they would not soon get a superintendent, unless the law should be changed so as to require county superintendents to be elected, which, I think, ought to be done. I have advocated that all the time; and I have been all the time in favor of as early an election as practicable for all county officers, including these superintendents of schools, because I have thought all the time, and believe it now as firmly as I do in my existence, that a fair, impartial, orderly, and lawful election would tend to produce quietude.

*Question.* And satisfaction with the officers elected?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You do not think it unreasonable that the people of a county or State should object to perfect strangers coming in among them, having no interest in the community at all, and exercising the highest functions of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think that it is unreasonable; but I do think it is unreasonable that they should make their objections in the manner in which they have sometimes made them, by violence.

*Question.* Have not the officers been violently thrust upon them?

*Answer.* Nobody has been violently thrust upon them. The proceeding has been to quietly give an appointment, and tell the officer to go and attend to his duties. I think that a different course, that is, allowing the people of the county to elect the men who are to serve them, would have a beneficial effect. I think that the appointment of strangers to hold offices has been one of the causes of discontent, and has been made the pretext by wicked and designing men for violence, when perhaps a moderate and lawful course might have been far more successful in effecting their purpose.

*Question.* You think it is a good thing to let the people of a State or county have their way about their own officers?

*Answer.* By all means.

*Question.* You think that forcing outsiders upon them as officers is objectionable?

*Answer.* It is objectionable; but it was absolutely necessary in the condition of things in which we have been placed there. Otherwise it would sometimes be impossible to have officers, because no resident of the county would do his duty, would give

the colored man a fair chance. The influential and powerful people in the county would have an advantage; the treatment of the negro would be oppressive, as would that of the republicans or "radicals," who have been all the time extremely obnoxious though they are not so much so now as formerly.

*Question.* You think it was necessary then to go outside of the counties to get some "carpet-baggers" to do justice among the people?

*Answer.* Sometimes it was—not necessarily "carpet-baggers," but suitable men of some sort.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that whole counties of people have been utterly indisposed to do what was right?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; or incompetent, or that suitable men for the positions were disfranchised, or would not accept them; or if they were competent and willing to accept the positions, the appointing power sometimes had not confidence in them—honestly had not confidence in them, and it was necessary to send somebody else. I have sometimes had men rejected that I wanted appointed—men who were residents of the county. They were rejected by the military commander, or by the governor. Sometimes I have been consulted, and my counsel and advice have prevailed. But it is a vast job to undertake to officer a State.

*Question.* Against its wishes?

*Answer.* Yes, or to officer a State at all.

*Question.* Against the wishes of the people?

*Answer.* Whether against the wishes of the people, or in accordance with their wishes. There is no way of attaining knowledge of what the wishes of the people are except by an election. After our governor was elected it was his duty under the constitution to appoint these various officers for the counties of the State. He had to sit at Jackson, and was dependent for information upon men who would come there to talk to him.

*Question.* That was a defeat in fact of local self-government?

*Answer.* It was not a defeat: it was a suspension of local self-government. That suspension had occurred before, because the very men who complained had themselves broken up the government, and there was at that time no government at all in the State. As Mr. Johnson said in his proclamation in respect to Mississippi, North Carolina and other States, the war had destroyed the government.

*Question.* And it was necessary to go on destroying it?

*Answer.* No, sir: this was the reconstruction of it. It is always more difficult to rebuild a ruin than to make a ruin. These men had made the ruin, and we had to rebuild the edifice out of such scattered fragments as we could get. I know that many of the men who have been concerned in this matter in Mississippi have been actuated by the highest possible motives.

*Question.* Not all I suppose?

*Answer.* Not all, of course. Governor Alcorn I believe is earnestly devoted to the interests and the honor of the State, and of all its people. Of course, he occasionally makes mistakes and blunders.

*Question.* You said that efforts were made use of by the land-owners of your State to control the votes of the people who lived on their land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; not by all of them; I do not mean to say by all of them.

*Question.* I did not understand you as so saying; but you said that such efforts were made.

*Answer.* Made by some.

*Question.* Have you ever lived in the North?

*Answer.* Never.

*Question.* Have you ever visited the North?

*Answer.* I was twenty-six years of age and had a wife and one child before my feet ever stepped on free soil; and then I only went for a very short distance into the North; I went to Indiana and Ohio, and back again.

*Question.* Do you not know it to be a fact that very many persons at the North attempt to control those who reside on their property or who are employed by them?

*Answer.* I do not know it.

*Question.* Do you not believe it?

*Answer.* I think it very probable.

*Question.* Do you not know that a man has a right to employ whom he pleases on his land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has a right to employ whom he pleases, but he has no right to employ a man on the condition that he shall vote a certain way.

*Question.* Has not a man a right to employ whom he pleases?

*Answer.* Unquestionably; but under our law, if a man employs another because he has voted a certain way, or refuses to employ him because he did not vote that way, or discharges him from employment because he has voted a certain way, or denies him employment because of his voting a particular way, that is a crime.

*Question.* Under the laws of Mississippi?

*Answer.* Under the old laws of Mississippi, passed long before the war, and which have been in force continuously. That law is in force now, and was in force when these things were done.

*Question.* Was it enforced?

*Answer.* I mean to say that the law was on the statute book, not executed. It was in existence and ought to have been enforced.

*Question.* Do you know, of your own knowledge, of any person having been discharged for any vote which he gave?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; O, yes.

*Question.* By whom?

*Answer.* By many persons.

*Question.* Mention an instance.

*Answer.* The Grand Gulf and Port Gibson Railroad, for one.

*Question.* That was a corporation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was a corporation; but not exceeding six or eight persons constituted the corporation, I think. I could probably count them on the fingers of one hand. I know the gentlemen composing it. Perhaps my knowledge of the circumstance would not be such as would be competent evidence in a court of justice.

*Question.* You have precisely the same knowledge, I have no doubt, in reference to almost all the railroad corporations of the country?

*Answer.* No. I will tell you what knowledge I have in this case. The hands came straight from the depot to me, and asked me what they should do to keep from being discharged; and I told them to vote the republican ticket, not to vote the democratic ticket. Some of them did vote the democratic ticket, because, as they told me afterward, if they had not done it they would have been discharged; and they were retained. Others who did vote the republican ticket were immediately discharged. Then I will tell you another instance. I do not care about giving names, unless you insist upon it. I know a very respectable gentleman in my county, a man of large wealth, fine intelligence, and good character, in every way a good man, but a very violent democrat, who came to me with an old negro man, who he said lived on his place, and he said he wanted me to tell this colored man that what he had told him was the truth. He had told him that if he voted the democratic ticket, neither the Union League, nor the republican party, nor General Grant, could interfere with him or punish him for so doing. He said the negro was afraid that if he voted the democratic ticket he would be violating some law of the Union, or disobeying some power which had jurisdiction over him. He said, "I want you to tell this man that he has a right to vote the democratic ticket, for I don't intend that any damned radical nigger shall live on my place. This old man lives there, and I am willing that he shall stay there; but I'll be damned if he shall stay there if he votes the radical ticket." Said I to the negro, "Uncle, you have a perfect right to vote the democratic ticket. Vote the democratic ticket if you want to, and no harm will come to you, except that you will help in that way to bring about bad government and bad laws, as I think. I may be mistaken in that, but it is my earnest belief that your action will tend to produce bad government if you vote the democratic ticket. But on the other hand, you have the right also to vote the republican ticket; this gentleman has no right to turn you off his place for voting that ticket. Vote whatever ticket you please; and if, because you vote some other way than he wants you to vote, he undertakes to punish you by discharging you, he is liable to be sent to the penitentiary; and I will take particular pains to see that he is sent there, if it be in my power." I took out two tickets, and held one in each hand and said, holding up one hand, "Here is the democratic ticket, and you have a right to vote that if you want to." Then, holding up the other hand, I said, "Here is the republican ticket, and you have a right to vote that. Whichever ticket you vote, you shall not be hurt or molested." Said he, "I want to vote the republican ticket." He reached forward and took the republican ticket, and went right before his master and put that ticket in the box.

By Mr. POOL:

*Question.* He did that right in the presence of this gentleman who was his employer?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; right in his presence. The employer was a good man; he did not know that his threats were in violation of law.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* It is very obvious the negro had been told by republicans that he would be punished if he did not vote the republican ticket.

*Answer.* That might be; but I do not think he was, because in my county, Claiborne, I told such people nearly all that they knew about voting; and I never told them any such thing as that. I never told them anything else than the truth, so far as I knew it.

*Question.* Other persons might have told them?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was hardly any other person who would tell them.

*Question.* How did this negro get the idea, then, that he was compelled to vote the republican ticket?

*Answer.* The idea might have arisen from ignorance, and from a serious belief that that was his duty, or he might have been told by somebody. I know that republicans strange as it may seem, do sometimes miss the truth a little.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* I wish to ask a question or two in regard to the appointment of your county officers. The constitution of your State provided that the first officers of the counties should be appointed by the governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and that they should hold their offices until an election should be provided for by the legislature.

*Question.* It was only a temporary provision?

*Answer.* Entirely temporary.

*Question.* And that was assented to by the people in the adoption of the constitution?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, by a majority of nearly 40,000.

*Question.* And such a provision was necessary, in order to set your State machinery going?

*Answer.* Certainly; it was indispensable.

*Question.* And the constitution authorized the legislature to pass laws making provision for the election of officers by the people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; these officers who were thus appointed by the governor were only to hold their offices until an election should be provided for by the legislature. The legislature has now provided for an election to take place next November.

*Question.* The provision of the constitution was upon its face a merely temporary provision?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, merely temporary; it has been decided by the supreme court that it was a provisional or temporary enactment.

*Question.* And it was necessary, because you had no mode of electing these officers until the legislature should make some provision?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* What offices did you say you had held in Mississippi?

*Answer.* The question put to me was, what offices I had held before the war. I held the office of justice of the peace under the State government, and postmaster at Port Gibson under the Federal Government.

*Question.* During the war where were you?

*Answer.* I was at home. I filled at that time the office of judge of the probate court, having been elected after the war commenced.

*Question.* Elected on the confederate side?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was a confederate.

*Question.* Then you were yourself under disabilities?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* When did you become a republican?

*Answer.* About the time the reconstruction laws were passed, in 1867.

*Question.* You stuck to the democrats till then?

*Answer.* No, sir; I cannot say that I ever stuck to the democrats at all; I was of the other way of thinking. I was a whig until know-nothingism arose; and then, being a Catholic, I could not go against Catholicism.

*Question.* When did you get your disabilities removed?

*Answer.* My disabilities were removed in 1868 or 1869. My name was in the first bill that was passed.

*Question.* Did you take any part in trying to get the first constitution of Mississippi passed through Congress?

*Answer.* No, sir, none at all; I was opposed to that.

*Question.* You believed that General Gillem made a truthful report of the facts in relation to that?

*Answer.* I cannot say that I did believe his report was entirely accurate; but whether it was or not, I was opposed to having that constitution fastened upon the State by an act of Congress.

*Question.* General Gillem, I believe, was removed because he reported against that constitution?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir.

*Question.* And General Ames was put in his place?

*Answer.* General Ames was put in his place.

*Question.* General Ames, of course, was a genuine republican; Gillem was considered a little "fishy," was he not?

*Answer.* I never heard of General Gillem saying that he belonged to either party.

*Question.* Was he not dismissed because he behaved like a gentleman?

*Answer.* I do not know what he was dismissed for.

*Question.* You got a man at last who ruled you according to strict republican principles?

*Answer.* Well, we got General Ames, and he gave us a better chance, I think, than General Gillem did.

*Question.* He gave the republicans a better chance?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* What you call a "better chance" was that he enforced all the provisions for the exclusion of white men more rigorously than had been done?

*Answer.* No, sir; he did not do that.

*Question.* He managed to elect himself to the Senate?

*Answer.* No, sir; the legislature elected him.

*Question.* He signed his own certificate, and he put himself in a position to be elected?

*Answer.* Candidates generally put themselves in a position to be elected.

*Question.* Do you say that it is a crime in the State of Mississippi to refuse to employ a man because of his politics?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* State again what you said on that subject.

*Answer.* I said that the law provided that if any person should attempt to control or influence the vote of another by bribery, by paying him anything, or by withdrawing custom or employment, or by any pecuniary inducement, (that is the substance of the law; I do not undertake to give its precise language, for I have not examined it for a year or two,) such person subjected himself to disfranchisement, and also fine and imprisonment.

*Question.* You say that the law of Mississippi punishes the withdrawal of employment in such a case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; something to that effect. I would prefer to refer to a copy of the code.

*Question.* You are willing that the section of the code bearing on this subject shall be incorporated in your testimony to show what is the law?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* My idea is that there never was any law in any State that punished a man for refusing to employ another who voted a certain way, or for discharging a man who voted a particular way.

*Answer.* Because of his vote.

*Question.* Do you not think that President Grant, if he were held accountable under a law of that sort, would be in the penitentiary till doomsday?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir.

*Question.* Do you think there is a radical Senator or member of Congress who has not aided in turning men out of office because they were democrats, and putting men into office because they were republicans? And has it not been done on that very ground?

*Answer.* No doubt that is done. A similar policy has been pursued by all parties. So far as I know, it has always been customary to give official positions in Washington to those supporting the party in power.

*Question.* And to turn out those who oppose it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you not know that the daughters of Chief Justice Taney, although almost starving, were turned out of office by General Grant because they were democratic in their political views, or because their father had been a democrat?

*Answer.* I do not know it.

*Question.* Have you not seen it in the newspapers?

*Answer.* I believe I have seen something of the kind.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND.) He did not do it in Mississippi.

Mr. BECK. And there is no such law in Mississippi.

WITNESS. I never said that it was made an offense to refuse to employ; I said that it was an offense to discharge a person from employment, or to give him employment or patronage, because of his vote, and for the purpose of influencing or controlling his vote.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* When you come to look at your code you will find that you are utterly mistaken about the law.

*Answer.* I refer to the law as found under the head of "bribery," in the revised code of Mississippi, of 1857. There are two sections which I desire to be incorporated as a part of my answer.

[The provisions referred to by the witness are as follows:]

"ARTICLE 38. If any man shall offer or give a reward to another, for the purpose of inducing him to persuade, or by any other means not amounting to bribery, to procure

any person to vote at any election, for or against any person, the person so giving or offering, and he who shall receive such reward shall, upon conviction thereof, be imprisoned in the common jail for not more than one year, or fined not more than five hundred dollars, or both, at the discretion of the court.

"ARTICLE 39. Whoever shall procure or endeavor to procure the vote of any elector, or the influence of any person over other electors, at any election for himself or any other candidate, by means of violence, threats of violence, or threat of withdrawing custom or dealing in business or trade, or of enforcing the payment of a debt, or of bringing a suit or criminal prosecution, or by any other threat or injury to be inflicted by him or by his means, shall, upon conviction, be forever disqualified to hold any office or place of trust, honor, or profit, under the laws or constitution of this State, excluded from suffrage, and be punished by imprisonment in the penitentiary for a term not exceeding two years, or in a county jail not more than one year, or by fine not exceeding one thousand dollars, or by both such fine and imprisonment."

*Question.* Did not Governor Alcorn himself remove all men who were opposed to him politically, and fill their places with men who were his political friends?

*Answer.* I think he intended to do so.

*Question.* Has he not done it to the best of his ability?

*Answer.* I presume he has.

*Question.* Is that no violation of law?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is not that removing a man from office because of his vote, and giving another employment because of his vote?

*Answer.* No, sir. It is not employing a man in the proper sense of the term employment. It is giving him an appointment with reference to his principles of government, which are believed by the appointing power to be for the benefit of the commonwealth. The object is not to influence his vote by giving him patronage or money. It is to bring into the government for its administration men of such views as are supposed by the appointing power to be in accordance with the best interests of the government. But even in such a case, if the promise were made in advance, it would be corrupting the voter.

*Question.* Are not these appointments, in many instances, to do merely clerical labor?

*Answer.* I do not know about that; I presume so.

[The CHAIRMAN (Mr. POLAND) read article 39, chapter 63, of the code of Mississippi with reference to bribery, one of the articles already incorporated in the testimony.]

WITNESS. That is one of the sections to which I have referred; and there is another in the same chapter.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Is there anything in that provision which prevents a man from discharging another from his employ because of his vote?

*Answer.* No; not unless he does it to control his vote.

*Question.* But after a man has voted cannot his employer discharge him whenever he pleases?

*Answer.* I suppose he can.

*Question.* And there is nothing in the law of Mississippi to prevent it?

*Answer.* Not that I know of, unless it is in the other section to which I have referred.

*Question.* Can I not, after the election is over, discharge from my employment any man that I see fit to discharge, and employ any man whom I see fit to employ, for any reason that I deem proper?

*Answer.* You can, unless you undertake to control his vote by pecuniary considerations.

*Question.* In advance?

*Answer.* In advance.

*Question.* But after the election is over I am free in Mississippi or elsewhere to discharge a man for any cause that I deem sufficient?

*Answer.* Or without any cause, unless it is in violation of your contract, or unless it is done to influence and control the voter in the election.

*Question.* You have spoken in terms of a good deal of disparagement of the conduct of the press in their comments upon the action of your judges.

*Answer.* Not of the press at large, but of some of the newspapers.

*Question.* Portions of the press?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have they not the right to speak in any way they deem proper, of anybody that they choose, subject to their liability to suits for libel?

*Answer.* I suppose so.

*Question.* Why do you speak, then, of what the newspapers have done as being in violation of law?

*Answer.* I did not speak of it as being in violation of law; I merely stated their course.

*Question.* You do not pretend to intimate that gentlemen of the press have not the right, subject to their responsibilities, to comment on anybody, whether he is in official position or not?

*Answer.* I do not think it is very decent or productive of good for men to charge that a decision which does not meet their views was made solely for corrupt partisan purposes, and that, too, in the utter absence of all proof.

*Question.* Do you believe that the old sedition law ought to be revived in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You would oppose that?

*Answer.* I would oppose it.

*Question.* You think no man is too high to be above comment?

*Answer.* The press has the right to criticise the action of all public officers; but when an ignorant political demagogue happens to have control of a pen or a press, and without knowing anything about law, or about the facts of the case in question, undertakes to throw contempt upon a court because it has made a certain decision, and to insinuate that the decision was corrupt, accompanying the charge with no proof whatever, I think such things may sometimes be productive of mischief among the people; the tendency might be bad. That is done sometimes. I do not mean to characterize any particular person as a demagogue, but there are sometimes political demagogues

*Question.* They are not confined to any one party either?

*Answer.* I think not.

*Question.* Is it not the fact that all the machinery of your State is in republican hands?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is not the fact. The juries are some of them republican, some of them partly republican, and some of them democratic; but they are always selected without reference to politics.

*Question.* Your judges are all republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* They are all appointed by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Your sheriffs are all appointed by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; temporarily.

*Question.* Your county clerks are appointed by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all the officers of the State have been appointed by the governor, except superintendents and directors of schools in the counties.

*Question.* The appointees of Governor Alcorn have the selection of the juries?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And can select black or white juries?

*Answer.* No, sir; they have to select them under the law by drawing the names from a box containing the names of all liable to jury duty.

*Question.* They put no names in the box except those they consider discreet, sober men?

*Answer.* O, yes; they put in the name of every citizen within certain ages, and not exempt; and from the names put in the box the jury is drawn.

*Question.* Does the law require that the name of every man in the county shall be put in the box?

*Answer.* Every man who is a voter, without regard to his education or his ownership of property,

*Question.* Is that according to the new constitution of Mississippi?

*Answer.* It is the new law.

*Question.* Passed by a republican legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by a republican legislature.

*Question.* With all this machinery in the hands of Governor Alcorn and his friends, why cannot offenders be punished in the State courts?

*Answer.* I do not say they cannot; I think it probable they can; but I think that the object is more likely to be accomplished through the agency of the Federal courts; I think there would probably be less trickery in the United States courts to prevent prosecutions, and that such influences would be more likely to succeed in the State courts, especially in the same region of country where the crime was committed, than in the Federal courts. There are only two district courts in the State, and each of them has about half the State within its jurisdiction. In the Federal courts, juries, grand and petit, are obtained from the whole district; and these courts, representing the Federal Government, have a sort of authority which the State court, representing the local government, has not. The State courts are held for each county; and the juries must be selected from that county. It is only in the interior counties, where the worst state of feeling prevails, that these Ku-Klux exist, or that their outrages are perpetrated; and, therefore, it is more difficult to organize effective machinery for trying and convicting the offender in a State court than in a Federal court.

*Question.* The witnesses, of course, are the same persons, no matter what the court may be?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but in two cases where men told me they had been assaulted and abused by these secret marauders, the witnesses were willing to go to Oxford or Jackson to testify in the United States court, but were afraid to testify in the locality where the outrage had occurred.

*Question.* You do not consider it any hardship for men to be taken from the county of their residence to a county perhaps one hundred and fifty miles distant, on the mere say-so of anybody who declares himself to have been injured?

*Answer.* I do consider it a hardship, but sometimes that hardship is brought upon men by their own misconduct.

*Question.* And sometimes the clamor against them is false?

*Answer.* Sometimes, of course, it may be.

*Question.* I suppose negroes can tell lies as well as white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a negro will lie sometimes.

*Question.* Even republican negroes will lie sometimes?

*Answer.* Sometimes.

*Question.* But you are in the habit of believing all they tell, anyhow?

*Answer.* No, sir, I am not; I always give to their statements the same consideration that I do to anybody else's statement; taking it for what it seems to be worth.

*Question.* Is it not pretty generally the habit of all your republican friends to think that if any Ku-Klux are about, white men will swear to lies for them?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You do not generally assume that?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* I am glad you do not.

*Answer.* I believe that the Ku-Klux themselves—the men who put on these hoods and masks and go in armed gangs—are some of them truthful men who would not swear to lies; but there are some, I have no doubt, who would. I believe that very frequently young men—boys and youth—are deluded into this thing by its novelty and mystery and secrecy; there is a sort of a charm in this respect to young men, and they go into it frequently without realizing the extent of their wrong-doing. I believe that for their doing so, not republicans, but the opponents of republicans, are generally responsible in Mississippi.

*Question.* Do you not find it to be the fact that almost always, if not invariably, when men claim that they have been maltreated, they deny that they have themselves been guilty of any wrong?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that is human nature. If a Ku-Kluxed man or anybody else has a complaint to make, it is very natural for him to extenuate his own side of the case.

*Question.* Do they not generally tell the tale that they think will most enlist the sympathies of the man to whom they are telling it, and excite his action in their behalf?

*Answer.* I have no doubt it is so. I have not had enough experience in listening to the narrations of this class of men to have made up my mind as to any general rules peculiarly applicable to them.

*Question.* Do you not think it very natural and probable that if they thought they were talking to leading republicans and wanted vengeance on anybody, they would say that it was on account of their loyalty or their politics that they had been maltreated?

*Answer.* That might be.

*Question.* Would they not be very apt to do it?

*Answer.* I do not suppose they would be more apt to do it than men generally are when reporting their grievances Men generally try to forget that they have done anything wrong, or suppress the fact when they undertake to make complaints about mistreatment.

*Question.* You have stated, I believe, that in your opinion the white men of Mississippi, particularly those who are now democrats, have had no good reason to complain of the reconstruction measures?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not think anything of the kind.

*Question.* I am glad of it.

*Answer.* I said expressly that they have reason to complain. They have reason to complain of disfranchisement; they have reason to complain of various incidents pertaining to the plan of reconstruction. It was necessarily a hardship, because it had to fall on the whole State, the evil and the good together. Some of the class you refer to—the democrats—are, however, in my judgment, responsible for the thing having to be done.

*Question.* Do you think that any respectable number of democrats in Mississippi believe that the reconstruction measures of Congress were adopted in good faith, for the purpose merely of punishing the leaders of the rebellion and bringing the State back as a loyal State under loyal government?

*Answer.* Well, I presume there are a great many of them who believe that, and a great many who do not.

*Question.* Is it not the general opinion of your people that the system of reconstruction by Congress was brought about regardless of the welfare of the States of the South; that your white men were disfranchised and you negroes enfranchised for the very purpose of sending down there a class of men who might afterward come back to Congress and vote as their masters in Congress might dictate?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is not the opinion of the people of Mississippi, as a people. It is the opinion expressed and entertained by some; but a majority of the people of the State think otherwise.

*Question.* A majority of the white men of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir; not a majority of the white men.

*Question.* Do you think the negroes know anything about it beyond what you said, that they like to vote the republican ticket?

*Answer.* Some of them do not.

*Question.* I am speaking of the intelligent portion of the people—the white people, who read and write.

*Answer.* The intelligent portion of the people of Mississippi are divided in their opinion on that subject, I believe.

*Question.* Is it not natural for those who believe the reconstruction policy was adopted as a matter of mere vengeance to think quite hardly of those political leaders who took vengeance in that way?

*Answer.* It is very natural for those who so believe; but I think, if the truth were known, there are not so many who believe that way as you suppose. The people of Mississippi are pretty intelligent and well-informed. They know that in the law of the United States passed, I believe, in 1790, and approved by President Washington, the first Congress after the adoption of the Constitution enacted that any person who should be guilty of treason should suffer death; and I think that the intelligent portion of the people of Mississippi think that in making the war against the Government, whether their motive was good or bad, they did in fact do that which amounted to treason; that is to say, they levied war against the United States; and if they know the facts, as I think they do, they believe that in consequence of their treason the Government of the United States might have done far worse by them and with them than even giving the negroes suffrage, or taking that right away from the leaders of the rebellion. The Government might have put them on their trial, convicted them, and punished them with death for treason.

*Question.* Did not the Government have a chance to do that with Mr. Davis?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but it forbore. Let me say that I was not a loyal man during the war; I do not profess to have been; my sympathies were all with my people; I doubted the wisdom or necessity of secession, but was devoted to my people; and in speaking now of the people of Mississippi I speak of myself as well as others. As to the case of Mr. Davis, I think he was treated with comparative kindness. I do not know of any case in history, especially in English history, where after such a rebellion no man suffered death as a penalty for treason.

*Question.* Do you not think it would have been an act of greater mercy to have hung fifteen or twenty of the leaders and let all the rest go, than to have persecuted and plundered the whole southern people for five years?

*Answer.* No, sir. I did not want anybody hanged or persecuted or plundered. I wanted the people of the South to have as easy a passage back to the condition which they had voluntarily abandoned as they could; I wanted the Government of the United States to deal as gently with us as it would; but whatever it was disposed to do I was disposed to accept, whether I thought it right or wrong.

*Question.* Did you ever have any consultation with Governor Alcorn about the course which he took in supporting the reconstruction measures of Congress?

*Answer.* I went for those measures a long time before he did, and I did not have a word of conversation with him upon the subject.

*Question.* He tried being a democrat a while?

*Answer.* No, sir; he never was a democrat in his life; he was one of the bitterest enemies that the democracy, as a party, ever had.

*Question.* Was he against reconstruction?

*Answer.* Well, he did not at the start believe in the wisdom of reconstruction. He wanted that cup to pass from us. And so did I until the measure was adopted by Congress. Then I considered that my duty under my oath of allegiance, as a law-abiding man, and my duty to my people, was to bring about peace as early as possible and to take the thing as it stood. I felt like Daniel Defoe's game-cock in the fable. When he was among the horses in the stable and there was no way for him to get out, he looked up and said to the horses, "Gentlemen, let us not step on each other's toes." I felt that way in regard to the Government of the United States. I wanted the State of Mississippi, and the South generally, to accept whatever terms the Government might propose. If liberal, well and good; if illiberal, the odium would not be ours. I knew that we had to accept those terms, whether we liked them or not; and I thought we had better do it as cheerfully as possible. I thought that if we had accepted the

fourteenth amendment in the first place, it would have been better for us; and if the people of the State and the legislature in 1865, 1866, and 1867 had been generous and wise in their treatment of the negro, the civil-rights bill and various other measures which were exceedingly objectionable to us would not have been passed. But I thought that their conduct toward the negro was such as to render it necessary for the United States, having this elephant on its hands, to see that it should not die of starvation or perish from persecution. That was my theory.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 21, 1871.

CORNELIUS McBRIDE sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* I live in Chickasaw County, Mississippi.

*Question.* How long have you lived there?

*Answer.* Nearly one year.

*Question.* From where did you go when you went there?

*Answer.* From Oktibbeha County, an adjoining county.

*Question.* How long had you been in that county?

*Answer.* Nearly one year.

*Question.* Where did you reside before that?

*Answer.* In Cincinnati, Ohio.

*Question.* Are you a native of Ohio?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Where were you born?

*Answer.* I was born in Belfast, in the north of Ireland.

*Question.* For what purpose did you go to Mississippi?

*Answer.* To teach school.

*Question.* Did you teach school in Oktibbeha County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You taught there for about a year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What sort of a school?

*Answer.* A colored school.

*Question.* By whom were you employed?

*Answer.* It was a private school; I was employed by the patrons of the school. I taught a public school in Chickasaw County.

*Question.* In this last county, where you have been for about a year, you taught a public school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that a colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* While you were in Oktibbeha County teaching a private school, did you have any difficulty there; were you disturbed in any way?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never had any difficulty there. The portion of the county I lived in was remarkably quiet.

*Question.* Since you have been living in Chickasaw County, have you had any difficulty there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I had a difficulty in Chickasaw County.

*Question.* Will you go on and state how things went on in that county from the time you went there, and how you were first disturbed?

*Answer.* I went there about eleven months ago, and, with the consent of the white people in the neighborhood where my school was located, I opened a colored school. I got on very well with the people there for six or seven months, and was very well treated by my neighbors. I was selected by the white people in the neighborhood to take charge of their Sunday school. During the week I taught a colored school, and on Sundays I had charge of a school for the white people in Cherokee church.

*Question.* What was the name of the place where you lived in Chickasaw County?

*Answer.* Sparta.

*Question.* Was it in the town that you kept the school?

*Answer.* In the country, three miles south of the little town.

*Question.* This church where you took charge of the Sunday school, was that in the town?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was down where I lived.

*Question.* Go right on and tell your story now—any difficulty that you had; how it began, and all the particulars about it.

*Answer.* The last week in March there was a raid made over several counties there.

I had several warnings, in the shape of several school-houses being burned there; but inasmuch as I was on good terms with the people in the neighborhood where I was teaching, I did not apprehend any difficulty. There was a school-house burned down not far off from where I lived; Mr. Burt Moore was teaching the school there, and they threatened his life if he did not stop teaching. At Houston several teachers of colored schools were attacked; one of them told me that they ordered him to leave in three days or they would take his life. His wife was about to be confined, but he had to leave. But I did not fear any difficulty for myself, inasmuch as I had opened the school there with the consent of the white people in the neighborhood. During the last week in March some of my scholars told me they had heard that the Ku-Klux were out after me, but I did not pay any attention to it. I boarded with Mr. Thomas Johnson, an old gentleman; he was then in Alabama, and I was alone in the big house, and I had no arms in the house. There were some colored people living in cabins in the yard, but there was no one with me in Mr. Johnson's house. Between 12 and 1 o'clock on Thursday night, in the last week of March, a body of men came to the house, burst in the doors and windows, and presented their rifles at me. I asked them, "What are you all coming here this time of night for, making this row?" The leader of the party said, "You God damned Yankee, come out here." Well, I realized my position at once; I knew it was a matter of life and death; I did not believe those men came there merely to whip me and then leave me, as they did colored men; I thought they meant to kill me, and I made up my mind to make an effort to escape. There were two men standing at the window with their rifles presented at me; I leaped out of the window, right between those two men.

*Question.* Were you in bed when they came there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was in bed when they came; I jumped out of the window and ran to the house of a colored man in the yard, where there was a double-barreled gun. I was determined to get that if I could and defend myself. I had no time to wait for the colored woman to open the door, but I just burst right in. While I was running down the yard they fired at me a number of times, crying out, "God damn you, stop, or we will blow your God damned brains out."

*Question.* Did any but the two men fire who were at the window where you jumped out?

*Answer.* I do not know; I expect that the whole party fired, from the reports; I do not know.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Were you hit?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Go on with your story.

*Answer.* While I was in the cabin trying to find the gun, these men came in before I could find it. There were two rooms in the house of the colored man, and I went into one of them and tried to hide. They came in and searched for me and got me. The colored people prayed to them, "O, don't hurt Mr. Mac; for God's sake, let him alone." They said, "Don't make that noise; keep quiet; we will not hurt you; hold your tongues." They took me out of the house and across the yard; I asked them in what way I had injured them to justify that attack on me. They cursed me, told me to stop talking, struck me in the side with their bowie-knives that had their scabbards on, and with the but-ends of their pistols. They took me scarcely a quarter of a mile from the house, to a field near the road, and told me to take off my shirt, which I refused to do. Then one fellow struck me on the head with a pistol, cut my head, and knocked me down, and then pulled off my shirt.

*Question.* You had nothing on but your shirt then?

*Answer.* No, sir. Two of them then held me down, and one of them took a bundle of black-gum switches. I did not know what they were then, but one of the colored people told me the next day that they had picked up some thirty, and that they were black-gum.

*Question.* Black-gum switches?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a peculiar kind of stick, which stings and raises the flesh when it hits. One of them took the bundle of switches and commenced to whip me. They said they were going to give me a hundred each. I do not know how many men there were; I counted only five around me, but I believe there were more than a dozen there. They agreed to give me a hundred lashes each. One man gave me a hundred, and then handed the bundle of switches to another, who gave me about seventy-five. He said he had given me seventy-five when I escaped from them. I asked them while they were whipping me what I had done to merit that treatment. They said I wanted to make these niggers equal with the white men; that this was a white man's country. They said, "God damn you! Don't you know this is a white man's country?" I said, "The white people in the neighborhood are satisfied with my conduct and the manner I have been conducting the school here. They have shown it by selecting me to take charge

of their Sunday school." They said, "Yes, God damn you, that is the worst feature in it, having a nigger teacher to teach the white school on Sunday!" I was fighting them all the time as well as I could—kicking at them and doing what I could—for the torture was horrible. I thought they would kill me any way when they got through whipping me, and I begged them to shoot me. One of them came up to me with his pistol and asked me if I wanted to be shot. I said, "Yes; I can't stand this." The leader of the party said, "Shooting is too good for this fellow. We will hang him when we get through whipping him." I saw a rope hanging from a limb of a tree by the side of the road. There was only one man standing between me and the fence of the plantation. I observed that, and I tried to gain his attention, for I was determined to make an effort to escape. They threatened to hang me, or to tie me. I hardly know what they said. I thought they were going to hang me. I got the attention of this man for a moment. He was standing between me and the fence, and had two pistols. I asked him whether they would let me off if I would promise to leave in the morning. All this time they were whipping me, but I managed to partly raise myself. I was half way up, on my hand and knee; I made a spring and made for this man, and struck at him as hard as I could. I do not know what part of his body I struck. I know he disappeared; I do not know where he went. The way was then clear to the fence, and I leaped the fence. As I did so they swore terribly and fired at me, and the shots went just over my head, scattering the leaves all around me. As I went across the field they kept firing at me and followed me a short distance. By that time the neighborhood was alarmed, hearing my screams and the shooting. I went back to the house to get the gun I was after in the first place; but the colored people had hidden it, thinking that if I got it and shot at them they would kill me, but that without it they would let me off with a whipping. I went to the house of a neighbor there, Mr. Walser, and remained there during the rest of the night. Mr. Walser of course sympathized with me; he was my near neighbor and my friend. He said, "My God! Has it come to this now, that no man is safe, when you are attacked?" It was a very cold night, that night was—piercing cold. Before I went to Mr. Walser's house I had stayed in the woods for probably a half an hour. The blood was running down my back, and my suffering was fearful. Mr. Walser was afraid if I stayed at his house they might come there; but I remained there that night. The next day I taught my school as usual. They had threatened me while they were whipping me that if I held the examination I had advertised—they spoke something about the examination, and said they were preparing me for examination in another way. Some colored people brought me word that if I held that examination the Ku-Klux would come again and kill me that time sure; but I held my examination the following Monday notwithstanding the threats. I went there with a gun over my shoulder, and several people came there and brought their guns, and I held the examination. That night several white men and some colored men and myself laid out in the woods expecting that the Ku-Klux would come.

*Question.* Did you see anything more of those men after you got away from them, as you have stated?

*Answer.* I did not see any more of them in the shape of Ku-Klux.

*Question.* I mean that night.

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* About how many men do you think there were in the party that came to your house?

*Answer.* I do not think there were a dozen, quite; I have reason to believe there were more with the horses. The next day I instituted search, and found tracks of horses enough to indicate that there were more than that number of horses. But I did not count a dozen men around me.

*Question.* Did you see their horses?

*Answer.* No, sir; but I found the place the next day where they had hitched their horses.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* Around the edge of a little piece of woods by the side of the plantation.

*Question.* How near to the house where you then lived is the nearest house of a white man?

*Answer.* A quarter of a mile.

*Question.* You were entirely alone in that house when they came?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say there were some colored people living in cabins near the house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the yard.

*Question.* How were those men disguised?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the fact is, I was so excited I could not take particular notice of their disguise. Their faces were blacked, and some of them had cloth hanging around the sides of their faces; they had on red pants, I believe, with a large belt around the waist, with bowie-knives and pistols.

*Question.* Did they have on anything like a gown, or a robe, or did they have on only ordinary clothing?

*Answer.* I think it was ordinary clothing. I know the dress I have seen described as the Ku-Klux robe—a wide, flowing robe; I know they did not have such robes on.

*Question.* Did they wear an ordinary hat?

*Answer.* They had some kind of a uniform hat; their belts were all the same; their bowie knives and pistols and their pants were all the same.

*Question.* Was this a dark night?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was a moonlight night.

*Question.* Were their faces so blackened or covered that you could not recognize them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I could not recognize them. Really, the men who I believe attacked me I was not very well acquainted with. I had seen them once or twice, and had heard them curse me for teaching a colored school, but I did not know them well.

*Question.* Do you suppose they were men living in your neighborhood?

*Answer.* About four miles from the place where I lived. There were not any of my neighbors within three miles who knew me personally who would have taken part in such a thing as that.

*Question.* You had been there teaching school for about seven months?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And, so far as you know, your teaching that school was approbated by all the white people living in the vicinity?

*Answer.* Our superintendent, Mr. A. J. Jamison, the county superintendent, has many times referred to me in company, saying, "That young man is teaching a colored school, and everybody respects him; he stands well."

*Question.* Had you had any difficulty there before this attack was made on you?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You were pursuing this business of teaching school quietly and peaceably?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the only objection these men made to you was that you were teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was their only objection.

*Question.* In that way trying to make the negroes the equals of the whites?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is your age?

*Answer.* I am about twenty-four years of age.

*Question.* Had you had anything to do with politics?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am a republican, and have announced it there; I was known as such.

*Question.* Had you taken any prominent part in politics; been active there in politics in any way?

*Answer.* No, sir; except to recommend to the colored people to vote with the republican party; I have done that. I have never been a candidate for office, or sought office, or anything of that kind.

*Question.* Did those men charge you with doing anything except teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* No, sir; nothing else.

*Question.* They did not charge you with having given any bad advice to the negroes, or with encouraging them to do anything wrong?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Unless it was wrong to educate them?

*Answer.* No, sir. White people visited my school again and again, and said I was doing a good work there. There was no charge but that was made against me by them that night.

*Question.* One of those men, you say, gave you a hundred blows?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And another gave you seventy-five?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That was all the whipping they gave you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That whipping was on your bare back?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You had nothing on but your shirt when they took you?

*Answer.* That was all.

*Question.* And when they pulled off your shirt you were entirely naked?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And this whipping was while you were in that condition?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You spoke about the blood running down your back; you were whipped so severely as to draw blood?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was all cut up from my neck down below my hips; the blood flowed freely.

*Question.* After you got through with this examination that you have spoken of, did you then go away from there?

*Answer.* On the Monday night after the examination, Mr. Charles Warmuck, a white man, invited me to go to his house, saying I would be more secure there than at Mr. Thomas Johnson's house; that he and his servants would protect me as far as it was in their power. But that night we concluded that it would be better to take to the woods; and Mr. Warmuck and his colored servants and myself staid in the woods, expecting that they would come again.

*Question.* Where had you staid after you had been beaten?

*Answer.* With Mr. Warmuck.

*Question.* Had this man returned you had been boarding with?

*Answer.* No, sir; he did not return until after I left Chickasaw.

*Question.* You have spoken about ill-treatment that other persons received?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did they whip others besides yourself?

*Answer.* No other teacher in our county was whipped; several were shot at, and one teacher, three miles from Houston, was informed that he must leave.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I do not know his name; Mr. Jamison, our superintendent, can furnish his name.

*Question.* He was teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; three miles northeast of Houston. His wife was pregnant and was soon to be confined, and he came out and begged them in the name of God to leave his house, telling them of the condition of his wife.

*Question.* A band of men visited him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were they disguised?

*Answer.* I understood they were not.

*Question.* Did you understand that there was any complaint against him, except that he was teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* They made no other complaint; they said they were not going to allow such a thing as that in the country.

*Question.* What other teacher did they visit?

*Answer.* Three miles from where I live, Mr. Burt Moore lives. He is a southern man; he was a great secessionist before the war and during the war; but since the war he has accepted the new state of affairs. He is an old man and a poor man, and he opened a colored school in order to make something to support himself and family. He has accepted the situation, and is now a republican, and has become unpopular through voting the republican ticket. They put a notice on his door to this effect: "Mr. Burt Moore: We do not want to hurt you, but you must stop teaching this school." He continued to teach the school, though. The colored people had come out of their fields and erected the school-house themselves; and just one week after they had completed it, it was burned down. Mr. A. J. Jamison, our county superintendent, had the names of four men who said they could swear to such facts as would convict the men who had burned that school-house. Mr. Jamison had the subpœnas issued for those witnesses, so he told me himself. One of the witnesses said, "I dare not come and give testimony against those men, for my life would be taken for it." Another said his wife was sick, and the other two got out of the way altogether, so that there was nothing done in the matter.

*Question.* When was that house burned?

*Answer.* Some time in February last.

*Question.* Before you were whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a month before.

*Question.* Was that Mr. Moore's school-house that was burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What other teachers do you know that they visited?

*Answer.* I met one teacher in Okalona, who had been forced to leave his school; I do not remember his name just now; I have it in my note-book at home.

*Question.* Was that in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was in an adjoining county?

*Question.* Was he teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was there any objection made to him, except that he was teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* No, sir. There is no objection to any of these men, except that they were teaching schools.

*Question.* The effort was to break up colored schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the people object to them on the ground that they own the property, and they have to pay to keep "lazy niggers at school"—I use their own expression—and they say they are determined not to do it; that they have to pay for educating people that they do not believe in educating.

*Question.* What other school-houses did they burn, except Moore's?

*Answer.* They burned two others in our county.

*Question.* Were they colored school-houses?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did those bands of disguised men, about in your county, do anything else except to break up colored schools?

*Answer.* The colored people are in a general state of terror; they are afraid to leave one place and go to another; they are afraid that if any of them leaves his present employer, and goes to work for another man, these men will visit him. I have seen negro men who say they have seen sixty and seventy of these men riding about at night, thus creating a general terror among the colored people, so that the colored people would be afraid to change their place of abode, or to make any new arrangements.

*Question.* Have you heard of any instances where they have whipped colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of a number of instances where they have whipped them.

*Question.* Do you know any of the names of the persons who have been whipped?

*Answer.* I do not know them personally. In my immediate neighborhood, for three miles around where I lived, the white people were Union people, and did not countenance anything of that kind.

*Question.* Right about in your vicinity that was not done?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* And the teaching of the colored school by you was approved of by the white people in the vicinity of your school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was approved by the people. In fact my neighbors came to me and offered money and all that to pay my expenses in trying to put this thing down, the five or six families just around about where I lived; it is not a large community.

*Question.* Your school was entirely satisfactory to them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They made no complaint against you or your school?

*Answer.* No complaint whatever.

*Question.* They were in favor of it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I forgot to mention one other case; three miles from where I lived was a man by the name of Echols. Five nights before they attacked me he was taken out and whipped very badly.

*Question.* Is he a white man or a colored man?

*Answer.* He is a white man.

*Question.* Was that done by a band of men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What did they whip him for?

*Answer.* It seems that some members of the Klan had a grudge against him. They had started out for me that night, but some of them said it might be dangerous to go for me first; that they had better try a man who did not stand so well in the community. Echols did not stand so well in the community as I did, and they went for him first.

*Question.* Is he a bad man in any way?

*Answer.* Only a poor man; I never heard anything against him; at the same time he drinks a little whisky; that is about all the charge against him. They took him out, and struck his wife several blows on the breast with pistols to make her go back to the house, as she was following them, begging for mercy. She continued to follow them, and two of them took her and held her back, while the remainder beat her husband.

*Question.* Did they whip him severely?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; terribly.

*Question.* Was he a republican or a democrat?

*Answer.* He has no politics at all, that I know of.

*Question.* Is he a southern man or a northern man?

*Answer.* He is a southern man.

*Question.* Do you know what grudge any of them had against him?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about it. I did not know anything about men who went about drinking and quarreling. I kept closely at home. I was a student, and did not know much of what was going on outside of my own neighborhood.

*Question.* You gave your entire attention to your school and your business of teaching?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I taught the colored school every day in the week, and on Sunday I taught two Sunday schools; and I had some night classes for some young men who could not come to my day school, so that my time was fully occupied.

*Question.* What denomination was the church where you took charge of the Sunday school?

*Answer.* It was a Baptist church.

*Question.* It was a church attended by white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And your Sunday school was of white children?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; entirely.

*Question.* Is there any objection down there to persons who are republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is. If a man wants to tell you he is a republican, he first takes a look all around to see if any one is listening. If he wants to tell you he was a Union man all the time, speaking of the late war, he first looks all around to see who may be listening.

*Question.* What is the difficulty with a man who is a republican?

*Answer.* The people there say the republican party is formed of two classes of men: the first class is the thieves who come from the North to steal the people's money and to slander them; the second class is of home traitors, whom they hate worse than the northern carpet-baggers. They say they might put up with the men who come from the North being republicans, but those at home who are republicans are traitors to the South. They look upon a republican as one who is aiding in persecuting the people, as a traitor to the South, and as such they treat him.

*Question.* Have there been any prosecutions against persons there for whipping people, burning school-houses, or for doing any of the acts you have mentioned?

*Answer.* I made affidavit against fourteen men, on the evidence of a great many witnesses, and went in company with United States Marshal Pierce to make the arrests. First I went to Houston, our county town, to advise with the authorities there as to what I should do.

*Question.* How far did you live from there?

*Answer.* I lived fourteen miles south. I went there and advised with Mr. Jamison and several gentlemen (those who knew me) as to what I should do.

*Question.* Mr. Jamison is superintendent of schools for your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They first consented to sign a paper to have the military brought there, with which paper I was to proceed to Jackson. They then reconsidered the matter, as they thought that would reflect upon the home authorities, and changed the programme, and said they would have warrants issued for the parties. I would not consent to that, for I knew my witnesses would be killed on their way to testify. I went to Governor Alcorn, at Jackson, and advised with him. He gave me a letter to Mr. Wells, our United States district attorney. By their advice I swore out an affidavit against fourteen men, and proceeded with the United States Marshal Pierce, and a posse of military, to make the arrests. I was working in both cases, Echols's case and my case. Some of the parties were engaged in both cases. I was not acquainted with Echols previous to this outrage. When we went there I fell behind the military, when they were going through the country to make the arrests. To show you the state of feeling there: They got a man by the name of Nason, one of the board of supervisors, to show them the parties, and he begged the military to say that they forced him to go and show them the men. Nason was a republican, and was very willing to serve them, but was afraid to let it be known that he assisted the authorities voluntarily. When we got to the town of Sparta, Dr. Munson, the mayor, was asked by the military, "Was not that Joe Davis?"—one of the men I came to arrest. The mayor sneered at them; said they ought to have photographs of them; that he supposed they knew all about the men. He made some sarcastic remarks, and would give no information. In fact, he was the adviser of that whole party.

*Question.* Is he a republican?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is not anything. He is not a democrat, nor a republican. He is dissatisfied with all parties. I do not know what sort of a man he is. I believe he would go for either party that he thought he could make the most out of.

*Question.* How many did you arrest?

*Answer.* We did not arrest a single one; they took to the woods.

*Question.* You did not succeed in arresting any of them?

*Answer.* Not one.

*Question.* Has there been any attempt, except this effort made by you, to arrest and punish anybody for any of these crimes you have spoken of?

*Answer.* No, sir; the people are afraid to do it; I was the only one that attempted it, and I risked my life in doing it. I knew that I was playing a game of life and death in doing it; that those men would kill me if they could. Before I went with the military I went with Marshal Pierce one time, but we had to return without making any arrests. I went to Houston and told Mr. Jamison what I had done; that I had made arrangements to have the military come there and make the arrests; that Marshal Pierce had gone to Oktibbeha, to make some other arrests, but was coming back. While I was in a store in Houston two of the men I had made charges against came into the store, one in a door at one end of the store, and the other in a door at the other end. I was sitting there talking with Mr. Jamison, our school superintendent. Those men had their belts and pistols; but that is nothing unusual, because almost everybody in that country, twelve years old, has a pistol.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Do you mean black and white?

*Answer.* No, sir; I only speak of the whites.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* What did those men say to you?

*Answer.* They asked me if I had sworn certain things; if I had identified them. I said, "No, I have not," because I could not identify any of the parties who were present. They said, "We had heard that you had, and it is a good thing you have not, because we would have had a difficulty right here," and one of them put his hand on his pistol as he said so. I have no doubt that if I had said then that I had sworn against those two fellows I should have been assassinated there in open daylight.

*Question.* Are there any colored schools now being taught in that county?

*Answer.* Very few, except by such teachers as have not finished their first term. The teachers who have taught their first session under the free-school system are afraid to open school again, even where they have not been ill-treated. Echol's wife's sister, Miss Windham, had a conversation in Sparta with Joe Davis, one of the men who whipped her brother-in-law. She told him she would swear to a statement before the grand jury, which I have no doubt she did. Joe Davis said, "Do you identify me as one of the party that whipped Echols?" She told him, "Yes, I do; I recognized you, and I will swear to you." He commenced crying, told her that they had been raised together as children, had played together, and begged her to have mercy on him, or something of that kind. Joe said, "We did not intend to go after your brother-in-law at all; we were going for that man McBride; but whisky and an old grudge led us to your brother-in-law's house." Joe told her that they did not intend to have a colored school in the neighborhood. She told me about a friend of mine. We were studying together for the next examination; I used to go to his house, and he used to come to mine. They mentioned him, and said they meant to whip him next.

*Question.* Were you studying for the examination in your school?

*Answer.* No, sir; for an examination at Houston; we were going to apply for a higher grade of certificates as teachers.

*Question.* You were studying to be examined yourself?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They said they were going to whip Carradine next

*Question.* Was he teaching a colored school?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was teaching a white school.

*Question.* Did they object to white schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they said they were going to whip every teacher of a free school in that county. The reason they gave for whipping Echols first was that they did not know how it would go to whip white men, and they would begin with him first.

*Answer.* They thought they would commence with a cheap one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that is the idea. He does not work in the community, but drinks, and that is all there is against him. His wife's family is respectable, and so is his family.

*Question.* All there is against him is that he is rather a shiftless drinking man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Joe Davis said they commenced on him first to see how it would take. And really they did not make much fuss about his being whipped.

*Question.* And that encouraged them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have no doubt in the world they would have carried out their programme and whipped Carradine, only I managed to make it pretty hot for them after they attacked me.

*Question.* How long since have these bands of disguised men begun to appear in that county?

*Answer.* I suppose this thing has been in the county for a year or two; but they are just now beginning to organize in every place. The understanding is that they are getting up these bands to work for the next election. Joe Davis told Miss Windham that they had not been riding long; that it was a new company.

*Question.* Is it understood that these organizations are to have some political purpose and effect?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, of course, that is understood. It is understood that negro men who will vote the republican ticket are to be punished—shot, hung, or whipped.

*Question.* It is intended to have an effect on elections?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is intended that it will have an effect.

*Question.* How do the colored people feel about this; what is the state of mind of the colored people in reference to it, as far as you know?

*Answer.* The colored people talk this way; they say, "The Government has set us free, and we are worse slaves to-day than in old slavery times."

*Question.* Are they in great fear and terror from this organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, they are.

*Question.* Do you suppose they would be afraid to vote, would be deterred from voting as they wanted to, if there was to be an election now?

*Answer.* There is no supposition about it, I know it. Many of them have told me that they are afraid to vote; that they would not vote at the next election.

*Question.* Is that county a democratic county or a republican county?

*Answer.* It is republican, when they can vote.

*Question.* Do you know whether the white voters or the colored voters have a majority there?

*Answer.* The colored voters, but not a very large majority.

*Question.* There are some white republicans there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we have a number of white republicans.

*Question.* Have you any idea of the number of white republicans in that county?

*Answer.* Not a great number, that I know. There are many republicans that I do not know, who vote secretly, but are afraid to acknowledge it. Perhaps twenty white men in my county have told me that they voted the republican ticket secretly; they told me that as a secret; I was not to mention it.

*Question.* They were afraid to have it publicly known?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear anything of these disguised men while you were in Oktibbeha County?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; I heard reports of them, but I was inclined for a long time to believe they were like ghost stories; I did not believe much in it.

*Question.* What were their operations in that county—what did they do?

*Answer.* There were just reports of the organization; except their attack upon the Rev. Mr. McLachlan, I did not hear of their interfering with anybody; I do not think they whipped him, but run him out of the place.

*Question.* Of what denomination was he?

*Answer.* He was a Methodist minister.

*Question.* A northern man?

*Answer.* He is a Scotchman; he was sent from the North there as a preacher.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the operations of this organization against colored schools in other counties?

*Answer.* During the trial of the Ku-Klux at Oxford I acted as deputy marshal part of the time, and then I had every opportunity of hearing of cases in different counties. I guarded some of the prisoners and had charge of some of the witnesses, and was present at the statements that were made.

*Question.* Have there been many colored school-houses burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in Winston County the state of affairs is terrible. Parson Murff, of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, a southern man, held a position there as school director. His most intimate friends came to him and told him that, though he was a popular man, they had heard such threats against him that he must resign, or his life would be taken. He told me himself that he had to resign his position, for he was satisfied that if he did not resign his life would be taken.

*Question.* He was a native of the South?

*Answer.* He was a native of the county, and a presiding elder of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

*Question.* That grew out of their opposition to the system of free schools?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; they had no other objection to Parson Murff.

*Question.* Did they burn any school-houses in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, quite a number of them. The Rev. John Avery stopped at the same house in Oxford that I did; his house was burned.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* In Winston County. His brothers and cousins belong to this Ku-Klux organization; so he said himself. They had threatened his life because he was teaching a free white school, and he threatened to go before the grand jury at Oxford and give evidence against them. They then sent for him to go to one of their meetings. I give you Mr. Avery's statement. He was going to swear before the grand jury at Oxford, and his brothers sent for him to go to one of their Ku-Klux meetings. He went there and they proposed to compromise the matter, which he agreed to do if they would let him alone and not annoy him. But they broke their agreement by burning down his school-house afterward, and he came to Oxford to give evidence there. His brothers sent him word, while he was in the same house with me, that they would kill him, so help them God, for turning traitor and giving evidence against them. He had not turned traitor to them, for he had never belonged to their organization.

*Question.* Was he a southern man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a southern man.

*Question.* And a Methodist minister?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, of the Methodist Episcopal Church South; and a man highly respected and of good standing in that community, I understand. The order there was to put down every free school, and I do not believe there is a single free school in that county; the information is that they are all closed.

*Question.* They have broken up all the schools in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; or nearly all of them.

*Question.* Do you expect to return to Chickasaw County?

*Answer.* I want to return there, because I am interested in my school work there; but I dare not now; at present I cannot return.

*Question.* You do not suppose it would be safe for you to go back there now?

*Answer.* No, sir; my life would be taken. They have sworn there, since I have taken this action against them, that they will kill me, day or night; that they would track me wherever I might go. My friends have sent me word from there that these men have sworn to kill me, by day or by night, wherever I may go in that country.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* I want to get a little further information about this free-school system. The objection seems to be general to all free schools, white and black?

*Answer.* Not the same objection to all; in some counties the objection is to all free schools; in other counties, as in Chickasaw County, the objection is only to the colored schools.

*Question.* In some counties the objection reaches all schools, white and black, and in others it is confined to black schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the objection seems to be very wide-spread against the whole free-school system?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is wide-spread.

*Question.* What is that free-school system in Mississippi; how is it kept up? Tell us the working of it.

*Answer.* I will give it in my county; I am not familiar with it in any other county There is a tax on the property of five mills on the dollar, allowed by the State to be collected by the county officers for school purposes. Now our superintendent has this arrangement: In any neighborhood where there are twenty-five children, and the parents or guardians want a school, they get up a petition stating the number of scholars they will send, and recommending a certain man for teacher, if the superintendent should find him to be competent. This petition is presented to the board of school directors, and if they think that a school is necessary in that neighborhood they locate a school there, and appoint the party recommended as teacher if he has been found to be competent. No school is located in our county unless the people petition for it, and no teacher is appointed unless the people of the neighborhood want him.

*Question.* And any twenty-five persons can have a school established and a teacher assigned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they get the teacher themselves and send him before the board.

*Question.* Then if twenty-five colored persons—or enough persons to send twenty-five children, is that it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; enough persons to send twenty-five scholars; that is, if there is no other school within a reasonable distance.

*Question.* So that if five men could send five children each, they would be entitled to a school?

*Answer.* They would only be entitled to a school with this proviso, that there is no other school within three miles.

*Question.* They would be entitled to a school then, and to have a teacher of their own selection, if he was qualified?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Although none of those five men should own a dollar's worth of property in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the county would have to be taxed to support their school for them under those circumstances?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many schools were established in Chickasaw County?

*Answer.* Something like two hundred, I think.

*Question.* Two hundred schools in that county?

*Answer.* I think so; I do not remember the exact number.

*Question.* What are the teachers paid there?

*Answer.* Third-class teachers are paid forty dollars a month; second-class teachers some sixty dollars a month, and first-class teachers a hundred dollars a month.

*Question.* To what class did you belong?

*Answer.* To the second class, to the sixty-dollar class.

*Question.* Is the second class about the average?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so.

*Question.* And there are about two hundred schools and teachers in the county?

*Answer.* I think so; I do not know that that is the correct number, but I think it is about that.

*Question.* Then you have a board of school commissioners?

*Answer.* Of school directors.

*Question.* How many of them are there in the county?
*Answer.* There are five school directors in the county.
*Question.* What salary do they get?
*Answer.* They get three dollars a day while in session, and their mileage to and from their homes.
*Question.* Then you have a superintendent of schools for the county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What pay does he get?
*Answer.* Five dollars a day for the time he is actually engaged about schools.
*Question.* And his mileage?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* That is, ten cents a mile, I suppose?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; five cents a mile each way.
*Question.* Does your pay as teacher run the whole year?
*Answer.* No, sir; but four months this year.
*Question.* When you are employed by the year it runs for the twelve months?
*Answer.* No, sir; for not more than ten months; the law allows them to go for ten months, and not less than four months in a year.
*Question.* All this expense comes out of the property of the county?
*Answer.* Not all; a great deal of revenue is derived from fines; and then there are sales of public lands belonging to the Chickasaw school fund; and then liquor licenses; all of that goes into the school fund.
*Question.* All of that is thrown into the fund?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think in our county the tax on the property for school purposes is but three mills on the dollar.
*Question.* If the money derived from these other sources was not absorbed by the school fund, it would be used for some other purpose?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* The colored people of Chickasaw County own but little property, I suppose?
*Answer.* Do you refer to landed property?
*Question.* Yes.
*Answer.* They own a great deal of property, and a great deal of live stock.
*Question.* Of landed property?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; some colored men there have ten or twelve thousand dollars' worth of property.
*Question.* Are they not comparatively few?
*Answer.* I think there are a few of them.
*Question.* How many free negroes were there in Mississippi before slavery was abolished in that State?
*Answer.* I do not know.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* While on that point of landed property, let me ask if the colored people are free to buy land; will the white people sell land to them?
*Answer.* Not as a general rule.
*Question.* State right here what you know about that.
*Answer.* There is this state of affairs there: As a general rule a man is very unpopular with his neighbors who will sell land to colored people; and then a colored man is in danger if he buys land. In Winston County a dozen men were whipped, and the only charge against them was that they had bought land. A colored man of the name of William Coleman, in Louisville, Winston County, bought eighty acres of land, and just after buying the land a body of disguised men came there and took him out of his house and nearly killed him, left him for dead in the road. The only charge they made against him was the buying of this land, and they threatened at the same time to kill the man who had sold it to him.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Who told you this?
*Answer.* Coleman himself.
*Question.* Did you ever hear a colored man who had been treated in this way admit that he had ever done anything wrong?
*Answer.* I do not understand your question. Do you mean admit that he has ever sinned?
*Question.* That he had ever done anything to be whipped for?
*Answer.* I have heard many of them admit that they were sinners, that they were not converted people, if that is what you mean.
*Question.* I have asked you a question, and you say you do not understand it?
*Answer.* I really do not understand what you mean by admitting that they had done wrong. Do you mean had violated any statute?
*Question.* That they had committed any offense, or violated any law of the State?
*Answer.* No, sir, I do not think they have admitted that.

*Question.* You do not think they ever have admitted that they had done anything wrong?

*Answer.* I do not know about that; I do not know anything about that.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Go on now and complete your statement about negroes buying land.

*Answer.* In Louisville, Winston County, Coleman bought eighty acres of land. He has a good character from the white people there, from his old master, as a steady, sober, and industrious boy; that is his character. They whipped him because he had bought that land, and they left him for dead. He was twenty-four years of age, had been fifteen years in Winston County, and had never been brought before the court for any offense. He told me of a number of colored men in that county who had been whipped for the same offense, for buying land. One man, William Miller, was whipped in the same county; the charge against him was that he did not raise his hat to a white man.

*Question.* I do not want to ask you now about anything but the land matter.

*Answer.* That is all I know about that matter.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Do the colored men in Chickasaw own much land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, comparatively speaking, they do.

*Question.* What negro was ever whipped in Chickasaw for buying land?

*Answer.* I do not know a single one whipped there for buying land.

*Question.* Or interfered with in any way because he had bought land?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know of any interfered with there for that reason.

*Question.* You do not know how many free colored people there were in the State of Mississippi before slavery was abolished?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not.

*Question.* Have you any idea about how many there were?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Look at this table (handing witness a book) from the census returns of 1860, and see if there were not just 773 in the State then?

*Answer.* (Looking at the table.) That is what this table shows.

*Question.* How many free colored men do you think there were in Chickasaw County before slavery was abolished?

*Answer.* I do not suppose there were a dozen; I have never met one.

*Question.* I suppose there could have been but a few, for the laws of Mississippi did not allow it. Whatever property is owned by colored men there now is property which they have accumulated since the close of the war?

*Answer.* Not altogether. In most instances the colored men who have accumulated property were foremen over the other slaves, and had opportunities to make money in slavery times. For instance, Ambrose Henderson, our colored representative, owns ten or twelve thousand dollars' worth of property, much of which he had accumulated before the war. He had hired his time from his master, and had had a barber's shop, had a saloon at fairs, and things of that kind.

*Question.* The great bulk of the property there is held by the white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Does not this school tax bear very heavily upon the people, this keeping up of two hundred schools, the machinery of school boards, and all that?

*Answer.* I never heard any one object to it because it was a burden to them, but because it was introduced there against their wishes. Every man I have talked to, who is opposed to the present system, says that it is cheaper for them than the private school system.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* Do you know what is the present school tax in Chickasaw County?

*Answer.* I think it is two and a half mills on the dollar.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Is that for the pay of the teachers alone?

*Answer.* For teachers and the school-house fund, all together.

*Question.* I thought you said not long ago that the tax was five mills?

*Answer.* I do not think I said so. I said the law allowed a tax of five mills on certain kinds of property.

*Question.* And then there are other funds besides the direct school tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have public school lands that have always been used for that purpose to endow charity schools; to assist neighborhoods where they were not able to maintain schools themselves.

*Question.* What ground of objection had they against it? You say they objected to it because it was put there against their will; was it not put there by the legislature of the State?

*Answer.* The ground of objection is this: Under this free-school system the colored people would be taught. If it was a private-school system, the whites would not teach colored schools, because they would not, perhaps, get any salaries paid them. The greatest objection on the part of the white people is that they own most of the property and they object to paying for the education of colored people, inasmuch as they do not believe in educating them; that is, the majority do not. Of course there is a large minority of the people who are in favor of educating the colored people.

*Question.* Had you ever taught school anywhere else before you went to Mississippi.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I taught a colored school in Cincinnati, Ohio.

*Question.* For how long?

*Answer.* For some months; not long.

*Question.* How long did you reside in Cincinnati?

*Answer.* I resided there two years, I think.

*Question.* Were you educated in Cincinnati, or in Ireland?

*Answer.* I was educated in Ireland.

*Question.* How long have you been in this country?

*Answer.* About five years.

*Question.* You have not become a citizen yet?

*Answer.* A citizen of this country?

*Question.* A citizen of the United States?

*Answer.* I was here before I was twenty-one. I believe I am a citizen; I do not know.

*Question.* Have you ever taken out naturalization papers?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think the law requires me to do it, inasmuch as I was a minor when I came here.

*Question.* Did your father come with you?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You were over eighteen years of age when you came here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I may have been over eighteen.

*Question.* You were under twenty-one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You did not come to this country with your parents?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* And you have not taken out naturalization papers?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you ever voted in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Not for any purpose?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have never voted at all.

*Question.* You have acted as United States marshal, you say?

*Answer.* I was appointed deputy several times, to take charge of prisoners.

*Question.* You have acted as deputy marshal during trials?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were you appointed by the marshal of the United States down there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were you sent as deputy marshal to make arrests?

*Answer.* I went with the marshal once to arrest some parties I had sworn to.

*Question.* Were you a deputy marshal at that time?

*Answer.* I do not know whether he regarded me as deputy then, or as simply going with him to point out the parties.

*Question.* You were not sworn in?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never was sworn in at all.

*Question.* Not even as deputy marshal at Oxford?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You were guarding prisoners and summoning witnesses without being sworn?

*Answer.* I never summoned witnesses; I guarded prisoners.

*Question.* You were merely acting under the orders of the marshal; deputy to that extent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Up to the night of the attack on you you had never been interfered with?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you think you would have been whipped that night if you had not made such an effort to get that gun?

*Answer.* O, I do not know. They could not tell what I wanted to get, when I jumped out of the window and ran to the cabin.

*Question.* They followed you into the cabin, while you were searching for the gun?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never got the gun; they could not tell what I was searching for.

*Question.* Did you not call out to the old fellow in the cabin to let you have the gun?

*Answer.* Well, when I was in the cabin I might have asked where the gun was.

*Question.* You were excited, but you must have known what your business there was?

*Answer.* My object was to get that gun, of course; and if I had got it I would have defended myself, too.

*Question.* After that they took you out and whipped you, as you have described?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they shot at me before that, while I was running down the yard to the cabin.

*Question.* How near were they to you when they fired?

*Answer.* Perhaps fifty or sixty yards.

*Question.* Did they let you get off fifty yards from them before they commenced firing?

*Answer.* I could not tell what distance I was from them when they commenced firing. When I jumped out of the window I ran very quickly; and while I was running through the yard the firing commenced. The colored people were screaming all around there.

*Question.* You were not hit by them?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was not hit by any of the balls.

*Question.* Who is the circuit judge of your county?

*Answer.* Judge Bradford.

*Question.* Is he an appointee of Governor Alcorn's?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Who is your county attorney?

*Answer.* Frank Pate.

*Question.* Is he also one of Governor Alcorn's appointees?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How often is court held in Chickasaw county by the circuit judge?

*Answer.* I never attended the circuit court there. I think it is held twice a year. I never had time to attend courts, or anything of that kind.

*Question.* How many scholars did you have in your school?

*Answer.* I had about eighty scholars, I believe.

*Question.* How are your forty, sixty, and one hundred dollar teachers graded; by the number of scholars they have?

*Answer.* No, sir; by their qualifications as teachers.

*Question.* Would a man with but twenty-five scholars, if he had qualifications of a high order, get a hundred dollars a month?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* While you, without those qualifications, teaching eighty scholars, got but sixty dollars a month?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And if you had less qualifications, and were teaching a hundred scholars, you would get only forty dollars a month?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* While a man who taught but twenty-five scholars—and they might be of the families of only five colored men, without any property or anything else—would get a hundred dollars a month?

*Answer.* But they will not appoint first-class teachers to take charge of colored schools. I intended to apply for a first-class certificate at the end of my examination, and if I had received it I would have been obliged to give up my school. They will not appoint first-class teachers to take charge of third-class schools. As a general thing, they will not appoint second-class teachers for colored schools; they generally give them third-class teachers, unless it is a very large school.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What is the proportion between the white people and the colored people there?

*Answer.* There are more colored people there than white people.

*Question.* Are there many disorders or disturbances occasioned there by colored people, as against the whites, or among each other?

*Answer.* I have never known a single fight among the colored people in the county, nor a single disturbance of any kind.

*Question.* Do the colored people show hostility to the whites, animosity against them; if so, in what manner do they show it?

*Answer.* No, sir. That is one of the most remarkable characteristics of the colored people; in speaking of their old masters they talk in this way: "Let by-gones be by-gones; bury the past;" that is the general sentiment.

*Question.* Are the colored people armed?

*Answer.* As a general thing colored men have an ambition to get a gun.

*Question.* Are they allowed to retain their arms?

*Answer.* Well, in our county, they are.

*Question.* What is the character of the men who belong to this Ku-Klux organization, so far as you know them or have heard of them?

*Answer.* As a general thing they are an ignorant, illiterate set of men, and they seem to be determined to keep everybody else the same. The men who are engaged in Ku-Kluxing, if they were not sympathized with by men of better standing than themselves, would soon go under.

*Question.* Can you give an idea of the amount of sympathy, or the character of aid and assistance, they got from men of property and standing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is easily shown. In the matter of bail, or anything of that kind, the best men in the community will give their signatures. In Oxford, for instance, when those men were arrested and brought there they were put in pretty good quarters among the soldiers. But the people of the county had a meeting for their benefit, and took them beds and chairs, and playing cards, and all that. That showed the sympathy of the people with them. And when the United States marshal was struck there, they showed their sympathy by arming themselves and going into the court room.

*Question.* Can you, from reliable information, give any idea of the number of the Ku-Klux in your county, and in other counties there?

*Answer.* We believe that about one-half of the white people in our county belong to the organization.

*Question.* What induces you to believe that?

*Answer.* From the fact that if you denounce the Ku-Klux, or take any action against them, you make one-half of the people there your enemies, and they show it by condemning you. The president of the board of supervisors in my county asked me what kind of evidence I had against these fellows; I told him that I had several colored witnesses and some white witnesses. He said, "You must not bring colored testimony against white men in this county."

*Question.* Have you any other facts going to show the number of men who belong to this organization?

*Answer.* Those men who whipped me told me there were five millions of them in the United States; I believe that was the number.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* Five millions they said.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Have you any statements from the prisoners or the witnesses there as to the numbers in their neighborhood?

*Answer.* I did not hear any person say what was the number of the Ku-Klux in his neighborhood.

*Question* Have you not had conversations with persons of intelligence and information in relation to the number of them in that region of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I have conversed with our marshal and several of our leading men.

*Question.* What is your best information on that subject?

*Answer.* The most of the intelligent men in the country believe that about one-half of the white people belong to it. There are communities where a majority of the people are against Ku-Kluxism.

*Question.* I am talking about your immediate vicinity, your county and the adjoining counties; I am not asking in relation to distant portions of the State, for I do not suppose you know anything about it there.

*Answer.* In our county perhaps one-half of the white people either belong to the organization, or sympathize with it.

*Question.* That is what I want to get at. Have you given a statement of all the acts of outrage perpetrated by these men, that have come to your knowledge? If not, give such as you have omitted to state, that have occurred in your county and in adjoining counties.

*Answer.* I know of the whipping of Colonel Huggins. I know from reports of other men being whipped; in some cases I saw the men themselves; in some cases I got the information from other persons. I saw the wife of Aleck Page; her husband was taken out and killed in Monroe County. Dupree was murdered in that county, and a number of others. In fact the cases are so many that I cannot remember them all. I have a number of cases noted here, which I can give; I got the statements from the parties themselves.

*Question.* That is what I want to get at. If you have any reliable information in relation to such matters, state what it is.

*Answer.* This information comes from the parties themselves, or from Mr. Wiley Wells, the United States district attorney at Oxford.

*Question.* Do you mean by "themselves," the victims of the outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Addy Foster was whipped in Winston county for buying land.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* State in each case how you got the information.

*Answer.* I got this from William Coleman, his neighbor; William Miller told me that he was whipped because they said he would not raise his hat to a white man; he was there before the grand jury at Oxford.

*Question.* In what county was that?

*Answer.* That was also in Winston County. Aleck Hughes, in Noxubee County, was whipped. A white man owed him $17, and he threatened to sue him for it, and they whipped him for doing so. Aleck Hughes gave me the statement himself.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Are you giving instances where the outrages were perpetrated by disguised white men? That is what I am inquiring about.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all those cases were by disguised men. They hung Aleck Hughes up by the neck and nearly killed him; he was insensible when they let him down. Zack Job was whipped in Noxubee County, and Henry Leadbetter was also whipped; both by disguised men.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* State when it was done.

*Answer.* I do not know when; it was done some time in March. In Corinth, Mississippi, George Shubble was also whipped by disguised men; and near the same place Fanny Honeysuckle was whipped by disguised men; and Mr. Campbell, who kept a grocery store, was whipped by this body of disguised men, because he would not give them some whisky.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In Corinth?

*Answer.* In Corinth, or near Corinth. A number of other men at Oxford told me of outrages committed upon them; but I omitted to note the counties.

*Question.* No matter about them. You have testified as to the hostility of the people to free schools. What is the cause set forth by those men for their hostility to free schools?

*Answer.* Well, educating the colored people is the great cause of objection; that is the reason why they are against free schools; and then it is a republican measure. If the democratic party had passed that bill, I am sure there would not have been any opposition to it in that State, except on the part of a few white people who might have objected to being taxed to support colored schools. The great opposition to it is because "it is a damned radical free-school system;" that is the way it is spoken of.

*Question.* Is it from an apprehension that the negro will become equal to white men; or is it from hostility to the negro, and a desire to keep him down; or is it both?

*Answer.* It is both.

*Question.* Have you heard any expression of opinion in relation to that? if so, state it.

*Answer.* I will give the expression of a lady in our neighborhood. She said that a white man who taught a colored school ought to be hung; that he should not show his face among white people.

*Question.* Why?

*Answer.* Because it was disgraceful to teach a colored school; and a white man dare not visit the house of a colored man there on any account, or they would not allow him to visit a white family again.

*Question.* In relation to the number of colored schools in your county; do you pretend to speak with any degree of accuracy in regard to that?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Have you had your attention called particularly to the number of schools in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I only judge from the extent of territory.

*Question.* Is or is not that stated in the report of the superintendent of education in your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It can all be found out by reference to that report?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it can all be found out by reference to the report of our county superintendent.

*Question.* You have mentioned a number of crimes and outrages that have been committed in Winston County, and other counties. Have you heard of any prosecution in the State courts for them?

*Answer.* They are prosecuting them now in the courts.

*Question.* In the State courts?

*Answer.* No, sir; in the United States courts. It is almost absurd to talk about prosecuting these fellows in the State courts, because they dare not do it. You cannot find a man willing to walk five miles from his home to give evidence against these fellows in a State court.

*Question.* Now, in relation to your acting as a deputy marshal; were you not merely an assistant?

*Answer.* Simply assisting the marshal there.

*Question.* You were not technically and legally a deputy marshal?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You mean to say, then, you were an assistant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Now, in relation to the attack upon you personally. After you jumped from the window, where did you see the men standing?

*Answer.* They were standing around the house. I did not see any but those who were standing at the window and about there.

*Question.* You saw two at the window?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and there were others at the doors.

*Question.* How far off?

*Answer.* They were just around the house.

*Question.* Did you pass them, or near them?

*Answer.* As I jumped from the window, I jumped between the two at the window.

*Question.* Where were the others?

*Answer.* There were three doors to the house, and they were guarding the doors.

*Question.* Who fired at you?

*Answer.* The men at the window; they yelled and fired at me.

*Question.* Where did the shots strike?

*Answer.* Some struck the ground just between my legs; some went over my head. I do not know where they went. The last time they shot at me, when I was escaping from them, as I leaped the fence, a little branch or twig rested on my head, and one of the shots cut off the branch right over my head.

*Question.* Did they say anything to you when you jumped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I knocked the man down, and they cried out, "O, God damn you, stop," and they commenced to fire at me. I did not stop, of course; I went into a little wood that hid me from their view. I had been crying out up to that time; but when I got into the wood, I ceased to cry aloud, and they did not follow me; probably by my not crying they thought they had killed me.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Where were you when you came here?

*Answer.* I was at Oxford.

*Question.* Were you summoned to come here?

*Answer.* No, sir; I came voluntarily.

*Question.* Without a summons?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for the purpose of giving testimony before this committee.

*Question.* You were not sent for at all to come here?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think so.

*Question.* You were summoned after you had come to Washington?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Where did you prepare the little book you have been referring to while giving your testimony here; at Oxford?

*Answer.* When a man would tell me at Oxford of an outrage, I would take down his name.

*Question.* Where at Oxford? In the marshal's office?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and some at my boarding-house.

*Question.* You took down those names to refresh your memory when you came here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POLAND:)

*Question.* You spoke about being appointed a deputy marshal. You were employed by the marshal merely as an assistant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, as an assistant.

*Question.* You had no commission as deputy marshal?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You were not sworn as an officer?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* In relation to your schools; the board of school directors have charge of the schools; they are all under their direction, are they?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they decide how many schools there shall be?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have the power to determine the number of schools.

*Question.* And they decide what class of teachers shall be employed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the class of teachers to be employed depends upon the size of the schools somewhat?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And for the colored schools they usually have teachers of the lowest class?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; generally.
*Question.* That is a matter to be determined by the board of school directors?
*Answer.* Well, sir, if a first-class teacher desires to take a colored school, they will not give him first-class prices. He can take it if he wishes, but they will give him only a second or third-class salary.
*Question.* They suppose that teachers of the lowest class, with low salaries, are sufficient for colored schools?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 25, 1871.

EDWARD E. HOLMAN sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Where do you reside?
*Answer.* At Holly Springs, Marshall County, Mississippi.
*Question.* How long have you lived in Mississippi?
*Answer.* Going on nineteen years.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What is your age?
*Answer.* Twenty-six.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What is your occupation?
*Answer.* I am a farmer.
*Question.* State anything you know with regard to the administration of the laws, the safety of life and property, and the maintenance of order in your section of the State.
*Answer.* It is very peaceable up in our county. In Monroe County, De Soto, Lafayette, and generally in the extreme northern portion of the State, the majority of the people seem to be law-abiding. Some few rowdies favor this Ku-Klux business; but as a general thing, all seem to be law-abiding people. In the lower part of the State—the prairie counties—Chickasaw, Choctaw, Lowndes, Noxubee, Oktibbeha—that is where the outrages are committed; that is where the Ku-Klux organization seems to thrive.
*Question.* Have there been any Ku-Klux operations in your county?
*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of lately. We did have a case in 1868—the whipping of a colored man; but it never amounted to much; there was not much notice taken of it. That is all I have heard of in our county.
*Question.* Have you, either from your own knowledge, or from sources upon which you rely, information of outrages committed, or of any disturbance to life or property in your State? If so, let the committee have it.
*Answer.* I was on the grand jury at Oxford, Mississippi, for five weeks.
*Question.* When was that?
*Answer.* We commenced the first Monday of last June.
*Question.* In what court?
*Answer.* The United States court.
*Question.* State any information that you obtained in that way.
*Answer.* I recollect a great many of the cases that came up before us, where parties had been whipped, and would exhibit their backs to us. Of course I remember their cases very well. There were several cases where parties had been threatened and driven off. One man's name was Eckels. A party of disguised men came to his house, I think about the middle of May; I know it had not been done long, because his back was sore then. He came there and testified that the Ku-Klux had come to his house and called him out; he would not go out; they then tried to break the door down. He jumped up in his night clothes, ran to the door and opened it. As he opened it, a Ku-Klux, in disguise, shot at him; the ball passed his ear, taking off the hair from the side of his head, and passed over his wife and child, who were asleep in bed, and hit the wall. Three or four of them grabbed him, dragged him out, and took him three or four hundred yards from the house. One of them staid at the house to keep the women from coming out. I believe they cursed him, and told him, "Damn it, we have you now." They took him down there in his drawers. I think they stripped him, and whipped him very badly. He said they whipped him with hickory poles about ten feet long. Two or three would get hold of one of these poles and lay it on. His wife ran out and clung to him, and tried to prevent them from whipping him. They told her they would shoot her if she did not go back to the house. They beat him till he

could not halloo any longer. The Ku-Klux left; and his folks brought him into the house.

*Question.* How many men were engaged in that affair?

*Answer.* He said he thought there were from ten to twelve, but could not state for certain how many; he thought there were some in the bushes; but he said there were certainly ten or twelve.

*Question.* Were they in disguise?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; they were all disguised. He says, though, that he recognized the one that whipped him; I do not recollect his name.

*Question.* How were they disguised?

*Answer.* They had cloth garments over them, something like a long sack—supposed to be a sheet, and white masks over their faces. Some had on hats with horns and other fixings. But most of them would have a cape to their sheet, and would bring it right over their faces, and then put their hats on their heads.

*Question.* Did they go on horseback?

*Answer.* O, yes; they were supposed to be on horseback. He said they hitched their horses out by his gate, he thought.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Were they armed?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; they were all armed.

*Question.* What with?

*Answer.* Revolvers. I don't think he saw any guns at all. All had side arms—pistols.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* How badly did they whip him?

*Answer.* They whipped him until he could not halloo; they whipped the breath out of him.

*Question.* Did you see his back?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I saw his back. We requested him to take off his coat and vest and pull up his shirt. His back was all covered with scars and lumps and knots where they had beaten him.

*Question.* In what county was that done?

*Answer.* I forget what county. Mr. Warmouth, one of the jurymen, was from the same place, and a next neighbor to him. They are afraid to go back any more. I think they are in Oxford yet.

*Question.* Did he state whether there had been other whippings in that section of the State?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir: he said that there had been a general whipping all around. They called themselves "regulators" and were "cleaning out things." They would go to a man's house and ask him if anything needed "regulating" about there, that if it did they would "straighten it out."

*Question.* What did they whip this man for?

*Answer.* I believe it was because he said he was not in favor of Ku-Klux. They had asked him several times if he was in favor of Ku-Klux; his neighbors passing along would ask him this, and he would tell them that he was not. I suppose they wanted to get him out of the neighborhood, and took that way of running him off.

*Question.* You say he spoke of other whippings in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he said he had heard of several being whipped in his immediate neighborhood.

*Question.* Was he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He had a family; and his wife and daughter both came up and gave their testimony. If I recollect aright I think his wife pulled up her sleeve and showed where one of the Ku-Klux had wrenched her arm. She said they had put a pistol to her head and threatened to shoot her if she hallooed.

*Question.* What did they tell him was the reason for the attack?

*Answer.* I believe they said to him, "You are one that ain't in favor of Ku-Klux; we have been wanting to get hold of you for a long time."

*Question.* Is he a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is considered a good Union man.

*Question.* Is he a republican?

*Answer.* I do not know about that. He told me he was not in favor of Ku-Kluxism. He is a poor man, and I should think he would be a republican if he is not.

*Question.* Did they say anything to him about politics?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't think they did. I think the most they got after him for was that he was a man that was not in favor of the Ku-Klux, or was not afraid of Ku-Klux, or something like that; and they came around to show him that they would regulate things generally.

*Question.* Can you state any other cases which were brought before you from that county?

*Answer.* There was Warmouth's case. I think in his case threats were the principal thing; I don't know whether they did him any personal injury. He was a juryman afterward; we put him on the jury; he was afraid to go home. He has a steam-mill down there; and I believe they told him the best thing he could do was not to put up that steam-mill, for if he did he could not run it long.

*Question.* Who is Warmouth?

*Answer.* He was a juryman on our jury.

*Question.* A white man?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* Has he been living in Mississippi a long time?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; he is an old citizen.

*Question.* What did they do to him?

*Answer.* I think threats were the principal thing. They drove him to Oxford; I believe they were around his house several nights. I think that was his statement. They got him worked up to such a state of mind that he concluded that they would kill him anyhow if he staid there, so he came to Oxford and reported.

*Question.* Is he a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a good republican.

*Question.* What was the complaint against him?

*Answer.* Well, I don't know, unless it was his politics. I don't know what else. They asked him, I believe, if he was in favor of Ku-Klux, &c. He told them no, he was opposed to all such things. They seemed to take a notion to go round and fan out these fellows.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* How long before the session of the grand jury did this thing happen?

*Answer.* I think it was in May; it had just freshly happened.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did it occur after he had been summoned to serve on the grand jury?

*Answer.* No, sir; we put him on the grand jury after he got there, I think, as we did two others whose names I cannot think of.

*Question.* Did he mention any other cases as having occurred in his county?

*Answer.* No, sir; he simply corroborated the statement of this other man about general whipping around there. He had heard of several whippings in that neighborhood—"regulating things," as they called it.

*Question.* Whippings of colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and threatening whites.

*Question.* State any other case that came before you.

*Answer.* There was a whipping up on the railroad at Corinth. Some railroad hands (the name of their section boss was, I think, Hanlin or Hanley) were going home from their work about sundown one night. One of the colored men was overtaken by a disguised party of men, Ku-Klux, who tied his hands and feet to the rails; they then got a ten-foot pole, and each one hit him so many licks apiece; they beat him until he could not halloo. Some of them testified that they left him there for the cars to run over, but for some reason they loosened him till the cars passed. They then went to the section-house, where the tools were stored. A lot of other colored men were there, and they took them all out and whipped them. This colored man that they tied to the rails, they said he had a pistol at his house, and these men went down to his house, a short distance from the road, to hunt for his pistol. It was also stated that they went to Hanley's house and got a rope to tie him with. They came back after a while. I believe they carried them all up the road a piece and turned them loose, saying to them, "Be good boys and it will be all right."

*Question.* How many were whipped on that occasion?

*Answer.* I do not know, exactly—only four or five.

*Question.* How many men were present?

*Answer.* He said there were six disguised men, and he thinks there were some eight or ten others that guarded the negroes, while they went to hunt for the pistol.

*Question.* How many were engaged in whipping these men?

*Answer.* He stated that they all hit him so many licks apiece.

*Question.* How many disguised men were present altogether?

*Answer.* We just had to guess the best way we could. He knew there were six there, and he thought there were ten more who guarded the colored men; that would make sixteen. I think that is about the number he said there was.

*Question.* Can you state anything further in regard to that affair?

*Answer.* That is about as far as we went. I believe he showed us his back where he was whipped.

*Question.* Were there any other whippings in that neighborhood?

*Answer.* Not that we heard of. That was the principal case. They had threatened these colored men several times previous, and finally they went there and gave them this whipping.

*Question.* What did they whip these colored men for?

*Answer.* I don't know. The only satisfaction they gave them was to tell them to "go home and be good boys after this, and not to be saucy."

*Question.* Was anything said about their politics?

*Answer.* No, sir; nothing of that sort.

*Question.* State any other case.

*Answer.* There was a gentleman by the name of Mr. Lee, a grand juryman, who got up in the grand jury room and stated what he knew. He said that some time in February, I think it was—either in February or March of this year—some of his neighbors wanted to kill a colored man on his place; I do not know for what; but they offered money to a colored man who goes by the name of "Confederate Sam," so he testifies, to get this other colored man out from his cabin over to his house, so that they could get to shoot him. "Confederate Sam" finally took the offer and got the colored man over there, and the negro was eventually shot at that house. I believe he was killed right in front of the house. They then had a coroner's examination the next morning. One of the parties who killed him was a doctor, whose name I do not remember. Mr. Lee named him and several men who, he was pretty sure, had a hand in the killing. There was some grudge against the colored man, I believe, for some reason; and in the next place they were mad with him because he left this doctor's place and went to work on the place of Mr. Lee, who was a good Union man. Mr. Lee killed some three or four men soon after the surrender, who came there to drive him off because he was a Union man. He got his gun out and blazed away at them, and brought down three. Mr. Lee and Judge Hill were talking about the affair. He said he recollected Lee very well. Lee was a good Union man, and these men were mad to think that this negro had gone to work on his place, and would not stay with them.

*Question.* How many men were present when this negro was shot?

*Answer.* I don't know. I think "Confederate Sam" said he was too much scared to go over and see about it. Mr. Lee, with a coroner and some four or five others, went over next morning to see the body. I believe the finding was, that the negro came to his death by a shot from a gun.

*Question.* Were the men in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not know; I think Mr. Lee testified they were.

*Question.* When did that case occur?

*Answer.* I think it occurred in February or March; I cannot say which.

*Question.* Can you relate any other occurrence of similar character in that neighborhood?

*Answer.* That is all that I remember about Corinth. There was another case there, where a store was broken into. A young man turned State's evidence, and said that he had been on several raids, whipping and one thing or another; that they asked him to go into it; that when he got in he found himself in a bad box; so he turned State's evidence in regard to buying whisky several times from a gentleman's store and not paying for it.

*Question.* Who bought whisky without paying for it?

*Answer.* These three or four Ku-Klux. The young man turned State's evidence on them. I think he is about eighteen years old; his home is in Tennessee.

*Question.* What did he state about the matter?

*Answer.* He stated that they had bought the whisky and that they whipped some men there.

*Question.* Who bought the whisky?

*Answer* These Ku-Klux men (I am trying to think of their names) came there in disguise and bought the whisky.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* I think he said four of them. They said they were Ku-Klux, going out on a little ride; that they would be around again and would pay him. The gentleman had a store, I think, three or four miles north of Corinth; he kept groceries and one thing or another. They played off that trick on him two or three times, getting whisky without paying for it; and they went around and whipped two or three persons on two or three different nights. Finally, I believe, they came to this man who kept the store and threatened to shoot him. So he was brought to Oxford to testify against those fellows. He had them arrested, and then this young man came up and turned State's evidence.

*Question.* What did they do to the man who kept the store?

*Answer.* The most they did to him was to threaten him and refuse to pay for what they got; I forget whether they broke into his store or not. I think he said they beat on the door, so that he was afraid they would beat it in, and he had to let them in.

*Question.* Were there only four men present?

*Answer.* Four men, all disguised. The evidence of the gentleman who owns the store, and of the young man who turned State's evidence, agreed all through.

*Question.* Did the man who turned State's evidence belong to the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he say there were but four?

*Answer.* He said that those four were all who were there; but he said there were others who belonged. He said he belonged in Tennessee; that he had just come down on a visit; that they asked him to go along, and he did not think there was much harm in it.

*Question.* Did he mention the number who belonged to the order in Tennessee?

*Answer.* He said there had been a good many up there, but he did not think there were many now. He had belonged to the Ku-Klux up in Tennessee, and came down to Mississippi on a visit, and those friends of his got him into it.

*Question.* Did he say he was on two or three raids in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; two or three, around Corinth, there.

*Question.* What did they do those two or three nights?

*Anwer.* They whipped two or three colored people.

*Question.* Did he tell how they whipped them?

*Answer.* No, sir; with bushes, I think he said.

*Question.* Did he give the names of those whipped?

*Answer.* I think he did; I am pretty sure he did; but I don't remember their names.

*Question.* Did he state what the Ku-Klux organization was formed for?

*Answer.* To "regulate things." They call themselves "regulators."

*Question.* To "regulate things" how?

*Answer.* Well, to suit themselves.

*Question.* What sort of things were they to regulate?

*Answer.* Well, if a colored man was not doing to suit them—that is, if they thought he had no business working on a certain man's place, and they took a notion that they wanted him, they would have him, or they would run him off. Their object is just to keep the state of affairs according to their notion.

*Question.* Was anything said about politics or voting?

*Answer.* No, sir; nothing was said about that. One object seemed to be robbery. He said he thought they just pitched in to make money.

*Question.* Did you have before you any other cases of whipping from other portions of the State?

*Answer.* I have stated about all I recollect now. There were a great many cases; we heard so many witnesses that we would be in the court-room at 7 o'clock in the morning and would stay there, sometimes, till 9 o'clock at night, only stopping half an hour for dinner.

*Question.* Tell us what you heard during that session of the grand jury?

*Answer.* There was so much came before us that I cannot recollect, except these particular cases, where the parties would exhibit their backs. Several colored men came there and showed us their backs where they had been whipped.

*Question.* Did witnesses come before you from different parts of the State?

*Answer.* Oh, yes, sir, from all around; and they were afraid to go back. They are just staying in Oxford now at the expense of the Government. It would never do for them to go back after testifying.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Why not?

*Answer.* Well, if they went home, I do not believe they would ever be able to come back again. They would make way with them; or, if they did not make way with them, they would devil them so much that they would have no peace.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did the witnesses before you report any other cases of whipping?

*Answer.* No, sir, not that I can think of.

*Question.* Were there only three or four cases of whipping in the whole State?

*Answer.* Oh, no; it was whipping all over.

*Question.* How many cases of whipping were there?

*Answer.* I think that there were twenty cases that they reported—whipping and shooting, too. Sometimes they would whip them, and sometimes they would take them out and shoot them. There was one case in which a man named Solomon Triplet was murdered.

*Question.* State all you know of that case.

*Answer.* He was a colored man, who, I think, lived on old Jack Triplet's place.

*Question.* When was this murder committed?

*Answer.* It was done this year.

*Question.* Where?

*Answer.* At Macon.

*Question.* State what you know about that case.

*Answer.* A body of disguised men came there, called him out, and took him off.

*Question.* Who did that?

*Answer.* The Ku-Klux—a disguised body of men.

*Question.* How many were present?

*Answer.* There is no telling how many. One of the witnesses testified that there were thirty, and another said there were fifty. We could not arrive at the correct number.

*Question.* Did they go to his house at night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they went to his house at night, called him out, and carried him away off into the woods; I believe they carried him quite a distance—out of hearing. They wound around in the bushes and thickets for a while, until finally they came to a stand. They had three or four colored men go along with them to get him out. They put white clothes on these colored men, armed them with pistols, and put them on horseback.

*Question.* How did they get these colored men to go with them?

*Answer.* They took them by force and told them they must go along. They took this colored man, bound his hands, and carried him off into the woods. I believe they tied a rope round his neck. One of the witnesses testified that they hung him up and let him down again; another said that he did not think they hung him up at all, but just led him along. They took the bed-cord from a bed in the house. When they got to the place where they stopped they stood him up and made two of these colored men, who turned State's evidence, take guns and help shoot him down. One said he refused to shoot, and they pushed him out of the way and let the others stand there. He thinks there were some five or six who shot all at one time and killed the man.

*Question.* Were there fifty persons present when that was done?

*Answer.* No, sir. A large number stood back with their horses; and the three or four colored men, and the same number, I suppose, of white men, went on away from the others, and shot the man. They shot him down, knocked his head in—broke it with a hoe or something of that kind; and I think one of them states that they cut his insides out. Another one does not state that; they do not agree very well on that point. But at any rate he was shot, his head was knocked in, and when found he had a rope tied round his neck. A colored man, the next neighbor on the plantation, heard the shooting and followed them up. He was one of the witnesses for the State. He followed them up so far as he dared, to see where they were, and then ran home. I do not remember his last name; his first name is Jehu. It rained that night. The next morning he jumped up and followed the tracks, until he came to the place where he had seen the main body of men staying back, while eight or ten went ahead into the thicket. He found a place where he noticed some fresh dirt. He went up to it, and on the top he found some leaves. He raked the leaves off. He made one pretty light grab, but did not see anything; he went a little deeper, and after making two or three grabs, he got hold of a man's beard. He knew right off that this was the man who had been taken off. He dropped everything and ran, and never stopped till he got home. He reported the fact to the man on whose place he was living. A body of men went with the coroner and this colored man. I think they went out to hold an inquest. When they got to the place they found the body of a man in a little grave. He had been buried about a foot and a half in the ground. He had a rope around his neck, and his head was broken in. This was all that Jehu could testify.

*Question.* Who were engaged in that murder?

*Answer.* These Ku-Klux. He gave some names; I cannot remember them; but they were the same men that were in this scrape and several others. They were all indicted. In each indictment there would be pretty much the same parties. I think Charlie Doss was called the captain of that squad.

*Question.* Where was that?

*Answer.* Down close to Macon.

*Question.* Did you hear of any other outrages committed by disguised men in that neighborhood or locality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I cannot state them with accuracy.

*Question.* How many of such cases—many?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There were four other murder cases. I cannot recollect the names of the parties, or exactly how they were killed. I know that most of them were shot.

*Question.* Were they all colored men who were killed?

*Answer.* All colored men.

*Question.* Were they killed by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. This same "Charlie Doss crowd," as they were called, were every one of them in six different true bills, which we found for conspiracy.

*Question.* Were these killings done at different times, or all on one night?

*Answer.* They were all done within a month; there would be two or three days between one and another; they ran straight along.

*Question.* What did those men have against Triplet?

*Answer.* I don't know; I cannot say what. I think there was an old grudge, though. That is what one of the witnesses said; that his master, old Jack Triplet, had an old grudge against him and took that way of settling it. There is one circumstance about this old man, Jack Triplet; they say he had children by this colored man's wife; that Solomon Triplet lived on his place; and it is probable that that may have had something to do with putting him out of the way.

*Question.* Was there any whipping by that crowd?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; several whippings. We would ask the witnesses whether they knew any other whippings; and they would always say that they heard of plenty more, but that they could simply tell the localities; that they did not know any names; that they had heard of this and that.

*Question.* From how many different counties do you suppose you had witnesses before you in that investigation?

*Answer.* From Chickasaw, Choctaw, Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Noxubee, and Pontotoc.

*Question.* Any other counties?

*Answer.* I do not recollect any more. Almost all the devilment was in Noxubee, Lowndes, and Octibbeha. Right down there seemed to be the nest of these operations. That is a prairie country, most of it.

*Question.* How many persons were indicted by your grand jury at the last United States court?

*Answer.* I think we found thirty-nine true bills. There were five, ten, fifteen, and sometimes as many as twenty-five, in one indictment. There were, I think, five bills in cases connected with the revenue; but there were thirty-nine against Ku-Klux.

*Question.* While these investigations were going on, were you present at the session of Judge Hill's court?

*Answer.* No, sir; that was impossible, because the grand jury was sitting at the same time. As a general thing, we were kept busy all the time. Our district attorney was nearly worked to death, he had so much to do.

*Question.* Did the witnesses before you represent the effect these operations of the Ku-Klux had in the community?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They said almost everybody feared them who was not in league with them and did not favor the Ku-Klux. Of course people were afraid of them, for they did not know whom they would pitch into next, or what they would do. The most reason that they would assign for this whipping and so forth, where there were any schools, was that they were determined to break up this school business—that they were not going to have any schools going on, especially among the negroes.

*Question.* Did you notice whether the operations of this organization were directed principally against colored men?

*Answer.* They were principally against colored men. Whenever they could catch a white republican who was not in favor of the Ku-Klux business, they would generally find a way to get rid of him, or oust him in some way.

*Question.* Was there any disturbance of the court while it was in session?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State the particulars of that occurrence.

*Answer.* If you want me to state them on my personal knowledge, I cannot do it.

*Question.* State what you heard.

*Answer.* One day I left the jury-room; we had adjourned till 5 o'clock. The habeas corpus case was going on. They wanted to liberate these prisoners on bonds. The hearing of that case was going on. All of us, of course, were interested to see whether our work was going to amount to anything; we did not want it all thrown away; if it was, we proposed to stop at once and hear no more cases. While that case was proceeding we heard that Colonel Lamar addressed the judge to have a man named Wissler arrested. He said he believed him to be a dangerous man, and he wanted him arrested. Wissler had been sitting on the steps listening to the judge. He got up and was walking out of the hall on tip-toe, when Lamar said, "Arrest that man." Wissler turned and quietly sat down. Lamar told him very impudently to sit down, and he did sit down. Lamar went on to make a tirade against him, representing him as one of the worst men in the country. He said he had come down there to swear these men's lives away. After he had finished speaking, Mr. Wissler got up to address the judge. He said, "If your honor please, if I have insulted this man, I apologize for it." Before he had got out more than a few words Lamar took a chair and told him to sit down or he would make him do it. One of the deputies ran up and told Lamar to keep the peace. Lamar told him to go away, saying, "How dare you approach me?" Then the United States marshal, Mr. Pierce, advanced to him, ordering him to keep the peace. As soon as he got within striking distance Lamar struck him and knocked him down. He fell into a chair, or he would have fallen to the ground. Then there was all hubbub in the court for some time. You could not hear your ears for the stamping and hallooing and cheering.

*Question.* Who did that?

*Answer.* The prisoners. Three of the prisoners jumped up and began to hurrah. The citizens took part also. You could not tell exactly who it was, there was such a hurrah and excitement. I believe there were three soldiers guarding the passage-way, to keep the prisoners from making their escape. In the mean time Mr. Emery, the foreman of the grand jury, went down and got some troops and quelled the disturbance. Then Judge Hill had Lamar's name stricken from the roll of attorneys.

*Question.* Was Lamar defending the prisoners?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was counsel for the Ku-Klux. One of the lawyers—I am trying to think of his name—who was defending the Ku-Klux, told them that if they did not go back and take their seats (some of them had rushed over the bar) he would not attend to their case any longer. By this means he made them go back and resume their places.

*Question.* You mean the prisoners?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he made the prisoners go back and get into the ranks. This lawyer, along with Judge Gholson, was defending the Ku-Klux. Colonel Lamar's name was stricken from the rolls, but finally, before the grand jury broke up, it was proposed by Mr. Wells, the district attorney, that it should be restored. That action on the part of Wells was taken through policy, to get these fellows under bonds and have them branded as murderers when they got out, in which he succeeded. Mr. Wells did the best he could under the circumstances.

*Question.* What sort of circumstances do you mean?

*Answer.* I suppose he thought it pretty dangerous. The people all seemed to be inclined toward the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Do you mean the black people?

*Answer.* No, sir; the white people. There is no trouble with the black people. I suppose most of us found that it was pretty hard work prosecuting Ku-Klux. They would occasionally throw out their slurs at us, saying, "A pretty-looking grand jury," and such things as that.

*Question.* Was any effort made to intimidate or interfere with witnesses who were sent before you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. One man concerned in that was Lawyer Sykes, from Aberdeen. This man, "Confederate Sam," had been before the grand jury. When he first began to testify he would tell a little, and then he would drop off again; we knew he was lying; and we told him, "There is no use in talking in that way; you may either tell us the whole truth, or go back to jail," where he was being kept as a witness. He then up and told the whole story about being bribed with money, &c. After his release, Sykes met him the next morning in front of the hotel in Oxford and was questioning him about what he had said; at least the negro said he did. Two of our jurymen were standing there—Blevins, a colored man, and Suttle—both, I believe, from Aberdeen. Sykes said to Blevins, "What sort of scoundrels are you to take negroes and compel them to testify to a whole pack of lies?" He then asked whether "Confederate Sam" had not been told in the grand jury that if he did not testify so and so they would put him in jail. Blevins said, "We did not tell him any such thing. We told him if he did not choose to tell the whole truth, he need not tell anything, but could go back to jail. That is the way we tell all witnesses. If they choose to tell anything, we want them to tell the whole truth; otherwise they need not tell us anything."

*Question.* Was any witness tampered with?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that witness was tampered with right there by Sykes, who also charged our jury as being a packed jury. Judge Hill made him take up his traps and leave; he would not allow him to practice in that court. He had been counsel for the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that the judge disbarred him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for tampering with a witness.

*Question.* Was his name stricken from the roll of attorneys?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose so. The result was that he could not go any further with those Ku-Klux cases; so he took up his baggage and left.

*Question.* Was his offense tampering with witnesses?

*Answer.* With witnesses and with the grand jury.

*Question.* Was he engaged as counsel for the prisoners?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Was any defense of Mr. Sykes made before the court?

*Answer.* No, sir. He just thought, I suppose, that he had better go, and he left. He knew that he had been tampering with those parties.

*Question.* Do you consider life and property safe in that section of Mississippi where these occurences took place?

*Answer.* No, sir; not as long as those Ku-Klux are there—those organized bands of disguised men; of course, under such circumstances life and property cannot be safe. From everything we had before us in the grand jury, I know that there must be danger, especially for anybody who is not in favor of these Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Do the colored men seem to be much frightened?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the main thing is, they do not appear willing to testify; they are afraid of what will happen to them when they go home again; they say, "If we tell this we will catch it when we go home." We tell them to tell the whole truth, and we will take care of them in Oxford. We let them stay there, and give them something to do.

*Question.* Do witnesses say that they have been threatened with injury in case they tell what they know?

*Answer.* O, yes; these colored men of whom I have spoken were along with the Ku-Klux; and if they reveal any of the secrets of the order it is punishable with death.

*Question.* What class of men appeared to have control of this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* It appeared that generally they were pretty well off; two-thirds of them would be considered well off, and the balance of them are poor fellows.

*Question.* Are these men white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Men of fair standing in the community?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* Men of mature age?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; most of them twenty-five or thirty—from that all the way up to old men.

*Question.* Are some as old as fifty?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; old Jack Triplet is sixty; we consider him a pretty bad case; he is worth $50,000 or $60,000.

*Question.* Does he appear to be implicated in these things?

*Answer.* We indicted him in two or three cases; he was in the party I told you of; I think we have got them safe if they do not run off and forfeit their bonds. We did not want them to be released at all; we wanted to keep them there in confinement; we thought they were safest in jail.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In the course of your examination, did you hear of any members of the democratic party being whipped by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I do not know whether I heard it there or through the papers; but I know that there was a democratic gentleman whipped in Pontotoc County for teaching a colored school; that was directly before the Pontotoc raid—the Flournoy affair; I do not know whether the case was before us, or whether I read it in the newspapers.

*Question.* Why are those men hostile to colored schools?

*Answer.* I suppose it is because they have to help pay for educating the colored folks; I do not see what else it could be.

*Question.* Is there any fear of negro equality?

*Answer.* O, no; they do not fear that; but they do not like the idea of helping to pay for keeping up their schools; that is at the bottom of the matter.

*Question.* Are democrats afraid of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I do not know; I never heard of any.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any prosecutions in the State courts for any of these crimes?

*Answer.* I think this fellow McLachlan went before the mayor and stated his case, but they did not do anything with it.

*Question.* Has nobody belonging to the Ku-Klux been tried and convicted in any of the State courts?

*Answer.* Not that I know of; I don't think they could get justice done them there.

*Question.* You have stated as to one party of these men being armed; did the evidence go to show what was the condition generally of the Ku-Klux as to arms. What kind of arms had they?

*Answer.* They all appeared to be armed with pistols, revolvers, side-arms; we would scarcely ever hear of a case where there was a gun along, though sometimes they had one or two.

*Question.* Were these parties usually disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, clear through; there was hardly a party where the members were not all disguised.

*Question.* Were they mounted on horseback, or did they go on foot?

*Answer.* They were always mounted.

*Question.* Did the evidence go to show whether the parties usually lived in the immediate neighborhood where the crimes were committed, or whether they sometimes, or generally, came from a distance?

*Answer.* As a general rule, it was always supposed to be neighbors—right around where the parties attacked lived.

*Question.* Was there evidence going to show that anybody had come from other States and participated in these raids?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we heard through some of the witnesses that parties had sometimes come from Alabama to assist in Ku-Kluxing. But as a general thing they were all considered to be neighbors; parties attacked would recognize them as their neighbors.

*Question.* They knew them?

*Answer.* They knew them by their build, their walk, their gait, their horses, their way of acting. In many cases they could not help but know them. Frequently they would track them by their horses right to where they came from.

*Question.* Were these men well mounted? Had they good horses as a general thing?

*Answer.* I cannot speak as to that. Those who had riding-horses would of course take them; some would take mules.

*Question.* Anything they could pick up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The negroes whom they took on their raids they would always provide with horses. They took extra horses along.

*Question.* There were some negroes among the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What did the evidence show in regard to them?

*Answer.* That they were forced to do it; that they were taken from their houses and forced to go along.

*Question.* Did any of these negroes testify before the grand jury?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; three of them.

*Question.* How many were there on those raids?

*Answer.* I think there were five in the Solomon Triplet case—four certainly.

*Question.* How is your county divided as to negroes and whites? What is the comparative population?

*Answer.* In our county the population is twenty-nine thousand. I took the census.

*Question.* That is the whole population, white and colored?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It is about equally divided. If anything, the republicans are gaining there.

*Question.* So far as your knowledge extends, how do the black and the white population compare in numbers in the section of the country over which the Ku-Klux range?

*Answer.* Well, it seems to be pretty thickly settled with colored folks. The white people generally seem to have large plantations, and depend on the colored people.

*Question.* How do the colored people behave themselves? Are they or are they not hostile to the whites?

*Answer.* They all appear to be perfectly peaceable. I do not see anything out of the way about them. They seem to want to be let alone.

*Question.* As a general rule, what is the behavior of the negroes?

*Answer.* As a general rule, all seem to behave very well. Sometimes we hear of a case where something is stolen.

*Question.* Are they not as a general rule honest?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And industrious?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are all industrious, down our way certainly. They all seem to be trying to make a living. Farming, of course, is their main forte.

*Question.* What is the fact as to their desire to learn, and their actual attendance upon the schools?

*Answer.* They desire to learn, and they send their children to school. In fact, the grown ones want to go themselves, but generally they are not able to, as some one has to do the work. We have quite a flourishing normal school at Holly Springs, and several other free schools in different parts of the country. They all seem to be getting along very well. We have no trouble in that respect. In fact, I believe the old citizens all approve of having the colored schools. They think it is best that the negroes should be educated.

*Question.* Is that the case in your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they say it makes better laborers of them.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* The first case you mentioned was that of Mr. Eckels. Is he a native of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I suppose so; he has been there some time.

*Question.* How old a man is he?

*Answer.* I should take him to be about forty-five.

*Question.* Was he there during the war?

*Answer.* I cannot say; I did not learn that.

*Question.* What is his reputation in the community?

*Answer.* So far as we could learn, he appeared to be an honest, straightforward, hard-working man.

*Question.* What is his business?

*Answer.* Farming.

*Question.* He owns real estate there?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* Is Mr. Warmouth, whose case you mentioned, a native of Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He has lately imported a steam-mill. He said he was going to put it up whether they tore it down or not.

*Question.* He is a land-owner there?

*Answer.* O, yes.

*Question.* Do you know his character in the community?

*Answer.* He is a very good straightforward man.

*Question.* You spoke of colored schools. Do you know of many that have been broken up?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know of any around in our county.

*Question.* Do you know of any in the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in Pontotoc County they broke up a good many schools, white and colored; they said they were not going to have any of them there.

*Question.* Does this objection to colored schools come mostly from men who have property and pay taxes, or from men who own but a small amount of property and do not pay any taxes?

*Answer.* Well, I can hardly say how that matter does go. When a rich man says so and so, there are always fools ready to follow suit.

*Question.* So that you think there is a general sentiment of opposition?

*Answer.* Well, in certain localities—not in our county, nor in De Soto, or Lafayette. In these counties the schools are getting along finely. It appears that in Pontotoc they are trying to break them up.

*Question.* What effect does this system of "regulating" affairs by the Ku-Klux have upon the industry of the State and the laborers generally?

*Answer.* It does not do them any good. If anything, it sets them backward. It compels a great many of them to leave their crops, and in that way lose their earnings. Of course it intimidates them.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You say that schools have been broken up in Pontotoc county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* I cannot state how many. We had a witness before us—I cannot think of his name—who stated that they came to his house and wanted to break him up. At first he had a white school; he could not teach that; the thing got too hot for him, so he let his wife teach it. These men came to his house and told him that if he did not quit teaching that school they would make him; that they would put him out of the way or something of that kind. He told them, "Gentlemen, if you want to break up all the schools I am willing to quit; but I am not going to be the first one that closes;" and he stuck to it until they commenced breaking them up all through the country, and then he left. He said that on one occasion they rode up to his house and showed their horns and bleated like billy-goats. There were six or seven of them.

*Question.* They did him no injury?

*Answer.* O no, sir. They had been around three or four times. One of them was his brother-in-law. The last time they came there with their horns and bleating he asked some of them to come in and let his wife see them. He said his children were afraid to go out to get a drink of water, and he wanted the men just to get down and let his family see who they were. Some walked in and took off their masks and laid them on the table. He picked up a mask, put it on, and it fit him exactly. He said he saw the face of the man that mask belonged to, and talked to him. We indicted that man and several others.

*Question.* Was it not in evidence that forty or fifty different schools had been started in that county?

*Answer.* I suppose there must have been. I don't know how many we have in our county. Every four or five miles there is a school-house. Wherever there is a thick settlement there is a school-house. Wherever we can get twenty-five scholars a school-house is opened. They are allowed to raise the sum necessary to pay the expenses, by taxation upon the county.

*Question.* The county is taxed so much to support these schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The complaint is that this is a great burden?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is pretty heavy. My tax previous to 1870 was $35; this year I had to pay $65 upon the same property, and everything of that kind; it was the school tax that increased the sum. I have said to people that I was perfectly willing to pay my taxes, as it was to educate the country; that education was what we wanted; that if we had had more of it before the war we never would have had the war. I think a great many others of the people think in the same way now.

*Question.* Your people were a good deal broken up by the war, were they not?

*Answer.* O, there was no end to that.

*Question.* They lost almost all their property?

*Answer* In some portions of the country they did; but some of the counties where the Ku-Klux are were never broken up; they are so much in the interior; there may have been a raid there occasionally; but they are nearly as well off now as they ever were.

*Question.* Did they not lose all their property in slaves?

*Answer.* Of course that all went; but they have their land, their stock, their hands. The negroes still work pretty much as they did. I don't believe that some of them know now that they are free.

*Question.* The "carpet-baggers" have informed them of it?

*Answer.* I don't know about that. While men can ride around and scare negroes, they can keep them on their places as long as they want to.

*Question.* By what authority is the school tax levied?

*Answer.* I suppose it is levied under the State law. The superintendent of schools locates the sites for school-houses, examines teachers, and gives them certificates.

*Question.* He makes requisitions to pay them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That money is raised by taxation upon the property of the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the property of each county.

*Question.* Is it not regarded as very burdensome that your people, after surrendering their property in slaves, should afterward be obliged to educate them at their own expense?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that grinds them a little, I guess. And it really is burdensome, because our people did not get as much for their cotton last year as they expected; a great many of them were brought in debt; and the tax must be paid within a certain time or their property is sold.

*Question.* During the three or four years immediately after the war was there not a succession of failures of the cotton crops?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The army worm did a good deal of damage; that and other things almost cleaned them out.

*Question.* Your crops were destroyed three or four years in succession?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; right straight along. In 1870 there was such a drought that we did not make half a crop.

*Question.* Your county superintendents are generally northern men?

*Answer.* They are all northern men, so far as I know. Major Abbot is our superintendent.

*Question.* Is he from the North?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is from the North. He is a very clever gentleman.

*Question.* When these men come in there and impose upon a people so terribly impoverished, these taxes, in order to educate the negroes, it gives a good deal of dissatisfaction?

*Answer.* I don't know whether the tax is imposed particularly upon those so impoverished; it falls upon all of us.

*Question.* Are you not all impoverished by the war?

*Answer.* I should think so. Any man who travels down there will soon find that out.

*Question.* The tax does not reach the negroes because they have nothing to be taxed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have a good deal of property. I took the census there. Some of them have plantations of their own, and they own a good deal in the form of horses, mules, and one thing and another. Some of them manage entire plantations with not a white person on them. In many cases they have rented these plantations on shares, and own all the stock on them. Where they furnish everything they give the owner one-fourth of the crop and keep three-fourths. In the prairie counties many of them are well off—have made money.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do you mean the colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In what counties?

*Answer.* In all the prairie counties. There is a rich and thickly populated country extending eastward from Vicksburg, and bending round to the southwest, in a sort of elbow fashion; and there they are all well off.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* They are all quiet down there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. All the objection I have to this system of free schools is that they in some cases went to work and put up new school-houses when there were plenty of other houses that would have answered very well, which could have been bought for $250 or $400, or rented perhaps very cheaply. These would have answered the purpose very well, because the negroes cannot go to school more than four or five months before we need them in the field at work. As soon as the cotton is picked, they go back to school again. Those who have carried out this school system ought not to have gone ahead so fast. They ought to have taken the best they could get for the time being, and gone on gradually. That is the way most of us think about it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* They were strangers in the community, and they started out on a grand scale?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they undertook to measure our country by theirs.

*Question.* And they taxed a great many people who were completely broken up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; this wholesale taxation came pretty hard on us. But I am willing to educate the negroes; I will stand my tax as long as any one; I go in for education all the time.

*Question.* Do you not think that the people would be better disposed to stand this tax if they had had anything to do with imposing it—if it had not been imposed upon them by force?

*Answer.* I do not know how you would have got the tax imposed in any other way than it has been. If it had not been imposed in that way, I do not think they would ever have got up any free schools.

*Question.* Do you suppose that when a tax is imposed upon a community by people from the outside, that fact is calculated to make them pay the tax, and pay it willingly?

*Answer.* Well, look at the benefits they are going to derive from it. It will educate the people generally, and it will benefit the country. The people will know something about how to manage for themselves, and will get along better. That is the way many of the wealthy men look at it, although they pay the heaviest tax. They contend that it is a benefit to the blacks to have schools; they want them well educated.

*Question.* Those who pay the money, it seems, have nothing to do with the appointment of teachers?

*Answer.* I believe they get their appointments from Governor Alcorn. The people can recommend a man, but Alcorn is the one who appoints.

*Question.* But in those schools there are doctrines taught, probably, which are very obnoxious to the people who have to pay the tax?

*Answer.* I never heard of their teaching anything out of the way. They teach A, B, C's, &c. I never heard much about politics in the schools. Of course, when we have Fourth of July celebrations or May parties, if we choose to talk politics we do so.

*Question.* Is it not likely that Governor Alcorn, with his political views, would appoint men holding the same views as himself?

*Answer.* Well, he is considered now a good republican. These appointments were made some time ago, but, so far as we are concerned, they are all good appointments up our way. As for the tax being burdensome, there is no doubt about that, because money is hard to get down there, and the tax all falls upon the cotton crop. If cotton is down, all the people are out of pocket to the extent of the difference between a low price and a high price. But the school tax keeps right along, whether the people make a poor crop or a good crop.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Are there not many counties in that portion of Mississippi where there are very few republicans among the white people. In Chickasaw, and other counties of that sort, are not the white people nearly all democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In Tippah and Tishemingo, which are in our district, and a part of Alcorn County, they are about all democrats; I do not suppose there are five hundred republicans out of the whole, white and black.

*Question.* In a county where you do not have more than a dozen or twenty white republicans, and where none of the blacks can either read or write, you have to bring the school-teachers from the Northern and other States, to fill these places?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; because very few of the whites down there will teach negroes; they say, "Let the colored people teach the colored people." Some whites in our county are teaching the colored schools; but they have got at it lately; they are sort of getting over their prejudices; they begin to think they might as well teach as northern persons. But, at first, we had to do as you just said.

*Question.* Where you have a county with fifty, sixty, or one hundred schools in it, and with substantially no white republicans, and no blacks who are able to teach, you have to send off to the Northern States, of course, to bring in the number of school-teachers that are necessary?

*Answer.* We do, and we instruct the black people. When it comes to voting, we have our meetings, and inform them all about matters—instruct them what to do; they are willing to learn, and hear both sides. They are bound to hear both sides, because the other side is pulling at them too; and in that way they get pretty well informed; and generally they will go Union all the time.

*Question.* All the school-teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and the colored people. As for the whites, a good many of them are coming in and claiming to be good republicans.

*Question.* Where you have no white republicans, or scarcely any in a county, and have to bring so large a number of school-teachers from other States, and pay them for their services out of the tax upon the property of the county, do not a great many men all through that county regard this as a pretty serious burden; and are they not likely to adopt any means, legal or illegal, to break up such a system? Is not that at the bottom of a good deal of Ku-Kluxing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in this Ku-Kluxing that is the main thing. They do not want any free schools, because they do not want to educate the people; they do not want to go to the expense, and they do not want to see them advance.

*Question.* They do no want men from abroad brought there to be paid by heavy local taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they do not want men "meddling," as they call it, and then have to pay them for "meddling."

*Question.* You think that has quite as much to do with the origin of these disorders as perhaps all other causes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they do not like to see the negro go ahead. They think his place is in the cotton-field, and that he should stay there.

*Question.* Are not a great many of the people unable to bear this taxation? Did not your cotton crop last year bring you in debt?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* And there is no other crop that you can make much money out of?

*Answer.* The people now are beginning to mix their crops. Some of them plant more corn and raise more hogs.

*Question.* Are not hogs a pretty precarious investment?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They get into market pretty often. They change hands pretty frequently. They get bobbed so often that their ears are almost whittled away to nothing.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You spoke of the appointments of these teachers; the appointments, you say, are made by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He occasionally appoints, I suppose, persons of opposite politics, if he can find any willing to teach the schools. I believe you mentioned one instance where a democrat was whipped because he taught school.

*Answer.* He was appointed by the superintendent of Pontotoc County—Mr. Flournoy.

*Question.* Occasionally you have colored teachers in your State?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; I know some five or six right around me.

*Question.* They are qualified to teach the primary branches?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; I can certify to that; a good many are perfectly competent to teach the primary schools.

*Question.* Is it the case more or less all over the State that there are persons competent and willing to teach the colored primary schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So that the teachers do not all have to be brought in from other States?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are not most of the colored people who are engaged in teaching the schools brought from the Northern States?

*Answer.* They were at first; but we have made many changes since; a good many of our colored people have learned a good deal since the war, and are able to teach school. Wherever a colored applicant can pass an examination the superintendent gives him a certificate, and he gets a school.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You are educating colored teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we have our normal school at Holly Springs.

*Question.* Your ex-president is at the head of some literary institution of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and Alcorn is, too.

*Question.* I suppose these superintendents of the different counties are not all men from other States?

*Answer.* I hear only from eight or nine counties; I suppose you can see by the reports where the superintendents hail from. Those that I know of are all good republicans and seem to want to do what is fair. So far as the school tax is concerned, I do not know whether they can change it or not. But the tax has to be paid, and some of the people say that the taxes are grinding them to death.

*Question.* Are not taxes somewhat burdensome everywhere?

*Answer.* Of course; and every man ought to be willing to pay taxes if he wishes to enjoy the blessings of a free government.

*Question.* Were not the crops last year as good as usual, taking the State through?

*Answer.* I do not know about the State through; they were not in the northern portion.

*Question.* You got a good price for your cotton the year before last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but we did not get much last year, I assure you.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Do you not know that before slavery was abolished you had practically no free negroes in the State at all; there being, by the census of 1860, seven hundred and seventy-five free negroes, all told, in your State?

*Answer.* I never knew but one free negro before slavery was abolished, and he is there yet.

*Question.* Substantially all the negroes were slaves before the war?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. Once in a while one bought his freedom.
*Question.* So that negroes, competent to teach, had to be brought in the first instance from the North?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* But you are now educating a few negroes who are competent to teach?
*Answer.* Not a few either, but many. There would be mighty few but for the colored schools.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Teachers are educated in your own normal schools?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; we have no trouble on that point.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do white people down there decline to teach colored schools?
*Answer.* They did at first; they thought it was not exactly right for them to be teaching negroes; they did not like to "come down to it," as they said, although they were perfectly willing to teach white schools. But now the democratic papers come out and say they do not see why southern white men should not teach colored schools, as well as the northern men, and show the negroes that they are their friends: and some southern white men have taken hold and become teachers of the negroes.
*Question.* It was because the white people refused to teach negroes and because the colored people were not at first competent that it became necessary for you at first to send abroad for teachers?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* But you say that now there are a good many colored men who are able to teach, and who are so employed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And southern white men have given up their objection to teaching the negroes, and many of them are employed in such schools?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is the preference given to competent colored men or native white men in the selection of teachers?
*Answer.* I do not know how that is. The superintendent seems rather inclined to give them a showing wherever he can. He wants to put the colored teachers where it is peaceable and where they are not likely to have trouble.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* In the testimony you have already given you seemed rather indistinct in your recollection of the names of men who had been injured or murdered. I wish to ask whether, while on the grand jury, you heard of the case of the death of a man named Jack Dupree?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I cannot recollect the circumstances. I recollect he was killed.
*Question.* Do you recollect whether anything was said about his having been cut open?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they cut his bowels open.
*Question.* Do you recollect whether there was a witness named Joe Davis there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What did Joe Davis say he did?
*Answer.* I believe he refused at first to tell us.
*Question.* What did he tell you finally about the matter?
*Answer.* I don't believe I can remember.
*Question.* Was Joe Davis colored or white?
*Answer.* I think he was a white man.
*Question.* What was the name of the colored man who had to assist in the commission of these murders—who had to dig graves, help to bury the dead, and help to kill?
*Answer.* I think his name was Moore.
*Question.* Do you recollect the manner in which the testimony described the taking off and killing of Dupree?
*Answer.* No, sir; I don't believe I do. I recollect, though, about his being cut open.
*Question.* What was the name of the man who held the horses while Dupree was being killed?
*Answer.* I do not recollect. I could pick the man out if I saw him; but I am not very good at recollecting names.
*Question.* Were you acquainted with the men who were indicted?
*Answer.* No, sir; only as I would get acquainted in Oxford.
*Question.* Do you think you would remember the names if they were mentioned?
*Answer.* I expect I would.
*Question.* Do you recollect the names of Andrew Pope, Thomas Malone, Jasper Webb William Butler, Jake Loughrige, and Joe Davis?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were all indicted, every one of them.

*Question.* Do you recollect the names of John Ware and Whitfield Pope?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And Clinton Ross?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you recollect about the killing of Alexander Page?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you recollect the names of the men who killed Page?
*Answer.* No, sir; but I know he was killed.
*Question.* Were those men who were compelled to join the Ku-Klux furnished with arms and horses?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they put white robes over them, gave them pistols, and made them hold horses the first night or two. Afterward, when they got a little more bold, they would take them out and make them help do the killing. Finally they wanted to kill them because they knew too much. These witnesses said that the Ku-Klux would finally threaten to kill them because they knew too much; they would want to put them out of the way, saying that "dead men would not tell any tales."
*Question.* Do you remember whether the witnesses described the manner of killing these men; whether they begged for their lives or asked to see their families before they died?
*Answer.* Dupree begged to go back and see his wife once more, and they refused to let him. I recollect something of that sort. He begged them not to shoot him.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* I suppose it is true that every fellow who came before you and turned State's evidence swore that he had been forced into this business?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, except this one white fellow that I told you about. He said he got down there among his friends, and was asked to go into the thing as a frolic.
*Question.* He was fooled into it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* All the rest say they were forced into it?
*Answer.* The colored men say that they were forced into it; that they were taken from their homes and mounted on horses.
*Question.* Nobody ever professes that he went voluntarily?
*Answer.* No, sir; not one that I recollect.
*Question.* Did you put on the grand jury men who came there who were themselves the victims of outrages?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; Mr. Warmouth was one.
*Question.* How many of that class of men did you have on the grand jury?
*Answer.* Just one—Mr. Warmouth. He may possibly have been subpœnaed to appear there. I recollect he was with us pretty near the whole term.
*Question.* Your own county is in good order?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And all that neighborhood?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; and what you may call the northwest corner of the State. That is all right.
*Question.* You get your knowledge of these other counties from what you learned in the grand jury?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, from what came before me as a grand juror.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Had the whipping and killing of colored men anything to do with the breaking up of schools?
*Answer.* The thing was different in different counties. In Pontotoc the trouble was pretty much a school affair. In another place there would be some old grudge. These men call themselves "regulators;" of course they correct whatever they think ought to be corrected.
*Question.* They did not propose to break up the schools by whipping colored men?
*Answer.* Not down there. In the McLachlan case they said they did not want him to teach. At first the citizens approved of his teaching; they signed a petition, I believe, that he should teach; he taught a Sunday-school of the white children and a colored school during the week. He was a Scotchman, and he had a store in which all the colored men had an interest; he ran the store, and they paid him so much. I suppose these fellows thought that he was getting too much trade, and that it was time for him to leave; so they persecuted him until he had to go away; and he was lucky to get away. He ran the store, and the colored men paid him so much.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Was it not charged that there was considerable stolen property coming into the store which he ran?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was one thing. And they said he had too many guns; that he was getting up an army. He only had three or four guns in the whole store.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Did you say that there was stolen property in that store?

*Answer.* I said they thought there was.

*Question.* Was there any evidence going to show that there was?

*Answer.* No, sir; we never had any. One of the witnesses said they accused him of taking in cotton and one thing or another; that he was making too much money anyway.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of their taking any arms from colored people down there?

*Answer.* I have. In different cases, where they would go to their houses to Ku-Klux them, they would search for their arms and take them away.

*Question.* Is that part of the business of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* If they have any arms, of course they want to take them away: they don't want them to be shooting at them. It is very natural that they should take them away if they come across them.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *July* 29, 1871.

FINIS H. LITTLE sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Where do you reside?

*Answer.* At Aberdeen, Monroe County, Mississippi.

*Question.* State generally whatever you know in regard to the enforcement of the law, the preservation of order, and the safety of property and life in the State of Mississippi.

*Answer.* I know that for the last six or eight months the county in which I live, or, rather, the eastern part of it, has been in a state of terror; that five or six men have been assassinated by masked men at night; that three or four have been whipped, and one has been shot. Several schools have been broken up, and a great many persons have been threatened by anonymous letters. Monroe County, in which I reside, is divided by the Tombigbee River. That portion of the county lying east of the Tombigbee River is the part in which the trouble has occurred. But one outrage has happened within that time on the western side of the river.

*Question.* These outrages you mention have been perpetrated by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* At night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Armed?

*Answer.* They are usually reported to have side-arms.

*Question.* In what numbers do they generally operate?

*Answer.* I have heard of from twenty to one hundred and twenty; the numbers are variously estimated.

*Question.* You say that these cases have occurred within the last six or eight months?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. But one outrage by masked men has happened in that county before last October.

*Question.* Have you heard of any such disturbances in other portions of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of disturbances in several other counties of Mississippi.

*Question.* Name them.

*Answer.* Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Chickasaw, Pontotoc, Lauderdale, Tishemingo, and in several other counties the names of which I do not remember. There have been general rumors throughout the State of disturbances.

*Question.* What was the first outrage that occurred in the county in which you reside?

*Answer.* In August, 1869—I think that was the time—a man was taken from his bed and very severely whipped by masked men.

*Question.* How many masked men?

*Answer.* There were supposed to be in that crowd about eight.

*Question.* What was the name of the man who was whipped?

*Answer.* William McMillan.

*Question.* Was he a white or a colored man?

*Answer.* A colored man.

*Question.* What accusation did they bring against him?

*Answer.* I heard of none. A few weeks previous to that he had had a difficulty with a white man.

*Question.* Was he whipped severely?

*Answer.* I saw him the next morning after he was whipped, and he was badly beaten.

*Question.* Did you hear what the men said to him when they whipped him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not recollect hearing him say what they said to him.
*Question.* Were any parties arrested for that outrage?
*Answer.* One or two were arrested, but nothing was proven against them.
*Question.* Arrested by the State authorities?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* When did the next outrage occur in your county?
*Answer.* I think it was in October, 1870.
*Question.* What was that case?
*Answer.* Three colored men were taken from the county jail; they were taken about five or six miles from the jail. Two of them were killed. One of them escaped pretty soon after they were taken from the jail—about two miles from it. They took the other two on some three or four miles and killed them.
*Question.* How many men were engaged in that?
*Answer.* My recollection is that there were some twenty or twenty-five.
*Question.* Disguised?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Were these men who were taken from the jail colored men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What were their names?
*Answer.* The names of the two who were killed were Joseph Flint and Willis Flint.
*Question.* What was the name of the one who escaped?
*Answer.* Sanders Flint.
*Question.* Were they all of one family?
*Answer.* Yes, sir—a father and two sons.
*Question.* Which was the father?
*Answer.* Sanders Flint—the one who escaped.
*Question.* How were the other two killed?
*Answer.* They were shot: at least they were found several days afterward with bullet holes through their heads and bodies.
*Question.* Many bullet holes?
*Answer.* A great many; I don't recollect the number.
*Question.* How did the father effect his escape?
*Answer.* He was well acquainted with the country; had lived in that section for a long time. They had him on a mule. He is a large, powerful man. He just leaped off the mule and ran through the woods.
*Question.* Did they fire at him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; but they did not hit him.
*Question.* State what those three men had been arrested for?
*Answer.* They had been arrested for an assault upon three white men; they had been tried by a justice of the peace, and, in default of a bond of $500, I believe, they were sent to jail.
*Question.* What was the nature of the offense with which they were charged?
*Answer.* Sanders Flint and his two sons were at work with Brown Park. They fell out over a division of the crop of corn, I think; and a general fight ensued between three white men and these three negroes, in which the negroes were put to flight. They stayed in the woods for a day or two.
*Question.* Was anybody killed or seriously hurt in that fight?
*Answer.* No, sir. I think clubs were used; and one young white fellow received a flesh wound in the shoulder.
*Question.* The white men drove the negroes into the woods?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; the white man, himself, Park, with whom the negroes lived, told me that they ran them off.
*Question.* What kind of a man is Mr. Park?
*Answer.* He is a rather contentious sort of a man; a man who never got along very well with the neighbors. He has that reputation.
*Question.* He was the owner of the land on which they were working?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is he a man of wealth?
*Answer.* No, sir; a well-to-do farmer.
*Question.* You say the negroes fled into the woods. What followed?
*Answer.* They remained there a few days, when they were assured by their friends that they would not be molested if they would come in and give themselves up to be tried, which they did. They were tried and sent to jail in default of bonds.
*Question.* The father and the two sons?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* How long did they remain in jail?
*Answer.* I think they were in jail only about two weeks; or probably a little longer.
*Question.* When were they taken out?
*Answer.* They were taken out at night.
*Question.* By disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were the white men ever arrested for the original difficulty—the fight between them and the negroes?

*Answer.* I do not recollect whether they were or not. If they were, they were acquitted. That is my recollection.

*Question.* There was no serious damage done in that fight?

*Answer.* No, sir; nothing serious.

*Question.* Did the State authorities arrest any one for the murder of those two negroes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; four men were indicted for it by the grand jury of the county; they were tried at that term of the court and acquitted.

*Question.* What was the proof in that case?

*Answer.* My recollection is that the evidence proved *alibis.* The proof against them was not strong.

*Question.* That was the end of that transaction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the next case?

*Answer.* I have a memorandum of dates in my pocket. I think the next case was the killing of a man named Tom Durham or Hornberger, by about twenty disguised men in March or February of this year.

*Question.* What were the circumstances?

*Answer.* I never heard the circumstances of that killing. I was not at home at the time. I simply heard that he was taken out at night and killed by twenty disguised men. I never made any inquiries about it when I came home, which was a few weeks afterward.

*Question.* What had they against him?

*Answer.* I never heard any charge against him.

*Question.* How was he killed?

*Answer.* I think he was shot.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he have any prominence in the community?

*Answer.* No, sir; none at all.

*Question.* State another case?

*Answer.* There was the killing of Jack Dupree, a colored man. I think he was killed in March or April.

*Question.* By whom?

*Answer.* By a band of disguised men; I never heard the number, so far as I remember.

*Question.* At night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was he taken from his house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was taken from his house at night.

*Question.* How did they kill him?

*Answer.* I have heard that he was drowned in a stream. I do not know whether he was shot before he was drowned or not.

*Question.* What was the charge against him?

*Answer.* Well, I think he had been rather more prominent in politics than any of the balance of his race in that section of the county.

*Question.* Prominent as a republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was an ignorant man; he was simply prominent in his neighborhood.

*Question.* Were there any charges of a criminal character against him?

*Answer.* I never heard of any.

*Question.* State another case.

*Answer.* About the second week in March, Colonel A. P. Huggins was whipped in the same neighborhood.

*Question.* As the circumstances of that case have already been detailed to the committee by Colonel Huggins, it is not necessary for you to go into the particulars.

*Answer.* I simply heard the circumstances from him.

*Question.* State another case.

*Answer.* I think it was in April that Aleck Page, a colored man, was killed in the same neighborhood.

*Question.* What were the circumstances concerning his killing?

*Answer.* He had had some drunken broil with the man with whom he was at work. I think they were both drunk and had some little difficulty. They fell out of a wagon as they were returning from town together, or one pushed the other out; perhaps the negro pushed the white man out.

*Question.* Had they gone to town together?

*Answer.* They had gone to town together and got drunk, and they were returning from town.

*Question.* Had they been drinking together?
*Answer.* I do not know whether they had been drinking together. They had both been drinking.
*Question.* Was anybody hurt in the difficulty in the wagon?
*Answer.* No, sir; not seriously.
*Question.* You said that some time after this Page was killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* State what were the circumstances attending his killing.
*Answer.* He was killed some time after that. For a few weeks after that occurrence with the white man he laid out at night. He worked for his employer during the day and would lie out during the night—would not sleep in his house.
*Question.* Was that the employer with whom he had had the difficulty?
*Answer.* It was either his employer or a man who worked with his employer; I do not know which. He was assured by other colored men on the place that he would not be molested, and that it was useless for him to lie out any longer. He had been apprehensive that the Ku-Klux were going to kill him for the matter, and he gave that as a reason for lying out at night. He was assured that he would not be molested; that it was not worth while for him to lie out. He came back, and the same night he came back he was taken from his cabin and killed.
*Question.* By whom?
*Answer.* By a band of disguised men.
*Question.* How many?
*Answer.* I have heard the number variously estimated. I think from what I have heard there were about thirty-five.
*Question.* How was he killed?
*Answer.* He was shot, I understood.
*Question.* Was he taken from his house?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* State any other case.
*Answer.* The next case was the killing of Abe Womble, a colored man.
*Question.* When did that occur?
*Answer.* In the latter part of last May. He was taken from his house at night and shot.
*Question.* By whom?
*Answer.* By a band of about twenty disguised men, as is supposed. That is what his wife stated.
*Question.* State the circumstances connected with it.
*Answer.* I never heard anything further of the circumstances than that he was taken from his house at night and killed—was found next morning a short distance from the house.
*Question.* How was he killed?
*Answer.* He was shot.
*Question.* Was he beaten as well as shot?
*Answer.* I never heard that he was beaten; he may have been.
*Question.* Was he shot in more than one place?
*Answer.* He was shot several times, I understood.
*Question.* What was the charge against him?
*Answer.* I heard of no charges against him. I had heard that he had had some difficulty with his wife some time previous to that. It was supposed that that was the cause of it.
*Question.* What sort of a difficulty was it?
*Answer.* He perhaps whipped his wife, or something of that sort. He was a Methodist preacher. It was supposed that he was killed for whipping his wife.
*Question.* Did he preach to the colored people?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was a colored man himself.
*Question.* Did you ever hear any charges of a criminal character against him?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Did you know him?
*Answer.* No, sir; I did not know him.
*Question.* State any other case that you know of.
*Answer.* I heard of the shooting of Ab Atkins, a colored man, which occurred some time last spring. He was shot and only slightly wounded. In the same neighborhood Joseph Atkins was whipped. I also heard of the whipping of Santee Butler, a very old black man, in the latter part of the winter—February or March.
*Question.* What was he whipped for?
*Answer.* He had said that unless the Ku-Klux outrages ceased, it would get the country into trouble—a remark something similar to that.
*Question.* Do you know what the other men were assaulted for?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. Ab Atkins, I understood, was shot because he said that he had purchased a pistol, and that he intended to shoot the first man that darkened his door at night.

*Question.* At what place did they shoot him?
*Answer.* They shot him near his house, I think. I think he ran out of his house and they shot him.
*Question.* Was it done by disguised men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Can you state what the other men were whipped for?
*Answer.* I have heard various rumors. Colonel Huggins, I believe, was the only other one who was whipped. I suppose he has told the committee what he was whipped for.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was he whipped for?
*Answer.* He was whipped, so the Columbus Index said, because he refused to leave the country. I saw that statement in the Columbus Index—a democratic paper.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Were these other outrages committed in the same neighborhood or county in which Colonel Huggins was whipped?
*Answer.* They were all committed in the same county, and several of them in the same locality. The killing of Dupree and Page and the whipping of Santee Butler all occurred in the same portion of the county as the whipping of Colonel Huggins.
*Question.* Was anybody arrested by the State authorities for these crimes?
*Answer.* For the outrage committed in October of last year four persons, as I have stated, were indicted by the grand jury, tried, and acquitted. Six or eight weeks ago some twenty-five or twenty-seven persons were arrested by the United States authorities.
*Question.* I understand that. I asked whether there have been any indictments by the State authorities for the killing of those negroes, or any other outrage that you have mentioned except that upon the men who were taken out of jail?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Some weeks ago there was a move made by the United States authorities?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And some indictments were found?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you refer to the Oxford trials?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you know anything about the disclosures made there?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not. I was not there. I know that there were some twenty-five or twenty-seven persons arrested. I do not know how many were indicted.
*Question.* They were arrested and carried to Oxford?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* I think something has been said in regard to some public demonstration made at the time of their arrest and perhaps after their return. Do you know anything about that?
*Answer.* On their return there was some demonstration. A considerable crowd turned out and met them at the depot. They had an old cannon out and fired it several times. It was the intention to have the brass band out, but one of the members declined to go. They had a general good time and jollification.
*Question.* Who participated in that?
*Answer.* I do not think there was any person but democrats. I never heard of any republicans participating in it.
*Question.* Was there any demonstration of support or sympathy at the time the arrests were made?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. The parties were paroled and allowed to be on the streets for a day and a half; and sympathy for them was pretty freely shown.
*Question.* In what way?
*Answer.* I understood that money was made up to defray their expenses. It was also stated by the democratic newspaper, the Aberdeen Examiner, that some four lawyers or more had volunteered to defend them.
*Question.* Volunteered to go from Aberdeen to Oxford to defend them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What lawyers were those?
*Answer.* The paper stated, I think, that Mr. E. O. Sykes, R. E. Houston, R. O. Reynolds, and J. D. McClusky had volunteered. It is my recollection that the paper stated that.
*Question.* Have you an ex-United States judge living in your town?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Who is he?
*Answer.* S. J. Gholson.
*Question.* He was a United States district judge before the war?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was he employed for the defense in the cases of these men arrested?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have understood he was one of the counsel for the defense; I have heard so frequently.
*Question.* Were those lawyers who volunteered democrats?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* State anything you know in connection with that.
*Answer.* I have heard that they denied that they did volunteer. It was generally understood at the time the men were taken off that those lawyers had volunteered. I was not at Oxford at the trial; and I know nothing about what transpired there.
*Question.* What has been the general course of the community there in regard to expressing approbation or disapprobation of these offenses?
*Answer.* Well, sir, but very few persons had the boldness to denounce them. I know of several persons who did denounce them and were advised not to talk on that subject—not to denounce them; that it was not policy to do so; that it would be better for them not to do so.
*Question.* Who gave such advice to them?
*Answer.* I have heard of several citizens doing it, saying that they thought it prudent not to denounce them.
*Question.* Why?
*Answer.* They thought it highly probable that those who denounced them might get themselves into trouble. I know of several persons who denounced them receiving anonymous letters signed by Ku-Klux.
*Question.* Have you noticed any difference between the democrats and the republicans in their manner of treating these outrages—as to denouncing them or upholding them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a very decided difference.
*Question.* What is the difference?
*Answer.* The republicans denounce them, while the other side do not. I have heard of some of them saying that they thought them wrong, or ought not to be done, but could not be helped, and things of that sort. Some of them pretend to oppose them.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* On what ground do they justify such proceedings?
*Answer.* I have never talked to them on that subject at all.
*Question.* On what ground do they excuse them?
*Answer.* I believe they excuse them on the ground of oppression, high taxes, &c. I have never talked to them on that subject.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do any of the republicans express any approbation, or give any excuses for them?
*Answer.* Never; I never heard one do so.
*Question.* What is the course of the public press in regard to the matter?
*Answer.* The Aberdeen Examiner, a democratic paper, stated on the 17th of March last, that there was no doubt about the existence of the Ku-Klux Klan in that county, and as they would ride—I think that was the expression—it advised the people to behave themselves.
*Question.* Have you known any democrats to be attacked by this Klan?
*Answer.* Never; I never heard of one being attacked.
*Question.* What effect does this condition of affairs produce upon the colored people?
*Answer.* It produces a very demoralizing effect upon them.
*Question.* A state of terrorism?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a few weeks ago the colored people had a meeting in Aberdeen, at the church, at which the subject of emigration from the country was discussed. In the eastern part of the county especially they have been badly frightened, and, in fact, in a state of terror for six or eight months.
*Question.* Do they sleep in their houses?
*Answer.* I have heard of some of them lying out at night.
*Question.* Does this state of affairs interfere with their labor?
*Answer.* Some of them have left their crops and come to town. I have known a few to do so.
*Question.* Come to town to live?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; for safety.
*Question.* Have you heard of the burning of any school-houses in that county?
*Answer.* I do not remember that any school-houses have been burned.
*Question.* Any churches?
*Answer.* No, sir; I heard a rumor of the burning of one school-house. I don't know whether it was true.
*Question.* You said in the beginning of your testimony that schools had been broken up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of several teachers of free schools receiving notices to quit their schools.

*Question.* Colored schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; also one white school that I know of.

*Question.* Have schools been broken up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* What reason do they give for wanting to break up the schools?

*Answer.* It is opposition to free schools. They are opposed to free schools.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What has been the general conduct of the colored people in that county?

*Answer.* Their conduct has been very good, in my opinion.

*Question.* Have you heard of the burning of any barns?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any case of rape, or anything of that sort?

*Answer.* A man was convicted some eighteen months ago of an attempt to commit a rape, and was sent to the penitentiary for ten years.

*Question.* Was he a white or a colored man?

*Answer.* A colored man?

*Question.* Was he convicted of rape upon a white woman?

*Answer.* A white woman. The case produced but little excitement, however, at the time.

*Question.* You have heard of nothing of the kind since?

*Answer.* No, sir. That was simply an attempt. I do not know that the man even got hold of the woman. I heard the evidence, and it was very slight; but the man was sent to the penitentiary for ten years.

*Question.* Have there been any other outrages of a serious character committed by colored men in that county within the last year or two?

*Answer.* No, sir, I have not heard of any.

*Question.* Their conduct, you say, has been remarkably good?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; remarkable.

*Question.* What are the relative numbers of whites and blacks?

*Answer.* I do not know the exact proportion; I know the difference between the numbers of the white and black voters.

*Question.* What is the difference?

*Answer.* The majority of blacks is some thirteen hundred.

*Question.* Do you suppose that these Ku-Klux operations have any influence upon the voting?

*Answer.* We have had but one State election since the thing commenced. We had an election in the city a few days ago. There was no intimidation there; none of these outrages have been committed in the city. But they will have some effect upon those living on the east side of the river where the outrages have been committed.

*Question.* Do you think there is anything political connected with the movements of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I have heard of one or two men saying that they could carry the county in the coming election in November, notwithstanding the fact that we carried it the last time by upward of sixteen hundred majority; that they expect to vote five hundred, and to Ku-klux five hundred, and in that way carry the county.

*Question.* Was that said in regard to the colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has anything been said by these disguised men to the persons whom they have outraged in regard to voting or political parties?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have never heard of their saying anything of that kind to them. I have heard from two sources that they say they do not intend to ride any more at night in the county, until about ten days before the next election; that they intend to visit the colored voters on the east side of the river, and notify them that if they vote the radical ticket, they will probably vote in hell the next time they vote. That is the expression I have heard from two sources; that that was the intention.

*Question.* Has the recent action of the United States Government had any tendency to quiet these things?

*Answer.* I do not know whether it has quieted things much or not. There have not been any outrages committed since those arrests were made.

*Question.* Has there been any excitement?

*Answer.* There was considerable excitement in the county when the arrests were made. But the democrats, for the last three or four weeks, have been giving a series of barbecues in the county, which have had a tendency to allay the excitement.

*Question.* Have these declarations that there is to be no more riding around until some days before the election been made since the action of the United States Government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Give us those two sources of information to which you have referred?

*Answer.* The first information I got came from a crowd of young men at church, some five weeks ago, who invited a young man present to join them. They were discussing the subject, and they said that that course had been decided upon, and they asked this young man who was present to join them.

*Question.* Give the names of those young men?

*Answer.* I do not know the names of the young men; I could not ascertain them.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Can you give the name of the young man who was asked to join them?

*Answer.* I do not remember his name. Mr. Anderson, who I believe has been summoned here, and with whom this young man lives, can give his name. I was introduced to him and would know him; but I do not remember his name.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Did he tell you about this?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the young man himself told me about it.

*Question.* You do not remember his name or the names of any of the men he was talking with?

*Answer.* No, sir; he did not know their names himself. The young man whom they invited to join them had recently come from Alabama.

*Question.* Did he tell you that their programme was what you have stated?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he told me that that was their programme or purpose; he also told me that he had learned from another man, named Traynham, that that was the programme.

*Question.* Does he live at Aberdeen?

*Answer.* No, sir, at Athens, Mississippi, near Aberdeen.

*Question.* In your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Give us your other source of information?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I got my information from the same source. This young man had derived his information from two sources; I got my information from him. He learned it from the crowd of young men at church, and also from Mr. Traynham.

*Question.* Then all your information is from one source—that young man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He obtained his information from two sources and you obtained yours from one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* The young man of whom you speak lives with Mr. Anderson?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has he recently come to your State from Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; about two months ago.

*Question.* Does any other young man who came from Alabama live with Mr. Anderson?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is the only young man. Mr. Anderson himself first told me of the circumstance, and he afterward took me to the young man and introduced me.

*Question.* You have heard of outrages in other counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What sort of outrages have been perpetrated in those other counties?

*Answer.* I have heard of the whipping of Mr. Cornelius McBride, a school teacher, in the county of Chickasaw. He was whipped the latter part of March, I think, by a small band of disguised men.

*Question.* We have had that case presented to us by the testimony of Mr. McBride. Name any other case.

*Answer.* I have heard of other whippings and killings, but the names and exact circumstances I do not remember. I have heard of the Meridian riot, where some eight men were killed; and I have heard of the Pontotoc Ku-Klux affair, of which you have had information, I suppose.

*Question.* Have you heard of the whipping of men in the counties you have named around there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You do not recollect the names of the persons whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir; the occurrences were rather common, and I never charged my mind with them; I never believed in the existence of the Ku-Klux until some three or four months ago; I never believed until then that there was such a thing.

*Question.* Do you know whether they have any obligations, oaths, or anything of that sort?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.

*Question.* Do you know anything about their signs or pass-words?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.
*Question.* What class of men compose the Ku-Klux organization?
*Answer.* I do not know who it is that compose it; the persons arrested and taken to Oxford were most of them, I believe, well-to-do farmers.
*Question.* Do any of the democrats appear to be afraid of the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* You never heard of any of the democrats expressing any apprehension of a visit from the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Do the republicans generally apprehend visits?
*Answer.* Well, some of the timid ones do; those about town do not; those living at Aberdeen have no apprehension, because we have soldiers there.
*Question.* You mean United States soldiers?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Who is in command of those soldiers at Aberdeen?
*Answer.* Colonel Rose, of the Sixteenth Infantry; he has one company there.
*Question.* State anything further that you know bearing upon this general subject.
*Answer.* I do not believe that I know anything further; I cannot think of anything just now.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Have you ever heard of any bands of disguised men coming into your county from other States?
*Answer.* I never have.
*Question.* Has it been reported in your county that bands of disguised men from Alabama came over into Mississippi?
*Answer.* I have never heard of any.
*Question.* Have you heard of any going into other counties?
*Answer.* I have heard of bands of disguised men coming into Lauderdale County from Alabama.
*Question.* Have you heard of any unusual complaints among the planters, that the colored people were not working as well as they did formerly?
*Answer.* No, sir; I have not.
*Question.* Do you hear any unusual complaints in regard to their general conduct—that they are inclined to steal or to roam over the country more than usual?
*Answer.* They are not so much inclined to roam over the country as they were in 1865 and 1866. They are occasionally arrested, as white men are, for theft; but they are usually punished.
*Question.* You spoke of the breaking up of free schools; what is the alleged cause for the breaking up of these schools?
*Answer.* Opposition to free schools was the only cause.
*Question.* Have you any free schools now in Aberdeen?
*Answer.* No, sir; none in operation now.
*Question.* Have you any in the county?
*Answer.* I do not think there are any in the county; there may be one or two.
*Question.* What is usually assigned as the cause of this Ku-Klux organization? You spoke something of high taxes; is that the usual complaint?
*Answer.* I have understood that that was the cause. In fact, persons have told me that as long as taxes were so high, there would be Ku-Klux in the country.
*Question.* Still they do not Ku-Klux, as a general thing, the persons who impose these taxes?
*Answer.* Well, Colonel Huggins may have been whipped for that. I believe I have heard somebody say he was whipped perhaps on that account. He was superintendent of education. But no tax has ever been collected or levied in Monroe County for school purposes.
*Question.* He is also an assessor of United States internal revenue?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. He is an assistant assessor of the revenue.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How long have you lived where you now reside?
*Answer.* I have lived nearly four years in Aberdeen.
*Question.* What is your employment there?
*Answer.* I am now a member of the State senate from Monroe and Chickasaw Counties. I have been farming and merchandising some since I have been there.
*Question.* When were you elected to the State senate?
*Answer.* In 1869.
*Question.* From where did you go to Mississippi?
*Answer.* From Calhoun, Southern Kentucky.
*Question.* Was there not a meeting of influential democrats very recently, about the time the court was held, discountenancing these affairs?

*Answer.* There was, I understood, (I was absent at the time,) a meeting of citizens held in February last, or some time last spring. A few citizens of the town held a meeting at the court-house, at which I think they rather discountenanced these proceedings. But I am not certain that the meeting was held. While I was at home a few days from the legislature, I understood that a meeting was to be held. My impression is that the citizens did hold a meeting.

*Question.* How long had you lived in Kentucky before leaving there?

*Answer.* I was born and raised in Kentucky.

*Question.* These transactions of which you have spoken, are they all within your own knowledge?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not witnessed any of them. I have never been present at the whipping or killing of any person.

*Question.* What is the ground of complaint, if any, among the citizens there? What do they allege?

*Answer.* They are generally opposed to radicalism; and that, I believe, is about all I hear them say.

*Question.* Is it not rather opposition to the heavy taxation that is imposed?

*Answer.* There is considerable complaint against the taxes. There has never been any school tax, however, levied or collected in Monroe County, under the recent law. There may have been two years ago, but there has been none under the school law which was enacted by the legislature of 1870; there has never been any tax collected under that law. Schools were organized and put into operation, with the expectation that the tax would be levied and collected: and we also had on hand about $10,000 of the Chickasaw school fund. With the expectation that the tax would be levied and collected, school-houses were built, school-teachers employed, and schools put in operation.

*Question.* How was that done?

*Answer.* By the board of education and the superintendent of education of the county.

*Question.* Do you mean Mr. Huggins?

*Answer.* He is the superintendent of education. This was done by the board of school directors.

*Question.* These school-houses were built?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But schools were not taught there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; schools were commenced pretty generally throughout the county.

*Question.* And the tax assessed?

*Answer.* No, sir; it never was levied or assessed.

*Question.* Was not that tax the entire ground of opposition?

*Answer.* I do not think it could have been. There was considerable complaint that the tax was going to be levied; but still it never was levied.

*Question.* Why was it not levied?

*Answer.* The impression with the republicans there is that it was not levied because the board of supervisors were afraid to levy it. The majority of the board lived on the east side of the river, and the impression of all the republicans whom I have heard express themselves, is that the board of supervisors were afraid to levy it. The Ku-Klux have asserted that it never should be levied.

*Question.* How do you know that?

*Answer.* Simply from common rumor.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* By what method were these school-houses built recently?

*Answer.* They were built under contract.

*Question.* Were they built from the proceeds of taxation, or by subscription?

*Answer.* They were built by contractors who expected to get their pay from the taxes that were to be levied, but which never were levied.

*Question.* Have the school-houses been paid for?

*Answer.* No, sir; the tax has never been levied to pay for them.

*Question.* Who is in debt for those school-houses—the State or the county?

*Answer.* The county is in debt for them.

*Question.* Do you know how much your county is in debt for school-houses?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.

*Question.* Have not school-houses been built by subscription?

*Answer.* Some have, I have understood, been built by subscription.

*Question.* How many have been built by the method you name—by contractors, with the expectation of being paid from taxes to be levied?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know the number.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* As many as forty?

*Answer.* It seems to me there have been about twenty-five or thirty built.

By Mr. COBURN:

*Question.* Over what district of country?
*Answer.* Throughout the whole county.
*Question.* Within what time?
*Answer.* They were built from last fall up to this spring.
*Question.* Can you speak of the State in connection with this matter of building school-houses?
*Answer.* No, sir; I cannot.
*Question.* You only testify, then, as to your own county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* How many have been built in Monroe County?
*Answer.* My impression is that some twenty-five or thirty have been built.
*Question.* To be paid out of this tax which the legislature imposed for that purpose?
*Answer.* Not a tax that the legislature imposed, but a tax that the legislature gave the board of supervisors of each county the right to impose.
*Question.* The law gave to the board of supervisors of each county the right to impose such taxes as would build the necessary school-houses and employ the necessary number of teachers to establish a system of education in each county; each county bearing its own tax?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And was it not the fact that wherever there were twenty-five children of school age not residing within three miles of an established school-house, they had a right to a school-house and a school teacher?
*Answer.* I am not certain about that; my mind is not clear on that subject. I have never read the school bill since it was printed, but that is probably the case.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you say your county had a fund of $10,000?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; some ten or twelve thousand dollars of the Chickasaw school fund.
*Question.* Belonging to the county?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Explain that Chickasaw school fund. Was there not $250,000 of this fund which the State had on hand?
*Answer.* I do not know how much was on hand. There was ten or twelve thousand dollars belonging to Monroe County. The county derived it from the sale of the Chickasaw school lands.
*Question.* There were lands known as Chickasaw school lands which the State was authorized to sell and apply the proceeds for educational purposes?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the various counties in the Chickasaw survey.
*Question.* And the share of that fund belonging to the county of Monroe was about $10,000?
*Answer.* Ten or twelve thousand dollars; I am not certain which.
*Question.* That was a fund wholly independent of the amount raised by taxation?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* If I am correct in the assumption that each twenty-five children of school age, not residing within three miles of an established school, are entitled to a school-house, how many school-houses do you think would be required to supply the county of Monroe?
*Answer.* I cannot form any estimate; I do not know how many school-houses were already built. Nor do I know the number of children in the county. I do not know the number of school-houses in the county when the school law went into operation, and which, therefore, did not require to be built in the various districts.
*Question.* Mr. McBride said that the county of Chickasaw had about two hundred schools; is Monroe a larger or a smaller county?
*Answer.* Not so large. Did Mr. McBride say that Chickasaw had two hundred school-houses?
*Question.* Yes, sir.
*Answer.* Mr. McBride was very much mistaken if he said that. My impression was that they did not have more than fifty or sixty in Chickasaw?
*Question.* You do not know how many schools it will require to complete that school system, in accordance with the authority given to the school board, provided they exercise it to the extent the law allows?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Your teachers are allowed $40, $60, and $100 a month, according to the grade of the schools?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think $150 was the highest.

*Question.* And $40 a month the lowest?

*Answer.* I think $50 was the lowest in Monroe County. The law authorized the board of education, in each county, to establish the rate to be paid to teachers.

*Question.* Last year was rather an unfortunate year for your farmers?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* I mean in prices?

*Answer.* The crops were splendid through that section of country, but the prices were not good.

*Question.* In other words, the crop was not a remunerative one?

*Answer.* No, sir. I do not know though whether the abundance of the crop did not make up for the small price.

*Question.* How many colored voters have you in your county?

*Answer.* About twenty-six hundred.

*Question.* How many white voters?

*Answer.* I think about fourteen hundred or fifteen hundred.

*Question.* What proportion of the white vote is republican?

*Answer.* It is estimated that there are about two hundred white republicans. I think somewhere between one hundred and fifty and two hundred.

*Question.* Is the property of Monroe County owned principally by the white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You had no free negroes of any account in your State before the war?

*Answer.* I was not there before the war; but there were none of any consequence.

*Question.* There were only about seven hundred in the whole State, I believe?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I know of two or three who were free before the war, but they did not own property; and I do not know that they own any more now.

*Question.* Whatever property is owned by the colored population has been accumulated since the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Except where they own town lots, is not their property generally personal property?

*Answer.* As a general thing their property consists of personal property.

*Question.* You have a law in Mississippi which exempts from taxation a certain quantity of household goods, farming utensils, cows, sheep, hogs, &c.?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In other words, the exemption covers the great bulk of the property of the colored people?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not know that it would. We have a two-dollar poll tax that is paid by every citizen over twenty-one years of age. That goes to the school fund.

*Question.* That comes from all alike?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is $2 the limit to which the poll tax can go under the constitution?

*Answer.* I think that is the provision of the constitution, but I am not very clear about it. I know the tax is $2 now.

*Question.* If your school system had been carried out to the full extent authorized by law; if your school board had exercised their full authority in building the number of school-houses that they had the right to build to accommodate all the children of school age, and employing the necessary number of teachers, would not the tax have been a very heavy one upon the white people of the county?

*Answer.* I think $32,000 was the estimate presented by the board of directors to the board of supervisors, to be levied as a sufficiency to run the schools for the year.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* For the whole county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That included the building of school-houses.

By Mr. BECK:

*Question.* Or the renting of such as were necessary?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it not the fact that your county proposed, wherever there could be found a vacant house which could be rented cheaply for a school-house, and which would answer the purpose, to avoid building new ones, and thus carry out the system gradually, not piling on all the expense at once?

*Answer.* Yes, I think that was the intention of the board of school directors.

*Question.* The object was to keep down the expenses for school-buildings by erecting them only where absolutely necessary, thus distributing the taxation equitably from year to year instead of piling it on all at once for the building of school-houses?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Of course, your people generally at the close of the war were pretty poor, with the exception of their land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. My county, though, was a very wealthy one.

*Question.* It had been very wealthy in slaves?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and it was wealthy in land. A great many wealthy men lived there. It was one of the richest counties in the State.

*Question.* Of course the slave property all went with the close of the war, and your county, like the rest, was a good deal in debt?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I suppose so. I do not know much about their financial condition at the close of the war. I was not there then.

*Question.* With the taxation that has been necessary to start the State government, and with the losses to which the people have been subjected in one way or another, growing out of the war, any considerable tax is regarded by them as a pretty heavy burden?

*Answer.* I think the majority of the people there, or at any rate a great number, would have grumbled at almost any tax.

*Question.* I believe that the tax collector in that State can sell for unpaid taxes a cow, or a horse, or anything of that kind that is not exempted by law from taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And your tax reaches the very poorest, and is frequently a greater burden to them than to the rich?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, the burden falls more heavily on the poor than on the rich.

*Question.* Up to the time when your school law was put in operation your county had been comparatively quiet? Up to within the last nine months there had been no trouble?

*Answer.* I think that but one outrage had ever been committed, and that was before the election in 1869, before the school law was enacted; in fact, it was before the nomination of the republican State officers and the adoption of the platform which promised free schools to the people.

*Question.* After that time, with this taxation in prospect, that county began to get more turbulent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And you could hear that the threatened taxation was being talked about, and resistance to it threatened by the people generally?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but those who were punished or killed had about as little to do with it ——

*Question.* I am not speaking of that; I am speaking of the general bad feeling.

*Answer.* There was a general opposition to free schools.

*Question.* Was not that opposition consequent upon the imposition or expected imposition of taxation necessary to support the system proposed?

*Answer.* I do not think that the majority of the people knew that any taxation was to be levied. They do not generally know throughout the country what is to be done. I do not think they knew anything about the taxes that far in advance.

*Question.* Was not the system to be put in operation last fall?

*Answer.* Last winter.

*Question.* And the great bulk of the outrages, with the exception of one or two in October, have occurred since then?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but they could not be attributed to that fact.

*Question.* Is not that the only law that you have heard the people threaten to disobey and annul? Do you know any other law that they have been generally threatening to oppose and resist?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know of any other.

*Question.* But they have opposed this one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There seems to be a general opposition to free schools.

*Question.* Does it not strike you as pretty severe, that a few families of negroes who perhaps pay no taxation but their poll-tax and who have perhaps four or five children apiece, should when they can get together twenty-five children of school age, three miles from an existing school-house, be entitled to have a school-house built and to have a school-teacher for their benefit, at $150 a month—a teacher brought from another part of the country and paid by taxation of the white people in their present impoverished condition?

*Answer.* A school-teacher for them would not cost $150 a month.

*Question.* The teacher would cost at least $50 a month?

*Answer.* He might cost forty or fifty dollars a month.

*Question.* You said that $50 was the minimum in your county?

*Answer.* I believe it is.

*Question.* So that the expense for each teacher must be at least $50?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And then there is the cost of the school-building if there is no existing school-house convenient?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* All of which expense must be paid out of the taxation upon the people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the great mass of this taxation comes from the white people, and they are pretty generally poor?

*Answer.* If that had happened it would have been pretty oppressive; but nothing of the kind ever happened in our county.

*Question.* Because your school board got alarmed, and did not carry out the plan contemplated by the law?

*Answer.* They had many of the schools in operation, and were expecting to have money to pay for teachers and for the building of schools.

*Question.* They exhausted their interest in the Chickasaw school fund?

*Answer.* No, sir, they have not exhausted it, by any means. But they have no right to apply the Chickasaw school fund to the building of school-houses.

*Question.* That could be applied only to the payment of teachers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were not the mass of the teachers employed in your county brought from other parts of the country?

*Answer.* Some of them were.

*Question.* Were they not generally?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do the white people of Mississippi generally take kindly to teaching the colored people?

*Answer.* No, sir, very few of them do. The schools were mostly taught by men from the North and by ladies. In some instances they employed colored teachers.

*Question.* And the colored teachers had to be brought from abroad?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In some instances we had those among us who were competent; but these were very few; our negroes were mostly illiterate.

*Question.* The great bulk of your teachers came from the North and elsewhere, outside of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think the majority of them did. Some of them were brought there from abroad.

*Question.* How many white male teachers did you have in your county who were Mississippians?

*Answer.* I do not remember. I think we had some eight or ten. I do not know that they were Mississippians; they were southern men and men who had a residence there.

*Question.* Were they teaching colored schools in your county?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they were teaching colored schools; they taught schools.

*Question.* I am speaking of those who taught colored schools?

*Answer.* I do not know that we had that many teaching colored schools.

*Question.* Was it not very hard to get southern men to teach colored schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; as a general thing, if they taught at all, they preferred to teach the white schools. In fact a young man who lives on the eastern side of the river—a Mr. Wilson—told me that he was visited by the Ku-Klux when he was talking about teaching a free school.

*Question.* The scholars of these free schools do not pay anything, of course?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Their parents pay nothing except their proportion of taxes?

*Answer.* That is all.

*Question.* If they have no property to be taxed they go entirely free?

*Answer.* Except their poll-tax.

*Question.* And the property of the county has to meet the expense?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Your county of course is officered altogether by republicans?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And your school board are all republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Are they not all appointees of Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* No, sir; the superintendent of education was appointed by the board of education of the State, composed of the State superintendent of education, the attorney general, and the secretary of state. A majority of the board of school directors of our county are democrats.

*Question.* How were they appointed?

*Answer.* By the board of supervisors.

*Question.* The supervisors are republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir; not all of them. Three of them are democrats, and two are colored men—republicans.

*Question.* Who appointed them?

*Answer.* They were appointed by the governor, but on account of their fitness, not on account of their politics. I am speaking now with reference to Monroe County.

*Question.* I judge from the election returns which I have here that at your last election you had a full vote in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was not a full vote.

*Question.* Alcorn got 2,600 votes and Dent nearly a thousand?

*Answer.* But that was not a full vote, because we have upwards of 4,000 voters in the county.

*Question.* Is not 3,600 a pretty large vote?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is a large vote; it was within four or five hundred of the full vote.

*Question.* You mean within four or five hundred of what would have been the number if everybody had voted?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It is conceded by all parties that it was not a full vote.

*Question.* But was it not in proportion to the aggregate number of voters as large a vote as is usually cast in any locality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose it is about a fair vote.

*Question.* Is not all the labor you have in that country needed by your people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is all needed.

*Question.* Can you understand why persons who need labor—who need all they have—should want to run out of the country the only labor they have? For I believe the colored labor is all the labor you have in your country?

*Answer.* It is the principal part of the labor; we have some white laborers.

*Question.* Not enough to amount to very much?

*Answer.* No; the great bulk of the labor is done by the colored people.

*Question.* And it is all needed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The colored laborers say that the Ku-Klux will not permit them to leave; in some districts in which these outrages are committed they are afraid to attempt to leave.

*Question.* Is there not a disposition among your colored population to flock into towns?

*Answer.* There was such a disposition shortly after the war; I do not think it prevails now to such an extent as it did then.

*Question.* When they did flock into the towns in such inordinate numbers, when there was not enough employment for them there, were there not constant complaints of pilfering, petty larceny, &c.?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there were some, of course.

*Question.* That you think is passing away?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is passing away; there are not so many complaints as there have been heretofore.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Your free schools are divided into white and black schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You find native southern white men who are willing to teach the white free schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But not very many willing to teach the black free schools?

*Answer.* No, sir; not many.

*Question.* You said you thought there were about thirty-five schools in your county?

*Answer.* That is my recollection; but I am not sure about the number.

*Question.* And eight or ten of those schools, either white or black, are taught by southern white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there may be eight or ten southerners, male and female.

*Question.* And there are some colored men teaching?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there are a few colored teachers in the county.

*Question.* And the remainder of the teachers have come in from other States?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Thirty-two thousand dollars was the extreme amount of the tax that was to be levied for school purposes?

*Answer.* That was the last estimate presented to the board; I think it was $32,000; it may have been a little over, but it was about that.

*Question.* Would $32,000 of tax collected in that county be a very onerous taxation?

*Answer.* I do not think it would be. The taxable property of the county, real and personal, is a little less than $4,000,000.

By Mr. BUCKLEY;

*Question.* You have rich prairie lands in that county, have you not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a portion of the county is rich prairie land.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The entire tax is paid by the white people; is it not?

*Answer.* No, sir; there is a poll-tax of $2 which is collected from every male person over the age of twenty-one years, and which goes to the school fund.

*Question.* Is that tax collected?

*Answer.* They attempt to collect it; I do not know what amount is delinquent.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Is the school tax levied upon all sorts of property?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Personal as well as real?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is any property exempt from the school tax?

*Answer.* Property exempt from taxation is exempt from the school tax.

*Question.* To what extent is property exempt from taxation in your State?

*Answer.* I do not recollect the list of exemptions.

*Question.* Many colored people in your county own horses, hogs, cows, &c.?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* Is not that generally the case?

*Answer.* It is very frequently the case.

*Question.* Are any of these articles exempt from taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a horse, a cow, some hogs, and a few other things. I do not remember the list of property exempt.

*Question.* Do not the colored people generally in your county own more property than the exemption covers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How much of the tax of your county do you suppose is paid by the colored people?

*Answer.* I really do not know.

*Question.* Is it not a very small proportion in comparison with the whole?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is small in comparison with the whole, because the negroes are not such large property-holders as the white people; and the white people pay that much more tax in proportion.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Would not a tax levied upon the colored people be quite as onerous upon them as one levied upon the white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, because they are less able to pay it.

*Question.* Do you think the pretext of this threatened school tax was really the cause of the operations of this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not.

*Question.* What connection could the murder of negroes have with the school tax?

*Answer.* I cannot see that it could have any; I have never heard that it had any.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* The members of the board of supervisors, you say, are appointed by the governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In your county that board is composed of three white men and two colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the members of that board were appointed by reason of their fitness for their position?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Does this board of supervisors have any connection whatever with the levying of your school tax?

*Answer.* They are required by law to make the levy. They make it upon estimates furnished by the board of school directors.

*Question.* Then they made the levy——

*Answer.* They did not make any levy; they never have made any levy.

*Question.* Do you know whether they approved of it or not?

*Answer.* It was thought until about four or five months ago that they would make the levy; it was hoped and supposed they would; at the time they were appointed no person doubted that they would make the levy.

*Question.* Did they assign any reason for not making the levy?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard any reason assigned. They simply delayed it from time to time.

*Question.* At what time did your present school law go into operation?

*Answer.* I think it went into operation in July, 1870.

*Question.* Before that law went into operation, or before it was passed, what was the sentiment in your State in regard to the education of the colored people?

*Answer.* The republicans were in favor of the education of the children; the democrats were opposed to it.

*Question.* That was before anything was said about taxes for free schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is generally conceded.

*Question.* Was your county much injured by the war? Were there any raids into that county?

*Answer.* I was not there during the war; but my understanding is that the county was not injured materially by the war, except as to property in slaves.

*Question.* The rich lands remain?

*Answer.* They are still as productive as ever.

*Question.* You have, then, in that county great demand for labor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You spoke of a meeting held by the colored people to take into consideration a change of residence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Please state that matter a little more fully?

*Answer.* I was not present at the meeting; I understood, however, from one or two colored men who did attend that that subject was discussed; that that was the object of the meeting.

*Question.* They proposed to leave that country?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Because they were not protected in their persons and property?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. One of the men with whom I talked said they wanted to go to some place where they could lie down and sleep at nights.

*Question.* They felt that they could not do that in safety where they were?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Of this $32,000, which it was proposed to levy for school purposes, would not some five or six thousand dollars of it have been paid by the colored voters of the county by the poll-tax, at $2 a piece?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose that at least $5,000 of it would have been paid by the colored people of the county.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Have any outrages been committed in your county, and charged to the Loyal League?

*Answer.* There has never been a Loyal League in Monroe County. I have so been informed by all the intelligent colored men and white republicans of the county with whom I have ever talked on that subject; they say there never was a Loyal League in the county.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *August* 1, 1871.

CHARLES BASKERVILL sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL.) As this witness has been summoned at the request of the minority of the committee, General Blair will open his examination.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* State your place of residence, and how long you have lived there.

*Answer.* I reside in the county of Noxubee, State of Mississippi. I have lived there ever since the fall of 1866. Previous to that I resided from 1851 in the city of Columbus, Lowndes County.

*Question.* Are you a native of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I am not; I am a native of Virginia.

*Question.* How long have you lived in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Ever since the fall of 1851.

*Question.* Have you ever held any public positions in the State?

*Answer.* I have never held any office whatever in the State of Mississippi. I have never taken any interest in such matters. I was a merchant and planter, and never sought any public position. On one or two occasions offices were offered to me; but I never desired to enter into political life.

*Question.* You have never held any civil position whatever?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Were you in the army during the war?

*Answer.* I was. I was a lieutenant colonel of cavalry in the army of the Confederate States. I also held a position in the treasury department during the latter part of the war.

*Question.* What is your business now?

*Answer.* I am planter; and I am also general agent, for the States of Alabama and Mississippi, of Messrs. Jay Cooke & Company's insurance company—the National Life Insurance Company.

*Question.* That employment gives you considerable intercourse with the people of your own State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I travel over those two States for the purpose of appointing agents and supervising the business generally. All reports are made to me and through me to the headquarters of the company. I have traveled a great deal through Mississippi and considerably in Alabama; but my acquaintance with Alabama is of more recent date.

*Question.* The questions put to you have been merely preliminary, to enable the committee to understand the sources of your information and knowledge in reference to the subject of our inquiry. State now whether you know anything of any secret organization of disguised men in your State.

*Answer.* I know of no secret, disguised, organized bodies in the State. I do not believe that any organizations as such exist throughout the State; but I am aware that there have been occasionally (that is, I have heard it occasionally) some men who were disguised. I have personal knowledge of one or two instances of that sort. But as to any body of what are called Ku-Klux, or anything of that sort, (to which I understand the question has reference,) I do not believe they exist.

*Question.* Are the laws against crime enforced in your State? If they are not enforced, tell the committee why they have not been.

*Answer.* I consider that the laws have been very well obeyed by the people of the State of Mississippi, and they have been pretty well enforced. I do not believe that any organizations have committed any positive violations of law except in some few instances. I stated that I knew of one or two instances; I did not see them; but I have personal knowledge of two or three occurrences of that sort.

*Question.* When the laws were violated?

*Answer.* When the laws were violated.

*Question.* State to the committee the particulars.

*Answer.* I remember one case of a disguised band of men interrupting a negro church. I think either a fair or supper was going on; and some parties came in masks to the church and disturbed the proceedings, whatever they were—disturbed the order of the assemblage. A party rushed up to them and pulled off their masks; and they were discovered to be colored persons.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* Some eight months ago; I do not remember the date; I did not tax my memory with the dates of these matters.

*Question.* In what locality did that occur?

*Answer.* In the town of Macon; and one of the parties—Charles Steward—was the son of one our representatives.

*Question.* You mean one of the negroes who were disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; one of them was the son of Isham Steward, who is a negro representative from Noxubee in the legislature of Mississippi. The parties were arrested; but I believe they were discharged, as the proceeding was a sort of hoax; there was no intention to do any harm. Another case which has come under my personal knowledge was this: A negro in the lower part of Noxubee County had stolen a horse belonging to a man there. He had been arrested and convicted before the magistrate of that district, and was placed in the hands of a bailiff or constable, who chained him in an out-building of his house, a cabin in the yard, with an ordinary padlock, and retired for the night. The next morning the negro who had been chained was missing. Some fifty or sixty negroes came to the house of this constable in the night, some two days afterward, woke him up, and told him he had to produce this negro.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What was the constable's name?

*Answer.* Bridges; I think it is J. W. Bridges, but I am not certain, except as to his last name. He saw them approaching his house and came out with his rifle. As they approached I think he fired at them. They fired some fifty or sixty shots at him. He ran out of the back door, and as he resided near the Alabama line, he escaped into Alabama. Some four negro men entered his chamber and with cocked pistols remained over his wife all night, and demanded that he should be produced before they would give her up. They did not, however, do her any injury.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Were these negroes disguised?

*Answer.* They were not disguised. There were some fifty or sixty negroes. The parties were arrested only about a month ago, and I saw with my own eyes twenty-two of them, I think. I know there were more than twenty brought into the town of Macon to be incarcerated for this attack upon Bridges. Many of them have given bonds to appear before the circuit court; some few of them are still in jail. That is the extent of that matter, so far as I know it. The negroes supposed that the negro who was missing had been killed. No testimony has ever been adduced to that effect; and it is not believed by respectable citizens of the country that he was. They think that he got loose. The lock was an ordinary padlock, that any one might have broken. The padlock was found broken.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Please state the name of the negro who was arrested by the constable and chained.

*Answer.* I do not know his name; but I can give you the name of the party whose horse he stole, and that will identify the case, if necessary.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Give that name.

*Answer.* He stole a horse belonging to a planter there named Charles W. Moore. It was a very fine horse that Mr. Moore prized very much. The negro was caught with the horse, brought back, turned over to the magistrate, and, after being convicted, given into the custody of the constable. He got away that night, or rather disappeared; that is all I say about it. The constable was fired on and attempted to be killed by the negroes in the neighborhood because the man had got away.

*Question.* Do you know any other cases?

*Answer.* Those are the only two that came within my personal knowledge. I have paid very little attention to such matters, because I have been one of those persons—and there are thousands of such—who do not believe that there is any such body as Ku-Klux. I know of another case which it may be proper I should mention. I am speaking now only of such cases as I have knowledge of. I have heard of a great many that I know nothing about; but this case, like the other two, came within my personal knowledge; I mean I obtained my information from parties whom I knew something about. A man by the name of Thomas N. Brookshire, a confederate soldier, who was, I believe, a native of Mississippi, set up a sort of a store in the neighborhood of a number of large plantations, and he was selling whisky and everything else that the people wanted. He was looked upon as a demoralizer of the neighborhood, because he did the most of his trade at night. He purchased cotton in the seed, which under the laws of Mississippi was forbidden.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* It is not forbidden now, I suppose?

*Answer.* Not now that I know of; I do not know whether it is or not. He purchased cotton and corn at night from the negroes. The neighbors protested that these parties had no right to this cotton until it became merchantable; that there was a share in the crop which was only to be tested after it had been put in condition for market. They protested against his permitting the negroes to take the cotton and dispose of it in that way. The man persisted in buying such things. He said the negro was a free man, and that he had no right to inquire of him where he got his cotton or his corn; that there was no law forbidding him from trading at night as well as by day, and that he should pursue his own course. A number of men in disguise went to him and told him that he must desist; that if he did not he was, they said, "a big stout man, and could stand a good deal of thrashing, and they would give it to him;" whereupon he agreed to desist. My opinion has always been that those disguised men were the neighbors of this man, who wanted to break up his traffic with the negroes whom they were employing. That is the most reasonable presumption. They did not hurt the man. While they were conversing with him a negro came up with a hamper-basket of cotton and told the man that there was his cotton that he had just brought in. It was fully known that the negroes would pick cotton all day, and take about half of it at night and dispose of it. That is another case which I know of.

I do not know of any outrages. I have heard sometimes of acts of violence, just as I may hear of any other cases, without knowing anything positively of the facts connected with them.

A gentleman now in the city brought another case to my mind, which I know nothing about. I recollect that there was such a killing, but I know nothing of the circumstances connected with it. That was the case of Dick Malone. Mr. Whitfield, who is in town, and is about to be called as a witness, can give more definite information about this case than I can. I believe such a negro was killed about eight miles from my place; but as to the circumstances connected with it I know nothing. I only know that there was a good deal of prejudice in that immediate community relating to that plantation. The discipline was very lax; and it was considered that the conduct of that place was generally demoralizing other plantations. Those are about the only cases of disguised men that I know of.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* A man by the name of John R. Taliaferro has testified before us to a great many violations of law. Do you know such a man?

*Answer.* I do. He labored last year on a plantation adjoining mine.

*Question.* He stated to the committee that he was the owner of a plantation in Noxubee County.

*Answer.* Well, sir, if you desire me to speak of that man I will do so.

*Question.* I want you to state what you know of him.

*Answer.* I will speak only of what I do know. In the first place, he was for a long time a great drunkard, though sometimes he remains sober four or five months. To sum up the matter, Taliaferro is a miserable drunkard, an incorrigible liar, and a consummate thief. Those terms are strong; but each one of them can be substantiated; I will bring proof of each.

*Question.* Does he bear that character in your community?

*Answer.* He does bear that character and no other. He ran away from there for stealing a mule, which he sold—a mule belonging to an attorney in Macon. Taliaferro borrowed the mule on this man's plantation, rode him to Macon, and sold him at a livery stable. The owner found the mule at the livery stable next morning and took possession of him. Taliaferro ran away.

*Question.* Has he ever returned there since?

*Answer.* Not that I know of. Taliaferro has had no interest or occupation in the State of Mississippi since last December. His word is not believed in regard to the most trivial matters, and certainly would not be on others by either white or black. I think I can say that with truth.

*Question.* I have here an extract from a newspaper published, I believe, in your State, which speaks of Taliaferro in this way:

"When we read the evidence of this *lying* Mississippian before the outrage committee, the murderer of the prisoners in 1864 flashed before us, and we certainly had not thought of him in three or four years. We are confident that he is the same fellow, and only hope that the punishment that ought to have been visited upon him long ago, and which he justly deserved, will yet overtake him, and that from his own mouth, by his lying upon the people of his section, he will be condemned. If so, we will certainly have another instance that Providence moves in a mysterious way.

"We had an intuitive feeling—why, we know not—when we read the evidence of Taliaferro given before the outrage committee, that he was the Taliaferro that we saw during the latter part of the war, who was a Ku-Klux, a coward and a murderer, for we helped to bury, one Sabbath afternoon in the fall of 1864, at our old home in Madison, Georgia, five Yankee prisoners, whom he and two other assassins like himself had foully murdered. Well do we remember his telling us of how four of the men had plead for their lives, telling him that they were his prisoners, that they were soldiers, that they had their wives and little ones at home, and that they ought not to be killed for doing nothing else than defending their flag; then we remember how one brave spirit told him to kill, that he was an infamous hound, destitute of all heart and soul, of courage and manhood, and that he could kill whenever he got ready, that a man had but one time to die, and that the *tied* prisoner, without any chance for his life, would show him how a man could die. The infamous Taliaferro placed a pistol to the heart of the brave fellow and fired; not satisfied with killing the prisoner, he mutilated him by firing three or four shots into his head and face. Taliaferro told us this himself, before we went to where the prisoners were dead; and the facts of the killing sustained his statement of the butchery."

Is that the same man?

*Answer.* It is the same man.

*Question.* Does that article truly express the reputation he bears?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I know nothing of the circumstance mentioned in that article, but he is the man referred to. He is the only Taliaferro in that country; and I have heard him boast of his great deeds of daring—how many Yankee soldiers he had killed, &c.; but I do not remember the particular case mentioned in that article.

*Question.* This man, you say, was a near neighbor of yours?

*Answer.* He was not a neighbor of mine. He worked on the farm of a neighbor simply as a laborer on the plantation. He plowed, he hoed, he went out in the morning, and came back at night, as a common laborer with the negroes.

*Question.* How long since he has left that neighborhood?

*Answer.* His contract with that party expired in December, I do not think he has been in the neighborhood since. If he has, he has been there secretly, and the neighbors did not know of it. He may have been there a little in January, perhaps; I do not recollect precisely; but I know he has not been there since April, because, I think, it was early in April that he committed this theft.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Last April?

*Answer.* Last April. After going down to Columbus he came back in that neighborhood, and borrowed this mule to ride to Macon. I do not think he has been in my neighborhood since last December; nor do I think he has been much in that portion of the State. It was some time during the spring that he committed this theft; and since that we have heard nothing of him.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Has he been arrested in Virginia since he gave his testimony here, and carried back to Mississippi on a requisition of the governor?

*Answer.* I so understand; I do not know how correct it is. I left home on the 10th of July. If he has been arrested it has been since then. I have seen something in a paper to the effect that a requisition had been made for this man, Taliaferro, upon the governor of Virginia.

*Question.* For the crime of stealing?

*Answer.* For stealing this mule. That was the charge, as I have learned, on which he was arrested.

*Question.* Who is your county clerk?

*Answer.* Our county clerk is Major Smith, who was at one time the agent of the Freedmen's Bureau; he is now our chancery court clerk; he is also our senator; he is also the clerk of the board of supervisors, I think, though I am not certain about it.

*Question.* He holds three or four offices?

*Answer.* He holds three or four of the most lucrative offices in that county. He is a senator; and he is also, by appointment, chancery court clerk, which is considered the best office in the county.

*Question.* Under your constitution can a man hold those offices at one and the same time?

*Answer.* Well, it has been said that he could not. At the last session of the senate the question came up, whether men could be permitted to hold two or three offices at the same time; and the legislature, whose members hold many of these offices, voted that they should be allowed to hold them—that they should not be turned out of office. I know very well that our governor was disposed to have them hold those offices, for I know very well sometimes, when he wanted a confirmation for a certain party, he would hold the office which was at his control over them *in terrorem*, in order to have their acquiescence.

*Question.* To make them vote as he desired?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I know that.

*Question.* Is not that the reason why in most of the States the holding of such offices by members of the legislature is considered incompatible with the independence of the representative?

*Answer.* In many cases I know it has operated in that way. I know in reference to the present sheriff that his confirmation by the senate was demanded; and I know that Smith was opposed to voting for his confirmation. I understood that he had a brother that he wanted to put in the place; so it was said, (I only state it as a rumor;) and for this reason he was opposed to Moore's nomination. He was politely told that if he declined to vote for his confirmation he could resign his circuit clerkship. Moore has been confirmed.

*Question.* Who has been the attorney of the county?

*Answer.* Our circuit court attorney is named Colonel Muldrow.

*Question.* Is he a radical?

*Answer.* He is a republican. He is a native-born southerner, and was in the confederate army; he was a lieutenant colonel. The families of Muldrows and Alcorns are great friends, to which, I suppose, is partly attributable his appointment. He is a conservative republican; he advocated the claims of Alcorn against Dent. He is a very good man.

*Question.* Who are your delegates for that county?

*Answer.* We have Smith; I do not know from what State he comes.

*Question.* He is a carpet-bagger?

*Answer.* He is a carpet-bagger. He represents us in the senate. We have three negro representatives; one named Davis, who is a carpet-bagger; another named Isham Steward; and another named Maneese. We have one white man representing us in the senate.

*Question.* And he a carpet-bagger?

*Answer.* And he a carpet-bagger. One of the negroes is a carpet-bagger, and the other two are natives of the State. Davis, the negro carpet-bagger, came into the county about six weeks before he was elected. Where he came from I do not know.

*Question.* I believe there have been some arrests recently in your county for Ku-Kluxing?

*Answer.* Quite a large number. Over twenty persons have been arrested in my county and the adjoining county of Winston; they were carried before the court at Oxford.

*Question.* Do you know any of those persons?

*Answer.* I do; I know several of them. They are peaceable, law-abiding citizens, so far as I know them and so far as I believe.

*Question.* Upon whose testimony were they arrested?

*Answer.* Well, sir, you recollect that Governor Alcorn issued a proclamation offering $5,000 reward for the apprehension and conviction of such parties; I believe it was $3,000 for the apprehension of a Ku-Klux, and $5,000 for apprehension and conviction.

*Question.* That is the Georgia dodge?

*Answer.* Well, it is the proclamation of the governor. Unexpectedly to any of us

some twenty troops were landed in the town of Macon just previous to the sitting of the United States court at Oxford.

*Question.* United States troops?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They were commanded by a sergeant. They landed there early in the morning from the train. On that day they hired horses and went into the country. They took with them a justice of the peace by the name of Wissler to point out those individuals. Wissler stated to the citizens that he had been arrested and was forced to go. They also took with them a man by the name of Reed, a carpet-bagger, who is internal revenue assessor. They went in search of these Ku-Klux; and as fast as they could arrest any parties they would send them in.

*Question.* You say Wissler and Reed pointed out these men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Reed was made deputy marshal for that county about that time. These parties were carried to Jackson. Some of them were liberated; some were placed under bond to appear at the United States court. They continued to make arrests to a very considerable extent.

*Question.* The arrests are still going on?

*Answer.* They were going on at the time I left home.

*Question.* Were these parties taken to Jackson or to Oxford?

*Answer.* To Oxford. But the day that I left home the United States court at Oxford had adjourned; and on the very cars on which I came there were a lot of prisoners on their way to Jackson. The court sits at different points. Judge Hill had adjourned his court at Oxford. The arrests were continuing and the parties were being carried to Jackson.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Was the court about to sit immediately at Jackson?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It was in session at that time and perhaps is yet.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Upon what evidence were these men arrested?

*Answer.* I do not know upon what evidence they were arrested. They were arrested on being pointed out as Ku-Klux by this man Reed, the deputy marshal, and by Wissler.

*Question.* Who is Wissler?

*Answer.* He is a miserable little Dutchman—a carpet-bagger—and is one of our justices of the peace.

*Question.* Was he appointed by the governor?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was appointed by the governor. He is a man who would not be believed upon oath by any respectable citizen in our country.

*Question.* What is his character in the community?

*Answer.* His character in the community is very infamous. He started for here not long since, (so I am told,) and was arrested at Corinth for robbery and murder. He robbed a man there by the name of Shipley, (so Shipley stated in his dying declaration,) and then turned over a kerosene oil lamp into his lap and burned him to death. Shipley, who has since died, stated in his dying declaration that Wissler had robbed him.

*Question.* Robbed him and murdered him?

*Answer.* Had not only robbed him, but murdered him.

*Question.* Wissler was at that time on his way to appear before this committee?

*Answer.* He was, if you summoned him; if not, his object was to appear as a volunteer. That is, he said when he left home that he was going to Washington.

*Question.* But he was arrested before reaching here?

*Answer.* He was arrested in the town of Corinth, where he had perpetrated this act on a previous visit to that place. I forgot to state that he is under six different indictments for malfeasance in office as justice of the peace, in collecting funds and not turning them over. One of my nearest neighbors, who is his bondsman, went down to give him up.

*Question.* Upon his return?

*Answer.* Upon his return from this Corinth trip. The old bondsman did give him up, but a new bond was made out, and then it was that he started on here. This man had been suffering the torments of death up at Corinth, and Wissler was going by there about the time the man died.

*Question.* And he was arrested?

*Answer.* He was arrested, and was on trial when I came away. Whether he was convicted I do not know; the trial had not terminated the last I heard of it.

*Question.* Who is Reed?

*Answer.* Reed is a carpet-bagger. He was a Freedmen's Bureau clerk, and has been in the county ever since 1867, I believe. He has been a very officious and active politician. After going there, he had some connection with the express, and was tried in 1867 for robbing the express.

*Question.* With which he was connected?

*Answer.* With which he was connected.

*Question.* Was he convicted?

*Answer.* He was discharged.

*Question.* You say he is now deputy marshal?

*Answer.* He is, as I understand. I did not know he was deputy marshal until these arrests were made; but he is a United States assessor.

*Question.* Was he the deputy marshal who was under arrest and in jail?

*Answer.* No, sir; that brings up another matter.

*Question.* Who was that man?

*Answer.* When these soldiers came down there they came under a very drunken Irish sergeant.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I do not know his name; I only saw the man once, and he was drunk on that day. I recollect his swaggering up and telling me that he had those men in command; that he was the sergeant. I do not recollect his name. When I left home, I did not expect it would be of any importance to know the names of these parties; I only know that he was a sergeant.

*Question.* He had the command?

*Answer.* He had the command of those troops.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he in uniform, and did he wear the insignia of a sergeant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He behaved himself as a general thing very well, except on this occasion, when he was drunk. I was going to tell you about the deputy marshal. These troops came down there for the purpose of making these arrests. The marshal at Oxford sent a deputy marshal down there.

*Question.* With the soldiers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and these soldiers were under his command—at his bidding. This deputy marshal was an exceedingly inferior looking man in all respects. The soldiers were evidently under very loose discipline. After they had been there perhaps a week, they one night robbed a negro of eight dollars.

*Question.* What was the name of the negro they robbed?

*Answer.* I will be able to recall his name directly. He lives in the town of Macon, and is a very respectable, good negro; he has a sort of a little merchandise shop. Two soldiers came to him at night, and one of them presented a pistol and demanded his money. He gave up all that he had, which was $8. He went to the mayor the next morning and made his complaint. The mayor immediately issued an order for the arrest of the soldier. The town constable or marshal went to arrest him. This sergeant of whom I spoke ordered the soldier to surrender to the town marshal—made him put down his arms and give himself up as an offender against the law. The conduct of the sergeant on that occasion was very proper as we thought, and very satisfactory to the people; we thought he seemed disposed to do what was right. The deputy marshal now comes up and tells the town marshal or constable that he shall not arrest the man; that he shall turn him loose.

*Question.* Who was that deputy marshal?

*Answer.* His name was McMullin, or McMillan, or some such name. He was the deputy of the marshal of the northern district of the State. He told the soldier to resume his arms, and said to the man who was arresting him, "You must give him up; if you don't I'll turn the soldiers loose on you." This was at night. In the next morning's train, which passed about 6 o'clock, he sent that soldier off to Oxford with a bevy of these arrested parties, reserving eight or ten of the soldiers at Macon. Soon afterwards a warrant was gotten out for the deputy marshal for interfering with the municipal laws of the town. He was arrested. I happened to be present at his trial; I accidentally stepped into court and saw the trial. He was charged with violating the law in taking a prisoner away from the marshal of the town. The facts with regard to the robbery and the interference were proved. The mayor asked the deputy marshal whether he had any witnesses whom he wished to introduce. He said, "No, I have none; I don't want to introduce any." The mayor then asked him, "Do you wish to appear by counsel?" He said, "No, I don't intend to appear by counsel." The mayor then said, "Well, I must put you under a bond of $500 to appear at the next circuit court." The deputy marshal said, "I shall not give any bond." He was still sitting down at the time. The mayor did not hear him, and asked, "What did you say?" The deputy marshal got up and approached him in a rather impertinent and very menacing manner, and said, "I don't intend to give any bond;" whereupon the mayor ordered him to jail. There were eight or ten soldiers in the room. The sheriff was sitting right by me; and this man was sitting beyond me. The sheriff touched him on the collar, and said, "Come on; you have got to go to jail." He got up and started to go. As he passed out of the chancel or bar of the court where the attorneys sit, two of those soldiers stepped up to him and remarked, "You need not go unless you want to go." I suppose he thought prudence the best part of valor, and he remarked, "I reckon it

is best for me to go." He lay in jail for ten or twelve days. He was finally taken to Oxford by order of Judge Hill. That is the last I know of that matter.

*Question.* He was taken out of the hands of the State authorities?

*Answer.* He was taken out of the hands of the State authorities. The mayor who imprisoned him is a republican.

*Question.* He was taken out of the mayor's hands by United States officers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You do not know whether he was released or not?

*Answer.* I do not, because the thing occurred just upon my departure for home about the 12th of July.

*Question.* In your opinion what were all those arrests made for?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I will give you my candid opinion, and I will give you the opinion of law-abiding citizens in that country; my opinion is about the same as theirs. These arrest were made for two purposes. One was to secure this $5,000 reward.

*Question.* Which was given simply for the arrest?

*Answer.* For the arrest and conviction of a Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Three thousand dollars was given for the arrest?

*Answer.* For the capture of a Ku-Klux—one that could be proved to be a Ku-Klux. I do not recollect the proclamation precisely; but I believe the reward runs up to $5,000 in case the party is convicted; it may be $3,000; but I believe it to be $5,000. There is another purpose in those arrests. Our elections are approaching. I have always observed, ever since the negroes have been permitted to vote, that previous to elections we have had many persons going through the country disorganizing the negroes, and exciting their minds preparatory to the election. I think the arrests have these two objects: they were for the purpose of political capital, and to make gain through the procuring of these rewards.

*Question.* What declarations, if any, were made by Reed and Wissler?

*Answer.* Wissler stated to a repectable citizen in that town that if——

*Question.* Tell us the name of the citizen.

*Answer.* His name was Dr. J. Bevel, who keeps the hotel in the town of Macon. He says that Wissler told him one evening that if anybody was hurt in these things—if a hair of his head, or any of his soldiers was hurt—the town would be laid in ashes. I suppose they esteemed it rather a dangerous thing to be sending troops and hunting up men in the dark woods; and hence I suppose they made this declaration. They were not molested. No one has ever touched them. And I will say here that no official in the county of Noxubee has ever been molested.

*Question.* Or obstructed in the discharge of duty?

*Answer.* Or obstructed in the discharge of duty. These soldiers staid about the court-house; and I have been told that Reed, when he was handling a soldier's gun, said to a gentleman standing by how much good it would have done him if he had come across fifty or sixty Ku-Klux and had a pretty little fight; that he would have been willing to lose a leg, or something of that sort.

*Question.* Did he offer any rewards for testimony?

*Answer.* There was a negro killed about twelve months ago, near Sugar Lock; I know nothing of the circumstances; I did not even know that a negro had been killed until I heard mentioned the circumstance that Reed took a negro who was from that neighborhood to his house, asked him into his parlor, sat down with him there and drank with him, in order to find out what he knew of this murder; and he told the negro that if he could convict certain parties he would get $500 by it. That is what the negro said, as I understood, though he did not tell it to me.

*Question.* Do you know the name of the negro?

*Answer.* I think his name is Hill. I can give the name of the party who mentioned the circumstance to me.

*Question.* Let us have his name.

*Answer.* Mr. Stanton Field, of Sugar Lock, mentioned the circumstance to me.

*Question.* Has any officer in your county ever been molested or interfered with in the execution of his duties?

*Answer.* Not one, that I know of.

*Question.* Then the use of these soldiers in making these arrests was——

*Answer.* Entirely unnecessary. There was not a man arrested who would not have gone with a sheriff or constable, or any official, without any soldier being present.

*Question.* There was no resistance whatever to the authority of the officers of the law?

*Answer.* None whatever; not a particle of resistance. Many of the men arrested were placed upon their paroles of honor, and came in readily. It was at a period of the year when the making of the arrests was very unfortunate; for a good many of those arrested were poor men, who were taken away from their farms when their crops needed them very much. Two of the grand jurors are negroes from our county; one was our representative, Davis.

*Question.* It has been stated—I do not know how true it is—that all these parties were arrested upon the testimony of this man Taliaferro?

*Answer.* That is what I have understood.

*Question.* How many arrests were made in your county?

*Answer.* In our county and the county of Winston (I cannot tell exactly the line between them in those backwoods) there were some twenty or more arrested, I think; fully twenty.

*Question.* Are they still under arrest?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were put under bonds and released to appear at the next court. Each gave a good and sufficient bond for his appearance at that time.

*Question.* Some of the witnesses testified here to quite a scene of triumph, &c., when these prisoners, after their release upon bail, returned to their homes; do you know anything about that?

*Answer.* There was quite a congratulation and rejoicing; the citizens were rejoiced at their release; they felt that they had all been deeply injured by the sending of United States troops down there. We do not object to United States troops when employed for necessary and proper purposes; but our people did object to the sending of those troops down there, as if the men had to be hauled up by means of United States muskets, when, in fact, they would have cheerfully appeared to answer any charges. The citizens felt, furthermore, that they had been injured by our own office holders, who went to help hunt for those prisoners, as they pretended, when we firmly believed that the object was nothing else than gain. When the prisoners were liberated there was quite a jubilee among the citizens. There was no outbreak; there were no insults to the officers. Reed is still there, I presume.

*Question.* The citizens were glad of their release because they believed them to be innocent?

*Answer.* They believed them innocent of the crime charged, and rejoiced at their release, and that they were permitted to return to their families.

*Question.* Has any officer ever been molested in your county in the discharge of his duties?

*Answer.* Not a solitary instance of that kind has occurred, within my observation or recollection. I am satisfied that all our citizens desire to be law abiding. They only ask to be let alone. We feel that we are oppressed with taxation, and that we are very much down-trodden in the fact of the offices being held exclusively by negroes and carpet-baggers.

*Question.* Are the offices in your county held in that way, exclusively?

*Answer.* Not in all cases. The chancery court clerk is a carpet-bagger; his name is Smith. Reed acts very often as his deputy clerk, and is also the assessor of taxes. He is a carpet-bagger. Three of our members of the legislature are negroes—one of them a carpet-bagger. Our circuit court judge is a member of the republican party. He is not a carpet-bagger; he is a citizen of the State.

*Question.* What is his name?

*Answer.* John A. Orr. Muldrow is our district attorney. As to our magistracy, there are some republican magistrates and some not republican. We have two magistrates in our town; Wissler is one, and Shipman is the other. I do not know whether Shipman is a carpet-bagger; he has resided in the State some years.

*Question.* Are the negroes as a general thing quiet and well behaved?

*Answer.* They are very quiet and well behaved. There is no trouble or difficulty with them, unless when elections are about to be held; then, sometimes, when demonstrations are made, they become boisterous. I have never known them, however, to be interfered with under such circumstances.

*Question.* Do the negroes pay any of the taxes?

*Answer.* I do not think they do, except the $2 poll tax, or *per capita* tax.

*Question.* Is that generally paid?

*Answer.* I do not think it is. I heard the sheriff say the other day that there were $20,000 of insolvent taxes upon our list from the last year's return. I saw the list made out; and I think there was not one white man in ten on the list. They cannot very well get at the negro for taxes. You see he registers under one name, and passes under another.

*Question.* And votes under a third?

*Answer.* And very often votes under a third.

*Question.* And does not stop at one vote either?

*Answer.* I have heard of cases of that sort; I have never known them positively.

*Question.* What has been the conduct of the white citizens of your region of country?

*Answer.* We have four thousand two hundred negro voters and from one thousand two hundred to one thousand five hundred whites. The treatment extended by the white people to the blacks (I wish to speak of that first) is good. I have been a planter, and I suppose I have had on an average one hundred and eighty laborers—from one hundred and thirty to, at times, over two hundred; but I think I had one hundred and thirty regularly-employed hands. I never had a word of insult or impertinence from any negro to me; and I never gave them any cause for such a thing. They were very obedient. The only trouble I ever had in respect to that matter was that when the

negroes would begin their canvassing, one of them would sometimes dash up into my field on his horse and say to the other negroes, "They have sent for you." Then the negroes would generally be disposed to drop their hoes and go to the public meeting. I objected to that considerably. I told them on one occasion that if they went I would dismiss them, because both their crop and mine depended upon their labor; and their labor could not be spared just at that time. Sometimes they would all go, and sometimes a portion would go. I never dismissed but one for such a thing; and on that occasion he said he was "going anyway," and I told him, "Very well, if you are going anyway, don't come back any more." That had no reference to voting or to any election. The negro was going to a public speaking. What I state in regard to my case is, I think, pretty generally true with reference to others. We have been annoyed at having ignorant and corrupt men placed over us, and having men put in the legislature who have voted regardless of the difference between right and wrong, and who sometimes did not know what was right. As to the negroes, they often voted wrong because they were ignorant, and did not know what was right.

*Question.* At the time of your last election were many of the white people of your county disfranchised?

*Answer.* A great many of them were disfranchised.

*Question.* You have held only one election?

*Answer.* Only one; that was the time of Alcorn's election.

*Question.* And those who are now under disability to hold office were at that time disfranchised under the reconstruction acts?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Were they disqualified to vote? Did you ever have any disqualification for voting in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* None except under the reconstruction acts?

*Answer.* No, sir. They were disqualified under the reconstruction acts. A great many of them could not register. It required registration in order to vote. A great many have never been permitted to vote.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did the disfranchised persons in your State constitute a very large class?

*Answer.* Not a very large class; but, you see, in our county there were only twelve hundred or fourteen hundred whites against forty-two hundred negroes. The negroes are generally members of the Loyal League, and vote the republican ticket.

*Question.* The governor of your State is a native Mississippian, I believe?

*Answer.* No, sir; Governor Alcorn is, I think, an Illinoisian by birth.

*Question.* He is an old resident, however?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; he is a thoroughly acclimated Mississippian.

*Question.* He was in the confederate army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he was a general of militia. He has resided in Mississippi for a great number of years. He was in the State senate before the war, and also during the war.

*Question.* He, however, had his disabilities removed?

*Answer.* He had. I made application to get my disabilities removed, but I failed. I can vote, but I cannot hold office.

*Question.* Did you ever hold an office prior to the war?

*Answer.* Never but once. About thirty-five years ago I was, for about six weeks, postmaster of a little neighborhood post office. That was in Virginia, before I moved to Mississippi.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you take the oath of office as postmaster?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think I did.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Then you are disqualified under the fourteenth amendment?

*Answer.* I asked for the removal of my disabilities in order that I might hold office in the State of Mississippi. I could not swear that I never aided the cause of the Confederate States; and, I presume, General Gilmer could not have taken such an oath. I only wanted to be placed where he was. The report on my application was made by a gentleman in Congress, and the reason alleged for refusing it was that I had mobbed a negro school-house. That was one of the reasons assigned why I did not succeed.

*Question.* Was that true?

*Answer.* No, sir. I will state how I think the report arose. I have, as I have stated, employed a large number of negroes on my plantation. In 1866, in opposition to the general sentiment, (for then we had not generally become very favorable to the system of educating the negroes,) I put up a school-house and employed a teacher for my ne-

groes. I employed in that capacity a one-armed confederate soldier. I placed him there on my premises, and told him if the negroes did not pay him I would. During one of my business trips away from home, he, without my knowledge or consent, gave up the school to a Yankee soldier. I returned and found this man in possession of the school. I permitted him to remain peaceably in possession. Finally complaints were made to me by my negroes that this fellow was not acting exactly right. He was creating jealousies among the negroes, and it was stated to me by one of them that he believed the fellow had interfered with the sanitary condition of the place, so far as the women were concerned. I went to see him, and discovered on the same day that he was quartering a white strumpet among my negroes. I told him that if he did not leave there in a very short time I would give him a thrashing. I told him that I would kick him off the plantation if he did not get off very soon. He left, and went up to General Eggleston. What he told the general I do not know; but that was the history of my mobbing a school-house.

*Question.* You dismissed him for giving disease to your negroes?

*Answer.* One of the negroes told me he had diseased one of them; I think he told me of one particular girl; besides that, I found this white strumpet in one of my negro cabins; I drove her off, and then drove him off.

*Question.* What is the amount of school tax levied, and how is it levied in your State?

*Answer.* I will endeavor to explain to you the system of taxation for the State of Mississippi. We have in that State a tax of one-half of one per cent. upon every description of property that it is possible to conceive of. They tax your hogs, your cows, your furniture, your watches, your cups and saucers, your land, and everything else. Everything is subjected to that tax of one-half of one per cent. by the State. Then the county has the right to levy not exceeding one hundred per cent. upon the State tax. Every county comes up to that limit and wants a little more; that, added to the State tax, makes one per cent. Then they have a right to levy a special tax for the purpose of building jails, bridges, &c.—a tax not exceeding one hundred per cent. upon the county tax; that is another half per cent. Then the school tax is so many mills—if I recollect right it is five mills to pay teachers, and ten mills for the building of school-houses.

*Question.* The school tax is a tax of one and a half per cent.?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; this one and a half per cent. is levied for school purposes.

*Question.* In addition to the other taxes?

*Answer.* In addition to all the others. We have, thus, a tax of one-half per cent. for State purposes, one-half per cent. for county purposes, about one-half per cent. for special purposes, and one and a half per cent. for school purposes, making in the aggregate, as I now estimate it, four per cent. upon the entire property of the State—land, cultivated or uncultivated, and everything else.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Are you certain of that?

*Answer.* I think that is correct.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are not the owners of small amounts of property exempt to a certain extent? Are not so many hogs, so many horses, &c., exempted from taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is an exemption, I think, of about two horses, $200 worth of furniture, so many bushels of corn, &c. I do not recollect the items; but the exemptions just cover the absolute living of a family.

*Question.* Those exemptions would relieve from taxation the entire body of negroes, or very nearly all?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the negroes of our country pay no tax except here and there an occasional instance. I will illustrate to see whether I am correct. The assessment of tax for my county is, I see, $89,000—say $90,000. I think about $20,000 is for school purposes, about $25,000 or $30,000 for the State, and the balance for county and special purposes. Now, we make in our county about 12,000 bales of cotton. That at $75 per bale, the price which the last crop brought, would make about $900,000. As a general rule the negro gets one-half the cotton. If we give him one-quarter we feed him, which we suppose is equivalent to one-quarter. In other words, only one-half of the cotton belongs to the planter. The planter pays the tax, which amounts to about 25 or 30 per cent. I know that last year it took about all my cotton to pay my taxes.

*Question.* Then the entire tax to carry on the State government, and the county government, and the schools, is levied upon the white people of the county?

*Answer.* I say unhesitatingly that it is.

*Question.* There has been some testimony given here in regard to the resistance made by the people of the counties to that enormous tax, and especially the school tax?

*Answer.* Well, sir, there is very great complaint, and I think very justly, against the onerous taxation of our people. They are oppressed with taxation. Our tax was due on the 1st of July; and fifteen per cent. additional has been levied upon delinquents who did not pay at that time. The sheriff told me he had collected about

$50,000 of taxation up to the time when he spoke to me—a few days before I left home, and before the period for payment had elapsed. He has the right to levy fifteen per cent. on the amount remaining unpaid up to a certain time, and after the expiration of that time to sell the lands for taxes. His list of lands on which taxes were unpaid covered, when printed, one entire side of a newspaper. Besides that we have another tax to pay in October.

*Question.* What is that for?

*Answer.* The tax which was due the other day was the tax for 1870, the tax under our late law having been levied one year and paid the next. But the law has been changed so that the tax assessed in the spring shall be collected in the fall. Hence this year we have to pay the taxes of last year, and in October the taxes for the present year. The tax for last year was due in April, but the governor, considering that there was a great burden resting upon the people in this respect, suspended its collection for a while, so that it did not fall due till July.

*Question.* Have you in your community any number of those persons who are generally known as "carpet-baggers?"

*Answer.* We have not a very great number, because, as I have already explained, one man holds several offices. The lieutenant governor of the State, who was formerly our sheriff, is a carpet-bagger. The offices since the war have been held altogether, with but few exceptions, by carpet-baggers and negroes.

*Question.* And some of the negroes are carpet-baggers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The mayor of our town is an Ohio man, but he has lived in our State a number of years. He is a republican.

*Question.* Are people from other States who go to your State for the purpose of bettering their condition by attending to legitimate occupations—by laboring in their respective vocations or professions—are they called carpet-baggers?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is there any odium attached to people who come in that way from other States?

*Answer.* We call no men "carpet-baggers" except those who come there to control the offices of the country and to interfere offensively in the management of political affairs. A gentleman resides there who was on General Sheridan's staff. He is a large planter. Although at the present time temporarily absent in Europe, he has lived for three years within eight miles of my house. He is a clever gentleman. He has never interfered offensively in politics or tried to hold all the offices in the country. He was most heartily welcomed and is highly esteemed and respected.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What is his name?

*Answer.* Major Holman.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Then there is no prejudice against northern men who come to your State for proper purposes?

*Answer.* There is no prejudice against northern men; they are heartily welcomed; but there is a prejudice and a hatred against the "carpet-baggers," as we call them—those who come there for the express purpose of holding office—who never invest anything in the community, and who seem to take no interest in the welfare of the State, except so far as the profits of their offices are concerned.

*Question.* Do these men endeavor to array classes of the community against each other?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I think they do. They attend meetings in company with the negroes; they associate principally with the negroes; they associate very little with the better class of people.

*Question.* We have had some testimony before the committee from Mr. Huggins, of Monroe County; do you know him?

*Answer.* I do not know him except by reputation.

*Question.* Among other things, he said, in speaking of the assessment and collection of taxes for schools in his county, that the schools were put in operation there under the law of the legislature and with the expectation that the tax would be collected, but that the Ku-Klux gave orders that no tax should be imposed, and none has been. What do you know in reference to that matter?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know what the Ku-Klux did, or what he stated about the Ku-Klux, but I will tell you what I do know in regard to the matter. I know that the citizens of the county held a meeting in broad daylight, just as they would go to church or anywhere else, and respectfully protested against any very heavy assessment of taxes in view of the present burdens and the light crop. I know that this was done in the county of Lowndes, and it had an effect upon the board of supervisors. A respectful petition was gotten up to that board, setting forth that they must levy a light tax for the purpose of schools; and in consequence of that petition the tax was considerably abated.

*Question.* And the case was the same in Monroe County?

*Answer.* It was, if I am correctly informed; and I suppose such a meeting of citizens is what Mr. Huggins calls the operations of the Ku-Klux. Whether Mr. Huggins was waited on by Ku-Klux I cannot say.

*Question.* He says that "during the years 1865 and 1866 there was comparatively little trouble in that county. I was not interfered with until the close of the year 1866. I had expressed my opinion very freely in the towns about me. I had been refused admission to the church. That was the only thing really that occurred during the year. I was not recognized as a Christian at all."

*Answer.* I know nothing of that. I think his statement is most likely true, that he had never been interfered with during that period, and I am satisfied he never would have been, unless he had become, as the people consider it, an oppressor. As a planter, following his vocation, like the rest of us in the country, I think he never would have been interfered with up to the present time, for we have a great many northern men down there engaged in planting.

*Question.* He says further in reference to this church matter that "they said I would not be allowed to join, unless I would say I had committed a wrong, which I could not do. I called on the pastor after that to withdraw my letter entirely from the church." Do you know anything in reference to that matter?

*Answer.* I know nothing of that; but there must have been some other reasons connected with the matter, for I know other northern men who are connected with the churches there.

*Question.* On page 226 of the testimony, Mr. John R. Taliaferro says: "There was a negro killed near Sugar Lock, between seven and eight months ago.

"*Question.* In what part of the county is that?

"*Answer.* Below Macon, in the southeastern part of the county, on the line of the Mobile and Ohio Railroad.

"*Question.* What were the circumstances of the killing?

"*Answer* He was said to have been doing some considerable talking as a politician; it was thought better to silence him, and they did so.

"*Question.* Was there any charge against him, besides talking politics?

"*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any other charge against him.

"*Question.* Did you know him personally?

"*Answer.* I did not; he resided some distance from me.

"*Question.* What were the circumstances in relation to his killing?

"*Answer.* They simply went to his house at night (these things are always done at night) and called him out. He refused to come, and they broke open the door and murdered him."

*Answer.* That is the case that I referred to a while ago. I recollect now that the negro was called "Bully Jack." That is the case in which Stanton Field said that a negro named Hill had said that Reed had offered him $500 to testify that a certain man killed the negro at Sugar Lock.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of that negro?

*Answer.* Nothing whatever. I was not in the State at the time, or at least not in that portion of the State. I have heard that such a negro was killed—by whom, or anything of that sort, I cannot say.

*Question.* Taliaferro also speaks of the whipping of some negro women. He says on page 226: "Then there were four places visited right in my immediate neighborhood—Mr. Crosby's, Mr. Hinton's, Mr. Jackson's, and Mr. Price's, all gentlemen farmers there.

"*Question.* They are the owners of four farms or plantations?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* By whom were those plantations visited?

"*Answer.* By men in disguise.

"*Question.* When?

"*Answer.* It has been about three months and a half or four months ago. There was no murder committed there. These men were all bachelors except one, who was a widower; and each one of them had a cook or woman living about the place. They took out the negro women and whipped them.

"*Question.* Was that all they did?

"*Answer.* They whipped them very severely; that is all.

"*Question.* Did they whip any of the men?

"*Answer.* No, sir; they simply whipped these women because they said they were living in *crim. con.* (I believe that is the expression) with these white men.

"*Question.* But they did not whip the white men?

"*Answer.* No, sir. If they had whipped the men it would have been very well, I suppose. They had been living together for a long time—some five or six years. Mr. Hinton had been living with one of the women eight or ten years—previous to the war, and during the war.

"*Question.* Was it understood that he cohabited with her?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and that he had children by her; and they thought it would

benefit the other negroes in the neighborhood to 'dress them up,' as they call it--to whip them out, and order them to leave."

Do you know anything about that?

*Answer.* Now that you mention that case I remember it. There was a party of persons who went, I think, to Hinton's; and I know it was esteemed there more of a jest than anything else. Hinton is an old bachelor; and there were two or three other old bachelors in the neighborhood. I never knew until I heard of these things that Hinton had a negro woman to whom he was very particular in his attentions. Some parties went there and drove her off, and, I think, whipped her a little; and I believe they told Hinton that if he did not desist from that sort of conduct they would look after him. I know the impression was that the men who did that were some neighbors who went there as a sort of a frolic, although partly in earnest, to stop this sort of thing. They went in disguise, however.

*Question.* In Taliaferro's testimony I find, on page 227, the following on the subject of disguises:

"*Question.* From what you have learned, have these disguised men, when they go about, a uniform disguise—are the various bands disguised alike?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir; generally speaking; it depends upon the neighborhood. Almost always they adopt the same disguise, which is a long white robe; if it is not white, it is generally black; it depends on the location. For instance, a Klan may start from Macon robed in white, and one from Brooksville robed in black."

Have you heard anything about that?

*Answer.* I never have heard. I never have seen a disguised man in the State. I do not know any man whom I have even suspected of being a Ku-Klux. I now remember one little circumstance, which I may as well mention. My plantation is only about a mile and a quarter or a mile and a half from the little village of Brooksville. I recollect some boys told me that the negroes had a prayer-meeting one night, and they went there playing Ku-Klux; that is, they went with some little disguise on their faces. It was a mere prank. There was not a man among them. One of the negroes, I think, went out and discovered the fact that they were boys, and just laughed about it. I believe a good many of these stories of Ku-Klux—I do not pretend to say all of them—arise from circumstances of that character.

*Question.* I read again from Taliaferro's testimony:

"*Question.* Have you seen any of these bands?

"*Answer.* I have.

"*Question.* When was that?

"*Answer.* Not a great while ago—two months and a half ago."

Your statement is, I believe, that Taliaferro has not been there within that time?

*Answer.* I know that he quit living in that neighborhood in December. He has been in the county, of course, since, because it was in April, I think, that he stole the mule I have mentioned; but he has not made himself visible around there for some time past. Since I come to think about it, I believe he lived at Brooksville, in a neighborhood below me, for a short time; but I do not think he has been in the county since April. I may be deceived about that, because he may have been there without my knowing it; but I know he has not been about Brooksville to any extent since last January, I would say. He is esteemed there a miserable creature.

*Question.* He says that Dismukes is your prosecuting officer?

*Answer.* That is not true.

*Question.* I read from his testimony on that point, on page 229:

"*Question.* Is there a prosecuting officer for your county?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* Who is he?

"*Answer.* Mr. Dismukes.

"*Question.* By whom was he appointed?

"*Answer.* By Governor Alcorn.

"*Question.* Is he a republican?

"*Answer.* Well, it is hard to tell what he is.

"*Question.* Does he call himself a republican?

"*Answer.* He does now, I think."

*Answer.* Dismukes holds no office. He was, I believe, United States commissioner to take oaths. He is a practicing attorney; he has never held the office of prosecuting attorney; for, as I have already stated, Muldrow is the district attorney and prosecuting officer. We have no prosecuting attorney for the county court.

*Question.* Is Dismukes a democrat?

*Answer.* He is a good democrat; he always has been, so far as I know.

*Question.* On page 229 of Mr. Taliaferro's testimony I find the following:

"*Question.* You say that these men themselves say that they do these things in the interest of law and order—to keep things peaceable?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* What is your judgment in relation to the real purpose?

"*Answer.* My idea is simply that they do it to keep the negroes down, as it were—to keep them submissive, and make them acquiesce in any move that they want to make."

Do you know of any such attempt on the part of the body of your people, or any of them?

*Answer.* None whatever. We rent land to the negro. He works our plantations on shares. We leave our plantations in his charge. At this very time there is no male protector at my house but my servant. My wife is in the country for the summer; she is on the plantation with a number of negroes; and if there was not a community of feeling between the negroes and myself, if I felt any apprehensions from the negroes, I would not have left my home under such circumstances.

*Question.* How are negro land-renters treated by the community?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I reckon that one-third of our county is rented out to negroes. I myself am renting; my son-in-law is renting; throughout my entire neighborhood, comprising from 10,000 to 20,000 acres of land, nearly every one is acting on the renting principle; and there is not the slightest interference with the negroes. In other portions of the country the same system is being carried on, and I do not know that there is any interference with the negroes; I know there is not. We rent to them because we think it is the best system of planting.

*Question.* As the great body of the people in your neighborhood have their lands rented out to negroes, would they not consider any interference with the negroes as detrimental to their interest?

*Answer.* Decidedly so; and they would protect the negro. I will mention a little circumstance that occurred on my plantation; I think it was last fall. The negroes on my plantation were drilling. It was about the time that Governor Alcorn's negro militia bill was passed, or when he was about to put it into effect; he sent negro aids about through the country to see about organizing the negroes into companies. Some of my negroes got to drilling on the place at night. I was told by some of my neighbors that they were there; that they were gathering the negroes from other plantations and were drilling at night. I ordered them to stop it, upon the principle that they had no right to be mustering upon the plantation; that when they got ready and organized companies they must do like other people did; but I did not want them to be organizing into a militia company on my plantation, and I determined that they should not do it. They stopped it. That was all that was said. I greatly prefer the renting system and get along very well with it. The negro likes it better, and I like it better. We have a few negroes there who rent considerable farms.

*Question.* This man Taliaferro speaks of the negroes in your county being very largely in the majority, and he says that a very large majority of them vote the republican ticket. I read from his testimony:

"*Question.* How many colored men in your county vote the democratic ticket?

"*Answer.* I do not suppose that over fifteen or twenty voted it at the last election.

"*Question.* Is that as many as you think would vote the democratic ticket if every man was at liberty to vote just as he pleased?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir."

What do you know in respect to that matter?

*Answer.* I am unable to speak positively on that point. My opinion is that a larger number of negroes will hereafter vote the democratic ticket than have ever done so before, because I think that in a great many cases they are becoming very thoroughly disgusted with the carpet-baggers—just as much so as the southern white men in many cases. I believe more of them will vote the democratic ticket than have ever done it before.

*Question.* Do you know whether there has been any attempt made to control the negroes—I mean by these Leagues?

*Answer.* Not that I know of. I have heard some negroes say that they were afraid to join the democratic party.

*Question.* Whom were they afraid of?

*Answer.* They were afraid of the Loyal Leagues. They felt that they were compelled to go as the League said. I recollect that in the case I referred to some of the negroes said, "We are bound to go," meaning that they were bound to go to these meetings, &c. One negro who had belonged to me was the president of one of the Loyal Leagues. They turned him out, I believe. He collected some $500, and left.

*Question.* Do you think anybody in your county would believe this man Taliaferro on his oath?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think there is a man in the county who would do it. They might have done it previous to his statements here, which they know to be base lies. He stood very low in our county. He lived for a while with an old cousin of his, a planter, who turned him off. Then he went to work for a man on the plantation that, as appears in his testimony, he claims as his own. He worked quite industriously that year.

*Question.* He was asked whether he thought it would be safe for him to go back to

hat county, and he said, "I am going back; I suppose I shall run some risk; but my nterests lie there, and I am going back." Has he gone back there?

*Answer.* No, sir, not to my knowledge; and I do not think he is going back.

*Question.* He was asked in his examination, "How many negroes have you on your plantation?" and he answered, "Forty-two, I believe, all told."

*Answer.* Well, I think there were eight or ten—certainly not over twelve. It was a very small place. I think Squire Wootten, as we call him, who was the man who employed him, worked about eight hands.

*Question.* There were eight hands, then, besides himself?

*Answer.* Well, eight hands, perhaps, with himself. The number was not less than eight and not exceeding fifteen altogether. There was a mixture of white and black. Occasionally Wootten would employ four or five hands for a few days, and then turn them off; but he had eight or ten regular hands. I think he made about twenty-five bales of cotton—twenty or twenty-five; and this fellow Taliaferro worked for a share, just like the negroes did.

*Question.* I read again from Taliaferro's testimony, page 241:

"*Question.* How did you happen to be summoned to Oxford before the grand jury?

"*Answer.* I think our deputy sheriff, Colonel Simeon Orr, or Major Whitfield, of Columbus, had me summoned.

"*Question.* Did they know anything in regard to your knowledge of the operations of this order; had you communicated your information to them?

"*Answer.* I had spoken to Whitfield about it. He and I were intimate. He was summoned to Oxford at the same time I was, or just ahead of me."

Who is this Whitfield?

*Answer.* He is Major H. B. Whitfield, who has been summoned before this committee, and is now in this city. He is from the county of Lowndes, and is a son of old Ex-Governor Whitfield, of Mississippi. He is a very clever, respectable gentleman. He was once my partner in business, and is now my personal friend.

*Question.* Do you think that Major Whitfield is intimate with this man Taliaferro?

*Answer.* No, sir; I am satisfied he is not. He may possibly have met him in the streets of Oxford on that occasion, but he does not know him, I think. In fact, last night I was speaking to Major Whitfield of Taliaferro's having been here, and he said he had met him once. In what you have just read, Taliaferro says that Colonel Simeon Orr had him summoned before the grand jury. I know that is untrue. I am confident he was summoned through the parties who have made those arrests; that he went voluntarily to report at Jackson. His purpose, I believe, was to see if he could not make money out of this matter. He was in Oxford in disguise.

*Question.* He gives the names of members of the organization in his immediate neighborhood, which is also your neighborhood. The captain, he says, is Charles M. Doss. Do you know Mr. Doss?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I know him very well.

*Question.* Do you believe that statement of Taliaferro is true?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not believe that statement. Charles M. Doss is a planter. He is rather a wild man; I mean by that that he sometimes gets on a frolic; but he is esteemed a good and law-abiding citizen. I see Mr. Doss very often. He has never hinted or intimated to me that he belongs to any band. I think he would have no apprehension in mentioning such a circumstance to me.

*Question.* Taliaferro says that the first lieutenant was Benjamin Walker.

*Answer.* I know him. He is a hard-working farmer upon a small scale. I know that he seems to get along remarkably friendly with the negroes.

*Question.* He says, "The second lieutenant is Glover Triplet."

*Answer.* I suppose that is intended to refer to Glover Triplet. I do not know him. He is a pretty wealthy man—a hard-working old planter in that country—a close-fisted, stingy old fellow; and I do not believe he would belong to such a band, because I do not believe he would spend money enough to buy a disguise. He is the most parsimonious man I know.

*Question.* Taliaferro gives the names of a number of members of this organization. He mentions William Doss.

*Answer.* He is a brother of Charles.

*Question.* He mentions—

"William Doss; his son, John Doss; his brother, James Doss; Jasper Featherston, Britton Moore, Joseph Hunter, Daniel Holbrooks, John and Joe McMorris, William I Stovall, Cornelius Foster, Van Hinton, Sam Magee, George Jones, James Burch, Scott Williams, Taylor Williams, Max Williams, Thomas Cockerell, Dent Cockerell, George Kirby, John Williams. There are others. Do you wish me to proceed?

"*Question.* Yes, sir.

"*Answer.* William Morton, Doctor Featherston, Neil Featherston, John Wootten, Frank Glass, DeWitt Farmer, Mr. Lucian Wilbanks. There are two gentlemen who formerly belonged to the order, but have withdrawn; they are Frank Harper and William A. May."

Then he goes on with another long list

*Answer.* I know most of those; several of those named I do not know; they reside right on the edge of Winston; they are rather obscure men—small farmers, some of them. I know William Stovall, and I would almost be willing to swear as a positive fact that he does not belong to any such order, for he is a merchant and is very popular with the negroes; he is renting a large amount of land to the negroes, or rather his father is, and he is his father's partner. They do a large trade with the negroes on the various plantations around them. I know that he has the confidence of that class of people. Does Taliaferro mention another lot?

*Question.* Yes, sir. He says: "I would name Madison Brooks, Harding Brooks, William Helm, John Kirksey, Cicero Kirksey, William McMorris, the father of the two boys I have named; William B. Jones, Richard Edwards, Thomas Cook, Rufus Farmer."

*Answer.* Madison Brooks is a brother-in-law of mine, a man fifty-six years of age, who lives a hundred miles from there. He has not been in that county but once in twelve months. He is a large manufacturer, owning a very large cotton mill at Enterprise, Mississippi. Since 1867 he has not resided in Noxubee, and has not been in the county except at court, and once about eighteen months or two years ago, when he was at my house. He merely dined with me one day. So that the statement is untrue, so far as he is concerned. Rufus Farmer I do not know; I know DeWitt Farmer, and I know Frank Glass.

*Question.* I read again from the evidence of Taliaferro:

"*Question.* Were those men in the company you spoke of that went to kill Koger?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* All of them?

"*Answer.* I do not know that all were present when they went to kill Koger; some, think, were not there.

"*Question.* Was the captain there?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* The two lieutenants?

"*Answer.* Only one of the two lieutenants; the regular lieutenant, Triplet, was not there: he lived in the far part of the county; Cockerell was acting as first lieutenant that night."

*Answer.* I do not believe a word of that.

*Question.* In another part of his testimony I find the following:

"*Question.* You say that old men are often invited to attend the meetings of the order. Is it or is it not the fact that the politics of these men as democrats has something to do with their being invited?

"*Answer.* Of course it has."

Did you hear of anything of that kind?

*Answer.* I never have. I know that there are a good many of those young men there that I associate with. Some of them are my neighbors. They counsel with me about a good many matters; I am looked upon as one of the "old men" of that neighborhood—at least one of the quiet men of the neighborhood; and I am a democrat. If any persons had been invited to those meetings, I think it more than probable that I would have been.

*Question.* Especially if democracy would get you the invitation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; if it was democracy that got the invitation, I am satisfied that I would get it. I have been solicited by a good many of those very parties—I recollect Doss in particular—to become the candidate in the county for the legislature; and I declined it. I merely mention that to show that they would have approached me in regard to this matter if it was a question of politics. I believe that the sum-total of Ku-Kluxism is this: That sometimes there have been, not organized, but disguised men going to places to correct what they conceived to be wrongs and errors in the administration of neighborhood affairs, as I stated in reference to this Brookshire case, and the Hinton case. Sometimes such cases arise from personal causes. I heard of a negro being killed in a county where it was stated there were Ku-Klux. Afterward the parties were taken up; and it was found that there was a man who wanted another man's wife, and he went in disguise to carry out his purpose. I believe that a great many wrongs are perpetrated under the name of Ku-Kluxism by various parties who are merely carrying out their malicious purposes.

*Question.* I will read another extract from Taliaferro's testimony:

"*Question.* What is the fact as to negro schools in that county?

"*Answer.* Well, we are just about to introduce them now—free schools.

"*Question.* You have had no free schools for negroes?

"*Answer.* No, sir.

"*Question.* Have you had any free schools for anybody?

"*Answer.* We have had no free schools at all until the last legislature passed a bill to that effect. There has been a white school opened at Brooksville, and there will be a negro school opened in my neighborhood in a very short time."

What do you say as to the statement that there have been no free schools in your county for negroes?

*Answer.* We have had free schools. Ever since the passage of that bill they have been in operation. There are free schools all over the entire county. There is a large free school near Brooksville. There are four or five negro teachers in the county. I think we have not less than from thirty to forty teachers in the county, teaching free schools—negro schools.

*Question.* Perhaps he was speaking of the time before he had left the county, some five months ago?

*Answer.* That was previous to the passage of the bill. That bill was not put in force until this year, but there were schools on every one of the large plantations previous to that; a large majority at least of the plantations.

*Question.* Do you know a man by the name of Chisolm?

*Answer.* I do not; I think I have heard of him; he lives at De Kalb, in Kemper County.

*Question.* What is his character?

*Answer.* Well, all I know of him is that he has made himself down there a very obnoxious officer by his officious and boisterous manner of conducting the affairs of his office, as well as his partiality, using all the severity he could toward the people of his county. That is about the character I have heard of him. I have never visited Kemper County.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* In what county do you reside?

*Answer.* In the county of Noxubee.

*Question.* Are you thoroughly acquainted with the different parts of that county?

*Answer.* I am generally very well acquainted throughout that county.

*Question.* Have you any acquaintance with the county of Lowndes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I resided in Lowndes. I was a merchant in the city of Columbus for twelve years.

*Question.* Are you acquainted in the county of Monroe?

*Answer.* I know a great many people in that county, and I may say that I am pretty familiar with the transactions in that county. Though there are a great many citizens whom I do not know, I may say that I am very well acquainted in Monroe.

*Question.* Are you acquainted in the county of Winston?

*Answer.* I know a good many persons in Winston.

*Question.* Do you frequently see them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; our county town, Macon, is one of their places of trade.

*Question.* You are a merchant in that town?

*Answer.* No, sir, I am not; but I see them there. I have an office there in connection with the insurance business, and I see them very frequently when I am at home.

*Question.* Are you acquainted in the county of Oktibbeha?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I know a great many people in Oktibbeha.

*Question.* Are you acquainted in Choctaw County?

*Answer.* Not much in Choctaw.

*Question.* In the other counties I have named are you well acquainted with the people, and with what has been going on there for the last six or eight months?

*Answer.* I do not know much of what has been going on in Oktibbeha during the last six or eight months. I know something of what has been going on generally in the other counties.

*Question.* Have you been in those other counties within six months?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not been in Monroe County in two years. I have had very little association with Monroe for the past two years, except meeting lawyers and other persons from that county.

*Question.* Could any very disorderly state of affairs exist there without your knowing or hearing something about it?

*Answer.* Well, I may have heard of it at the time the things happened. I heard of the difficulty about Mr. Huggins.

*Question.* The question I asked was whether any very disorderly state of affairs could have existed in any of those counties within the last six or eight months without your having heard something about it?

*Answer.* I suppose not.

*Question.* This Mr. Whitfield, of whom you spoke, is named H. B. Whitfield?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Henry B. Whitfield.

*Question.* Is he a man of good character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He is a son of an ex-governor of your State?

*Answer.* He is the son of old Governor Whitfield.

*Question.* Is he a lawyer?

*Answer.* He was a lawyer; he is now mayor of Columbus. He is not practicing law; he has not done so since the war; he has been a justice of the peace.

*Question.* Will any statements which he may make to this committee be such as may be entirely relied upon?

*Answer.* I should think so; I would believe anything he would tell me.

*Question.* Have you had as fair an opportunity of knowing the condition of things in those counties I have named as he has?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know. He has been mixing more with a certain class of people than I have. He may have found out a good many little items of knowledge in reference to neighborhood matters, which would not have reached me. He has been magistrate of his county. He was a candidate for the legislature on the democratic ticket in 1869. I think his opportunities of knowledge would be greater than mine.

*Question.* Does he reside in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; he resides in Lowndes county. He was a candidate for the legislature again last year on the republican ticket.

*Question.* In the county of Lowndes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he was defeated. He was then made a justice of the peace. He has since been appointed by Governor Alcorn mayor of the city of Columbus.

*Question.* Would he have any more knowledge of affairs in your county of Noxubee than you have?

*Answer.* I should suppose not. I am quite sure he has not been in Noxubee within twelve months. I think he was there about twelve months ago visiting me. He spent a day with me. Our families are intimate and visit each other.

*Question.* You say you do not believe that any body of Ku-Klux exists in any of the counties I have named?

*Answer.* I do not believe that, as an organized system, there is any body of Ku-Klux in those counties or in the State. As I stated, I believe that occasionally there have been disguised bodies of men in various neighborhoods to correct wrongs such as I have mentioned.

*Question.* You think there is no organization among them?

*Answer.* I think there is no organization among them as a system of Ku-Klux; I mean, as Taliaferro describes it, operating from one county to another, sending for one another, and all that. I have heard at various times of disguised bands; I have heard of them, for instance, near the Alabama line; on two or three occasions I think I have heard of some coming over the line; as to when or where I cannot tell you; but I am satisfied that there is no organized body of Ku-Klux in the State of Mississippi unless I am more deceived than I ever was in anything in my life.

*Question.* What do you mean by Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* As I understand these matters, I would define Ku-Klux as a body of disguised men going through the country perpetrating wrongs and violating the rights of persons.

*Question.* You mean organized?

*Answer.* Organized.

*Question.* A society?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: a society of men—an organized body of men who disguise themselves and act under orders of captains, lieutenants, &c. That is what I understand is meant by Ku-Klux.

*Question.* And with that definition, you think there are none in Mississippi?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. At the same time I do believe there have been little neighborhood matters arising on the spur of the moment to affect some parties that were then had in view.

*Question.* You mean cases where a few men casually got together for a specific purpose?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is what I believe constitutes Ku-Kluxism, so far as it exists. That is not what I understand to be the definition of Ku-Kluxism, but I believe it is all of Ku-Kluxism there is.

*Question.* And you believe that just as soon as the particular purpose, whatever it is, is accomplished, there is no more concert between those men?

*Answer.* That is my opinion.

*Question.* And you think there is nothing of the sort in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I do.

*Question.* You were asked in your examination-in-chief to state whether there had been any operations of the Ku-Klux in your neighborhood or around there, and you spoke of some colored persons who went masked to a meeting of a church?

*Answer.* That was in the town of Macon.

*Question.* In your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it at night?

*Answer.* It was at night. The negroes held a fair for some church purpose, and three or four negroes went there in disguise. Some of the attendants rushed up to them and were going to drive them out, when these parties pulled off their masks. They turned out to be negroes belonging to the town, who doubtless went there without any offensive purpose.

*Question.* Was that anything more than a mere piece ofplay?

*Answer.* I presume not. They said they were playing Ku-Klux. They were, however, arrested by the orders of some of the older brethren of the church.

*Question.* It was not a religious meeting that they were disturbing; it was a fair?

*Answer.* There was no disturbance of church worship; it was a fair.

*Question.* You said you had no personal knowledge of any disturbance in your town of that nature except that?

*Answer.* That is the only thing.

*Question.* You had no personal knowledge of that?

*Answer.* No, sir, I had no personal knowledge of it. I spoke of what I knew from parties who saw what was going on.

*Question.* You mean parties who told you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for, as I stated, I never saw a disguised person.

*Question.* You had no personal knowledge, in the correct sense, of that affair?

*Answer.* No, sir, I was not an eye-witness of it.

*Question.* You did not consider that a Ku-Klux operation according to your definition of Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* By no means; but I think a great many other occurrences of about the same character have been magnified into Ku-Klux outrages.

*Question.* When did that incident occur?

*Answer.* Last fall; as to the date I cannot tell it precisely, but it occurred before the session of the legislature; I remember that very well.

*Question.* Does the legislature commence its session in November?

*Answer.* No, sir; it commenced its session, I think, in December. I believe the 1st of January is the regular time, but I think they had a called meeting on the 1st of December.

*Question.* The next case you mentioned was where some parties went to wait upon a constable who had suffered a negro to escape or be taken from him a night or two before. Were they in disguise?

*Answer.* They were not in disguise.

*Question.* You would not consider that a Ku-Klux operation?

*Answer.* No; it was only a violation of law. I do not pretend to say that those negroes were Ku-Klux; but they went there to arrest the sheriff and they shot at him.

*Question.* That affair had no connection whatever with the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* The third case you mentioned was the case of T. N. Brookshire. Nothing occurred in that case except that the man was threatened?

*Answer.* Nothing in the world.

*Question.* And that was by a band of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They threatened him, and told him he must desist from doing that which they considered improper. He promised to do so. He is living there yet, or he was the last time I heard from him.

*Question.* He was accused of taking stolen property from negroes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But nothing was done to him, except that he received a bare threat?

*Answer.* There was nothing but a bare threat. The negro who brought up the basket of cotton at the time the men were there was not interfered with.

*Question.* Those were the three cases that you referred to in answer to a direct question as to your personal knowledge in regard to Ku-Klux operations?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Had you any personal knowledge of this visit of the negroes to the constable?

*Answer.* I had no personal knowledge of the fact, except that I have seen the negroes since they were arrested.

*Question.* You do not know whether they went to the constable's or not?

*Answer.* I think I do know that they went, if this is sufficient evidence of the fact: they were tried before a magistrate and convicted of having gone there; and they were put in chains and brought to the court-house to be tried before the circuit court. The proof was made before the magistrate.

*Question.* You did not hear the evidence?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Then you have no personal knowledge of the facts?

*Answer.* I only know that it is a fact, though I was not present.

*Question.* You mean that it was a fact if the witnesses testifying to it told the truth?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But you do not know the fact of your own personal knowledge? You could not testify to it?

*Answer.* I could not swear that any particular negro was there, because I was not there myself.

*Question.* Could you swear of your own personal knowledge that such an occurrence took place?

*Answer.* Well, I think I could upon the same principle that I could swear that there lived such a man as Mr. Lincoln; I could swear it upon the evidence of others. I know that this fact did occur, or else these parties would not have been arrested.

*Question.* You think that the bare fact of their arrest is proof positive that the transaction did take place?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; their being arrested and convicted before the magistrate and bound over to appear at court.

*Question.* They have not been tried—only held to appear?

*Answer.* You see we have a magistrate's court, before which the witnesses were examined to see whether these parties should be committed. There were thirty or forty, or perhaps fifty, brought up, and they convicted, I think, eighteen.

*Question.* That was not a trial, but an investigation; they were held to be tried at court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are to be tried at court.

*Question.* Has any bill of indictment been found against them in the courts?

*Answer.* Well, the court is now in session; I cannot say whether a bill of indictment has been found, because it may have occurred since I left home.

*Question.* You think that the fact that these men were arrested, examined before a magistrate, and held to appear at court is proof positive that the transaction did take place?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. And I do know that Bridges ran away. I did not see him running; but I know he has left home.

*Question.* Bridges was the constable?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* There have been some fifteen or twenty parties arrested around there for being engaged in Ku-Klux outrages, murders, &c.; they, too, have been held for their appearance at court?

*Answer.* I do not think any have been arrested from that portion of the county.

*Question.* Well, from somewhere else?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do know that they have been arrested.

*Question.* And you know they were bound over to appear at court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you not know that bills of indictment were found against them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; bills were found at the court at Oxford; and the parties have been bound over.

*Question.* Is that proof positive that the crimes with which they are charged were committed?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think it is proof positive that they committed the crimes charged; but it is proof positive of the fact that there was testimony against them, and that they were arrested. I do not mean to say any one of those negroes shot at Bridges or anything of that sort. But from the fact of their being arrested and held by the magistrate, he must have had proof that they were there. And I suppose that parties have proof that these men indicted at Oxford are Ku-Klux, or they think they have. The men are bound over to be tried hereafter. I do not think there have been any arrests of Ku-Klux in that particular section.

*Question.* Does it require any more proof against your citizens than citizens anywhere else?

*Answer.* Not at all; the same law tries all.

*Question.* I observed that you started out by stating the three cases I have referred to—that of the two or three colored men who went to the fair with disguises on their faces, and who, when approached, took off their masks; the case of the negroes and this constable; and the case where Mr. Brookshire was threatened. Did you ever hear of the killing of a man named Dick Malone?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I mentioned that case, I think.

*Question.* You may have done so afterward.

*Answer.* I never had heard of that until Mr. Whitfield told me of it since I have been here. That brought the matter to my mind. It occurred about eight months ago. It had escaped my attention when I first spoke.

*Question.* How far from you was Dick Malone killed?

*Answer.* About eight miles. At that time I was absent from home. I was not there during the month of November. Mr. Whitfield was trying to bring the matter to my mind last night. I told him I was absent at that time. I know nothing of the circumstances. I heard that Malone was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear that it was done by a band of disguised man at night?

*Answer.* That was what Mr. Whitfield told me yesterday. I had forgotten the circumstances.

*Question.* Had you not heard of it before you heard it from Mr Whitfield?

*Answer.* Since I have been reminded of it, I recollect that I had heard it; and I mentioned having heard it.

*Question.* Did you not hear of it as being done by a band of disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I say that I heard of it in that way.

*Question.* When did it occur?

*Answer.* Last November, so far as I know. I was absent from home at the time.

*Question.* That incident of the masked negroes going to the colored fair was also last November, was it not?

*Answer.* Well, it was during the fall; I cannot name the month.

*Question.* How is it that the little incident of a few masked men or boys going to a fair impressed your mind so strongly, while you had forgotten the circumstance of the murder of a man by men in disguise?

*Answer.* I will tell you how the incident of those masked negroes came to impress my mind so strongly. I happened to be in town the next day, and they were at that time talking a good deal in the legislature about Ku-Klux, and this thing was brought up. I do not know that I would have remembered it but for the fact that I happened to be at Macon at the time. I know that in the legislature they were speaking of Ku-Klux, and this matter was brought up by a member in debate. He said, jocularly, to old man Steward, that his son had been a Ku-Klux. Old man Steward was very violent on the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Is the murder of colored men by persons in disguise so common, or esteemed so light a thing in your community, that such a murder, within eight miles of you, escapes your recollection so quickly?

*Answer.* Well, I must confess that I do not recollect anything about it. Such affairs are not very common; but I was absent at the time it occurred.

*Question.* Does the murder of a man in your community make a decided impression on the minds of the people, or are such things so common that they do not make much impression?

*Answer.* No, sir, murders do not very often occur. I have heard of negroes being killed, and I have heard of white persons being killed, without knowing the circumstances of the matter.

*Question.* Did you hear of Isham Lowry being whipped?

*Answer.* I do not remember any such case; it may have occurred, but I do not know anything about it.

*Question.* Do you recollect hearing that a colored man was whipped the same night that Dick Malone was killed, and at the same house?

*Answer.* No; I do not, except from what Mr. Whitfield stated to me last evening. That was the first information I had of it. Indeed, I had forgotten all about the Malone case until he mentioned it to me. Then I remembered such a fact having occurred.

*Question.* Did he state to you that Isham Lowry was attacked at the same house and whipped, and that Malone ran out into the crowd?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Mr. Whitfield was detailing the circumstances last evening. He said that the reason he was familiar with the facts was, that the case happened on a plantation belonging to an aunt of his.

*Question.* It was within eight miles of you, however?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, about eight or nine miles.

*Question.* You heard nothing of this band of men being engaged in whipping Lowry at the time Malone went out?

*Answer.* No; I did not until Mr. Whitfield mentioned it to me last night. If I had heard it I had forgotten it. I do not think I heard it.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the whipping of a man named Harston, on George Harston's place, near the line between Noxubee and Lowndes?

*Answer.* I recollect something about that; that some man was whipped there. That, I think, happened in the county of Lowndes. I do not remember any of the circumstances, and I do not remember whether it was said to have been done by disguised men or not. I recollect hearing something said about some parties going there to see Mr. Harston in reference to some matter—I forget now what it was. I really do not remember anything about that case.

*Question.* How far do you live from Cooksville?

*Answer.* Thirty miles. I never have been to Cooksville.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of two or three men being killed in the neighborhood of Cooksville?

*Answer.* I do not recollect. If they were killed, I have no doubt I heard of it at the time.

*Question.* Have you heard of two or more men being killed in the neighborhood of Cooksville by bands of men in disguise within the last year?

*Answer.* I do not remember.

*Question.* You do not remember to have heard of it at all?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* How long ago do you think you may have heard of the whipping of the man on George Harston's place?

*Answer.* I think it was last fall that I heard some parties went there and whipped some negro. I do not even know the name of the negro.

*Question.* There is a place in your county called Sugar Lock, is there not?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is a depot on the Mobile and Ohio Railroad.
*Question.* How far is that from you?
*Answer.* Twenty-odd miles.
*Question.* Are you acquainted with people in that locality?
*Answer.* I know some of them. I have been to Sugar Lock twice in twelve months. I was there not long ago.
*Question.* You occasionally see people from that locality?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I very frequently see persons from that locality at Macon, the county seat.
*Question.* Have you heard of two persons being killed near Sugar Lock within the last year?
*Answer.* I have heard of one being killed there, and that was the case I mentioned of the negro "Bully Jack."
*Question.* Did you hear he was killed by men in disguise?
*Answer.* I think so from my recollection. I believe I heard that some parties went there in disguise.
*Question.* When did that occur?
*Answer.* That must have occurred over twelve months ago—certainly last year.
*Question.* Do you recollect hearing of any other persons being killed there or about there by men in disguise?
*Answer.* I do not; if I did hear of any others the circumstance has escaped my recollection.
*Question.* How far do you live from Brooksville?
*Answer.* Within a mile and a quarter.
*Question.* Have you heard of any persons being whipped west of Brooksville?
*Answer.* I do not remember any case.
*Question.* I do not ask whether you know of the case of your own knowledge, but have you heard of any such case?
*Answer.* I do not recollect having heard of any.
*Question.* You do not recollect hearing of any person being whipped to the west of Brooksville?
*Answer.* That is the country where the Malone plantation is. I have heard of whipping there. There was the Hinton case, to which I referred, where a negro woman was whipped.
*Question.* You have heard of no other case?
*Answer.* None that I remember.
*Question.* Do you think it probable that twelve or fifteen persons could have been whipped there within the last twelve months by men in disguise without your hearing of it?
*Answer.* I do not think it probable. Such circumstances might occasionally occur without my knowledge from the fact that I am a great deal away from home, sometimes a month at a time. During my absence something of the sort might occur and not be mentioned, though I am very apt to inquire about matters.
*Question.* You mix a great deal with the people?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Would the whipping of a colored man by persons in disguise be considered so trivial a matter that persons would not be apt to mention it to you?
*Answer.* I hardly think so, particularly if it were done by persons in disguise. I think it would be very likely to be mentioned.
*Question.* So that if such a thing occurred you would be likely to hear of it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so. I may have heard of some instance which I do not remember; I may have heard of some whippings which I cannot call to mind—which may not have impressed themselves upon my recollection.
*Question.* Was Mr. Huggins whipped in your county?
*Answer.* No, sir; in the county of Monroe.
*Question.* That was one of the counties to which I was calling your attention. Did you hear of the whipping of Mr. Huggins?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* When did that occur?
*Answer.* I happened to be in Jackson, Mississippi, at the time it occurred. It was in the month of February or March, I think.
*Question.* Is he said to have been whipped by a band of men in disguise?
*Answer.* That is what has been reported.
*Question.* Do you not consider that a more serious affair than the appearance of four or five colored men masked at a fair?
*Answer.* O, yes, sir; much more so.
*Question.* Was not Mr. Huggins a United States officer?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You did not hear it was negroes who whipped him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think he was whipped by negroes.

*Question.* Did you hear he was pretty badly whipped?

*Answer.* I heard he was pretty badly whipped.

*Question.* Have you heard of men frequently riding in disguise, within the last eight or ten months, in any of those counties to which I have called your attention?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I mentioned to you that I had heard of disguised bodies of men on some occasions; and I stated my belief that they were neighborhood men, without any regular organization.

*Question.* Have you heard of those ridings taking place frequently?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have mentioned three or four cases.

*Question.* Three or four cases in several months would hardly justify you in saying that such things took place frequently. You may have heard of cases without being able to designate them precisely. Have you heard that such things have occurred frequently, apart from the specific cases you have mentioned?

*Answer.* All the cases I have heard of would not, I reckon, amount to more than six or eight.

*Question.* You mean in all this range of counties?

*Answer.* From what I have heard. I have very often heard that there were bands of Ku-Klux in this county or in that county; that is all I would hear; but then I would not believe it very often when I did hear it, because they had done nothing. And, as I stated, I believe that sometimes such things are merely the indiscretions of boys or youth, like that affair at the church, or like the case of the boys who mentioned to me that they had for a frolic visited in disguise some negro prayer-meeting.

*Question.* You would not think that a crowd of disguised boys on a frolic killed Malone?

*Answer.* I should say not by any means.

*Question.* Or that such a crowd killed the negro near Sugar Lock?

*Answer.* No, sir; I should not say they were boys.

*Question.* Or that whipped Huggins?

*Answer.* No, sir; I should say they were men, and I should say they were white men.

*Question.* To go back to the case of this constable: you said that the negro stole a horse from a man named Charles Moore?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How far was that from you?

*Answer.* About fifteen miles.

*Question.* You do not mean to state positively that the negro stole the horse?

*Answer.* I simply state that I happened to see Mr. Moore afterwards, and he said this negro had stolen his horse, and that he had captured the horse again. The negro was tried and bound over by the magistrate to appear at court. The testimony before the magistrate convicted him sufficiently to carry him to court.

*Question.* That is, the testimony was strong enough to induce the magistrate to bind the negro over to answer?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, to bind him to appear at court.

*Question.* You would not take that as proof positive that the negro stole the horse?

*Answer.* That had to be tested at the court-house; but the evidence was sufficient for the magistrate to bind him over, or he would have discharged him.

*Question.* The negro was put in charge of a constable named Bridges?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And was put in chains?

*Answer.* He was fastened with a trace-chain and a little padlock. Bridges went to bed intending to take the negro to the jail the next day.

*Question.* Where did he put him?

*Answer.* He put him in a cabin near his house, in an out-building.

*Question.* Was there anybody in the cabin besides the negro?

*Answer.* Nobody that I know of; I do not think there was anybody else there.

*Question.* Was the cabin a very secure one?

*Answer.* I cannot tell; I never saw it and never heard it described.

*Question.* Bridges put the negro in the cabin by himself?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And left him there and went to his house to sleep?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The house was near by. It was said that the cabin was in the yard right by the house.

*Question.* Was that proper conduct for an officer having charge of a prisoner to be taken to jail?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir. Those are the facts of the case.

*Question.* You know whether that is the proper way for an officer to guard a prisoner?

*Answer.* I think it would have been better for the constable to have staid with him or taken him to jail that night; that is what he ought to have done.

*Question.* Did you ever before know an officer in charge of a prisoner, on his way to jail, to dispose of him in that way?

*Answer.* I do not remember any case like that. I have known cases very often where prisoners have not been carried to jail immediately on their conviction.

*Question.* Did you ever know of one being put in an out-of-the-way out-house, chained, and left there over-night by the officer having him in charge?

*Answer.* I have known prisoners to be chained in adjoining rooms to where the party having them in charge would be. This cabin was described as being immediately up to the house. I do not know whether it is three steps or ten steps distant from the house.

*Question.* Did you hear that this negro was handcuffed?

*Answer.* I do not think he was; I do not know, though.

*Question.* Did you hear how the chain was put upon him?

*Answer.* I think it was put upon his leg; but I do not know that.

*Question.* You do not know whether his hands were free?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* Suppose his hands were left free, and he was chained, and fastened simply with a padlock, in an out-of-the-way house; was that any way to secure him?

*Answer.* I should say not. I am quite sure he was not handcuffed, for the reason that I do not suppose a magistrate in a remote part of the county like that had a handcuff. I do not suppose he was handcuffed, or tied except by means of this chain.

*Question.* Do you think that any man of ordinary intelligence would have supposed that the negro, fastened in that way, would have been secure?

*Answer.* Well, I have known them sometimes to turn prisoners loose upon the promise that they would remain and go with them.

*Question.* That was not the case here, because the prisoner was chained?

*Answer.* The constable may have thought the man was secure.

*Question.* Did you ever talk to Mr. Bridges about it?

*Answer.* Mr. Bridges left the county. They ran him off. According to the statements made he left that night and went into Alabama; his house is near the Alabama line.

*Question.* How long ago did that affair occur?

*Answer.* It must have been some time in June; that is my impression.

*Answer.* And Mr. Bridges has not returned since?

*Answer.* I do not know. I left home the 12th of July.

*Question.* Have you talked with him?

*Answer.* I have never seen him since. I did not know he was a magistrate till this occurrence took place.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that the tracks of a good many men and horses were seen around that cabin that night?

*Answer.* I never did.

*Question.* Did you ever hear it intimated in that community that Mr. Bridges was a member of the Ku-Klux Klan or any other secret organization?

*Answer.* I never have.

*Question.* Is he a man of fair sense and judgment?

*Answer.* Well, I know very little about him; but what little I do know is not very favorable to him. I never saw him but once or twice in my life. He is looked upon as a very good-for-nothing sort of a character. I do not mean that he is considered deficient in integrity or honesty, but that he is a lazy sort of man. I know that he does not provide for himself very well.

*Question.* Is he a democrat?

*Answer.* I do not know; I presume he is. In fact, I may say positively he is.

*Question.* Do you recollect that there was a note found the next morning at that cabin saying, in substance, "Don't be alarmed; we've got him?"

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of that. I merely heard that a negro had been arrested for stealing Moore's horse; that he was examined before a magistrate, and delivered to the constable; that he was chained by the constable and confined in an out-house over night; that the next morning he was missing; and that the negroes went there to fire upon Bridges.

*Question.* This body of negroes went there several days afterward?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You did not hear that when Mr. Bridges went to the cabin the next morning he found the negro missing, but found in his place a note saying, "Don't be alarmed; we've got him?"

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of that.

*Question.* You never heard of his having found such a note?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never did.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that the negro escaped?

*Answer.* Well, I think he must have escaped; they could have found him if he had been killed. It is my impression the negro escaped. If I had heard of such a note as you mention and knew the incident to be true, my views would be different; my impression was simply that the negro had actually gotten away. I never heard anything to induce me to believe otherwise.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You have heard nothing of him since?
*Answer.* Nor have I heard a word of him since.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you hear that a negro was found drowned in that vicinity shortly after ward?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Who found him?
*Answer.* He was found in the river; and it was said that he was a negro who had been drowned from some steamboat. Whether such a negro was ever drowned from a steamboat I do not know; but I know that the statement was that some negro had been found there—that part of a carcass of a man had been discovered in the river, and it was said that some negro had been drowned from a steamboat some miles above there; and it was thought perhaps this was the negro. That is all I know in reference to that matter.
*Question.* Did not the family of the negro whom Mr. Bridges had had under arrest recognize the clothing upon this negro found in the river as that of the negro who had been under arrest?
*Answer.* Not that I know of.
*Question.* You never heard of that?
*Answer.* I never heard of it.
*Question.* Had you ever heard of a man's being drowned from a steamboat before you heard of the finding of this negro?
*Answer.* I never had.
*Question.* Did not the negroes turn out the next morning after the disappearance of this negro and make search for him?
*Answer.* If they did, I do not know it; they may have done it; I do not remember.
*Question.* How far was the river from the place where this negro was chained?
*Answer.* I should say about four miles.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You mean it is four miles from Mr. Bridges's place to the Tombigbee River?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; four miles, or a little less. Now that I reckon it, I do not think it is over three miles.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You say a body of negroes went to the house of Mr. Bridges?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And he fired upon them before they got to the house?
*Answer.* When he saw them coming in the yard, according to the statement made to me, he fired upon them; they shot some fifty or sixty shots at him; and he ran out of the back way, leaving his clothing. He was undressed at the time; he had been in bed.
*Question.* How many negroes did you hear were there?
*Answer.* I heard that there were some fifty or sixty. That was the statement that was made—that the negroes from the entire neighborhood went there upon the presumption on their part that this negro had been killed.
*Question.* And they went there to see about it?
*Answer.* They went there to see Bridges, and tell him he had to produce that negro, or state what he had done with him; and they shot at Bridges.
*Question.* Who made that statement to you?
*Answer.* I cannot tell you; I think I heard it from two or three parties. It was a matter of conversation with several parties on my return home. I was not at home at the time.
*Question.* You heard that there were some fifty or sixty negroes who went there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my impression of the number that I heard stated.
*Question.* You did not hear that they were in disguise?
*Answer.* No, sir; my impression is they were not in disguise.
*Question.* How many were arrested?
*Answer.* I do not know how many were arrested, but I think there were eighteen o twenty bound over by the magistrate.
*Question.* Are they still in jail?
*Answer.* They were all in jail when I left home. I have been informed since I left home that they have been taken out under bonds to appear at court.
*Question.* As to these four colored boys who went to church with masks on——
*Answer.* I did not say four; I did not know how many there were.
*Question.* Whatever the number, they were arrested?
*Answer.* I think they were arrested; but they were turned loose immediately upon the facts appearing.
*Question.* Both these arrests were made by the State authorities?

*Answer.* By the State authorities, I think. No, it is possible that the other arrest was made by the town authorities.

*Question.* At any rate, they were not arrested by the United States officers?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You spoke of having heard of the killing of Malone, and some whippings and other occurrences. Have you heard of any white man being arrested by the State authorities for going in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir, not by the State authorities; I do not remember a single case.

*Question.* Notwithstanding all the acts of Ku-Kluxism you have detailed—the visit to Mr. Brookshire, the whipping of Harston, the killing of a negro near Sugar Lock, the killing of Malone, and others—notwithstanding the commission of all these acts by men in disguise, you have never heard of a white man arrested by the State authorities for going in disguise and committing any of those acts?

*Answer.* No, sir, I have never heard of one being detected or marked out, and certainly not of one being arrested. I have never heard of an arrest of such parties.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of any negroes going about in bands committing depredations in disguise, other than the two cases you have named?

*Answer.* I have not.

*Question.* In both those cases the negroes were promptly arrested?

*Answer.* In one case they were promptly arrested, and were in disguise. In the case of the negroes who went out to shoot Bridges, they were arrested, but they were not in disguise; that is my information about the matter.

*Question.* Your people felt that it was a considerable degree of oppression for United States authorities to come and arrest these men accused of killing Malone and of Ku-Kluxing around there; did they not?

*Answer.* Well, no, sir; the people do not look upon it in that way. The matter of complaint is that United States troops should have been brought there to arrest the parties, when they would have appeared in obedience to ordinary process.

*Question.* How many troops were carried there?

*Answer.* There were eighteen or twenty. I do not know exactly how many they carried to make those arrests, because I was not there on that day. I suppose some of the troops were left in Macon; I reckon they did not take over eight or ten.

*Question.* They were nothing more than a posse of the marshal?

*Answer.* They were a marshal's posse; that is what they were.

*Question.* Is Judge Orr, of your circuit, a brother of Hon. James L. Orr, of South Carolina?

*Answer.* He is.

*Question.* Is he an able lawyer?

*Answer.* He is.

*Question.* Is he especially rigid in the enforcement of the criminal law?

*Answer.* He is looked upon with terror in the discharge of his duties as a judge. He is looked upon as extremely strict in the enforcement of the laws—more so than any judge we have had for a very long time.

*Question.* Is there any reason, then, why the law should be taken into the hands of the citizens in that section of the country, with reference to these minor offenses that you speak of, when you have such a judge to administer the law?

*Answer.* Well, I should say that there should be none; that the law is able to vindicate itself. Judge Orr is a good judge. I believe he is not partial. He is very rigid in the execution of the law, whether the parties be white or black. I believe he would punish one, or do justice to one as quickly as to the other.

*Question.* Do you know a man by the name of Charles M. Doss?

*Answer.* I do, sir. You remember I referred to him.

*Question.* Did you state his character?

*Answer.* I did state his character. I remarked that he was a little wild—gets into frolics occasionally, but is a citizen and planter who is esteemed a very clever, kind hearted man, although he does get on a spree now and then.

*Question.* Is he a man of violence?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know of any violence he has ever committed. I recollect that on one occasion he came into court very drunk and kicked up quite a disturbance. When he has been drinking I think he is disposed to be violent and irrational.

*Question.* Did you ever hear him charged with being captain of this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* I never heard it. I have heard him speak of the Ku-Klux and heard him say he did not believe there was any body of that sort. If there is any regular organized system, I would as soon suppose he would belong to it as anybody. But, as I stated before, I do not believe there is any such thing.

*Question.* Were you in court at the time he had the difficulty there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was in court at the time the affair occurred. In fact, I was ordered on that occasion to go and take him.

*Question.* After it occurred?

*Answer.* At the time it occurred. I happened to be in the court-house. Doss came into the court-room while a lawyer was speaking upon a murder case. The sheriff had ordered the front door of the court-room to be kept shut. Doss started to go out by that door, when he was told he could not.

*Question.* There had been no demonstration of a disorderly character by him up to that time?

*Answer.* No, sir, nothing up to that time. He remarked that he "would be damned if he did not go out that way." I think the officer then told him that he would arrest him, when Doss drew his pistol. He pretty well broke up the court. He was intoxicated at the time, and said afterward that he did not know what he was doing. He apologized to the court.

*Question.* Was he on trial?

*Answer.* I think he went before the court and pleaded guilty to the charge of disorderly conduct and was punished by a fine.

*Question.* Was he on trial at the time that he made the disturbance?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was only a spectator in the court, just as I happened to be on that occasion.

*Question.* Was the man on trial charged with murdering a negro?

*Answer.* It was the case of a man named Brantley, who was murdered at Sugar Lock; a man named Eskridge was accused of being the murderer. It is a long story, but there was no negro mixed up in the trial at all.

*Question.* Was it alleged that the man who was killed at Sugar Lock was killed by a band of men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir; the man who killed him did it in the dark. He was not in disguise: he had a blanket over his shoulder; it was a cold night. This man Eskridge was pretty well ascertained to be the party; but he has broken jail and run away.

*Question.* Did Mr. Doss, on the occasion of that trial, attack the court with his pistol?

*Answer.* No, sir, he did not attack the court at all. He pulled out his pistol and said he would not be taken. He did not attack the court. The three magistrates who were holding the court—it was not the circuit court—ordered the sheriff to take him. The sheriff called upon me, among others indiscriminately, to go up and take him. The sheriff seemed to be rather afraid to undertake it alone; he was not a cowardly man, but he wanted assistance. Doss was secured, and it being seen that he was deranged from the influence of liquor he was taken into an adjoining room. When he got sober he came back and arranged it with the court somehow; I do not know how, but I know it was adjusted. He made an apology. I do not think he has drank anything since then; I think he made a promise at that time that he would not.

*Question.* Did he go upon the bench and drive the magistrates off?

*Answer.* No, sir. The magistrates were sitting up in a sort of pulpit. The clerk's desk was in front and he got up on that.

*Question.* He got on top of the clerk's desk?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How near did that bring him to the magistrates?

*Answer.* Six, or eight, or ten feet.

*Question.* Did he present his pistol at the magistrates on the bench?

*Answer.* No, sir, he did not. I do not think he drew his pistol exactly; I think he put his hand on his pistol; I do not think he got his pistol out, but he had his hand on it ready to draw it.

*Question.* Did he address himself to the magistrates on the bench?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Why did they leave the bench?

*Answer.* They ordered him to be arrested. There was quite a rush in the room; there seemed to be confusion. The officers were ordered to take him, and he said he would not be taken. One of the magistrates, a personal friend of his, got down to take him; and really it was he who carried him out of the court-room.

*Question.* Did the crowd hesitate to take hold of him?

*Answer.* No, sir; the crowd immediately obeyed the magistrate, I among the rest.

*Question.* You say he has not the reputation generally of being a man of turbulent and violent character?

*Answer.* No, sir; I cannot say that he is a man of turbulent and violent character, except when drinking. At other times he is a kind-hearted man.

*Question.* Do you know a man in the county of Winston named Jack Triplet?

*Answer.* I have heard of such a man; I do not know him; I know very little of him. I stated just now that Glover Triplet was a man of wealth. He is a brother of Jack Triplet, and it was Jack Triplet whom I meant to refer to as a man of wealth; at the moment I got the two persons confused.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of Jack Triplet being accused of being captain of any band of men?

*Answer.* No, sir; I will give you my word I never heard who were the officers who commanded the Ku-Klux, or that there was any such body until these arrests were made.

*Question.* Did you never hear that he killed a negro who lived with him?

*Answer.* I never did until the arrests were made. I then heard the charge that was brought against him. I had never heard of it until that period.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of an outrage committed on a woman by the name of Tripley Ann Tackett?

*Answer.* I do not know that I have; I do not recollect that I ever heard the name before.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of Mr. McIlhenny being engaged in a raid upon some woman, in which he lost his hat?

*Answer.* I never did. I do not know him; probably he resides in Winston; and there is a portion of that county I have very seldom been in.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of any school-houses being burned in any of the counties to which I called your attention?

*Answer.* I do not know of any school-houses being burned at all, except a school-house that was burned near Brooksville, and that was last year.

*Question.* Is that the only school-house you have heard of being burned in any of the counties I have called your attention to?

*Answer.* I suppose I have heard of others being burned, but I could not designate in what county they were said to have been burned.

*Question.* Did you hear that they were burned by men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never did. I merely heard that school-houses had been destroyed in some portions of the country.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you.

*Question.* Have you heard of as many as seven being burned?

*Answer.* I do not know; I should say not; but there may have been more. I have only heard that parties were burning school-houses, and perhaps that they had been burned in the county of Winston. I think what little information I have on that subject related to cases occurring in Winston County.

*Question.* Did you hear that they had burned three churches?

*Answer.* I never heard of their burning a church.

*Question.* Did you never hear of a church being burned in the county of Winston?

*Answer.* Never.

*Question.* Were these school-houses, the burning of which you heard of, said to be school-houses used by colored people?

*Answer.* I do not know; I presume they were colored school-houses.

*Question.* You did not hear that they were burned by bands of men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have there been any school-houses burned in your county, so far as you have heard?

*Answer.* I have never heard of one school-house in our county being burned, except the one that I referred to just now, which was burned last year; that was occupied as a negro school. Nobody has ever found out who did it; but it was thought to be a matter of hatred towards a certain party who had purchased it who was a citizen of our county and a democrat; he had bought it, and was going to use it for some purpose—I have forgotten what. I think it may be he was going to sell it to the school-board, under the new law, as one of the county school-houses. It was a very inferior, old building, worth, I suppose, about $100.

*Question.* Did you hear that that was burned by men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard who burned it; I do not think it was burned by men in disguise; but it has never been known who did burn it.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of any whippings, in the county of Winston, by persons in disguise?

*Answer.* I never have heard of any whippings there; but they may have occurred. I have heard of some disturbances there occasionally.

*Question.* I mean within the last eight or ten months?

*Answer.* I have heard of some disturbances in Winston County; I heard that the citizens of that county were very much enraged in reference to this school bill. There are very few negroes in Winston; that is termed a "poor man's county." I believe the whites have a large majority of the population.

*Question.* Did you hear that the United States marshal and another man, about the time of these recent arrests in the county of Winston, were stopped on the road by men with arms in their hands?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not; and I do not believe it occurred, because if it had I would have heard of it. The troops had not been molested up to the time I left.

*Question.* I did not say that the troops were present; I asked whether you had heard that the marshal and another man had been stopped on the road by men who presented arms?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of it.

*Question.* You heard nothing of that kind at all?

*Answer.* Nothing at all.

*Question.* An extract from a newspaper was read to you in reference to Mr. Taliaferro; is that a democratic paper?

*Answer.* I think it is a democratic paper.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Do you know the name of it?

*Answer.* I believe it is the Selma Times. I never saw that extract before to-day. I did not bring it here. I have, however, an extract in reference to Taliaferro from the Mercury, a paper published in the town of Meridian, Mississippi.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Read that extract.

*Answer.* It is as follows:

"MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *July* 19, 1871.

"FRIEND HORN: In an article in your paper upon one Taliaferro you call him *captain*. He never was a captain in the confederate army; and he never owned land enough in this county to bury his carcass in. I know him well; and I tell you he is nothing more nor less than a d——d thief. He stole a mule from our friend James R———, of the law firm of J. & R., who, instead of sending him to the penitentiary, let him go. What a pity! Some time back he went to Jackson, and there made affidavits about Ku-Kluxing, and then fled to Baltimore. From Baltimore he was brought back by one of United States deputy marshals and taken to Oxford, to practice his art of swearing there before a United States circuit court grand jury. At this place he was so completely disguised that those who had known him best failed to recognize him; but our circuit clerk, with his keen eyes, detected him through his artificialities. Now that same infernal scoundrel Taliaferro wants to pocket that five thousand dollar reward that has been promised by the governor for catching and convicting a K. K. From his general character he is unworthy of being believed on oath. You know that such men as the Dorses, the Hintons, old citizens, could not be guilty of the atrocity of killing fifteen negroes within the year past, nor ever, as he has sworn. Let me tell you that there has not been so many as fifteen negroes killed in this county since the surrender, which can be verified by the coroner's books. So put down the celebrated Captain Taliaferro (or Toliver) a liar, a thief, a perjured villain, a loafer, and d——d scoundrel in general, and charge the same to account of, your friend, W."

"James R——," in this article, means James Rives; and "J. & R." mean Jarnagan & Rives.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Is that article from a democratic paper?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How long have you known Mr. Taliaferro?

*Answer.* For two or three years; I mean to say I have seen him, from time to time, during that period.

*Question.* So far as you have heard, were these charges contained in the article from the Selma paper brought against him before these Ku-Klux arrests?

*Answer.* Charges about what?

*Question.* As to his killing prisoners, &c.?

*Answer.* I never heard him speak of that. I have heard him make his boasts about what he did in the army; he made himself the hero of several stories.

*Question.* Did you hear that circumstance charged upon him before he was a witness here?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard any charge made against him relative to such matters as that; I never heard that matter discussed.

*Question.* Did you ever hear any of those charges contained in that article brought against him before he became a witness here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; because he committed this theft before he appeared here.

*Question.* Did you hear of that before his appearance here as a witness?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* You say that he was accused of committing this theft in April?

*Answer.* That is my recollection; I will not undertake to be precise as to the date; I believe it was in March or April.

*Question.* You said he left that country in December?

*Answer.* I said he left the neighborhood of Brooksville in December; that I did not remember having seen him after that. I reside on my plantation a part of the time, and Brooksville, which is the neighborhood where Taliaferro lived, is ten miles from Macon, where I have my place of business. I have not seen him about Brooksville since January last. I stated that I believed he had gone in the interior somewhere to stay. I believe it was in March or April that he took that mule.

*Question.* The mule was said to have been taken from a member of the bar?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a lawyer.

*Question.* Do you remember that Taliaferro made the matter all right with him, and that all proceedings were stopped?

*Answer.* I do not.

*Question.* You heard nothing of that?

*Answer.* I heard nothing of that. I think he ran away from the county when the mule was found. He had sold the mule. I heard Mr. Rives make this statement about it: That somebody told him that Taliaferro had ridden his mule down there to the livery-stable and sold it; Rives went and got the mule from the keeper of the stable, who had to give it up, and, of course, lost the money that he had paid for it. I do not know whether any effort was made to arrest Taliaferro; I think the fellow ran away; that is my impression.

*Question.* You do not think he was arrested?

*Answer.* I do not think he was arrested; I know he went away.

*Question.* Did you hear whether a warrant was gotten out for him at that time?

*Answer.* I do not believe there was any warrant gotten out at that time. As I said, I believe he ran away.

*Question.* You say the understanding is that the persons recently carried to Oxford were arrested upon the testimony of Taliaferro, and through his instrumentality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I so understand.

*Question.* All of them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* I understood you to say you thought Taliaferro went and volunteered as a witness for the purpose of obtaining the reward?

*Answer.* I said that was my belief about the matter.

*Question.* Is that the belief at Oxford?

*Answer.* That is the general impression at Oxford, and the general impression at home.

*Question.* In your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The general belief is that Taliaferro is deficient in character, and that he went there for the purpose of gaining these rewards.

*Question.* And that he volunteered at Oxford as a witness against these prisoners?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was in Jackson before the court, as I learned through Mr. Whitfield. I think it was in Jackson that Mr. Whitfield met him.

*Question.* What you have stated is the general impression in the community?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is the impression in that community that he volunteered his services to have these parties arrested.

*Question.* What means the statement in the extract which you brought with you and read just now——

*Answer.* I did not bring it with me; it was handed to me yesterday by a gentleman in this city.

*Question.* You brought it to the committee-room?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What means the statement in that article that Taliaferro was arrested by a United States marshal in Baltimore, and taken back to Oxford?

*Answer.* It seems he was arrested by the United States marshal, and brought back as a witness.

*Question.* That could not be so if he volunteered as a witness.

*Answer.* Well, I do not know about that.

*Question.* You said the general impression was that he had volunteered as a witness?

*Answer.* Well, we believe he volunteered; and it may be he had this thing done to cover up his action in the eyes of the community. We do not believe that Mr. Wissler and Mr. Reed were arrested except as a mere matter of form, to make it appear that they were acting under a compulsory order.

*Question.* Why did they want it to appear that they were acting under a compulsory order?

*Answer.* I suppose they did not want to appear to do willingly what they thought would be so repulsive to the people.

*Question.* They did it because they were afraid of the people there if they testified without being arrested?

*Answer.* They were officers of the people, and they wanted to continue in the favor of as many of them as they were in favor with.

*Question.* Would it be repulsive to the people there for any man to volunteer to give evidence against persons guilty of violations of the criminal law?

*Answer.* No, sir, it would not be; and every one of these persons arrested would, in my judgment, have gone with a one-armed sheriff to the place where they were required to answer.

*Question.* Why then were these men afraid to have it understood among the people that they volunteered to give testimony in these Ku-Klux cases?

*Answer.* Because they were going into the country to hunt up the parties.

*Question.* But Taliaferro did not go to hunt them up?

*Answer.* No, sir. Taliaferro, you see, was behind the scenes. Roberts, the clerk, says that he saw him in disguise at Oxford.

*Question.* Where did Mr. Roberts state that?

*Answer.* In Macon.

*Question.* Do you think that Mr. Taliaferro, or either of the other two witnesses who are said to have been arrested, had no fear of the Ku Klux if they testified against them?

*Answer.* I do not know about that. I would not be surprised if a man would feel some apprehensions in going into an interior country along with the United States troops to pick up men and take them from their homes. They might have felt some apprehension on that ground.

*Question.* You say that you understand that since you have been here a requisition has been made upon the governor of Virginia for the return of Mr. Taliaferro?

*Answer.* I have learned that since I have been here.

*Question.* Upon the charge of stealing the mule?

*Answer.* Upon the charge of this theft, the circumstances of which I have stated.

*Question.* That Mr. Taliaferro was in Oxford as a witness a few weeks ago?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear of any effort being made there to arrest him?

*Answer.* No, sir. As I stated before, it was not generally known that he was there. Parties from the county did not see him; and a great many persons did not believe he was there. But one man saw him there, and he recognized him in spite of a disguise.

*Question.* Had you ever heard of any movements by the authorities against Mr. Taliaferro in respect to this mule business until he became a witness in these cases?

*Answer.* No, sir. All the information I have about it is from this paper. I do not know whether he has been remanded.

*Question.* Is not Mr. Wissler a magistrate in your county?

*Answer.* He is.

*Question.* Did you say he was a deputy United States marshal?

*Answer.* No, sir; I said that Reed was a deputy United States marshal. Reed and Wissler were the two parties who went out with the United States troops from Macon.

*Question.* What Reed was that?

*Answer.* That was Reed the United States assessor of internal revenue. I understand that he has been appointed either temporarily or permanently deputy United States marshal, to serve writs, &c., in that county.

*Question.* You said that Mr. Wissler started to Washington?

*Answer.* That is what was said at home.

*Question.* And was arrested at Corinth on his way here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Arrested upon what charge?

*Answer.* Upon the charge of murder.

*Question.* How long ago was it said that the murder occurred?

*Answer.* About the 12th of July—last month. When I left home the 13th, the man was not dead. He died a few days afterward.

*Question.* You said something about the robbing of a man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he robbed the same man that he murdered; at least such is the allegation; and that is the man's dying testimony, as it has been reported to me.

*Question.* Do you recollect who reported it to you?

*Answer.* I have heard several persons speak of it. I heard it spoken of by a gentleman from Corinth named Lee. I heard him mention it casually on the railroad train, that the man was dying when he left home; that was the 13th or 14th of July.

*Question.* Did you understand that these parties who were arrested were arrested under a warrant from the United States commissioner at Oxford?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I understood he brought down a lot of blank warrants to fill them up as he thought proper.

*Question.* You heard that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the belief.

*Question.* Who stated that?

*Answer.* Everybody in town said so. Dr. Bevel told me that he believed this party had blank warrants. He was deputy marshal.

*Question.* Is Dr. Bevel a democrat?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a democrat.

*Question.* When you said that everybody in town believed it you did not mean to say that the colored people believed it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know whether they believed it or not. What I mean to say is that every one who referred to the matter at all mentioned that fact.

*Question.* Did you ever hear the fact referred to by others than democrats?

*Answer.* I do not remember that I did. I heard Major Smith say that he objected

very much to the troops being there; that he thought it was very unnecessary; that any arrests could have been made without the troops. I heard the sheriff say that he could have made all the arrests without the assistance of any troops.

*Question.* You spoke of a drunken sergeant being in command of those troops?

*Answer.* I did not see him drunk but once; in fact, that was the only time I saw him. He was then saying that he came there to make his men behave themselves, &c. Several of the soldiers were drunk, and the sergeant on that occasion had been drinking.

*Question.* Two of those troops were accused of robbing a negro of $8?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they were arrested by the mayor of the town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; upon the affidavit of the negro.

*Question.* Who was the mayor?

*Answer.* His name is Charles B. Ames; he is a republican.

*Question.* And the deputy marshal directed the release of one of the soldiers?

*Answer.* There were two soldiers concerned in the affair, but I think only one of them robbed the man. The deputy marshal directed the release of the man who committed the robbery. He was released and sent on to Oxford. He was sent on that night to Oxford with a bevy of those prisoners.

*Question.* Has he been indicted since?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* What was that officer's name?

*Answer.* I think his name is McMullin or McMillen. He was an officer sent down there from the court; he was the deputy who had come down with the troops.

*Question.* This McMullin was arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was arrested next morning.

*Question.* And held on bail for his appearance at the circuit court?

*Answer.* He was arrested by the city marshal, under a writ of the mayor, and brought before the mayor for trial. Refusing to give bonds, he was placed in jail.

*Question.* Bonds for his appearance at the United States circuit court?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was an offense against the State laws; he was to appear at the circuit court to be held in Noxubee County, which is now being held.

*Question.* Do you know Mr. Reed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was he a man of good standing before he acted as deputy marshal?

*Answer.* Well, sir, he has as much standing now as he had then. Being deputy marshal never interfered with his standing. Reed is a man who has always been under some grounds of suspicion there, though some citizens like him very well. He was the party I mentioned as having been tried for robbing the express. He has always been under suspicion in reference to that.

*Question.* Was he not acquitted of that charge?

*Answer.* I said that he was relieved from it; that he was not convicted.

*Question.* You say he took a negro in his parlor, drank with him, and told him he would give him $500 if he would disclose who it was that killed the negro near Sugar Lock.

*Answer.* That is what Mr. Stanton Field told me the negro said.

*Question.* Mr. Field told you that the negro told him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have never conversed with Reed or the negro about it. I do not know the negro.

*Question.* It is your opinion that these arrests recently made by the United States authorities, of persons alleged to have been engaged in these Ku-Klux outrages, were for the purpose of influencing your elections in the coming November; that really there was no guilt attaching to those persons; that the offenses for which they have been arrested never in reality occurred?

*Answer.* My impression is this: I do not believe that those arrests ever would have taken place but for the large rewards which were offered, and for the further purpose of bringing about an effect upon the elections which are to take place this fall.

*Question.* But if the crimes were actually committed by the parties, they ought to have been arrested, ought they not?

*Answer.* By all means, if they committed the crimes; but that is the question which we doubt. A majority of the people of that country believe, as I do, that there is no organized band.

*Question.* What does it matter whether there is an organized band or not, if the parties have committed the murders?

*Answer.* But it is to be proved whether they did commit them.

*Question.* You say that no parties had been arrested by the State authorities, though murders had been committed?

*Answer.* The State authorities had tried to investigate, but could not find out who committed them.

*Question.* They found out nobody?

*Answer.* No, sir; there doubtless were murders committed in one or two cases, as I have mentioned, and by disguised men.

*Question.* Do you say that you think every citizen in your county is disposed to abide by the law—is law-abiding?

*Answer.* I do not say every citizen; I say the citizens generally, though I think that it might be affirmed of every citizen as much as it could in any county in our State, or in any of the States of New England, or anywhere else. I think that the people are exceedingly anxious to comply with the law—to build themselves up again, and to avoid all suspicion of hatred toward the Government; but they do protest against being ruled over by a set of carpet-baggers—by the ignorant creatures who are now in power. A remark was made the other day by some citizens of our country that they would even be willing to vote the republican ticket if that party would put up good men; in other words, if they would discard the ignorant negroes, for instance, whom they have been sending to the legislature, and put good men there. For example, there is Lieutenant Governor Powers. He is highly respected. Although he is a carpet-bagger, he has never descended to do those various little matters of which many of the carpet-baggers are guilty.

*Question.* You think that in the section of country about which we have been speaking there are as few persons who are not law-abiding as there are in any of the counties of Mississippi, or even in the New England States?

*Answer.* I do think so.

*Question.* You think the country there is as quiet and orderly and law-abiding——

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not say it is as quiet; but I say that I believe the white citizens of that country are as law-abiding, as anxious to preserve peace and order, and do, so far as they are concerned, observe it as well as the citizens in any other portion of the United States.

*Question.* Do you apply that remark to the county of Winston as well as the county in which you reside?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know so much about the county of Winston; I would not say it as strongly about Winston as in respect to my own county, for two or three reasons. In the first place, it is not so intelligent a county as a mass; and, in the second place, it has not so large an amount of property.

*Question.* You spoke of the taxes of your county being $90,000?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think that is the amount of the assessment. I do not know that I stated the rate of tax altogether correctly, but I know that I stated the amount correctly—that it is about $89,000—in round numbers $90,000.

*Question.* Do you think that that is four per cent. on the value of the property in the county?

*Answer.* I think that the taxes are fully four per cent. upon the lands, the mules, &c., that are worked.

*Question.* But you stated that the law required so much percentage of tax upon this and so much on that, and that all added together amounted to about four per cent.?

*Answer.* Well, the State tax is one-half of one per cent.; then the county can levy one hundred per cent. on that; then for special purposes the county can levy not exceeding one-half of one per cent.; then the school tax comes in, and can be levied to the extent of about one and one-half per cent.

*Question.* Has tax been levied in the aggregate to the extent of four per cent.?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you exactly the estimate of the value of property in our county. The assessment is about $90,000; and I know one thing very well, that the taxes amount to about twenty per cent. or more upon the income of the property-holders. For instance, we make about 12,000 bales of cotton in that county. The negroes get one-half of it. I do not mean that in all cases that is their specified share; but, whatever the arrangement made, their share comes out about one-half. For instance, I will give my negroes the choice of one-half the crop, they feeding themselves, or one-quarter of the crop, I feeding them and their mules. We estimate that the support which we thus furnish is equal to fully one-quarter, so that their share is about one-half. This year I am renting my lands for less than one-half.

*Question.* Is there no tax on merchants?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is some tax on merchants.

*Question.* Is there a tax on money invested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is a tax; but I do not think there is much money invested for the tax to be levied upon.

*Question.* Is there a tax on town property?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is there a tax on the sale of ardent spirits?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the tax is pretty heavy upon that.

*Question.* These taxes are all embraced in the $90,000?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When you were reckoning the percentage of taxation which $90,000 amounted to, you reckoned as though the whole of that sum had to be paid out of the cotton crop?

*Answer.* Well, I think the whole of the $90,000 does ultimately come out of the cotton crop, because that is the only moneyed crop we have in the country. What I mean is, that the cotton crop sustains the whole community.

*Question.* Does the cotton crop sustain the tax on whisky?

*Answer.* What I mean is, that if the income of the cotton is a million of dollars, all that money coming into the country comes from cotton; though a portion of it may be gotten by the whisky-men, it comes ultimately from cotton. The tax on cotton, however, is very much lighter than it was. You know we paid, until recently, a tax to the United States Government.

*Question.* You do not now pay any Government tax on cotton?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You do not pay a tax to the Government of the United States, but do you not pay a tax on cotton to the State government?

*Answer.* We do not now; we did last year. There is no tax now upon cotton directly.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* I suppose some persons have money invested in United States bonds and otherwise?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the people are very poor, so far as money is concerned; they have none to invest; they have lost pretty much all that they did invest in working plantations.

*Question.* This $90,000 is a tax levied for two years?

*Answer.* O, no, sir.

*Question.* Is it the tax levied for a single year?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is the population of your county?

*Answer.* We have about four thousand two hundred negro voters, in round numbers, and from one thousand four hundred to one thousand five hundred white voters. Our population, I suppose, is not less than fifteen thousand negroes and eight or nine thousand whites. That is merely a rough estimate. I think the population of the county is about twenty-five thousand in the aggregate.

*Question.* You said that you saw a long list of lands to be sold for taxes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You meant advertised to be sold?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You did not mean that they had actually been sold?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you known of any land being sold in that county for taxes?

*Answer.* Very often; and a great deal will be sold this year for taxes, I am afraid.

*Question.* Have you known of any sold within a year?

*Answer.* No, sir; but I will explain that matter to you. When taxes are due there is a certain period within which they may be paid; after that period an addition is made to the amount of taxes remaining unpaid up to a certain time; fifteen per cent. is added in that way. At the expiration of the time for paying the taxes with the percentage added, the sheriff makes up a list of lands to be sold within thirty days for unpaid taxes. That was the list to which I referred—the advertisement of certain pieces of land to be sold for taxes.

*Question.* The land would be sold subject to redemption?

*Answer.* By all means. It is simply sold for the taxes, and is subject to redemption on payment of the taxes, with ten per cent. or something of that kind added.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* That has always been your law?

*Answer.* Certainly, that has always been the case. But there is more property advertised now than there has ever been before. The difficulty is that, though we cannot pay the tax now due, we shall have another tax to pay in October.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You did not mean to say that the list you saw was a list of lands sold; it was merely a list of lands to be sold?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I reckon they are sold about now.

*Question.* In case the tax was not paid?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The owners had a right to go and redeem the lands before the day of sale, by paying fifteen per cent. additional; and after the sale they can redeem the property from the purchaser, within a certain period, by paying him a profit on his money.

*Question.* That is ten per cent.?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Ten per cent. additional on the tax?

*Answer.* No, sir; ten per cent. on the amount of the purchase-money. Suppose my lands are put up and sold, and you buy them; if I redeem them within a specified time you are entitled to ten per cent. on whatever you paid.

*Question.* But the sheriff can sell no more land than enough to pay the tax?

*Answer.* No, sir. If, for instance, I own a thousand acres of land on which taxes are unpaid, one-eighth of it, perhaps, may bring enough to pay the tax. By that sale the tax on my property is paid, and the eighth that is sold belongs to the purchaser, subject to redemption.

*Question.* Then the ten per cent. additional paid to redeem the land is only ten per cent. on the amount of the tax?

*Answer.* That is all. Whenever a man bids to the extent of the tax the land is knocked down to him.

*Question.* What was the remark you made about Major Holman?

*Answer.* I merely remarked that he had been a member of Sheridan's staff; that he is now a citizen of our county, and is very much liked—is highly respected and esteemed.

*Question.* Is he a democrat?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not know that he is, and I do not know that he is a republican. I do not think he has ever interfered in politics in any way.

*Question.* You spoke of the whipping of a negro woman at Mr. Hinton's place, and you said it was rather a jest or a frolic?

*Answer.* I did not remark that it was a jest or a frolic. I said that some parties, I understood, had gone in disguise after this old bachelor, and had struck this woman two or three licks, perhaps, (I heard that it was really not a whipping; that was the impression in the neighborhood.) and that they merely told Hinton that if he did not quit living in that way with the woman they would come after him. I suppose that it was a mere matter of neighborhood adjustment. It may have been a sort of a little frolic with some of the parties. I have known such things to be done in the days of slavery. In many instances where parties have been living in that way, in intercourse with women, the connection has been broken up.

*Question.* In your testimony in regard to Mr. Taliaferro as not being worthy of belief, you referred to Mr. Dismukes as not being a prosecuting officer. Was he not a United States commissioner?

*Answer.* I stated that he was a United States commissioner to administer oaths. The question was put to me whether he was the prosecuting attorney, and I said, "No."

*Question.* I will read the testimony of Mr. Taliaferro on this point:

"*Question.* Is there a prosecuting officer for your county?

"*Answer.* Yes, sir.

"*Question.* Who is he?

"*Answer.* Mr. Dismukes.

"*Question.* By whom was he appointed?

"*Answer.* By Governor Alcorn.

"*Question.* Is he a republican?

"*Answer.* Well, it is hard to tell what he is.

"*Question.* Does he call himself a republican?

"*Answer.* He does now, I think."

*Answer.* He has never been prosecuting attorney. He never has received any appointment from Alcorn for that county.

*Question.* You still assume that Mr. Taliaferro said that Dismukes was the prosecuting attorney. He does not say that; he says that Mr. Dismukes was the "prosecuting officer." Is Mr. Dismukes an attorney at all?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but he has never been a prosecuting officer of any sort.

*Question.* Has Dismukes the right to issue warrants against men charged with these Ku-Klux offenses?

*Answer.* No, sir, I think not. I think the duties of his office extend only to the administering of oaths in United States court matters. The only time I ever saw him acting officially was when they were taking some affidavits in some cotton claims. The depositions were taken before him.

*Question.* Did he ever appear as a prosecutor in any of those Ku Klux cases?

*Answer.* Never. We have never had any Ku-Klux cases up there; we have never tried anybody for Ku-Kluxism.

*Question.* There were no warrants issued by him?

*Answer.* None whatever.

*Question.* He is nothing, then, but a United States commissioner?

*Answer.* Nothing but a United States commissioner and an attorney. He has a pretty extensive practice there. He is a democrat. There is another point in which I might correct Mr. Taliaferro's testimony. In one of the extracts which General Blair read to me, Taliaferro says there was a public road by his house. That is a small matter, but he is mistaken on that point.

*Question.* Did you mean to state that you know that Mr. Taliaferro was not summoned to appear at Oxford?

*Answer.* No, sir, I did not say so. I expect he was summoned; but I stated that I believed he volunteered his services to go there.

*Question.* That he went there of his own accord?

*Answer.* After he was summoned it could not be said perhaps that he went there of his own accord; but the idea I intended to convey was that he gave sufficient information to get himself summoned; that was the belief, that he went there a willing witness.

*Question.* Why do you think so?

*Answer.* Because I think he wanted to bring up testimony for the purpose of making money out of the cases.

*Question.* Have you any evidence of that?

*Answer.* None, except that I believe he is scoundrel enough to do it. I believe he is a bad man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You mean he wanted to get some of the reward which had been offered?

*Answer.* That is what he was after. It is my firm belief that he and Wissler and Reed are all mixed up together for the purpose of working this thing up into testimony to convict parties in order to recover $5,000, or whatever else they may get. That is my impression.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You think there was no necessity whatever in that section of the country for the making of those arrests?

*Answer.* I do not believe there was any necessity for the arrest of those parties. I do not know whether any of them belonged to the Ku-Klux, but I do not think there was any necessity for the arrests. There had been no recent disturbances that I recollect of in that particular neighborhood.

*Question.* You think there was no need of the interference of the civil authorities of the country for the purpose of making arrests in that section?

*Answer.* No, sir; not unless they could find the parties who had committed some of the murders you spoke of.

*Question.* Why do you suppose that they have not found some of them and carried them to Oxford? Why do you suppose that the men arrested are not guilty?

*Answer.* I will give you my reason, and I think it is a substantial one. If a man, on an investigation before a United States court, had appeared to be guilty of murder, he would not be set at liberty without giving bonds, or on giving bonds in only a small amount. I have very seldom known a murderer to be let off on an ordinary bond. I assume that if a good case had been made out against any of those parties, they would not have been merely bound over to appear before the United States court. I mean to say that if the grand jury had positively convicted Triplet, Doss, or any of those parties, of committing any of these murders, they never would have turned them loose on a nominal bond.

*Question.* Do you say that these parties were turned loose on nominal bonds?

*Answer.* When I say nominal bonds, I mean that the amounts were small, though the bonds were good.

*Question.* Were all of them turned loose in that way?

*Answer.* I do not know. Triplet's case had not been decided when I left home. I think that he was allowed to return home, but I believe a larger bond was required of him than of any other man.

*Question.* Do you recollect the amount of the bond?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* In your State are parties indicted for murder allowed to go at large on giving bail?

*Answer.* Well, I have known bail to be given in murder cases; but the bonds were in very large amounts.

*Question.* Have you known that to be done in the United States courts?

*Answer.* I am speaking of the circuit court.

*Question.* I am speaking of the United States court where these parties are indicted. Have you ever known a man indicted for murder in the United States court to be let out on bail?

*Answer.* I never have.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Do you know that these men were indicted for murder?

*Answer.* I do not know that. Hence I say that there was no necessity for the arrests. The parties were carried up there to be tried as Ku-Klux.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you ever hear, before this affair, of any man being indicted for murder in the United States court?

*Answer.* No, sir; such cases are generally tried in our circuit court. All these parties came back in great glee; said that they had been put under bonds to appear at court, and they were going back to answer. When arrested they went very willingly; that is, they did not require any force to make them go; they went on very good terms with the soldiers. There was no bitterness and no apprehension on their part or on the part of the soldiers.

*Question.* Do you know more than one Madison Brooks in your county?

*Answer.* There is none in my county.

*Question.* Do you know more than one Madison Brooks anywhere in that country?

*Answer.* No, sir. There is but one Madison Brooks in that country. He is a brother-in-law of mine—a very large manufacturer. He has a cotton mill which cost him more than $200,000, and is attending to that.

*Question.* Do you understand that Mr. Taliaferro referred to that man when he spoke of Madison Brooks?

*Answer.* I do not know whom else he could have referred to. He mentions two or three other persons named Brooks—all of that name that I can think of. He mentions Harding Brooks, a nephew of Madison Brooks.

*Question.* Mr. Taliaferro said there were no free schools before the passage of the recent bill; I did not understand him to say that there had been no free schools up to the time when he was testifying. Is it a fact that there were no free schools in that county before the passage of the recent bill?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; we had free schools there under the old sixteenth section act. Every sixteenth section of land in the State was granted by the United States for free schools. Those schools have not been reëstablished since the war, either for white or black.

*Question.* Then really there were no free schools?

*Answer.* There were no free schools until the present bill went into operation. Every plantation, however, of any magnitude had schools.

*Question.* They were not free schools?

*Answer.* We had no free schools.

*Question.* Then Taliaferro was correct when he said there had been no free schools there until the passage of that bill?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did the planters who established schools upon their places charge the negroes with the expense of maintaining those schools?

*Answer.* They would say to a teacher, "Come here upon my plantation, and these negroes will pay you so much a month for teaching them." The customary charge was half a dollar a month for night scholars and a dollar a month for day scholars. The planters would generally say to the teacher, "We will see that you are paid;" but the negro in the first instance was the party who was to pay it.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You had no free-school system?

*Answer.* No free-school system.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You paid the teacher out of the wages of the negroes working on your plantation?

*Answer.* I ought to have done it, but at the end of the year they owed me a great deal more than the amount that the schooling cost.

*Question.* But that was the bargain?

*Answer.* Yes; that was the bargain. I did not propose to educate their children for them without charge.

*Question.* And when you told the teacher that you would see him paid you meant that you would see him paid out of the negroes' wages?

*Answer.* I went their security.

*Question.* Then that was not a free school?

*Answer.* No, sir. There was no free-school system in the country, because there was no law providing for it.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* I understood you to say that you had heard of whippings and similar outrages committed by disguised men in your portion of the State, but that you did not think any organization existed?

*Answer.* That is what I stated.

*Question.* I think you mentioned at first that you did not think there was a State organization?

*Answer.* I do not think there is any, either State or county, or any other; I mean that there is no system of organization.

*Question.* No communication from one county to another?

*Answer.* What I mean is that one neighborhood has no arrangement for assistance and coöperation with another neighborhood, and all that sort of thing, either as to neighborhoods, counties, or States.

*Question.* The prisoner whom Mr. Bridges was holding was, you state, confined by him in a cabin?

*Answer.* In a cabin near his house.

*Question.* Do you know what distance the cabin was from the house?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that that particular cabin had been used as a school-house?

*Answer.* I never did. I do not even know that there ever was a school upon his premises.

*Question.* If it had been so used, it would probably have been some little distance from his house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it would have been some little distance. The impression made upon my mind was that it was right adjacent to his house—right up at it.

*Question.* Somewhere in the yard?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you remember the day of the week upon which these colored men came to Bridges' house with their arms?

*Answer.* I do not remember the day of the week.

*Question.* Was it not Sunday night?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you; I do not remember what day it was.

*Question.* Did you hear that during the day these colored men had been out in the neighborhood searching the swamps, &c., along the river trying to find what had become of that prisoner, and that they had taken their guns as they were traveling through the woods and similar places?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard that; the only thing I heard about their trying to hunt the negro, was when the body of the negro alleged to have been drowned from a steamboat was found.

*Question.* For what were those negroes who came up to Bridges' house indicted?

*Answer.* I do not remember; they were indicted perhaps for assault and battery.

*Question.* Was that the charge, or was it inciting a riot?

*Answer.* I think the charge was assault and battery upon an officer.

*Question.* Have you heard it rumored through the neigborhood that a good many of those colored men had been out looking round to find this prisoner who was alleged to have escaped?

*Answer.* I have not heard it.

*Question.* You said that arrests were made for political effect?

*Answer.* I said that was my impression.

*Question.* To what arrests had you reference?

*Answer.* I referred to the arrest of those parties who were carried to Oxford as Ku-Klux; I said I believed those arrests were for a two-fold purpose: first, to gain the rewards; and secondly, to help create political excitement and prejudice in favor of the republican party.

*Question.* The political advantage, then, to be derived was supposed to be in favor of the republican party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What number of republican voters have you in your county?

*Answer.* About four thousand two hundred, I think.

*Question.* How many democratic voters?

*Answer.* One thousand four hundred; a great many of the negroes say that they are democrats, but I know they always vote with the Loyal League.

*Question.* You have nearly three republican votes to every democratic vote?

*Answer.* Nearly three.

*Question.* Under those circumstances what possible advantage could the republican party derive from any political excitement manufactured in the manner stated. With a majority of three to one, what necessity was there for the republican party to resort to any such thing?

*Answer.* I think I can answer that. The advantage to be derived was this: just before every election we have had, especially in those counties with large negro populations, troubles and annoyances. We have had much more trouble in the large negro counties than we have had in those counties where the white vote predominates. The reason of such a thing in our county was to prevent the one thousand four hundred democrats from influencing the negroes, and to organize the negroes to vote as a solid body the

republican ticket. The republicans are afraid of the influence of the democrats upon the negroes; a great many of the negroes, if let alone, would vote the democratic ticket; I am satisfied of that; but they are bound up in their Leagues These things are started—public speakings, &c., are held—to create an excitement in order to organize the negroes. I believe that, if we had a straight-out, flat-footed, square-toed canvass upon the merits of the two parties, a great many of the negroes would go to the polls and vote the democratic ticket.

*Question.* But how would the fact of the marshal making arrests of parties charged with whipping or otherwise mistreating some of the colored people, prevent the colored men from voting the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I will tell you the truth in respect to that. Upon my plantation the negroes I believe have as much confidence in me as they have in any southern white man; I have a great many of my old slaves still with me——

*Question.* When you speak of the confidence of the negroes in you, do you mean the confidence that they have in you in all matters of business or private transactions, or do you speak of confidence which they give you as to your political belief and political policy?

*Answer.* They have great confidence in me. But if I were to tell any negro on my place to do anything in reference to any matter of policy, and if a man were to come along with a blue coat on, though he might be a mere vagrant in the country, the negro would believe him quicker than he would me; and he would do so under the teachings of the Loyal League. The negro down there is taught that if he ever votes the democratic ticket he will be put back in slavery. He is furthermore taught that he must never make a friend of the white man.

*Question.* Taught by whom?

*Answer.* By those carpet-baggers who come into that country.

*Question.* Do they make the negroes believe that?

*Answer.* They do make them believe it.

*Question.* Then where is the confidence that you said your negroes have in you?

*Answer.* I said they have great confidence in me; but whenever those influences are brought to bear they always go that way.

*Question.* Then they have not confidence in your political views and political policy?

*Answer.* O, no, sir; the Yankee carpet-bagger has much more of their confidence in that respect than I have. If the negro wants a favor done, if he is in any situation where he must rely upon the honesty of a man, he will come to me or others like me; but when it comes to political questions the Yankee controls him, because the Yankee has taught him to believe that in such matters he must rely upon him and not upon the southern man.

*Question.* Do you suppose that men of the class you have described, men without character or standing and having scarcely any personal acquaintance with the negroes, could come in and produce this great change in their minds unless there were somehow involved in the matter the personal and civil and political rights of the negro?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; because they are lied to; they are told they will be put back into slavery if the democratic party gets into power.

*Question.* And they believe the lie?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they believe the lie. They are ignorant creatures.

*Question.* When you were speaking of the character of the officers in your section of the State you spoke of your circuit judge as a man of good character?

*Answer.* He is a personal friend of mine; a clever and high-toned gentleman and an intellectual lawyer. He was in former times a member of the Congress of the United States. It is not to men of that class that I refer. If he were a candidate to-morrow, I would not have the slightest objection to voting for him; and there are hundreds of his class that we are delighted with. I would have no particular objection to voting for Governor Alcorn; but I have an objection to voting for these interlopers who have no interest in our State, who come there merely to pocket the emoluments of office and to prejudice the minds of the negroes.

*Question.* Have you a large number of that class in your State?

*Answer.* We have a good many; we have four or five in our county that exercise control in that way.

*Question.* You were speaking in reference to the relation of the two races. In connection with that point I wish to ask you whether the white people of your county are generally disposed to concede to the negro the right of voting. Do they heartily acquiesce in the exercise of that right by the negro?

*Answer.* By all means; we all acquiesce in it.

*Question.* Are you in favor of colored suffrage?

*Answer.* We acquiesce in it, I believe; and we do so a little more thoroughly perhaps than some of the republicans whom I have heard express themselves.

*Question.* Then the white people of your section manifest no opposition to the colored men's voting?

*Answer.* Never; and the negroes have never been forbidden or prevented from going to the polls.

*Question.* If the matter had been left to them would the white people of your community have conferred suffrage upon the colored men?

*Answer.* I do not believe they would have conferred it themselves in the commencement, because we do not think they are in a condition to be voters; we do not think them sufficiently intelligent.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you believe that suffrage would have been conferred upon the negroes by the republicans if they had not expected to get their votes?

*Answer.* No, sir. General Eggleston himself, who was the carpet-bag governor of our State, was conversing with me one day, when I pointed out to him a negro passing by, who represented in the legislature the intelligent county of Lowndes, and whom I had seen sitting that day in the speaker's chair—a negro who was once sold out of jail, and who, when I was a merchant, used to be my drayman. I said to General Eggleston, "General, I think you are a devilish clever man of your sort, and a mighty clever man of any sort; but," said I, pointing to that negro, "there is a job that you ought to be hung for—the putting of that man into the senate. When you conferred upon him the right to vote you ought to have stopped." He replied, "I agree with you; and I will go a little further, I do not think he ought ever to have had the right to vote." I want it understood that this remark of mine was jocular.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Speaking of the disabilities imposed upon some of the citizens of your State, is it not a fact that your legislature, in which there is a republican majority, memorialized Congress to remove those disabilities from all citizens in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I think it did.

*Question.* And your Senator, Mr. Revels, presented the memorial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So that both parties in your State are in favor of the removal of political disabilities?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When you were speaking of taxes, I understood you to say that the taxes were collected wholly from the white people. You meant, I suppose, to except from that remark the poll-tax which the colored people pay?

*Answer.* I said, "Excepting the per capita or poll tax of $2."

*Question.* You also spoke of some negroes in your section owning quite large farms?

*Answer.* There are several such.

*Question.* I suppose that they have property which is not exempt by law from taxation, and upon this surplus they pay tax?

*Answer.* Well, yes, sir; but there are only two or three in that county owning large farms. A great many of them are renting. I am renting to a negro, who runs 120 acres of land.

*Question.* Is not the tax which they pay as burdensome to them as the tax which the white people pay is to them?

*Answer.* No, sir; because I pay all the taxation upon the land which I rent to the negro; I pay the taxation upon the mules that he works, upon the hogs that he consumes in the form of meat. He pays no tax except his per capita tax.

*Question.* Is not that as large a burden for him as your tax is for you?

*Answer.* No, sir, by no means, because he gets one-half the proceeds of all that is raised on the plantation. He pays his $2 tax and I pay my $300 or $400.

*Question.* He pays tax on whatever he has that is taxable?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but, as a general thing, the negroes have not got anything but themselves to pay tax on; and they do not even pay that tax. If they did, it would be well, but they do not. As I have already said, there are $20,000 of tax uncollected.

*Question.* If the tax is not paid it is not the negro's fault?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is often by design upon his part that the tax is not paid. The negro is pretty smart on that point. A negro is often registered under one name while he goes by another.

*Question.* And the tax assessor knows him by his registered name?

*Answer.* No, sir; the tax collector does not always get them by their registered names. For instance, on my plantation there may be a negro whose name is Sawney Baskerville, who is registered as Sawney Hanson; and when a negro has been inquired for by a certain name, I have heard them laugh and say, "No, they cannot get him; he is not here."

*Question.* You referred to some outrages which you had heard of; did you ever hear of some disguised men going to the jail about seven miles from Aberdeen and releasing a man named Sanders Flint, and his two sons?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that one of them was shot and another whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir, I never heard of that till I was reading just now Colonel Huggins's testimony.

*Question.* You never heard of Alfred Whitfield, a colored man, being whipped in the same county?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who is the member of Congress from your district?

*Answer.* He is named Barry.

*Question.* Is he a carpet-bagger?

*Answer.* Yes, I suppose he is. I do not know him, and I do not suppose that a dozen voters in the county, except the negroes and his particular party, do know him. I do not suppose he has ever been in the district two months altogether. By the way, he made a speech in Congress, which I was trying to find yesterday in the Globe, but I could not find it; it seems to have been put in the appendix.

*Question.* What was that speech?

*Answer.* In it he referred in very offensive terms to the white voters of his district, and he stated that his arm had been paralyzed by a Ku-Klux ball. If that be true, nobody in his district has ever heard of it, so far as I know. I never heard it mentioned. I did hear that he had a personal difficulty at Durant Station, and got shot there. If he has ever been Ku-Kluxed in our country I have never heard of it. In that speech, after stating that he had been shot by the Ku-Klux, he goes on to state that the citizens of that country are no better than the hounds that used to help in pursuing the slave. He knew, when he stated that, that it was basely false. That is the way these people slander and malign us.

*Question.* What district is yours?

*Answer.* The third congressional district.

*Question.* I see that the Congressional Directory gives Mr. Barry as a resident of Columbus?

*Answer.* I did not know that he resided in Columbus. I knew that he staid there a little. He has staid in various places. I never saw him more than once or twice. Nobody seems to know much about him. I do not suppose he has ever been inside of half a dozen houses in his district.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do you know that he was in the Union Army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you remember whether he was a general in the Union Army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* General of a division?

*Answer.* I think he was a brigadier general. At first, I believe, he was a colonel of some negro troops; I think he stated that in his speech; but I never heard of General Barry until he came there to run for Congress; previous to that he had never resided in the district, to my knowledge.

*Question.* Was he elected to the State constitutional convention of 1867?

*Answer.* If he was, he was not elected from my portion of the State.

*Question.* Do you remember his having been in the State senate of Mississippi in 1868?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not recollect it; I never heard of him until he was a candidate for Congress.

*Question.* You say that General Barry declared that the white people in his district were no better than the hounds that they used to hunt slaves with?

*Answer.* I think that was the declaration in his speech. I should like to see the speech.

*Question.* Did you understand that language to be a general description, embracing all the white people?

*Answer.* Embracing all the white people of that country.

*Question.* He did not confine it to those who had been engaged in the Ku-Klux outrages?

*Answer.* My recollection of the speech is that he did not. I should like to see the speech, and am willing to stand corrected if I am wrong. I know that the people of that district felt very much insulted by such language; they felt that they had a representative in Congress who chose to malign and slander a majority of the people because they did not vote for him.

*Question.* Did not a majority of the people vote for him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I suppose a majority of the people did; the negroes voted for him.

*Question.* I see it is stated that when elected to the Forty-first Congress he obtained 12,912 votes, against 7,630 cast for the democratic candidate and 1,817 for a man named Le Flore?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was not Steers the democratic candidate who ran against him?
*Answer.* Steers is a Massachusetts man.
*Question.* Has he gone down there since the close of the war?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is he not a democrat?
*Answer.* Well, I think he was a conservative republican.
*Question.* Was he not nominated by the democrats?
*Answer.* He was nominated by the democrats and conservative republicans; they considered him a pretty decent man.
*Question.* By whom was Le Flore nominated?
*Answer.* I think he ran on his own hook. Barry was the nominee of the republican party.
*Question.* And Steers was the nominee of the democratic party?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was nominated by a convention, you may say, of democrats. I voted for Steers.
*Question.* So the democrats as well as the republicans in that county nominated a carpet-bagger?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You do not know General Barry personally?
*Answer.* I do not. His constituency feel very much aggrieved that he should claim to represent them and then slander them.
*Question.* Do you mean the negroes of his constituency?
*Answer.* No, sir; I mean the white people.
*Question.* White democrats?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. We are a portion of his constituents, I believe.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How many white republicans are there in your district?
*Answer.* I can say as to the county that there are not a great many white republicans; I do not think the white republican voters in the county would exceed twenty; I think the number is about ten.
*Question.* There are not enough of them to hold the offices?
*Answer.* Not enough to hold the offices.
*Question.* They have to give themselves each two or three offices?
*Answer.* Our State senator holds three, I think; I know that he is circuit court clerk as well as senator, and I know that he is clerk of the board of supervisors. Reed holds two offices.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you ever hear any complaint as to the manner in which your State senator and circuit clerk performs the duties of his offices?
*Answer.* I do not know that I ever heard any particular complaint.
*Question.* He discharges well the duties of all the offices?
*Answer.* I do not know whether he does or does not. I have never heard any complaint, except that I do recollect hearing the chancellor say that the records were badly kept, or something of that sort. That is the only complaint I ever heard. I never go about the court-house.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *August* 4, 1871.

HENRY B. WHITFIELD sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Where do you reside?
*Answer.* At Columbus, Mississippi.
*Question.* In what county is Columbus?
*Answer.* Lowndes County.
*Question.* How long have you lived there?
*Answer.* Since February, 1839.
*Question.* Are you a native of Mississippi?
*Answer.* No, sir; I was born in the State of Georgia; I have resided in Mississippi since I was three years old.
*Question.* Are you a son of Ex-Governor Whitfield, of Mississippi?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Have you ever held any public positions in the State?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am at present mayor of the city of Columbus.
*Question.* Have you been mixing with the people of Lowndes and the adjoining counties, and have you been engaged in business with them so as to know the condition of affairs generally?

*Answer.* I am familiar with people in my own and the adjoining counties, having mingled with them considerably. My position has been such as to bring me in frequent contact with them.

*Question.* What business are you engaged in at this time?

*Answer.* I am an attorney-at-law, and am engaged in the practice of the law, in addition to my official position as mayor of the city.

*Question.* This committee is charged with inquiring into the condition of affairs in Mississippi and other States, especially in reference to the safety of property and life, and the due execution of the law. State anything you know on that subject.

*Answer.* I consider that in the counties in Eastern Mississippi particularly, and on the Alabama line, and in North Mississippi, on the Tennessee line, there is considerable insecurity to liberty of person, and in some instances to life, unless a party espouses certain opinions.

*Question.* What opinions do you mean?

*Answer.* I mean that if a white man, an old citizen of the county, is known to be a member of the republican party, the people are very intolerant toward him; and if a northern man who has come there is a republican they are a little worse toward him; and toward the black people, unless they are willing to vote as the people there desire them to vote, they are very intolerant.

*Question.* State the extent to which this intolerance is carried with reference to any or all of these classes.

*Answer.* So far as I am personally concerned, I have lived there so long, and the people know me so well, that there has been no particular proscription in regard to myself. Nobody has ever attempted anything toward me, or said anything offensive about me, so far as I am aware.

*Question.* The rule adopted by this committee is different from that practiced in courts of law as to the admission of testimony. You can state here, not only what you know upon personal knowledge, but what you know from others whom you believe entitled to credit.

*Answer.* Well, sir, of my personal knowledge I know nothing on this subject; but from the evidence of others, who I believe are entitled to the greatest credit, and, in fact, from a cloud of witnesses, I can state many things that have occurred in the country there showing the insecurity of personal liberty and the expression of opinion.

*Question.* Take first your own county of Lowndes, and state the condition of things there.

*Answer.* I will state in the first place that the county of Lowndes immediately adjoins the State of Alabama. It is one of the largest and wealthiest counties in the State. I believe it is the second largest in wealth and population. The county is almost equally divided by the Tombigbee River. The eastern part of it is a sandy country; the western part a very rich prairie country. There is a large black population in the county, particularly on the western side of the river; on the eastern side, although there is considerable black population, the white people rather preponderate. Back as far as the year 1868 was the first time that we had any indications there of any organizations which appeared to be for improper purposes—for the purpose of controlling opinion or making people do as they wanted them to do. Such organizations then existed, being organized during the campaign of 1868—at the time of the election for the convention in the State. During 1869 and a part of 1870, we did not hear of anything of the kind to any extent in Lowndes County. But last February the thing seemed to have broken loose again with every indication of violence, and to a very outrageous extent in the northeastern part of the county.

*Question.* The part of the county bordering on the Alabama line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the part bordering on the Alabama line; and then along the line of Monroe County, the county in Mississippi immediately north of us. I will state that the first outbreak which occurred was in the latter part of February of the present year. The victim was a negro named James Hicks. I saw him after the occurrence; I went out with the superintendent of education to see him. He had lived up in the neighborhood of Caledonia, which is in the northeastern corner of the county. It was charged that while there he had used some improper language in regard to some white ladies of the neighborhood; and these people determined, I suppose, that he should suffer for it. He had moved down some seven miles below that, into another neighborhood. They found out where he lived, followed him down there, and took him out one night. From the best information I could get, there were from one hundred to one hundred and twenty disguised men, who were armed heavily. They took him out into the public road and whipped him. The statements of the witnesses varied considerably as to the amount of whipping he received. The lowest estimate that I heard was three hundred lashes; some of the black people who were present thought it was as high as one thousand. I have no doubt myself, from the man's appearance two days afterward, and from the evidence in the case, that he was very severely beaten. He was ordered to leave the country in ten days under penalty of being hung. The party then went from this man's house to one of the public school-

houses, which was about half a mile distant. A gentleman named H. W. Farmer was teaching the school at that place. He was an innocent, inoffensive white man. The board of school directors of the county, (of which body I am a member,) on sending him out to the neighborhood, had told him to endeavor to get board with some white family in the neighborhood, and we gave him letters of introduction for that purpose. We desired to avoid every appearance of anything that would give any cause for suspicion or complaint. When he went out there he applied to three or four white families in the neighborhood to get board, but did not succeed. He then got a house from an old black man who lived near the school-house, and he had his room, his bedding, and everything of that kind in this house to himself. These black people prepared his meals for him and carried them to the house where he slept. This party went to his house and called him out. He came to the door and asked them what they desired. They told him they wanted to talk with him. They said that he had no business in the country teaching free schools, that they were going to break them all up; that the system was a grand humbug, an imposition upon the people, and that they were determined there should be nothing of the kind in that part of the country. They told him they did not intend that night to do him any harm, but that they were coming back in ten days, and if he was there at the end of that time he would find himself dangling at the end of a rope. There was considerable excitement among the people of the neighborhood. The next day the man came into the town of Columbus, the county seat, with a good many of the freedmen. The circuit court was then in session, Judge Jehu A. Orr, a brother of James L. Orr, of South Carolina, presiding. The town papers published an account of the affair, stating that a Ku-Klux outrage had been committed, or that the Ku-Klux had visited a negro at a certain place, and run off a school-teacher named Farmer, or something to that effect. The grand jury came into court that morning to adjourn, having finished their business, as they said. The judge, however, called their attention to this article in the paper, and told them that the matter had also been brought to his attention by other parties, and that he could not suffer the grand jury to adjourn until they had made a thorough investigation of that matter; that the affair had occurred almost within hearing of the court; that he was determined to have the law executed if it could possibly be done; that they must return to their room, summon witnesses, and make a thorough investigation of the case.

*Question.* Was Farmer in the city at that time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was in the city. He had been in the office of the county superintendent of education—he and some colored people who had come in. I was present, and heard Farmer's statement in the office of the superintendent.

*Question.* Were any of the persons there who were present when the negro was whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The grand jury returned to their room. They did not seem to like at all what the judge said to them, as I heard from a member of the grand jury who was in the county superintendent's office. They sent for me to give them the names of persons who were present at the time of this whipping, and who knew all about the transactions of that night.

By Mr. Blair:

*Question.* Was there any whipping?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; they whipped the negro Hicks terribly; there is no doubt about that. They did not whip Farmer; they only threatened him; that occurred the same night, and very shortly afterwards. I went before the grand jury, and several of them wanted to know from me if I thought they could accomplish anything by an investigation. I did not want to answer the question particularly, because I knew the character of the men who asked me, and I thought that the matter was one for the grand jury to determine for themselves; that if they were men disposed to do their duty as they had sworn to do, they could determine that question without advice from me. Finally I told them that I believed they could accomplish everything if they could assure the witnesses that they would be protected; but unless they could do that, I was satisfied that with the state of things existing there then the witnesses would not dare to testify to what they knew. I then gave them a list of names. They sent the deputy sheriff up. He went up after night, and came very near being shot. The freedmen in the neighborhood had become pretty thoroughly aroused by this time, which was the next day. They had congregated in a mass; they did not know whether that party who committed the outrage were coming back, or what was going to be done. In other words, there was great terror and excitement in the neighborhood. This man, Farmer, had gone back to the neighborhood by the direction of the county superintendent, and when the deputy sheriff came up Farmer knew him, and told the people who he was, and that he had come to summon witnesses; that the matter was to be investigated thoroughly by the grand jury. There was a large number of witnesses summoned. They came down the next morning to the county-seat. I saw them, and talked with them on the streets, in the county superintendent's office, and at the court-house gate. They told me they knew as many as three of these men; they told me why and how

they knew them. One man particularly was a hump-backed man, and they all knew that he lived in the neighborhood above. They recognized other parties by different means of recognition. I told them, "Now, you are going to have an opportunity to show whether you desire the protection of the law—whether you are willing to swear to what you believe to be true. If you are satisfied that you know these men, just tell the grand jury exactly what you know and how you know it—swear to it, and stand by it, and Judge Orr, I am satisfied, will bring the power of the law to sustain you." This was said to them right at the court-house gate, when they were going in. They went in before the grand jury. Some of the members of the grand jury told me afterwards that when these witnesses got before the grand jury and saw who were members of that jury, and knew the men composing it, they would not admit that they had the faintest shadow of an idea as to who any of those men were that had been engaged in the affair.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Who were the men who frightened them before the grand jury?

*Answer.* They were members of the grand jury whom these men knew to be exceedingly strong or intense democrats, if nothing worse; and they were afraid to testify. That is what they told me; that they were afraid to admit before the grand jury that they knew the parties, because they said they were afraid they would not get home alive if they testified to what they knew. That was the exact language that they used.

*Question.* Were they afraid the members of the grand jury would tell it outside?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were afraid that members of the grand jury would tell it outside, and that they would not get home alive, or, if they did, that they would not be able to stay in the country.

I will mention another incident to show the condition of the public mind at that time, and the inefficiency of the court to administer the law in the then existing state of feeling. A whipping of two men occurred in the town of Columbus that very next night, while the court was in session.

*Question.* By whom?

*Answer.* That was by disguised men; but I am satisfied, from my investigations through the police, that it was not any regular Ku-Klux arrangement. But the men were in disguise; they had on a sort of masks made of thin cloth. The police went down and brought up a couple that the party had dropped while they were whipping one of the men. These two men whipped were men who were indicted for an attempt to rob. Under the statutes of Mississippi, an attempt to commit an offense is punishable just the same as the offense itself. They did not actually perpetrate the offense, but were indicted for the attempt to rob a gentleman named Tyler, a northern man, residing in the city—an architect, and a very clever gentleman. The case had caused a good deal of indignation. I was associated with several other gentlemen in defending these men; I was employed as a lawyer for a fee. One of the men, really and technically, was not guilty; the other was. But the jury misunderstood the charge of the judge, and very foolishly and wrongfully acquitted them both. There was so much feeling about the affair, that they were taken out that night and severely whipped, right in the town. The men who were whipped knew several of the parties. They wore over their faces a little covering of some kind of dotted muslin. While they were whipping one of the men, two of these masks or coverings fell off; and both the men whipped, as well as the wife of one of them, told me next morning that they knew perfectly well two of the parties. One was a man who could have been easily recognized. These two men were sent before the grand jury. The judge called the jury back the next morning, and charged them in regard to the matter. He manifested the utmost anxiety to have the matter thoroughly investigated, and to do his duty, even under very trying circumstances. But when those men got before the grand jury, neither they nor the wife of one of them, who was also produced as a witness, would admit having any idea who the parties were. This was in consequence of the state of feeling there. They felt that they would have been utterly unsafe if they had sworn positively to the men whom they recognized; that their lives would have been in danger. This they believed and so did I; and I believe it yet. I do not say that this last whipping was by any Ku-Klux organization or any combination. I simply mention it as showing the state of feeling existing in the county. On that occasion we had as fair a test as we could have in regard to the ability of the court to execute the law in such cases. There is a very severe statute of Mississippi in regard to disguised men or Ku-Klux, and the judges are required at every term of the court to give the matter in special charge of the grand jury; and all the peace officers are required to be vigilant and to give notice of anything of the kind. In this case, every effort was made; the presence of witnesses was procured, but they would not testify, being operated upon by absolute fear, in view of the state of affairs existing at that time. The county superintendent, as well as myself and others, tried to induce Farmer to go back and take charge of his school. In order to satisfy ourselves fully, the superintendent and myself went out into the neighborhood and inquired, of both white people and black, to know whether Farmer had been guilty of any improprieties in

any way, or had given any improper advice, or used any improper language toward the colored people of the neighborhood, or whether he had made himself offensive to the white people. We talked with one of the leading men of the neighborhood—as intelligent a man as there is in Mississippi, and a man of as high character as any other.

*Question.* Who is he?

*Answer.* General Thomas G. Blewett, jr.

*Question.* A democrat?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is a sort of an independent man in politics. He was an old whig. He is a very intelligent man, and he is not afraid of anything or anybody; he expresses his opinions freely.

*Question.* Does he not belong to either party?

*Answer.* No, sir. We went to his house and talked with him a considerable time and asked him about this school teacher. He said that Farmer was one of the most quiet, inoffensive, peaceable men that had ever been in that neighborhood; that, so far from doing harm, he had been the means, he thought, of doing a great deal of good; that the teacher who had preceded him was a meddlesome man, and had given the people a good deal of trouble; that he had allowed the colored children in passing to and from school to be impertinent and annoying to the neighbors. He said that this man Farmer had kept splendid order. He went on to give some of the *minutiæ* of his discipline and his manner of talking to the children, telling them how they should behave in going to and from school. He said he regretted very much that the matter had occurred, and he wanted us to send the man back and to tell him that he would personally see that he would be protected. He said they all knew that he was not afraid of them, and he promised personally to see Farmer protected. We talked with the black people. They said the man had never said anything wrong to them. We questioned them very closely and asked them a good many things in regard to his talk with them, his teaching, and everything of that kind. They said he had never said anything improper to them. We were satisfied, therefore, that there could be no cause as regarded the people of the neighborhood for forcing the man to abandon his school. We then went back and offered to provide Farmer with board and to take care of him in every way we could. But he had been talking with some people there and had become so perfectly demoralized and Ku-Kluxed and frightened to death that we could not offer him any inducement in the world to keep him. The county superintendent settled with him; and we could hardly induce him to stay long enough to have the settlement made. He wanted to walk through the country and take the cars at some side station. He was so perfectly demoralized that he did not want to take the regular passenger train which left the town. The same night that same body of Ku-Klux (I do not know what other name to call them; they were disguised men anyhow; it is a name we apply down in that country to all disguised men, at least those of us who have never had anything to do with any organization of the sort: not knowing any technical name, we call all disguised men Ku-Klux)—that same night these men went to the house of a man named Perkins; I mean they did this the same night that they whipped the negro Hicks and drove the school teacher off. They went to the house of Alfred Perkins. They were hunting for his son. His son was a young man who it had been talked of through the neigborhood had been acting improperly with his step-aunt. They did not find him at his father's house; they left word for him that he had to leave the country, and he was so badly frightened that he left very soon.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* The school which had been kept by Mr. Farmer was broken up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, broken up completely. There has been no school there since. That same night they went after a negro by the name of Perkins; I forget his first name. There was an idea through the country that he had been stealing hogs—that he was in the habit of stealing. They went after him, but they did not find him. He ran off when he found that they were coming, and took to the woods.

After that there seemed to be gotten up a great deal of feeling in that part of the country; in fact all through the county, in regard to the public schools. There seemed to be a general concerted raid made by a large body of these disguised men or Ku Klux. They visited seven others of our school teachers and ordered them to stop teaching. I believe I can state candidly that I have no motive on earth to say anything on this subject calculated to injure the people there. There are many of us in that country who are most intensely opposed to all such illegal methods of proceeding; not only on account of their being in gross violation of the law and the constitution, and tending to the upturning of society, but we oppose them upon principles of political economy

and for other reasons that can be urged. There could have been nothing in the management of those schools to induce such action. I can illustrate this remark by referring to the schools in detail. I begin with the schools in the most northeasterly part of the country, immediately adjoining the Alabama line. A school was taught there by a man named William B. Kolb, an old citizen of the country, who had lived there ever since I can recollect. He was for a number of years a member of the board of police or the board of supervisors of the county. As a man he had the confidence of everybody in the community. He was one of the teachers who were ordered to quit.

*Question.* Did he finally quit?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They were all afraid; and they did not dare to teach school after receiving these warnings. After a time the board of school directors met and passed a resolution that if any of the teachers desired to continue their schools as pay schools they could do so and could have the use of the houses and the school-furniture. Some few of them resumed in that way; but every one of them ceased to carry on his school as a public school. In fact, we could offer them no inducement sufficient to make them continue. They were afraid of their lives. That was what they said.

The next school in that locality was taught by a lady named Mrs. Kennon. She is the wife of a very decrepit old man, and is compelled to teach for a living. Her husband and she are among the oldest citizens of that county. She had as an assistant her step-son, a young man named Woodson H. Kennon, jr., a one-armed confederate soldier, who was formerly clerk of the probate court of the county, having been elected by a very large majority soon after the close of the war. He was a young man whom nobody knew anything against. A party of men went to the house of these people at a very late hour one night and ordered them to stop their school the very next day. There were only three more days in the week; and I recollect distinctly that the young man and his mother came in next morning exceedingly agitated and very much frightened, and told us that they had asked permission to teach out the other three days of the week, so as to make it an even month; but the men told them that they should not teach that school another day as a public school: that they were going to break it up. We tried to induce the old lady and the young man to go back and teach; but they would not hear to anything of the kind. The lady said her husband was a very infirm man, and she could not contend against a mob; she did not know what they might do; they might burn her house or run her out of the country. She said there was nothing in the State of Mississippi that could induce her to go back and resume teaching in the school as a public school.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* These things occurred last February?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, along in February or March. There were five other schools broken up of pretty much the same character as these. Only two of the schools were taught by northern men. These were men who had come down there some two or three years before, and had conducted themselves with propriety. The other schools were all taught by old citizens of the country.

*Question.* Were any school-houses burned in that section of the country?

*Answer.* No, sir, none were burned. I have a couple of letters, which will show something of the state of feeling existing among our teachers in consequence of this state of things. I would like to read them, if the committee will hear them.

*Question.* Were they written to you?

*Answer.* They were written to Mr. Bishop, the county superintendent. I was present in his office when they were received. They were written by two of the teachers—one named Galloway, and the other named Leake.

*Question.* Were they written to Mr. Bishop in his official capacity?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Please read the letters.

*Answer.* One of the letters is as follows:

"COLUMBUS, MARY'S ACADEMY, *April* 10, 1871.

"Mr. BISHOP: I hasten to send you my report. * * * * *

"I understand you said you were coming out to see us. Now let me tell you not to do it. The K. K.'s are so outrageous. I am afraid they would hurt you if they did not kill you. I don't think it possible for the schools to go on here unless we have troops to keep the peace.

"The K. K's visited me last Wednesday night; told me not to teach another week; said also that every free school had to stop, that there should [not] be any taxes taken to pay for schools. I heard that all the schools above here had to be stopped after to-day.

"Please answer this note, and send it by the bearer; but send it sealed, and tell me what you think under the circumstances. * * * * *

"Yours truly,

"J. F. G."

The initials "J. F. G." mean J. F. Galloway. He was afraid to come himself, and he sent this note by a little negro boy.

Here is the other letter:

"MARCH 31, 1871.

"Mr. J. N. BISHOP:

"DEAR SIR: I saw a man yesterday from Cedar Grove. He said the Ku-Klux called on the schoolteacher and ordered him to close his school.

"I received a message late last evening that they were coming to see me this week. *I am here—that's all.*

"Respectfully,

"T. J. LEAKE."

*Question.* Is there anything else you wish to state upon the subject of schools?

*Answer.* I would like to state that I have here a circular issued by the county superintendent, which I would like the committee to examine, and I would be glad to have it appended to my testimony. [See page 453.] I wish also to state that the great idea which seemed to prevail among those people in that section of the country was intense opposition to schools for the blacks; that was the great hobby; they said they were not in favor of having people pay tax to educate the negroes. There are in this circular statistics which show conclusively that such talk was all false and utterly ridiculous; that the portion of the poll-tax of the county which under the constitution of the State went exclusively to the support of public schools, together with our *pro rata* proportion of the State fund, which is distributed *per capita*, (there being a much larger number of blacks in our county than whites)—the income derived from these sources for the support of public schools would fully if not more than support them, so that they would not require for their support one dollar of direct tax upon the property of the county.

*Question.* Had you laid any tax upon the property of the county?

*Answer.* There was a tax levied in accordance with the constitution and the laws. It was levied by the board of supervisors to the amount of $21,000 for that portion of the county outside of the city of Columbus, and $6,000 within the city, which was a separate district. But a public meeting was held in Columbus, and there was a great deal of opposition expressed in regard to the tax and the public schools. The gist of the whole matter was opposition to free schools. A meeting was held and a committee appointed to wait on the board of supervisors. Some of the board were timid and vacillating men; and upon improper representations the board repealed the entire school-tax, and ordered the sheriff to refund the portion which had already been collected, which was about one-half or two-thirds of the tax.

*Question.* Do you mean the school-tax upon the property of the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* So that you were running your schools under the general State fund—what is known as the Chickasaw school-fund?

*Answer.* Only a portion of our county is within the Chickasaw cession. Our portion of that fund was but small, and it was pretty much squandered.

*Question.* You were running your schools upon the general school-fund and the poll-tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That general fund comes from the State, and should be distributed about the 1st of June. To entitle us to our share of that fund, it was necessary that the schools should have continued four months. We intended to have the schools continue five months; but we abandoned that idea after the repeal of this tax, when we were left without funds. In fact, the repeal of that tax was simply repudiation; it amounted to nothing else in the world. The teachers have not received a dollar of pay yet.

*Question.* You ran your schools, then, so far as you did run them, from the general State school-fund?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from that and the poll-tax.

*Question.* Did the colored people generally pay that poll-tax?

*Answer.* They are paying pretty well now. I have talked with a great many of them. I am satisfied that my acquaintance through the country is as extensive as that of any man in the county. I lived last year and for two or three years before on my plantation near Artesia, in the western part of the county—a very populous black district. The black people out there were perfectly willing to pay their poll-tax. It has been alleged as a ground of complaint, through the county and through the country generally, that the blacks have not paid their taxes, and particularly that they have not paid their poll-tax. But I am satisfied that where they have failed to do so it has been more the fault of the sheriffs of the counties than their fault. There were several of us this time who went to the sheriff and told him that he must make an honest effort to collect the poll-tax from the people; that they were willing to pay it; and that if he did not collect it faithfully, we intended to hold him responsible. I intended to make a motion against him and his securities at the next term of the

court if he did not make an honest effort and exhaust every means to collect this tax. The non-collection of this tax had been made a great cause of complaint; and we were determined that that ground of complaint should not exist, particularly when the people were willing to pay the tax. The sheriff appointed men to go into the different parts of the county; and for some weeks they have been collecting the tax readily and largely.

*Question.* From the colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In some cases the employers make arrangements to pay the tax for them and take it out of the crop. There are very few instances, so far as I have heard, where they are not entirely willing to pay. Sometimes they have not understood how it was assessed, &c.; but whenever they have understood it, they have shown their willingness to pay it; and if they did not have the means, they would try to make some shift to pay it by an arrangement with their employers or something of that kind.

*Question.* Have there been any whippings in your county in addition to what you have already mentioned?

*Answer.* Those that I have spoken of particularly were whippings in the county of Lowndes; but there is one other case which I omitted to mention. It occurred last fall, or rather last winter. There was a black man named Mason, who was killed in the southeastern part of the county in December, 1870, by a body of disguised men. He was shot in his house.

*Question.* What was the assigned cause for that act?

*Answer.* None of us have been able to trace it to any particular cause, unless it was that the negro was an influential man in his neighborhood. I heard at the time that it was probable he had had some little dispute with his employer, a young man named Holbert, about a settlement for the crop; but Mr. Holbert did not take any notice of the affair during the day or for some days afterward. He evidently did not attach sufficient importance to it to do anything with the negro. Two or three nights afterward these disguised men came and shot this negro. They did not kill him, but mortally wounded him; he died in the course of a day or two. There was no investigation had in regard to the matter; not even an inquest was held on him.

*Question.* Can you state any whippings that have occurred since February?

*Answer.* There was another case of whipping just on the line between Lowndes and Noxubee Counties. It occurred in the fall, before the case I have just mentioned. The man whipped was a freedman by the name of Harston, on Major George Harston's place. The general understanding in the country at the time was, that this man was whipped, or pretty severely beaten. The Ku-Klux on that night were going after a white man named Brookshire, who lived on the edge of Noxubee County, and who, it was alleged, had been trading a great deal with the freedmen, receiving their cotton, corn, and produce generally. This party of men had been at Brookshire's house and had notified him what they would do with him if he did not quit trading in that way. They were going along through the country when, as it was said, this man Harston said something to them—asked them where they were going, or said, perhaps, that he was not afraid of them. They fell upon him and beat him terribly. Whether that party was from Lowndes or Noxubee County I do not know. The affair happened right on the line between Lowndes and Noxubee. As showing the tendency of this thing in our part of the country, I will state two cases which satisfy my mind of the great danger of any such organization. There was a man by the name of Kendrick, up in Caledonia, in the northeastern part of the county, who was put in possession of certain property as tenant, under an attorney at Columbus, by the name of Love, to hold possession for the plaintiff in an ejectment suit. Some other parties by the name of Anderson, who were defendants, were contending for the land; and it was understood through the country that they had some connection with the Ku-Klux, or knew who they were, if nothing more. On one of their raids one night these Ku-Klux went to the house of this man Kendrick and ordered him, under heavy penalties, to vacate the premises immediately. He had his crop upon it; the cotton and corn were just coming up. He was a very poor man. He was frightened so badly that he did not even wait for daylight, but went off in the night-time, as I understand from one of the neighbors; he got his team and wagon, put his movable property and his family in, and left the country immediately. The other parties, or some of their sub-tenants, came and took possession of the land.

There was another case, which occurred in the latter part of April or 1st of May, about three miles or three miles and a half from Columbus. There was an old freedman by the name of Joe Beckwith. He lived with a man by the name of Wynne, formerly sheriff of the county. There was a kind of report going through the country that during the war Colonel Wynne had buried a large amount of gold in his garden. This old freedman had another freedman, a little boy, working with him in the garden. He was sinking a post in the garden. The boy in digging a hole struck a piece of iron or something of that kind. The little fellow stopped digging and asked the old man whether he did not think that was where Colonel Wynne had his gold buried. The

old man told him no, he reckoned not, and passed the matter off lightly. About 12 o'clock the little fellow struck out and never made his appearance any more. The old man did not know what had become of him. A few nights after that, probably ten days or two weeks afterward, there came a body of men riding around. The old man said he heard them crossing the bridge above. The next night they came to his house. He lived in a rather secluded place. They came to his gate and pretended to have lost their way, and they called him out. He never suspected anything. They told him they had gotten off the big road and wanted to inquire their way back to it. He went out to the gate, and they collared him and told him they wanted him to tell them where that gold was buried. He protested that he did not know anything about it—that it was an idle tale. They told him that that would not begin to do; that he had to tell them the place where it was buried. They put a rope around his neck, carried it around a tree, and swung him up a time or two. He persisted in saying that he knew nothing about the matter. They then recited the story about the boy striking the iron in the garden. They took the old fellow and made him dig a large part of the garden that night. They could not find anything at all; but they were not satisfied. These were disguised men; there were four of them who did this part of the business. They then took the negro a little distance down the road and hung him a little worse. Finally they hung him so badly that they thought he was pretty nearly dead, and they left him lying on the ground. He says he did not know anything further of what occurred until next morning toward daylight, or after daylight, he managed to crawl to the house. He was laid up for five or six weeks. The old man who employed him—a man by the name of Eggleston, as responsible a man as anybody about there—told me that the old man's eyes were almost popped out of his head by the hanging, and the marks of the rope were on his neck; he was in a terrible fix, and it was some time before he could get out at all.

We undertook to investigate that case through the police, and we were pretty well satisfied as to who the parties were and where they came from; but the evidence was not sufficient to insure their conviction, although the presumption was so great as to amount almost to a moral certainty. The man who wanted them prosecuted was not willing upon the strength of the evidence as it stood to make an affidavit against the parties.

This old man with whom the negro was living had a widowed daughter, who was living on his place; her husband died some time ago. She was known in the neighborhood to have a great deal of jewelry; that is, a great deal for our people in these times.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who was she?

*Answer.* Mrs. Wynne, a widow. These men inquired very particularly whether she was home. She had been absent on a visit, and had just gotten back that night, bringing some friends with her. The men went down toward the house, (so some of the servants on the place stated,) and finding that there were friends in the house with her, they went on and did not stop there at all. As to what they proposed to do, any one of course can draw his own inferences.

So far as Lowndes County is concerned, that is the extent of the active outbreaks that have been made by disguised men in that county. Such operations are confined principally, you understand, to the eastern, the northeastern, and the northern part of the county, adjoining the Alabama line, and the line of Monroe County.

I will state that parties have mentioned to me the whipping of several freedmen whom they have named. One, who I recollect was named Joe Allen, was pretty severely whipped in the Caledonia neighborhood some time in June. He went to Aberdeen, and from there I understood he went before the grand jury at Oxford, and reported his case. So far as that portion of the county is concerned, the people are in a state of terror. They are afraid to acknowledge that they know anything about these parties of men; they are afraid to do anything in opposition to them; in fact, for a part of the time in November they were almost afraid to talk above a whisper in regard to anything of the sort.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Have you heard of any further whippings in that county?

*Answer.* Not in that county. I will state particularly, though, one matter that occurred in June. A letter directed to the Ku-Klux was put in the post office at Caledonia. I took some pains afterward to inquire who was the party that put it in, and also the nature of the letter. A direction was indorsed on the letter, stating that it was not to be given to anybody except the Ku-Klux themselves. The postmaster told his clerk not to deliver that letter; that if any parties called for it while he was absent, to send for him so that he might deliver it; that he wanted to know who got it. One night—early in the night—something like one hundred disguised men—from one hundred to one hundred and twenty—came to the post office and demanded this letter. The young fellow, named Groves, who was a clerk in the store, was very much excited, and told them what the postmaster had said about giving the letter out. He said he would go

after the postmaster, or they could send for him, and he would give them the letter himself. The postmaster, who was named Carter, was sent for. He came up and delivered the letter to the captain or chief of the men. They opened it and went off.

The neighbors state that these people are in the habit of riding up and down the roads at night, creating a great deal of alarm among persons who are not connected with them, and among the families in the neighborhood. About two weeks ago a gentleman, who is as intelligent as any in that part of the county—a strong democrat, but in every way an excellent man—said to me, "You know I was a Ku-Klux man up to the hub; I never was a member of the order, but I agreed with them in their operations. I now want to tell you that I have changed my opinion." I asked him what had changed his opinion. He said that one night when they were on these raids against the public schools, they came to his house and called him out. He said he had no personal fear himself as to what they were going to do to him. He stated that they told him he should not send his two children to a certain public school, a mile and a half from his house, which was taught by a Miss Feemster; that if he did he must take the consequences. They said they would be back in a certain time, and they told him what would be the result if he did not obey their orders.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was this a public school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think the ground of their objection was that it was a public school?

*Answer.* The man had sent his children there before it was a public school, and no objections were made at that time. He said that this circumstance had produced a perfect revolution in his mind; and that he had never before thought of the danger of such an organization, and of its interference with individual rights. He said that this circumstance had produced such a change in his mind that he now went just as far opposition to the organization as he was formerly in favor of it.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What is the county immediately south of your county?

*Answer.* Noxubee.

*Question.* Have you heard of any operations in that county?

*Answer.* Well, sir, Noxubee and Monroe have been considered the worst Ku-Klux counties in Mississippi.

*Question.* State what you know in regard to Noxubee County.

*Answer.* I can only state what I have heard generally as to the character of the operations in that county, except in one particular case. This case was the first by which my attention was particularly attracted to these matters. It occurred on a plantation belonging to my wife's aunt. I had cultivated the place a couple of years myself since the close of the war. It belongs to this lady and a couple of minor orphan children. I know that the freedmen on the place were considerably above the average as to good character and intelligence. I went down with my aunt to the place in the latter part of October or the first of November, to lease it out for the coming year, or to make some arrangements for its cultivation. There was living on the place a white man, named Rev. John B. Baldwin, a Methodist preacher. He had cultivated most of the place during 1870, but he did not want it all for this year. I told my aunt that I thought her best plan would be to let Baldwin have what he wanted and to rent the balance to the freedmen. Baldwin said he agreed to that; that he did not want but 200 acres. There were 500 acres of open land, and she rented 200 to Baldwin and about 300 to the freedmen. Among the freedmen who rented land was an old man by the name of Isham Lowry, another by the name of Dick Malone, and another by the name of Isham Malone. We made regular leases with them as we would with anybody else. A great many people had been renting their land in that way. We made leases, which were properly stamped and recorded, just as if we were dealing with white men. On the night of the 7th of November, 1870, a body of these Ku-Klux, or disguised men, came to that plantation and went to the house of this old freedman Isham Lowry. They got admittance, he not knowing who they were. I am not certain now whether he opened the door of his own accord or whether they threatened him as to what they would do if he did not open it. At any rate, they went into his house, made him kindle a light, and they beat him very severely indeed. The house was a double cabin with a chimney in the center. A freedman named Fed Malone lived in the opposite end of the house, and there was a kind of a loft to the building. Old Isham, when the men commenced to beat him, began to scream and pray and beg. Fed Malone became so frightened that he ran into this loft at the top of the house. He was up there a good part of the time, and, being a pretty intelligent fellow, could give a pretty straight account of things. There was another freedman on the place, named Dick Malone—the man I spoke of a while ago. I believe he was as good a freedman as there was in that part of the country. He had been a blacksmith on the farm and he did a great deal of the neighborhood blacksmithing. So far as I know or heard, he was a peaceful,

quiet, inoffensive negro, as much so as any I know anywhere. He knew everybody in the neighborhood, and all the horses and everything of that kind. His wife says (and her statement is abundantly corroborated by other evidence) that Dick, hearing the noise, went to the door, and saw the horses all covered with those Ku-Klux disguises. He did not know what it meant; it was a new thing to him. He immediately ran across the quarter (he was on the opposite side of the quarter, or row of cabins) and got right in among the crowd before he knew the meaning of the thing. The witnesses stated that he evidently recognized several of the parties, and addressed them with a kind of pleasant surprise, saying, for instance, "Captain so and so, is this you? What are you doing here?" He recognized also the horses.

*Question.* Did he call any of the parties by name?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They took hold of him, cursed him and abused him, and told him they were going to kill him, or something of that kind. He then became alarmed, and, as Fed Malone and others testified, he begged most piteously for his life. He asked them if they were going to kill him when his wife and children were all dependent upon him. They fired one shot right through his heart and killed him instantly. The only motive which I could discover for that act (and I looked very closely into the matter) was that the parties must have been afraid of detection through his evidence; I believe they killed him only to escape detection.

*Question.* How many disguised parties were present that night?

*Answer.* As nearly as I could learn from the information I have been able to get, there were about forty.

*Question.* How far from the town of Macon is the place where this occurred?

*Answer.* I think it is exactly thirteen miles from the plantation gate to the town of Macon, the county-seat, which is about five or six miles from Brooksville.

*Question.* Does Mr. Baskervill live in the town of Macon?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. His plantation is near Brooksville, just about six miles from the Malone place. His place of business, however, is in Macon. He is in the insurance business, and lives in the town of Macon. A large number of freedmen were whipped on that night; some of them pretty severely. I did have their names in my memorandum book at one time; but I do not find them now. I should say there were at least six whipped.

*Question.* On the same plantation?

*Answer.* No, sir; on other places. There were no others whipped on that plantation. There was one freedman, I recollect now, named Ben Daily; and I also recollect another by the name of David Mueller. There were four others. I am satisfied there were as many as six.

*Question.* Whipped that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What night was that?

*Answer.* That was the night of November 7, 1870.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* State any other cases that you recollect.

*Answer.* There have been a great many other cases in the county of Noxubee. I have been informed of them through parties who have said they had seen those who were whipped, and some who were killed. I recollect particularly now the case of a man killed near Sugar Lock. I do not remember his name, but I recollect that the fact was told to me.

*Question.* Was his name "Bully Jack?"

*Answer.* I do not recollect his name.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was killed in the neighborhood of Sugar Lock, about seven or eight miles below Macon. Then there were some two or more murders in the southeastern part of Noxubee County, in the neighborhood of Cooksville. The Ku-Klux were said to be very bad in that neighborhood. It was very close to the Alabama line.

*Question.* How many were said to have been killed there?

*Answer.* At least two or more.

*Question.* By men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any considerable number of whippings?

*Answer.* I have heard of a considerable number in Noxubee County. I should say that a reasonable or low estimate of the number of cases of which I have heard from reliable parties—cases which I have never investigated myself, but about which I have obtained information from parties in whom I have confidence, and who, I believe, would not state anything unless it was true—would be at least a dozen.

*Question.* Within what time?

*Answer.* Within eight or ten months.

*Question.* Any of them within the last two or three months?

*Answer.* They extended up to within the last few months, and extended back, I should say, ten months pretty continuously, being a little worse last spring and during the fall than very recently.

*Question.* Have you heard of any ridings round?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; such things are notorious. They create great consternation among the freedmen. No man who has not seen the effect and talked with those people about it, can form any idea of the consternation which a Ku-Klux raid, as we call it, creates among the negroes. It frightens them nearly to death.

*Question.* Does their fear arise from the dread of assassination where the law gives no protection?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they feel that they are perfectly helpless unless they take their guns in their hands and go out to defend themselves.

*Question.* Do they keep guard at night?

*Answer.* For many reasons, of course, that would not do if it was possible to do anything else; but I am satisfied that unless the United States courts can afford some protection the people will be compelled to resort to that, because they cannot stand these things always.

*Question.* Suppose the colored men, taking their guns in their hands, should congregate together and guard the roads at night; what effect would that produce?

*Answer.* I think its effect would be very bad; it might produce riot in the country.

*Question.* Would it lead to a collision between the races?

*Answer.* I think it very likely it would; in fact, I think it would be pretty certain to produce that result.

*Question.* Does the fear of that deter the colored people from resorting to that mode of defense?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Of course they feel unwilling to bring on anything of that kind. They want to have every protection given to them that the Government can possibly afford; and they would not adopt any measure of that kind, except as a last resort; but I believe they would do it as an ultimate resort; and that is another of the very great and extreme dangers which many of us in that country fear from this organization.

*Question.* Do you think that the operations of that organization are calculated to bring about that collision between the races?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am satisfied of that; I think it leads necessarily to that end, because people cannot submit forever to be beaten and deprived of every right in a free country. If the Government cannot protect them, they will have to protect themselves. That is the way they feel about it.

*Question.* Do these operations interfere with the labor of the freedmen?

*Answer.* Very much, indeed. And I will state in this connection, that it seems to be the most short-sighted policy in the world, on the part of the people there, to practice or countenance anything of this kind. I am satisfied that we have had an accession to our laboring population of very nearly one thousand good hands from the laboring population of Alabama, on account of these Ku-Klux operations. The colored people will not stay there, because they say there is no protection for them at all; that they are liable to be whipped, and beaten, and killed.

*Question.* They come to your county because it is more quiet?

*Answer.* It had been up to last spring; but, as I told you, last spring, in the northeastern part of our county, things broke loose, and became about as bad as they possibly could be.

*Question.* Previous to that there had been an accession to the population of the county because other counties were so much disturbed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe there was an accession of fully a thousand.

*Question.* How is it that persons who own land do not oppose an organization which interferes so much with labor?

*Answer.* I think, in the first place, that a great many of them are afraid to do it; and, in the second place, some of them sympathize with it. I think a great many of them sympathized with it at one time; but I believe that many of them now see its evil effects, and are not disposed to sympathize with it or sustain it in any way. But I believe the large mass of the people are afraid of the consequences if they actively oppose it.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill spoke of an occurrence in the county of Noxubee, where, I think, a colored man in the custody of a constable was chained in an out-house, and during the night was either taken out or made his escape, and he has not been heard of since. Do you know anything of that case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I recollect hearing of a case of that kind. That was a recent occurrence. I will state what I heard of it, just exactly as I heard it from persons living in the immediate neighborhood—one man who lives on the adjoining plantation, and another who lives three or four miles off, both white men, and both men of standing in the community.

By Mr. BLAIR?

*Question.* What are their names?

*Answer.* One is named John W. Chandler, and the other Dr. Matt Clay. They are both large planters in the neighborhood. Their accounts differ a little in regard to some of the facts, but the main features agree. One statement was that this man borrowed a mule from his employer, Mr. Moore, to ride down to see some of his kinspeople, in Lowndes County, fifteen or twenty miles distant; that he did not return at the time he agreed to return, and Mr. Moore thought he had stolen the mule; but he finally brought the mule back, when Mr. Moore had him arrested for stealing. The other account was that the negro had taken the mule without Mr. Moore's leave, although Mr. Moore knew who had the mule, and had ridden it off; that Mr. Moore sent some persons after him, and brought him back; that Mr. Moore recovered his property, and that the magistrate tried the man upon the affidavit of Mr. Moore.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You mean investigated the case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I mean investigated it. Of course he could not have tried it regularly. If the charge was true, the case would have been one of grand larceny. The magistrate bound the man over to appear at the next term of the circuit court. The evidence, however, as I understood it from both these parties, was slight, and did not show positively any intent to steal; in other words, the felonious intent necessary to constitute the offense did not appear; but I suppose the magistrate was desirous to have the case investigated by a higher tribunal, and bound the party over to appear at the next term of the circuit court. The man was not able to give the bond required, and the magistrate put him in the charge of a constable named Bridges, who lived some two or three miles from the magistrate's office, in the opposite direction from the county-seat, and over towards the Alabama line.

*Question.* Bridges was charged with the duty of taking the man to the public jail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he had a regular *mittimus* for him to put him in the public jail of the county?

*Question.* And instead of taking the prisoner to the public jail, he went in the opposite direction?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he went to his own house. It was in the afternoon when the investigation terminated, and he carried the man to his own house, in the opposite direction from the jail, stating that he would take him to the jail the next day.

*Question.* Was this in the most disturbed portion of the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that and the northwestern part of the county were the most disturbed portions of the county. Bridges took the prisoner and shut him up in an outhouse on his place, which had been used for a school-house—a building not very far off but still some distance from his residence. The next morning the man was gone.

*Question.* Did Bridges leave the prisoner in that out-house alone?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he chain him?

*Answer.* No, sir; he just locked him up, as I understood from those gentlemen, and secured the door in some way. The next morning the man was missing. One of these gentlemen, Mr. Chandler, stated a very essential circumstance, and I do not believe he would state it unless it was true. He said that when the man was missing the next morning, a note to this effect was found in the house where he had been confined: "Don't be alarmed; we've got him."

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*uestion.* Was that note signed by any one?

*Answer.* No, sir. If it was stated that it was signed, I do not recollect the circumstance, and I paid very particular attention to what Mr. Chandler stated on that point. That created a great deal of uneasiness in the neighborhood. The father of the negro who was missing lived on the adjoining plantation; and some of the negro's kinspeople became, of course, very restless, uneasy, and excited about it. They looked about through the country to see if they could discover anything of the missing man. There were some reports that he had been seen up in Lowndes County, and at Artesia, on the railroad, and at Aberdeen, and other places. But these reports could not be traced to any definite source. On the Sunday night afterward—I think this occurrence happened on Friday or Saturday—the negroes, as I understood, went to the house of this man Bridges to inquire of him something about the negro, or to demand of him why he had not been kept safely, or carried properly to the jail. Opinion in the neighborhood differs as to the purpose of that party of negroes—whether they went there to assault Mr. Bridges—but from what I hear and believe, I do not think they had any intention to do Mr. Bridges any harm, or make any assault upon him, either as an officer or as an individual. I think they went for the purpose of getting information from him and trying to trace the negro up, to see what had become of him. One of these gentlemen stated that the negroes had their guns. I asked him especially how they came to have their guns on Sunday, when they went to Mr. Bridges' house. He said that they

had been around in the swamps of the river, &c., hunting for the man; that they had taken their guns along; that they had met at a little place called Bigbee Valley, where there was a store and a mill, and had come back by way of Bridges' house. He said he had no idea they intended to do Bridges any harm or violence. Bridges got frightened; and when he saw them, before they had any interview with him at all, went out of his back door and ran off.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you hear that he fired into the crowd?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard that.

*Question.* Did you hear that they fired forty or fifty shots at him?

*Answer.* No, sir. My idea was that he became alarmed and ran away out the back door. I never heard of any firing either at him by the negroes, or by him at them.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill stated that Bridges fired into the negroes first, and I think he said they fired fifty shots at him, but nobody was hurt.

*Answer.* The matter was greatly exaggerated through the country; but these parties residing in the neighborhood would, I think, be likely to know what was correct.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Mr. Chandler made no mention of the shooting to you?

*Answer.* No, sir; nor did Dr. Clay.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Is it likely that the negroes of the neighborhood, in the then excited condition of affairs, would have gone with any hostile purpose to Mr. Bridges' house?

*Answer.* I do not believe they would.

*Question.* They were not disguised?

*Answer.* O, no, sir; not at all. They went in the day-time. It was late on Sunday afternoon.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill said that they went at night.

*Answer.* I am satisfied that that is a mistake. The most that can be said is, that it was late in the afternoon. I am positive that it was not in the night.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was the man who was missing ever heard of afterward?

*Answer.* There was a man found drowned in the river, a short distance from there. The report which I heard was, that the body was very much bloated from having been in the water, probably, for some time; but the black people in the neighborhood said they recognized certain parts of the man's clothing.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* As the clothing of the prisoner who was missing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What time of the year was this?

*Answer.* It has not been more than four or five weeks ago.

*Question.* Do steamboats run up that river in the summer time?

*Answer.* No, sir, they do not; the river has been too low for some considerable time for any boat to run up there.

*Question.* I think it has been stated in evidence here, that a man had fallen from a steamboat and been drowned in that river; and it was supposed that the body found was that of the man who had fallen from the steamboat?

*Answer.* I think that must be a mistake, for I am confident that no steamboat had been that high up the river for some time. I am sure the river was too low.

*Question.* How long since any boats had been running there?

*Answer.* I think it would be safe to say that it had been six weeks or two months since any boat had been up that part of the river.

*Question.* Then you think this story, about the body found being that of a negro who had fallen from a steamboat, was not true?

*Answer.* I think so. It was not only improbable, but I believe from my knowledge that the thing was impossible.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you think anybody would attempt to get up such an improbable story as you represent this to be? Would not every man there know that the story was improbable?

*Answer.* I should judge so, because the river had evidently been for some time too low for steamboats to navigate.

*Question.* Was not that known to everybody?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What then would be the sense of getting up such a story?
*Answer.* I do not think there would be any sense in it, unless they might expect to create some capital among people who did not know any better.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything stated in that community about a man having fallen from a steamboat?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Did you hear that from those two gentlemen?
*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* How far from Mr. Bridges' house was the place where the body of this negro was found?
*Answer.* I know the general neighborhood, but I do not know the exact place on which Mr. Bridges lives. I should say the distance was not over three or four miles—anyhow not over five miles—probably not over three.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You think that such a report about a man having fallen from a steamboat could not deceive anybody in that locality?
*Answer.* I do not think it could.
*Question.* State any other occurrence which you know anything about.
*Answer.* So far as Noxubee is concerned, I know no other case positively, except those I have stated. From other parties, whom I believe to be reliable and truthful, I have information in regard to Winston, Monroe, and part of Oktibbeha County.
*Question.* Have you heard of frequent ridings by these disguised men in the county of Noxubee?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* During last spring?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Have you heard of the whipping of any women in that county?
*Answer.* No, sir; I have not heard of the whipping of any women there. I know that in Winston County there was a white woman run off from the neighborhood by disguised parties; she went over into Noxubee, and was living on the eastern edge of that county; she was sent for to that place, I understand, as a witness before the circuit court.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was she run off for?
*Answer.* I do not know; I did not hear; I simply have an impression as to why she was run off; but I do not know positively.
*Question.* What was the reason?
*Answer.* I do not know the reason; my impression is that probably she was a lewd woman; I think that likely from what I have heard; I have not heard anything positive on the subject; I just gather that from the general circumstances of the case and developments which I heard connected with it.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You say you understood that there were parties killed near Cooksville, Noxubee County?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I understood there were as many as two killed there, and considerable disturbances in that neighborhood.
*Question.* And you heard of some in the neighborhood of Sugar Lock?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Within the last eight or ten months?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Do you recollect whether Mr. Huggins was whipped in that neighborhood?
*Answer.* He was whipped in Monroe County; I recollect that circumstance quite distinctly.
*Question.* In what county does Mr. Charles M. Doss live?
*Answer.* In the northwestern part of Noxubee County.
*Question.* What is the character of Mr. Doss?
*Answer.* He has the reputation of being a violent man.
*Question.* Have you lived in the county of Noxubee?
*Answer.* No, sir; I cultivated land there for two years, on the Malone place; I know large numbers of people there.
*Question.* You say Mr. Doss is a man of violent character?
*Answer.* That is his reputation; he is personally a clever man; but he is evidently overbearing and violent.
*Question.* Has he any connection with the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That is his reputation in that country.

*Question.* Is it reputed that he is a captain, or chief, among them?

*Answer.* It is reputed that he is a captain.

*Question.* In that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State whether he has made any demonstration against the civil officers there at any time, or on more occasions than one.

*Answer.* I heard the city marshal of Macon, and others from there, say that he defied the civil authorities in Macon whenever he pleased, and that there was but one man, McInnis, who was city marshal a while, who could do anything with him; that as to the balance, whenever he got drunk or took a notion, he could run right over them, and do pretty much as he pleased. I recollect that at one time last spring there was a case that created considerable remark through the country. I heard several lawyers speak of it. There was a magistrate's court convened to investigate a case of murder, where a man named Eskridge was charged with killing a man at Sugar Lock. Three magistrates were on the bench trying the case, and Doss was among those present in the court-room. The magistrates, I think, had ordered that a certain door in the court-room should be closed, and that all parties wishing to go out should pass through another door, so as not to interrupt the proceedings of the court. Doss determined that he would go out of that door which the magistrates had ordered closed. The sheriff and others tried to expostulate with him; but Doss swore that he would pass through that door, cursing loudly in the court-room. According to the report that I heard, he drew his pistol and rushed on the stand where the judges were; and his conduct just broke up the court. It was said that the sheriff was afraid to make any effort to arrest Doss, but that one of his deputies tried to do so, and that the sheriff then and there discharged the deputy, telling him that he would not have an officer who acted in that way. The deputy said he was trying to do his duty. The deputy told me himself that the sheriff discharged him for no other reason in the world than that he tried to arrest the man, and to preserve order in the court.

*Question.* Of what politics is that sheriff?

*Answer.* Well, sir, it is hard to tell. He was appointed by Governor Alcorn; but it is pretty hard to tell what he is. He is a milk-and-cider sort of a man. I should say pretty strongly that he is not a republican. I do not know positively that he is a democrat; I suppose he would call himself a conservative.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You do not suppose that any republicans are "milk-and-cider men?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them. I think that if that sheriff was any sort of a republican at all, he was one of that kind.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Who is the judge of your circuit?

*Answer.* Judge J. A. Orr.

*Question.* Is he a good judge?

*Answer.* One of the best we have had in that State, and I think as good as any in the country. He is a man of fine ability—a lawyer of high standing.

*Question.* Is he especially rigid in the enforcement of the criminal law upon guilty parties, provided the juries will convict?

*Answer.* Remarkably so. There was a judge in that country a good many years ago named Harris, who was a "terror to evil-doers;" but Judge Orr is, if anything, more rigid than he was in the execution of the criminal law, wherever it is possible to have the law enforced, and where the proper evidence can be obtained.

*Question.* Have those colored men in Noxubee County who went to the constable's house been arrested by the State authorities?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were arrested by this justice of the peace, who bound over the man that was charged with taking the mule. Some eighteen or twenty were arrested and committed to jail in Macon for want of bail.

*Question.* Arrested on what charge?

*Answer.* On the charge of creating a riot.

*Question.* Have the State authorities ever arrested men for the whippings and murders of which you spoke?

*Answer.* I never heard of one being arrested or of any effort of that kind being made.

*Question.* Has that magistrate ever taken any proceeding against the constable, who, instead of taking the negro prisoner to jail, carried him in a different direction?

*Answer.* None that I have ever heard of.

*Question.* Was any inquest held over the body of the negro who was found drowned in the river?

*Answer.* No, sir; not so far as I have heard.

*Question.* Have you heard of an inquest being held over the body of any negroes killed in that county?

*Answer.* There was an inquest (the only one I ever heard of) held on the body of Dick Malone. That was held by a justice of the peace; but there were no arrests made, or anything of that sort.

*Question.* Winston County is west of Noxubee County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* State the condition of things in the county of Winston, so far as you have heard.

*Answer.* So far as I have heard, there is in the county generally a very bad state of affairs, and especially in the eastern part of the county. It is just a reign of terror.

*Question.* You mean the portion of the county bordering on Noxubee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is there a worse condition of affairs in the county of Winston than in Noxubee?

*Answer.* Well, I cannot say that there is; but it is certainly very bad. In a part of the county I should say it was, if anything, worse.

*Question.* State what you consider to be the condition of things in Winston.

*Answer.* Well, I know that a great many of the white people there—people in moderate circumstances and poor people—are really afraid of their lives unless they agree in their views with certain parties. These disguised men ride through the country there, and the citizens are afraid to take any active steps in opposition to them for fear of their lives. That is the statement that comes to me.

*Question.* When you say that they are afraid of their lives unless they agree with certain parties, what do you mean?

*Answer.* I mean that they are afraid of these disguised men—people who are generally recognized there as Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Who are afraid of them?

*Answer.* The people generally of the country, except their own set. Several parties have told me that numbers of white men there have said that if they could possibly sell out, or if they had any means of getting away, they would quit the country.

*Question.* Were those white men republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that they were. If they were, I have not heard of them in that connection. Nor do I know they are not.

*Question.* Are the colored men generally the class most afraid?

*Answer.* Of course, if this class of white men are afraid, the black people would be in infinitely more fear.

*Question.* Are the depredations of the Ku-Klux generally aimed at the colored people?

*Answer.* I know of one negro over there having been killed in the immediate neighborhood I speak of.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* In Winston?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was a negro by the name of Triplet, who used to belong to an old man named Jack Triplet.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* State the circumstances of that case.

*Answer.* He was shot in his house last fall. He was sitting in his house one night along with his wife, when a party of these disguised men came. A gun was poked through a crack in the house, and he was shot and mortally wounded; he died very soon afterward.

*Question.* On whose plantation was that?

*Answer.* I do not know. I think the man was living to himself. He had been living with old man Triplet, but he was then living, I think, to himself, on some rented land, or with some other party in the neighborhood.

*Question.* Had this affair any connection with his leaving Mr. Triplet?

*Answer.* I heard it had. I know nothing about it of my own knowledge; but it was stated to me by other parties that after living with Mr. Triplet some time he had finally left him; that the old man wanted him to come back; that the negro would not do it; and that there had been some threats, or something of that kind made; and finally he was killed.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There is a direct implication in your statement that this man was killed at the instigation of Triplet. Do you believe, upon the information you have received, that that is the fact?

*Answer.* I believe that from the information I have received; I would not make an affidavit against a party on that kind of information, unless I had a number of witnesses to sustain it.

*Question.* Who gave you the information?

*Answer.* White men.

*Question.* Let us know who they are.

*Answer.* The information comes through a man by the name of Ambrose Parks, who lives in the immediate neighborhood of Triplet.

*Question.* Did he state this to you?

*Answer.* No, sir; he stated it to another party, who stated it to me.

*Question.* Who was the party that stated it to you?

*Answer.* There are certain reasons why I would not like to tell who the other party is. The man who gave me the information did not want his name connected with it. He is a man who can be produced.

*Question.* How can he be produced when you will not tell his name?

*Answer.* He could be produced upon any trial or investigation there in the country.

*Question.* I insist upon an answer to the question, who was the man that gave this information? I do not think we are here to arraign men for murder upon anonymous information.

*Answer.* I think he has already been arraigned in the courts of the country.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Why do you desire not to give the name? Is your reason connected with any matter of public justice, or with the executive department of the State?

*Answer.* It is indirectly. I believe that to give the name would probably defeat the ends of justice; and I decidedly prefer not to give it.

*Question.* Are you willing to give the name to General Blair privately, in order that he may summon the witness, if he desires to investigate this matter?

*Answer.* I am.

*Question.* Do you desire to withhold the name of this witness for any other reason than that you believe that giving it would tend to defeat the ends of justice, and interfere with the operations of the governor of the State in his investigation of these cases?

*Answer.* I have no other reason for declining.

*Question.* Have you given the name of that witness to General Blair privately?

*Answer.* I have.

[After discussion by the committee, the CHAIRMAN (Mr. POOL) announced it as the opinion of the majority that it was not proper for the name to be given, so as to be placed in the printed evidence.]

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question* State the character of Mr. Jack Triplet, so far as you have learned it.

*Answer.* So far as I have learned his character, it is that he is rather a violent man, and that he is the head-leader of these Ku-Klux in his part of the country. I state that as his reputation.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I understood you to say or intimate that he was a very old man?

*Answer.* He is not a very old man; but he is an elderly man. I cannot state his age with exact certainty; but he is a man past the meridian of life.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do you say that he has been arraigned in the courts of justice?

*Answer.* I believe he has; that is my information.

*Question.* Upon what charge?

*Answer.* Upon the charge of violating the enforcement act. He has been arraigned, I understand, in the United States district court at Oxford.

*Question.* Charged with outrages committed as a Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you recollect any of the circumstances of the killing of this negro? Was a Mr. McIlhenny said to have been there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; his name was connected with it from this fact: After the shooting the parties dispersed; and the next morning there was a hat found in the woods where there were tracks of horses, &c.; and this hat was recognized by several persons in the neighborhood as McIlhenny's hat; and it also appeared that the next morning he went to the neighborhood store close by, and bought himself another hat. I heard those circumstances connecting McIlhenny with that affair.

*Question.* Was there any other circumstance connected with that hat?

*Answer.* It seems to me that he bought the hat at old man Triplet's store; I think that old man Triplet owns the neighborhood store, and that the hat was bought of him. That evidence, I believe, has also been presented to the authorities in the trial before the district court at Oxford.

*Question.* This occurrence was in the county of Winston?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What time did you say it happened?

*Answer.* Last fall. I recollect that it occurred before December, because I remember that I saw an affidavit in the possession of the governor in regard to another party in

that neighborhood connected with the affair; and it was in December when I saw the affidavit.

*Question.* Something has been said in your testimony about the whipping of a woman over in that county?

*Answer.* I do not remember particularly as to the whipping of the woman. She was forced to leave the neighborhood.

*Question.* What was her name?

*Answer.* Her name was Triply Ann Tackett. I recollect her name because I saw the affidavit.

*Question.* How was she forced to leave?

*Answer.* These disguised men, or Ku-Klux, went to her house and told her that she had to leave the neighborhood. They made a great many threats. The exact character of the threats was stated in the paper which I saw. Threats were made as to what they would do with her if she did not leave. She swore distinctly and positively that she recognized several parties, and their names were given in that affidavit. Among others this old man Jack Triplet, and I think his son, and a man by the name of Matthews, were named. She went on and stated as many as six. The affidavit was made before a justice of the peace named Shipman, and was in the possession of the governor when I saw it. I know that she did leave the neighborhood and went over near a little place called Memphis, in Alabama, and that she was sent for to that place as a witness against these parties. Whether she was found or not I do not know.

*Question.* Have you heard of any whippings or of other murders in the county of Winston?

*Answer.* I cannot recall any special cases. I have heard that there were five schoolhouses burned over there. I know that there was more opposition and intense feeling in Winston against public schools than there was in almost any other part of the country.

*Question.* Have you heard that cases of whipping have occurred there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have.

*Question.* In any numbers?

*Answer.* I just heard the general reputation. I do not say I heard it frequently, but I understand there was considerable of that kind of disturbance going on there.

*Question.* Was there any terror among the people of that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from what I hear the terror is certainly very great.

*Question.* Is that the county in which we have heard of a United States marshal being stopped upon the road?

*Answer.* That occurred either in Winston or Neshoba County, some ten days or two weeks ago.

*Question.* State the circumstances.

*Answer.* I will state them exactly as I heard them from a party very high in authority in Jackson, a gentleman connected with the United States grand jury. The United States circuit court was in session when I was in Jackson last week, and some warrants had been issued for the arrest of some parties in Winston and Neshoba Counties. His statement was that the deputy marshal, who was sent from Jackson, was not familiar with the country, and a man named Reed, a deputy marshal at Macon, was sent with him to go and make the arrests. While they were going along in a hack or wagon, they came to a turn of the road where there were seven men drawn across the road with double-barreled shot-guns. These men told them they knew them, and knew Reed particularly, and that they were determined that no more men should be taken out of that country in that way. Reed, I believe, had been a scout in the Union Army during the war; at any rate, he was a very sharp, shrewd fellow, and was accustomed to meeting dangers of that kind. He jumped up, took off his hat, and hallooed, "Hurrah, lieutenant, bring up the troops!" These men took fright at that, broke, and started to run, and all of them got off except one. Reed and the other deputy marshal arrested this man, brought him to the railroad, and carried him to Jackson; and, as I understood from this gentleman, he turned State's evidence. The foreman of the grand jury said he had told the thing from alpha to omega; had given an account of the operations all through that country, and that the evidence involved a great many of the best people of the country.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* When did that occur?

*Answer.* About ten days ago.

*Question.* Where did you hear it?

*Answer.* I first saw it in the newspapers before I left Columbus, and I heard it talked of there in town. Then when I went to Jackson I heard it there as a current matter of report.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Can you state anything further in regard to Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is about all I know, except that I will say I believe the

civil officers of that county are so much under intimidation and pressure from this kind of organization that they are afraid to try to execute the laws in that part of the country.

*Question.* What do you know in regard to the county of Monroe?

*Answer.* Well, sir, that county is divided, like Lowndes, by the Tombigbee River. The eastern portion of the county, which adjoins the State of Alabama, is a sandy, hilly country, and on that side the white population largely predominates; but on the west side of the river there is a rich prairie country, and a large predominance of the black population. I have heard of no violations of law and no operations of these disguised parties in the western part of the county; but in the eastern, and particularly the southeastern part, and along the southern border next to Lowndes, such things have been very bad; in fact, if anything, worse than in almost any other part of the country that I have any information about.

*Question.* State any of the cases that have occurred in that county.

*Answer.* I have heard particularly of the murders of two men there—two freedmen. One was named Dupree. He was a leading republican, and president of a republican club in the neighborhood. Whether he was killed for that I do not know or pretend to say. I only state that he was a leading man among the colored people, and that he was taken away from his house one night by these disguised men, and has never been seen or heard of since.

I have also been informed that in the northeastern part of the county, a negro by the name of Page was killed, under circumstances of great atrocity. He was taken away from his wife, who, as the information comes to me, had recently been confined. He was taken out of bed and was carried away. It was stated—I do not say it is the fact, but that is the information I have—that his body was found with a part of the rope with which he was hung around his neck. This I state as a matter of information, not of my own knowledge.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* None of this is of your own knowledge?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not state it of my own knowledge; it comes to me through other parties.

*Question.* What is your information as to the ground upon which this negro was dealt with?

*Answer.* I have heard of no specific charge against him. He was also a prominent man among the colored people in his neighborhood. I have not heard him charged with any violation of the laws, or committing any outrage, or anything of that kind.

I will state further that I remember the circumstances connected with the beating of Colonel Huggins, which occurred in the southeastern part of Monroe County, about twelve or thirteen miles from Aberdeen.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* We have had that case presented to us in detail by Colonel Huggins. Did these two cases of murder of which you have just spoken occur within the last four or five months?

*Answer.* I should say within the last six months.

*Question.* Have you heard of the whipping of any colored people in that county?

*Answer.* All along on the eastern side of the river there was a great deal of the Ku-Klux operations; that was the general report and information through the country, that whenever these Ku-Klux went out they went for the purpose of committing things of that kind—whipping or intimidating people. If they did not do positive acts of violence, they went for purposes of intimidation.

*Question.* What effect have such acts produced upon the colored people in that county?

*Answer.* They have produced a state of terror in their minds—a feeling of perfect insecurity. They feel that there is very little protection for them. With some of them there has been created a feeling of a good deal of exasperation. In that way, also, the tendency is very bad. There is very little feeling of security there among the colored people; and a great many of the white people who are opposed to things of this kind are afraid to do anything in regard to them, for fear of the personal consequences to themselves. From what I have heard, and from the general expression of opinion among the black people particularly, I am satisfied that they feel as if they had no freedom in the exercise of the elective franchise as long as these men are permitted to carry on in the country in that way.

*Question.* Have the outrages in Monroe County been similar in character—that is, by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, similar to those committed in the other counties to which I have referred.

*Question.* Do you know whether the disguises worn are the same?

*Answer.* So far as I have heard, they are exactly the same. I never saw one of them in my life; but from what I have heard from numbers who have seen them, they are all just the same, both the disguise of persons and of horses.

*Question.* The county of Monroe adjoins your county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it adjoins immediately on the north.

*Question.* What do you say in regard to the county of Oktibbeha?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have heard of two disturbances over there—one of a peculiar character. There was a northern man there—a Methodist preacher, belonging to the Northern Methodist Conference, who had been teaching school at Starkville. He had quit teaching school, and had gone to keeping a kind of store on the coöperative system, a stock concern, sustained principally by the freedmen, each man putting in so many dollars. This man was employed as the store-keeper. A good many people would gather at the store at night, trading: if they went there for any other purpose I never heard it stated. They may have staid there to get information, or something of that kind; but I never heard anybody, except one or two men, say that they had any reason to believe that the gatherings there were for improper purposes. But the people determined to inquire into the matter, and to learn what was the nature of those gatherings and everything connected with them. In order to do so, they got out a search-warrant. The mayor of the town, a man named Harrington, unfortunately made out a search-warrent, authorizing a search of this man's store or private property. He did not allege that property had been stolen, though, under the laws of Mississippi, the only purpose for which a search-warrant can be taken out is the discovery of stolen goods. It was not pretended that any goods in that store were stolen; but the people concluded they would know what was going on there, and they took out this kind of warrant. They went in the day-time to make a search of this man's store. I think they found probably some four or five guns. This man who kept the store, whose name was McLachlan, was greatly frightened. The affair created a good deal of feeling in the community among the white people on the one side and the blacks on the other. The idea of McLachlan himself and of some others was that the people wanted to run him away—to make him leave the community. He did not feel that he had done anything wrong; he protested all the time that he had never done or said anything that was out of the way, and had never had any such intention. Still the affair got up a good deal of feeling. A great many reports, I know, came to our place, and were circulated through the country in regard to it. The sheriff of the county, Mr. H. C. Powers, and other citizens, told me about it. The people agreed that McLachlan's store should be guarded; that he should not be molested, but, as I understand, while the citizens were on the watch, fearing an outbreak, a party of disguised men came stealthily up a ravine, or something like that, near the man's store, and were attempting to break it open. They were armed and made threats. McLachlan thought they were going to kill him, and of course he made a good deal of noise. This alarmed the citizens who were on guard, and these men ran off. There were several indictments found under the enforcement act against several citizens at Starkville, who were supposed to be connected with that case.

*Question.* You mean that indictments were found in the United States district court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; at Oxford, at the late June term of the court. That really was not a case of Ku-Klux, as we would call it there; at least, there were no disguised parties connected with it further than this party of disguised men who came up the ravine and tried to break open the man's house, as it was supposed, for the purpose of taking him away or killing him. Their object, whatever it was, was hidden at the time. But, as I understood, indictments were found under the enforcement act, charging a conspiracy of these parties to deprive that man of his liberty and to make him leave the country.

Down in the southwestern part of the county, last May or April, there was a raid of disguised men upon a plantation belonging to a lady named Rice—what we call the lower Rice plantation—one of the largest plantations in that country. They whipped severely a couple of freedmen on that place. One was named Moses Rice; he was a preacher; the other man's name I forget; I think he was named Abraham: his surname I do not recollect positively. That is the only case of actual disguised men that I have heard of in Oktibbeha County, with the exception of the occurrence at Starkville in reference to McLachlan's store. That has been generally one of the most quiet counties in the State. The people there are generally law-abiding.

*Question.* Does Oktibbeha adjoin Lowndes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; immediately on the west.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What cause was alleged for the whipping of those two negroes on the Rice plantation?

*Answer.* The cause that I heard alleged against one of them was that he was allowed too much freedom and too many liberties; and against the other party the allegation was that he was in the habit of stealing hogs. I do not believe that in this case the disguised men were from Oktibbeha County. I think they came from either Winston or Noxubee.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* What do you say in regard to Chickasaw County?

*Answer.* That is northwest of us, and is immediately west of Monroe. A great many outrages have been reported in that county—some of them very serious.

*Question.* State any you have heard of.

*Answer.* I recollect of hearing a great deal of talk through the country some time ago—perhaps last fall, perhaps as far back as the latter part of 1869—in regard to some four or five freedmen said to have been killed over in the neighborhood of Palo Alto, in Chickasaw County, by disguised men.

*Question.* What other outrages have you heard of?

*Answer.* A man by the name of McBride, at Sparta, Chickasaw County—I am not certain whether he is not in this city now—was very severely whipped; in fact, terribly, according to the information we had.

*Question.* He has been before the committee. Give us any other cases that you have heard of.

*Answer.* I know of no other specific cases. I have knowledge of the general fact that all through that part of the country the Ku-Klux exist and are very bad and vindictive.

*Question.* You have heard that whippings have occurred?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that there have been four or five murders?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They were pretty much in one crowd.

*Question.* What do you say of Pontotoc?

*Answer.* The only case of Ku-Kluxing, I believe, that I have heard of up there was the case where it was stated these parties went into the town of Pontotoc after Colonel Flournoy. On that occasion one of the party by the name of Dillard was killed. Chancellor Pollard and some other gentlemen, I believe, who had been out hunting, came in with their guns and fired upon the party.

*Question.* That county is some distance from you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I will state further that I have heard of a continuation of outrages in the northeastern counties of the State—near Corinth, and along the Tennessee line. All the operations, so far as my information extends, have been confined to the eastern portion of the State and the northern portion on the line of Tennessee.

*Question.* Do you know a man by the name of Wissler?

*Answer.* I have heard of him as a deputy marshal and magistrate. I know he was a magistrate, appointed by the governor; and as a deputy marshal he made some of the arrests in Noxubee and some in Winston.

*Question.* You mean the recent arrests?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; recent arrests under warrants from the United States district court. He was acting as deputy marshal.

*Question.* Do you know anything of his character?

*Answer.* I have heard nothing derogatory to him at all, except some statements that I heard the other day in this city from Colonel Baskervill. I hear nothing derogatory of him out there.

*Question.* I call attention to him especially because Mr. Baskervill announced to the committee that he was a robber and a murderer, or something of that sort.

*Answer.* Colonel Baskervill and I have known each other a pretty long time. He told me what he thought of Wissler, and I told him that I did not think he should make statements of that sort; that his charges were pretty serious, and I did not know what it might lead to. I have positively heard nothing derogatory in regard to Wissler. He is a commissioned magistrate, and was a deputy marshal executing the warrants of the court, and was up at Oxford. My attention was attracted to him, from the fact of his acting as deputy marshal and from a serious disturbance in the United States court-room at Oxford, growing out of a difficulty between Mr. Wissler and Colonel Lamar.

*Question.* You have heard nothing derogatory to his character?

*Answer.* Nothing at all.

*Question.* He had a difficulty, you say, with Colonel Lamar in court?

*Answer.* Something, I think, passed between Colonel Lamar and Mr. Wissler on the street; and Colonel Lamar got up in court——

*Question.* Was Colonel Lamar defending prisoners charged with Ku-Klux outrages?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is a man of distinction out there, and was in attendance in court as an attorney; but I do not think he was associated at all with the counsel for the defense in those Ku-Klux cases. He was simply in court. He is a man of considerable distinction, and a man of talent. Wissler had said something out of the way, as he considered, when they had met on the street; and Colonel Lamar got up and wanted the judge to put him under bonds to keep the peace, or make him behave himself. That led to a disturbance.

*Question.* You were not at court?

*Answer.* No, sir, I was not there at the time. I heard of the circumstances from many who were there.

*Question.* Do you know a Mr. Reed, who was in some way connected with the making of these arrests recently on warrants from the United States court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He is said to be a deputy assessor, or something of that kind?

*Answer.* I think he is a deputy assessor in Noxubee County, and probably some other county.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill spoke of him in rather violent terms of denunciation. What do you know of Mr. Reed's character?

*Answer.* Mr. Reed has been about there four or five years, or more, and he has occupied several minor positions—deputy collector, deputy marshal, and things of that sort. I have met him frequently at Columbus, Oxford, Jackson, Macon, and all around. He is esteemed a pretty clever man, so far as I have heard. Several years ago he had some connection with the express company, and there was some money taken from the company at that place. There were several persons suspected in regard to the matter, and finally there was some suspicion in regard to Reed. I believe he was arrested, tried upon the charge, and acquitted. I recollect distinctly that he was not convicted.

*Question.* That was several years ago?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; three or four years ago, as well as I can remember.

*Question.* Did that affair injure his standing in the community?

*Answer.* It created some remark; but I do not believe that people there generally had any idea that he was guilty, though I know there must have been circumstances at the time pointing to him in some way, and leading to his arrest.

*Question.* He was an agent of the express company?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the money was lost while the business at that place was under his superintendence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that is my recollection. Some detectives were sent up there who were grabbing any man they had a suspicion against. Among others they grabbed Reed. But I have always esteemed him as a clever, gentlemanly man. He is a northern man, who was a soldier in the Union Army. I believe he was a scout during the war with some of the generals. At any rate, he is a smart, lively, active man, who conducts himself peaceably and quietly. If he has ever done anything improper, or in any way acted wrong, I have not heard of it.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill said that he did not believe any body of Ku-Klux existed in the locality about which you have been speaking, his attention having been called particularly to these counties.

Mr. BLAIR. He said there was no regular and permanent organization of men: that he believed these outbreaks were committed by crowds of men gotten up for the occasion to suppress some particular offense, or something of that sort.

*Question.* And that they were disbanded when the occasion passed. Is that your view of the matter?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not agree with Colonel Baskervill in regard to that; I think there is an organization there. I am satisfied that some of these disturbances committed in Lowndes County have been by men from Monroe County; and I believe that some of the men from Lowndes County have gone over into Monroe. In other words, I believe they have swapped work in that way; I am satisfied of that from what I have heard. And I do not believe that operations could be carried on in that way unless there was some organization there through which they could hold communication, make appointments, &c.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Is it a fact that when these parties in disguise go and give men warning they say to them that they must do so and so, or within five days, or ten days, or fifteen days, or some other specified time, they will be again visited? Are warnings given in that form?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of several cases of that kind. I have mentioned particularly the case of the teacher named Farmer, and other cases where parties teaching schools were warned to close them. I recollect that that kind of an expression was used in those cases—that if the school was not broken up by a particular time, they would do such and such a thing.

*Question.* What would such a remark as that indicate?

*Answer.* That is one of the reasons I believe there is a compact organization. I think it certainly goes further than Colonel Baskervill thinks. As to whether the organization extends over the whole State I am not prepared to say; but I am satisfied that there is an organization and an agreement along the skirt of country I have been speaking of. There must be, otherwise it would be impossible to account for a great many of the outrages which have occurred, the threats that have been made, and the manner in which operations have been carried on.

*Question.* Do you ever hear of bands of disguised men going into your State from over the Alabama border?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: in fact, I think they have come over very frequently. From all accounts the wave has often come over upon us from Alabama.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Is there a similarity in the mode of operations as you hear of them in various localities?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; as to the disguise and mode of operations they are pretty much the same in all the counties I have heard of.

*Question.* What is the general impression of the community at large there, without distinction of party or color, as to whether this is an organized band of men?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I believe that the people generally there consider it to be an organized band through that section of country. I speak now particularly in reference to the section about which I have been testifying.

*Question.* Is that so considered by all parties and all colors?

*Answer.* Well, there are some who evidently doubt it. I think there are some who would not like to have the truth appear. That class of men, of course, would not say so if they thought so. In other words, I think it would be their interest not to say that they believe it.

*Question.* Have you heard of anybody doubting its being an organization, unless it was persons supposed to be connected with the Klan?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never did hear the matter doubted except by persons who were believed to be either members of the Klan or in sympathy with it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you suppose that Colonel Baskervill is connected with it?

*Answer.* Well, Colonel Baskervill is a mighty good friend of mine; we were in business a long time together, and I will tell you candidly exactly what I think about the matter in connection with him. I will state it as I told it to the colonel himself. I think he is such an exceedingly strong and bitter democrat that he would go into the Ku-Klux or anything else to get the republican party out of power in Mississippi.

*Question.* That is not the question. The question is, do you consider him associated with these Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* As a member?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think so, because he pledged himself to me upon his honor that he was not a member; and I do not believe he would make a statement of that kind unless it was true. But I believe he knows a great deal about it.

*Question.* Do you believe he would tell what is not true?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.

*Question.* Do you know him to be a man of honor and character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do: but I think his judgment is mightily warped in this instance, and he has not heard of a great many things that I have heard of. In explanation of that, it may be said that he has been off traveling a great deal in different States as an insurance agent, and has not been enough about this region of country to be fully conversant with what was going on.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Is he a violent democrat?

*Answer.* The colonel is about as strong as they make them.

*Question.* You think from your knowledge of his character and your intimacy with him that his judgment would be warped by strong prejudices of that sort?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I really believe it would. I think that scarcely anything in the world, except his personal attachment for me, could keep him from denouncing me, he is so strong in his sentiments on political questions.

*Question.* Do you know Mr. John R. Taliaferro?

*Answer.* I met Taliaferro once.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* By the way, Taliaferro says in his evidence that he is an intimate friend of yours.

*Answer.* That is not so. Are you sure he says that?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* I never saw Taliaferro but one time in my life, and then I had only one or two interviews with him. He was introduced to me in Columbus. I am satisfied, however, that Taliaferro knows as much or more about these Ku-Klux operations than nearly any other man in that part of the country, because I believe he has been with them.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do you think he has been a member of the organization?

*Answer.* He denied to me that he ever had been sworn in; but he admitted that he had been on their raids and knew where they met; and he told me so many particularities of time, place, and circumstance, with names of people, and everything like hat, that I am satisfied he could not have said what he did unless he had been with

them. That is the reason I believe he was with them. He told me where they had met, where they had gone, and what they had been doing.

*Question.* Is Taliaferro a democrat?

*Answer.* I do not know his politics; I never heard him say, and have no reason to believe anything about his politics.

*Question.* Have you ever been a candidate for any office except that of mayor of Columbus?

*Answer.* I was appointed as mayor by the governor.

*Question.* Did Taliaferro reside in your county?

*Answer.* No, sir; he never lived in Lowndes; he lived in Noxubee. He evidently had a large fund of information connected with all these things, and he wanted to tell me a great deal of it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What is his character?

*Answer.* Well, I have heard some people say that he was a very clever fellow, and others say that he was not. I heard Colonel Baskervill say more against him than I ever heard anybody else say.

*Question.* Whom did you ever hear say anything in his favor?

*Answer.* I was introduced to him by some parties in Columbus—gentlemen living in the lower part of the county; they introduced him to me as a friend of theirs, and they went on to tell me who he was and where he lived. They were drinking with him—were "hail fellow well met" with him. I know they were gentlemen. That was the only time I ever met him. They are as nice men as there are in the country; and I know they would not have introduced him to me if they had not thought well of him.

*Question.* What is his reputation in the country?

*Answer.* I do not know what is his reputation; I never met him but once.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill says in reference to him, in addition to what the chairman has stated, that he is a low fellow and a drunkard, a thief and a liar. He says that he has actually stolen a mule, and that there has been a requisition made for him upon the governor of Virginia by the governor of Mississippi.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL.) Since he testified before the committee.

*Answer.* I think that Baskervill has got that affair mixed up. There was a man named Taliaferro from Richmond, who was at Holly Springs some weeks ago, as a tobacco agent. That man forged a check and passed it upon the bank at Holly Springs. The cashier, a Mr. Crump, I believe, sent the check on for collection; it was protested and stated to be a forgery. By that time this man had returned to Richmond. They got him on a requisition, and carried him back to Holly Springs.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* That was a different man altogether?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I recollect that when that circumstance was mentioned some one was wondering whether it was the Taliaferro who lived down in our country there; and I remember that the governor's private secretary at Jackson showed me the requisition, or rather the letter asking for the requisition, which contained the name of the other man. He then stated that he was certain it was not this Taliaferro.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I have here a letter from Macon, Mississippi. Speaking of Taliaferro, it says:

"We learn that he would have been indicted at the last court for stealing Colonel Rives's mule but that, as you remember, Rives was too ill to testify against him. If it is necessary he can be indicted at any term of the court on this charge, and Don Balch, at Brooksville, will furnish an affidavit at any time that he placed in Taliaferro's hands a gold watch to be sold by him at an auction, and that Taliaferro took the watch off with him and sold it at private sale and used the money for his own purposes. Taliaferro, who is a man, as you know, of good address and education, has fallen so low, through his vile courses and dissipation, as to be the companion and colaborer of common field negroes, last year, on Wooten's place."

Is that a correct description of Taliaferro?

*Answer.* He lived in Wooten's neighborhood, near Brooksville; I heard him say so the day I met him.

*Question.* This letter says further:

"Taliaferro testified that he had been with Ku-Klux on several raids without being sworn in, and we are sure that he has perverted and magnified our company at Brooksville into one of the irrepressible Klans; you know none of us were sworn into that company, and we believe he makes it the occasion of his Ku-Klux testimony. Taliaferro represented himself among us as having been a confederate captain, and stated repeatedly here that he left Baltimore because while he was in the confederate army he was placed in charge of a number (five or six) of Federal prisoners, and that while on

the march he lost his prisoners and that it was charged on him in Baltimore that he had murdered them, (which he did not deny, but rather implied that it was only too true,) and that he was in danger of his life in Baltimore. This is a very grave charge and is corroborated substantially by the editor of the Selma (Alabama) Times, who says in reference to a Captain Taliaferro from Baltimore, that he knew of his murdering a squad of Federal soldiers which he was guarding in 1864 in the army in Georgia. The paper which says this is tracing up the identity of our 'swift witness,' and states that his name was *J. R. Taliaferro, from Baltimore*, but not a captain. There can scarcely be a doubt of this, as it coincides exactly with what 'our' Taliaferro told Captain Stokes two or three years ago; and as the charge is so grave it ought to be fully investigated outside of Ku-Klux."

Did you ever hear that statement made in regard to Taliaferro?

*Answer.* No, sir. I saw a statement published in the Meridian Gazette in regard to Taliaferro; but I never saw or heard a statement like that you have read in connection with him. He told me that he had been a captain in Moseby's command, operating in Northern Virginia during the war. I heard something in regard to his taking a mule from Colonel Rives at Macon; but I did not hear the circumstances, and did not attach much importance to the matter, because I believed that if he had stolen the mule he would pretty certainly have been arrested and tried for it. Colonel Rives is an attorney, and if Taliaferro had stolen his mule I have no doubt he would have had him indicted.

*Question.* It is stated that Colonel Rives was too ill at the time to appear and testify.

*Answer.* That was at the last term of the court. I recollect now that Rives was sick at that term of court; but it was away back in last fall when this talk was had about the stealing of the mule; so that Rives could have had him arrested before.

*Question.* The testimony is that Taliaferro absented himself from that part of the country.

*Answer.* I think that is so. I do not think he has been there for two or three months. I did hear that he was present at the term of the court at Oxford. Whether he was in Noxubee County I do not know.

*Question.* Did you hear that he was in disguise at Oxford?

*Answer.* I heard that from Colonel Baskervill; I never heard anything about it except what he said. Taliaferro is a very smart, shrewd, keen fellow. I was with him enough that day to see that he is as keen a man as ever I saw. I was afraid he was almost too keen, for I did not know much about him; and I had very little conversation with him.

*Question.* You did not feel very safe?

*Answer.* I did not feel particularly safe or unsafe; but I saw that he was one of the keenest men I had met lately, and I did not care to cultivate his acquaintance—not that he did or said anything wrong to me.

*Question.* That letter is signed by George L. Williams and T. J. Stokes.

*Answer.* I know both those gentlemen.

*Question.* Do you think these men would be likely to make such statements as those without some foundation?

*Answer.* I know more of Mr. Williams than I do of Mr. Stokes. I think it likely that they heard all that they state or they would not have put it down. I do not suppose that they could prove a great deal of what they say; I think they have written it mostly from hearsay evidence.

*Question.* Just the same sort of evidence that you are giving us here to-day to a great extent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Except that you are on oath, and they, in making those statements, were not?

*Answer.* I know Stokes. He lives near Brooksville. I think that he and Williams, like pretty much all the people there, would think that any man who would come here and give evidence in regard to these matters, if against their views, was not exactly what he ought to be—especially a man like Taliaferro.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you think they would make such statements as this about any man unless they believed them to be true?

*Answer.* I do not believe they would state any information of that kind about any man unless they had some grounds to believe it from report or otherwise.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Are those two men active democrats?

*Answer.* Very.

*Question.* Are they supposed to be connected with this organization?

*Answer.* I have never heard anything in regard to Williams in connection with the matter; but I have heard that Stokes was one of the head bosses in it.

*Question.* One of the chiefs of the Klan?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; or at least that he was pretty high in it. He is right from the neighborhood where Taliaferro says he lived. Personally, however, Stokes is a clever fellow, and so is Mr. Williams. Williams is Colonel Baskervill's son-in-law.

*Question.* Are they men of strong political feelings and prejudices?

*Answer.* They are both strong democrats—just as strong as they can be.

*Question.* Do you believe that this organization of disguised men of which we have been speaking has any political aspect?

*Answer.* I have reflected about that matter a great deal; and I candidly think that the great and leading object of this organization is political power; and I believe further that all these operations in the form of "regulating" offenses occurring in the country—"vigilance committee" operations, &c.—are simply outcroppings from under the great object, which is ultimate political power.

*Question.* Do you mean that they allege such things as pretexts?

*Answer.* I believe so.

*Question.* You believe that the main object is to put the democratic party in control of the State government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do believe that; and I believe that if the negroes in our part of the country would vote the democratic ticket, there would be no Ku-Klux there. That is exactly what I believe about it.

*Question.* Have they made any progress in intimidating the negroes so that it would have been difficult to have a fair election a few months ago?

*Answer.* I am satisfied that with such a state of affairs as existed in Lowndes County, and other portions of Mississippi, in February, 1871, it would be utterly impossible to have anything like a fair election. You could not begin to get the negroes to the polls.

*Question.* Do you mean to say that democrats would be deterred from voting?

*Answer.* No; I mean to say that republicans would, the blacks particularly. I do not know that many of the white republicans would, though there are many of them who, while disposed to vote the republican ticket, would not vote it, for fear of the persecution that might be engendered. As to the blacks, I am satisfied that they would be deterred from voting the republican ticket, because I saw the thing tried last fall, when there was just a little intimation of Ku-Klux. Any intimation of that kind frightens them so they will not begin to come out to vote.

*Question.* Do you believe that the operations of this Ku-Klux Klan, if unchecked, would result in putting the State into the hands of the democratic party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think that is the object of the organization?

*Answer.* I think it is. We are to have a general election in our State this fall; and while I believe the republican party is largely in the ascendency in the State, it is my candid conviction that if before that election the Ku-Klux should make a few raids through the country, and especially the counties where the black vote is largely in the ascendency, the democrats will carry the State by as large a majority almost as they might want to. I do believe that positively. On this question I have talked with many of the most intelligent freedmen in the country. I recollect speaking with one who was a member of the legislature from Lowndes County—a freedman largely above the average in respect to intelligence—a man of some intellect and education. This man's fear of the Ku-Klux was so thorough and abject as to be really a matter of amusement.

*Question.* His fear was intense?

*Answer.* The most intense exhibition of fear that I ever saw in my life. He has such an excessive dread of anything of that kind that, in fact, I have ceased talking with him about it. I have seen parties conversing with him become absolutely amused at his abject fear of the Ku-Klux. He is very ambitious for a colored man. While a member of the legislature he did pretty well in that capacity. Democrats and all seemed to like him very well indeed. But I have no idea that he could be induced to become a candidate for the legislature again if he thought there were any Ku-Klux in the country.

*Question.* Does he suppose they have a special hostility against him because of his being a member of the legislature?

*Answer.* He feels so. He has told me so.

*Question.* Has he been threatened?

*Answer.* I do not know that there have been any positive threats; I never heard him say so, and never heard of any.

*Question.* Is there a general understanding among the colored people that if they will vote the democratic ticket they will be free from these visits of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* From my talk with them, and from what I have heard about it, I think I can say that that is their feeling.

*Question.* Do you think that any one of them who would vote the democratic ticket would be in danger of visitation?

*Answer.* I do not think he would; I believe they would not bother him.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you ever hear of a democrat, either white or colored, being whipped by these bands of disguised men?

*Answer.* I do not know that I ever did. No, sir; I never did.

*Question.* You spoke of a Mr. Brookshire?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was a man who was trading in the lower part of Noxubee.

*Question.* I would like to know a little more about that case, as you merely alluded to it.

*Answer.* Mr. Brookshire was a white man of first-rate standing in Noxubee County. He used to trade a good deal with Mr. Baskervill and myself when we merchandised at Columbus. He was a man considerably above the average of men in the country. He was keeping a country store, and was trading pretty largely with the freedmen. There were complaints against him that he bought corn and cotton from them at improper times, and that he had no right to do it. I never heard that he was warned by day-time, or that any legal proceedings were started against him. These disguised men went there at night and told him what they would do to him if he did not stop these operations. Everything that was complained of against Mr. Brookshire—and this illustrates one of the great objections to this organization—could have been reached by the laws of the State, if the proper proof had been made; and if the parties had gone at it in the right way, they could easily have gotten the proof.

*Question.* Was his business broken up?

*Answer.* I think it was. That is my recollection.

*Question.* You stated, I believe, that you were a member of the board of school directors of Lowndes County.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Some testimony has been given here in regard to the teachers in Mississippi. I desire you to give us your opinion of their character and qualifications. State also whether they were natives of your county or State, or whether they came from other portions of the country.

*Answer.* It was the earnest desire of the board of school directors to employ as far as possible resident teachers—natives of the country; and we employed very few from a distance.

*Question.* You gave natives the preference?

*Answer.* We did; we used personal efforts to secure such teachers. We wrote a great many letters to prominent people all through the county, asking them to encourage our own people to engage in teaching the colored schools particularly; because we wanted to preclude any idea that we were seeking to bring persons from a distance to be teachers, lest the sentiment might go out that we were trying to bring in improper parties.

*Question.* To what extent did you succeed?

*Answer.* We employed in the county fifty-six teachers—forty-seven white, nine colored. I read from the circular issued by the county superintendent of Lowndes county, under the direction of the board of school directors:

"Nearly all the teachers are old citizens, and many of them natives of the county. Repeated efforts were made to induce residents to teach the colored schools, which proved successful in many instances. A few only have been employed from a distance."

I should say that there were not more than six or seven teachers employed in those schools who were not old citizens of the country, and those northern men who were employed had been in that country from one to three or four years.

*Question.* The colored teachers of whom you spoke—were they qualified for teaching your schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There were only nine employed; and they were qualified to teach the primary branches, for which they were employed. We tried to get as many of them as we could for the colored schools, where we could find them qualified.

*Question.* Then the opposition to the free-school system in your county does not arise from any objection to the character of the teachers?

*Answer.* I am satisfied that it does not. I think the gist of the whole opposition to public schools in Lowndes County and through that section of the State is that the system was originated by the republican party, and it was supposed it would be a great lever of power, as eventually it will be. Then he objection to the necessary taxation came in of course as an incidental feature. It was the object of the board of school directors to avoid as far as possible taxation for school purposes—to exhaust first every other means of sustaining the schools. But the great idea and intention of the opposition was to break down the public-school system.

*Question.* The character of the teachers had nothing to do with it?

*Answer.* I am satisfied that it never had, as must be seen from the character of the men we employed.

*Question.* I understood you to say that, unless the United States courts vigorously and rigorously execute the laws, the colored people will be compelled to take measures

for their own protection, and that you, in common with others, fear that the result may be a conflict of races?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I do.

*Question.* What do you understand to be the necessity for bringing in the aid of the United States courts? Why not leave the matter to the State courts?

*Answer.* In order to answer that question fully, I must make a brief explanation. Governor Alcorn, to my knowledge, has used the greatest exertions in every way to have the laws thoroughly and rigidly executed. We have as able a judiciary in Mississippi as can be found in any State of the Union; in fact, we are particularly proud of our judiciary; and the laws are, as a general thing, being rigidly enforced.

*Question.* Especially so by Judge Orr?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, especially by Judge Orr—in his district and his part of the country.

*Question.* His circuit includes most of the counties you have been speaking of?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. But as fair a test as could ever be made of the ability of the State courts to enforce the laws against these Ku-Klux was made in the case I have already mentioned, and as I stated, there was an actual failure; in fact, it amounted almost to an absolute farce. The result in that case convinced the judge, as well as myself, and I believe the people generally, that it was impossible to bring these men to justice through the State courts, from the fact that the witnesses were afraid to testify. They could not be guaranteed such protection against danger to their personal liberty or their lives as would induce them to testify in the State courts.

*Question.* Did you find any trouble with the grand juries in getting indictments against these parties?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the grand jury in that case stated that they had no evidence; that the witnesses would not testify; and the witnesses said (this is what they told me and others right at the court-house gate) that they were afraid to testify because they thought there were men on the grand jury who would make known what they would testify; and then they would be brought up into court; and they believed they would be in danger of their lives. So that I was perfectly satisfied, and I am yet, that it is impossible in the State courts to execute the laws against offenses of that character. In regard to the administration of Governor Alcorn, I will say that he has done everything in his power; he has left no stone unturned; he has used every possible means through the civil tribunals and through the offering of large rewards to break up this organization. At the last session of the legislature he tried to secure the passage of a bill changing the venue in certain cases. In his messages and in conversation he expressed himself as satisfied that the laws could not be enforced in the counties where these disturbances occurred, on account of the intimidation of witnesses; and his idea was to have a law passed under which, whenever disturbances were reported to him and proper affidavits made, he could change the venue to some county where impartial juries could be had and where the witnesses could be amply protected. But through a combination of influences that measure failed to pass. He then tried to get the legislature to give him authority to raise a regiment of picked cavalry with which he proposed to put down this organization. The legislature did not grant him that authority; they were afraid of the consequences. Nothing has occurred to give any check to these outrages until the movement inaugurated recently in the United States district court at Oxford, and the United States circuit court at Jackson.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill, in his testimony, stated a case which, I think, occurred near Macon, where United States Deputy Marshal Reed, and, I believe, Mr. Wissler, made some arrests, aided by United States soldiers, as a marshal's posse. Do you recollect anything of that occurrence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I recollect that there was a deputy marshal, named McLernon, or something of that kind, who came to Macon, either with summonses for witnesses or warrants for the arrest of parties, I do not know which; and the statement was that one of the soldiers of the squad he had charge of attempted to take, or did take, some money from a colored man; I do not know whether he took it or merely attempted to take it. But there was a warrant issued for the arrest of that soldier; and when the officer went to arrest him this deputy marshal refused to let the soldier be given up. There was some controversy, and afterward an affidavit was made against the deputy marshal, and a warrant issued for his arrest on the charge of resisting an officer. He was carried before Judge Ames, who was the mayor of Macon. The matter was investigated, and the judge required him to give bond for his appearance at the next term of the circuit court for resisting an officer. The deputy marshal refused for some time to give the bond for his appearance; but he afterward gave it, and was released.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill stated here that there was no necessity for bringing in those troops to make the arrests; that the parties would have obeyed an ordinary summons; and he stated further that those arrests were made for political effect and for the sake of gaining the rewards offered. Now, I wish to ask you what possible advantage could result to the republican party from making those arrests in that manner? Was not the deputy marshal supposed to be connected with the republican party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was my understanding. I do not really know whether he was a republican or not; but he was attempting to arrest parties charged with violating the law; and it is an entirely new idea to me that any political object was to be accomplished by the proceeding, because the republicans have some two thousand eight hundred or three thousand majority in Noxubee County. I do not see how any political capital could be made out of the matter. In Noxubee, Lowndes, Monroe, Chickasaw, and in fact all those counties, except Winston, the republicans have overwhelming majorities.

*Question.* So that in a county where the republicans numbered four thousand two hundred and the democrats one thousand four hundred, you think that the republicans would not gain any special political advantage by having violators of the law brought to punishment?

*Answer.* I do not see how they could possibly make any political capital of it; I cannot imagine that the movement could have any political effect. As to the willingness of parties to obey an ordinary summons, I presume that most of the witnesses would have obeyed a summons; but then they would have had no assurance of protection. I have heard persons summoned as witnesses say that they would not go unless they were satisfied that they would be protected.

*Question.* Then you think that these soldiers were taken there rather for the purpose of insuring protection than of overcoming resistance?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my idea. None of the witnesses, I think, would have made any resistance; but I think it likely that some of the defendants would. I do not know the fact; I simply give my opinion upon the point. But I do know that a great many of the witnesses would not have gone unless they had been assured of ample protection, because some of them told me themselves that they were afraid to go.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill also stated his opinion that by keeping up this strife and confusion the negroes were kept from voting with the democratic party. Do you think that is the case?

*Answer.* I do not think it has anything to do with it, one way or the other.

*Question.* You think that if everything had been quiet in Lowndes and Noxubee Counties the colored people would have been just as likely to vote the republican ticket as under a different state of affairs?

*Answer.* I think they would be more likely under such circumstances to do so than they would in the case of any strife and difficulty in the country.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The object in keeping up the strife by persecutions under the form of law may have been in order to consolidate the negro vote?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think so. I do not see what object there could be in that. I do not see how it could affect the case one way or the other; because the republicans have now an overwhelming majority there.

*Question.* Would not the majority, if larger, assist in the general result throughout the State?

*Answer.* Of course in any State election it would help.

*Question.* You have spoken of a man named Hicks, upon whom some outrage was committed, and you assigned as a reason for it some improper language he had used toward a white woman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was that language?

*Answer.* He did not use the language to the white woman. The report was that he said he had had intercourse with some white ladies up in that neighborhood.

*Question.* That was the language for which he was chastised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. But nobody, republican or otherwise, would justify him in the use of such language. All would say that he ought to be punished, and punished according to law. The law was ample for his punishment.

*Question.* Have not the people of your State been rather prone to vindicate themselves from personal insult, especially as to anything affecting their families, by more direct and immediate means than an appeal to the courts?

*Answer.* That is true; they are not disposed to wait much for the regular process of the law in cases like that.

*Question.* That has always been the character of your people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That schoolmaster, Mr. Farmer, who was compelled to close his school, was, you say, an unexceptionable man?

*Answer.* So far as we could learn, he was. As I have mentioned, we went out to the neighborhood to make inquiries, and we could hear nothing against the man at all.

*Question.* Nothing was alleged against him?

*Answer.* Nothing at all.

*Question.* And that was the case with most of the teachers you employed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you say that many of them were southern men?

*Answer.* They were generally southern people, or citizens of the country of long standing.

*Question.* None of them were injured?

*Answer.* None were whipped or beaten; they were merely threatened.

*Question.* They were notified that they must stop teaching?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the reason was that the people did not mean to submit to taxation for the support of those schools?

*Answer.* No, sir; the great thing was that they did not intend to have free schools. The tax was brought up as an incidental matter; but the opposition was to public schools anyhow.

*Question.* Was not the tax collected entirely from the white people?

*Answer.* That which had been collected came mostly from the white people.

*Question.* Where a tax was assessed upon the county it was done, I believe, at the discretion of the board of directors and the superintendent of the county?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is just where the mistake lies; a great many people in Mississippi have misunderstood that point. The board of school directors and the superintendent have nothing to do with levying tax; they simply make an estimate of the cost of schools, and they submit that to the board of supervisors—what you call in Missouri the county court. It is that body that levies the tax.

*Question.* They levy what is assessed?

*Answer.* It is estimated.

*Question.* The estimate is made by the board of school directors and the superintendent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And then the county court, as we would say, or the board of supervisors, as you say in your State, levies the tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* This tax is levied upon all property, except a certain amount in the possession of every person which is exempt from taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is a small amount exempt.

*Question.* That exemption covers the property of almost every negro in the county, does it not?

*Answer.* It would cover the property of a large majority of them.

*Question.* It would bring the entire tax upon the white people of the county?

*Answer.* That might be so generally as to the tax upon property; but then everybody, including the blacks, pays a poll-tax of $2.

*Question.* Has that ever been paid by the negroes?

*Answer.* It is being paid now by them; it has not been to any extent heretofore. This is the first year that the school system was ever put in operation.

*Question.* But that poll-tax never had been collected?

*Answer.* Very little of it has been collected heretofore; but I think that was the fault of the sheriffs, not of the negroes.

*Question.* Those officers were generally radicals, were they not?

*Answer.* They were republicans; I do not say that they were radicals, for some of them were pretty liberal in their views.

*Question.* People in your State have been very much impoverished by the war, have they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; very nearly broken up.

*Question.* They have lost a vast deal of property, including all their property in slaves?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Your supervisors are permitted by law to assess for school purposes a tax of one and one-half per cent.?

*Answer.* That is the extreme limit; but in Lowndes County, where the trouble began about the school tax, it amounted to between one-fourth and one-half of one per cent.; about three mills, or one-third of one per cent.

*Question.* That tax is in addition to all the other taxes of the county, the State, and the General Government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That taxation was imposed for the purpose of educating negroes who had formerly belonged to the people thus taxed?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think that in our county, as the circular to which I have referred demonstrates clearly, it would not have been necessary to levy one dollar of direct taxation to support the colored schools; those schools would have been supported by making the negroes pay their poll-tax, and by allowing them their *pro rata* share of the school fund.

*Question.* Had that been done?

*Answer.* It had not been done previously, but it was being done. The State school fund was not to be distributed till the 1st of June, after the taxes had all been paid in at the seat of government.

*Question.* I understood you to testify that the teachers of these schools were mostly residents of your State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I am speaking now more particularly of Lowndes County.

*Question.* And that they were by no means objectionable to the people at large; that the objection was not on account of the character of the teachers?

*Answer.* No, sir; I am positive that it was not.

*Question.* There was no objection made as to the character of the teachers?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* But there was objection to the amount of tax levied to be applied for this particular purpose?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And that seems to have been the root of all this disturbance in your part of the country?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think that the majority of the people who went into these disturbances were opposed to free schools.

*Question.* They were opposed to contributing, impoverished as they had been by the war, for the education of the blacks, who have been so vauntingly called the "wards of the Government of the United States?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the main hobby in this opposition. But the very object of this circular was to show the people that that was not a true position; that it was a prejudice; that the facts did not sustain it.

*Question.* I am not talking about your circular; I am asking you a question as to the impression made upon the minds of the people.

*Answer.* O, they were very much opposed to the school tax.

*Question.* They were opposed to it because they thought they had to pay it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And they were opposed to paying it for the education of the blacks after they had had so much of their property destroyed by the Government in the late war?

*Answer.* That was the feeling.

*Question.* They considered themselves impoverished, and objected to being called upon in that condition to pay for the education of this horde of blacks without being consulted upon the subject; for I understand that they were not consulted; that your constitution was framed when a large portion of the people who pay this tax were disfranchised; is not that true?

*Answer.* Well, under the reconstruction acts a great many were disfranchised; but the constitution of Mississippi does not disfranchise a single citizen of the State.

*Question.* But the constitution was made when a large portion of your people were disfranchised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; under the reconstruction acts a number of our people could not vote.

*Question.* They could not vote on the adoption of your constitution, could they?

*Answer.* No, sir; but a great many of them who could vote would not do it.

*Question.* That is neither here nor there. It was the fact, then, that the constitution was made for them by the negroes, very few of the white people participating?

*Answer.* There may have been very few of the white people who voted for it; but there were a great many who voted against it, and a large number of those who were allowed to vote would not vote at all. In fact the policy at first was to defeat the constitution organizing these schools by non-action, by not voting at all.

*Question.* This, then, I understand you to say, is the real ground of objection to the schools?

*Answer.* I would not say that it was the real ground. It was stated or pretended to be the real ground; but I am clearly of opinion that it is erroneous.

*Question.* That is the ground on which the people put it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You think that they are clearly mistaken about that—that they want to pay this tax—that they do not object to paying taxes?

*Answer.* O, no, sir. I believe they object to paying the tax, but I do not believe a tax was necessary in Lowndes County to support the colored schools.

*Question.* Do you not suppose they believed it was?

*Answer.* I believe they thought so.

*Question.* How many schools were established in your county?

*Answer.* Fifty-six.

*Question.* Would it not have required for the support of those schools the entire amount of taxation allowed by law?

*Answer.* No, sir; it would not.

*Question.* Not if school-houses were constructed?

*Answer.* No, sir. We purchased but few school-houses this year. We made an estimate of the purchase-money we would have to pay, as well as the rent, the hiring of teachers, and all contingent expenses; and all these items together for five months

amounted to $40,531 60. We expected to get a large proportion of this sum from the poll-tax and the State school fund. We only asked for an assessment of $21,000, about $1.000 more than half of the amount.

*Question.* That was for a beginning?

*Answer.* That was for five months of the year 1871. That $21,000 was for the part of the county outside the city of Columbus, in which there was a separate school district. The taxation to raise that amount would be a little over one-fourth of one per cent.

*Question.* What is the proportion of negroes to whites in that county?

*Answer.* The number of educable children in the county between the ages of five and twenty-one years is 1,902 whites and 6,108 blacks; in other words, a little more than three and a half times as many blacks as whites.

*Question.* So that the white people would have to go to the expense of educating three negroes to every one of their own children?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think so, because I think that the poll-tax paid by the negroes, and their proportion of the State school fund, would have supported the colored schools; that not a dollar of direct tax would have been necessary for the support of those scoools.

*Question.* How many negro voters are there in your county?

*Answer.* About four thousand five hundred negro voters and one thousand five hundred or one thousand six hundred white voters.

*Question.* If the poll-tax had been fully collected from the blacks, what would have been the amount?

*Answer.* About $9,000.

*Question.* And you think that the $9,000 which would have been obtained if every dollar of the poll-tax due from the negroes had been paid, would have sufficed to educate those six thousand black children?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not say that, because their proportion of the State school fund would have amounted to fully as much as the poll-tax, if not more.

*Question.* Is not the State school fund derived from taxation?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is derived from licenses to retail whisky, from the sale of swamp lands, the sale of lands for taxes, the taxes paid by physicians and others—what is generally called the privilege tax. I think that the poll-tax paid by the colored people and their proportion of the State school fund would have supported the colored schools of the county.

*Question.* How many schools were there in your county?

*Answer.* Thirty-one white schools, and twenty-five colored.

*Question.* What salaries did you pay the teachers in the colored schools?

*Answer.* Two or three of the teachers, whose schools were very large, were paid $80 a month; but the salary was generally $40 or $50 a month; and in several of the colored schools only $25 and $35 a month was paid. We got teachers of colored schools for one-half and even one-third of what we paid teachers of white schools. Besides, the houses used for the colored schools were very inexpensive; and we bought no school furniture for them; we took just such seats and desks as we could pick up; we fixed them up cheaply. We did not buy a dollar's worth of furniture for the colored schools in our county.

*Question.* Do you suppose that the number of colored schools you have stated would have been the extent of those schools—that they would not have been increased?

*Answer.* We were compelled to have six more schools in order to draw our *pro rata* share of the school fund. The constitution requires that so many schools shall be maintained in each sub-district of the county, in order to entitle it to its share of the school fund.

*Question.* Then you were not entitled to draw upon the State school fund?

*Answer.* We were not entitled to draw our share until we had completed our complement of schools, which has now been done. I think that this circular which I have here has demonstrated to a good many people that the poll-tax paid by the colored people, and their proportion of the "privilege tax" from the State, would have supported the colored schools.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You have what is called the sixteenth section fund?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that, of course, is distributed *pro rata*. But it was almost all lost in our part of the country by insolvencies and things of that sort.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You say that there was an attack made upon one Alfred Perkins?

*Answer.* They went to find a son of Alfred Perkins, but could not.

*Question.* What was the accusation against him?

*Answer.* That he had been living in adulterous connection with an aunt of his by marriage; she was a widow. That was the charge against him; but then the law could have reached that.

*Question.* All these parties who were arrested and arraigned at Oxford were let out on bail, were they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all who were from Monroe. There were some parties from Winston who I think were not admitted to bail. Some ten parties from Monroe were released on bonds of $5,000 each; the remainder of them gave bonds in the sum of $500 each.

*Question.* Then they could not have been charged with the crime of murder?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were indicted for murder.

*Question.* And yet released on bail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I will tell you the trouble about the whole matter, for I heard it fully discussed, and, being a lawyer, I paid a good deal of attention to it. The great difficulty in these cases is the proving of the *corpus delicti;* and that is the reason why these Ku-Klux men operate so extensively in the way they do. The general information was that the body of one man murdered in Monroe County had been found buried in a shallow grave, with a piece of rope around his neck. But in many other cases the bodies of the men murdered could not be found; in other words, the *corpus delicti* could not be proved. The difficulty on that point, and the alleged unconstitutionality of the enforcement act, are the main points of the defense in those cases.

*Question.* You mean that the bodies of the men alleged to have been murdered cannot in many cases be found?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* In other words, there is no satisfactory proof that the man is dead until somebody has seen his dead body?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the notion. Of course, you have to find the body to prove that the man is dead.

*Question.* Unless there is proof of that kind, a man may be hanged for murder when the alleged victim is in fact living, but in some other part of the country?

*Answer.* But the belief of everybody is that these men have gone to their long rest, from which they will never return. The difficulty, however, is to prove it in court.

*Question.* You say that these parties were all admitted to bail because the *corpus delicti* could not be proved?

*Answer.* I think that was the principal reason. The judge sustained, without question, the constitutionality of the law.

*Question.* Can those men be convicted of murder unless the body of the murdered man is found?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the supreme court of Mississippi, as I understand, has decided very positively that they cannot. The decisions are somewhat conflicting; but that has been the decision in Mississippi very positively, in two or three cases.

*Question.* And the United States courts in Mississippi, in matters of criminal law, are governed by the law of that State?

*Answer.* That is my understanding.

*Question.* Are not many of these crimes laid to the charge of the Ku-Klux when in fact they are committed by others?

*Answer.* In regard to those of which I have spoken I am satisfied that they were committed by parties in disguise; in fact, I believe it as strongly as I could believe anything that I did not see with my own eyes.

*Question.* By organized bands?

*Answer.* I believe from all the developments and from what we can learn of their operations, they were committed by bands among whom some organization existed; otherwise I do not think they could operate, or would undertake to operate, as they do. I do not think that any outsiders committed these things.

*Question.* What is your idea as to the influence which has been exercised in your community by those men who have gone down there, and, without having any stake or interest in the community, have, in consequence of the disfranchisement or disqualification of the leading men of that community, succeeded in filling most of your offices?

*Answer.* Some men of that character who have gone there have, I think, exercised a bad influence; but I believe that we have had generally in our State a different class of men from those who have been found in other States. For instance, there is Lieutenant Governor Powers, and Dr. Smith, collector of internal revenue, and General Eggleston, and Mr. Lewis, and others of that character, who have exercised a good influence; who are men of standing, character, and property. They have come there and invested their means. To that class of northern men the people make no objection; they are glad to have them come there; their influence has been good. There are, however, I believe, a few men in the State who were not residents, who have proved to be men of bad character, who have exerted a bad influence; but I think they are the exception and not the rule.

*Question.* Is not a very clear distinction made in your State between such men and those who come down there with the object of residing and identifying themselves with the community? Are not the latter received without objection and with kindness everywhere?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but the people like mightily to have them think as they think and go as they go.

*Question.* Is not that the case everywhere; would you not like to have everybody think exactly as you do?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I would not feel like proscribing a man, socially or politically, because he did not agree with me in politics. I see that you are striking for the "carpet-baggers," and I will say that with regard to men who are so designated, Mississippi is really better off than most of the Southern States. I really think that many of the northern men who have come there since the war have been great accessions to the country. There have been a few, and there may be a very few yet remaining, who have come there for purposes of plunder; but I believe that there are very few of that class of northern men there.

*Question.* Governor Alcorn has set his face very resolutely against the schemes which the carpet-baggers have succeeded in fastening upon most of the other States: the schemes of plundering by means of the State legislature?

*Answer.* Well, I know there was considerable jealousy existing between the governor and that class of northern men; but there is now entire reconciliation and harmony in the republican party in that respect. I believe that the great mass of the northern men in Mississippi would coöperate with the old citizens there in getting rid of those men who they believe come there for the purpose simply of plunder—of making money by holding office and then running away. I believe that Governor Powers, Dr. Smith, and other men of that class, who have come there and invested their means in our community, would coöperate with the old residents in putting down any northern man who had evidently come there to stir up strife and to instill mischief into the minds of the freedmen, or to gorge himself with the profits of office and then run away.

*Question.* There was an attempt made, I believe, was there not, to revive the old repudiated debt of the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but that was a very feeble attempt, and was so ridiculously absurd that scarcely anybody would ever entertain it. I believe a man named Morgan introduced a bill of that kind; but the proposition was perfect bosh, and nobody seriously entertained it. In fact, the bill was not even allowed to be considered. I think the report of the committee was not received, or perhaps the bill was not allowed to be introduced. I have no doubt some improper influences were used through some bad men to get up that measure; but they could not succeed in doing it.

*Question.* They have not been able as yet to load down the State of Mississippi with any very large amount of debt?

*Answer.* No, sir. There were some pretty large appropriations: but the governor exercised the veto power pretty freely. He remarked to me the other day (and I agreed with him, as did several other gentlemen from different parts of the State) that, all things considered, the legislation of Mississippi was as good under the circumstances as could have been expected; that there was nothing particularly to be complained of in that legislation.

*Question.* Did not the fact that the governor was so resolute against the fraudulent schemes of these adventurers lead to bad feeling between himself and some of the carpet-bag dignitaries?

*Answer.* There were some schemes of probably an improper nature which were brought forward by some members of the legislature, and which the governor opposed; and an attempt was made to produce upon other northern gentlemen the impression that there was some personal opposition on the part of the governor. There was at one time considerable feeling gotten up in that way; for I was in Jackson at the time, and was familiar with the facts. But as soon as the governor's position was understood, there was an entire reconciliation, except on the part of a few impecunious adventurers, whom the body of northern men in Mississippi now repudiate just as much as do the native republicans.

*Question.* Was not the governor arraigned in the Senate by General Ames?

*Answer.* I think he was. I think that was produced through certain influences which were very improper and wrong. I was in Jackson when a good deal of that was transpiring.

*Question.* What were the influences?

*Answer.* The idea was attempted to be created that Governor Alcorn was opposed to all northern men—opposed to their holding offices, opposed to their having any interest in the State; opposed to them generally. That feeling was greatly intensified by a great many statements as to the governor's position which were not correct.

*Question.* Statements made by whom?

*Answer.* By these northern gentlemen—members of the legislature and others—who, I believe, misunderstood the governor's position. The other day I spoke to Judge Tarbell, one of the judges of the supreme court, and the secretary of the State executive committee of the republican party—a gentleman who was either a colonel or a brigadier general of the Federal Army. I asked him how that matter stood, and he told me there had been a perfect and entire reconciliation with the governor in every particular.

*Question.* Have these carpet-baggers given up their schemes of plunder, or has the governor given in to them?

*Answer.* There has not been a great deal of that thing done; there was some attempted; and I will tell you one case that occurred. It was the case of the public printers. There was a gentleman named Raymond and some others who had a controlling interest in the public printing office. They charged an excessive price for printing some public documents; among other things, $37,000 for printing a pamphlet of about five hundred pages, containing a list of delinquent tax lands. A great deal of complaint was made about it. A great many of the leading republicans, northern men as well as southern, went to the governor and told him that the matter was an outrage which ought not to be submitted to. The governor removed those printers and appointed other men. There was a good deal of trouble about it at the time, and a good deal was said *pro* and *con* in the papers. But Judge Tarbell and others have told me that the whole party has become perfectly agreed that those men were trying to plunder outrageously, and that the governor had done right in removing them. He appointed as the public printers Alcorn and Fisher; Alcorn being a nephew of his, and Fisher a northern republican.

*Question.* They compromised the matter, did they?

*Answer.* I do not think there was much compromise about it. The whole party stood right out against the corruption and would not submit to it.

*Question.* Your information in regard to Ku-Klux seems to be much more extensive than that of Mr. Baskervill, even as to his own county. How do you account for that?

*Answer.* I account for it from the fact that I know a great many people there. I know a large number of republicans and a good many of the people on whom these outrages have been committed. They have talked to me about the matter pretty freely. Occupying the position I do, as mayor of Columbus, they tell me of these things pretty generally. Besides that, I think there are a great many people in our country who do not want to know anything more about these things than they can help.

*Question.* And another class want to know a great deal more than they do know?

*Answer.* I think there may be some of that class who would like to make the thing as large as possible; but I do not belong to that crowd.

By Mr. BUCKLEY

*Question.* You say that Mr. Baskervill has been absent a great deal?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he has been absent a good deal, traveling in connection with the insurance business. I think that accounts for his want of information in reference to some matters.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you recollect anything about a riot in Macon on the part of the negroes?

*Answer.* No, sir: I have heard of no riot; I have heard of some little disturbances, but nothing assuming the shape of a riot—nothing further than what we would call disturbances of the peace in any of our towns.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You feel that your government in Mississippi is quite free from corruption?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I do. I think that the general character of the legislation of our State has been as good, all circumstances considered, as that of any State in the Union. And we have a very good state of affairs there. There are a great many people through the country who are much opposed to northern men, or what are usually termed "carpet-baggers;" but the feeling generally, I believe, is better——

*Question.* I have reference to the State government.

*Answer.* The State government, I think, is in almost all respects unexceptionable.

*Question.* You hear no particular complaint of the judiciary of your State?

*Answer.* No, sir. As I stated a while ago, our judiciary is exceedingly able.

*Question.* And for these two reasons, if for no others, you feel there is no occasion, or justification, or palliation for these Ku-Klux outrages?

*Answer.* None whatever; and I have never yet heard any charge, or pretended charge, alleged as a ground for outrages of any kind, that could not have been reached through the civil tribunals, except the Ku-Klux outrages themselves; and these, as I have stated, it is impossible to reach through the ordinary course of legal proceedings, because witnesses are afraid to swear to what they know.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Would the victims of these outrages be likely to go to a man entertaining such views as those of Mr. Baskervill?

*Answer.* I do not think they would.

*Question.* Mr. Baskervill, I think, said he thought that those counties of which you have spoken were about as quiet as any counties in the New England States, and that there was about as much law and order there.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not believe any such thing.

*Question.* Are those counties as quiet, law-abiding, and orderly as they were before these Ku-Klux commenced their operations?

*Answer.* No, sir; they are not.

*Question.* Do the citizens feel as much security in the protection of the law as they felt before those operations commenced?

*Answer.* I do not think they do. So far as regards general offenses and crimes, there are larcenies and minor offenses to a considerable extent among the blacks in our country; but they are rigidly punished. The criminal laws are enforced with exceeding rigor in our part of the country; so that if a black man steals a pig or commits any other offense, it is the easiest thing in the world to get the proof, bring him before a civil tribunal, and have the penalty of the law inflicted upon him.

*Question.* Are the school taxes levied by the same men who levy all the other taxes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The school commissioners make the assessments?

*Answer.* The school directors make the estimates, and the board of supervisors make the levy.

*Question.* Could the board of supervisors cut down the estimates, and, if they chose, levy the tax for less than the amount of the estimates?

*Answer.* That, I suppose, would have to be a matter of consultation between the board of supervisors and the board of school directors. And that was done in our county and several other counties, because the estimates in Lowndes County were at first made for $65,000, on the basis of schools for eight months. That estimate was afterward reduced by common consent to $21,000.

*Question.* Has there been any complaint in regard to Governor Alcorn's exercise of the pardoning power?

*Answer.* No, sir. In fact I cannot call to mind a single pardon that he has granted. I do not believe that he has granted any; if he has, the number does not exceed two or three.

*Question.* The pretext given for these outrages in some States is that the pardoning power has been exercised too freely. That is not the case in Mississippi?

*Answer.* That is not the case in Mississippi. There have been fewer pardons under Governer Alcorn's administration than I remember to have been granted under any former administration.

*Question.* The pretext given for these outrages in some other localities is that the judiciary is partial, corrupt, and incompetent. Is that so in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is not.

*Question.* The pretext given in other localities is that there were burnings of barns and other buildings by the colored people. Has there been anything of that sort in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; nothing of the kind.

*Question.* Another pretext which has been given is that there have been rapes by colored men upon white women. Have you heard anything of that sort in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir. I did hear of one instance of that kind over in Alabama—a very aggravated case; but I never heard of anything of the kind in Mississippi.

*Question.* Another pretext which has been given in some localities is that the Union Leagues have been operating in such a manner as was not exactly pleasant or proper. Have you had any Union Leagues in those counties of Mississippi to which you have referred?

*Answer.* I have never heard of the existence there of anything called a Union League. We had the "Alcorn clubs."

*Question.* I am now inquiring as to the National Union League.

*Answer.* There has never been anything done by any organization of that kind to excite hostility.

*Question.* Another pretext which has been given in certain localities is that the colored men have been in the habit of mustering with arms in their hands.

*Answer.* There is nothing of that kind in Mississippi. The militia there is just being enrolled. There have been some militia organizations, both black and white, mustered in; but they have not any guns. The governor has but few arms, and he will not let them have them.

*Question.* Another reason given for the organization of the Ku-Klux in some localities is that the militia laws were such that the governor had power to call out negro militia and not to call out white men.

*Answer.* That is not so in Mississippi, because they are all enrolled. Two militia companies have been organized in the city of Columbus and mustered into the service of the State; one company is composed of white people, and the other of blacks.

*Question.* So that none of these things which have been made the pretext elsewhere for Ku-Klux operations exist in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; not one of them.

*Question.* The pretext given in Mississippi is that you have too many schools, and impose too much tax for their support?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the pretense; but the real feeling is opposition to public schools. The fact is, the democrats want to get control of the State; that is just "the milk in the cocoa-nut." I know that last fall, after the election in Alabama, it was a common saying all through our country, "We must carry Mississippi just like Alabama has been carried;" and all of us understood how Alabama was carried.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What was the understanding in regard to that?

*Answer.* The understanding was of course that it was carried by the Ku-Klux. Some of the counties in which the republicans had the largest majorities were carried by the democrats.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You say that in Mississippi the effect of this organization is, as it has been testified to be in other States, to intimidate the colored people and put them in a condition of alarm and terror?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do say that such is the effect there.

*Question.* And you believe that the effect will be to deter the colored people from voting the republican ticket in elections?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe that if about the time an election was coming on in Mississippi there were a few Ku-Klux raids it would so terrify the colored people that you could scarcely get one of them out to vote. I know this to be so, because I have seen it tried partially.

*Question.* Is it likely that men would engage in such crimes, having in view a political object, without giving some pretext or other, outside of the political bearing of their operations?

*Answer.* I suppose that of course they would not hold up to public view the prime object, because that would be at once recognized as a subversion of the principles of our Government, and would not be tolerated; it would weaken them in their own country. Hence they are compelled to assign some other pretext.

*Question.* The pretext assigned in Mississippi is that there are too many public schools, and that too much tax is imposed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and that in many instances men commit crimes which cannot be reached by law, which I say is not the fact.

---

[See page 422.]

CIRCULAR.

OFFICE COUNTY SUPERINTENDENT PUBLIC EDUCATION,
*County of Lowndes, State of Mississippi, June* 7, 1871.

*To the people of Lowndes County:*

I submit the following, in accordance with a resolution adopted by the board of school directors:

*Resolved,* That the county superintendent be requested to prepare a circular to the people of Lowndes County, containing information and statistics in regard to the school laws, the administration of this board, and all other matters which he may deem of importance connected with the schools of this county.

In accordance with section 23 of the school laws, the following gentlemen were appointed school directors by the board of supervisors: Samuel C. Johnson, John M. Symons, M. B. Smith, H. B. Whitfield, James M. Collins, E. C. Eggleston.

This board was organized on November 2, 1870. The directors were duly qualified by taking the oath of office.

It will be understood that this board was selected for the district embraced in the county outside of the corporate limits of Columbus, the city having more than five thousand inhabitants, constituting a separate district, and having its own board.

The powers and duties of the board of school directors are prescribed in section 28 of the school laws, part of which are as follows:

1st. To make such needful rules, by-laws, and regulations as they may deem necessary to aid in performing the duties of their offices, as well as to carry out the requirements of this act, not inconsistent with the Constitution of the United States or of the constitution and laws of the State of Mississippi.

2d. They shall divide the school districts into sub-school districts for the accommodation of the children of school age, and may alter and change the same to suit the convenience of the people. But no sub-school district shall contain less than twenty-five scholars. They shall designate the sub-school districts by numbers 1, 2, 3, &c.

3d. The procuring of grounds, and the procuring or constructing of suitable buildings for at once opening schools.

4th. The *hiring of teachers,* and such other duties as are necessary and requisite to put the schools into immediate operation.

5th. They may establish union or graded schools wherever they may deem it necessary.

Also section 1 of the supplemental act gives additional authority, as follows:

"*Be it enacted by the legislature of the State of Mississippi*, That the board of school directors provided for by section 23 of said act shall succeed to all powers, rights, and privileges not annulled by said act, heretofore vested, both at law and equity, in the several boards of trustees of schools and school lands within their respective districts, so far as such powers, rights, and privileges relate to the collection, settlement, and adjustment of all claims whatsoever, due from or to the said several boards of trustees."

In accordance with article 1, section 28, the board adopted such rules, by-laws, and regulations as were necessary to aid them in performing their duties.

The supplemental act of the school laws made it the duty of the board of school directors to call at once upon former school trustees, treasurers, attorneys, &c., for all books, deeds, notes, moneys, &c., in their possession. In accordance with this authority notice was given to all parties directly responsible for the school funds of the county.

Reports were made from ten whole and fractional townships.

The original land maps and records show that there were sixteen whole sections and three fractional parts of sections reserved especially for school purposes in Lowndes County—thus showing that there are more than six whole sections of land, besides fractional parts of sections, unaccounted for under the old system. What has become of the records of these lands? Who now hold them, by what title, &c., form a subject of interesting inquiry, and will develop some strange management.

Of the townships reported, notes and papers turned over, the following is a condensed statement:

| | |
|---|---|
| T. 16, R. 17, W. (Caledonia.) Amount of notes | $2,011 35 |
| T. 16, R. 18, W. (Due north of Columbus, toward the Buttahatchie.) Amount of notes | 1,889 76 |
| T. 17, R. 18, W. (Hopewell.) Amount of notes | 2,255 95 |
| T. 18, R. 17, W. (New Hope.) Amount of notes | 3,069 39 |
| T. 19, R. 17, W. (Zion.) Amount of notes | 3,635 04 |
| T. 19, R. 18, W. (Beckwith's.) Amount of notes | 1,943 86 |
| T. 17, R. 16, E. (Crawfordville.) Amount of notes | 2,934 80 |
| T. 17, R. 17, E. (Between Crawfordville & Trinity Church.) Amount of notes | 1,525 50 |
| T. 18, R. 16, E. (Artesia.) Amount of notes | 8,395 22 |
| T. 18, R. 17, E. (Cobb's Switch.) Reported, but no notes turned over. Amount of money in hands of former president of board of trustees, for which suit has been brought | 2,333 02 |
| T. 19, R. 17, E. (Concord and Prowell's.) Amount of notes | 9,655 20 |
| There were also turned over from T. 17, R. 16, E., in confederate money | 4,600 00 |
| From T. 17, R. 17, E., in confederate money | 8,600 00 |
| Turned over with books, T. 18, R. 17, E., in confederate money | 442 50 |
| Total amout of school funds paid in confederate money, to former trustees, in 1864 and 1865 | 13,642 50 |

Of the amount of notes received from the various townships, only twelve or fifteen thousand dollars can be considered solvent; the balance is very doubtful or utterly worthless, the makers of the notes being dead, removed from the county, or bankrupt.

The Chickasaw school fund is appropriated exclusively to that portion of the county north of Tibbee Creek, and west of the Tombigbee River. The interest is paid by the State semi-annually, amounting to $298 each payment.

The board of police during the war used this fund for various purposes, $3,077 94. In 1869 the board of supervisors used $694 of this fund. No part of the same having been paid, suit has been brought for its recovery.

In former years there was a common school-fund derived from fines and forfeitures, sales of estrays, &c. During the war the board of police used this fund, $1,525 71. There was a balance in hands of county treasurer November 7, 1864, as per report, of $3,774 15. There is no showing on the records as to how this sum was disposed of.

The sum due this fund from the county, not having been paid, suit has been instituted for its recovery.

The board of school directors, in accordance with law, authorized the county superintendent, with the assistance of legal counsel, to collect the above funds, in order that they might be safely invested as required by the constitution and laws.

| | |
|---|---|
| To this date, there has been received at this office | $5,982 63 |
| Which has been disposed of as follows: | |
| Turned over to county treasurer, vouchers on file | 4,640 57 |
| Commission retained by attorney for collecting vouchers on file | 142 06 |
| Paid by order of the board of school directors and at their own responsibility, for school-house purposes, vouchers on file | 1,200 00 |
| Total | 5,982 63 |

The sum of twelve hundred dollars was borrowed by the board, the same to be refunded.

In accordance with the requirements of article 2 of section 28 of the school law, the board subdivided the district or county of Lowndes into fourteen sub-school districts, according to convenience for school purposes.

Each school director from the several supervisors' beats ascertained the number of educable children in each sub-school district, also ascertained as nearly as possible what school facilities were necessary for the accommodation of the children of school age.

There were many obstacles in the way of putting the schools into operation, caused for the want of suitable school-houses, and other necessary school facilities.

The labors of the school directors show the following results, from the date of their organization, November 2, 1870, to this date, and for the balance of the year 1871.

The number of educable children in each sub-district between the ages of five and twenty-one years is, in

| | White. | Colored. |
|---|---|---|
| Sub-district, No. 1 | 70 | 11 |
| " 2 | 236 | 205 |
| " 3 | 118 | 219 |
| " 4 | 32 | 420 |
| " 5 | 193 | 267 |
| " 6 | 111 | 390 |
| " 7 | 47 | 122 |
| " 8 | 116 | 483 |
| " 9 | 48 | 521 |
| " 10 | 35 | 194 |
| " 11 | 88 | 510 |
| " 12 | 57 | 489 |
| " 13 | 413 | 1,502 |
| " 14 | 339 | 775 |
| Total | 1,902 | 6,108 |

This enumeration was made by the school directors with great care and at some expense, knowing that upon this would be distributed our pro rata share of the State school fund.

Each school director used much effort to get the people in each sub-district to furnish school-houses without charge. Several houses were obtained, but not enough to meet the expectations of the board.

To this date there has been needed forty-six houses for school purposes. Of this number twenty-six have been furnished free, fourteen have been rented or repaired at the expense of the county, and six have been erected or purchased.

The following statement will show the moneys contracted by the board for school-house purposes:

| | |
|---|---|
| Amount for erection and purchase of buildings for white schools | $7,408 |
| Amount for rent or repairs of buildings for white schools | 563 |
| Amount for erection and purchase of buildings for colored schools | 1,040 |
| Amount for rent of buildings for colored schools | 226 |
| Total | 9,237 |

Acting upon the petitions of different citizens, and by their repeated personal requests, the board purchased three school-buildings of a high order, payments to be made this year, $6,600.

In regard to school furniture, about which much has been said, it should be understood that no furniture was purchased except for first-class white schools.

It was necessary to purchase seats, desks, &c., for these schools, and the board, after investigation, found it cheaper to purchase furniture that would be permanent than to have them made of an inferior quality. The following is a true statement of the cost of these articles:

| | |
|---|---|
| Furniture for white schools | $1,678 70 |
| Furniture for colored schools | none. |
| Maps, reading charts, geographical charts, globes, blackboards, &c., furnished white schools | 805 90 |
| Maps, reading charts, blackboards, &c., furnished colored schools | 300 00 |
| Total for furniture, maps, &c | 2,784 60 |

To the colored schools have been furnished A B C charts, simple geographical maps, and cheap blackboards.

The board employed the best teachers that could be secured in the county, making special efforts to obtain those who had previously taught in the county; in fact, the board required teachers making applications to present petitions from the people where they desired to teach.

Nearly all the teachers are old citizens, and many of them natives of the county. Repeated efforts were made to induce residents to teach the colored schools, which proved successful in many instances. A few only have been employed from a distance.

The total number of teachers in the county, 56; white 47, colored 9. Number in white schools, 31; colored, 25.

| | |
|---|---|
| Aggregate of salaries contracted for teachers in white schools | $14,190 |
| Aggregate of salaries contracted for teachers in colored schools | 6,200 |
| Number of schools yet to open in accordance with the school laws, to enable the county to receive the pro rata share of the State school fund, about 7. | |
| Probable salary for teachers of these seven schools | 1,120 |
| Total | 21,510 |

The highest salary paid was $150 per month for a few teachers in the first-class schools; the lowest paid was $25 per month.

Average salary of teachers per month, $72.

The merits of our experienced teachers, the short term of the schools, and the uncertainty of their receiving full pay, induced the teachers to ask and the board to agree to higher salaries than they would have done under other circumstances.

Since February 1 teachers have been employed at much lower salaries than when the system was first established.

The board takes pride in saying that the teachers of the county, taken as a body, cannot be excelled in any portion of the country for intelligence, high character, and capacity to teach.

There have been in attendance to the public schools of the county, outside of the corporate limits of Columbus, during the present term, 2,572 children; white, 968; colored, 1,604. In many white schools the higher branches have been taught.

It will be readily understood that most of the colored pupils are in the primary studies, and for that reason a much larger number can be instructed by fewer teachers.

It is evident that the expense of maintaining the schools for this year will be greater than in time to come, by reason of purchase or erection of houses, desks, maps, and the like. The board of directors, in order to ascertain the probable amount necessary to sustain the schools in the county for the year, made an approximate estimate of expenses for each sub-district, upon a basis of schools for eight months. But it was made in such a way as that the funds derived from other sources than by tax could be deducted, and the time shortened. After reflection and investigation, it was decided to continue the schools for only five months, and to ask the board of supervisors, in accordance with article 31 of the school law, to levy a tax of $21,000 by sub-districts. The board of supervisors employed a competent gentleman to submit an estimate of the taxable property in each sub-district.

This estimate was made from the tax books, and was accurate as to real estate, and approximated to personal property.

The tax levied by the board varied for the different localities, but making all allowances for valuations as above stated, it was impossible, in any contingency, for more than three or four thousand dollars over the $21,000 to have been raised by tax.

Having made the figures accurately over and over again, there can be no mistake in this statement. As compared with the railroad tax of $17,500 for this year, which is of doubtful legality, the pauper tax of about $11,000, to support the few invalids in the poor-house and through the county, and the tax for county purposes, this school tax cannot be justly considered burdensome, particularly when it is considered that there have been no private schools in the county outside of West Point, and that this tax would have been paying the tuition of the children.

The following is a summary of amounts required for school purposes:

| | |
|---|---|
| For school-houses | $9,237 00 |
| For teachers' fund | 21,510 00 |
| For school furniture | 2,784 60 |
| Incidental expenses, embracing stoves and fuel for the county schools, printing and blank books for the clerk's office and this office, freights, rent of office, &c. | 2,000 00 |
| Amount estimated by the board necessary to carry out the requirements of section 31 of the school laws, about | 5,000 00 |
| Total | 40,531 60 |

As a part of this amount is to be raised otherwise than by tax, particular attention is called to the sources from which the school funds of the county are derived.

Article 8, section 6, of the constitution is as follows:

"There shall be established a common-school fund, which shall consist of the proceeds of the lands now belonging to the State, heretofore granted by the United States, and of the lands known as swamp lands, except the lands lying and situated on Pearl River, in the counties of Hancock, Marion, Lawrence, Simpson, and Copiah, and of all lands now or hereafter vested in the State by escheat or purchase, or forfeitures for taxes, and the clear proceeds of all fines collected in the several counties for any breach of the penal laws, and all moneys received for licenses granted under the general laws of the State for the sale of intoxicating liquor or keeping of dram-shops; all moneys paid as an equivalent for persons exempt from military duty, and the funds arising from the consolidating of the congressional township funds, and the lands belonging thereto, together with all moneys donated to the State for school purposes, which funds shall be securely invested in United States bonds, and remain a perpetual fund, which may be increased, but not diminished. The interest shall be inviolably appropriated for the support of free schools."

The funds to be derived from the sources here mentioned will be considerably reduced by the action of the last legislature in permitting the Mobile and Northwestern Railroad Company to purchase all the lands now belonging to the State heretofore granted by the United States, and all "swamp lands" within forty miles on each side of said railroad, at the nominal sum of two cents per acre. The first item of lands owned by the State is estimated by the friends of the railroad at nearly a million of acres, and the most valuable of the swamp lands lie between the Yazoo River and the terminus of the railroad opposite Helena, on the Mississippi River. The amount derived from lands, forfeitures for taxes, fines and forfeitures for violations of the penal laws, and licenses for keeping dram-shops or sale of intoxicating liquors, will constitute the largest source of revenue for the school fund. But it must be carefully noticed that the principal of this fund is required to be invested in United States bonds, and only the interest can be used. It is generally agreed that in the present straitened and embarrassed condition of the county, it is bad policy to attempt to provide a larger fund for posterity, when the present use of the entire amount will afford so great relief; and the board made special effort, through proper authority at Jackson, to get this feature of the constitution changed or suspended; and while the opinion was indorsed there of the necessity for so doing, there was no authority to reach it.

The interest derived from the township or sixteenth section funds will not be much, as the larger part of it has been squandered or insolvent, as heretofore shown.

Article 8, section 7, of the constitution provides for the levy of a poll-tax not to exceed $2 per head, in aid of the school fund. Section 5 of the State revenue laws provides for the levy and collection of this poll-tax, and also that all moneys arising from it, as well as the tax on the following privileges, shall be used entirely for the support of common schools, to wit: on physicians, lawyers, dentists, and veterinary surgeons; druggists, distillers, breweries, rectifying establishments, billiard-tables, ten-pin alleys, livery stables, trading boats, commission merchants, licensed auctioneers, brokers of every description, insurance companies, banks, insurance and gas-light companies, and savings institutions; express companies, ferries, bridges, and turnpikes; transient vendors, or dealers in live stock or merchandise, licensed inns, taverns, hotels, and restaurants; photograph galleries, circuses, menageries or other shows or exhibitions. It must be distinctly understood that these taxes are payable in State warrants or State money, which must be converted into par funds at market rates, when used in payment of teachers or debts, thus greatly reducing the amount.

Also, that this fund is distributed pro rata to each county according to the number of children between the ages of five and twenty-one years; and that the public schools must be maintained at least four months in order to draw the school funds from the State.

There is a part of this county entitled to its proportion of interest on the Chickasaw school fund, which has been before mentioned in detail.

After the use of the funds derived from the foregoing sources, any deficit in maintaining the schools is required to be raised by tax, authorized by the constitution and required by law, as follows:

SEC. 31. *Be it further enacted*, That the board of school directors shall, as soon as practicable, prepare and submit a report to the board of county supervisors, containing an estimate of the cost of school sites, construction, and rental of such number of school buildings as may be necessary to afford school facilities for each and every subschool district in the county or city; and shall also make an estimate of the necessary contingent expenses, such as repairs upon school-buildings, improvement of school grounds, fuel, necessary school apparatus, and any deficit in the teachers' fund which may arise. They shall, in like manner, thereafter make and submit a report annually on or before the fifteenth day of March.

SEC. 32. *Be it further enacted*, That it shall be the duty of the board of county supervisors thereupon to levy a tax upon the taxable property in each district sufficient to defray such estimated costs and expenses for said district: *Provided*, That no more than ten mills on the dollar shall be levied for school-house purposes, or five mills for teachers' fund. It shall be the duty of the president of the board of county supervisors to certify the number of mills or per centum upon the State tax thus levied to the collector of county taxes. The said collector thereupon shall enter upon separate assessment rolls, and submit the same to the board of county supervisors, who shall examine, and, if correct, approve the same. The tax thus levied shall be collected in the same manner as other county taxes are by law collected, and shall be paid to the county treasurer, who shall keep a separate account with each district in the county, and shall credit each district with the amount thus collected and paid.

In accordance with section 31 the board of school directors asked the board of supervisors to levy a tax of $21,000 upon the taxable property in each sub-district to pay for the cost of school sites, construction and rental of suitable school buildings, for contingent expenses, and the deficit in the teachers' fund.

The board will have funds from the interest on sixteenth sections amounting to about $2,500, and from the Chickasaw school fund $2,879 04.

The amount derived from the sources before mentioned or the State school fund cannot now even be approximately stated. Nor can it be stated positively when it will be received by the county treasurer. The distribution of the fund should have been made the 1st of June, but on account of the postponement of the collection of taxes there will be considerable delay in the payment.

It must be understood when this fund is received it will be in State warrants or State money, which will be at a discount.

In order to place the responsibility where it properly belongs, the facts must be distinctly kept in mind that, after a tax of $21,000 was legally levied by the board of supervisors, and the larger part of it collected by the sheriff, all the delays in payment of teachers and others, and whatever of annoyance may have been felt, was caused by the action of the board of supervisors in repealing the entire school tax, and ordering the sheriff to refund that which had been collected.

The questions of legal responsibility for such action on the part of all concerned will come up for future consideration, especially when it is understood that such action was in undue haste, at an irregular meeting, without any notice given to the county superintendent, the board of school directors, or the public.

In regard to the superintendent's office, a suitable room could not be had at the court-house. It became, therefore, the duty of the board to rent an office, which was done at a cost of $12 50 per month. They also purchased for the office a small desk, six common chairs, an office chair, a small table, a cheap carpet, &c., amounting in the aggregate to $80; other office furniture, books, &c., are private property.

The foregoing facts are submitted for candid consideration, and if viewed without prejudice, must satisfy every one that this system, considering the character of the teachers, the number and grade of the schools, the number of children instructed, and the general educational facilities afforded, is the cheapest school system ever inaugurated in this section.

By a careful examination of all arguments offered in opposition to the public-school system, it will be plainly seen that they have their origin from prejudice, selfishness, want of correct information, and determined opposition to the education of the masses of the poor people, no matter whether they are white or black.

The main lever of opposition to the school system has been placed upon the prejudice of being taxed to school colored children. This has been the great hobby. Leaving out of view the questions of whether it is better to have a laboring population debased by ignorance or elevated and rendered more efficient by intelligence, look at the subject in the light of absolute, unyielding facts. Come out from behind this bug-bear of prejudice and stand upon the platform of truth and justice.

From the facts here submitted, which cannot be successfully controverted, it will be clearly seen that the colored schools of this country, from their less expensive character as to teachers, houses, the kind of instruction required, the larger number of children who can be instructed by a single teacher, and the large number of this class of people who draw their pro rata of the poll and privilege tax, to which they are the largest contributors in the county by payment of patronage, can and will be supported without one dollar of direct tax. What, then, is the result? That, whatever of deficit is required to be raised by tax is for the white schools, and to oppose it or the school system is to oppose the education of white children, especially the children of the poor, large numbers of whom would not have seen the inside of a school-house this year, or ever, but for this school system.

In mentioning the prejudice and opposition to the public-school system, it is not the intention of the board of school directors nor the county superintendent to render "evil for evil" or "railing for railing," or to convey to the minds of any that this prejudice, &c., is universal.

Many of the best citizens of the county asked for public-school privileges, knowing that the tax would be levied according to sub-districts, and they would be obliged to pay their proportion of the cost.

Having had the privileges of schools and the faithful services of the teachers, the masses of the people were paying their school tax until the tax was repealed.

The question then arises, where did this opposition commence, and by whom? In the masses or by a few?

After full consideration of the facts presented and the benefits derived, let the people answer.

Respectfully,

J. N. BISHOP,

*County Sup't of Education and President of the Board of School Directors.*

---

WASHINGTON, D. C., *August* 4, 1871.

GEORGE B. PICKETT sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL.) As you are more conversant, Mr. Buckley, with the nature of this witness's testimony than I am, you will please open the examination.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Do you belong to the Army of the United States?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I am at present stationed at Aberdeen, Mississippi. For the past two months I have been stationed at Pontotoc, Mississippi, commanding a detachment of the Sixteenth Infantry.

*Question.* How long have you been on service in the State of Mississippi?

*Answer.* About three years and a half. I went there in 1867, but since that time I have been absent from there about one year in Kentucky, where my company was sent.

*Question.* In what places in Mississippi have you been stationed?

*Answer.* I have been stationed in Grenada, Carrollton, Greensboro, McNutt, Jackson, Vicksburg, Lauderdale, Aberdeen, and Pontotoc; but it was in 1867, 1868, and 1869 that I was at most of these stations.

*Question.* Which were your most recent stations?

*Answer.* Aberdeen, Pontotoc, and Vicksburg.

*Question.* The object of this investigation is to inquire into the condition of the late insurrectionary States, and from you more particularly as to the State of Mississippi, with respect to the security of property and life. I will state that in giving your testimony you are not confined to your personal knowledge, but you may give any information which you have derived from sources you deem reliable. State whether disturbances, scourgings, or other outrages or crimes have been committed within that State, either within your own knowledge or upon information on which you rely.

*Answer.* The last election in Mississippi was, I believe, in 1868—the election when Alcorn was elected governor. About two months previous to that election I had command of Sunflower County; I was military inspector. The county was a very large one; it had, I believe, fifteen registrars. The sheriff came to me one day and wanted me to go down with a detachment of men to a place where it was stated one of our boxes had been broken up, and the people not allowed to assemble. I did not believe the report, and told him I guessed I would not go; that he might go down with a deputy sheriff and see what the trouble was. He went down, and was captured by a mob of about one hundred and seventy-five men, at a place called Young's Store or Young's Ferry, on the Yazoo. There is a little town called Greenwood about two miles on the other side. They put him there in a drug store, kept him several hours, and then released him. He came back the next day, about 5 o'clock, and told me what was up. I had only one horse and four mules. I mounted four of my men on mules, took the horse myself, and started to stop this trouble. I went to a place called Boyd's, on the Tallahatchee River, nine miles from my headquarters. I there met three companies of men, one from Sunflower County, one from Tallahatchee, and one from Carroll. They were under the command of Dr. Gibson, who was acting as major. The men were not disguised at all. They saw me coming down the lane, which was about four miles long. They sent out eight men to see who was coming. We were riding very fast. The negroes along the road were rushing out when they saw us, and were hallooing, "For God's sake, hurry on! They are killing us all!" I rode on without paying much attention to them. When I got pretty close to Boyd's these men rode out to meet me. I halted my men, and told them all to load their pieces. They were armed with breech-loaders; I had two navy revolvers. They loaded their pieces, and I started on at full gallop. I told my men that if I took my cap and motioned it they were to halt; if not they were to fire at once, and we would clean out that party of eight, and then if necessary retreat to McNutt. I motioned my cap, and they halted. One of the men, Jeff. McEl

more, happened to be an acquaintance of mine; I had met him one or two years before. He said, "Pickett, what are you doing here?" I told him I was stationed there in command of Sunflower County, and had come there to see what the trouble was. I said to him, "What in the devil is the matter with you people any way? What are you over here for?" They lived across the Yazoo River. Said he, "By God, these niggers are trying to run this country, and we are going to stop them." "O," said I, "Jeff, that is all foolishness." I knew his father and all his folks, and felt very kindly toward him. Said I, "I will ride down and see these other men." I asked him who was in command. He said Dr. Gibson was, and that there were three companies—one hundred and fifty-four men altogether. I went down there and met Dr. Gibson, a very hot-headed fellow. He said, "You God damned Yankee son of a bitch, what are you doing down here?" I said I had been sent there by the military authorities to command Sunflower County, and to keep peace and order to the best of my ability, and that I proposed to do it. Said he, "God damn you, you don't think that with four men you can lick out my crowd?" Said I, "I didn't come here for that purpose; I didn't come here to fight, but to have you disband your men, if possible." Said he, "By God, I don't propose to do it. I am going to McNutt, and I am going to kill every God damned nigger on the road." I replied, "You will have a pretty good time before you get through. I order you to disperse these men and go home." Said he, "I'll be God damned if I will. The Government sends down God damned radicals, niggers, and one thing or other to overrun the people, and we are not going to stand it." I told him that there was no use of talking to me in that way; that I was sent there as a military officer, not to ask any office of the people, but simply to obey my orders as a lieutenant. I remonstrated with them a while. Pretty soon we saw a boat coming up from Vicksburg. The captain, when he saw the big crowd on the banks, was not going to land. I called to him, and he landed. The officers of this mob and myself took supper on the boat. I closed up the bar. Gibson told me we had better not allow the men to have anything to drink, or he would not be able to control them. He seemed willing then to disperse his men. I stationed three men—one on the Tallahatchee River road, another on the McNutt road, and another I kept as an orderly at Boyd's store, which I made my headquarters. It was expected the negroes would all be armed; and there were about ten negroes to one white man in the county. I gave my men orders to halt all persons approaching, and in case they saw any armed bodies of negroes to tell them to go back home; that everything was quiet; that I had dispersed the Gibson band, and would see them protected.

About 12 o'clock, Gibson's men dispersed and went home. I went back to McNutt, about nine miles distant; arriving there about 2 o'clock. When I got into town, I was halted by a sentinel—a negro on picket there. About forty of the negroes had assembled at the court-house, and the sheriff and three or four other white men were there. The rest of my men were back of me. The negroes had been pretty badly scared: but when they saw me and I told them things were all right, they quieted down.

This mob of Gibson's, before I met them, had killed two men. I went to see them, and helped lay them out in a cabin near Boyd's store.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Were they colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I mentioned this fact in my report to the military authorities.

(By Mr. BUCKLEY:)

*Question.* This was while the State was under the provisional government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Can you speak of occurrences more recent than those?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. My company was up in Kentucky for about a year, and came back to Mississippi about four months ago, right after the whipping of Colonel Huggins. We were sent to Mississippi, I suppose, on that account. We went to Aberdeen, and remained there some two months, when I was ordered to Pontotoc County in command of thirty men. I have been there twice. I went at the request of Governor Alcorn, who telegraphed for assistance. Thirty-five disguised men, called Ku-Klux, rode into the town of Pontotoc one night, between 12 and 1 o'clock, and inquired at a house in town for Colonel Flournoy. They were halted by Judge Pollard, the chancellor of that district, who demanded their surrender. They fired at him. He had eight men concealed behind a brick house; they stepped out and fired on the disguised men, who retreated. The disguised men had a kind of horn which they blew, trying to rally their men, who had got scattered. The men with Pollard were armed with double-barreled shot-guns. It appears that at the first volley nobody was killed; nobody fell from his horse. Then Colonel Flournoy, who lives in Pontotoc, and is the editor of a republican paper there, went with two or three others, and headed off the party on a cross street. They fired again, I think, and one of the disguised party was killed; at least he died in a few hours afterward. His name was Dillard. They carried him down to the jail and took off his mask. He died, I think, in three or four hours.

I was sent up to Pontotoc, at the request of Governor Alcorn. I arrived there two days after this occurrence. I suppose that two-thirds of the people in the town of Pontotoc were willing to fight these Ku-Klux; they were opposed to them.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Do you mean two-thirds of the white men?

*Answer.* Well, about two-thirds of the white people. There are not more than sixty people there, I suppose. Still they were very sorry that this man had been killed. They received me very kindly. I went up with a detachment of troops. Judge Pollard called a meeting of the leading citizens. I wanted to know whether it was necessary for me to remain there. I did not want to stay in that little out-of-the-way place unless it was necessary. They decided among them that they could keep things in order; and they left it discretionary with me whether to remain there or return home. I returned, simply because I did not care to stay in that little town unless I had positive orders to remain. I returned to Aberdeen, and remained there about one month, when orders came from General Terry, commanding the Department of the South, to send one officer and thirty men to Pontotoc. I, being the officer on duty at the time, was sent. I went up there, and established myself in the court-house. During all the time I was there, everything was perfectly quiet in the town and in the county. They had a democratic convention while I was there; and everything was carried on quietly. I think, though, that the reason was there were troops there; that is my candid opinion. I understood from prominent men that the whole Ku-Klux ticket was nominated; a man who, they said, was grand cyclops of the county was nominated for sheriff. There was a good deal of ill-feeling about it, for quite a number of democrats in the county were opposed to this organization. Over in Monroe County, when I arrived there, the officers were telling me of the reception which was given on the return of the men who were arrested charged with being Ku-Klux. Lieutenant McCoy of my regiment had arrested thirty-seven.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* When was this?

*Answer.* About six weeks ago, I think. The men arrested were sent up to Oxford under charge of the military, with ten soldiers guarding them. The men had an examination before the United States commissioner; and then they had a hearing upon a writ of *habeas corpus* before Judge Hill, a United States judge. All but ten were released, being bound over in the sum of $5,000 each. They all returned to Aberdeen together. The night they returned from Oxford, they telegraphed that they would be at Aberdeen that night. The people all turned out, and gave them a grand reception, firing cannon and playing music; they gave them a supper, and had a good time generally.

*Question.* Did the citizens go out to meet them?

*Answer.* All, I suppose, except about fifteen white citizens. Probably a few darkeys followed along to see what was up.

*Question.* Have you known of any other ridings of disguised men in that section of the State?

*Answer.* I have heard of several raids over in the adjoining counties. I have heard of one or two in Lowndes County, and one or two in Oktibbeha. Since our arrival there, Captain Rose, captain of our company, was requested to make a report to General Terry of the condition of affairs in the county. There have been seven men killed since our arrival in the county, some four months ago.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Has there been any report of parties whipped?

*Answer.* I have a few of the names here.

*Question.* Read the report.

*Answer.* This is just a memorandum.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Read the names.

*Answer.* This is what was reported to me; I was not there at the time. This is what I took from the report of Captain Rose, the commanding officer.

Mr. BLAIR. I object to this as evidence. It is merely a memorandum taken from a report. If these things are to be testified to, we want an opportunity to cross-examine.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* You say there was a report made?

*Answer.* Captain Rose, of the United States Army, who commands the post at Aberdeen, made a report. These reports had been coming in of freedmen being killed, school-teachers whipped and driven out, &c. At first we did not pay any attention to them; we supposed they were all "gas" and "blowing." But finally the reports got to coming in so fast that Captain Rose thought it his duty to inquire into the matter, which he did; and he made a report, giving names and circumstances.

*Question.* How many did he report killed?
*Answer.* I have the names of seven.
*Question.* Can you give those names?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have a memorandum of them here. The first is Aleck Page.
*Question.* What were the circumstances of his killing?
*Answer.* That is what I do not know. I have the dates.
*Question.* What was the date?
*Answer.* Jack Dupree was the first killed; he was killed February 8, 1871. The next was Aleck Page, who was killed March 27, 1871; Jesse Mayfield, April 9, 1871. This is just as they were reported to General Terry.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Who made that report?
*Answer.* Captain Rose.
Mr. BLAIR. I object to the reception of this. We have not Captain Rose here to cross-examine.
The CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL.) It seems to me that, though this is hearsay evidence, it is such as we have been constantly receiving.
WITNESS. These cases, I think, have all been reported before the grand jury.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You believe it to be true that these men were killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did you understand that they were killed by bodies of men in disguise?
*Answer.* They were killed by the Ku-Klux; that is what everybody says. Negroes would come in and make reports. The first few months we were there we took no notice of these things; finally Colonel Rose (he was a colonel by brevet) thought he would inquire to see whether there was any truth in these reports. It was generally thought that the freedmen would report a good many things that were not true, and would "blow" a good deal.
*Question.* You heard that these negroes were killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. These are the names on our books at headquarters.
*Question.* You were stationed at that post?
*Answer.* That is my post. I was temporarily absent at Pontotoc.
*Question.* Do you believe on good authority that those negroes were killed by men in disguise?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do. These are reports that are made to us at headquarters. The negroes came to us for protection.
*Question.* Did you talk with Captain Rose on the subject at all?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I talked with him one day about it. He said, "I have not believed these reports up to this time; but now I believe there is such an organization as Ku-Klux, and I am willing to inquire into it, and see whether these reports are true or not." He made an investigation, and found that some of these men had been killed.
*Question.* Then you get your information, not from what you saw in the report, but from what he told you?
*Answer.* I heard him mention some of these names; I cannot swear as to all of them. This was a copy of the report which Lieutenant McCoy brought me when I told him I wanted the names of these men. He had them in the office. I had been absent in Pontotoc for a few weeks.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Are there any of the cases concerning which you got your information from the report only?
*Answer.* Well, the killing of these men is known throughout the town. Everybody in town knows it.
*Question.* It is the common rumor?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You have heard of the cases from other sources than Captain Rose's report?
*Answer.* I have heard of them from citizens. I live on the edge of the town. If a negro would be killed in the evening, for instance, it would be known the next day. People would say along the streets, "Hallo, Pickett, did you hear about that nigger being killed last night?"

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* If you have from any sources information which you believe to be true, in regard to the killing of any of those men, state it.
*Answer.* I am pretty confident that they were all killed.
*Question.* You are pretty confident that there have been seven men killed in that neighborhood?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; within the last four months.

*Question.* State what you have heard in the community or elsewhere in regard to those cases.

*Answer.* In some of those cases the community was not willing to believe that the men had been killed by Ku-Klux, and tried to make out that they had been killed by other parties.

*Question.* Did you hear that seven persons had been killed in that county within the last four months?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Upon information on which you relied?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Killed by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any number of men being whipped in that county within the last four months?

*Answer.* I have heard, I think, of three or four within that time.

*Question.* By men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; within the last five or six months. Colonel Huggins was whipped before we went there. Everybody knows that he was whipped; everybody says so.

*Question.* Have you heard of any colored men being whipped within that time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think I have heard of two or three; and there were four or five teachers of colored schools in the county who were threatened that if they did not leave they would be Ku-Kluxed.

*Question.* Have you heard of any riding around of disguised men in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have heard of ridings nearly every night. It is my duty to attend in the evening at the tap of the roll-call, and I generally come back to camp about 10 o'clock at night; and there is always somebody in the woods loafing around; and we have to lie every night with a musket by our bedside, and a pistol under our head, for our own protection.

*Question.* Do you deem that necessary in order to protect yourself against these disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I do. We are living about a quarter of a mile from our camp; Colonel Rose has frequently had to fire at people going through these woods—men who would be loitering around there.

*Question.* Do you observe any demonstrations of hostility to you?

*Answer.* Well, the people in the town will treat us very pleasantly; will speak to us, and that is about all; will say, "Good morning, Captain, or Lieutenant."

*Question.* I mean are there any demonstrations of violence?

*Answer.* No, sir; we do not notice much of it there in the town, except that the people feel rather bitter.

*Question.* Is there any state of terror or fear of the Ku-Klux on the part of the colored men in that locality?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is a good deal.

*Question.* Is it general?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you any information of the character of the men who compose these disguised organizations?

*Answer.* I think they are composed generally of the poorer classes, but are led on by the better classes of people.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What was the character of the man killed at Pontotoc? Was he known there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was known throughout the county. He was a poor man.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Have you reason to believe that these bands are organized; that they have leaders, and act in concert?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I believe to-day that there are three hundred Ku-Klux in Monroe County.

*Question.* Do you think they are organized in one or more companies?

*Answer.* I think they are organized into companies or Klans of about thirty-five men each.

*Question.* What do you suppose to be the object of these men who are thus organized?

*Answer.* Well, in Monroe County they appear to be opposed to public schools, and they appear to oppose all northern people who vote the republican ticket.

*Question.* Their opposition is to colored republicans and white republicans who are their leaders?

*Answer.* There appears to be opposition to the leaders.

*Question.* Do you think there is any political object connected with the organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think there is.

*Question.* What is the object?

*Answer.* Well, I think their object is to carry the elections if they can; but I do not know that. I am no politician myself; I do not go into politics at all; I never voted in my life. But that appears to me to be their object.

*Question.* Do you mean that their object is to carry the elections against the republican party?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Does that organization extend to the adjoining counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think these organizations are confined to about five counties along the borders of Alabama.

*Question.* Have you heard of other ridings and outrages in other counties than Monroe?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have.

*Question.* In what counties?

*Answer.* I have heard of them in Lowndes and Oktibbeha; and in Pontotoc County they were riding while I was there.

*Question.* Have you heard of any in Winston?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about that.

*Question.* Chickasaw?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about Chickasaw.

*Question.* You have not been in those counties?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you suppose there is in that organization any hostility to the Government of the United States?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know that there is. When soldiers come around they appear to be respectful—whether through fear or not I do not know.

*Question.* Do you find that any of the citizens give any encouragement to that organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think that in Aberdeen four-fifths of the white people encourage these Klans. In the town of Pontotoc the majority of the white people oppose this organization; but I believe that two-thirds of the people in the county of Pontotoc are either Ku-Klux or sympathize with the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Does there seem to be among the members of the democratic party any dread of the operations of this organization?

*Answer.* Well, in the town of Pontotoc a good many democrats say that the thing must be stopped; that though they are democrats, and expect always to be democrats, they are going to stop any institution of this kind.

*Question.* Have you heard any democrats in that county express apprehension of being visited and outraged by these bands?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You say that colored people, principally, are the ones who are in dread?

*Answer.* The colored people and the "carpet-baggers," as they call them. Every northern man down there is called a "carpet-bagger." They do not apply that name, however, to the military.

*Question.* Did you ever know any democrats to be whipped by these men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any.

*Question.* Do you know Mr. Morphis, member of Congress from the Pontotoc district?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know whether he is in dread of violence from these bands of men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is.

*Question.* Has he reason to be?

*Answer.* I think he has.

*Question.* Do you know whether he feels secure in his own house?

*Answer.* He may at the present time; but when I went there some six weeks ago he did not.

*Question.* Do you know whether he has been compelled to sleep out of his house?

*Answer.* Only from what I have heard. That is what they say. Colonel Flournoy, and other people in the town, told me so.

*Question.* Do you think that Mr. Morphis is really in danger in that county?

*Answer.* I think he is.

*Question.* In danger of personal violence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* From these bands of men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think his life is in danger?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think it is.

*Question.* Is he a native Mississippian?

*Answer.* I don't know; I think he has gone there since the close of the war.

*Question.* Is he a man of good character?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; people speak very well of him there in town. I am not very well acquainted with him; but I hear what people say.

*Question.* Is there anything alleged against him except his politics?

*Answer.* That is all I have heard. He is called a "damned radical." That is all they appear to have against him. Everybody in town speaks very well of him, except that they say he does not represent them in Congress.

*Question.* That is, he does not represent the political sentiment of the white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they say that he misrepresents them in Congress. That is what the white people say.

*Question.* Do you hear any complaint, politically, against Colonel Morphis by the republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir. I do not have anything to do with politics at all. When Colonel Morphis came back from Washington the last time I told him that if he did not feel safe at his house I would send some of my men over in the evening to stay there; that I would protect him, or any other man in town who wanted to be protected; that that was what I was there for.

By Mr. BUCKLEY

*Question.* Do you think that the stationing of the United States troops there is essential to the safety of the citizens, or any portion of them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think it has a very good effect.

*Question.* Do you think that troops are required to keep the peace and insure the safety of life?

*Answer.* I think that is the case with a few. There are three men whom they say they are going to kill—Colonel Morphis, Colonel Flournoy, and Mr. Bell, the sheriff of the county.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Are they all leading white republicans?

*Answer.* Mr. Bell, I think, is a republican; but he is not much of a politician.

*Question.* Is he a man of wealth?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He is a man who was born and raised there. He lived there when the Indians were there.

*Question.* Do you hear anything alleged against these men except that they are prominent republicans?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard anything against them. People speak in the best terms of all of them. They are men who pay their debts and attend to their own business. Colonel Flournoy is the editor of a paper there. I think he has been rather violent in some of his articles. He is a hot-headed man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Colonel Flournoy lives in the town of Pontotoc?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say that when these disguised parties appeared in the streets that night, they called at somebody's house. Whose house was it?

*Answer.* I do not know whose house it was. They rode up to somebody's house, which I think was right on the edge of town, and inquired, I believe, for Colonel Flournoy. The place where they were fired upon was up in town, on the square, in the vicinity of the court-house.

*Question.* Had they fired upon anybody at that time?

*Answer.* They fired on Judge Pollard when he demanded their surrender. He told them he was an officer of the law, and demanded that they should surrender; just as soon as he said that, they fired on him. When they fired, Pollard's men stepped out from behind a brick house and fired at this party.

*Question.* Did this party fire at Judge Pollard without the volley taking effect?

*Answer.* They did not hit him. I do not know whether they all fired or not; but a volley was fired by some of the party.

*Question.* How do you know they fired?

*Answer.* Judge Pollard told me so.

*Question.* You only have it from him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How far from him did he say the men were when they fired?

*Answer.* They were out in the middle of the road and he was right near the house. The distance, I suppose, was about fifteen or twenty yards.

*Question.* And they fired a volley at him and did not hit him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And then you say Flournoy and his party went around and waylaid this other party and killed a man named Dillard?

*Answer.* Flournoy and the others went round and fired at them; I do not know who killed the man; some of the party killed him.

*Question.* Was the party upon which Flournoy and his men fired the same party that had fired on Pollard before?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. When Dillard's party first fired their horses jumped, and the men became scattered and had to rally. Flournoy's party headed them off.

*Question.* Were the party upon whom Flournoy and his men fired a different party from those who had fired upon Pollard?

*Answer.* No, sir; the same party, as I understand. They showed me where the firing took place.

*Question.* Did they assert that this party of Ku-Klux had fired on Pollard first?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they fired upon him immediately after his demand for their surrender.

*Question.* Who told you that?

*Answer.* Judge Pollard himself. He and I stayed a day and a night together at the hotel in Pontotoc.

*Question.* Do you think they could have fired at that distance with the intention of injuring him and failed to strike him?

*Answer.* I believe they could. Whether they could or not, they did it.

*Question.* They might have fired without any intention of injuring him?

*Answer.* They might have done that; still they fired.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You do not know how many fired?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You do not know whether any of them fired?

*Answer.* I know what Judge Pollard told me; that is all.

*Question.* This whole transaction, with all the circumstances, was narrated to you by Pollard and Flournoy?

*Answer.* By Pollard and twenty or thirty other citizens of the town. I remained there two or three days right after the affair. I was sent there by Governor Alcorn with troops to assist the authorities of the town in keeping order.

*Question.* Did anybody else than Judge Pollard inform you that these parties had fired on him when he ordered them to surrender?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all who belonged to Judge Pollard's company told me so. I visited each one of them. They all told me that when Judge Pollard demanded their surrender, the men fired upon him without giving him any chance to get out of the way.

*Question.* Did anybody besides Judge Pollard and his men tell you that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have been told of it by a great many people there in Pontotoc. I have been introduced to a great many men, and they would all commence and tell me their story about it.

*Question.* Did you never hear any other story told about it? Was there no other representation in regard to the first firing?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of any other.

*Question.* After this you returned to Aberdeen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And you were stationed there until you were summoned before this committee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the headquarters of my company.

*Question.* You say that the people there are very restive, and hostile to the administration of the State government?

*Answer.* I do not know that I said that exactly. They are hostile against "carpet-baggers," as they call them, and against the freedmen or colored people.

*Question.* What do they say about the "carpet-baggers?"

*Answer.* They say that they are opposed to them; that they do not like to have them come down there for the purpose of procuring offices.

*Question.* Do they say that they are plundering the people by their action in the State legislature?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that they say that.

*Question.* Do they say that those men come down there for the purpose of getting office and plunder?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do they allege that those men excite the animosity of the negroes against the white people?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that they do.

*Question.* Do they not allege that they endeavor to excite animosity between the races for the purpose of obtaining the votes of the negroes and getting office?

*Answer.* No, sir; I cannot say that they do.

*Question.* They do not make any such allegation?

*Answer.* They may make it; I have not heard anything about it; I have heard them say a great many things which I did not pay any attention to.

*Question.* Do the people complain of bad government?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is, they complain of "radical" government as they call it. They just "damn" it; that is all.

*Question.* Do they not complain of being taxed enormously for the purpose of educating the negroes? Do they not complain of the plundering by the radicals?

*Answer.* Well, I have heard a few of them complain in that way in Monroe County. I have not heard it in any other county. Monroe County is a very large county. I think, however, that the people in Monroe would complain of anything that was right.

*Question.* Have they not a right to complain when they are badly treated?

*Answer.* The present law requires them to build school-houses. They oppose it, and when school-houses are built with their own money, they go and burn them down The school-houses are to be rebuilt, and I suppose they will burn them down again.

*Question.* They were built with their money, were they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. As long as they can stand it I suppose other people can.

*Question.* They were built with the white people's money, were they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The negroes did not contribute anything toward building them?

*Answer.* If they owned any property I suppose they paid their share.

*Question.* How much is their share?

*Answer.* I do not know.

*Question.* How much property do you think the negroes own?

*Answer.* I do not know; I cannot say.

*Question.* As much as they usually do elsewhere?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a little more. I think that quite a number of them own small farms in the county.

*Question.* In what proportion do you suppose they contribute to the payment of the tax?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know.

*Question.* A very small proportion?

*Answer.* A small proportion.

*Question.* The great bulk of the taxation is paid by the white people of the country?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN, (Mr. POOL:)

*Question.* Did this party of men that made the raid into Pontotoc use pistols or guns when firing on Judge Pollard?

*Answer.* Both pistols and guns, I think. I brought with me to this city a uniform that belonged to one of this Klan in Pontotoc County. The man who was killed belonged to the same Klan.

*Question.* You mean a disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir: Judge Pollard's men captured fifteen uniforms, and sixteen horses, besides capturing Dillard, who was wounded, and soon after died.

*Question.* When you say uniforms you mean disguises?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were the disguises similar?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all except the masks; some were red, some white, some black.

*Question.* With that exception the disguises were similar to each other?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all about the same. In Monroe County their disguise is a white gown.

*Question.* Give a description of the disguise which you brought with you.

*Answer.* The head part of it is made of white calico, with places for the eyes, nose, and mouth—trimmed with black.

*Question.* Any horns or head-piece?

*Answer.* No, sir; it runs up to a point and has a little tassel about sixteen inches long.

*Question.* Above the head?

*Answer.* No, sir; it hangs down from the top. Then there is a sack coat, something in the shape of a soldier's overcoat without the cape. It is made loose and large, and is worn over the other coat. It is made of black calico, with white stripes in front, passing over the shoulders. The pants, which are also of black calico, are made in the form of overalls, and have a white stripe.

*Question.* Does it look like a disguise gotten up hastily and carelessly, or is it elaborately made?

*Answer.* It is very nicely made.

*Question.* Does it show preparation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It does not look as if it were just caught up for a single occasion?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is very nicely made.

*Question.* You say that fifteen of these disguises were captured on the occasion of the raid into Pontotoc?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the firing of Colonel Flournoy and his men upon this disguised party within a few minutes of the firing on Judge Pollard; was it all a part of the same transaction?

*Answer.* This last firing occurred ten or fifteen minutes after the first firing.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Have you ever conversed with any persons in Mississippi who told you that they were members of this organization, or of any secret organization of this kind?

*Answer.* I have heard men say that they were members of it; they never told me so; I have heard them tell others so.

*Question.* You have not, yourself, had any direct conversation with any one who professed to be a member of the order?

*Answer.* No, sir.

# TESTIMONY TAKEN BY THE SUB-COMMITTEE.

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 6, 1871.

ALEXANDER K. DAVIS (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* State your place of residence.

*Answer.* Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi.

*Question.* State your occupation.

*Answer.* I am, you might say, a law-student. I have been admitted to the bar; I claim that for my occupation.

*Question.* Are you a candidate for the legislature at this time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you ever been a member of the legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I represented this county in the last legislature.

*Question.* How long have you lived in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* I have lived here since June, 1869.

*Question.* Where did you live previous to that time?

*Answer.* I lived in Shelby County, Tennessee, sir.

*Question.* What opportunities have you enjoyed of knowing the condition of affairs in this county as to peace and good order, and the observance of the laws?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I can only say that the only opportunities I have had to know them was as a grand juror of the United States court, of the district court for the northern district of Mississippi.

*Question.* Are you pretty generally acquainted with the colored people of this county?

*Answer.* In all the counties in the eastern tier of counties I am pretty well acquainted—Kemper, Lowndes, Monroe, and Chickasaw; and I am pretty well known, and know a great many prominent colored men through these counties.

*Question.* Are you pretty well acquainted through the different townships of this county?

*Answer.* I am pretty thoroughly acquainted in the county, but I do not know that I know a great deal of the township and section lines.

*Question.* I mean the different neighborhoods in the county?

*Answer.* O, yes; I am as thoroughly acquainted, probably, as any man in the county.

*Question.* You may state whether you know, or have been informed, of any outrages committed upon colored people of this county by combinations of disguised men.

*Answer.* I could not state that I know of any of my own knowledge. I have seen parties who have been whipped, with scars on their backs, and they stated that it had been done by disguised parties.

*Question.* You may give to the committee such cases as have been reported to you, with the particulars so far as you are informed.

*Answer.* I will have to refresh my memory a little, in order to state dates and names, there are so many of them. Probably I could better furnish you a list of the different parties themselves, and you could examine them.

*Question.* Have you any such list prepared?

*Answer.* I can prepare one, sir, through the course of the day, and furnish it to the committee.

*Question.* For the present you may give such cases as occur to you, and when you have opportunity you may prepare the list you speak of.

*Answer.* The first case that came to my knowledge was a woman by the name of Betsey Lucas, who lives here in Macon now. She then lived at a Mr. Robert Jackson's, in the northern portion of this county, near the Lowndes County line, about eight miles north of this place.

*Question.* What were the particulars of her case?

*Answer.* She was living with Mr. Jackson, and a party of men came there. It was in the month of March, 1870, I think, or maybe a little later. It may have been as late as—it was between the months of March and May; I don't remember just when it was, but I think I can find that out at home, as I took a note of it at the time. They took her out and put a rope around her neck, a bridle-rein, and whipped her, and

gave her a certain number of days to get away. That I learned from her; that was her sworn testimony, too.

*Question.* Did you learn from her whether the men were disguised?

*Answer.* All disguised. She said she recognized some of the parties by—some of them had only their faces disguised, but their clothing, their pants and coats, she recognized, and their voices. She recognized some of them.

*Question.* How many men were concerned in her whipping?

*Answer.* She said there were about twelve of them, with one colored man who held their horses. The colored man who was with them on this occasion I hunted up myself. She did not know him, but she said she learned it was a man by the name of Carroll Hinton. Carroll afterwards stated on oath that he was along with the party, and that he knew some members of the party, but did not know them all.

*Question.* How did he happen to be with them?

*Answer.* His story is that they came to his house, a little cabin on the road-side. He was living to himself on the plantation of widow Hinton, in this county, and it seems to have been about one meeting prior to this. They just rode up and told him they wanted him to go with them, and mounted him on a horse, and took him along by force. He had been with them on three occasions, he stated; one prior to the whipping of this woman, Betsey, and one afterward, and that meeting.

*Question.* Where is this Carroll Hinton?

*Answer.* On widow Hinton's place, about eight miles north of this place, on the plantation. I want to state, before I go further, that the testimony in this county is with respect to where this man, Hinton, lives; that he lives in a portion of the county which, if there are any Ku-Klux in this county, or any men banded together for the purpose of taking the law into their own hands, it is in that community. Carroll lives right in the midst of them. He told me first he didn't know a single man in that whole party; but afterward, after I had him brought to Oxford, he acknowledged that he did know them.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Before the grand jury?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you think he would be reluctant to tell the committee what he knows?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so.

*Question.* For the reasons you have stated?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for the reasons I stated. I don't think he would let the grand jury know what he knew really, if it hadn't been that he had been told—at least he was told before he went into the grand jury—that they were cognizant of his knowledge of the parties, and that there was a white man who belonged to them had made certain statements connecting him with them. That was true.

*Question.* Where did this grand jury sit, of which you speak?

*Answer.* At Oxford, in the county of La Fayette, in the northern district of the State of Mississippi.

*Question.* At what time?

*Answer.* The grand jury was impaneled there on the first Monday of June, 1871, and continued through the month.

*Question.* What did Betsey tell you she was whipped for, or what did she say the men who inflicted the whipping said was the cause?

*Answer.* She said she could not account for the whipping at all. One white man, who was along with the party when she was whipped, and was a member of the klan, stated that she was whipped for messing with this man, Jackson, she lived with, or was hired to. That was his story about it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Messing?

*Answer.* I don't know what you would call it—that she was his mistress.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did one man who was concerned in inflicting that whipping turn State's evidence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* J. S. Taliaferro. He lived in this county.

*Question.* If you have finished all you have to say about the case of Betsey Lucas, you may pass on to the next case which occurs to you.

*Answer.* The next case occurred about the same time, I think on the same night. It was the ordering off of some colored families that had been settled upon what was called the bottom place, here in this county, of Mr. William May. Mr. May settled a lot of colored people on a place of his there, and gave them lands for a term of years,

to clear them up, and, I believe, gave them some assistance in building and improving, and they were all run off on that night—at least ordered off and notified that if they were there at a certain stated night or day, what would be the consequence, and they moved off.

*Question.* Was that done by the same party that whipped Betsy Lucas?

*Answer.* The same party. All the men were there, I believe, with one exception; that one exception was the captain; he was not present that night—the captain of the squad.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* He was said to be the captain, and was a man by the name of C. M. Doss.

*Question.* How many families were driven off from that bottom place?

*Answer.* I think there were five—I can't be positive as to the number.

*Question.* Is Mr. Doss living still in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did these families leave pursuant to this warning?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Go on.

*Answer.* The same night—or the next raid they made. I merely give this as evidence I have had, and from reports of the parties who were along and know.

*Question.* Do you regard the information you have of these transactions as reliable?

*Answer.* I do; there isn't any of it of my own knowledge. I never saw one of these parties.

*Question.* That is proper evidence. You may proceed.

*Answer.* They went to—I have forgotten whose plantation it was, now—but they were there to look up some parties, and there was a colored man killed by the name of Coger. It seems that this man, Sam, they had nothing against him, or didn't want him, but he talked to them a little plain, and they just fired into him and killed him. It was all the same raid. I was trying to keep the connection of that same party.

*Question.* Did you understand what their object was in visiting this plantation?

*Answer.* They went to hunt some parties. I understood they were not after Sam at all.

*Question.* What part of the county was this in?

*Answer.* In the same section—the northern part of the county, near the places named before.

*Question.* Had Coger recognized any of these men, that they should kill him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of Coger's knowing anything about who did it.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Was Carroll with them?

*Answer.* Carroll was not along that night.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You say he talked plainly to them, and that they killed him?

*Answer.* I understood that from this man Taliaferro, who was a member, and was along that night. He didn't see the killing. He said that the party was divided into three squads, and that the squad which went up in front of the house was the squad that killed Sam Coger; and that he was in the squad that went up in a different direction. They heard the fire, but didn't know that Sam was killed, or anything of it at all, until after they had left there, and then it was reported to the captain that they had shot a negro over on the other side of the quarters.

*Question.* Have you any information of the killing of Coger, independent of the statement of Talliaferro?

*Answer.* O, yes; I know there was an inquest held.

*Question.* It became a matter of general notoriety through the county?

*Answer.* O, yes. It was reported here by the colored people that a party of disguised men had killed him. Nobody knew who it was. About the same time—I think it was a week or so later, or may be earlier, it was during the same month, I think, but I can't be positive as to the dates—that a colored man by name of Dick Malone, was killed by disguised men, a portion of the same party that killed Coger.

*Question.* Was he killed before Coger was killed?

*Answer.* I am not positive, sir. I think it was about the same time, about the same month.

*Question.* Can you give the particulars of his death?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know any great deal about the particulars of his death. An inquest was held over him by a magistrate at Brooksville. I think Major Whitfield, who was then acting magistrate at Artesia, came down there to investigate the matter. I don't know a great deal about the particulars; I don't know that I ever heard them.

*Question.* Did you ever hear what offense was imputed to Malone, for which he was killed?

*Answer.* There were various offenses. He was said to have been obnoxious, on account of his being a prominent man over there in that neighborhood.

*Question.* He was a colored man prominent among the colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he seemed to have been a very good man. The white people up there, after he was killed, said he was a good man and good citizen; that nobody in that county found any fault with him. Some white men that knew him personally said so. I don't remember their names now.

*Question.* Was he supposed to have been killed on account of his political influence and the way he exercised it?

*Answer.* He was supposed to have been killed for his threats to resist the visits of these klans that were riding around. He had proposed to give them a warm reception if they came around the place there. It was said that he had talked with some of the colored men around there and proposed for them to arm themselves, and if they came around there to give them a fight. That was the general rumor among the colored people. The white people that I heard talk about it said that they could not account for his being killed; that he was a good citizen, a good negro, and worked well; was industrious and attended to his own business, and had charge of a squad of men working some man's plantation.

*Question.* If you have finished the particulars of his case, you may pass on to the next. Did you ever hear of the case of Bully Jack, a colored man killed at Shuqualak, seven or eight miles below Macon?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was killed rather east of Shuqualak. That occurred in June or July, 1870, I don't remember which. I was here, I recollect. He was killed by parties, but they were not disguised.

*Question.* Was he killed in the night time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the wife of Jack thought that she knew the parties. She came here before the investigation, but she said she didn't know. I heard a portion of her testimony before the jury of inquest.

*Question.* How many were concerned in his killing?

*Answer.* She only saw two. There were two men rode up to his door—she swore to about what she told me before she went before the jury, and what she told me and others afterwards. They asked for Jack, or asked who lived there, and she told them; and then they said that their wagon had broken down up the road about a hundred yards, and wanted him to go up and assist them in fixing up their wagon—their team or buggy—wagon, I think it was. She went in and told her husband that Master Dick Glass, or Master Bill Glass—some man by the name of Glass—there is a whole family of them, four or five of them. She named one of the Glasses, and if I am not mistaken it was "Master Dick Glass is out here and wants you," she said. She thought it was Master Dick Glass, who lived in that neighborhood, and who was a brother-in-law or relative of the man Jack lived with, or rented land from. Jack was renting land and working the place for himself. They went out and Jack walked off. She heard them talking as they walked along up the road towards Mr. Glass's house; and after they got about two hundred yards, or maybe more, from the gate where Jack went out—the gate of his own yard—she heard them scuffling, and the indications were that they had a terrible scuffle around the road. After she heard Jack making the noise then the shooting commenced. The investigation corroborated the statement, because Jack had been stabbed several times and seemed to have run off from where the scuffling was, at least a hundred yards, before he fell. He got away, and he was a very stout man. The supposition is that he got away from them after they had commenced to stab him, and had run some distance before they fired on him, and they shot him and he fell about half way between where the scuffling commenced in the road and where he had started from his own gate. That was all she knew about it. There was a spur picked up there. The spur is in the hands of the magistrate, I believe, now. The magistrate told me down at Shuqualak, within the last six weeks, that he always believed he could go and put that spur on the heel it came off of. Squire Campbell told me that.

*Question.* What is his first name?

*Answer.* G. W. Campbell; at Shuqualak; he is a magistrate there, and had been for some time; and was appointed by the various military commanders that have been here; also by Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* Was it known what the cause was for which Bully Jack was killed?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I believe the general impression was that he was killed on account of his testifying here before the grand jury.

*Question.* In what case had he testified?

*Answer.* That I don't know now, sir; I have heard of it; some case down there—some killing scrape.

*Question.* Some case of homicide?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* He had identified certain parties, had he?

*Answer.* I don't know that he had. I might state just about what they told the parties who were sworn here. They said that a colored man who lived on the same place with Jack went to Jack several days before and advised him to sell and go over

to Shuqualak and straighten up his business and leave and go away. He was Jack's brother-in-law; that is the truth of it—that he had better go away; that he had been before the grand jury at Macon, and had told things; that he had better go away, get settled up and go. It was proven, I believe, that he went to the man, Mr. Cy Jenkins I believe his name is, and told him he had been informed that he had made some statements before the grand jury that implicated him in killing a man, and that he wanted to tell him that it was not so. It was proven, though, that he had satisfied Mr. Jenkins that he had made no statement that would implicate him in any shape or manner in any outrage or violation of law. Hence it was supposed that it was all settled, so far as that matter was concerned; that was the evidence that was brought up to exonerate Mr. Jenkins from having any complicity in the matter; because Jack had said to Mr. Jenkins that he hadn't told anything to implicate him or any other party in that neighborhood before the grand jury about the killing of other parties—some other men that were missing and afterward found in the creeks.

*Question.* You may state to the committee whether you ever heard of two or more murders of colored people in the south part of this county, near Cooksville. There is a place by that name, is there not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I don't know that I have ever heard of any outrages committed in the neighborhood of Cooksville. I don't remember to have heard of any.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any outrages committed on the plantation of Mr. Whitfield, about thirteen miles from Macon?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is in the northern part of the county. I stated one case that occurred there—Dick Malone's case, on his plantation.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you ever hear that a colored man named Isam Lowry was whipped at the same time, by the same band of men, at that place.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard that. Isam Lowry's case I don't remember the particulars of, but I know it occurred about the same time, and it was the same night, if I am not mistaken. There were three women whipped the same night either Dick Malone or Sam Coger was killed, I don't remember which. One man was killed and three women whipped, and this Isam Lowry, all the same night. Whether it was the night Dick Malone was killed, or the night Sam Coger was killed, I don't remember, but it was said to have been done by the same party.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that a colored man by the name of Ben Daly was whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of Ben's name before. Ben Daly?

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you hear the particulars of the three women who were whipped the same night?

*Answer.* It was substantially the same as Betsey Lucas, and she was one of the three; the other was Eliza Hinton, whipped where Mr. La Fayette Hinton lived. She formerly belonged to the family, and was living with one of the young Hintons.

*Question.* What was the name of the other family?

*Answer.* I don't remember; I don't know her name, and cannot think of the man's name she was living with. That man would be a very good witness. He is an old man, and lives out here in the northeast corner of the county. He has lived there a long time.

*Question.* What is his name?

*Answer.* I cannot think of it now. It seems to me it is Price, but I can't be positive. I meet him here occasionally at times. He is a very simple old fellow, and lives to himself out there.

*Question.* Do you recollect any other cases of whipping or murder or other outrages in this county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; about the latter part of March or 1st of April, 1871, there was a half a dozen cases of whipping down here about Mushulaville, in this county. The most noted of them was the whipping of Aleck Hughes. Aleck had rented a place down near Mushulaville. He was a very industrious young fellow, and made a crop there last year. This year he bought some stock and they whipped him and run him off. They whipped him nearly to death, or so he was not able to go. They left him for dead. They hung him up, and I saw his back two months afterwards, and it was a perfect scab then. He said that after they hung him up he begged them not to kill him, and they gave him his choice to take five hundred lashes or be shot or hung. He consented to take five hundred lashes, and he said he guessed they gave them to him. They whipped him, and he didn't know when they quit—didn't know anything about it. That is his own story. He is in the county now. He was a witness, and was a very prominent witness, and thought it was not safe for him to come back, and he is over at Holly Springs now; but his team and everything is out here. He had a crop in; eighteen or twenty acres in cotton, about

thirty acres in corn; I believe he has instituted a suit in the United States court for damages against the parties. He recognized two or three of the parties. One of the parties that he recognized on account of a little horse that he rode, that he (Aleck) had owned himself, and had sold him. He claims that he hadn't paid him for it, and he thought that may be was one of the reasons for his whipping, because he had asked him for the money. He had owned a little horse, and sold it to a man in the neighborhood; and he got after him for the money, and he abused him and struck him, and a few nights afterward told him he had got a little too saucy and impudent, and they had come down to correct him.

*Question.* Who told him?

*Answer.* He named the party that told him this. I think it was the same man that rode his horse. I don't remember which one now; there was so many. There were only five though that whipped him. They went to his house and took his gun and pistol after they had whipped him. They didn't catch him at his house at all. He was looking for them—expecting them. He had heard they were coming for him, and he went off that night. He was staying over at another colored man's house in the neighborhood.

*Question.* And they took his gun that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; after they whipped him; and they went to his house and got his gun and pistol. He told them where it was, and they went and got it. I am just giving the outlines. I do not know the particulars.

*Question.* Were those other negroes whipped the same night Hughes was?

*Answer.* No, sir; I think not. There were four or five whipped in one week. They just commenced, and I think they made a regular night raid there for a week, and whipped somebody. There was another whipped named Bill Coleman. He is here now, in town. He was also before the grand jury. He was whipped very badly, and run off from up there; and there were two or three killed down there, but they were killed just across the line in the county of Winston. I have the names of the most important witnesses in all these cases, but I prefer not to have them brought before this committee, because I think they will need them before the court. The parties have been indicted—nearly all these parties I speak of—every one in these parties.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* In the United States court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; every one of them; and we couldn't get the most important witnesses; but I have succeeded in getting the names of the witnesses that I learn know more about the facts than those we have.

*Question.* But you don't want to make them known?

*Answer.* No, sir, I don't. I know it would be dangerous to them.

*Question.* And prevent an investigation before the court?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the wife of a man named Johnson Keitt, who was killed just across the line, a few miles from Mushulaville, and by a portion of the same parties is out there. A man named Solomon Triplett was killed over in Winston, some distance from there. That is the county west of this.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Were Johnson Keitt and Solomon Triplett two of the men you speak of having been killed about the same time across the line in Winston?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I think Solomon Triplett was killed in the fall of 1870, and Johnson Keitt last spring; about last March, I think.

*Question.* Did you understand that Keitt and Triplett were killed by disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I have heard the parties swear—men who were perfectly disinterested—say the man Johnson lived with said he saw the parties that killed him. I don't know any of them. They rode up right to his door. He was living with a white man by the name of—I can't think of his name.

*Question.* What did you understand these men were killed for by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* There never was any cause assigned for the killing of Johnson; but Solomon was supposed to have been killed because he had taken his wife away from Triplett's where she was living, and where he had formerly lived. He moved away, and him and Triplett fell out, and Triplett drove him off. He got him a place at a man by the name of Parkman—an old gentleman over there; I think it is Parkman.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Solomon was killed for taking his wife from whom?

*Answer.* From Triplett. He had formerly belonged to Triplett, and the only cause we could get at was that him and Triplett fell out about that.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* If you have finished all the cases you remember as having occurred in Noxubee County, you may pass to other counties and state to the committee any instances of outrage that have come to your knowledge.

*Answer.* There was a case in this county that occurred in the month of July last; I don't care to refer to that, because I don't have any names. I got the name of the mother of the boy; that man was said to be murdered out here. He had been arrested and put in the hands of a constable to bring to Macon. He fastened him out in one of the houses on his place, and the fellow hasn't been seen alive since. Afterwards his body was found in the Tombigbee several days afterwards. His mother, who recognized the body and the clothing, could be found out in that neighborhood. Her name is Ellen Grayson. The name was given to me Saturday.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* This is the mother of the man who was found?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. She could give you more of the particulars about it. I don't remember the man's name now. These things are nearly all reported to me that occur, and there are so many of them that I could name a thousand of them, I expect, if I could recollect them all. I make a memorandum of them and lay them away. I don't remember his name. I make a memorandum of the names and the parties who know about it. The servant woman that lived with Bridges, the constable, the woman that lived with him, is a very important witness in the matter, and I have her name.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Lived with him?

*Answer.* This woman lived at Bridges', where this man was taken from.

*Question.* She was the woman who lived with the constable?

*Answer.* Not the mother of this man, but the woman that did live with him at that time, will, in all probability, give the most important evidence in relation to the matter.

*Question.* What was this son of Ellen Grayson's arrested for?

*Answer.* They charged him with horse-stealing, as I understood.

*Question.* Did you understand that he was taken by a body of disguised men, from this house where he had been placed by the constable?

*Answer.* The evidence, so far as I have understood from parties who claim to have known something about it—all I have heard about it—has been hearsay. There was a party of men come there and took him off, but it doesn't appear that they were disguised at all.

*Question.* They were not disguised? Did they not take him off at night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the reason I gave you these references. This woman that lived at the constable's sent me word; I was out in that neighborhood not long ago, and she sent me word that if she had protection, she could tell all about the whole thing. She knew who came and got him, and who was there, and what they did to him, and all; that she was right next door to where they took him out of the house; and she said she saw the parties, and from what she says, the parties were not disguised, as she recognized the most of them, or all of them. Her name I can't remember, but I have it, and can furnish it, if the committee see fit to send for her. I believe that is about all the cases I have heard of that you can get any clew to or facts about. What I have stated, I have stated on what we have had before us on the testimony of those who claimed to know, and it will assist you in getting at those parties who may give you some facts.

*Question.* Were all the cases you have mentioned investigated by the grand jury at Oxford?

*Answer.* With the exception of the last case, they were.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* This case about this man found here in the river?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That was not?

*Answer.* That was not. The grand jury adjourned about that time. There was another case up here about the same time, which I had forgotten. Just about the same time there was a man killed up here by a party of men who were not disguised. That was in this county, about two miles from Brooksville.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* When did that occur?

*Answer.* It occurred in the month of June.

*Question.* Last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think it was about the middle, or somewhere there, about the 12th or 15th of June.

*Question.* What was the name of the man killed?

*Answer.* I am unable to state. The verdict of the jury is here in the clerk's office Wissler, the magistrate, the man who was killed here a few nights ago, was the coroner in that case; Mr. Reed here was a member of the jury of inquest, and could give you some facts.

*Question.* You may give the particulars as far as you have heard them.

*Answer.* I do not know, sir, that I am able to give you any particulars about it. I just know that this man was killed. I heard he was killed, and that Wissler and a magistrate up there held an inquest over him.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and their verdict was that he came to his death by pistol and gunshot wounds in the hands of unknown parties.

*Question.* You name Mr. Wissler. You may state if you know, or ever heard, any particulars of his assassination?

*Answer.* No, sir; I know nothing of the particulars of his assassination.

*Question.* Wissler was a deputy marshal?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was special deputy. He had been a magistrate here.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* A coroner?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for this county.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you hear that he had been killed in Macon, in the night-time, and this past week?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you learn that he was fired upon by parties outside of his house in the night-time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where was he fired upon?

*Answer.* By parties in the street.

*Question.* Was he in his house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was in his house, and the window-glasses show that the parties fired from the outside. They were broken in. I saw the windows myself. There was no curtain up. He was fixing the bed in the room. The windows are within about ten feet of the street.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* He was a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are you able to state any further cases that you have outside of Noxubee County of which you have any information?

*Answer.* Well, no, sir; none that I—I have heard of a great many. I have heard the evidence in a great many cases, in Winston and other counties, but I do not give as much attention to them as I do to the cases in Noxubee. I try to keep the run of the cases in this county, in order to assist the proper authorities in bringing the parties to justice, and getting the witnesses. I would not attempt to even state any cases that I have heard of in other counties.

*Question.* Will you be able to make a fuller list by referring to your memorandum?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I will be able to name the parties in the several cases, and the witnesses. That is about all I will be able to do, and I will be able to state dates more correctly.

*Question.* You may do that, and hand the list to the committee by to-morrow or Wednesday.

*Answer.* I will do it by Wednesday, but I will be away this evening, and have no opportunity.

*Question.* What is your knowledge or information as to the existence of a secret organization in this or the adjoining counties?

*Answer.* I have no knowledge of my own of the existence of any secret organization.

*Question.* Have you any information on that subject?

*Answer.* Well, I have information of parties who claim to have belonged, to have been in their meeting.

*Question.* What is your information upon that head?

*Answer.* I think it was in March last I got acquainted; prior to that time I got acquainted with him, and then the second time met a man I had seen about the streets here for the last year; we lived up in the northern part of this county, at Brooksville. He came to Jackson, and being from my county up here, of course I treated him with what I thought was proper courtesy, and invited him down to my room. He called down, and he told me that he could give me a good deal of information about this organization commonly known as the Ku-Klux Klan, and he went on and told me about it, after telling me the danger he was in, or would be in, in telling me; that I should do him no harm in the matter by exposing him. He told me that in 1869 he

joined an oath-bound society at Brookville, by the name of the "White Rose;" that was what they called it; that he understood it was for the purpose of bringing thieves to justice, but there was no penalty attached to the oath for a violation of any of the by-laws of the society. He said he met the members at two meetings. About six or eight months after that he was invited to a meeting in the woods; he went down, and the parties all met there; they had their disguises; they got down and formed a circle. The captain in the centre swore in new members, put on their disguises, and they made propositions what parties could be visited in the county—what white men and what black men; and he said the next meeting was given out, and they met again, and at that meeting it was voted that they should visit this settlement that I have just spoken of, or Mr. May, where these darkies were living—colored people living—go and whip these women that I was talking about. He said he went on that occasion; he was with them; he was present. He said that there was another meeting; that they were to go after some parties and he refused to go, or did not go, and it got to be talked around among the members of the Klan that he had not been resworn in; that is, he hadn't been sworn into the Ku-Klan Klan; that the oath he had taken as a member of the "White Rose" was not sufficiently binding as a member of the other order, and he was required to take an additional oath, and he refused, and they gave him a certain length of time to make up his mind, and he said that he came to Jackson. That is what he told me—that that was the reason he was there; that he came off on that account.

*Question.* Had you had any previous acquaintance with him?

*Answer.* I had only seen him here on the street. He moved in the best circle in this county.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was that Taliaferro?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was nothing spoken—I never heard anything contrary to his reputation as a man and gentleman at all, until after his going before the grand jury, or about the time he went to Jackson, when it was reported that he had exposed the Ku-Klux Klan in this county. There are gentlemen in this county—very clever, nice gentlemen, and some of the very first families—that have since denounced him as a thief, and scoundrel, and everything else; that just a week or two prior to that time he was taken into their family circles and introduced as a gentleman and everything of the kind.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you know, or have you been informed, of any influence being brought to bear on the colored voters, to deter them from voting, or to influence their political action at the polls?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not since last spring. There was, last spring, a great many threats made about colored people voting, and this organization was threatening a great many colored people, by men that claimed to have nothing to do with it.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Have you had any election in your State since 1869?

*Answer.* No, sir; none at all.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the character of those threats you speak of?

*Answer.* The character of them was about this: I will not say that I know of them—threats being made of that kind, but I have heard of threats being made that this Klan would see to the negroes voting, or how they voted. I have had gentlemen to tell me, right on the streets here, that we would not be able to carry this county; though we had a majority of two thousand in the county, that we would never be able to carry it again. That was last spring. Since the investigation of some of these outrages, I have heard of no threats at all of men. Since this canvass opened I have heard of no threats. I have been through the county as much as anybody in it, I reckon.

*Question.* The colored population greatly exceed the white population of this county, do they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The census, I observe, states the white population to be, I believe, 5,107, and the black population 15,798. Is that about the population, according to your knowledge and information?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; about it, sir.

*Question.* Do you know of any colored churches or school-houses being burned in this county?

*Answer.* There have been one or two colored school-houses burned in the county; there was one at Shuqualak, and one was burned within the last ten days at Brooksville. That is about all the colored school-houses burned. There have been one or

two white school-houses, out here in the southwest corner of the county, burned. Three of them were burned during the year 1870 and the spring of 1871.

*Question.* What information have you of the burning of the colored school at Shuqualak?

*Answer.* I have none, sir. All the burnings have been wrapped up in mystery. Nobody knew anything about them.

*Question.* Have you any information of that burning at Brooksville?

*Answer.* None at all, only that it was burned up.

*Question.* What is the sentiment of the whites in this county as to the colored schools?

*Answer.* Well, sir, in a portion of the county the majority of the whites, I think, are favorable; in all the northeast portion of the county, and Macon beat here, and probably Shuqualak and that district down there, the majority of the whites, I think, are favorable to the free schools; but in the southeast corner, and southwest corner, and the northwest corner of the county, and all the west part of the county, the most of the whites are opposed to free schools for anybody, white or black. I have met a great many persons and talked with them. I met a leading man in the northwest corner of the county who keeps a store up there, a wealthy man, and he told me he thought it an outrage. He thought the principle was wrong that he should be taxed to educate other people's children; he said he had to educate his own, and he did not think it was right. It is generally said that what he says is the sentiment of his whole community. He is a very quiet man, though, and I have never heard of his participating in the disturbances. That is pretty generally the feeling.

*Question.* Is that the sole objection made to the free schools, the expense it entails in the shape of taxes?

*Answer.* That is the only public objection they make. What their private views are I do not pretend to say at all. The only objection I have heard of their making to any of the friends of the system is that they did not think they ought to be taxed to support them.

*Question.* Do you hear any opposition to colored suffrage?

*Answer.* Well, no, sir; there is no open opposition in this county, scarcely; our paper here opposes it; it has at its head a motto, "All the time in opposition to negro suffrage;" that is, it raised it after the election of 1869, and pulled it down a few weeks ago. I presume they will raise it again after this election is over; everybody that is a candidate now for every party claims to be a friend to universal suffrage. We have three or four tickets in the field, all claiming to be friends to negro suffrage.

*Question.* That was the motto of the democratic paper published here from 1869 until within a few weeks past, I understand you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they raised it right after the election in 1869; I think the motto was, "Uncompromising opposition to negro suffrage;" that is the substance, but not the exact language.

*Question.* Have you heard any considerable number of democrats denounce that motto as not representing the sentiments of the democratic party in this county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have heard some few. I have heard it myself, that motto, and I have heard one or two say that it did not represent the sentiments of their party. The most prominent democrats here now claim that there is no opposition to universal suffrage or free schools, and that they are not opposed to radicalism.

*Question.* Do you believe them to be sincere in the sentiments they express?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't believe them.

*Question.* Have there been any cases in which any white men, implicated in the various outrages you have detailed, have ever been brought to justice and punished?

*Answer.* None; I never have heard of one yet being punished. I have heard of several attempts to investigate, but they have never succeeded. I have had witnesses tell me that they have gone before grand juries here—I know witnesses that told me they were going before grand juries to report certain parties that they recognized that had committed outrages, and they went before the grand juries and have seen parties on that grand jury that they knew were connected with the Klan, or were members of the bands that had committed these outrages; and they then and there stated that they didn't know anything about it—just heard of it. They said they didn't think it was safe to do so, and I know it was so. There are white men in this town; I know a man that has lived here always, and probably has at stake as much as anybody in this county; he told me this morning that he wouldn't testify what he knew before me that they have gone before grand juries here—I know witnesses that told me they this committee, because, he said, it would be published; he said he didn't intend to be slaughtered. There are plenty of men here, sir, that will not do it. They don't believe that there will be any effort made—that their testimony before this committee will simply amount to informing the outside world as to these outrages, and that is about all; and that they will not lend any aid at all to bring these parties to justice, and it will only place them in the position of being more obnoxious to these men and more liable to be killed.

*Question.* They are afraid they will draw down the vengeance of any parties they will implicate by their testimony?

*Answer.* That is it exactly; and it is the belief of nine-tenths of the people around in this whole community that this caused Wissler's death. Wissler lived here in Winston County, and knew more about these men that have been engaged in burning school-houses and whipping and killing, than anybody else.

*Question.* Was it known before Wissler's death that this committee would probably visit this portion of Mississippi and inquire into the condition of things here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That was a matter generally understood, was it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that he was killed with a view of depriving this committee of the benefit of his evidence?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't think it was—not this committee. I believe he was killed with a view to deprive the grand jury at Oxford of certain evidence against parties already indicted before that court at Oxford—from evidence against parties that had already been indicted by the grand jury there at the last term, but I don't believe it was to deprive this committee at all.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he before that grand jury?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he wasn't questioned, though. He wasn't questioned as to outrages at all. He begged that he should not be questioned as to that. He was only questioned as to his knowledge of the violations of the revenue laws. I know that I heard Wissler say here publicly, he has boasted around here on the streets, he did it. The very day he was killed he said here in the court-room that he intended to make certain parties—that he had begged the foreman of the grand jury not to question relative to outrages committed by disguised parties in Winston County, and that he was not questioned at all; and that he intended to go before the court, however, and would be a witness there.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is it your belief that there is such a state of alarm among the colored people of this county as will deter them from coming before this committee and freely testifying as to what they know in relation to the outrages of which they have any information or knowledge?

*Answer.* Well, in various portions of the county there is such a state of feeling as would deter them; but not all the county. You see, colored people, after they come here and testify, and they go back to their houses, are at the mercy of these fellows; and they know that, and they would not do it unless they thought there would be some action—some steps—taken to defend them.

*Question.* Unless they would be protected?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; unless they would be protected, or some steps were taken to bring the parties to justice.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* How do the colored people of this county vote when left free to vote? With which party would they vote?

*Answer.* There is is not one in a thousand would not vote right straight out the republican ticket. They will vote for the nominees of the republican ticket.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You spoke of a man named Doss. Do you know his given name?

*Answer.* Charles M. Doss is the man I speak of.

*Question.* Is he a violent man?

*Answer.* He has been so regarded in this community. He is considered a perfect terror here to everybody when he felt like it.

*Question.* Can you state to the committee whether he has ever made any demonstrations at any time against the civil officers here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I know he has.

*Question.* Did you see him interfere with or fire on a magistrate's court, convened to investigate a case of murder, where a man named Eskridge was charged with killing a man at or near Shuqualak?

*Answer.* I was in town at the time, but I was not in the court-house. I didn't get there till after it was all over.

*Question.* State what transpired.

*Answer.* There was a good deal of excitement when I came down to the court-house from home; it was commonly rumored around town that he had broken up the court. There were three magistrates sitting on the case, and he ran them all three off, and everybody else—half a dozen deputy sheriffs and constables, and everybody else. He

ran them all out of the court-house, and Major Baskervill was the only man who took hold of him.

*Question.* Was he armed at the time?

*Answer.* It is said that he just had a big pistol; just flourishing it around in a threatening and angry manner. Nobody went near him. It was a deputy sheriff that first attempted it, but he drove the deputy sheriff off. That is—I don't know this; I didn't see it—but that is the common rumor about town. I used the same thing in support of a measure in the legislature to call upon the Federal troops here. I used that as a point in my argument, that he did do it and walk away from here without being arrested. I don't know that he was ever arrested for it. I don't think any grand jury ever found a bill against him. I know they didn't.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the killing of a man named Hopkins, near the Winston County line?

*Answer.* A colored man?

*Question.* I believe he was a colored man.

*Answer.* I don't remember the name of Hopkins.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that the negroes living on the plantation of Mr. Wilbanks were whipped by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I never heard any of the particulars about those parties that were whipped at Wilbanks's plantation.

*Question.* I believe you stated that Betsey Lucas was whipped for living with a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Robert Jackson.

*Question.* Did you understand he was working the plantation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he had her hired, he stated himself, paying her wages.

*Question.* Did you understand he was the owner of the plantation?

*Answer.* No, sir; he had the place rented, I understood.

*Question.* You spoke about some other women being whipped; were they whipped for similar causes?

*Answer.* I believe this woman at Hinton's was whipped for a similar cause.

*Question.* Did you understand what was done with the white men?

*Answer.* I understood that they whipped Jackson. I don't know whether they did or not. I understood that they whipped Jackson—took him out and whipped him.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the killing of a colored school-teacher, who was living near the Alabama State line, in this county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know as I did.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* This man Wissler was under indictment for murder, was he not?

*Answer.* I don't know, sir.

*Question.* You never heard that?

*Answer.* I never heard that he was under indictment for murder.

*Question.* What was he under indictment for?

*Answer.* I never heard that he was under indictment for anything. I never heard of his being indicted. I believe there was an indictment pending against him for malfeasance in office, or something of that kind, as a magistrate, in turning over public funds. I think there was an indictment of that character against him—defaulting, or something of that kind.

*Question.* Were there not several indictments against him for embezzlement of public funds?

*Answer.* There may have been. I have heard that there were indictments against him.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that he robbed and killed a man, and burned him up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard that.

*Question.* What was the man's name that he burned?

*Answer.* Shipley, I believe, was the man's name.

*Question.* Do you not know that he was under indictment for that killing?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you not know that he was on bail, and that the lieutenant governor was on his bond?

*Answer.* I know that he was out on bail, but not that he was under indictment. There never has been a court nor a grand jury sitting in this county since the act occurred. There was no indictment against him for it at all.

*Question.* Was he committed by a magistrate for it and held to bail?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then he was held to bail for that murder—charged with that murder and held to bail?

*Answer.* He was committed by a magistrate, and taken before a circuit judge on a writ of *habeas corpus*, his bail fixed at $5,000 for manslaughter, for his appearance at the next term of court of the county of Alcorn, I believe, of this State, and the lieutenant

governor and other parties went on his bond; and the regular term of court was in the month of—commenced last month, in October some time, and on account of the code of this State not being published, the judge postponed the court, and they have held no court in the county.

*Question.* What were the circumstances attending the killing of this man Shipley by Wissler?

*Answer.* I don't know anything about that, sir. I read Judge Davis's opinion, in which he fixed the bond, justifying his action. It was a written opinion which was published, and I only know from that. I got some ideas from that.

*Question.* What ideas did you get from that?

*Answer.* I don't know that I could state just now any of the points he proposed to make.

*Question.* He was brought before Judge Davis on a writ of *habeas corpus*?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And Judge Davis, instead of releasing him, put his bail higher?

*Answer.* He did that; yes, sir.

*Question.* And the allegation was that he had robbed Shipley?

*Answer.* No, sir; not a bit of that.

*Question.* That he had killed this man Shipley?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* By burning him with kerosene?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he made out that it was a criminal negligence; that it was not done with any malice aforethought; and that it was a negligence that amounted to criminality. That was, I think, about the language, or a portion of it, used by Judge Davis.

*Question.* Have you ever heard his killing here the other day ascribed to any motive of revenge on the part of the friends of Shipley?

*Answer.* I have heard a thousand different——

*Question.* You did not mention that, though, that it was on account of his being acquainted with some evidence?

*Answer.* I did not say that that was the only one at all. I said that it was the opinion of a majority of the persons that I had heard speak about it in this community—I think that was my language—that he had been killed in order to deprive the court of some evidence that might be valuable in convicting parties that are already indicted. That was about what——

*Question.* You have also heard it ascribed to motives of revenge on the part of the friends of the murdered man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard that.

*Question.* Any other motives ascribed for the killing?

*Answer.* I have heard some parties say that it was—I believe I heard it only from one party—that it was by some of his wife's relations in Winston County, who were also indicted; that his wife, Mrs. Wissler, had received a letter from her brother in Winston, notifying her that her husband was in danger, and to tell him to look out; that he would not hurt him himself, but that he had better look out for himself. This is what I heard Mrs. Wissler told several white parties; I don't know whether it is so; I never heard her say so.

*Question.* Why were her relatives aroused against him?

*Answer.* I believe there has been an old family feud between her relatives and Wissler.

*Question.* Have you ever heard his account of it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I remember of hearing Wissler tell a story about some of his wife's relations coming to him one night, over there where he lived at the time, to take him out and whip him, and they were disguised. He recognized one or two of them; and he learned afterward that they were all his wife's relations.

*Question.* He did not ascribe any motive to them, or say why they did this?

*Answer.* I do not know that I remember his giving or ascribing any motive to them.

*Question.* Did he never say what the quarrel originated in?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that I ever heard him say.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anybody else say?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't remember that I ever heard anybody else say.

*Question.* Who was that white man, of character and property here, who told you that he was afraid to tell all he knew about the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* That was—I don't know now, in the way it was given to me, as I ought to have mentioned it. I prefer that you would not insist on my answering that question.

*Question.* I insist upon your answering it.

*Answer.* He did not say that—what he knew about the Ku-Klux; I did not use that word; I said that a gentleman of standing here told me this morning—a man of wealth—that he would not even come before this committee and state what he knew relative to outrages being committed in the county. I didn't say anything about Ku-Klux—whether it was by Ku-Klux or who.

*Question.* That is what I wanted to know; the name of the man who told you that.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you think it would be a betrayal of his confidence if you were to do so?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is just it. He said it to me on the street, in the presence of another gentleman, and we are both considered friends of his, and he is a man standing high in this county.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* That is the reason I want to know his name.

Mr. RICE. We have excused witnesses where they have got information under such circumstances.

The WITNESS. I do not know that it would amount to a great deal. You can have him come before the committee; I would rather not do it. He is a very nice gentleman.

Mr. BUCKLEY. We have had witnesses before us where they have been excused on similar grounds.

The CHAIRMAN. I think, general, we will excuse the witness from giving his name under the circumstances.

Mr. BLAIR. I ask for the ayes and noes upon that.

Mr. BUCKLEY. If I remember, Mr. Hale, a witness summoned by the minority, was excused for the same reason.

The ayes and noes being taken on the question, "Shall the witness be excused from answering the question?" resulted: ayes—Mr. Buckley, Mr. Rice, the chairman; noes—Mr. Blair.

So the witness was excused from answering.

The witness was dismissed, with the understanding that he would hold himself in readiness to be called again, when any member of the committee desired it, for further examination.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 6, 1871.

WILLIAM COLEMAN (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* I live in Macon.

*Question.* How long have you lived here?

*Answer.* I came here about the last of April.

*Question.* Where did you come from?

*Answer.* I came from Winston County.

*Question.* What occasioned your coming here?

*Answer.* I got run by the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Give the particulars to the committee.

*Answer.* Give the particulars?

*Question.* Tell how it occurred; give a statement of the circumstances.

*Answer.* Well, I don't know anything that I had said or done that injured any one, further than being a radical in that part of the land, and as for interrupting any one, I didn't, for I had plenty of my own of anything I wanted myself. I had done bought my land and paid for it, and I had a great deal of hogs; I had eighteen head of hogs to kill this fall. I had twelve head of sheep, and one good milk-cow, and a yearling, and the cow had a right young calf again, and I had my mule and my filly, and all of it was paid for but my mule, and I had my brother hired to pay for him. The mule cost me $65, and I had him hired out to pay for him. It was like I was getting the mule from you, and you wanting a hand to work the value of the mule out in work.

*Question.* Did any of the Ku-Klux come to your house?

*Answer.* They did.

*Question.* In the night-time?

*Answer.* They came about a half hour or more before day, as nigh as I can recollect by my brains, being frightened at their coming up in this kind of way. They were shooting and going on at me through the house, and when they busted the door open, coming in shooting, I was frightened, and I can only tell you as nigh as my recollection will afford at this time that it was about a half hour to day.

*Question.* What did they do to you?

*Answer.* None of the shot hit me, but they aimed to hit me; but I had one door just like that at the side of the house and the other at this side, and there was the chimney, and there was my bed in that corner opposite, and they came to that door first, [illustrating,] and hollered "Halle;" bum, bum, bum, on the lock. I jumped up and said,

"Hallo." Then one at the door said, "Raise a light in there." "What for; who is you?" I said. He says, "Raise a light in there, God damn; you I'll come in there and smoke my pipe in your ear." He said that just so. I said, "Is that you, uncle Davy?" Says he, "No, God damn you, it isn't uncle Dave; open this door." Says I, "I am not going to open my door to turn nobody on me that won't tell me who they are before I do it. Who are you?" He says, "God damn you, we didn't come to tell you who we are." I was peeping through the little crack in the door. I had bored a gimlet-hole about as big as that pen to put a string through, and had a latch inside so that when I had been off at work anywhere, and happened to come home at night, I could open the door without my wife having to get up, and she would put the string through the door and I would pull, and that was the way I would get in.

*Question.* That was the hole you looked through?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What did you see?

*Answer.* I saw men out there standing with horns and faces on all of them, and they all had great, long, white cow-tails way down the breast. I said it was a cow-tail; it was hair, and it was right white. They told me they rode from Shiloh in two hours, and came to kill me. They shot right smart in that house before they got in, but how many times I don't know, they shot so fast outside: but when they come in, they didn't have but three loads to shoot. I know by the way they tangled about in the house they would have put it in me if they had had it. They only shot three times in the house. The men behind me had busted in through the door; both doors were busted open. By the time the fellows at the back door got in the door, these fellows at the front door busted in, and they all met in the middle of the floor, and I didn't have a thing to fight with, only a little piece of ax-handle; and when I started from the first door to the second, pieces of the door flew and met me. I jumped for a piece of ax-handle and fought them squandering about, and they were knocking about me with guns, and firing balls that cut several holes in my head. The notches is in my head now. I dashed about among them, but they knocked me down several times. Every time I would get up, they would knock me down again. I saw they were going to kill me, and I turned in and laid there after they knocked me down so many times. The last time they knocked me down I laid there a good while before I moved, and when I had strength I jumped to split through a man's legs that was standing over me, and, as I jumped, they struck at me jumping between his legs, and they struck him and, he hollered, "Don't hit me, God damn you," but they done knocked him down then, but they hadn't knocked him so he couldn't talk. I jumped through and got past him. They didn't hit him a fair lick, because he was going toward them, and it struck past his head on his shoulder. If it had struck his head, it would have busted it open. I didn't catch that lick. I got up then; they had shot out the loads. I grabbed my ax-handle, and commenced fighting, and then they just took and cut me with knives. They surrounded me in the floor and tore my shirt off. They got me out on the floor; some had me by the legs and some by the arms and the neck and anywhere, just like dogs string out a coon, and they took me out to the big road before my gate and whipped me until I couldn't move or holler or do nothing, but just lay there like a log, and every lick they hit me I grunted just like a mule when he is stalled fast and whipped; that was all. They left me there for dead, and what it was done for was because I was a radical, and I didn't deny my profession anywhere and I never will. I never will vote that conservative ticket if I die.

*Question.* Did they tell you they whipped you because you were a radical?

*Answer.* They told me, "God damn you, when you meet a white man in the road lift your hat; I'll learn you, God damn you, that you are a nigger, and not to be going about like you thought yourself a white man; you calls yourself like a white man, God damn you." Here is what I put it to, because I had my filly; I had bought her to ride, not to stay in the stable, but to ride when I got ready, like you would do with your property. When I bought her I bought her for $75; she was not nigh grown; a little thing, with flaxen mane and tail, and light cream-color, and I would get on my filly on a Saturday evening. I would work until Saturday evening, but I won't work any longer for any man, for my own work or any bodyelse, unless it is mighty urgent; then I will go on until night, but if it is nothing but work straight along, I will work until Saturday at 12 o'clock, and I will strike off there. I believe if a man does it all over the world, he can make an honest living and put his work to good use.

*Question.* Were you working on your own land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that I bought and paid for; $473 for it.

*Question.* How many men were concerned in beating you?

*Answer.* Eight men.

*Question.* Were they all disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; every one of them.

*Question.* Did they come on horseback?

*Answer.* They came a riding. There stood the horses in the corner of the fence at the gate, and there they had me in the middle of the road whipping me.

*Question.* Did you know any of them?

*Answer.* I would know them unless they were burned up, and then I wouldn't know the ashes, but I should know themselves.

*Question.* Did you know any one that night?

*Answer.* Of course I did. I ought to know them, my neighbors; and I knocked off the faces and horns fighting, and then they knocked down the one that I ran between his legs; when they struck him, his horns and everything flew about; of course I knowed him. I would know him again except it was his ashes. I don't know as I would know his ashes, unless I saw him burned.

*Question.* Did you see that they had horns?

*Answer.* They had horns on them.

*Question.* They said they came from Shiloh?

*Answer.* They said they rode from Shiloh in two hours and come to kill me.

*Question.* Did they say they were the spirits of the confederate dead?

*Answer.* They didn't tell me nothing about spirits. They said they come from Shiloh in two hours, but they didn't say nothing about spirits.

*Question.* Do you know of any other colored people being whipped in Winston County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Tell of any other cases that have occurred in that county.

*Answer.* They whipped them. I didn't see them. I just heard of it. I know they did it, because they whipped the man I rented land from last year so he couldn't hardly walk.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* Mordecai Mitchell.

By Mr BLAIR:

*Question.* A white man?

*Answer.* A colored man, and principal part of the colored people up there have land. They bought land and paid for it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* When was he whipped?

*Answer.* Shortly after I was.

*Question.* The same night?

*Answer.* No, sir; they rode for him that night, but didn't catch him that night; he didn't have a glimmer r his eyes that night; he could see too well. He got out; he was expecting ther d looking for them.

*Question.* In what month was that of this year when you were whipped and Mordecai Mitchell was whipped?

*Answer.* Mordecai Mitchell was not whipped in the same month I was. I was whipped in April. I don't keep no books. I can't read or write my own name.

*Question.* When was Mordecai Mitchell whipped?

*Answer.* After I was. I think it was some time in May when him and Robin Coleman——

*Question.* Was Robin Coleman whipped?

*Answer.* Robert was whipped—yes, sir; and George Gladney.

*Question.* Who else?

*Answer.* They all lived in the same neighborhood I did. They didn't get to whip Sam; but they tried to kill him. He shot at them.

*Question.* Sam who?

*Answer.* Sam McMillan; they shot at Sam, and he shot back.

*Question.* When were Robin Coleman and George Gladney whipped?

*Answer.* I don't know; it was shortly after they whipped me. I think it was along in May, but I can't tell what time they whipped them exactly, because I don't know exactly at what time; but I know it was early in April they whipped me, because I know my oldest corn was ready to run around. I had my corn planted. I had about ten acres of open, new ground. I was ready to stick the plow in Monday morning. They came Saturday night.

*Question.* Were these other men whipped by disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some were and some were not—so I got it from Mordecai Mitchell's son.

*Question.* What were Mitchell and Coleman and Gladney whipped for?

*Answer.* I don't know; they said it was because they had land; they had got too big. They say when you get land or a mule, or get hold of a mule or a horse to set on, they want to kill you out for getting above your business, or to drive you away; but it will not do to go by hearsay too much. I have told you just what I know. I don't know anything else, except hearsay. I wouldn't put that in.

*Question.* Have you heard of any other colored men being whipped or killed or hung in Winston County, except those you have named?

*Answer.* I have heard of it, but didn't see it.

*Question.* State to the committee such cases as you have heard of.

*Answer.* I have seen some whipped, but who they were that whipped them, I am not able to tell you. I have heard of the death of some, but who were killed I don't know.

*Question.* You say you have seen some colored men whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Who?

*Answer.* Nathan Cannon.

*Question.* When was Nathan Cannon whipped?

*Answer.* He was whipped last year.

*Question.* How came you to see it?

*Answer.* I went one night to stay with him to go to church. It was Friday night, and he was to start to protracted meeting Saturday morning at 10 o'clock. I went to stay with him that night, but never got there by my living so far that it made me start so soon; I started after dinner; knowing all the people along the road and riding along, I stopped and talked, and it kept me until night before I got to his house; and just about bed-time, I rode up to the well, and got down and got a drink of water; it was not a well but a spring, and had a gum in it. I got down, and took my hat and doubled it up to get some water, and while I was down outside of the house and had a steep hill to go to get up to the house and the big road above the spring, just as I started, or as I throwed the bridle over the filly's head and was going to get on, I heard somebody riding clackety, clackety, clackety, and then they all stopped, and I felt doubtful about moving, and didn't know whether to go up to the houuse or not, and I thought, "At least I will stop, and see what you are up to and who you are." That was long before I got whipped; so I staid down there a right smart while. They stood about there, and I saw them going to one another. What they said I don't know, for I didn't hear it. Then they went to the house, and hollered "hallo," and got down. When they went to the house and hollered "hallo," Nathan Cannon spoke—I suppose he did—I heard afterward he did; I didn't hear him then, and he asked who was it; him and another young man was in the house; Nathan was this young man's uncle, but he was only living with him; Nathan was on his own place, too. He says, "Open the door." I suppose Nathan told him he wouldn't open the door, and somehow they worked in there with a knife-blade; I don't know how, but they went in without breaking the door down. They lifted the latch, and I suppose they worked the knife in between the door, and lifted the latch up. That is the way it was told to me; I saw where the knife went when it raised it up.

*Question.* Leave out these little particulars, and come to the point.

*Answer.* And he told the man—I have to tell it going along straight, and if I do, I will tell the whole truth; but if you push me over as I am going along, I will get out of the way, and tell no truth, because I will not go straight through with it.

*Question.* Take your own way and go on.

*Answer.* They opened the door, I suppose, and got in on him, and dragged him out and beat him powerful in the house, and started down the hill with him, right to where I was. I got on my filly and run right up to the road again, and stopped on the hill, and hitched my filly, and jumped down, and run down to see what they were doing. I could see they were folks, and what they were doing. They were there stripping him and beating him and knocking him about with pistols. I got up close enough to see them. I had to come up mighty easy. I wouldn't go up to the crowd; I was afraid. I wouldn't have went up to the crowd for my weight in gold. I believe they heard me, and I wouldn't go nowhere, for I was frightened. I stood still, and they whipped him about an hour before he started to holler, and when he started to holler "murder, murder"—every word was murder—I just jumped on my filly and started for home, and never come back to church again. That was Friday night. It was the next Sunday following week before I come back down there, but I heard of it away up home there. I had seen that somebody was beating him, but I didn't tell it. I wouldn't tell my wife about it, for fear she would get so uneasy and be tore up in mind, and I didn't tell it, but somebody told it; by my being careful and not telling them anything about it, and waiting until she heard it from others, she tried to make me tell her what made me come back, but I never did tell her until after she was told by others, and then I told her that made me come back that night, seeing them and getting frightened, and I rode all that night until I got back home that night before daylight.

*Question.* Was he badly whipped?

*Answer.* He never worked none, to my recollection, in five weeks. I lived about eight miles and a half from him. I started in the evening to go there.

*Question.* Did you hear them tell him what they were whipping him for?

*Answer.* No, sir; if I heard them at that time I was so frightened it is like I didn't hear it now. I didn't think of anything except listening to him hollering.

*Question.* Did he ever tell you what they said?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never had but mighty little talk with him until he moved away.

*Question.* Did he move away?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is a preacher, preaching down on the road, but others told me—but hearsay wont do—they said he was teaching a school.

*Question.* A colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a colored school; and he said they told him—every lick they hit him toward the last they would tell him; he didn't tell me this, I heard it, and I tell you I didn't hear him say it; I never had much talk with him; I never would talk to anybody, because I knew if I said anything about it, it was like to be said, "Brother William Coleman was connected in that whipping with Brother Nathan Cannon." and I didn't want to know nothing about it on that account, and I waited for them to tell me this story, and I listened.

*Question.* Did he own his land?

*Answer.* He did.

*Question.* Has he had to leave it?

*Answer.* He left his land just as I left mine, hogs, and chickens, and cows, and everything. I had but one mule. My brother went and got my filly, and my daddy got my mule. My mule will be here to-morrow—no, it will not, either, for he can't vote here.

*Question.* What have you done with your crop?

*Answer.* Nothing; I have lost my year's crop, and my land, and everything else. I can't get nothing out of it, nor do anything about it, or I haven't done it.

*Question.* Have you heard of any other cases besides Cannon's?

*Answer.* I heard of them. I heard of Sol Triplett being killed.

*Question.* State what you heard about his case.

*Answer.* Only that he was killed.

*Question.* Did you understand for what he was killed?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* When was Sol Triplett killed?

*Answer.* Sol Triplett was killed just about before Christmas.

*Question.* By the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* So said to be, but they come mighty open-handed to do it, so I heard. They were not disguised, so they told me; they just come and shot him through the crack of the house, like they tried to do me.

*Question.* Did you understand it was done after night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he live in Winston County?

*Answer.* He did.

*Question.* Did you know him?

*Answer.* Of course I did. He was a brother in the church; he belonged to the same church I did.

*Question.* What did you understand he was killed for?

*Answer.* I didn't understand anything he was killed for at all. I lived so far from him, when I got the chance to go down there I had enough to talk about about the church affairs, without raking up these scattering things about what had been done in the neighborhood.

*Question.* Have you heard of any other colored men being killed in Winston County?

*Answer.* Only Allen Bird, he got killed in jail.

*Question.* Tell what you know of the particulars in his case.

*Answer.* I do not know anything about his case. He lived there; they rode for him the same night they rode for me, only this, they caught me and they didn't catch him nor Uncle Lem Cooper. These men said they rode for all of us. They went to our three houses and asked for us, but nobody was at home but me, and I was in my bed; they didn't catch him.

*Question.* Did he live near you?

*Answer.* About two miles of me, and he was not at his house. Uncle Lem Cooper was about three miles and a half from me, and Allen Bird about two miles. When they came to my house, I was in bed, and they got me.

*Question.* Tell what you know about Allen Bird's case?

*Answer.* I know nothing about it, only they went in jail and killed him.

*Question.* What was he put in jail for?

*Answer.* He was accused of keeping a white girl; whether he did I don't know.

*Question.* Did you understand that he was taken out of jail by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And shot or hung?

*Answer.* He was not taken out by them, but they went in there and beat him to death, and then shot a hole you could job your fist through. His brother told me that; he is down here and can tell you; he is not many days come from there.

*Question.* Allen Bird was murdered in jail there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* What is his brother's name?
*Answer.* Gus Bird; he is a brother of Allen Bird.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Will you ask him to come before the committee?
*Answer.* I will.
*Question.* Did you get these particulars from him?
*Answer.* That is where I got my information from; from him and others that go backwards and forwards from here.
*Question.* Have you heard of any other outrages in Winston County, besides those you have given?
*Answer.* No, sir; I don't believe I have; I know my own better than I do anybody else's, because I can see the scars every day and every minute.
*Question.* Have you known any teachers of colored schools to be interfered with?
*Answer.* Peter Cooper was run from there a short time after I was. He is down here making shoes.
*Question.* Was he a teacher of a colored school?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they burned up his books and took several dollars of money from him. I know they got $23 from him that night.
*Question.* When was he run from Winston County?
*Answer.* Shortly after I was; I don't know how long; I can't tell you that at all.
*Question.* Do you know of any colored churches or schools being burned in Winston County?
*Answer.* There was only one school-house that I ever knew burned down. They teached in it about a week.
*Question.* Was it a school for colored children?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were going to school in it a week maybe, or maybe longer.
*Question.* In what part of the county was that?
*Answer.* It was above me; I don't know hardly in what part—it was in Winston County. I don't know what part of the county. I can't read nor write, and don't know no more about what course to tell you it was, but I know which way it was from my house.
*Question.* Do you know of colored people being interfered with in voting?
*Answer.* No, sir. When? any time since the surrender?
*Question.* Yes.
*Answer.* It has been done right smart. I don't know whether they got any or not there. Men has come up and asked who was you going to vote for, but I never knew of anybody getting shot for it. Yes, here is another man got shot about voting—that was Jerry Brown. He got killed about two hundred yards from my door. I didn't think of him.
*Question.* When was he killed?
*Answer.* Jerry Brown has been killed now three years.
*Question.* What was he killed for?
*Answer.* About being a radical and owning his profession; just saying he was a radical and he didn't care who knew it; that he was going to vote the radical ticket, and all this sort of thing.
*Question.* Was he killed by the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; so it was said; they were disguised men.
*Question.* Did they come to his house?
*Answer.* They went to his house and shot him lying in his bed; he never did get up; there was a bullet in him as big as the end of my thumb.
*Question.* Did you see him after he was dead?
*Answer.* I did next morning. I went over the river next morning. I was picking cotton at Mr. Morgan's, and Saturday morning I got home between breakfast—I don't know at what time of day, because when I got home I heard of it, and it frightened me so that I don't know; I don't remember what time I got there, but that was the time along between morning and dinner anyhow that I got home. I was living then on Mr. Burch's place; he was here to-day; the old man is dead. Uncle Jerry was living on a piece of land he leased for five years to work and improve the place for the improvement he put on it, cutting and splitting rails and building houses and digging a well.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where were you staying then?
*Answer.* At Mr. Burch's place.
*Question.* Do you say Mr. Burch is here to-day?
*Answer.* He was here this morning.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Has any white man ever been taken up and punished for any of these whippings or murders?

*Answer.* I never heard of one; they had some up at Oxford, at the United States court, but never did nothing to them. They turned them loose on bond, and they came back here again, just like they were before. I have not seen any alteration in it, except they don't kill them up quite as fast, but they keep beating them and beat them yet. There is no alteration in that. They just don't kill them.

*Question.* Have you heard of Ku-Klux riding through Winston County at night frequently?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; week before last they came in there, and this same Robin Coleman went in the woods hunting at night, and a parcel of them went to him in the woods at night, and told him he must not hunt of a night; he must hunt of a Sunday.

*Question.* Do you know of any colored people having left Winston County to get rid of the Ku-Klux, being afraid to stay there?

*Answer.* I know one or two. You got the name of one, Peter Cooper, and you have the name of myself and my wife.

*Question.* Are you afraid to go back there?

*Answer.* I would not go back there if I had a gold piece of land there. My life is better to me than anything there. I would not go back there if there was gold there higher than one of these pines.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any colored people sleeping out of their houses in that county?

*Answer.* I have heard it and done it myself.

*Question.* Why?

*Answer.* Because I was afraid to stay in my own house.

*Question.* Do you think many of the colored people are afraid to stay in their houses at night?

*Answer.* They are afraid to stay in their houses at night. I have laid in the woods many a night, and I have laid in my own horse lot, my horse stable, right under the trough, many a night, and my horse would lay down, and I couldn't hardly lay down for laying on him right under the trough. I have left my house and told my wife to stay in there, for they don't hurt women unless some of the women is sassy to some of their wives, or speak like a white woman, and they call that sass; then they go and whip them nearly to death; but I knew my wife wouldn't say nothing; she says nothing, or only so little that you can't take no offense at it—can't get mad.

*Question.* Do you think that colored people feel afraid of personal harm and violence in that county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, they do feel afraid to stay there in any such place, and you would, too, if you were most devoured with devils like there is there. It is nothing for them to come riding up in great droves like they were going to the army to fight, and get down and beat and knock a man over the head with sticks and pistols. Here is a knot on my head they did to me that night, [indicating,] and here is one in the edge of my ear, the whole width of the stick, and a long hole over here, in the back of my head. When they took me out of the house I was as bloody as a hog that had been knocked down and stuck in a hog-pen and wallered in his own blood where they cut me. Besides that they took me out and beat me almost to death. They meant to beat me to death. I am afraid to stay there.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You say you knew the men?

*Answer.* I ought to know them when they were my door neighbors. I know them.

*Question.* What were their names?

*Answer.* Coleman Carlisle. I think he calls it C. P. Carlisle.

*Question.* Who are the others?

*Answer.* Jim Boyd Hughes.

*Question.* Name any others.

*Answer.* Theodore Ellis, Peter Ellis, my door neighbors; Monroe Ellis, Bog Ellis, Francis Ellis. That is as many, I think, as I know. I wouldn't have known them, but when they knocked Coleman Carlisle, and knocked his horns and face off, I heard him call the others names. I knowed them.

*Question.* Whose names did he call?

*Answer.* Theodore Ellis and Monroe Ellis, and besides calling the Ellis name Coleman Carlisle called me by name. I worked with Coleman Carlisle; the same year I bought my place I started to buy a piece of land from him.

*Question.* In what part of the county is this?

*Answer.* It is in the lower edge of Winston County, down this way.

*Question.* Near what place?

*Answer.* It is out on the Brooksville road; up from Brooksville on the road to Louisville.

*Question.* Is it near Louisville?

*Answer.* No, sir; it is about half the distance.

*Question.* Did they all live right there?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* All in that neighborhood?

*Answer.* They live in Winston County, but not in the same neighborhood, I do not think; in fact, I know it, because the neighborhood is a neighborhood of people, and Louisville is between Ellis's and Carlisle's. They live about twelve miles apart.

*Question.* Where does Boyd Hughes live?

*Answer.* He lives in Louisville, about two miles and a half from my house; one of the grandest rascals there is walks. He is always cursing somebody about not voting the way he votes, and he is a democrat, and getting mad and picking a fuss with a darkey, and having every white man in the place against him directly. If he was gone, there would have been several of them; there is this fellow that got killed in jail, busted his head mighty nigh open with a brick-bat—not a brick-bat, but a rock; there is nothing but rock there; that is a rock country and sand.

*Question.* Do you mean that Hughes knocked him on the head?

*Answer.* Allen Bird's brother Mose Bird, he knocked Jim Boyd on the head with a rock, and cut his head open.

*Question.* What did he do that for?

*Answer.* They had a little falling out about something, and the first thing anybody knows Mose Bird was dead. Nobody heard hide or hair of Mose Bird since.

*Question.* Where does this other man live, Coleman Carlisle?

*Answer.* He lives in Winston County, right out on the Brooksville road.

*Question.* How far from Louisville?

*Answer.* He did live twelve miles from Louisville, but he is now a mile and a half right across from where he lived. He moved from his father-in-law's, Mr. Glenn.

*Question.* From where he formerly lived?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from his old place. He sold his old place, and moved a mile and a half, to his father-in-law's.

*Question.* He is about twelve miles from Louisville still?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I should think a little more than that, because they have to sort of turn to go there, and it would make a mile and a half across the country the way he would have to go.

*Question.* You lived about two miles and a half from Louisville?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the other side of Louisville; two miles and a half on the Greensborough road, and he lived between Louisville and Brooksville up here.

*Question.* Where does Theodore Ellis live?

*Answer.* He lives right joining my place. There was one corner or side of my land cut through his yard; cut off a corner of his yard.

*Question.* And Munroe Ellis?

*Answer.* Munroe Ellis lives right back at his father's, about a mile from my house; back of the house.

*Question.* Where does Francis Ellis live?

*Answer.* Right there at the same place, unless they have moved since I came away. Francis and Bog and Rube Ellis all live at the same place, and The Ellis lives right joining my place.

*Question.* What did they say to you when they whipped you?

*Answer.* They would learn me when I meet a white man on the road to lift my hat to him, and let me know I was a nigger. That is all they said to me.

*Question.* Did they say anything else to you?

*Answer.* They didn't tell what they were whipping me for, unless what I just told you.

*Question.* They shot at you three times after they got into the house?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and for fear of shooting the men that were coming into the door facing me, was all that saved me. If they had not been fearful of shooting the other men they would have shot me; but by my dodging from the front door out toward the fire-place, they didn't hit me.

*Question.* They did not tell you anything else except that you should raise your hat when you saw a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they said didn't I know I was a nigger? I told them yes, sir.

*Question.* When did you say that was?

*Answer.* Some time in April; I can't exactly tell what time or what day of the month it was, because I can't keep no books, nor read, nor write my own name, much less keep books; and I can't tell exactly what time it was; but it was in April; I do not know whether it was the last of April or not; but I know one thing, it was three weeks before I could work a lick after I was beat.

*Question.* When did they whip Mordecai Mitchell?

*Answer.* I do not know. They whipped him after I came away. I had done come away when they whipped Mordecai.

*Question.* Robin Coleman?

*Answer.* After I came away.

*Question.* George Gladney?

*Answer.* After I came away.

*Question.* Sam McMillan?

*Answer.* They shot at him, and he shot at them.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* Sam said he knowed the men that came and whipped George, and he knowed the two after he come in the house; he knew the men that whipped George, but was afraid to own it. They rode for him, and called for him. He was prepared for them, and when they started in after Sam, he was waiting for them, and Sam hailed them, and asked who was that down at the fence, and they shot at Sam. They knew he was outside of the house, and shot, and Sam commenced shooting at them.

*Question.* Did they hit him?

*Answer.* No, sir; not as I know of. I never could learn whether any ball hit him.

*Question.* Did he hit any one of them?

*Answer.* No, sir; he didn't know it at the time, if he did.

*Question.* What did they whip Coleman and Gladney for?

*Answer.* I don't know.

*Question.* Did not they tell you what they whipped them for?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you not hear?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You never heard any reason assigned for it?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You do not know whether they had stolen anything or not?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not, but I will tell you what I was whipped about, at least what I always put it to. If a man come and told you anything this year that he will have done to you, and then he don't do it until next year some time, and then it is done like he told you this year it would be done, you then would certainly know that was the man that had it done, and was also in it, even if you didn't see him, or if you saw him, and didn't know him, and you would always swear he done it. Coleman Carlisle told me he allowed to have me whipped, and when they came and got me out of the house, he bossed the job, and when he said I had enough whipping they quit.

*Question.* What did he say he was going to have you whipped for?

*Answer.* Because we had a little falling out. I worked for him faithfully as I ever worked for myself since I bought my place, and we made six bales of cotton, and I do not know how many bushels of corn, and I drawed eleven dollars and five cents on that year, and when settling day came—I did not stay until settling day; we had a fuss and he drove me off. I came back three different times, and told him, let me come back and gather my crop. He told me to go away from there or he would blow my brains out. I said, "You say if I don't go away you'll blow my brains out?" He said, "Yes, and I intend to have your a——e whipped unless I die before I do it," and he shook his knife like that [illustrating] and said, "I'll have your a——e whipped unless I die before I do it." It run on that year and he never done it until away this year some time. Last year was the first year I worked my own place. Year before last I worked with him. That was the time he told me—he run me off. In the gathering of the cotton he never gave my wife one thing, and I only drawed eleven dollars and five cents with him. He had no more account against me, only that, and he only showed me four bales of cotton, and there were two bales in the gin-house, and my brother went and looked and saw it there, and he had a fuss and run me off. If he could get me run away, there would be a chance for him to grab and steal all the crop, as he did it. When he got the crop all gathered and everything, I goes to him for a settlement; the cotton was ginned and picked, and I laid around to see how it was working, and at last it comes to this, that he didn't make but four bales of cotton, or he said he didn't make but four bales of cotton. He showed me them four; the balance was in the gin-house, and when it was ginned out, George Walker told me there was two bales of it; he helped gin it and pack it, and he ought to know.

*Question.* Who was George Walker?

*Answer.* He is a colored man.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* He lives close to Carlisle.

*Question.* In Louisville?

*Answer.* Between Louisville and Brooksville; about twelve miles this side of Louisville, right on the road; when he drove me away he hired George to work in my place. He had to have somebody; he had so much crop and did not get it all out until way after Christmas. He just run over it, and made four bales of cotton, he said.

*Question.* Who was George?

*Answer.* George Walker. He will never tell anybody that I won't work. He will always tell you that I am as good a hand as he ever saw.

*Question.* Where does George Walker live now?

*Answer.* He lives on his own place close to Mr. Carlisle's—about three-quarters of a mile; close to Mr. Carlisle's old place that he sold and moved from.

*Question.* That is what you think he whipped you for?

*Answer.* He told me he was going to have it done, and I have a right to believe it. If you told me you were going to have it done, and if you didn't come for five years, but it comes and it was just like you said, and I saw your face in the crowd, I have a right to believe it was you.

*Question.* You say you were whipped because you were a radical?

*Answer.* I was a radical. I say it again, and I told you about the Carlisle's scrape; that is always what I put it to, what I was whipped about; but the biggest portion of it was because I was a radical, and then this here on top of it, because Carlisle tried to get me to go with him and vote with him. He said, "Drink my whisky and vote with me." I told him, "I will never vote with you while the sun rises across the globe," and I never will; and after all that we had a falling out, and he always had some little unpleasant feeling with me after that, from the time of the election; after that we fell out and had a few words, and he struck me, and then, because I caught hold of the mule-yoke he struck me with—I snatched it out of his hand—that he hit me with and throwed it down, and he run me off. He run to his brother-in-law to get a gun to shoot me with, and I went away and watched him, and when he had put the gun down and was out in the lot, I went up with my hat off, and said, "Let me come back and get my crop off," and he said, "No, we are parted, stay parted;" that was the words.

*Question.* What did you say about Cannon being whipped?

*Answer.* Nathan Cannon, Elo's brother; I said no more than I could say, if you asked me a thousand questions. The night he was whipped I had to go down to this church to meet him, and I started down Friday evening after dinner, and by riding along so slow, knowing the folks along the road, and talking to them, I didn't get there until in the night. When I got there it was about bed-time, as nigh as I can recollect, and when I got there I went down to the spring to get a drink of water, and took my hat and folded it up in that way, [illustrating,] and tips some water to drink. When I throwed the reins over my filly's head, to get on her to ride up, I looked up the road, and heard them coming down. I didn't know what it was, but I saw it was men riding along, and I got sort of frightened right straight. I stopped still, and took the bridle from over the filly's head, and held the reins in my hands a few minutes, and when I heard the lumbering in the house, and the screams of Nathan Cannon's wife, I jumped on my filly and rode up to Elo's fence, and stood there until they got Nathan Cannon. They had him coming toward me down the hill, and I jumped on my filly and rode right up, and when they got down there they commenced whipping him. After I run off the filly for a piece, I stopped and come back to look through the bushes, and discern them through the bushes. I kept the bushes between me and the people. If I had had anything to shoot, I could have shot, but I had nothing; and if I had had it, I would have been too scared to shoot, there was so many. I don't know how many there was. I was so frightened I couldn't count. When I looked among them and saw how they were whipping him, and the voice of the man hollering, "Murder! murder! murder!" I jumped on my horse that minute and went on home, and never come back there. That was Friday night. I never got back until the next Sunday week.

*Question.* You said he told you they whipped him for his politics?

*Answer.* I didn't tell you he told me so. I told you I heard it. I told you at the time hearsay wouldn't do me no good to tell no one.

*Question.* Who did you hear it from?

*Answer.* I heard it about among the people. I can't tell you exactly who by, because I heard it from some that I remembered. It was just going about among the crowd.

*Question.* How did they open the door?

*Answer.* It was said that they raised the latch; it was seen in the latch where the point of the knife went in to raise the latch up. I didn't see them open it, but I heard them when they went to it and hollered. I was close enough to hear the lumbering.

*Question.* You are sure you heard that they whipped him for being a radical?

*Answer.* That is it, for being a radical, and then he was teaching school. I put it to them two things.

*Question.* When did you say Jerry Brown was killed?

*Answer.* He has been killed about three years.

*Question.* What was he killed for?

*Answer.* For owning his profession; that he was so bold about it in the crowd. He was not afeared to disown his name, who he was, and who he allowed to vote for, and all this. That was what I ever heard he was killed for.

*Question.* Who told you he was killed for that?

*Answer.* I heard it amongst the whole crowd of people. It was so said in the whole neighborhood, both black and white, that I ever heard.

*Question.* Tell us the name of some one person who told you he was killed for that cause?

*Answer.* I heard Warren McMorris was one man I heard say it.

*Question.* Where does Warren McMorris live?

*Answer.* He was living at Mr. Cole's then. I don't know where he is now; dead, I reckon.

*Question.* You think he is dead?

*Answer.* I have no idea where he is. I don't know nothing about him, or where he is.

*Question.* How was he shot; taken out and shot?

*Answer.* Jerry Brown?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* They shot him in his bed. He was lying in his bed when I saw him.

*Question.* Was he shot there?

*Answer.* He must, undoubtedly, have been shot in the bed. That is what his wife told. She said he was lying flat of his back. She got up and opened the door. When they hollered, "Open the door," she asked who it was. She got over him in the bed. He just laid flat of his back; and she says the first one walked up to him and asked, "Who is that in the bed?" She said, "It is my husband." He said back, "Isn't it old Jerry Brown?" and then she hushed talking and wouldn't say nothing. He had his pistol in his hand. She didn't know what his intention was. The man asked Uncle Jerry, "Who are you?" Uncle Jerry never spoke to answer. That is the way I heard it. And then they asked his wife, "Who was he?" and she says, "My husband;" and when she said it was my husband, and he asked her wasn't it old Jerry Brown, she didn't say nothing, and they called on him, and he didn't say nothing, and they said, "Yes it is;" and the first man shot him, and shot him right in his temple, right here, [illustrating,] and then he rolled over, and they put another load in his back, right agin his heart, and then shot another ball in his thigh. The ball they shot in his thigh, lying there, came through to before, and raised up a knot under the skin like veins coming up; and it was so said that some of them cut the ball out.

*Question.* Who was it that knocked Hughes down with a rock?

*Answer.* It was Moses Bird.

*Question.* When did that happen?

*Answer.* Last year.

*Question.* At what time?

*Answer.* I can't tell you. Along in the summer season, some time in the year.

*Question.* How long have you been living here?

*Answer.* I moved down here some time in May.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 16, 1871.

PETER COOPER (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* I live in Macon now; but I formerly lived in Winston County.

*Question.* How long have you lived in that county?

*Answer.* About twenty-six or twenty-seven years.

*Question.* What occupation were you following before you came here?

*Answer.* I was teaching school.

*Question.* A colored school, I suppose?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How came you to quit teaching it?

*Answer.* The Ku-Klux came one night and got after me.

*Question.* Tell the committee the particulars of it.

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know much about it; but I can tell what I do know. I commenced teaching that Monday morning, and taught until Friday night, when they came. They came about one o'clock at night. I was not at home that night. They came to my house and looked for me, but could not find me anywhere in the house.

*Question.* Have you a family?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was in a room to myself; I was living with another man.

*Question.* They did not find you that night?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did they come back after that?

*Answer.* No, sir; after they could not find me, they turned in and burst open my

trunk and got my money out, and burned up my clothes in that trunk, and all my books I was studying.

*Question.* Burned up your trunk and books?

*Answer.* Burst open my trunk and got out my clothes and money, and burned up my clothes.

*Question.* What did they do with the school-house?

*Answer.* They didn't pester the school-house.

*Question.* How much money had you in the trunk?

*Answer.* Twenty-three dollars.

*Question.* That was stolen?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They burned up my box of shoemaker's tools; I was a shoemaker.

*Question.* Did you understand how many men came there that night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; thirty-seven.

*Question.* Did they have disguises on?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was told they had on some white kind of cloth over their faces, and aprons that came down about their knees.

*Question.* Were they on horseback?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; on horseback.

*Question.* Armed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they had pistols. I don't think they had anything more than pistols and clubs.

*Question.* Had you received any warning not to teach the school before they came for you?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you know of any other colored teachers being raided?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't think I do.

*Question.* Do you know of any colored school-houses being burned in Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know of any.

*Question.* Have you heard of any?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Tell the committee what you have heard in relation to the burning of colored school-houses.

*Answer.* There was a school about six, or seven, or eight miles from the town of Louisville; I don't know anything about it, only it was burned up on a Sunday evening.

*Question.* Was it known by whom it was burned?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard.

*Question.* You say you never heard of any teacher of colored schools being whipped, killed, or interfered with by such as these?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of one man who was whipped for teaching a free school; that was before the free-school system came on—Nathan Cannon.

*Question.* Tell what you heard in relation to Nathan Cannon.

*Answer.* I didn't hear much about him. They took him out and whipped him nearly to death.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How long ago was that?

*Answer.* I couldn't tell you exactly; it was some time before there was any free schools. He was paid by the people of the country.

*Question.* Were you acquainted with him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you see him after he was whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he tell you the particulars?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You learned them from others?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know or have you heard of any colored people in Winston County being whipped or killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of a fellow whipped the same night they were after me.

*Question.* Who was he?

*Answer.* Mordecai Mitchell.

*Question.* Have you told the committee when it was they were after you; have you stated the time?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not stated it. I have the paper here that I could see what time by, [producing a paper.] This is my petition, made about three weeks before I commenced teaching school. This petition is dated in March, 1871.

*Question.* You say this raid was made upon you about three weeks after this petition was gotten up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You say that Mordecai Mitchell was whipped the same night they were after you?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was in hearing of the house.
*Question.* Were you acquainted with him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was he a colored man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did he ever tell you the particulars of his whipping?
*Answer.* No, sir; he never told me the particulars.
*Question.* You heard it from other people?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You may state to the committee the facts as they were told to you.
*Answer.* We don't know very much up there what was done to others, for they are not allowed to talk. If they are whipped, they don't talk hardly any to anybody—how much they were whipped, or how——
*Question.* Why?
*Answer.* Because they are afraid. They charge them not to talk.
*Question.* Those that whip them charge them not to tell of it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; not to tell anything about it.
*Question.* And they refuse to talk about it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; some will not talk at all.
*Question.* Did you hear he was taken out of his house and whipped by disguised men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they broke his gate down and took his pistols; they told him when they come back again they would give him his pistols back again.
*Question.* Did you understand that he was whipped by disguised men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they went right from my house to where he lived.
*Question.* Was he a man of a family?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* They invaded his house after night, and took him out and whipped him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you understand what he was whipped for?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* What did they say they whipped him for, as you understood it?
*Answer.* I don't think I understood what they said they whipped him for.
*Question.* Was he severely whipped?
*Answer.* They hit him about fifty licks, they said.
*Question.* Is he living there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he is living there yet.
*Question.* Whose plantation was he working?
*Answer.* He had a place of his own.
*Question.* Had he paid for his land?
*Answer.* No, sir; not all. He had paid part.
*Question.* What other colored men do you know of being whipped or killed?
*Answer.* I heard of Robin Coleman being whipped.
*Question.* What did you hear about his case?
*Answer.* Nothing more than he was taken out and whipped.
*Question.* When did that occur?
*Answer.* It occurred about four weeks after I commenced teaching school.
*Question.* Was he working on a plantation?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was working on Mr. Perkins's place.
*Question.* Did you understand what his offense was?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Was he a man of a family?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was he said to have been whipped by disguised men?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* How many licks did you understand were administered to him?
*Answer.* I never heard how much they whipped him.
*Question.* Does he still live there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he lives there yet.
*Question.* What is the next case?
*Answer.* I heard of them whipping George Gladney.
*Question.* Was he whipped about the same time?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Whose place did he live on?
*Answer.* Mr. Perkins's place.
*Question.* What was he whipped for?
*Answer.* I never heard.
*Question.* Was he whipped by the same party that whipped Robin Coleman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you hear about the case of Samuel McMillan?
*Answer.* No, sir. I am acquainted with him.
*Question.* Did you ever hear that they shot at him?
*Answer.* No, sir; it must have been since I left there.
*Question.* You left there soon after?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; about a week after I quit teaching school.
*Question.* Have you not been back there since?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Sol Triplett?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* A colored man who was killed?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Allen Bird?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What did you hear about him?
*Answer.* I just heard he was killed in the jail, in the cage.
*Question.* Did you hear that the men were disguised that killed him that night?
*Answer.* I didn't hear whether they were disguised or not.
*Question.* Was it after night that they entered the jail and killed him or in the daytime?
*Answer.* It was at night.
*Question.* How many were concerned?
*Answer.* I heard there was about a hundred.
*Question.* He was in the jail at Lowville?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Jerry Brown?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Killed about three years ago?
*Answer.* No, sir. He was killed somewhere not far from Macon here—Jerry Brown was.
*Question.* Did you hear of the case?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What did you hear about it?
*Answer.* Nothing more than he was killed.
*Question.* Killed near Macon?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you hear that he was killed at his own house?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think he was shot in his own house.
*Question.* Did you hear what he was shot for?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Do you know William Coleman?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever hear the Ku-Klux were after him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What did you understand about his case?
*Answer.* I understood that they were after him one night, and chunked him about with guns.
*Question.* Did you understand that they whipped him?
*Answer.* No, sir. I understood they whipped him, too, and I asked him, but he didn't tell me they did. I understood from others that they whipped him, but he never told me they whipped him.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did he tell you they did not whip him?
*Answer.* He didn't tell me what they did.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You understood from others that he was whipped by the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* He had a place of his own?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And considerable stock?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* He had to leave the county and come here, did he not?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Have you heard of any other cases of colored people being either whipped or killed in Winston County?
*Answer.* No, sir; I don't believe I have.
*Question.* You think these are all the cases you can recollect or think of now?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was one man killed up at Webster, in Winston County.

*Question.* What was his name? Tell all you know about it.

*Answer.* I believe that his name was Jerry—something, but I cannot remember his surname.

*Question.* When was he killed?

*Answer.* He has been killed about two years ago.

*Question.* By the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I don't know. He was shot in the day-time.

*Question.* Was there more than one man concerned in killing him?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir.

*Question.* What do you understand he was killed for?

*Answer.* I think they charged him with persuading colored people to vote the radical ticket.

*Question.* Was he a man that took a good deal of interest in politics?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he talked a good deal during election.

*Question.* Was he a man that had much influence with the colored people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he had right smart.

*Question.* Is it your understanding that he was killed because he rallied the colored people to vote the republican ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is that the general understanding among your people that he was killed for that reason?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you think of any other cases?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is Winston a county that has a good deal of good land, or is it rather a poor county?

*Answer.* It is a tolerably poor county.

*Question.* Do they raise much cotton there?

*Answer.* In some places they raise right smart.

*Question.* Are there more white people there than colored?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Many poor white people there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a good many.

*Question.* Are the poor whites friendly to the colored people?

*Answer.* Some of them are.

*Question.* How is it with the most of them, are they friendly or unfriendly?

*Answer.* Most of them are friendly.

*Question.* Are they anxious to get them out of the county and keep them from working the land?

*Answer.* I have heard that some of them say that they are going to run all the radical negroes out. They said that the radical negroes should not live there.

*Question.* Are the whites in that county pretty generally democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; much more than anything else.

*Question.* You think the white democrats up there are not in favor of the negroes voting the radical ticket?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you ever heard them say so?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard that, but the man I was living with at the time they were after me, they told him that I should not live with him; that I was a damned radical scalawag, and I had to pay him my rent and get out; that I should not live with him; and I think about two of them took my feather-bed out and emptied the feathers out of it in an old field. They said I should not live in the house with that man. He did not fight at all, the man I was living with.

*Question.* Are the white people in your part of the county, where you were engaged, in favor of colored schools?

*Answer.* No, sir; they said there shouldn't be no colored schools. They said that I was not going to have any; that I shouldn't teach at all.

*Question.* What reason did they give why they were opposed to the colored people being educated?

*Answer.* They think they are opposed to paying taxes for the purpose of schooling colored children.

*Question.* Does a colored man fare any better up there if he votes the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What makes you think so?

*Answer.* Well, I have seen how they treat some that voted the radical ticket. They are treated better among the white people.

*Question.* If they vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You have seen that yourself?
*Answer.* I have a brother there that votes the democratic ticket, and he is just the same as they are. They treat him the same way.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Treat him the same as though he was white?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you think he votes the democratic ticket from principle, because he prefers that party, or because he can get along better with the whites?
*Answer.* He votes only because he can get along better. He is of the same opinion that he always was.
*Question.* He is at heart, then, a radical, you think?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* As a general thing, if left to themselves, how would the colored people vote?
*Answer.* They would all vote radical, to my opinion, and a heap don't vote at all, on account of making disturbances with the white people. A great many don't vote at all. A heap will vote any way, and some few vote with the white people.
*Question.* Do you think the owners of land try to prevent the colored people from voting the republican ticket?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you say this colored man you lived with did not vote?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he never voted at all the last election.
*Question.* Why not?
*Answer.* I don't know the reason.
*Question.* Was he afraid to?
*Answer.* No, sir; he did not vote on account of some of the white people telling him he was all right; if he did not vote for them not to vote at all, and he would fare better among them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* The democrats are able to carry the election in Winston County?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, they carry it there.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where were you when William Coleman was whipped?
*Answer.* I was living in town at Louisville.
*Question.* Did you hear of it at the time?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What did you hear him say about it?
*Answer.* I asked him one day something about the whipping of him, and he told me he hadn't told nobody that they whipped him. I told him I had heard that they whipped him. He only told me he hadn't told nobody, much less he did not tell me at that time; but he said he was going to leave there shortly. He was fixing up then to leave.
*Question.* How soon was this after he was whipped?
*Answer.* Not more than two days. He was fixing to leave then, and I asked him about it.
*Question.* Did he have any marks upon him where he had been whipped?
*Answer.* I heard it said that he was marked up. I heard some colored people speak about it, that he was marked up, but I don't believe I saw any scars.
*Question.* You could not see any?
*Answer.* No, sir.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You did not look at his back?
*Answer.* No, sir; only his face.
*Question.* Did you run your fingers through his hair and feel any wounds there?
*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He said he did not tell anybody he was whipped?
*Answer.* No, sir; that is what he told me.
*Question.* Did you understand him to deny that he was whippped by what he said?
*Answer.* Well, no, sir; I did not understand him that he denied it, but from what other people had told me that he was whipped, and from what he said, he said he didn't tell nobody he was whipped. I told him I heard he was whipped.

*Question.* Did you understand from what he said as he spoke of it that he was denying it; did he intend to convey the impression to you that he had not been whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir; it just seemed to me like he had been whipped, and he wouldn't tell me whether he had or had not; and he didn't tell me, but he said he had not told nobody that he had not been, or had been whipped. I didn't understand him any further. I reckon, if he was whipped, he didn't want to state whether he had been or not; but he told me he was going to get away from there in a short time, and told me not to say anything about his fixing up to leave.

*Question.* What did he tell you he was going away for?

*Answer.* He didn't say what.

*Question.* Did he leave his property behind when he came?

*Answer.* I don't know how he fixed it up about his land. He had not paid for it, I believe, but he yoked his steers and fetched with him.

*Question.* Brought his steers with him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he have anything else?

*Answer.* Not as I know of. I never visited his house. I have passed there a time or two. I live about a mile from the place. I never stopped to see what stock he had.

*Question.* He told you he was going to leave?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he tell you he was going to bring away his property?

*Answer.* No, sir; he didn't say that.

*Question.* Did you see him when he left?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did he leave before you did?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Came away before you did?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you seen him since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Seen him here in town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you had any conversation with him since you have been here about what occurred?

*Answer.* No, sir; not what has occurred up in Winston; never have talked with him about what was done up there.

*Question.* How long did you say it was after he was whipped that you saw him?

*Answer.* About two days.

*Question.* Do you not think, if he had been whipped very badly, you could have discovered it?

*Answer.* If he had been scarred about his face I would have seen it; but he may have been whipped very bad, and I couldn't have seen it in his face. I did not see any scars about his face.

*Question.* Was his head gashed any?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not see him with his hat off. I met him in the road. He was passing by the shop were I was working, and I followed him and stopped him.

*Question.* Was he walking?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he look from the manner in which he walked as if he was suffering?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was walking tolerably well.

*Question.* Walked pretty brisk?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did he show anything in his action as if he was sore from the whipping?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know.

*Question.* If you had not heard he had been whipped, would you have suspected it from his appearance in any way?

*Answer.* No, sir. I don't expect I would have asked him. I am certain I would not, for he got past the shop before I called him.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Had he a crop in at the time?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't believe he had. That was along in March, some time.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* He may have had hogs and sheep and mules about his house and you not have known anything about it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You say he had not his hat off, and so you could not examine his head?

*Answer.* No, sir.

[Committee took a recess of one hour, for dinner.]

The WITNESS: I desire to make a correction. I have been talking with William Coleman, and he says it was about three weeks after he was whipped before I saw him on the road by the shop, and I talked with him about it. I think it was only two or three days after I heard about it that I saw him. I don't remember how long after he was whipped it was before I heard of it.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 6, 1871.

JEFFERSON B. ALGOOD sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Doctor, state your residence and occupation.

*Answer.* I reside about a mile from Macon. I am a planter. I have my plantation all rented out.

*Question.* How long have you lived in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* About twelve years.

*Question.* Are you a native of the Southern States?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I was born and raised in South Carolina.

*Question.* Are you well acquainted through this county?

*Answer.* Pretty well, I believe. I know most of the people in the county, or a great many of them, at least.

*Question.* Are you a candidate at this time for any office?

*Answer.* I am a candidate for the board of supervisors in this district—the third district.

*Question.* The desire of the committee is to obtain a fair picture of the condition of things as regards the execution of the law—the security of life, person, and property, and the free expression of opinion upon political subjects. Any information which you can give the committee upon these general subjects is desirable.

*Answer.* Well, I really know but mighty little. There has been an organization of parties in the county—of parties that have been prowling over the country, that have had a great deal of influence over many citizens of the county.

*Question.* You may describe that organization, and its objects.

*Answer.* Well, I think that the purpose and object of the organization, to some extent, has been to correct some of the evils in the country. At the same time, it has been for political purposes. It has got into the hands of bad men, and they have managed it badly, so as to have a very bad effect in the country.

*Question.* So far as you know, or your information extends, do its members belong to one of the political parties?

*Answer.* I think they belong entirely to the democratic party. That is my opinion.

*Question.* You may state any manifestations of the existence of this organization which have come to your notice.

*Answer.* I can only state that a letter was received by Judge Ames from the Grand Cyclops—I do not remember the signature—in which he was notified, and myself, in reference to our course of conduct, which the judge showed to me. You can call him before you. The letter, I suppose, he has got now.

*Question.* Can you give the committee the substance of that letter?

*Answer.* The substance of that letter was this: He is the superintendent of education of the county. I think they required him to throw up that position, and then they called my name—wrote my name, and said to him that I had better desist from my course, or they would visit us both. The judge had received a letter previous to that. He only showed me the last one; he never showed me the first one. He told me he had received it.

*Question.* How was it signed?

*Answer.* I think it was signed, "By order of the Grand Cyclops" of such and such a division, written in a very bad hand.

*Question.* Did the hand appear to be cramped—disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; unnatural; disguised entirely.

*Question.* How long since that letter was received?

*Answer.* I think it was received in March, probably.

*Question.* March last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, or thereabouts.

*Question.* Was it received through the post-office?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he got it out of the post-office.

*Question.* What post-mark did it bear?

*Answer.* I don't know.

*Question.* Have you heard of the parades or riding of this organization in the night-time, in disguise?

*Answer.* I have only heard that they passed through town here one night. I heard

Beville make the remark. I never saw any; none ever called on me. I know nothing about them personally.

*Question.* Is it your information that they were in disguise—in their costumes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were in disguise.

*Question.* In what number do you understand that they passed through town?

*Answer.* From fifteen to twenty.

*Question.* When should this have occurred?

*Answer.* I think it must have been in May, perhaps. I couldn't locate the time.

*Question.* In May last?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it in the night-time?

*Answer.* In the night; about midnight.

*Question.* Did you hear of any outrage about that time supposed to have been committed by them?

*Answer.* None at all, sir, that I recollect.

*Question.* Have you heard of their being seen or of their having made visitations in other parts of the county?

*Answer.* There were some five or six came to my plantation, five miles below here. That has been about three months ago, I reckon.

*Question.* At night?

*Answer.* At night; about midnight, sir.

*Question.* Was any person molested or interfered with?

*Answer.* No, sir. They took the gentleman living there and carried him off with them up to Mr. Hayne's in search of a negro, and when they got there he was not there. They made him take them there; made him get his mule and lead them up there.

*Question.* They did not find the negro man?

*Answer.* No, sir. Mr. Johnson, living on my plantation, told me when they got up there they did not find the boy, and turned him loose. They went to Mr. Hayne's plantation, which is about a mile from me.

*Question.* Have you heard of negroes being killed and whipped in different parts of the county by bands of men in disguise?

*Answer.* I have heard of them, but know nothing about them of my own knowledge. I paid mighty little attention to these things. I don't want to be connected with them; yet it has been done all over the county.

*Question.* How long has this state of things been going on?

*Answer.* Well, I don't think we had any in the county until about twelve or eighteen months ago. Some portions of the county have been very quiet, and had no visitations from Ku-Klux at all.

*Question.* What localities in the county seem to have been visited by them most?

*Answer.* Mushulaville, up west of here, and in that range. It seems they have prowled about it more than any other place.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Betsey Lucas, who lived at this time in Macon; of a whipping she received at Robert Jackson's, in the north part of this county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I know nothing in the world about it.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Sam Coger, a colored man said to have been killed by Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* No, sir; I only know he was killed above here, but I know nothing about it.

*Question.* You heard of the fact that he was killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of the fact that he was killed in this county.

*Question.* Did you hear of the case of Dick Malone about the same time?

*Answer.* Only of the fact. I heard he was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear of the killing of Bully Jack, near Shuqualak?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear the particulars?

*Answer.* Only from the negro man living by him that was telling me the circumstances under which he was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear what was the cause of his being killed?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard the cause. He was represented by his friends as a very good negro. The community was very much astonished that he was killed.

*Question.* Have you heard of the whipping of Isam Lowry?

*Answer.* No, sir; I know nothing about it.

*Question.* Or of the whipping of Alexander Hughes?

*Answer.* No, sir; I know nothing about it.

*Question.* Or of the whipping of William Coleman?

*Answer.* I know nothing at all about it.

*Question.* Have you heard of the killing of Johnson Keitt the past spring?

*Answer.* No.

*Question.* Of the killing of Solomon Triplett?

*Answer.* I only heard of it. I know nothing about it.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of a man who was put in the hands of a constable to be brought to Macon, his body afterward being found in the Tombigbee River?

*Answer.* I only know from what the persons in the immediate neighborhood told me. I know nothing of my own knowledge at all. The matter was all before the grand jury. The foreman of the grand jury lives here in town. It was sixteen or eighteen miles from us.

*Question.* Did you hear of the killing of a colored man near Brooksville, about the middle of June last?

*Answer.* What was his name?

*Question.* I do not know his name.

*Answer.* I do not remember him.

*Question.* Have you heard of the killing of Hopkins?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I only heard of it. I know nothing about it in the world.

*Question.* Do you recollect his first name?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* I think he was.

*Question.* Have you heard of any person whipped or killed on the Wilbanks plantation?

*Answer.* No, sir. I had a negro woman, my cook; I don't know whether she lived on the Wilbanks plantation or not. She was the only one. She was living at either Joshua Bell's or Tidd Bell's, one or the other. It is her tale that was told me.

*Question.* What is the name of Mr. Wissler, who was killed in Macon last week?

*Answer.* Charles Wissler.

*Question.* Will you give the committee the particulars of his death as you have learned them?

*Answer.* I was not, at the time of the killing, in Macon. I was at the mill, 14 or 15 miles above here, and did not get home till last Saturday. The killing took place on Wednesday. I understood he was putting up a bedstead in his room, and two stepchildren were assisting him in putting the bedstead up, and he looked and saw that one of the windows was open. He had been informed that perhaps he would be killed. He turned around and remarked to one of his children, "It will not do to have this window open;" so he went to close it; and it seemed one of the shutters was hard, so that he could not close it, and he went to putting the bedstead up and was shot through the window.

*Question.* What official position did he hold at the time?

*Answer.* He was a magistrate and coroner.

*Question.* Was he also a deputy marshal?

*Answer.* I could not speak knowingly as to that, but I think he was a deputy marshal.

*Question.* Have you understood that he was threatened before he was killed?

*Answer.* I do not know that anybody threatened him, only there was a supposition with many that probably he would be killed, and he was cautioned that he should be particular. I don't know of any threat at all.

*Question.* Was he a prominent, active republican?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he was; an energetic, industrious man, and a very thorough republican.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of a secret, oath-bound organization, called the "White Rose?"

*Answer.* I have only heard of it. I know nothing in the world about it.

*Question.* Is it believed that such an organization exists?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it believed that that organization is distinct from the Ku-Klux Klan?

*Answer.* I think so. I think it is rather for political purposes. I think it is for the purpose of carrying the present election. That is my idea.

*Question.* Have you heard of any secret society here called "The Sons of the South?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How long is that said to have existed?

*Answer.* I knew nothing about that until the speaking at Brooksville, about two weeks ago. I was up there with our speakers, and several men remarked to me, "We would like to have you join the 'Native Sons of the South.'" I told them I was already a native son of the South, and would not join any company to make me one. They were very anxious to get as many members as they could. We laughed about it and passed it off.

*Question.* Did you understand it was a secret society?

*Answer.* I can't say whether it is strictly a secret society. It is an organization.

*Question.* Have you heard of any teachers of colored schools being interfered with or molested in any way?

*Answer.* I do not know that I know of any teachers of colored schools; only one who

was going to teach a white school—Mr. Dericut was going to teach a school at Mushulaville.

*Question.* State the particulars.

*Answer.* He was to have taught a free school in the neighborhood of Mushulaville, and a few nights before he commenced it, or before he would have commenced it and taught a few days, the Ku-Klux, or some individuals disguised, visited him and notified him that he could not teach a free school, and he desisted and did not do it. It prevented him from doing it. I think in a few nights afterward the school-house was burned. It was just put up, and cost some $300 or $400.

*Question.* That was a free white school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a free white school. Our free schools were just going into operation.

*Question.* Did you understand what was the cause or motive for these outrages?

*Answer.* Only opposition to free schools, I suppose.

*Question.* Do you know, or have you heard, of any colored school-houses or churches being burned?

*Answer.* Well, there has been a church burned up here a few nights ago; but whether it was accidental, or whether the people burned it up, I can't say. It was a colored church.

*Question.* In what county was it?

*Answer.* It was about two miles from Brooksville.

*Question.* You know nothing about the circumstances?

*Answer.* Nothing in the world, sir.

*Question.* Has there been, and is there at this time, any opposition on the part of the white people of this county, or any portion of them, to the establishment of colored schools, and the education of colored people?

*Answer.* I do not think there is any very great opposition. The law favored it. I think the people are opposed to it, but I do not think they are in favor of any violence against it; there may be some few, but I do not think the mass of the white people are opposed to it; many are opposed to it who would not, of course, use any violence against it.

*Question.* Do you know, or have you heard, of any influence being exerted to deter colored men who would vote the radical ticket from attending the polls, or to induce them to vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* I do not know that I do.

*Question.* Have you heard anything upon that subject?

*Answer.* I think not; if I have I have forgot it.

*Question.* To what cause do you ascribe the scourgings and murders of colored men in this community?

*Answer.* Well, sir, that is a very difficult matter for me to answer, for really I do not know what cause there may be to scourge them, to murder them, and to assassinate them. I could not say, really, what is the cause or the wish on the part of these people who do it.

*Question.* Have your courts been able to punish these offenses committed by bands of men in disguise?

*Answer.* It has been very difficult to find true bills against them.

*Question.* From what cause does that difficulty arise?

*Answer.* I could not say, as I have never been on the grand jury, only I have been informed that it is difficult to find true bills.

*Question.* In point of fact, have you known, or heard of, any white men being punished for any offenses commenced against negroes by men in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not know of one.

*Question.* What effect have these various whippings and murders inflicted upon the colored people had in alarming the colored people—making them feel insecure and dissatisfied?

*Answer.* Well, here is the result. Now, in these communities where the negroes have been visited, and where some of them have been whipped and threatened, they usually have left the neighborhood, and gone off where they think there is greater security. In the neighborhood a great deal of the lands are lying waste and unoccupied.

*Question.* What effect have these disturbances produced in depreciating the value of your land in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* I think it has affected it more or less. To what extent I am not prepared to say.

*Question.* I heard the sheriff this noon crying a body of land at $1 an acre, at which price it was subsequently sold by him, lying in the northwestern part of this county. Is it common that real estate is sold at such a sacrifice at forced sales here?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, it is very common for land to be sold at from 50 cents to $5 when it comes to the block.

*Question.* What were such lands worth before the war?

*Answer.* I am not prepared to say what sort of land this was that was sold, but you

may take the best land in the prairie here, which was worth from $40 to $60, and put it up to-morrow to be sold, and it would not bring $8 an acre, or not exceeding $10.

*Question.* To what cause do you ascribe this great depreciation?

*Answer.* I can't ascribe it to any other cause than want of security and quietude in the country.

*Question.* Do you think that is the reason why emigration is not flowing in here freely and taking up your land?

*Answer.* I think so; that is my impression.

*Question.* These lands, with proper culture, would be as productive now as they were before the war?

*Answer.* Yes.

*Question.* And these prairie lands, before the war, you say were intrinsically worth from $40 to $60 an acre?

*Answer.* Yes, the best land sold for from $40 to $60 an acre; some come down much lower.

*Question.* Are many transfers in real estate being made in this county?

*Answer.* No, sir; not many; the fact is nobody here is able to buy, and everybody wants to sell, and, there being no capitalists coming into the country, there are no sales made.

*Question.* What efforts are being made to induce capitalists to come into the country to settle?

*Answer.* I know of no inducements at all; nothing at all held out.

*Question.* Do you think that northern men who would come here and settle *bona fide*, and bring capital with them, would be received upon terms of social equality, and would be treated with friendship and cordiality by the old white residents of the county?

*Answer.* That is a difficult question. Now there is a great many of our citizens have a prejudice against the Yankee, or against the northern man, but after he settles here, and does not meddle with politics, I believe that after a while he commonly settles down and he gets on very well with the people.

*Question.* Does that suppose that he agrees with the prevailing political sentiment here?

*Answer.* Well, if he is quiet, and has but little to do with politics, he can get along very well; if he meddles much with politics he has mighty little friendship meted out to him.

*Question.* What would be the case if he were openly to proclaim his political sentiments, if he were a republican, and strove to advance the success of the republican party, or do you mean that he would be socially ostracised for that cause?

*Answer.* To some extent he would.

*Question.* How are the colored people behaving themselves in this county?

*Answer.* As a general thing I think they are behaving themselves probably as well as in any county in the State.

*Question.* Is there generally a state of harmony between them and the white people?

*Answer.* Well, I think so.

*Question.* Does there remain, in your opinion, any prejudice among the whites against colored suffrage, or have they become thoroughly reconciled to it?

*Answer.* I think, to a great extent, they have become reconciled to it.

*Question.* Do you know or have you heard of cases where the owners of land have sought by undue influence to induce their colored tenants, or those who work their land upon shares, to vote the democratic ticket?

*Answer.* None. I have no case.

*Question.* What, in your judgment, is the cure for these disturbances of which you have spoken? I mean those disturbances created by men in disguise prowling through the country, whipping and murdering inoffensive negroes?

*Answer.* Well, that is a thing I have studied a good deal about, as to what would correct it. Now, a law, unless it is sustained by public opinion, would be very badly executed. I think often if the people would meet together and denounce these Ku-Klux associations and these murders, &c., &c., it would have a mighty good effect upon them.

*Question.* Have the whites never done that in this county?

*Answer.* No, sir, not that I know of. The republicans, you see, do not think it would be proper for them to do it; that it would have no good effect.

*Question.* And the democrats have never initiated any such movement?

*Answer.* No, sir. I have spoken to several of them in reference to the propriety of it, but they have never done anything.

*Question.* What do they say?

*Answer.* They say these outrages are very wrong, but they do not want to incur the displeasure of the Ku-Klux, and I say no more.

*Question.* Then they believe in the existence of this Ku-Klux Klan and fear their vengeance in case they take any movement against it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it the belief that it is a wide-spread organization, so that you never know upon whose toes you are treading when you denounce them?

*Answer.* No; I think not. I think perhaps there are only one or two organizations in the county, and those are out in the sparsely settled portions of the county, where they hardly ever owned a negro. That is my idea; in another portion of the county, where parties owned a few negroes, I think probably there is some sentiment in that direction, but I can't say. But going in the southeastern portion of the county here, where the bulk of the negro population is, and every man that owned slaves is interested in keeping his negroes at home and his plantation stocked with laborers, there has been no organization of the kind that I know of. Those that have come among them were from a distance.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that if the democratic party were to resolutely set their faces against these outrages and determine to put them down they would cease?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe they would cease.

*Question.* Have you sought to impress your views upon the democrats?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have only spoken to one or two of them.

*Question.* The proposition did not seem to meet with much favor?

*Answer.* No, sir; they seemed to think there was no use in attempting it; that "maybe we might be visited ourselves, and we had better let it alone."

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* How is the taxation here as compared with what it formerly was?

*Answer.* Previous to the war the tax on land was three-eighths of one per cent. I think during slavery, and now it is half of one per cent.; it was last year; the present tax is forty cents on the hundred dollars—four mills on the dollar.

*Question.* Is the total amount of taxation levied in the county larger than it was during the war?

*Answer.* I really, general, did not live in the county. I came in about the time of the war. I do not remember what the taxation was, or what amount was gathered. I do not know that there was a great deal of difference between then and now. The tax on land is not very much different, because land then was worth from twenty-five to fifty dollars an acre, and they paid three-eighths of one per cent. Now the land is put in at an average of seven dollars and a half for the whole county over, and the last tax levied was half of one per cent. The tax is not very different.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the general valuation before the war?

*Answer.* I really do not know what the general valuation was; but it ranged from twenty-five to sixty dollars. I know what the present valuation or the last assessment was, because I took the books and saw what the general average was through the county.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are there not other subjects of taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; mules and horses, &c.

*Question.* Everything of that kind is subject to taxation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They were not subject to taxation prior to the war?

*Answer.* They were not.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that the heavy taxation has some effect in depreciating the land?

*Answer.* No, sir; I don't think it affects the price of land.

*Question.* Is not the school tax in addition?

*Answer.* Half per cent.; certainly.

*Question.* How much is it?

*Answer.* Our tax this year amounts to one and nearly three-quarters of one per cent.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* That is your entire tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; county, school, State, and all—one and three-fourths of one per cent.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was it prior to the war?

*Answer.* I don't know what the whole tax was, State and county. We had no free-school tax at all, and we had no poor-houses, and now we have built a poor-house, and we built a new jail at $15,000, which made our tax last year much heavier.

*Question.* Did that jail cost $15,000?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was it worth to build it?

*Answer.* The cost was something near that. It was built at a season of the year at

which material cost more. It was in October the contract was made, and it was very difficult to get materials brought up the road. The iron-work, cages, &c., cost about $3,000.

*Question.* Was it built by contract?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How do you know the actual cost, then?

*Answer.* I was on the board of supervisors at the time, and afterward the party that contracted did not have the money to build it, and I bought him out and paid him $750 and took half of the contract and helped build the jail. It is payable in county warrants, and those warrants were at a heavy depreciation, and it had to be built entirely out of money.

*Question* Did you hear of this killing of a white man at a negro meeting in an adjoining county a few days ago?

The WITNESS. Below here?

Mr. BLAIR. Yes, sir.

The WITNESS. I only heard of it to-day as I came up from Shuqualak.

*Question.* What did you hear of it?

*Answer.* I heard that he was shot.

*Question.* What for?

*Answer.* That he was shot, I believe, for intermeddling with some negroes that he had gone and bothered. I got it from the negroes to-day that rode on with me, bringing some bed-clothes up to a negro in jail. I asked them where they were going with those bed-clothes. They told me they were going to friends or relations of theirs in jail. I asked what they were in jail for. They told me they were charged with shooting this white man down there.

*Question.* Was that the white man that was shot at a public meeting?

The WITNESS. At Scooba?

Mr. BLAIR. Yes.

The WITNESS. No, sir. This took place at Wahalak, in this county.

*Question.* What did the intermeddling amount to? You say the negroes shot him because he intermeddled with them?

*Answer.* This negro did not tell me that these negroes that were arrested really shot him; only that they had been charged with it, and that the magistrate had committed them upon the evidence before him; that they knew nothing about it, though. They said, "He has come frequently on where we live, and has meddled with our stock, and has come there, and," says he, "he has abused my wife."

*Question.* In what way?

*Answer.* I never asked him. I met up with a friend of mine, and the negroes rode on, and the conversation stopped right there.

*Question.* Did you hear the name of the white man?

*Answer.* No, sir; they rode on to the jail, and I stopped with a friend.

*Question.* There was a meeting the other day at a small town in Lowndes County where another white man was killed by a negro?

*Answer.* I have heard of that.

*Question.* What did you hear about that?

*Answer.* I heard, general, several conflicting statements in reference to it. I heard that Mr. Lewis had gone there with a gentleman by the name of Bliss; that he, perhaps, was speaking or giving some explanations; I think he was speaking; a white man walked up and asked him if he was a white man or a negro; and that a gun went off, or a pistol, just at that time, and the white man broke to get out of the crowd, and Lewis remarked, "Kill him," and they shot at him. That is what I heard. And then I heard that this white man pulled a pistol and shot at Lewis. I do not know anything about it at all.

*Question.* They killed him, did they?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many balls did he have in him?

*Answer.* I never heard how many; only that he was killed.

*Question.* That was at Artesia?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the name of the white man killed?

*Answer.* I do not know what his name was.

*Question.* It was Lewis that cried out, "Shoot him?"

*Answer.* So I heard it, sir.

*Question.* Who is Lewis?

*Answer.* Lewis is the republican candidate for sheriff in Lowndes County.

*Question.* Did you say you were a candidate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* On what ticket are you a candidate?

*Answer.* Republican ticket.

*Question.* Do you not know that Sam Coger is now alive?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know him. I heard that he was killed. I do not know that he was killed or that he is alive; I only heard the statement of the fact that he was killed.

*Question.* Do you understand that this man Charles Wissler, who was killed here the other day, was under indictment for murder?

*Answer.* Yes; up here at Corinth.

*Question.* How did he murder the man?

*Answer.* I have heard different statements of how the thing occurred.

*Question.* Let us hear what you have heard about it.

*Answer.* Well, I heard it from Wissler himself once, and then I had it from persons at Corinth in going through there. I will state to you both. When Wissler came down I saw him on the street and asked him how it was that this man had been burned up, and he told me that he (Wissler) had some prisoners bringing down here to bond, and that he had a pistol in his side pocket, having on a summer coat or light coat, so that when he came to sit down in the chair it struck the corner of the chair and turned his pocket up, and the pistol fell out on the floor. That he took the lamp that set on the table and picked it up, and looked on the floor and picked his pistol up; and when he went to put the lamp back on the table, as he raised with the lamp, which was a tall-topped lamp, this man reached over to get some butter or something in front of him. He was on his right, and having his pistol, and not noticing any arm as he raised it up, the man pulled his arm in and jerked it in the direction of his lamp, and as he pushed it up it struck the corner of the table and broke in the man's lap. That is the history Wissler gave me himself.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was it a kerosene lamp?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a common kerosene lamp. As I went through I stopped several hours, and thought I would go and see Wissler, but was very busy. I spoke to several gentlemen there, and they told me that the testimony was that Wissler took the lamp to look for something on the floor and got it, whatever it was; that he then raised it up on the table and flourished it about, and threw it down in the man's lap. That is what they told me.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* They told you that that was the testimony?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; those are the statements from both sides.

*Question.* Was Wissler also under indictment for embezzlement of the public funds?

*Answer.* Wissler was a magistrate here, and at that time there were, I think, three or four indictments against him for small amounts which he had fined persons—ten, fifteen, or twenty dollars, and had not paid into the county treasury. I think there were three indictments against him.

*Question.* He was on bail, was he not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The lieutenant governor was his bondsman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Still exercising the functions of his various offices with these indictments pending against him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do not think after he came back he did any business. I think the business rather suspended; I don't think any more business came into his hands.

*Question.* Is it not the opinion that he was killed by somebody on account of this transaction of which you have spoken, killing this man Shipley?

*Answer.* I heard that stated, and then I have heard it stated otherwise. The presumption was that this party from Corinth must have come from Louisville, Kentucky, where this man Shipley, that was burned with the kerosine oil, had lived, but it was believed that the parties that murdered him did not come from there.

*Question.* Where were they supposed to have come from?

*Answer.* I am not prepared to say where, but the supposition is that they did not come more than forty or fifty miles, if that far.

*Question.* What was supposed to have been the motive for killing him?

*Answer.* Wissler has been very active in ferreting out this Ku-Klux organization or in prosecuting them, and the presumption is that the object in killing him was that he might not be a witness against them, or something of the sort. I do not know except from what I have talked with other people. I had but little to do with Wissler myself.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that he had a feud with his wife's family?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I heard that his wife's family and him, probably, did not get along very well.

*Question.* Where did his wife's family live?

*Answer.* Part of them lived in this county, and, I think, part of them lived in Winston.

*Question.* Is not the opposition to the schools here entirely on account of the taxation, where there is any opposition existing?

*Answer.* Well, to some extent it grows out of the taxation. You cannot run schools without a levy, and to some extent it is attributable to the taxation laid on the people to raise the funds, and then again, some really think the negroes should not be educated.

*Question.* Your school-law gives you a school-board in each county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That school-board is authorized to assess the taxes.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the school-board assesses such a per cent. They cannot go beyond a certain per cent.

*Question.* What per cent. is it that they cannot go beyond?

*Answer.* They cannot go beyond one per cent. The whole school-tax for educational purposes and for building school-houses cannot exceed one per cent.

*Question.* This is considered oppressive in the present condition of the country?

*Answer.* Well, many, I think, conceived it to be oppressive, yet, at the same time, a great many, take the mass of the people, and they consider any tax oppressive.

*Question.* I mean under the present depressed condition of everything in the county.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; take the condition of the country, it is a pretty heavy tax. In fact, I think this much: I am in favor of our free-school system, but I think our free-school system extends too far. I think that six months is long enough in the year, instead of twelve. The tax is too much; too heavy. The people cannot afford to be taxed to run them twelve months in the year.

*Question.* In this county, with a great negro population, the entire tax, or very nearly the entire tax, is levied upon the land, is it not?

*Answer.* No, land pays such a per cent. It paid last year, for school purposes or educational purposes, five mills, and then the tax on privileges to retail spirituous liquors in this county was about $5,000, and the poll-tax in this county realized about $3,000, and then the funds in the county, I am not prepared to say what it is. I think, the sources of revenue, outside of land in the county, amounts to probably eight to ten thousand dollars.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Does the poll-tax in this State go exclusively for educational purposes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. By the constitution it cannot go otherwise.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Is it collected?

*Answer.* I do not think that more than 33⅓ per cent. of the poll-tax is collected.

*Question.* How many voters have you in this county?

*Answer.* The registration is 4,500.

*Question.* Then the poll-tax ought to amount to about $4,500.

*Answer.* It ought to amount to about $9,000. The poll-tax is $2.

*Question.* How much is raised from it?

*Answer.* I was not on the board this season. I know the insolvent list was about $5,000, and, I think, the amount collected was between three and four thousand.

*Question.* Nearly the entire tax comes from the white people?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the great bulk of it comes from the white people.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do not a great many negroes own mules, hogs, and cattle?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but $300 worth of property is exempt; so they pay comparatively little tax.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Hardly any of them have more than $300 worth of property?

*Answer.* Not many of them; very few.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Some of them own land, do they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them, but not a great many of them. There are some in the county that are worth five, or six, or seven thousand dollars. Some are doing very well.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* If these outrages of which you have spoken have been the reason for the depreciation of the land, is it not fair to presume that the land-holders are not engaged in them?

*Answer.* My idea is this in reference to these Ku-Klux. I think the better portions of our community, the good classes of our community, have nothing to do with it. They are, as a general thing, done by a class of people who never owned a negro, and who

are now violently opposed to negro suffrage and negro labor. They hate the negroes, and despise them. But people who have owned negroes, and have had to do with them all their lives, have little or no trouble with them, and generally they are the kindest to them, and have less trouble with them. It is the class of poor people that really are down on the negro.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Before the war it was not uncommon for the owners of slaves to have their slaves disciplined when impudent or lazy by having them whipped?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* The slave-holders, therefore, were familiar with the idea of scourging the negroes?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir.

*Question.* For offenses or for shirking?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were in the habit of correcting them.

*Question.* It would not be very unreasonable, then, to suppose that they would not see any very great harm now in the whipping of negroes where they deserved it?

*Answer.* Well, I do not know. I do not think that the masses of our people are in favor of whipping the negro, or of his being abused in that way.

*Question.* Do they not still consider it an offense in the negro if he does not take off his hat when he passes?

*Answer.* No. A great many negroes will take off the hat and call you master now, but that thing is pretty much played out. No, no.

*Question.* How are the sons of the old owners of the soil and those who owned slaves employing themselves since the war; in what kind of employment, as a general thing, are the young men of the country engaged whose fathers were slave-holders?

*Answer.* Well, that is a difficult matter. Now, some of them have gone energetically and industriously to work, and another class of them come to town and sit around the groceries, really engaging and embarking in no business. But the great body of them, I think, have become reconciled to the state of things, and they see that their prosperity depends upon their exertions, and they are coming to realize the situation and to go to work. Work, at one time, you know, was looked upon as rather a disgrace. Now, that thing is passing away, and it is no harm to see a white man drive his own wagon.

*Question.* They cultivate the soil also?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are the young men generally doing that?

*Answer.* Well, the masses of them, I think, have gone to work. Yet there are some cases where young men are not at work; not doing as they ought to do.

*Question.* Spending their time in loafing, drinking, and swaggering?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is so. If they would go to work, you know, and encourage the negro, and lead him on, and be kind and clever to him, it is a very easy matter to lead the negroes.

*Question.* The negroes are the most docile people in the world, are they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are a much better people than they have credit for. I have bought and sold hundreds of them.

*Question.* Kindness will do almost anything with them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there is no telling what you can do with a negro. I traded with them, even to the surrender. I bought hundreds and hundreds of them. I traded in them.

*Question.* Is it the habit of the young men of the country to go armed?

*Answer.* It has been, but I think few go armed now; some exceptions, but I think, as a general thing, that that has passed out.

*Question.* How are their habits as to drinking?

*Answer.* There is not a great deal of dissipation, yet there are some of them that drink.

*Question.* You were asked by General Blair in relation to the tax for State and county purposes. I will ask you to state whether the war did not leave your roads and bridges in a bad condition, requiring considerable expenditure of money for their repair?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. After the surrender I was not on the board, but I came to the president of the board in reference to building some bridges between my residence and plantation. He told me it was impossible to repair the bridges. Says he, "We ought now to build from twenty to twenty-five thousand dollars' worth of bridges, but the condition of the country is such we cannot build them."

*Question.* In point of fact, have you not built, since the war, an expensive iron bridge across the stream that runs through this town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; last year.

*Question.* That bridge must have cost four or five thousand dollars?

*Answer.* It cost about $6,630. I was one of the committee in reference to that bridge. We owe about $900 now to Barbarow & Co., of Louisville, on it.

*Question.* Have your taxes, so far as you are acquainted with the subject, been judiciously expended?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* And the affairs of the county economically administered?

*Answer.* I think so. I think the affairs of the county have been very well managed. The late board built a great many bridges, and then they built them low, comparatively. They built more bridges, I reckon, than ever we built in the county before—I suppose twenty bridges in the county.

*Question.* Were they needed?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; they cost little money; scarce more than before the war.

*Question.* Mostly wooden?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; mostly wooden bridges; only one iron bridge.

*Question.* You all feel that they are necessary for the public good?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It was necessary to have the jail, and while about it you meant to build a substantial one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The grand jury had condemned our old jail again, again, and again, and our judge charged that unless we built a new jail for taking care of prisoners, he would make it a matter of charging the grand jury against us, and we then went at it.

*Question.* Your court-house would require a considerable amount in order to complete it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; at least $6,000 to put it in good condition.

*Question.* Was it built before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, in 1860; but not completed.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Have you ever been to the northern country?

*Answer.* I have visited there only temporarily—probably being there a week or ten days—but I have not been in one of the Northern States.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that any of the young men there were loafing, idle, drinking fellows?

*Answer.* I suppose there are some idle men there as here, but I do not know about that. I suppose there are idle men everywhere.

*Question.* Are any of your county officers in default for the public moneys?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think there are none, unless it is our present sheriff, and I only state this from holding a good many warrants against the county and calling upon our treasurer to make payment, and he tells me there are about $14,000 due the county. He told me so to-day, and instructed the attorney to bring suit.

*Question.* By whom? By the sheriff?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The sheriff had collected this money and had not paid it over.

*Question.* He is an appointee of Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and his brother-in-law. We did our best not to get him. We sent men there to get another man. He is one of the Governor's own appointees, too.

Mr. BLAIR. The governor has an example set him at Washington.

The WITNESS. He has been a good sheriff, but he has not paid as he ought to.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Is his bond good?

*Answer.* I think his bond is good for the amount; at least clever men are on it, and, I think, good men, as good men as there are in the county. The grand jury looked after the bond and they considered it good. The last grand jury reported it was not good, but the first grand jury thought the bond sufficient. That question was presented.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The last one did not think it was good?

*Answer.* They did not, and required him to give a new bond.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* I understood you to say that you thought the substantial property men of the country have not been engaged in any way in any of these outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You think it is confined mostly to men who do not own real estate?

*Answer.* That is my idea.

*Question.* Do you not think if the property men of the country, those interested in real estate, and the labor of the country, were to combine, they could put down those outrages if they should set their faces against them?

*Answer.* I think so. I think if the property owners of the county were to assemble and give public notice that they would hold a public meeting at the court-house, at such a day, and they were to denounce those outrages, that they would cease. I always thought so.

*Question.* You think they might create a public opinion which would suppress all these outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I always thought so, and think so yet.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 6, 1871.

LYDIA ANDERSON (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* I live here now. I have been living between Winston and Noxubee, in the edge of Noxubee, about three miles above Mushulaville.

*Question.* What induced you to come here?

*Answer.* Well, I don't know whether they threatened my life or not, but I was told I had better go to Macon, and I did so.

*Question.* Had you been threatened?

*Answer.* No, sir; only in this way.

*Question.* Had you ever been whipped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* When were you whipped?

*Answer.* It has been about five months, as well as I can recollect.

*Question.* Where were you living when you were whipped?

*Answer.* At Massa Anderson's; Killes (Achilles) Anderson.

*Question.* Who whipped you?

*Answer.* It is what they call the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* At night?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it in your own house?

*Answer.* They took me out of my bed—out of my house.

*Question.* How many men were concerned in it?

*Answer.* There was four.

*Question.* Had they disguises on?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they all wore dresses.

*Question.* Had gowns on?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all had gowns on, and one of them had a sheet over him.

*Question.* Was there anything over their faces?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they had horns here and here, at the corners of the head, [illustrating.]

*Question.* So you could not see the faces at all?

*Answer.* No, sir; I couldn't see the faces.

*Question.* Did they come to your house on foot or on horseback?

*Answer.* On horses.

*Question.* Did they have any pistols or guns?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they had pistols.

*Question.* Was anybody in the house with you at the time?

*Answer.* No, sir; not then. My daughter was staying at the house, and she was at the washing-place washing, and she spied them, but she didn't tell me. She thought she would go and wake up sister. She brought her the news and went back to her—and went back after her soap. She saw them coming and went into her sister's house. She says, "I believe them nasty things is about here. Where's mother?" She said, "Mother is asleep," so she goes into her sister's house. She wasn't there no time before they came tearing through the yard as hard as they could stave, right up to my son-in-law's house door.

*Question.* Were you living with your son-in-law?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He jumped up in his sleep and says, "What's the matter?" She says, "There's the Ku-Klux." As she said that he opened the door, and Fuller—that's my son-in-law's name—said he, "Yes, sir." He said, "Is Aunt Liddy here?" Fuller says, "Yes, sir." He said, "Where is she?" Fuller said, "In her own house." Said he, "Is she asleep?" "Yes, I expect she has gone to bed." "Tell her to come out; we want to see her; we just want to ask her some questions; we are not going to hurt a hair of her head." As quick as I stepped out, as soon as I put my foot on the step, he says, "March to them woods there, or I'll blow your God damned brains out." That scared my son-in-law, and he run to the house and waked up my young master, and he asked him what was the matter, and he told him the Ku-Klux was there. He said, "Fuller, did you know them?" He says, "No, I didn't." "Well," says he, "I can't do nothing."

*Question.* That was what your young master said?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He couldn't do nothing; if the boy could he would. I raised him; I nursed him and fed him, and he thought as much of me almost as he did of his mother; but they took me out there and whipped me.

*Question.* How long did they whip you?

*Answer.* They didn't whip me very long. It has been about five months since they whipped me. I staid there two weeks, and it has been four months and two weeks since I have been here; that makes five months. I was living at the factory last Christmas. My son-in-law said, "Mother, you have worked and hired long enough without pay, and I am able to take you in my own house and take care of you." After I went there—old Mr. Richards is about a mile below—and I went to work with Mrs. Richards; I hired to her. Mrs. Richards says, "Why not stay with me?" I said I would just as quick as any other. She says, "I just want such an old woman as you to help me about cooking and milking;" and I said I would stay with the old lady. She said it would not be hard, and I was there a week. She wanted to go up to Choctaw to see her children, and she said, "Now, if I go away, will you take care of my things good?" I said, "Yes, I would." My old master had recommended me for a good hand; he had raised me from a little thing. She said, "I want to go to see my children, I have been gone so long, and if you will stay here and take care of my things I will give you a good present when I get back." The old creature started Monday morning, and then Monday night and Tuesday morning her husband commenced some of his talk. I didn't understand him. He says, "The witches rode me last night." I says, "I have heard of witches riding folks, but they never have rode me." I didn't know what he meant. He says, "You ought to come in and keep me company." Says I, "I am not afraid of staying around there." He says, "The old lady told you to take good care of me." I says, "I am going to cook your victuals and make your bed and take care of you." He kept talking that way, and finally I found out what he was talking about, and I said, "No, sir; my old master raised me like his own child; that's one thing that they never accused me of, and never shall, and that's not my disposition." In that week my daughter came there; she wanted to live there; the foolish child wants always to stay with me. I says, "Child, you may stay if they hire you," and says I, "Mrs. Richards, my daughter is come, and if you would like a house-girl she will stay with you." She says, "If she will stay on the same terms as you do I will take her." I had a baby girl about so high, [illustrating,] and when she came he dropped off with me and flies to this young girl, young woman grown. She is the one I was telling you of was there, and this little girl told me what her sister said this old man said to her. I never let on; I said if he became too free she will tell me after a while. I made no fuss. On Friday morning he was coming down here, last court, and they thought I was gone out milking, but I stopped behind the chimney, and I heard him say, "What do you want me to fetch you from Macon?" She said, "Nothing; I don't want nothing you have got." She says, "If I did such a thing as that that you want, she would beat me nearly to death." Says he, "O, your mother wont know it." She says, "Yes, she will; my mother don't allow no such bother, nor any of the other girls to do it, and I am right to mind my mother." He went off and he told me then he wanted me to make the children do it, and I made them do it, and Friday evening my young master came up. My old master was to have a dinner with the neighbors, and he sent his son to ask, "Where is old Mr. Richards?" and I says, "He went to Macon to-day." He says, "Tell him to come up to dinner, and ma wants you to come, for you have always been ma's cook." I said I would come, and when night come I told him about it; when he came home. He never said nothing, and so my daughter, Saturday morning, says, "Ma, are you going to the dinner?" I says, "I don't know; I promised the old lady I would stay and take care of her things until she comes back. If you want to go I will stay here." She says, "I want to go." I says, "Now don't you think because you are free you can go off. You go and ask the old man, no odds if you are free; you ask him if you can go." She went and done it. He said, "No; you were gone to dinner last Saturday, and I hired you to work." She says, "Mr. Richards, I have done all you told me." He says, "You go to work." Well, there was not a thing to do. Says I, "Martha, you sweep these weeds around here." She says after a while to him, "I know the reason you want to keep me from going; I wont let you keep me." He says, "You hush." I was in the kitchen and heard it. I says, "You tell me right here what that was, or I'll knock you down," and she told me and I went and set down on the doorstep, and he jumped up and went off and came back with a great hickory stick, as big as your thumb. She was at the gate sweeping, and he came in and drawed down on Martha three times. She run back, and I stepped up and asked, "What's the matter?" She said, "Mr. Richards is whipping me." I says, "Mr. Richards, what's the matter? Didn't I tell you when them children come here, if they didn't mind you, all you had to do was to tell me and I would make them mind you? What are you whipping her for?" He says, "I'll whip her again." Says I to her, "Martha, get your things and go." He says, "She had better go." Says I, "She is a woman, and I'm going too. I told you that if my children didn't mind you, you should come to me and tell me, and I would make them mind, and now what are you

whipping that girl for? You think I don't know, but I do know. She shan't stay and I shan't stay." There was a black man living on the plantation; he moved down on that same place. I went back up to the owner of the factory; his wife had never wanted me to leave; I cooked until I tired myself down; I said I would rest myself awhile; she asked me to come there again awhile; the woman sent her husband after me and I went up next day. This black man told my son-in-law, and told me, that they had been trying to catch me ever since I had been going back and forward; that's what made me know who they were, and I could tell them by the voices, because it was nobody else but them.

*Question.* You say there were four who were concerned in whipping you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but only one whipped, but he whipped me enough for all.

*Question.* How many licks did they strike you?

*Answer.* Nine licks and cut my skin, and the marks is on my back.

*Question.* What did they say it was for?

*Answer.* They said I talked of the Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Did you know that man?

*Answer.* No, sir; he said I did; he jabbed a pistol at me and said, "God damn you, do you know me?"

*Question.* Who do you think these men were?

*Answer.* Old master's sons.

*Question.* The sons of old man Richards?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I will say it until I die; they were his sons; they were the ones the black man told my son-in law were trying to catch me ever since I was gone to the factory.

*Question.* Has anybody ever been taken up for this whipping?

*Answer.* No, sir; not that I know of.

*Question.* Did you ever make any complaint to a justice of the peace?

*Answer.* No, sir; I was afraid to speak a word.

*Question.* Did they warn you not to tell of it?

*Answer.* No, sir; they told me, "Go on now, and I'll see you again in a few days, and I'll give you five hundred lashes the next time I see you."

*Question.* Did they tell you to leave the country?

*Answer.* No, sir; the water was up then and I couldn't cross, and that kept me as long as I did stay there; then I came away.

*Question.* Did you bring your daughters with you?

*Answer.* No, sir; I left my children behind. My big one came to me since I came; I don't know what they were after her for; she went to Summerville; she had to leave.

*Question.* Do you know of any other colored people being whipped in that region?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of anybody else being whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir, but Uncle Aleck Hughes.

*Question.* What about him?

*Answer.* They whipped him bad.

*Question.* Was he a colored man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a black man.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* They whipped him about two weeks after they catched me.

*Question.* Did he live in the settlement?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; right in Mushulaville.

*Question.* What was he whipped for?

*Answer.* I don't know what it was about.

*Question.* By the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* They said they were Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Have you heard of any colored people being killed by the Ku-Klux, anywhere?

*Answer.* I lived in about two miles of a man that was killed, but I didn't see him.

*Question.* Who was he?

*Answer.* Solomon Triplett, Jack Triplett's carriage-driver; I lived about two miles from him. There are two persons here that can tell more than I can about it.

*Question.* Was he said to have been killed by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; shot.

*Question.* Was that before or after you were whipped?

*Answer.* Before I was whipped. I lived at the factory when that was done.

*Question.* Was that after you left old Mr. Richards?

*Answer.* No, sir; before I went down there. I believe Solomon was the first one there—no, he was the next.

*Question.* Who was the other one?

*Answer.* Old Uncle George Murff; he was a preacher; he lived in Winston.

*Question.* When was he killed?

*Answer.* It was year before last he was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear that he was killed by Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; killed dead; they didn't know who else it was but them.
*Question.* What was he killed for?
*Answer.* I don't know; he was coming home from the field from work and was shot on the way.
*Question.* Do you know of any teachers of colored schools having been whipped or killed?
*Answer.* None but one; he was whipped.
*Question.* Who was he?
*Answer.* He was a colored preacher—Nathan Campbell.
*Question.* What was done with him?
*Answer.* They whipped him nearly to death.
*Question.* He was a colored teacher and preacher?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; both.
*Question.* Was he whipped by the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What for?
*Answer.* I don't know; I suppose that it was because he was teaching school; they said he shouldn't teach school and be a preacher. That's all I heard.
*Question.* Have you heard of any other colored people being either whipped or killed?
*Answer.* None but one killed lately here; that was—I forget his name—Pete Gregory.
*Question.* Where was he killed?
*Answer.* He lived right above Mushulaville three or four miles; that's been lately.
*Question.* Was he killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; killed dead.
*Question.* How long ago was it?
*Answer.* I forget; I don't think it has been more than a month; they came down here on that business.
*Question.* What was he killed for?
*Answer.* I can't tell; I only heard he was killed.
*Question.* Was he a preacher or a teacher?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Colored man?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Is there anybody else you have heard of as having been whipped or killed?
*Answer.* No, sir; no more than that I have heard of.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Who, here in Macon, knows about the killing of Sol. Triplett?
*Answer.* He lives at the depot; his name is Dave Triplett.
*Question.* A son of old man Triplett?
*Answer.* No, sir; and Elizabeth Coleman, she used to be; she is his wife.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was Elizabeth married to David?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Are they colored people?
*Answer.* They were there that night he was shot. He was shot down over them.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 7, 1871.

HAMPTON L. JARNAGIN sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN. As this witness has been summoned by the minority, General Blair will conduct his examination:

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where do you reside?
*Answer.* I reside in Macon, Mississippi.
*Question.* What is your occupation?
*Answer.* I am a lawyer by profession.
*Question.* How long have you resided here?
*Answer.* I came here in the spring of 1838, which would be about thirty-two or thirty-three years ago.
*Question.* State, if you please, the condition generally of the county and surrounding country in respect to the execution of the laws and the maintenance of peace.
*Answer.* Well, it is very difficult to say. There seems to have been—at least for the last two years—a great exertion on the part of the officers of the law to enforce the

law; I think as much so as in any country. There have been some outrages committed in the community within—well, going back ever since the surrender; but generally we enjoy quiet and peace here, except some sudden outbreaks.

*Question.* You have had a comparative state of peace and quiet, you say, but some outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To what general cause, in your judgment, are these outbreaks attributable to?

*Answer.* Well, sir, almost all the outbreaks that I have heard of—and I just learn from rumor—are some depredations committed by certain classes in the community, and other classes attempting to rectify the conduct of the negro class. There have been some outrages of that sort.

*Question.* In reference to the state of affairs here, I would like to ask the question whether the farmers in this country raise as much stock as they did in former years?

*Answer.* No, sir. That is a general complaint—the difficulty of raising stock, and that has created a great deal of bad feeling in the community. Our courts are filled with prosecutions of larceny by the negro class.

*Question.* As a general thing, have the farmers and planters given up the business of raising stock?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think with those I have conversed that seemed to be the general understanding, that they have abandoned the idea, almost, of raising hogs and cattle.

*Question.* By reason of depredations?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and from stock being destroyed. Our community is in a bad fix really in regard to the question of raising stock. That seems to be the great complaint, that farmers cannot raise stock.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything of the case of one Betsey Lucas?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have an indistinct recollection of a case of that sort. I recollect of being in the magistrate's court, and I think that was the case that was brought before the officer's court here, if I am not mistaken, and I think I am not. I was not engaged in the matter.

*Question.* State briefly what it was.

*Answer.* I think it was a whipping; was it not?

*Question.* Yes, sir; said to be a whipping of a woman named Betsey Lucas on the place of a man named Robert Jackson.

*Answer.* The rumor was here that Jackson was living with her in open, notorious adultery, to the scandal of the community, and they whipped him or her. I do not know which.

*Question.* Or both?

*Answer.* I think very likely they whipped Jackson and the girl both.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was she a colored woman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my understanding.

*Question.* Was Jackson a colored man?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was a white man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There are said to have been one or two other cases of the same kind. Connected with some of these was a man named Hinton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the Winston case. I knew very little about it; I heard the rumor. I understood these were cases in which they were living with colored women, and the object was to break it up in the neighborhood.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of a number of negroes on William Mays's place, in the bottom or swamp there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Where certain negroes were said to have been driven off?

*Answer.* It was reported here, and there was a good deal of talk about it, and my understanding of the history of the whole thing was this: that there were some negroes who had located in some swamp land down there; the number I do not know. They built them little houses there, and were living there and depredating on the surrounding neighbors, stealing cattle and hogs, and Mr. Mays and some other gentlemen went down there in the day-time as neighbors, and advised them to leave, to break up. They had no planting interest there at all, and just lived in the swamp, and were not farming or cultivating anything. They told them they must leave, probably peremptorily, whether at first or not I cannot say; but that was the rumor, that they advised them to leave, telling them to break up; and they took their wagons down there, and hauled them out of the swamp, and broke up their shanties.

*Question.* That was a gang of men?

*Answer.* That was just the neighbors there. There was no violence committed in that case that I heard of.

*Question.* How did you hear that?

*Answer.* I have heard it by men who lived in the neighborhood. Mr. Rives, my partner, has a farm up there adjoining it. I heard him speak of it and also Mr. Dismukes, who is a farmer up there.

*Question.* Do you believe this to be the correct statement of that case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my impression. I have never heard it contradicted; never heard a different version of it, and I heard it frequently spoken of by them at the time, and recently. Probably since this examination commenced I have heard several gentleman speak of it. Several gentlemen have asked me about it. I know nothing about it myself. I merely judge from what I have heard from these men that they said took an interest in it, that they were peaceable, quiet, good men.

*Question.* This was said to be by the same party that whipped Betsey Lucas?

*Answer.* I do not know whether it was or not.

*Question.* We have been told by Davis that the captain of that band was Doss?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do not know that Doss had any connection with the removal of these people out of the swamp. I heard that he had connection with the whipping affair up there. I have heard his name spoken of in connection with that.

*Question.* We have been told about the killing of Sam. Coger?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about that. Did the witness put the date of that thing? I might, if I knew the date fixed in the statement of the killing, form some opinion about it.

*Question.* It was said to be subsequent to the whipping of Betsey Lucas?

*Answer.* There was a boy, I understood, who was shot down. My brother-in-law is occupying a farm belonging to me up above here. There was a boy he had hired. Whether it was Sam. Coger or not I do not know, but I think likely it was. He was said to be a good boy, and he was shot by, I understood, two drunken men going from town. My brother-in-law, and others, I heard speak about it. Whether it was contradicted or not I cannot say, but the rumor is that some persons going from town and intoxicated killed that boy on the road. He was left there and found.

*Question.* Have you ever heard it stated that this Sam. Coger is still living?

*Answer.* If that is the man you are inquiring about that is not the one I am referring to, for this one is dead. Since you mention Sam. Coger, I believe that is the man that lives up near Brooksville, and it is said that he is living and can be produced to the committee. So I have heard recently.

*Question.* There has been a great deal of testimony about Sam. Coger and his death?

*Answer.* In speaking of the one killed near my plantation, I cannot say that I know his name now, but I am satisfied from what I have heard of Sam. Coger that that is not the case. There was a Sam. Coger and Sam. May said to be killed.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* On whose place did Sam. Coger live?

*Answer.* I do not know. I could have got the name of the boy killed near my place, but I do not know his name.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where was Sam. May killed?

*Answer.* He was killed above here on the road near a man named Cockerell's place, I think, but Sam. Coger is not the one I was describing that was killed near my brother-in-law's. He was not the same boy at all. That boy Sam. Coger was said to have been killed up near Brooksville.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You say it is said he is still living?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard it stated he is still alive, and from the authority of reliable men I have heard he was alive.

*Question.* We have an account of the killing of a man named Malone. Do you know anything of that?

*Answer.* Not a word.

*Question.* He was a colored man?

*Answer.* Not a word.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of Bully Jack at Shuqualak?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Will you state the circumstances?

*Answer.* The first arrest that was made in that case was of a negro man named John Hill, who was arrested, and I was employed in his defense before the committing court. He was a brother-in-law of Bully Jack. The testimony was that he and Bully Jack had had some little difficulty. That was the testimony of Bully Jack's wife; and from the testimony the boy was discharged, and, I thought, rightly. I do not think that John

Hill had anything to do with the killing of Bully Jack, from the testimony. They then arrested a man by the name of Glass, who lived in that neighborhood, but there was really no testimony against him at all. He proved, by several persons that were at his house that night, that he was at home during the whole night. There was no evidence against him at all, and he was discharged. I do not think that Glass had anything to do with it; but the rumor was that there were some men who came there to Bully Jack's house and called him out, and said there was some man out there with a wagon, who, I think, had broken down on the road, and they wanted Bully Jack to come out and assist them or assist him. I think there was only one man. He said his family was in the wagon, and that he was in distress. Bully Jack went, and shortly after they started and left there, some pistols or guns were heard firing, and Bully Jack was killed. There was no sign left there except a spur, which they had left where the boy was killed. That was all the trace that ever could be made of it. Exertion was made in every way by the officers to trace them out. It was the general rumor, and I believe it was done by a band of men who came from Alabama. The place was not very far from the line. It was believed that they had gone back into Alabama. Well, from the testimony that was developed, it was impossible to get upon any trace of them at all. Evidently, they were men upon horseback. There were signs of horses. That was the testimony.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was there any testimony as to their being disguised?

*Answer.* None at all. It was dark, and only one man went to call to the wife, and told Bully Jack to come out. She went out, and Bully Jack went off with them; and this old lady saw nothing more, but heard the pistols fired, and then went out and found her husband dead.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was there a man named Cy Jenkins attempted to be connected with it?

*Answer.* There was no evidence against him. He was a very law-abiding man—a man I have known ever since he was a boy. The reason his name became connected was from some conversation that got out. It was thought that these men had gone up and reported to the grand jury something about Cy Jenkins. Cy Jenkins asked the boy, and he said there was nothing in it. It had reached Cy Jenkins that the boy had reported him for something, but that was all arranged.

*Question.* The negro stated to Jenkins that he had not done it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and John Hill said that Jenkins was perfectly satisfied about it. They were on friendly terms—he and Jenkins.

*Question.* Did the woman profess to know any of the men?

*Answer.* I think she said that she did, and knew the voice of one of them, and that it was this man Glass. I think that was the case in which she said she thought she knew his voice, but would not be certain of it.

*Question.* The committing magistrate, before whom the hearing was had, was G. W. Campbell?

*Answer.* G. W. Campbell sat upon the case, and, I think, Shipman, and, probably, Wistler. I think they made three sit on that case.

*Question.* Did Campbell say he could put that spur on the man to whom it belonged?

*Answer.* No, sir; never that I heard of. I never heard anything of the kind developed in the testimony at all. I think, when he was first taken up, Campbell kept the spur, and it was said that probably this thing might be traced up to some person who had bought the spur, or perhaps it could be identified as belonging to somebody in the neighborhood; but it never was, so far as I know. The testimony was convincing to me that it was done by some three or four persons on horseback, and that there was no person in the neighborhood there that did it, that day, in regard to whom anything like even a reasonable suspicion could arise.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything of the whipping of Isham Lowry, at the same place—the Whitfield plantation?

*Answer.* That is above here. Bully Jack is down below here, in the southern part of the county, near Shuqualak. I never heard of that case at all.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* It was on a plantation occupied, at the time, I think, by Mr. Baldwin?

*Answer.* I know the place, but I never heard of that. Is that Lowry case a whipping case?

Mr. BLAIR. Yes; Isham Lowry is the party.

The WITNESS. I never heard of it.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* It was the same night that Dick Malone was killed.

*Answer.* I never heard of the Dick Malone matter at all.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything of the case of Ben Dailey?

*Answer.* No, sir; not a word.

*Question.* That was about the last of March, 1871. There were about half a dozen whippings, this man said. The most noted case was that of Aleck Hughes.

*Answer.* Aleck Hughes was up here near Mushulaville, in the western portion of the county or Noxubee, on the line between this and Winston, and I know nothing about that, and heard nothing about it, until the Federal court sat. There were a good many indictments found in the Federal court, and I am attorney in defending what is called the Ku-Klux cases. I think there were some fifteen or seventeen indictments found, some two or three of which were in this county, but most of them in Winston.

*Question.* Indictments for whipping?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There were three parties, I think, indicted for the whipping of Aleck Hughes. I have the indictments in my office, or copies. I think there were only three indicted for the whipping of Aleck Hughes. I never heard of it until I was employed in the case in the Federal court, after the bills were found.

*Question.* Upon what testimony were they indicted?

*Answer.* The district attorney refused to let me see the witnesses or let me know anything about it; consequently the gentlemen I represent cannot give me any information about it. They never had heard anything about it. They did not know any of the witnesses that were against them; they did not know anything about it, so they say, not when the whipping took place, nor anything else, and we are at an utter loss to know who is the witness; but I suppose this Aleck Hughes himself. I know Aleck Hughes was up at the Federal court; I met him there when the bills were found, and these three gentlemen I have asked in regard to it say that they know of nobody else who could have done so, and they think it is Hughes who did so.

*Question.* Is not that an unusual practice to withhold the names of the witnesses?

*Answer.* We regarded it so, sir. We regarded it there as a public inquisition. Our witnesses were put in jail, some of them, at least, the State witnesses in the Triplett case. A negro man told me he was put in jail there and kept in jail for some time. We could not get to see him at all. We applied to the district attorney for witnesses, but we never got a list of the witnesses. He refused to let us have them. I do not know a witness in any single case.

*Question.* Not in any of these cases?

*Answer.* Not one. I did not make application myself, but my associate, General Gohlson, did make the application, perhaps twice, for a list of the witnesses, which was refused us. I do not know precisely what is the usual practice in the Federal court. It is very unusual for our court here, and I supposed it was there; but we could not get hold of witnesses.

*Question.* Have you ever seen Hughes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear his story?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard him say a word. I do not know the boy. He came to me and spoke to me up at Oxford. I did not know him before. I suppose I had seen him about town here. He told me that he knew me very well; that his name was Aleck Hughes. I had no conversation with him about the difficulty at all.

*Question.* This man Davis says they gave him his choice of five hundred lashes or to be shot; that he has sued them for damages in the United States court; that he recognized one or two, recognized one by a horse he had sold to the party. That is Davis's testimony. It is said that he was impudent; five men whipped him and took his gun. He was not at his house when whipped. Do you know anything about a boy by the name of Bill Coleman?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* He says he was whipped up in Winston.

*Answer.* I reckon that was in Winston County; I know the Colemans live up there.

*Question.* Do you know anything of the killing of Johnson Keitt?

*Answer.* I never heard of it. That is in Winston County, I guess.

*Question.* Do you know anything of the case of Solomon Triplett?

*Answer.* That is in Winston. I know from rumor, merely, of the killing of Solomon Triplett, and J. Triplett is indicted in the Federal court, with some three or four others, and I am their counsel in the case.

*Question.* The cause assigned for killing Sol. Triplett was that he had taken his wife away from Triplett, to whom she had formerly belonged?

*Answer.* I never heard of that rumor about it at all. I have conversed with Triplett about it, and these other parties, and they profess to me to know nothing about it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* They are the defendants, the persons accused?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I could get nothing out of them about it. They profess to know nothing about it. This Solomon Triplett used to belong to A. J. Triplett. He was

shot, I think, at night, by some persons. That is all the information I could gather about it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There was a case in this county, in July last, of a man found dead in the Tombigbee River. His mother was Ellen Grayson.

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There is a long story connected with that. Captain H. A. Rice and C. W. Moore can tell you about it—Rice particularly. He was the magistrate down there and knows all about that transaction; I have heard his statement about it.

*Question.* Let us have his statement of it as well as you remember it.

*Answer.* His statement was about this, that he was a magistrate, and that complaint had been made to him that a certain boy—I forget his name. Do you know his name?

Mr. BLAIR. His name was not given by the witness.

The WITNESS. I do not remember the name, but the boy was a negro boy, and he was accused of stealing Moore's horse or mare—I think it was a horse—and he was arrested and carried before Mr. Rice, and acknowledged his guilt; that he did steal the horse. Rice then committed him to jail. His order was to commit him to jail unless he gave a certain bond for his appearance at court; I do not know the size of the bond. There was no constable, he said, in his beat, and he appointed a man by the name of Bridges to act as constable; he said it was late when they got through the evidence on Saturday evening, and Bridges took the boy home with him and put him in a little outhouse, or something of the kind, very near by, where he chained the boy and left him there until morning. When he got up in the morning his history of it—of course you all understand that is from rumor—when he got up in the morning he went to look for the boy, but he was not found; the chain, I think, was there with which he had chained him, and perhaps the lock, but the boy was gone. Well, then, a great disturbance was created in the neighborhood; a large number of colored people gathered together and went to Bridges's house, stating that they would know the facts; when they went there Bridges was apprehensive that they intended to attempt some harm from the manner in which they accosted him, and he attempted to escape and ran out. Several shots were fired after him. He ran off, and being near the Alabama line he went across. He did not return for some time. He sent for his wife and carried her out, and was careful of coming back into the neighborhood. They put two negroes with guns as guard over his wife that night, and they staid there until morning. They did not injure her in any way, but with their guns staid in the room where she was. There was nobody there but probably her and a little child or two; that is all I know in regard to that part of the difficulty. They then had these men who had made the attack on Bridges's house, or at Bridges's house, arrested and brought before Rice, and he bound over several of them; I do not know how many. They were brought here in default of giving bond, and were put in jail. At our circuit court indictments were found against them. I know the fact, for I am also counsel in several of these cases for the negroes, and have seen the indictments. Indictments were found against several of them; I do not know how many, but five or six; maybe more. Another collection of them was made a few days afterward, perhaps for the purpose of going to ferret this thing out in some way, in a very riotous manner, and the magistrate bound over I do not know how many of them, and they were put in jail; they were bailed out of jail, perhaps bailed by white men in the neighborhood who had them employed. There were no bills found against them; I know that, for I have been spoken to by nearly every one of these parties to defend them. They were discharged, as there was no violation of law.

*Question.* Was there a body found in the river?

*Answer.* So I understood. There was a body found up in a tree some little distance up where the water had been; that is a rumor. I have heard persons who saw it; they say it was then some little distance up the tree, on some brush or tree, where it was left; they found it soon after the occurrence. Those who investigated it stated it was not the body of this boy who had been arrested. The opinion of the physician, I was told, and of those who were there was, that the body had been dead at least a month; that some of his teeth were coming out; that it was a boy who, it was proven, so the rumor is, at the trial—was supposed to be a boy that had been lost during the high water there off of a steamboat; I speak now of this body that was found. I was informed that the clothing did not correspond with that of the boy arrested; that was stated by Captain Rice, that the boy he tried had on a different shirt.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have you not heard that the mother of the boy, Ellen Grayson, identified the body and the clothing?

*Answer.* I heard the rumor that she thought it was his. Bridges has been since arrested in Lowndes County, and I do not know what has become of the case since then. The mother was sent for to see if she could identify it. Yes, I understand the old lady thought it was him, from the clothing. I asked Captain Rice to-day, when

he was here, if it was the same, also some others, and he said no; the one was striped and the other was common white Lowell. The whole of this matter is very fresh in the mind of Captain Rice, and if he should be before the committee all the facts can be ascertained from him. He is a very clever, intelligent gentleman.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* A man was killed in Brooksville, in June, by men in disguise. Is that the man you refer to?

*Answer.* I expect that is the one I speak of.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I do not remember it. Have you the name?

Mr. BLAIR. I have not.

The WITNESS. If I heard it I might recollect it. My brother-in-law had him hired, and spoke of him as an inoffensive and excellent boy.

*Question.* How was he killed?

*Answer.* He was met on the road—the negroes here have canes or tubes, and can whistle with them, and it is supposed that they were drunken men, or boys rather; that he was just met in the road and shot down.

*Question.* Killed by drunken men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were not disguised at all.

*Question.* Was Wissler the coroner who sat on that case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was.

*Question.* Mr. Reed was on the jury?

*Answer.* I do not know. I think Reed was up there. I did not go. I heard Wissler speaking of it after he came back. There was no trace found of anybody.

*Question.* Who is this man Reed?

*Answer.* He is a gentleman that has been here for some years. He is a northern man. I do not know what State he is from. He came here since the war. When I first knew him he was in the express office at this place, acting as express agent for the Southern Express Company. That was the first time I ever knew him, and that has been some three or four years ago, or two or three years ago.

*Question.* What was his conduct in that office?

*Answer.* Well, sir, he was suspected of robbing the office of about $10,000. I was employed by the express company as the prosecuting attorney in the case, and Captain Rice, the same gentleman I spoke of before, was then acting here as magistrate. The case was tried before him.

*Question.* As committing magistrate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he was bound over in a bond of $10,000. He was unable to give that bond. He remained here for some length of time, in jail, and then sued out a writ of *habeas corpus* before Judge Foot, who was our circuit judge, and he did not diminish the bond. He confirmed the action of the magistrate, after an investigation.

*Question.* Was there also an investigation into the facts, on the writ of *habeas corpus*?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And testimony taken?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do not know whether the testimony was taken down before him, but the testimony before Captain Rice was taken down in full, and was very voluminous, too.

*Question.* What was the character of the testimony?

*Answer.* We were weeks at it. It was very plain to me, sir; a case of entering—he was the agent, and the evidence was very clear to my mind that the house was broken from the inside. There were no signs on the outside, and the safe was unlocked; the lock was not injured at all. There was a little powder burned down in front of it, and some little gun-screws, or something of the kind, were left as a sign in front of it. The lock on the safe was not injured at all, and left open. I considered the case very clear, myself. He was then indicted in our circuit court. There were two cases, however; one for taking a sewing-machine out of the express office. He was also bound over on that. At the circuit court indictments were found. He was then, by order of General Ord, taken to the military court at Columbus. I was there in attendance several days, perhaps a week or so. He was finally discharged—that is the way the case ended—by a court-martial.

*Question.* Taken forcibly from the jurisdiction of the civil court and turned over to a military court held at Columbus, and turned loose?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and nothing has been done with him since.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was the cause investigated by a court-martial?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; and went through with it I do not know how many days, but I was up there off and on for a month nearly.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* When did that occur?

*Answer.* I am so forgetful of dates that I can not tell, but it has been three years ago, I reckon.

*Question.* It was while the State was under provisional government, was it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think it occurred while General Ord was here, before General Gillem was here.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Eighteen hundred and sixty-seven?

*Answer.* I reckon it was about that time.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* On what grounds were the courts deprived of the jurisdiction in those cases?

*Answer.* I do not know. We put in a plea to the jurisdiction in that court. It did not amount to anything. There were just peremptory orders given, and a court-martial ordered.

*Question.* Was Reed acting in any military capacity that they should have assumed jurisdiction?

*Answer.* None in the world.

*Question.* Were the courts not open for the trial of all cases?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. We carried on the criminal courts, even during the war, regularly.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was he not an agent of the Freedmen's Bureau?

*Answer.* No, sir; he had no connection with it in the world. Unfortunately, the agent who travels up and down the road, or rather the superintendent, a man named Stevens, who was the main witness in the case, died just about the time the court was ordered, and we were deprived of his testimony. We had it down in full, and I attempted to introduce it as taken down before the magistrate, which the court refused to receive. They thus deprived us of the most important point, as Stevens had died.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Is testimony of the kind taken before a committing magistrate admissible in your criminal courts in case of the death of the witness?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; our courts go so far, general, under the ruling of the present judge, as to allow testimony which was taken before a committing court to be introduced orally, when it has not been taken down. They will swear any bystander to testify as to what a certain man swore, and I presume it would be permissible to introduce it where there has been a civil investigation before the magistrate, and where the party had an opportunity to cross-examine, and did cross-examine.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is it not a rule in your courts in Mississippi, that where the evidence of a deceased witness is sought to be given in evidence, the witness giving it must be able to testify *in hæc verba*, using the very language employed by the deceased witness?

*Answer.* We have no adjudication in reference to introducing it in our reports, as we have no reported cases.

*Question.* Is not that the common-law rule?

*Answer.* The common-law rule I understand to be that it must be as near the language as possible, but the court would permit it when the witness would say he is giving the precise substance, and as near the language as possible.

*Question.* Do you understand that to be the common-law rule?

*Answer.* I do.

*Question.* Is it not that he must testify *in hæc verba*, using the very language of the deceased witness?

*Answer.* I do not think the common law goes so far as that, because no man can do that.

*Question.* In the testimony taken before Squire Rice, was the exact language or all of the language taken down, or simply the substance?

*Answer.* I think Mr. Rice in that case attempted to take down the precise words as nearly as possible, because it was a very important case and the testimony very voluminous; and in the case of Stevens, particularly, we desired that everything should be taken down, and we made the witness speak slowly, so that the magistrate could take down the testimony as he gave it in.

*Question.* Did he write it down in the first person singular just as the witness spoke it?

*Answer.* I could not say whether he did or not.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* In the case of Yerger, for killing some man in Jackson, Mississippi——

The WITNESS. Crane?

Mr. BLAIR. Crane. He was tried, was he not, before a military commission?

*Answer.* That is my understanding of it, sir.

*Question.* Have your courts since decided that that trial was not a bar to the prosecution in a criminal court?

*Answer.* I am not aware that it has. What court do you mean—supreme court or circuit court?

*Question.* Your supreme court.

*Answer.* I do not think there has been any such decision.

*Question.* It has been decided, I have understood, by the supreme court?

*Answer.* If it has it has been done very recently.

*Question.* I believe it has been decided by the judges of the United States court here, because there is now pending an indictment against Yerger in one of these courts which was postponed at the last term.

*Answer.* There was an indictment for manslaughter found against him after he had been tried by a military court, and I understood the plea he put in was the former trial and jeopardy. What they did with that I do not know. It was before Circuit Judge Brand. That is the last I have heard of it.

*Question.* I understood from the United States district attorney that that was overruled, and he was held for trial?

*Answer.* That that plea they put in was overruled?

*Question.* Yes.

*Answer.* That is my understanding, but that that plea was overruled; but I have lost sight of it since then. I have heard that that plea was overruled.

*Question.* If that plea has been overruled, would it not be still admissible to try this man Reed?

*Answer.* I do not know. It looks to me like it would be. That is, if they decided that the trying him by a court of that character was not putting in jeopardy, and he could not plead *autre fois acquit*, or convicted, it seems he might be tried again.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Is that the decision of a *nisi prius* judge or the supreme court?

*Answer.* I understood there was no decision, but that the circuit judge had overruled the plea of a former trial. That was merely the circuit judge, and I have never heard anything more of it. What has become of the case I do not know.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you know anything of the killing of Wissler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was right in my neighborhood. His house was very close to me, perhaps two or three hundred yards off.

*Question.* What were the facts, as you are informed?

*Answer.* I think it was about an hour or two after night—probably about 8 o'clock—did not notice the time. I was sitting by my fireside, and I heard, I think, two guns almost immediately in succession. I got up and went to the door. I thought it a little strange, and I heard some children hallooing; then I thought it was mere boys' play, and presently I thought it was something serious, and I went down there. When I got there I found Mr. Wissler dead. Some two or three persons had got there before I did. He had evidently been shot. He was in the room, I understood, moving a bedstead—putting up a bedstead in that room, with two of his little step-children. He was evidently shot by, I think, a shot-gun, and from the outside through the window. Two or three panes of glass were broken. I think there were only three that had the appearance of being broken by the shot.

*Question.* Was anything known of the parties who murdered him?

*Answer.* Nothing at all. They have different ideas, I suppose, in regard to it. He was the same man who was in the difficulty at Corinth; who spilled the oil on a man, Shipley, that was burned up.

*Question.* You say this man Wissler was the same man who spilled the oil on Shipley?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; burned him up and robbed him. I was sitting within a very short distance when the man was burned; I was coming on from the Federal court. One of the theories was that Shipley's friend had followed him up and killed him after he was released. He was put in jail up there, and was bonded out by Lieutenant Colonel Powers.

*Question.* Lieutenant Governor Powers?

*Answer.* Lieutenant Governor Powers. He was taken out of jail, and after he had been at home some weeks, this occurred.

*Question.* What is the testimony in regard to the burning of that man up there at Corinth?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the testimony on that first occasion was this: he was arrested while I was there, immediately upon the burning—the next morning—and an exam-

mation was had before a committing magistrate, and he was discharged. He came on home, remained here some weeks or months, and going back through Corinth, he was arrested again, and was tried before a committing court, and was bound over in a bond of two thousand or twenty-five hundred dollars for his appearance. The history of it is this: that he sued out a writ of *habeas corpus* before Judge Davis, circuit judge, and I have seen the opinion of Judge Davis, printed, in justification of himself; he had the testimony and gave his opinion, and he raised his bond to $5,000 for his appearance. Wissler was then in jail for some little time. He was then bonded out by Lieutenant Governor Powers, and he came home, and had been here for some weeks. Everything seemed to be going on quietly and peaceably, until this occurrence.

*Question.* Are there any other theories?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the next theory is this: that there were three or four negro men who were indicted here for breaking into a silversmith's store, a man by the name of Lindfall. They stole a number of gold watches and some money out of the shop. Wissler was connected with the shop in some way with Lindfall, either as a partner or staying in there. I believe he claimed to be a partner. He was the only witness. I was retained by Mr. Wissler in the prosecution of these negroes. He was the only witness by whom to identify the watches and prove that the watches were lost; the only person by whom that fact could be established. At the last term of court, we would have been ready for the trial of the cause, but on account of the imprisonment of Mr. Wissler at Corinth, we were not able to have him here, and the district attorney asked for a continuance of the case, that he might get Mr. Wissler here, by whom he could identify the watches, or prove that the money was lost at all, or the watches were ever out of the shop. There are some persons who think that, as he was the only witness, that these negroes were perhaps interested in removing him. These are the only two theories I have heard spoken of at all.

*Question.* Was anybody seen on the night of this firing upon Wissler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was nobody there, excepting a negro boy, named Anderson Tyler. He says he was close by there, and he saw Dr. Buck come running right across, and that he run over into another yard from there, which Dr. Buck also tells himself that he did, to get a light to go into Wissler's house. This boy says he saw Dr. Buck run across the street, and this boy says he was near there. These are all the persons that I have heard that were there. It was thoroughly investigated here at the coroner's inquest. I do not know all of the testimony gotten out, but nothing to trace it up.

*Question.* Buck said he was there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he said he was going past there. Buck was very much intoxicated. He is a very quiet, peaceable sort of man, but he was intoxicated at the time. He was going past, but heard the firing and hallooing, and ran back to the gate of a negro woman's house opposite, to ask for a light, as something was the matter, and he wanted to get a light. A man named McClelland was coming at the time in the opposite direction. He says he heard the feet of a horse galloping the other way. He says it was so dark he could not see. He pushed himself up to the fence to let them pass, fearing they would run over him.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* A single horseman?

*Answer.* He said he heard but one. He could distinguish but one. There were two men, in the testimony, who came down on the cars the night before—I think just before 11 o'clock at night—from the direction of Corinth. The testimony showed that two men came down from that direction, and got off at this depot, which is about three-quarters of a mile from the town. We have hacks running up to bring up passengers. These men declined coming up, and knocked about the depot, and the hacks came off and left them there. They did not come. One of them had a little sack in his hand; the other had nothing that they could see; and the tavern-keeper says these two men were next day, about dinner-time, at his house, and one of them took dinner and the other did not take dinner. Nothing more was ever heard of them, that I learned, at least, and they have never been heard of since. The next morning after this occurrence they were not found in town at all. Whether they went off that night I cannot say. They were here not long before night and ate a tolerably late dinner. There were two men from the description. One of them took dinner and the other did not. They then walked on up street, and were never seen afterward.

*Question.* What time does the Corinth train reach here?

*Answer.* Just about 11 at night, and this was the evening before.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* And they never have been seen since?

*Answer.* No, sir; not at all. My partner says he saw them on the street walking about. I have heard several other gentlemen say they saw them during the day, but we have never heard of them since.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* That statement would rather go to discredit the theory that the negroes killed him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and my mind leans more to that theory than the other. I did not think anybody had the disposition to injure Mr. Wissler here. All opportunities had been had heretofore. He was a man who did not stand very high in the community here in any way.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He mingled freely around everywhere?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; everywhere just as any other citizen. It has sometimes been thought that some men might be killed here; but really I thought he would have been the last that would have been killed if it had been done by the Ku-Klux or any such band as that. I do not know why they would have killed him.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Have you ever heard that he received threats from parties in Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir; never in my life. He has a brother-in-law, the Triplett whom I am defending for the murder of this man—Solomon Triplett. I have talked freely with Winston men, gathering up information for their defense, and I have never heard a word said about Wissler.

*Question.* Did Wissler have anything to do with the arrest of Triplett or any of these parties in Winston?

*Answer.* Wissler told me he had not. He came on down at the time of this occurrence with Mr. Triplett, who is indicted, and all these parties. He was appointed a deputy to bring these parties down, by my request. Wissler was appointed in this way: We had tried the question whether they were entitled to bail, before Judge Hill. He decided that they were, and fixed the amount of the bail. These parties were there, and it would be very expensive to them to send home and get their bail. They could not give bail there, and I went into court, and got the judge to make an order directing the commissioner here, Mr. Dismukes, to take bail from these men. The district attorney objected to it at first, but said he would do it if I would indorse them as good bonds. I told him I did not like to do things of that sort; it was not my way of doing business; but I would state honestly whether I thought they were good or not. Under that state of things, the judge ordered them to be brought down, and Wissler, living here, was appointed to bring them down. It was not a formal thing. They came down and seemed all remarkably friendly, and there was no disturbance. We were delayed by the train in making connection, and were forced to stay all night at Corinth. That is the way this burning occurred; at least, we would have been at home; and I have been talking with these people up in that direction, and I have never heard them accuse Wissler as one of the witnesses. They say they do not know how he could be, as he had not lived in that region at the time.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Speaking of the burning, I did not ask you the evidence in regard to the burning. Will you please state it?

*Answer.* I cannot say, general, what the evidence was. I heard a good deal of it, and saw some of the transactions myself. The general impression there was—and some of the evidence tended to show it—that he had robbed this man of $500. Now, Shipley, just as he came running out of the door, was in a perfect blaze. General Gholson, Doctor Perkins, and myself were standing in the front door. I was leaning against a pillar looking into the dining-room, as near as three or four yards from the window. I was looking in, and the other two gentlemen sat with their backs toward it. I heard something rattle, and all at once the house was filled with the blaze. I observed to the gentlemen, "General, the house is on fire." We jumped up, and with that I saw a man come out of the door. It seemed that the oil was poured in his lap, and the coal-oil ran down into his boots or shoes, I suppose; at at any rate, into his lower extremities, and enveloped him perfectly in flame. As he came out of the door, I thought it was a bed which they were throwing out. Perkins ran to the water-tank right after him, and I after him. The man ran up to it; there was a trough in which they wash, and which holds basins; there was a water-tank similar to those on steamboats, and Perkins hallooed to him, "Run to the water-tank." He ran and threw himself just in that position in the gutter of the trough. It happened that the tank was nearly full of water, and Perkins took it, and threw it right into the trough; that extinguished all the flames except at his feet; I saw that they were still burning, and some threw water on them and extinguished that fire. I heard him say, "I have lost my money," or "I have lost $500;" that was the first remark. I could do him no good there. Some persons were around him. By that time a crowd had collected, so I went back, thinking I might find out something. Toward the door I saw some pieces of his pantaloons

and coat; some persons caught at it and jerked off pieces. He seemed to have thrown his hands out in this way, [illustrating,] and there were places burning all over the floor where he threw the oil; I could find them in that way all the way back. I do not know who did it. I did not see the gentlemen when they were sitting there together at all. Immediately the hue and cry was made that Wissler had done it. These men had started from the lower hotel to come up to the Scruggs House, at which it occurred, and they had gone off—these two, Shipley and Wissler—to a grocery, and were drinking there, and then came into the house, and the testimony was by several of them there that he turned this lamp over intentionally. They said they saw him wavering it several times, and at last he threw it over on him; that he and Wissler had been seen in conversation at the table, and Wissler said he had lost his pistol; and that he got up to look for it, and went behind the screen where the servants go with their dishes; that he came back and took a seat by Shipley, and mentioned again that he had lost his pistol, and got up and took the lamp and put it on the floor and looked around, and then picked it up and went to set it on the table again, and as he was setting it on the table again, Mr. Tucker, one of the witnesses, said he was satisfied that the man hit it on the edge of the table. He set it on the side of a saucer and it careened over. As to my own belief, I do not believe that the man intended to burn Shipley. People were very much exasperated there. I think probably if it had not been for some remark I made, or some other persons there, that they would have got hold of him and strung him up.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You think it was an accident?

*Answer.* I do; but the testimony was strongly the other way.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the testimony as to his having robbed Shipley?

*Answer.* There was no evidence of that, but they had been at a grocery drinking together, and he came back and acted strangely about getting up and hunting for his pistol and making these remarks. Then immediately upon the occurrence—I did not see him—they say he ran down the railroad, and went to the house where he was below.

*Question.* That Wissler did?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I did not see him at all after the man was on fire. The other persons, Mr. Tucker, a very reliable man, and Mr. Triplett, were there, but he had gone off just before, a little late at night. The first that raised any suspicion in my mind about it was, that some gentlemen in charge of these persons with him coming from Oxford, a young man, just as we were going to bed, came and said he wanted to know something about this thing; that Mr. Shipley had said this man was trying to rob him, and that in the scuffle the lamp was knocked over, and accidentally he had burned up the man. This is what Lewis—I think that is his name—said, and he came up to inquire about it. I had never dreamed about robbery by any particular persons before. I thought probably the man had dropped his pocket-book as he was running, and somebody had picked it up.

*Question.* From what you say about turning the kerosene into his lap, or throwing the lamp over against him, there must have been some persons in the room who saw it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; divers persons. The servant and chambermaid, and one or two white women serving, and the head woman of the concern. Her testimony was very strong against him. I got this from the testimony taken before Judge Davis. That was, that it was turned over and they thought intentionally. I did not see it, of course, but from the representations of Tucker and the others, I do not think the man intended it. He is a man of no nerve at all or of very little nerve.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Was Tucker there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* A friend of Shipley's?

*Answer.* He was one of the parties under arrest, and accused of the murder of Solomon Triplett.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* In charge of Wissler?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and all of them were down at the other hotel; not the one I was at. I was at the Scruggs Hotel, and Wissler and this man met together at the lower hotel, and seemed to become very intimate. It was said that this man was drinking pretty heavily.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Shipley?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Shipley.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* What; was Wissler drunk too?

*Answer.* No, sir; not when I saw him last. I do not think Wissler was a man that ever got under the influence of liquor.

*Question.* Tucker was the man that sat at the head of the table?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and Tucker said so. They said they would come up and take supper at the Scruggs House, and they invited him, (Tucker,) and when they started he came on, and he asked me when he reached there if Wissler had got there. I told him no. He said they had gone by another saloon to get some liquor.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Had Shipley at any time before that said anything to you about being robbed?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you not regard it as a very strong circumstance against the theory of intentional tipping the kerosene in his lap, that there were so many people present to see it done?

*Answer.* I could not see the policy of it anyway, burning a man up. If he wanted to rob him or had robbed him, he could have gone off without burning him.

*Question.* Was Wissler's person ever searched to ascertain whether Shipley's money was on him or not?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know. I never heard that it was. It was not while I was there. Wissler was very anxious to go on with these men. He came to me the next morning, and wanted me to stay and aid him, but I had to come on for my business. I told him there were as good and better counsel there as myself, and they could do him justice.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You heard the exclamation of Shipley that he had been robbed?

*Answer.* I heard him say "I have lost $500," or he said, "I have been robbed." There were so many right by me that I cannot tell. The idea was that he had been robbed. The man was burned very badly. His hands were cramped in this way, [illustrating.]

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How long did he live?

*Answer.* About twenty-four or twenty-eight hours.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did he make any further statement?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, he gave testimony.

*Question.* What was it?

*Answer.* He was firmly of opinion that this man had robbed him, and burned him on purpose. That was his idea.

*Question.* Where did he say he had robbed him and how?

*Answer.* I did not hear. It was all in a moment, and was a frightful scene any way. I retired immediately that I saw he had got aid. I went off to my room.

*Question.* Shipley's testimony was taken before his death?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* With the impression full upon him that he was about to die?

*Answer.* He had the full impression upon him that he was; that Wissler got his money and robbed him.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* The examining court, with this testimony before them, discharged Wissler?

*Answer.* I do not know what amount of testimony they had before them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* I understand that this was a dying declaration?

*Answer.* I saw them going into the room to take his declaration. He was dying. I suppose that was their object. It was just as I was getting on the cars. I saw the two magistrates go into Shipley's room, and I was informed they were going to get his testimony. I did not remain until the end of the examination.

*Question.* Who was Shipley?

*Answer.* He was a tobacconist, I think, traveling through the country.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Judge Davis reviewed all the testimony?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He was charged very heavily by the friends here of not doing the man justice, and everything of the sort, and he came out with his opinion and the testimony and he published it.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* What did he decide it to be?

*Answer.* He decided it, I believe, to be manslaughter.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was not that a most lame and impotent conclusion?

*Answer.* I thought it was a most lame conclusion. It would have been murder or accident.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Did he decide it on the ground of criminal negligence?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What did he say of the robbery?

*Answer.* I do not know. He said the party ought to be bound over, under the circumstances. The weight of his argument seemed to be, if it was not done intentionally, that there was great criminal negligence.

*Question.* Lieutenant Governor Powers then gave the bond?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so I was informed.

*Question.* What were his relations with Wissler?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir; he used to live in this county. He is acquainted with the family. I suppose he was appealed to by Wissler's family—his sister and mother. Nobody here seemed to take an interest in it. I was absent at the time—traveling up north during the summer, When I got to Corinth, I understood he had been bonded a few days before, by Governor Powers.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Is it regarded here as anything against a man to go on a bond when a man is entitled to bail?

*Answer.* People talked about it in this way: that Governor Powers would be governor in a short time, and that there would be no punishing this man Wissler any way if Governor Powers took him under his wing.

*Question.* But there was no general objection to it?

*Answer.* No, sir; but many thought Governor Powers ought not to have done it. He would be governor, and have the pardoning power and everything of the sort. The way it was managed was in this way: they thought that was the reason that Shipley's friends had hastened this thing on. They thought he was in a way to be released probably, and that he never would be punished. This is a mere theory. I have heard that mentioned by way of speculation and theory.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Has there been any complaint in your State that the pardoning power has been exercised too freely?

*Answer.* None in the world. I do not think it has as far as I know. I do not think there has been any ground of complaint of that sort.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* If he had actually been governor at the time, it would have been a very flagrant offense would it not?

*Answer.* It would not have looked right; and many thought it was not proper under the circumstances, as it is understood he will be governor in a short time.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was it understood that any influence, besides that of Wissler's family, was employed?

*Answer.* I do not know that I heard so. In general, I understood that his wife, and his sister, and Wissler's mother appealed to Colonel Powers, but I do not know that I ever heard anybody say more than that about the fact.

*Question.* He lives in this neighborhood?

*Answer.* He lives in this county, some eight or ten miles below here; and was very well acquainted with the family, or rather, I think, went there, probably, sometimes, and was well acquainted with Wissler and the family. My own impression was, that the reason Colonel Powers did so was, because he was appealed to by these ladies to release the man. I think it was a matter of sympathy on his part.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There is testimony before this committee in reference to a Mr. Taliaferro, who professes to have information——

*Answer.* I know Mr. Taliaferro.

*Question.* What do you know of him?

*Answer.* I never knew anything of him until about a year ago. I do not know how long he has been in the country; but I had some business transactions with Captain Taliaferro, a very worthy old gentleman in this county, about a year ago. In arranging that business, this Mr. Taliaferro you speak of came to my office. That was the first I knew of him. My acquaintance after that was slight. Being a connection of old Captain Taliaferro, I supposed him to be a very clever young gentleman. He seemed a very nice man. Shortly afterward he got into some difficulty in regard to my partner, Mr. Rives. He has a plantation up there where he was living, and the next information I had was, that he was arrested here for stealing Captain Rives's mule, and bringing him down to the livery stable here and attempting to sell him. A warrant was got out, and he was arrested and brought into the court below, and Mr. Rives and myself went down there, and being acquainted with old man Taliaferro, whom we had known for a series of years, and some gentlemen from Mobile at that time coming into the court-room and stating that he knew this man Taliaferro; that he knew his family in South Carolina, and that they were clever people, it operated upon Mr. Rives's sympathies, and Mr. Rives got up and stated to the court that he was acquainted with Captain Taliaferro; and from the statement made, the magistrate could do as he pleased about the prosecution; that he himself had no feeling about it, and would rather the man would not be prosecuted; that he had probably done it very unguardedly, and the prosecution might be the ruin of him as a young man, and, if the magistrate felt disposed, he would not have anything to do with the prosecution. Taliaferro was discharged in this way, by request of Mr. Rives, whose mule was taken. The rumor was at the same time that he went to the manager of Mr. Rives's plantation, and got the mule to bring a hog down for an old lady up there, and brought it down here and sold it, and then tried to sell the mule and take the money. The mule was got out of the stable. I do not think he sold the mule. He pocketed the old lady's money, and that was the last of it. He left the country shortly afterward. That was the last I heard of him.

*Question.* Was that after he had made these disclosures about the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* No, sir; that was before. He never made these disclosures that I ever heard of, until the sitting of the Federal court. I understood he was there, but I did not see him. I understood he had gone to Maryland, and was living probably in Baltimore. This was some time before I heard anything about any disclosures about the Ku-Klux up in that neighborhood. That is all I know about him.

*Question.* It has been stated that he was looked upon as a very clever young man previous to making these disclosures, and received by everybody in the best society?

*Answer.* My acquaintance with him was so slight that I never knew anything about that. I merely knew him as connected with his uncle.

*Question.* You knew he was charged with the stealing of this mule before making these disclosures?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the hog-stealing matter?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* With these accusations pending against him, is it likely that he would have been received in the best society?

*Answer.* I suppose that after that he was not. If it is stated that he was received in the best society, it must have been anterior to the mule matter.

*Question.* It is stated that he was received in the best society, and cultivated by all good people, until he made these disclosures?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about that. I saw him, and he looked like a very clever young gentleman. I did not know anything about him at that time.

*Question.* Do you suppose he was received in the best society after this attempt to dispose of Mr. Rives's mule?

*Answer.* I think not. I never saw him after that. I think he left shortly after that.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* It has been over a year ago; dates I cannot recollect. There are persons who are better acquainted with these things than I am in the neighborhood—Mr. Rives and Mr. Dismukes. I simply give my own as rumor.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The statement of a witness is, "Very nice men in this county, who have since denounced him, took him into their families before and up to that time."

*Answer.* I should think this about that, though I could not speak with any certainty: Being a connection of Captain Taliaferro, in that neighborhood, I suppose he was received by Captain Taliaferro's friends until the matter was found out.

*Question.* Until when?

*Answer.* Until these things occurred.

*Question.* Until this mule business occurred?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I had heard nothing about it before. I do not think he had been in the country very long; if he had, I did not know it. It was mere accident connected with Captain Taliaferro's business and some matters I had in my hands for the old man, that I formed his acquaintance. I suppose he was received in good society at that time.

*Question.* Do you know anything about any attempt to coerce or intimidate the negroes in voting?

*Answer.* I never saw such a thing done. I have no information about anything of that sort. There was some complaint of it years ago, but lately I do not think in our county there is a white man that ever speaks to a colored man about voting. That is our understanding generally. We know they have it all their own way. We have no candidates, and the colored people vote just as they please. There is no sense in intimidating now.

*Question.* It would be simply absurd to intimidate when you have no candidates?

*Answer.* We have no candidates at all. There may be some men running who call themselves democrats. I do not know it. There is no white man taking any interest in this election now going on, unless it be a man who is a candidate. It was so in our last election a year ago.

*Question.* No candidates then?

*Answer.* There may have been some candidates. I do not remember. That was for State officers. There were candidates then. We had a man by the name of —— ——, a brother-in-law of General Grant.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Judge Dent?

*Answer.* I believe that was his name; but it was all one side in this county. At that time there was no effort made in this county for the Dent ticket. I do not think I saw any white men take any part in it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* A witness says there was no intimidation at all last spring?

*Answer.* Last spring? I heard of none. What was that about?

*Question.* He says, "I know of no intimidation since last spring?"

*Answer.* There has been no election here since the election of our governor.

*Question.* There has been no election in which to coerce?

*Answer.* None in the world—not even a corporation election.

*Question.* I understand you to say that white people took no interest at all?

*Answer.* Not in that Dent election in this county. If there was a threat of intimidation, or anything of the sort, I do not know it. I have seen no manifestation of any feeling of that sort in our county.

*Question.* There were said to be several churches burned, one at Shuqualak and one at Brookville?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And one or two white schools burned?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a white school was burned up at Mushulaville—how, I do not know.

*Question.* What is the theory?

*Answer.* I never have heard any theory. I heard that it was burned.

*Question.* The witness says the people here are opposed to negro schools, some of them?

*Answer.* There may be such persons. This was a white school at Mushulaville, as I understood it. I have heard of no opposition to negro schools at all. There has been a question in regard to building negro school-houses. Some portion of the community are opposed to taxation for the purpose of building school-houses. They say the neighborhoods ought to build their own houses, and tax to pay the teachers and expenses; they are willing to do that; but the discord is as to taking so much money to build the houses, since they could put up log-houses just as they used to. Some say that they are built by the common fund; that the whites and blacks would both send to them, and there would be difficulty in that way; that it would be better for both to build their own houses.

*Question.* What is the rate of taxation in your county?

*Answer.* The Lord knows. It is so heavy I do not know.

*Question.* Is it as much as before the war?

*Answer.* I think my own is at least four times the amount on the same property. For instance, there is a farm I control up here for a gentleman in Alabama. I paid for the taxes of 1869 about $75. The taxes of 1870 were about $264.

*Question.* Is that on the land?

*Answer.* Just on the naked land itself.

*Question.* Was the tax of $75 on the land simply?

*Answer.* That is all.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How many acres?

*Answer.* I think about a thousand or eleven hundred.

*Question.* Cotton plantation?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it is one I had rented for a gentleman. It took a little over half the rent to pay the taxes.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What is the value of that property as compared with what it used to be?

*Answer.* I am a bad judge of real estate.

*Question.* What would it sell for now compared to 1869?

*Answer.* I should think that, probably, in 1869 it ought to have sold for at least twenty-five dollars an acre—not 1869, but before the war, I mean.

*Question.* Was that the tax you paid in 1869?

*Answer.* No, sir; but in 1869 the land was worth about the same as now, and in 1870 I saw but little difference in the price of the land.

*Question.* Before the war what was the tax on that land?

*Answer.* I do not know, but it could not have been very much. Our taxes were so arranged before the war that we paid less land tax than any people in the world that paid as much tax as we did. The burden was taken off of the land. My understanding is, that the tax of 1869, and previous to that, was one-tenth of one per cent.; that is the State tax, and the county can put on as much more, and then the special county tax may go beyond that. It is the special county tax that has made it so heavy upon us. We have been building jails, and a poor-house, and bridges, and one thing and another of that sort. The special tax has been enormous. It is not so much the State tax as the special county tax.

*Question.* What is the State tax now? You say in 1869 it was one-tenth of one per cent.?

*Answer.* I think the State tax is one-half of one per cent.

*Question.* That is five-tenths?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Is it not 40 cents on the hundred dollars?

*Answer.* I do not know but it is. How much would the half of one per cent. be?

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* So that it is five times what it was in 1869?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; my taxes are about four or five times as much.

*Question.* Then the county tax is five mills or more?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it cannot go beyond the State tax, and then the school tax may go beyond that, and then we have also a special tax.

*Question.* The school tax is a separate thing entirely?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What is the amount that may be levied for school taxes?

*Answer.* I do not remember the limit.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Your school-tax is estimated by the board of school commissioners?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* But the levy is made by the board of supervisors?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think that is the way it is done. It is a matter I have not looked into or informed myself about.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are the supervisors compelled by law to raise the amount estimated?

*Answer.* I cannot say. I have not examined the statute on that subject. Our statutes have not come out yet.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Do not the two boards consult and often raise or lower the estimates?

*Answer.* I suppose they do; they ought to.

*Question.* Is it not the fact that in Lowndes County the estimate was cut down from sixty-five to twenty-one thousand dollars?

*Answer.* I saw some notice of some such thing as that in the papers; I know they took down the tax.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Is there any opposition to negro suffrage?

*Answer.* I do not know that there is, sir; we all seem, so far as I know, to acquiesce as a law-abiding people. There is no issue in regard to that question here with us.

There may be private opinions about it, but no public expression of opinion that I know of. We take the constitution and laws as we find them.

*Question.* This man Doss is spoken of by witnesses as a very violent man, and a man who, on one occasion, run off the magistrate's constables and everybody else present, here in town, when they were examining into a case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I was present.

*Question.* Tell us what he did.

*Answer.* I can hardly tell you; how the difficulty occurred I do not know, but while the court was sitting he became boisterous and drew his pistol; I saw that out; what it was about now I have no recollection. A good many persons got out of the way. It occurred in this way, sir, as near as I recollect: he was evidently drinking some, and he wanted to pass out of the door, and some officer would not permit him to go out; and he swore he would go, and they got into some altercation, and this man Doss flourished his pistol about in the court-house, and some of the people got out and some did not, and some got hold of him, and the thing was quieted down. I think three magistrates were sitting, and I think they got off of the bench and probably came into this little ante-room, or some little room in the court-house. My recollection is that they retired.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Did you understand that Doss got upon the table in front of the judge's stand?

*Answer.* I do not remember; I remember at one time of seeing him upon the platform but not on the table. I recollect seeing him at one time on the platform where they were, or where they had been; I do not remember whether they were there; but with a drunken man fooling in the house that way, everybody was more or less afraid that he would shoot off his pistol. Nobody seemed afraid of him except that he was drunk in that way, and some of them tried to prevent his shooting, and got him quieted down. I do not know who he wanted to shoot. He just seemed to be rearing about generally, and cursing.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was the trial proceeded with?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* This was a simple interruption only?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it all went on and the case was disposed of. It was a case of murder.

*Question.* Had this anything to do with that case?

*Answer.* Nothing in the world; he wanted to get out of doors and was prevented, I think, in some way from passing out. It had no connection, I suppose, with the case. I know nothing of his connection with the case. He seemed to be enraged and swearing generally and flourishing his pistol about.

*Question.* Do you know anything of a difficulty that occurred at Artesia?

*Answer.* Not a word.

*Question.* You have heard of it?

*Answer.* The killing of Lee?

*Question.* No; the killing of a white man at a negro meeting in Artesia.

*Answer.* That was Lee; that was recently. I have heard of it, and I saw some notice of it in the newspapers. That is all the information I have on the subject by both sides; one paper represented it one way and another paper represented it another; as to what the general impression is as to the facts, I do not know.

*Question.* Were any negroes said to be arrested?

*Answer.* That was the information here.

*Question.* What was the information as to what occurred at the arrest of the negroes?

*Answer.* I heard that several negroes were arrested and carried to Columbus, and probably one or two white men.

*Question.* For that killing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; on account of that killing.

*Question.* Did you hear that the negroes after arrest were released?

*Answer.* I do not know; I never heard that; but I heard that the sheriff who had arrested them had been arrested by the Federal authorities.

*Question.* That the sheriff and his posse had been arrested?

*Answer.* By the marshal.

*Question.* As Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I do not know. They were just arrested; I understood that they were under arrest.

*Question.* Did you hear that the justice of the peace who had issued the warrant for their arrest had been dismissed from his office by Governor Alcorn?

*Answer.* No, sir; I did not hear that.

*Question.* This occurred at Crawford?

*Answer.* At Artesia.

*Question.* The firing occurred at Artesia, but the subsequent arrest?

*Answer.* I do not know where it occurred. There has been a great deal of this burning through the country here, and it is very hard to tell anything about it. Perhaps if you would know the number that have been burned it would astonish you. I can repeat a great many that I know have been burned. A man—Dr. Rosser—that lives right up here, was burned out His corn-crib and stables and everything the old man had, were burned about the first of this year. Some negroes were arrested for it and are now to be tried. They have tried one—a mistrial, I think. The other died.

*Question.* How is that?

*Answer.* Two negro men were arrested for the burning of Doctor Rosser's cribs, and one negro man died, and I know one has been mistried, if not two. Yes, there have been two mistried.

*Question.* You say there have been many burnings?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Of cotton-gins?

*Answer.* Cotton-gins too.

*Question.* What is the theory in regard to these burnings?

*Answer.* We hear different rumors. They are the houses of the most substantial planters in this community. The general impression is that they are done in almost every case by some incendiary, so far as I have heard.

*Question.* What class of people are these incendiaries supposed to be, and what motive have they?

*Answer.* I have not heard who they were. I do not know anything about that, but the owners are the substantial planters of the country. Doctor Foster's store was burned out in the upper part of this county within the last two months, and Coleman's store, at Mushulaville, was burned out within two months, and everything he had in the world, and William P. Connor's gin-house; and my information was that eighty bales of cotton were burned up last fall after gathering the cotton. Within two years Doctor Mooror's dwelling up here was burned up, and a man by the name of Hurd, at Brookville, had a very nice dwelling which was burned up. All of these I have named were supposed to have been done by incendiaries. Cockrell's house up here near the Doss neighborhood was burned up a few nights ago, and I do not know how many more. I just happen to recollect these at this time. There has been a good deal of burning of that sort through the community, and detection is impossible. I think the officers have tried to detect whether it had been the white men or the negroes. I think the officers here have tried, generally, to ferret them out, but it is impossible to do it. Now, you spoke of the church burned at Brookville some time ago. The version I heard of that was simply this: that the church had divided, and they had become very unfriendly, and it was supposed that one of these parties had burned it up. That is the report. I have never heard any other version of it than that.

*Question.* Was that a negro church?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they had fallen out. I heard a gentleman say that a negro woman at his house said they had fallen out, and after it was burned it was just what she expected, or something of that sort. That seemed to be the theory about it.

*Question.* How does the price of land in this section of the State or county compare with what it was prior to the war?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I should think the price now was not one-half as much as before the war. It would not go that; land that would have sold before the war at forty and fifty dollars—there was some such land—would now sell for perhaps fifteen or twenty dollars. That would be about the way it would be. The depreciation is more than one-half.

*Question.* Have you ever made or heard made any estimate of the destruction of property during the war in this State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that I have, sir.

*Question.* I have heard it stated that it has been estimated that the entire destruction of property was about seven-tenths, including the emancipation of the slaves.

*Answer.* I should think it was at least that. Really those who were our richest men in this country are now our poorest men—far the poorest men. Men who were worth hundreds of thousands are now, perhaps—well, not worth a dollar. They have got nothing in the world.

*Question.* The taxation, I understand you, is about five times as much as it was?

*Answer.* I think about four or five times my taxes were. Perhaps it would not be, generally, as much as that. I should say three or four times anyhow. I have taken no pains to make an estimate except looking over my own receipts.

*Question.* And the actual values of the property are only three-tenths of what they were?

*Answer.* I should suppose, taking the whole body of the country together, including the slaves, and everything of that sort, for our wealth consisted chiefly of slaves.

*Question.* So that the emancipation of the slaves was a destruction of personal property?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. With that I should think, general, it would amount to that much, sir.

*Question.* Is it wonderful that, under such a state of affairs, when five times the tax is raised on three-tenths of the valuation of property, there should be a restiveness and opposition to the school-tax or any other tax?

*Answer.* Well, sir, we credit a great deal of the disturbance in this county to an absolute apprehension that the people would not be able to pay the taxes.

*Question.* Is there not an apprehension felt very generally that the taxes raised are misapplied?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the general accusation of the people, the tax-payers, that there has been an unnecessary expenditure, particularly in our government, and in multiplying of offices.

*Question.* The tax of five times as great upon property valued at three-tenths of what it was, and the misapplication and misappropriation of the funds raised from taxation, is, as I understand you, a matter of complaint?

*Answer.* It is a matter of a great deal of foreboding and discontent. The people think they are burdened with taxation, and they do not see how it is possible to pay it. The great cry is for economy and the lessening of our taxes. That seems to be the main opposition to what is termed the school-fund or school-tax. They say the taxes are so heavy. I have heard of no opposition to free-schools, except that keeping the schools distinct seems to be the desire of both the white and black race so far as I have consulted with them. I have been talked with a good deal by both races, and they seem to desire that the schools should be kept separate.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* You have separate schools for the two races?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. We have not had any other kind at all, and that seems to be the desire of the colored people of this county. They seem to be satisfied with them. They believe as I do, that it is best for both that the schools should be kept separate.

*Question.* The school-board took the same view?

*Answer.* I expect so. I have never consulted with them about it, but I suppose that is their idea.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You spoke of the multiplication of offices in the State and county governments as one of the causes of discontent among the people. Allow me to inquire whether your present county officers are not comprised within the list I shall now name: Two justices of the peace, one constable in each magistrate's beat——

*Answer.* That's right.

*Question.* Is that the same now as before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; just the same.

*Question.* One supervisor in each district?

*Answer.* They were then called members of the board of police, and of something.

*Question.* One coroner?

*Answer.* The same.

*Question.* One surveyor?

*Answer.* That is so.

*Question.* One assessor?

*Answer.* That is so.

*Question.* One treasurer?

*Answer.* That is so.

*Question.* One circuit clerk?

*Answer.* That is so.

*Question.* One chancery clerk?

*Answer.* Yes; that used to be the probate clerk.

*Question.* The same office substantially, by a different name?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; no increase.

*Question.* One sheriff?

*Answer.* That is so.

*Question.* Three representatives to the lower house?

*Answer.* We had two before.

*Question.* There is a multiplication, or addition, then, of one?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* One senator, of the seventeenth senatorial district?

*Answer.* Our senator was formerly from Noxubee and Winston. Now, there are two from Noxubee and Kemper.

*Question.* Two from these three counties, where you had one from two counties?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* One district attorney of the seventh judicial district?

*Answer.* That is the same, except that the districts are not as large as before.

*Question.* Then, wherein does the multiplication of the offices in your county consist?

*Answer.* I did not speak of our county offices. I was not confining it to the county. I do not know that we have any greater number, but we have a larger number of members of the judiciary, and our probate courts were abolished and chancery courts took their places. What the number is now in the State I do not remember, but before each county had a probate judge, paid by the county, averaging from $200 to $1,500, probably. I think that was as high as any ever got, according to my recollection. I do not remember what number of chancellors there is now, but there are a great many of them. They get, I think, $3,500 or $4,000. I cannot speak positively about it unless I refer to the acts. We have a great many more circuit judges than before.

*Question.* How many judicial circuits had you before the war?

*Answer.* I do not remember.

*Question.* How many have you now?

*Answer.* I could not tell that unless I turned to our statutes.

*Question.* Do you think the number has increased?

*Answer.* O, largely; increased in salary, too.

*Question.* Has not the business of the courts greatly increased?

*Answer.* I think greatly diminished.

*Question.* Are not your terms of court occupied to the last day, generally, with business?

*Answer.* I know some courts get through in a very few days.

*Question.* Passing from the judiciary to the officers of the State, is there any multiplication in offices there?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There are these school commissioners; I do not remember how many unless I turn to the statute.

*Question.* Had you any common-school system before the war?

*Answer.* No, sir; we had a sixteenth-section fund.

*Question.* Where the proceeds of the sale of the sixteenth section was distributed among the inhabitants?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it went to the education of the children of the residents.

*Question.* And the inhabitants of the township?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. That cost nobody anything. That was a gratuity.

*Question.* Did your constitution, adopted on the 15th of May, 1868, establish a common-school fund, and provide for a system of common-school education?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That, of course, created the necessity for the appointment of officers to administer that system?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a great many officers. Every county has an increase of officers. I do not know their salaries.

*Question.* Each county has a superintendent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and its supervisors in some way. There are some four or five connected with it.

*Question.* In the board of supervisors?

*Answer.* I do not know what they call it. I notice Judges Ames, and Moore, and Davis, and Inabinet, and Burch belonging to that board. I do not know what they are called.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Board of directors?

*Answer.* I do not know what.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Are they paid?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they are paid, I am informed.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Has there been an increase of fees?

*Answer.* I think so of the judiciary, and I think of the legislature?

*Question.* I speak of the fees of county officers—treasurer and assessor.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; all these have been increased.

*Question.* And clerks?

*Answer.* Not clerks. The tax collectors' pay has been increased, and the assessors' has been increased. My impression is that before the tax collector received three per cent., and now he gets five, I think.

*Question.* Are the fees of the sheriff increased?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; as tax collector.

*Question.* But the fees for serving a process?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that they are increased.

*Question.* Are the fees of justices of the peace increased?

*Answer.* I do not know that they are increased.

*Question.* Have the salaries of the administrative officers and judges been increased?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Has there not been a very great increase in the price of living—of food and clothing?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Are general family expenses very greatly increased?
*Answer.* Considerably increased. Our expenses in living here are much greater than a few years ago.
*Question.* What per cent. larger?
*Answer.* I could not say really.
*Question.* Double?
*Answer.* I should think it was a third more anyhow, to be within bounds.
*Question.* Does not that fact itself show that an increase of salaries was necessary?
*Answer.* I think myself that some of the salaries before were too low for the present time.
*Question.* What was the salary of your governor before the war?
*Answer.* I think it was about $4,000.
*Question.* What is it now?
*Answer.* I do not know that. I think it was $4,000 before the war, but I do not know what it is now. I have not paid attention to it. We are behind in getting the laws out.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* In regard to raising the salaries of the officers that they may live, is that very appropriate, when the means of living to the people have been diminished so much?
*Answer.* It makes it harder on us; that is so.
*Question.* Is that not a consideration which should influence the estimate of salaries—the large diminution of the wealth of the people who have to pay this tax?
*Answer.* It is true, from the destruction of property our people have claimed that the tax ought to be lowered instead of raised; still, it costs an officer much more to live than before, but the people, feeling the burden of it, say, "We ought to have salaries diminished instead of raised, and the number of officers should be curtailed rather than increased." That is spoken of in public.
*Question.* Have the character and qualifications of the officers been raised?
*Answer.* I do not think so, sir. I do not think we have any better officers than we had before. We have some good officers, and some I do not think are good.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You spoke of the destruction of property during the war. Was the Federal Army through this county?
*Answer.* No, sir; there never was but a very small number of Federal troops entered this county.
*Question.* Did they commit any destruction of property?
*Answer.* None at all, I think, sir.
*Question.* Then the destruction of which you speak was not caused by the Federal troops during the war?
*Answer.* It was not caused by the Federal soldiers actually, but our own army had to be fed, and our mules, cattle, and horses were taken to support our own army; and was a destruction of the property.
*Question.* You speak now of the confederate army?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is, so far as this county was concerned. There were no Federal troops ever entered the borders of our county, or that ever attempted it, that I know of. A great deal of property was taken by confederate troops, in the shape of horses, mules, and corn.
*Question.* Did they strip off everything?
*Answer.* Yes; we were reduced to absolute want, almost, and had not stock to cultivate the land.
*Question.* Do you recollect what number of slaves were owned in this county before the war?
*Answer.* No, sir; I suppose, myself, there were about fifteen thousand. That would be a rough guess I would make.
*Question.* What were they valued at *per capita* on an average?
*Answer.* About the commencement of the war they were averaged at something like a thousand dollars a head, and, taking them by the families, eight hundred and a thousand dollars, I would say. About that time they were very high.
*Question.* Was the total valuation of the slaves in this county greater than the valuation of the real estate?
*Answer.* I do not know. Do you mean by having been valued by the assessors, or my own estimate?

The CHAIRMAN. I mean your own estimate.

The WITNESS. Well, sir, I should think the slaves were worth a good deal more than the real estate. I may be mistaken.

*Question.* How would the value of the slaves, according to your estimate, agree with the sum total of the personal and real property in the county?

The WITNESS. You mean before the war?

The CHAIRMAN. Before the war.

The WITNESS. Well, sir, I looked upon it that the wealth of the country consisted in slaves.

*Question.* You would think that their value would more than amount to the aggregate of the real and personal property in the county?

*Answer.* I think probably it might, without going into a minute estimate of it.

*Question.* How were the slaves taxed before the war—upon what principle?

*Answer.* They were taxed *per capita.* We did not value our slaves.

*Question.* What was the tax *per capita?* Was it laid for State and county purposes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for State and county both. The State makes its assessment, and then the county; so that I think it was about 50 cents.

*Question.* Fifty cents per head?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. It may be as high as seventy-five.

*Question.* For State purposes?

*Answer.* For State purposes.

*Question.* That would make, for that fifteen thousand slaves, how much?

*Answer.* They did not tax except within certain ages. That is my impression.

*Question.* Take the year 1860. What did the *per capita* tax for slaves, for State purposes, amount to?

*Answer.* I have no idea on that subject.

*Question.* The county tax then, as now, could not exceed the State tax?

*Answer.* It could not; but you might have a special county tax which might exceed it; and they generally did pay a hundred and fifty on it whenever there was any special matter to be done before, and since the war about a hundred and fifty on the State tax.

*Question.* What was the special tax upon such slaves as were subject to taxation before the war?

*Answer.* It strikes me it was from fifty to seventy-five cents.

*Question.* Then the county tax is to be added to that?

*Answer.* They always put the county tax as large as the State tax; they could not go beyond that.

*Question.* And then added the special tax?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Our taxes are quite high for this court-house, which we did not finish; that was in 1861; and for the building of the jail it became quite high one year. It was this tax on the slaves that made the tax on the land so light. That was the idea, to put the tax on personal property—on everything except the land. The idea was to induce immigration by taxing land as lightly as possible.

*Question.* How were hogs, cattle, horses, &c., taxed?

*Answer.* They never were taxed at all.

*Question.* How about the farm products—corn, cotton, &c.?

*Answer.* There was no tax on them at all. No account was taken of them.

*Question.* The taxation was limited to the land and the slaves?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; principally to them. There were taxes upon merchandise and some other things of that kind.

*Question.* That brings me to inquire whether the sum total raised for county purposes in Noxubee County, at this time, excluding the school-tax, is any higher than it was before the war?

*Answer.* I should think it was. I never heard as much complaint about the tax as I have since the war.

*Question.* Do you know how much was raised for county purposes in 1860?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have no idea.

*Question.* It is, then, merely conjecture upon your part?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; more or less, and from the fact that my own taxes have been largely increased beyond what they formerly were, and what I have heard people say.

*Question.* A good deal of the money raised by county tax and special tax has been applied to building a new jail, and building bridges through the county since the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; this county has had a jail built, and we have built a poor-house and bridges; and everything at the close of the war in a more or less dilapidated condition.

*Question.* I have understood, I believe, that there have been fourteen or fifteen new bridges built in this county?

*Answer.* I think about double as many as ought to be. I know they have let bridges at terrible prices; a great many that people complain terribly about.

*Question.* Were your bridges in a dilapidated condition at the close of the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They required rebuilding?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some of them.

*Question.* You have had many substantial ones built, and one near this place?

*Answer.* Yes; here is a very good one, and there are several others, I understand, are very good ones.

*Question.* You have an iron bridge, which I suppose cost $6,000, or more?

*Answer.* It cost at least that. I think the abutments cost about sixteen or eighteen hundred dollars besides.

*Question.* It is a very substantial, excellent bridge, is it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think so. I went down to see it once, and I thought so.

*Question.* You have built a jail costing several thousand dollars?

*Answer.* The jail was let at $15,000, and by some defect in building, or from some cause, the board of police have refused to pay anything for it, and have not paid a dollar. I have pending now three or four cases of *mandamus* against the officers of our circuit court to pay for that bridge. They have paid nothing.

*Question.* Did you stand in need of a new jail?

*Answer.* Very much, sir.

*Question.* Your court-house was built, or, at least, the walls were put up before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It will require considerable money to finish it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and they have spent considerable money on it in two years past. There was nothing at the close of the war but the walls standing. They fixed up the clerk's rooms.

*Question.* Have not these improvements and repairs, that I have enumerated, been judicious expenditures?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the complaint about the court-house was of the estimate made. I have heard several speaking of it; some of them workmen. They say that the jail ought not to have cost more than six or eight thousand dollars; that is, a man would have got a pretty good profit at that. I do not know whether that is so. There was great complaint about its being bid off at $15,000, and that it was an outrage for a jail of that magnitude.

*Question.* There was public competition?

*Answer.* I think so.

*Question.* It was let to the lowest bidder?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have no doubt about that.

*Question.* It is a very fine, substantial structure?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the grand jury has reported it no jail at all, and that is one reason they will not pay for it. It was to be built with cement—hard. There have been one or two persons have picked out of it; got out under the windows; just taken out the bricks.

*Question.* Is it a complaint that it is not built according to contract?

*Answer.* That is the complaint. I am not a workman, and of course do not know. I do not know what to say about it, because I am the attorney for the contractors in that case.

*Question.* If any of these improvements that have been made in your county of a public character are not judicious, or not necessary, I would be glad for you to state them.

*Answer.* I could not, because I do not know. I have just heard the general rumors. I could not tell about them unless I go up and down the road, and my course is hardly ever out of sight of the town. I did not see or know any of them. I have not heard much about contractors not complying with contracts, except in reference to the jail.

*Question.* Leaving out of view entirely the tax which was levied on the slaves, and leaving out of view the school-tax, does a given tract of land pay any higher tax now than it did before the war?

*Answer.* A great deal more. I have no doubt about that. I have some land myself, and I know that the tax upon my land is much higher. It is a good deal owing to how they are given in. In giving in taxes there is a great difference. You would give in your property, perhaps, at $10 an acre, and your next-door neighbor, who had equal land, might give in his at $5 an acre.

*Question.* Does not your assessor value the land?

*Answer.* No; it is given in in that way, under oath, and then he reports it to the supervisors, and the supervisors then have a time appointed in which they correct all these things, and raise or lower it as they think right.

*Question.* They act as an equalizing board?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They are not bound by the valuation of the owner?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Nor the valuation of the assessor?

*Answer.* No, sir. The board and the people have been disposed to value land tolerably low. I do not know what would be the value of the land in this county, but I do not think I have seen a particle of land given in at over $10 an acre, and much given in at $1.

*Question.* What is the average value of land by the assessment in this county now?

*Answer.* I have made no estimate and have no idea, though I should not think it would be over $5 an acre. That is a mere guess, however.

*Question.* Before the war what was its average value?

*Answer.* I suppose the average value of the land in the county before the war would have been somewhere between eight and ten dollars an acre.

*Question.* More than double what it is now?

*Answer.* I reckon it was.

*Question.* In point of fact, it was worth more than double. Was it worth three times as much before the war?

*Answer.* My remark was about those lands that would sell then for forty or fifty dollars and would not bring fifteen now. Land that would sell before the war as high as forty or fifty dollars, if sold now would only bring from fifteen to twenty-five dollars. Very little goes as high as $25. I do not know of sales, unless there was a crop on the land, that the land brought $25.

*Question.* Then there is a depreciation of at least one-half in the valuation of the land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To what cause do you ascribe the depreciation of lands? Are they not as fertile as ever, and are not the houses and fences the same?

*Answer.* It is more on account of our system of labor. We have a system here now that would destroy any country in the world. That is this partnership labor system. You have a fine plantation, suppose, and its timber is remarkably scarce. These prairie places require a great deal of ditching and require fencing a good deal, and labor outside of the cultivating of the crop and the gathering of the crop. Under our system of labor you cannot get a rail put on a fence or any ditching done, because the farmer agrees to give one-third or one-half of the crop, and just as the time comes for preparing the land for the next year's crop, you find that you cannot get a lick done, because the tenants say, "We don't care. We don't expect to work it for another crop, and it is not for us to keep the plantation up. Somebody else will have the next crop." That has been so apparent here that there is now a great effort to reduce to money wages.

*Question.* The fences and houses were kept up during the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; pretty fairly.

*Question.* You spoke of the State tax of 1869 as having been one-tenth of one per cent.?

*Answer.* That was my understanding.

*Question.* What was it in 1860, or in the year before the war?

*Answer.* My impression is that that is about the usual amount, but I cannot definitely answer you without turning to our acts. In time I could get it precisely.

*Question.* What was the occasion of raising the State tax from one-tenth to one-half of one per cent. in 1870?

*Answer.* I suppose it was in view of the expenditures of the State government.

*Question.* Were there any debts of the State government to pay off?

*Answer.* I do not know that there was.

*Question.* You are not acquainted with the financial condition of the State?

*Answer.* No, sir; I suppose, as we had been operating under the confederacy, that there was nothing but confederate debts to close out. I have very little information, however, about the financial condition of the State. I used to understand something about it, being a member of the legislature, but for years I have paid no attention to anything of the sort.

*Question.* Are your school-houses built and paid for out of the school fund that is raised by taxation?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir. All the information I have on that subject is derived from the fact that I went in to where these gentlemen, who control the school fund of the county, were sitting on Saturday. I learned that they were discussing the propriety of building school-houses out of the tax fund. That seemed to be the bone of contention. Whether they have already built any I do not know. If they have, I do not know it; but I know my partner was called in to advise with the board in regard to what he thought of the propriety of building school-houses over the county out of the public funds, or whether it was better to devote the whole to the education of the children and require the inhabitants to build their own school-houses. I understand that the commissioners—I believe that is what they call them—were divided upon this subject.

*Question.* Have there been any school-houses built?

*Answer.* I have heard of none; that is, of none built by the school fund. They may have built them. I do not know.

*Question.* How are the children—white and colored—schooled, if you have no school-houses scattered through the county?

*Answer.* I have no doubt they have school-houses. There are these sixteenth-section school-houses. There were school-houses at the surrender in various portions of the county, and I have no doubt that they have built school-houses. The idea was for the black people to build their own school-houses and the white people to build theirs, and let each have them separate; let them be built by the private means of the neighborhood, and then take the school fund and distribute that in the payment of teachers. That appeared to be the idea.

*Question.* Applying the school fund exclusively to the education of the children?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was the idea I gathered from the discussion.

*Question.* You do not know whether the law authorizes the school commissioners to build school-houses out of this common-school fund or not?

*Answer.* I do not; but I suppose that it does. From the manner in which they were discussing the question, they seemed to raise no question on that subject, and they were intelligent men—at least some of them were.

*Question.* What is the value of this plantation of one thousand or eleven hundred acres, owned by your Alabama friend, upon which you pay the taxes?

*Answer.* We gave it in at $10 an acre; just what the whole neighborhood were giving land in at. It is a good plantation; an excellent one.

*Question.* Then it would be worth ten or eleven thousand dollars.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think that is what it is valued at exactly.

*Question.* Do you regard $264 tax upon a body of land of that sort as extraordinary or excessive taxation?

*Answer.* It is tolerably high to what it used to be.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* It is one-half of the rent?

*Answer.* It is nearly half. It is in bad condition, and it was with difficulty that I could rent it out.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* This is good cotton land?

*Answer.* I should think so, from its location.

*Question.* How much of it is susceptible of cultivation?

*Answer.* I suppose there must be from three to five hundred acres. There may be more than that. It is out in that prairie country where they have a great deal of cultivated land. This was regarded as an admirable plantation before the war, but they tell me it has gone down very much. There are no fences, no ditching, and I rented it for what I could get. I think last year I rented it for $800.

*Question.* What do your cotton lands produce per acre of seed cotton?

*Answer.* It varies with different neighborhoods, and it is impossible to tell; but I should think that five hundred to six hundred pounds of cotton would be an average.

*Question.* Seed cotton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; not more than six hundred pounds. I am no farmer, and I am guessing now; but I know some farms that are thought admirable if they raise as much as a thousand. It is a fine yield.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* That is about three acres to the bale?

*Answer.* It will take at least three acres to the bale. A right good crop-year might make more than that. I think the county would do very well getting one in three.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* A bale of cotton has been worth for the last two years how much; a hundred dollars?

*Answer.* Not so much. The last I sold was eighty. Still there was, some time ago, that it sold for thirty-five or forty cents.

*Question.* But for the last few years would it not average a hundred dollars a bale?

*Answer.* I held up mine, and did not get hardly anything for it. I had a hundred bales or more of cotton. The cotton, I think, this year brought me about $80 to the bale. Last year it did not bring so much; but if I had sold at one time, when I ought to have sold, it would have brought a hundred dollars.

*Question.* That would make the land bring about $25 to the acre when cultivated in cotton?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it will do that, I suppose; that is, on a good farm; but it must be a good farm. The farm I speak of as raising this cotton is perhaps one of the best farms in the country. I control it as an executor.

*Question.* Did not your common-school system, extending the benefits of education to the colored children, meet with very great opposition in this State?

*Answer.* I do not know that it did. There was some opposition to it at the time.

*Question.* Is there no prejudice at this time against colored schools?

*Answer.* I have heard of none in this section of country. There may be.

*Question.* Have you heard of any prejudice against teachers of colored schools; have they been mobbed or driven off, and the schools broken up?

*Answer.* A common school, I have heard, was burned up at Derricut, up in the upper portion of the country. At Mushulaville a school-house was burned there. Mixed up with this Ku-Klux case. I have heard of a good deal of talk of such things in Winston County.

*Question.* You have heard that there was opposition in Winston County to colored schools?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; not to colored schools but public schools, because they had a large white population.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any special opposition to the teachers of colored schools?

*Answer.* I cannot say that I did. I may have heard some remarks made about them, but I cannot say who or what.

*Question.* Do you think the white people of this country have become thoroughly reconciled to colored suffrage?

*Answer.* They have just come to the conclusion to submit to it as a fixed fact; but they would oppose it if they could. That would be the feeling of the white people.

*Question.* They have not accepted the "new departure" very heartily?

*Answer.* Not very heartily. I do not think that the "new departure" takes very well here, though they seem to acquiesce in this as a fixed fact, and that is all they can do.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Peter Gregory, killed, or have you mentioned his case?

*Answer.* I never have heard of him. Do you know in what part of the county he was? I have heard of some persons being killed, but either did not hear the names or have forgotten them. If there was such a man as Peter Gregory in the county I do not know it. What time do you put it? I know there were persons killed here.

The CHAIRMAN. It was above Mushulaville.

The WITNESS. I never heard of it by that name.

*Question.* He was killed about a month ago?

*Answer.* I recollect of hearing of it since I got back. I have not been back from the North but a short time. I did not hear the circumstances connected with that except that a colored man was killed up near Mushulaville while I was gone. I never heard the name.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Lydia Anderson, a colored woman?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* She lived on Mr. Richards's place, and was whipped.

*Answer.* I merely heard the fact mentioned within the last twenty-four hours, by a gentleman, a merchant in Mushulaville, not far from Mr. Richards's place; but he says he never heard of such a thing before. That is all I heard of it.

*Question.* You have heard of this case as having been given in evidence before the committee?

*Answer.* I do not know how it was. I heard it spoken of in some way.

Mr. BLAIR. You heard me speak of it, probably. I spoke of it.

The WITNESS. Very likely. It may be that that was the way I got it, and having heard something of it. Old Anderson was a very particular friend of mine, a very feeble old gentleman, and I felt some interest in it when it was mentioned, to see whether he was connected with it in any way. I asked Mr. Huckaby, and he said he had not heard anything about it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Johnson Keitt, a colored man, said to have been killed?

*Answer.* No, sir. I know nothing about that case. I may have heard of the man but I do not know him by that name.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the cases of Roben Coleman and George Gladney, said to have been whipped?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Samuel McMillan, who was shot at?

*Answer.* No, sir. These cases must have been in Winston. I would have heard them if they had occurred in my county, but I do not practice in that county. Here I am mixed up in such cases.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Allen Bird, who was killed in jail in Louisville, Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir. Is it said that he was killed in the jail?

The CHAIRMAN. Yes, sir; murdered in jail.

The WITNESS. I ought to have heard of a thing of that kind, but if I have heard of it I have forgotten.

*Question.* Have you heard of a killing of a colored man at or near Webster, not long since?

*Answer.* No, sir. I heard of one having been killed there, three or four years ago, but not recently. I think he was a blacksmith, probably.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Samuel May, who was killed near Cooksville, in this county?

*Answer.* Sam. May was not killed at Cooksville. He was coming on to town. Sam. May lived in the direction of Brooksville.

*Question.* You referred to that case in your examination-in-chief?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I just heard of it. It was, as I heard it, nearer here than Brooksville. He lived here. He had been out to his wife's house, or where she lived, and was coming back to town. They had somewhat of a trial about it down here, and some persons were arrested. I get my information in that way.

*Question.* Have you heard that any of these whippings and murders were committed by men in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not think I have heard they were in disguise.

*Question.* Have you heard of any instance in this county of men prowling through the county in disguise, at night, in bodies?

*Answer.* I have heard people talk about it; yes, sir.

*Question.* What have you heard said in relation to it?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you what I have heard. There have been so many rumors in regard to it. Sometimes they are mentioned in jest; sometimes, I suppose, in earnest, talking about the peculiarities of their dress, their horses, their having white clothes and coverings on, and things of the sort.

*Question.* Did you ever converse with any person who had seen them?

*Answer.* I never met a person who would say he had seen any of them.

*Question.* Does it seem to be generally understood that bands of such men have been seen in this county?

*Answer.* There is a difference of opinion about that. A great many people think there are no organized bands of what are called Ku-Klux, or anything of the sort, and at the same time there is an impression that there have been some depredations committed by people in disguise, such as going to houses, whipping negroes, or something of the sort. That seems to be the idea.

*Question.* Is it understood that a great many of the outrages you have referred to have been committed by people who have availed themselves of the night and of disguises to escape detection?

*Answer.* A great many of these things have been done in the night, but as to the disguise I cannot say. I recollect, now, a case. I get that from being present at the examining court, and hearing some negro woman state that she did not know them, but thought she knew the voice of one, and that they were all in disguise; that there were several of them, and that they were on horses, and that they were in disguise. I have heard again of some going by certain houses, as persons said, and they said they saw men in disguise. There have been such a variety of rumors that I have paid but very little attention to it. I have heard of it, however.

*Question.* Down to how late a period have the rumors of these outrages run?

*Answer.* I do not think I have heard any spoken of later than this man up here, whom I mentioned. Who that was I do not know. I never heard. I do not remember of hearing of any disguised persons in this county for some time.

*Question.* How many months?

*Answer.* Seems to me several months. I know the good people of the country think there are things of that kind, and we have all tried to allay any feeling of the sort. The better portion of the community have done so if there has been anything of the sort. I have approached several and asked if there was any such thing in the neighborhood where they live, and they always deny it. My advice always has been this: we are the men to suppress these things ourselves.

*Question.* You approached the white men yourself upon this subject?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you conversed with the negroes extensively on the subject?

*Answer.* No, sir; except where I have been employed by them. I have been employed by the negro population here a great deal in righting their little matters. I am satisfied that the better portion of the community do not approve of anything of the sort. I have not heard of any disguised persons in this county, and I have no idea that there have been any disguised persons for some time in our county.

*Question.* Have you known a case where a man connected with these disguised men in the commission of any outrage has been detected and punished?

*Answer.* No, sir; no person has ever been discovered in disguise in our county that I know of, except a little occurrence that took place over here, and which turned out to

be all foolishness. Two negro boys put on some clothes that were unusual, and went to a negro church over here, and ran into the crowd and scared the women out. They had them bound over to court, but it was only a matter of fun. It was what they call their Christmas jack. That is the only case of disguised men arrested, that I know of.

*Question.* What effort has been made to break up these disguised bands?

*Answer.* Wherever such a thing has occurred there has been a great deal of activity by the officers to detect them, if possible.

*Question.* Where is the practical difficulty in finding the perpetrators and bringing them to justice?

*Answer.* It seems to be done in such a way that no person knows how it is done. My own theory has been this: we are living here upon the border; there are depredations committed here and in Alabama, and I think those committed here are mostly committed by persons who are not natives of this part of the country.

*Question.* You think they come over the line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think they are all strangers.

*Question.* What motive would have led them to come from Alabama to correct grievances in Noxubee County, Mississippi?

*Answer.* Well, they live near the line. I cannot see well what motive actuated them to do these things, but, if they are lawless men, there is no accounting for what lawless men will do. Whether there has been any organization here where they went from one place to another, I do not know. It may be they go from here to other counties, and that others come to this county. In these cases, where parties have been arrested and put upon their trial, and witnesses introduced, I know in one or two cases they have spoken of disguised persons, but the witnesses have never been able to identify the persons—neither the colored race nor the white people concerned could tell a single individual.

*Question.* Have you not often heard it alleged that these clans or bands of disguised men interchanged work with one another to avoid detection? as, for illustration, if there is a grievance, or an imaginary grievance, to be redressed in this county, some band will come over from Alabama to attend to it?

*Answer.* I stated that that was rather my theory of the thing. I have heard such things mentioned; but I cannot see why it is that there are none detected, if the persons are known in the community, where they could pass into the middle of the county and pass out, and the colored race and the white race, that are disposed to be orderly, cannot tell them. I do not believe the men are known. That has driven me to the idea that they are from abroad.

*Question.* Is that the generally accepted theory?

*Answer.* I cannot say that it is. I have heard it spoken of; for instance, when a difficulty would occur of that sort, and we could not trace it, it would be suggested that that was the cause of it. I was at Kemper court a long time ago, and they came into town a day or two before I got there—not in disguise—some twenty or thirty of them. They were armed and went to the drinking-shops, and went out and were traced nearly to the Alabama line.

*Question.* Were they strangers to the county?

*Answer.* They were supposed to be so. They had no disguise on, and nobody knew them.

*Question.* I would be glad to have your theory of what the purposes of such an organization, if one exists, is. What class of diseases in the body-politic do they undertake to cure?

*Answer.* I am at a loss, if there is such an organization, to know what they aim to accomplish by it. If there is such an organization, evidently they are doing us more harm than good; there is no question about that. What their leading object can be I cannot imagine. It has been a theory here, or was at first, that this organization was for a very good purpose; that good men were in it; that it was merely to keep order throughout the community. We were then somewhat under a military rule, but there were no troops for protection. That all went down. Some suppose there were still remnants of it that got into bad hands, but I never could account for it.

*Question.* You think there is no connection between the discontent of your people with what is called excessive taxation, and the outrages of different kinds which have been committed upon the negroes?

*Answer.* I do not see how that could be, unless it is just the feeling of restlessness under heavy taxation; I do not see how that could be connected with it.

*Question.* Why would that lead these lawless men to inflict acts of violence upon inoffensive negroes?

*Answer.* It has nothing in the world to do with it unless it would be just a kind of restless, unhappy disposition. I cannot see how that could connect itself with any enmity to the negro.

*Question.* The only possible connection would be the increase of taxation in consequence of the maintenance of colored schools?

*Answer.* I do not think that any of these depredations are committed on account of the taxation.

*Question.* Is it not supposed that these punishments have been inflicted by these lawless men upon the blacks because of the fact that they have been elevated to political and civil equality with the whites?

*Answer.* I cannot say, sir, that it is. I do not know. I cannot tell; I do not know what is in the breasts of these lawless men. I can speak very well of what is the feeling toward the black men of what I call the good people of the country, who are in a very large majority, but as to the actuating motives of that class of men who commit depredations upon the black people I cannot conceive what they are.

*Question.* The two races get along very harmoniously?

*Answer.* Very harmoniously, as a general thing.

*Question.* They consider themselves mutually dependent?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. The very men who formerly owned the slaves are the people in whom the colored people have the most confidence.

*Question.* Generally speaking, have not the colored people behaved very well?

*Answer.* They have generally, I think, behaved very civilly and well. There is some complaint about their not laboring—about a disposition not to work.

*Question.* But in point of fact, has not the product of your cotton-fields in Noxubee County been as great since the war as before the war—or, at least, for the last two or three years?

*Answer.* I think not; I suppose not half. A great deal of land is idle in our county.

*Question.* I make the inquiry because I heard the statement of an intelligent gentleman that the yield of cotton for this county was as great for the last year as any former year.

*Answer.* I cannot say. I judge by the amount of land lying out.

*Question.* Some of the negroes are acquiring property?

*Answer.* Some are doing well; some are very good citizens.

*Question.* Some are becoming freeholders?

*Answer.* Some are becoming freeholders, and behaving admirably well, and acquiring property fast.

*Question.* Is there any prejudice on the part of the white people against the negroes acquiring a foothold, or acquiring in their own right lands in the county?

*Answer.* A few years ago that was the case; but I believe it is just the reverse now. I believe every good citizen here is glad when he sees the colored men accumulating and getting along, because they become much better citizens.

*Question.* At the same time is it not lessening the body of laborers upon whom the planters rely to cultivate their land?

*Answer.* Well, there is plenty of labor here—as much as we can control. Farmers have curtailed their farms, and are renting them out. You would be astonished at the number of farms now rented to colored men.

*Question.* If there was such a plenty of laborers here, why is it that so many cotton-fields are idle?

*Answer.* Because they do not work. The female class used to work in former times. They do not work in the field now, where they can get a house. Any person traveling through the country will see a great deal of good land lying out.

*Question.* Was there any depredation upon stock before the war?

*Answer.* Very little, sir. It was rarely that you ever heard of any depredation upon stock. Sometimes there might be some stock killed; but that thing is being stopped. I judge from what appears in our courts the depredation upon stock is being lessened. The law is being rigidly enforced, and a great effort is being made by the courts and juries to make examples, and I think it has lessened very much within twelve months.

*Question.* You never have been liable to much mule-stealing and horse-stealing?

*Answer.* There has been a great deal of that.

*Question.* I suppose these depredations were committed chiefly upon hogs, sheep, and poultry?

*Answer.* Of course that is the greater portion of it, so far as they are committed by colored men. There have been a great many mules and horses stolen; but it was not done by the colored people to a great extent; and I think it is being lessened very fast.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Have you your pardon from President Johnson?

The WITNESS. I would like to know the object of that question. Yes, sir; I have.

*Question.* Have you any other papers from President Johnson?

*Answer.* You want, General Blair, to see this paper that I have, and I suppose I will have to show it to you and the other gentlemen, as you ask for it. [The witness produced a paper, of which the following is a copy:]

"Mr. HAMILTON (HAMPTON) L. JARNAGAN,

"To ANDREW JOHNSON, Dr.

"1829.

"May. For making coat ..... $3 50

"Received the above account in full 29th December, 1829.

"A. JOHNSON."

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* I call your attention to an article published in the Macon Beacon on the 14th of May, 1870, entitled, "Ku-Klux," in order to inquire whether the statements of the editor are verified by your observations, and whether your theory accords with his. I will premise by inquiring whether this was a democratic paper at the time it was published?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was regarded as a democratic paper.

*Question.* I infer from your evidence that you affiliate with the democratic party?

*Answer.* Well, I was an old-line whig myself. My record is that of the worst old-line whig in the world—so much so that I do not stand the idea of being called a democrat.

*Question.* Do you vote the conservative ticket?

*Answer.* I do not vote any ticket. They do not allow me to vote since the war. My pedigree, back to my old uncle in your State, Senator, was whig. My brother was Senator of the United States from Tennessee, and he was a whig.

*Question.* Are your sympathies with the democratic party?

*Answer.* I should, if I had had a vote, have voted at the last election for Seymour and a gentleman over the way somewhere called Blair; but they put me down there as belonging really to that party. I am an old-line whig, and I have my peculiar notions about it yet; but I never was a secessionist.

*Question.* I will read the article, which is as follows:

"KU-KLUX.—It is generally believed in the North that a wide-spread organization exists in our midst, whose object is, by acts of lawless violence, to thwart the restoration of law and order, and make victims of all who are inimical to their proceedings. The frequency of these secret mobs, for such they are, has given color to that supposition, and legislation has been busy to counteract the evil tendencies of such associations. The existence of a Ku-Klux society, as understood there, we believe, is a myth, and this outbreak of disconnected bands, in all parts of the country, can be traced to no fountain-head, but seems to be the offspring of local causes—wherever a few turbulent spirits imagine they must take the law into their hands and inflict vengeance on all who cross their path. This spirit is much to be deprecated, and ought to be suppressed, but we fear legislation will but aggravate the evil. It rests with the law-abiding citizens to frown down the violent Klans, who veil with secrecy the most revolting crimes, and stain a whole people with the guilt and darkness of their transactions. What they call executing the law is simply assassination, and often aggravated, too, by orgies from which an inquisition would shrink with horror. The good they do is simply nothing, the harm is incalculable. For men to make a common property of their prejudices and strike its objects in the dark is monstrous. When law and order is endeavoring to crystallize itself into shape, to obstruct it because it acts slowly, is unworthy of good citizens. These midnight banditti are doing more to thwart the peace and prosperity of our country than a wise legislation of years could counteract. Our people should persistently endeavor to remove these foul ulcers that now and then break out where bad blood exists, and apply remedies that will finally restore these diseased spots to healthy action. It can be done calmly, soothingly, but it must be done firmly. It should be made disreputable to aid or countenance such outrages, and the very perpetrators will then pause and look back with horror on the deeds of darkness which they have blindly committed."—*Macon Beacon, May* 14, 1870.

*Answer.* I do not see any objection to that.

*Question.* The first part of my inquiry relates to the statement of fact in this article; whether you believe this statement to have been true at the time it was published as to the frequency of these outrages?

*Answer.* That, I suppose, speaks of the fact throughout the South, and does not speak of the locality here or county. I suppose the editor was speaking of the various Southern States—South Carolina, Mississippi, Alabama, &c.

*Question.* He speaks of acts of lawless violence, resistance to law, violations of order, and the taking of vengeance on all inimical to their proceedings.

*Answer.* I think there were acts of violence at that time, but whether there was any organization at that time I do not know. I have heard that there was. Speaking of the South, there were many acts of violence of which we have heard that have been committed in several of the States. I think it is a good article, and condemns it as it ought to be condemned. I think these things took place in many places. I think there were acts of violence committed within two or three years in this county, which were done by lawless mobs.

*Question.* You think these recitals were true of Noxubee County?

*Answer.* I do not know to what extent. All I can say would be that there have been acts of violence. When was that dated?

The CHAIRMAN. Fourteenth of May, 1870.

*Answer.* I think about that time and before that there had been divers acts of violence in this county; whether by an organization or not, they were committed by that class of people.

*Question.* Was there ever a meeting called in Noxubee County to take into consideration the existence of these outrages, and the mode in which they should be dealt with? Was there ever a set of resolutions adopted at any public gathering denouncing these outrages and their perpetrators, and pledging the good people of the country to put a stop to them and bring the perpetrators to justice or anything of the kind?

*Answer.* None that I know of. I know of no public meeting called for that purpose.

*Question.* Can you account for the apathy of the good people of the county upon this subject?

*Answer.* Well, there is no doubt about the sentiment of the good people of the county. They disapprove and condemn these things very bitterly in private conversation, and are willing to aid the officers.

*Question.* Would not a public expression at a formal meeting called for the express purpose of considering these troubles in the body-politic have exercised a commanding influence, in your estimation, upon the lawless men who were guilty of these deeds of violence?

*Answer.* I think they would have had a good effect toward quieting things down. I think it would have had a good effect upon the lawless class. Whether there was ever any meeting called in the county for that purpose I do not know. I think, however, it would have resulted in good. It could not have resulted in any harm.

*Question.* I think you have already stated that you have not heard of any punishment inflicted upon any of these men concerned in these midnight outrages?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir, of any.

*Question.* What is your solution of this trouble? What is your theory of the way in which the community ought to get rid of these lawless men?

*Answer.* My theory is this about the whole thing: that there are lawless men in every community, and I think there are in Noxubee County to no great extent. I do not think there are many of that character in this county, for I cannot think so. I think these acts are committed just out of pure devilment, if such things are committed. I think these outrages are committed by persons sometimes in combinations and sometimes perhaps not. If there is any organization for the purpose of carrying out any particular view by committing these assaults and murders, I do not know it. I do not think there is any regular organization. They seem to happen at different points in the county, above, below, east and west, and I have never been able to trace up any of them. I cannot form any theory upon the subject that I can rely on to satisfy myself, unless it is just a disposition in men to do wrong. There are a good many young men, you know, in this country, who were raised in wealth and affluence, who have been thrown out of employment, and, as I suppose, have become reckless. They are thrown out of employment and out of the circle in which they formerly moved, and have become reckless.

*Question.* What is the character of the sons of the old owners of the soil—those who were slaveholders? What pursuits, as a general thing, are they embarking in? Are they cultivating the soil themselves?

*Answer.* I think a good many of them are. I think that those who had lands are now cultivating their lands or the lands of their fathers. The young men seem to be generally engaged in some business. I know a great many of my old acquaintances, young men, who are now carrying on plantations and working the soil.

*Question.* That is their general course, so far as your observation extends?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so far as my observation goes in the town, they are in mercantile establishments and in various occupations; but I know of many of them who are now on their plantations, where they have had land, and are cultivating them.

*Question.* Is manual labor here any more reputable than it was before the war?

*Answer.* I cannot say, sir, whether it is or not. Outside of this place, in this county, the white people labor but little. The poorer class prevail in Winston and these other counties. Labor there was reputable; but here the young men, the farmers, worked very little indeed. They are now forced to do it; necessity compels them to take that course. I think labor is reputable here. I think that wherever a young man has gone to work he raises himself in the public estimation. Every good citizen thinks more of a man who rolls up his sleeves and goes right along at work. That is the feeling we all have.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November 7*, 1871.

DAVID TRIPLETT (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* Up here in Winston. I live in Noxubee now. I used to live in Winston last year

*Question.* Did you know Solomon Triplett?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have lived with him ever since I have been in this country.
*Question.* Was he a relation of yours?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; a fellow-servant of mine. I lived with him all in slave time.
*Question.* Where did he live?
*Answer.* He lived in Winston County. Him and me used to belong to the same man.
*Question.* What do you know of his being killed?
*Answer.* I was there in his house the night he was shot.
*Question.* You may proceed and tell the committee what you know about the manner in which he was shot and by whom he was shot.
*Answer.* I was there the night he was shot. I recollect the night; it was a Thursday night. There was two men come up to the door, and the first said, "Come out of here, God damn you." Then they said, "No, God damn you, don't you come out here or I'll kill you." He said, "Who are you?" They never said nothing; but he was standing by the door and had his left hand on it and his gun was over the door, and he raised up and got it and set it on the floor. They peaked through the crack and told him, God damn him, if he didn't put down that gun he would shoot him; but he still held on. They fired several times at the door, and then they went around to the back-side of the house and got on some perches, and he was standing with his back toward them where there was a crack, and they shot him through the crack, and he fell.
*Question.* Did he die of the wounds?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* When did this happen?
*Answer.* It was last year, just a while before Christmas. I don't think it was more than a week before Christmas.
*Question.* Last Christmas?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; last Christmas, a year ago.
*Question.* Do you mean last December?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did you see the men?
*Answer.* They came up: I never saw them; they came up to the door. Nobody went out of the door or they could have seen them; but nobody went out.
*Question.* Did you see any horses' tracks the next morning?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they went down about a quarter of a mile from the house, or hardly so far, and there was a place there in a sand-bar which looked like there was about forty horses hitched there.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where were the horses hitched?
*Answer.* At the sand-bar just below old man Parks's, about a quarter of a mile. He was living with old man Parks.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you know whether the men had disguises on or not; whether they had anything over their faces or any covering over their bodies?
*Answer.* We went to the door, and there was two men coming across the old field, and it was about ten minutes; we went out in the yard and saw them coming, and all went in the house again and shut the door and didn't see them, any more than them two.
*Question.* Do you know whether any of them had any masks or anything over their faces?
*Answer.* They were in white, at a distance off—about a hundred yards—coming.
*Question.* Do you mean they were dressed in white?
*Answer.* Yes, sir, in white; you could not see nothing but white.
*Question.* This was in Winston County?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In what part of Winston County?
*Answer.* In Winston County, just above the factory.
*Question.* What factory?
*Answer.* Parks's factory, about five miles the other side.
*Question.* What kind of a factory, woolen?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; spinning and carding. They spun.
*Question.* Do you know where the men came from?
*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know where they came from.
*Question.* Did you ever trace the horse's tracks back to find out where they came from?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* What did they against Sol. Triplett?
*Answer.* Nothing that I heard of.
*Question.* What did they say when they shot at him?
*Answer.* They never said when they shot at him what they had against him.
*Question.* Did he have a wife?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was she there?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; she was in the house the same night.
*Question.* Where is she now?
*Answer.* She is living up here about seven miles from here, at Mr. Jeff. Cage's.
*Question.* Did she leave soon after he was killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; she came away Christmas, and came down to Mr. Cage's.
*Question.* Has anybody ever been taken up for this?
*Answer.* Not as I knows of.
*Question.* Had he a quarrel with anybody?
*Answer.* No, sir; he had not had a quarrel or fuss with nobody; everybody always spoke well of him. After he was dead they said nobody had nothing against him.
*Question.* Had he ever taught a colored school?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Had he ever preached?
*Answer.* No, sir; he didn't know nothing about any one.
*Question.* He was just a work-hand on the plantation, was he?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Did the white people make any effort to find out who had killed him?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe Mr. Metz, the sheriff of Louisville, was inquiring around, but he couldn't find out nothing.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Did you ever hear Solomon's wife say that she knew any of the parties who did this?
*Answer.* I heard her say that Jack Triplett's son killed him—John Triplett.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What time in the night was this?
*Answer.* It was early in the night; it was not 10 o'clock.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Jack Triplett's son?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What for?
*Answer.* As well as I could understand, it was because he came away from there and came up to old man Parks's to live.
*Question.* Did she see any of the men that night?
*Answer.* No, sir; she never saw any more than those two coming up across the old field that night.
*Question.* Did she recognize either of them?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* How did she know then that it was Jack Triplett's son?
*Answer.* Well, Solomon had been working down there and had got some meat from him, and it was not the quantity of meat that he was to get. He weighed it over, and it was not the quantity of meat. His wife carried it back, and she says that he said he'd pay him for it; that he was getting too big anyhow.
*Question.* Were you in the house when he was killed?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* How many men were there firing?
*Answer.* I think it appeared, the way the noise went, like there might have been six or seven fired at one time.
*Question.* Did you see any of the men's faces?
*Answer.* No, sir, I never saw any of their faces.
*Question.* Did you look out at them?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* When did Solomon's wife tell you she thought it was Jack Triplett's son?
*Answer.* Directly after they shot him.
*Question.* She gave you as a reason what you have already said?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* That was her only reason for thinking so?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* You say that Mr. Metz made a search for them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Has anybody been arrested for this murder?
*Answer.* No, sir; not as I knows of.
*Question.* Have you ever been called anywhere as a witness in this case?
*Answer.* No, sir; not before.
*Question.* Has Solomon's wife been called before?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I think she has been here one time before.

*Question.* Have you seen her since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have seen her since. She didn't live very far from where I live at now.

*Question.* Did she tell you what she had said when she was called?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ask her?

*Answer.* No, sir, I never asked her.

*Question.* Did she tell you she had been up as a witness?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* But did not say anything that she had testified?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ask her?

*Answer.* No, sir; I didn't ask her.

*Question.* What did she say in reference to the quarrel between Jack Triplett's son and Solomon about the meat?

*Answer.* Never said anything more than he sent him the meat and he weighed it, and it was not the quantity of meat he weighed it for, and he sent it back; his wife carried it back, and told him that the old man said it was not the quantity of meat, and he said, never mind, he'd pay him for it; that he had been getting too big anyhow.

*Question.* Was that all that was said?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And on account of this she thought that Jack Triplett's son had killed her husband?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did she say that she recognized any of that party as Jack Triplett's son that night?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard her say any more.

*Question.* You must have had some conversation about the men. Was she in bed; did she get up?

*Answer.* No, sir; she hadn't gone to bed; it was early in the night; it was not 10 o'clock.

*Question.* Did she look out of the house at any of them?

*Answer.* No, sir; nobody ever looked out; everybody was afraid to look out.

*Question.* Did you follow the horse's tracks?

*Answer.* No, sir; never followed them no farther than down there at the sand-bar where they hitched them at.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Do you know, or have you heard, of any other colored men being killed in Winston County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was one was killed up there; I reckon it has been about two months ago, now.

*Question.* Who was that?

*Answer.* A fellow that was living up here with an old man, Finker, named Pete Gregory.

*Question.* Did you know Pete?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I know him; I have been along with him for this year or two.

*Question.* Was he killed in the night-time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was killed in the night, as well as I could understand. His wife said that there was three men came there; and he had two mighty bad dogs, and they barked, and he went out; he was working, twisting some of his tobacco to put it up; and he went out to see who was coming; and they took him and took him off, and she never saw or heard tell of him any more.

*Question.* Was his body found?

*Answer.* He was found, I believe, hanging between old man Finker's and the factory, hanging up dead.

*Question.* Hanging to the limb of a tree?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What time in the night was this said to have been done?

*Answer.* This was soon in the night; directly after supper.

*Question.* Did the men have any disguises on—anything over their faces or bodies?

*Answer.* She never saw; she never went to the door; he went out of the door; she staid in.

*Question.* She did not see how many there were then, or whether they were disguised or not?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Is it known who murdered him?

*Answer.* No, sir; they don't know who it was.

*Question.* No one has ever been arrested charged with the killing?

*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Have you heard of any other colored men being killed?
*Answer.* No, sir, I have not heard of any other.
*Question.* Have you heard of any colored men being whipped in Winston County?
*Answer.* No, sir, I have not heard of any.
*Question.* Have you heard of any colored men being killed down in Noxubee County?
*Answer.* No, sir.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 7, 1871.

JAMES H. RIVES sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN. As this witness is called by the minority, General Blair may examine him.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Please give your residence and occupation.
*Answer.* I reside in Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi. I am a lawyer by profession.
*Question.* How long have you lived in Noxubee County?
*Answer.* I have lived in Noxubee County about twenty-seven years—from my childhood.
*Question.* Do you know of the alleged whipping of Betsey Lucas, living at Robert Jackson's?
*Answer.* Nothing, of my own knowledge, general, only from the report in the country at the time.
*Question.* You have a plantation adjacent?
*Answer.* In the neighborhood, sir.
*Question.* What did you hear at the time, from reliable persons?
*Answer.* Well, sir, I heard that there was a party of men went to Mr. Jackson's and Mr. Crosby's and Mr. Hinton's and to Mr. Price's. I think they were all, except Crosby, bachelors, and Crosby was a widower. That is the information I have. They all live in the same neighborhood, within two or three miles of each other, and they were all living with black women, to whom they were not married; they were living with them as their concubines.
*Question.* What did the party do when they went there?
*Answer.* The information I had at the time was that they whipped the men and the women too, but I understood afterwards that they did not whip the men, and directed the women that they must leave.
*Question.* Was their living and cohabiting with these women alleged as the reason for whipping them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; lewdness. There had been, I was informed, an effort made to indict the parties before the grand jury, for living in adultery, under the statutes of this State, but a recent decision made by our supreme court declared that it was not a violation of the statute unless the parties had lived together as man and wife; that is, that the man should hold the woman out as his wife; that it was no violation of the law of the State, or crime, to live in the way they were living up there.
*Question.* Cohabiting with them, without holding the women out as their wives, was not adultery?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; that it was not adultery under our statute, or fornication; not punishable under our statute.
*Question.* Were the parties disguised?
*Answer.* I understood that they were, sir.
*Question.* Did you ever see and talk to the men?
*Answer.* Not that I know of, sir.
*Question.* I mean the men who were living with these women.
*Answer.* No, sir; not upon this subject. I never mentioned that subject to either of them. I have seen them all, I believe, except Price, since. I have heard of Price, too. Price is a man that goes out but very little. He lives in the edge of Noxubee swamp, here, and you seldom ever see him; he seldom ever goes anywhere.
*Question.* There was nothing political in this matter, was there?
*Answer.* No, sir; nothing that I heard of at the time. These gentlemen, so far as I know, all voted, or had been voting, the democratic ticket, up to that time.
*Question.* The men were living in this way, with these women?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were planters in the country; they were all planters; there was nothing political in it, that I heard.
*Question.* It was merely offensive to the neighborhood that they should do this?

*Answer.* That is what I understood, sir.

*Question.* Was anything ever done with the parties who did this; any attempt ever made to punish them for it?

*Answer.* Not that I know of, sir.

*Question.* Do you recollect a transaction which occurred on William May's place, in the bottom, where some five families of negroes were living, who were driven off the place?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I think it was some time in the latter part of January or 1st of February last; it was some time in the early part of the present year. Mr. May is a farmer. His home place adjoins my farm; he lives north of me, and his swamp plantation is some two or three miles south of me. A few days after the negroes moved out the gentleman living on my place informed me that Mr. May had requested the loan of my wagon to move out some hands. The country there is under what is called the agricultural law, the stock law, under which persons are required by the statutes of the State in that neighborhood to keep their stock inclosed or keep them up. There is a boundary to that, which is the Noxubee swamp. There is but one fence kept up for all that country up there. Persons with surplus stock turn their stock into this swamp, and they have then a summer range, at no cost to the owner. This swamp plantation of May's lies immediately on the Noxubee swamp, and has a western and southwestern fence, and is the boundary of the stock law. I understood that there had been a good deal of complaint about persons going in there and killing the stock. The stock had been pretty much destroyed—to a considerable extent, it had been destroyed—and the negroes stated that persons went in on Saturday, I think, and told them that so many outrages had been perpetrated in their neighborhood that the people had come to the conclusion that they were guilty of it, and they must move out from there. They went immediately, I understood, and reported to him. That was Saturday that information was given to the negroes, and on Sunday morning wagons went in and moved the negroes out to Mr. May's home place, and to his brother-in-law's, Mr. Wooten's. I was told that my wagon hauled one family out. I do not know anything of it, of my own knowledge. I only know it from information I have received from persons in the neighborhood. I have heard Mr. May himself, who at the time was very indignant, speak of it, he and his wife. I saw him a few days afterward, and they spoke of it as a very unkind act to them. The negroes stated that the parties went in there—I think there were three or four persons, who were strangers to them—in day-time. They rode in on horseback, and told them that they must get out of there.

*Question.* Did they tell the negroes or not?

*Answer.* I just stated that they said there had been so many outrages, or so much stock killed, or stolen, or destroyed—something of the kind—that they would not be permitted to stay there longer, and must move out.

*Question.* They were living in the swamp where the cattle range was?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the farm they cultivated was the western boundary of the stock-law region of the country. That is my information.

*Question.* They had no cultivation in this swamp where they lived?

*Answer.* I think some of their little fields ran into the swamp to the river; one does. I know very little about the locality. I have hunted in the swamp, but have never been to May's house. I have hunted in the swamp and in the river in his farm and around his farm, but I do not know much otherwise about it.

*Question.* Do you know the fact that the stock ranging in the swamp had been depredated upon?

*Answer.* Only from report.

*Question.* Have you reason to believe it is true?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. One indictment was found against Mr. George H. Dare.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* A white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a white man. He left the country.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* For killing stock?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; for stealing stock.

*Question.* Did you know a man by the name of Sam. Coger, a negro man?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything as to the fact that he was killed?

*Answer.* He is not killed, sir, is my information.

*Question.* Is he not?

*Answer.* No, sir; he is living in this county now; so I am informed.

*Question.* Who told you he was living?

*Answer.* Mr. Hardin Brooks. He is living with Hardin Brooks now, and is in the county.

*Question.* When did Brooks tell you this?

*Answer.* He told me yesterday evening; and he told me he would have him here to-day or to-morrow. He said he might want to go to-day to Brooksville, but that he would bring him here to-morrow.

*Question.* Aleck Davis testified here yesterday that Sam. Coger was killed, and that Talliaferro told him this. Talliaferro testified to the same thing in Washington.

*Answer.* I was reading Talliaferro's testimony at the time, and when I came to that portion of it Brooks told me to stop. He said, "He is on Ben. Minnis's plantation, and he has had some trouble with a colored man about some colored woman." I do not know about the merits of it.

*Question.* He was shot in that row?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; so Brooks said yesterday.

*Question.* But not killed?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Davis stated yesterday that everybody knew he was killed.

*Answer.* Well, sir, Brooks says that he is not killed; that he is living on his plantation; and he said that he would produce him to-day or to-morrow if it was necessary.

*Question.* Do you know anything about a man named Dick Malone, said to have been killed?

*Answer.* I only knew Dick Malone from reputation. He was a blacksmith and did blacksmithing work on my farm, but I did not know him personally. He was a negro that bore a very excellent character.

*Question.* Did you hear about his being killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I heard of it a few days after he was killed, probably the next day.

*Question.* Who killed him, or was said to have killed him?

*Answer.* It was said that there was a party of disguised men who had gone upon the Malone plantation.

*Question.* Was any reason assigned for his killing?

*Answer.* I understood that they had whipped a negro on the plantation, and had left, or were leaving, and Dick had been around them, and at the time of the first difficulty, when they whipped the other boy, and when they went to leave, he followed them. He started off and said he was going to find out who they were. From that an altercation arose, so I understood, and he was shot. But that matter was investigated by Mr. Carpenter, a justice of the peace at Brooksville, and his testimony would be more full than I could give. I only speak from information.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of Bully Jack?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. In connection with my partner, Mr. Jarnagin, we defended a colored man, John Hill, who was first accused of killing Bully Jack. He was the brother-in-law of Bully Jack, and was arrested. After he was arrested a young man by the name of Ebenezer Glass was arrested for the same offense, and we defended Mr. Glass.

*Question.* What was the evidence as to the killing?

*Answer.* The evidence was, sir, that some persons rode up in the night-time to Bully Jack's house, and requested him to go down in the road, and assist to put a tire or wheel on a cart that had run off. The party stated that they were anxious to get on to Shaqualak by train time; that is the testimony of the wife; that he went down to the road with them, and shortly afterward she heard a scuffling, as though men were in a struggle, and then she heard men running, and they ran back to the big gate, which was about a hundred yards from where she lived, and there she heard firing, and when she got down there she found her husband dead. The evidence was that there were the tracks of four or of three men in the road and one on horseback, who seemed to have been pursuing Jack—three men besides Jack; one was a very small boot track, the other very large, the third a large brogan boot or shoe; it had that appearance.

*Question.* Was there a spur found?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe there was. Mr. Campbell, I think, the justice of the peace, who acted as coroner on that occasion, said something in his testimony about a spur, a small one; I do not remember his description of it, but I think it was a silver-plated spur.

*Question.* Was any motive assigned for this murder?

*Answer.* Only by his brother-in-law, John Hill. John Hill, in his testimony upon the trial, or after he was discharged, when he was introduced as a witness by the prosecution, stated that he had warned Bully Jack that he was in danger; that he was turbulent and meddlesome, interfering with other people's business in the quarrels of white people and black people; that he had told him he had better leave the country; that if he did not leave the country, he did not think he could possibly be permitted to live longer. That is about the statement, as well as I remember it, of John Hill, the brother-in-law of the deceased. He said that he was turbulent, and apt to intermeddle with the business and affairs of other people.

*Question.* Did these tracks indicate whether they were white or black people from the kind of shoe or boot that was worn?

*Answer.* I cannot tell. I have described the tracks. One was a very small one; it appeared to be a light boot, a fine boot, a pump-soled boot, or something of the kind. The other was a large boot; and the other seemed to be a brogan shoe, or a very coarse boot, something of that character. The spur, as I remember, was a very small spur; it could not have gone on the boot of a very large man. I remember noticing, in examining the spur, that it was a very small spur. I think it was a silver-plated spur of rather fine quality.

*Question.* Was there any evidence implicating Glass?

*Answer.* None in the world. The wife of Bully Jack said it was Glass; that she recognized him by his voice; but an *alibi*, as well as I remember, was proved for Glass by—I do not recollect how many witnesses, but there were several, and among them were one or two colored persons. He was killed pretty early in the night, and Glass was at his brother's, who lived from a mile to a mile and a quarter from where Bully Jack lived, and was in conversation with some colored people about labor, about working for him, when some guns were heard to fire. I think that was about the testimony, to the best of my recollection now. I know an *alibi* was proven to the satisfaction of the justice before whom he was being tried, and he was discharged.

*Question.* Something has been said about a quarrel with Cy. Jenkins by Bully Jack.

*Answer.* There was something said about it, but I cannot remember now what it was. There had been some misunderstanding between them about something, but I cannot remember what; but there was no testimony adduced upon the trial to implicate Cyrus Jenkins that I remember now; at least, I know he was not arrested.

*Question.* Did you ever hear anything of the whipping of Ben. Daly?

*Answer.* No, sir; I know nothing about it.

*Question.* Of Isham Lowry?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was not Isham Lowry whipped the same night Dick Malone was killed on the Malone plantation?

*Answer.* I never heard the name of the negro who was whipped. I heard the negro who was whipped was whipped because he was quarreling with his wife; he had been whipping her, perhaps, that night; I do not remember. I noticed that Mr. Taliaferro stated, perhaps, that some of the negroes were whipped upon Mr. Willbanks's plantation. That is not true. He is a brother-in-law of mine. The only woman whipped at all was an old negro woman named Liza, who was accustomed to say what she pleased. The yard was full, and Mr. Willbanks came to the door, and these men were trying to get to them in the kitchen, and she said something to them, and one of them told her she had better hush. She told them she would not, and my information from Mr Willbanks is that one of the men slapped her with his open hand; but none of the negroes were whipped on that plantation.

*Question.* Do you understand that they were disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Taliaferro testified that several of them were whipped severely.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he did. That is not true, sir.

*Question.* Aleck Davis testifies to the same thing.

*Answer.* That is not true. Mr. Willbanks is in the county, and if the committee desire information on this subject I will have him sent for; but I have heard nothing of anybody being whipped on that place more than I have stated at that time. He is a brother-in-law of mine, and I was in the neighborhood a few days afterward.

*Question.* Did you hear anything of the whipping of Aleck Hughes?

*Answer.* I heard something of that, but not until some time afterward. That occurred in the neighborhood of Mushulaville, I believe.

*Question.* He brought suit about it?

*Answer.* The parties are indicted in the court at Oxford. Mr. Higgins and others are indicted at Oxford. I think we have a copy of the indictment in our office; we are defending them.

*Question.* What is the testimony in regard to the whipping of Hughes?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I do not know.

*Question.* What does Higgins say about it?

*Answer.* He says he is not guilty of it.

*Question.* Does he say that he knows whether the man was whipped or not?

*Answer.* No, sir; he does not know anything about it. From my knowledge of John Higgins's character, I should say he is one of the last men in the county who would be engaged in lawlessness of that kind. He is prudent and circumspect. He lived near Mushulaville; he lived in the edge of Mushulaville. I believe Aleck lived near there.

*Question.* This witness states that one of the parties was recognized by Aleck Hughes by his riding a horse that Aleck had sold him?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about that at all. I do not know what Aleck's

testimony was before the grand jury. Aleck, after he testified, never returned; he remained at Oxford, or somewhere, in charge of the marshal. He has never been back, according to my information. I do not know what his testimony is.

*Question.* Do you know anything about a nego boy named Bill Coleman, who says he was whipped and ran away from Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know anything about him.

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of Johnson Keitt last March, in Winston County?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Nor Solomon Triplett?

*Answer.* I heard something of the kind of Solomon Triplett, but it has been so long ago that I do not remember the particulars at all. The parties are indicted in the Federal court for the killing of Solomon Triplett.

*Question.* There was a man found dead in the river up here, said to be the body of a man who was in the custody of Bridges. Do you know anything about that case?

*Answer.* Only from information, sir. I am defending some of the parties in the circuit court who were indicted for a riot—some colored men; we are defending some of them.

*Question.* State the facts in the case as far as you have them from information?

*Answer.* My understanding of the matter at that time, from Mr. Moore, the man who lost, my recollection is, a mare, was that the negro, whose name I have forgotten, had stolen his mare, or his mule, or something of the kind, and he sent other negroes in pursuit. They overtook the boy and arrested him and brought him back. He was carried before Mr. Rice, a justice of the peace in this county, and upon the testimony, in default of bail, he committed him to the constable to be brought to Macon to jail. It was late in the day, too late for the constable to come here that night, and he carried him to his home, and confined him in an out-house by fastening the door by locking, and he chained him somehow, and during the night the negro disappeared. That was on Saturday, as well as I remember, and the rumor got out in the neighborhood that parties had gone in the night and taken the negro from Bridges and killed him. Upon that rumor, on Sunday morning, Bridges received information that the negroes were becoming very much excited and he had better look out for himself; and on Sunday night he was awakened by the barking of his watch-dog. He got up and looked out at a window and saw a party of men, whom he suspected to be negroes at the time, coming from the front yard. He then went to the back door, and he there saw another party. He seized a gun, a rifle that he had, and jumped out at his back door and went in the nearest direction for the woods, running, and came very near running into another party. It seemed that there were three parties or more approaching his house. There was some considerable firing, and Bridges made his escape into the woods. The negroes went to the house and took possession of the premises. They told Mrs. Bridges she must make less noise; she was screaming. They told her not to have any disturbance there; that they did not propose to do her any harm, but they intended to find out where this negro was, calling him by name. I do not know what became of them. The next day they met at a little place called Bigbee Valley to hunt for the negro, as they stated; and I think they hunted Monday, and Tuesday perhaps; and I heard that a body was found in the river some three or four or five miles from there, in the Tombigbee River; but I think they were unable to identify the body. It was reported by some persons that it was the negro who had been charged with stealing the horse. It was reported by others as the body of a negro deck-hand on a steamboat, who had fallen from the steamboat and been drowned.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How long was this after the disappearance of the negro that this body was found?

*Answer.* I think it was Tuesday. The negro disappeared on Saturday night.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Did you hear that there was any note left at the house where that negro was chained, and from which he was taken?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard of it. The sheriff, Mr. Moore, went there immediately to investigate the matter; either himself or his deputies. I know his deputies were out there. They were there pretty much all the week. The matter created considerable excitement in the county among both blacks and whites. Everybody in that region of country, as far as I could find, was anxious to have the matter ferreted out. They were doing their best. But I can only speak from information on that subject; I have no knowledge of my own; I was not on the ground.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Do you know anything about the killing of Wissler?

*Answer.* No, sir; only from information. I saw him the next morning after he was killed.

*Question.* Have you any information of the existence of any organized body of men in this county known as Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I have not, general. I have never affiliated in any way with secret organizations of a political character, or any other kind. I have, perhaps, been more censured for speaking against Ku-Klux and Loyal Leagues than any other man in my county, and if any such organization as that existed in the county I would be about the last man they would let it be known to.

*Question.* You knew this man Talliaferro?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I knew him; I had a very slight acquaintance with him. On Monday evening—I cannot remember the date, but some time in January, I think, though, perhaps, it was towards the middle, or last of January—he had been engaged to teach a freedmen's school in the neighborhood in which my farm is located. I had told the freedmen where they could get timber to build the school-house, and had instructed Mr. Mahone, my manager, to give them the use of my team to haul up the timber; and Talliaferro had been engaged, I understood, to teach the school on the Monday before. I never had seen Talliaferro. I had heard of him frequently in the county, and knew his family from reputation as a very clever family, and I had heard him spoken of as a very clever man. On Monday evening he came to see me, and introduced himself, and asked if I objected to his boarding with Mrs. Mahone, as he was going to teach the freedmen's school. I told him that I had no objection; that I did not furnish Mr. Mahone's family with food myself. Talliaferro went away. He was a little in liquor at the time; not drunk, but a little intoxicated. The next night, about 9 o'clock, Tuesday night, after I had laid down, I was called up. A messenger from my farm came and informed me that the day before Mr. Talliaferro had borrowed a mule from Mr. Mahone; that neither Talliaferro nor the mule had been seen up there since he had got it, and I had better look out for my mule. I got up and dressed, and came down town, and went to Judge Ames, who was the county superintendent of education, to know that he had seen anything of Talliaferro on Tuesday. He stated then that Taliaferro was at his house until late in the evening. I came back to the hotel, and they said Talliaferro had just left the hotel. I went to the stable, and found him in the stable asleep. I asked the livery man if Talliaferro had a mule there. He said no, he had a horse there, and they pointed out a gray horse, which they said was Taliaferro's. I asked if they knew what Taliaferro had done with the mule. He said, yes, he had swapped the mule for the horse. I asked if they knew where the mule was, and they said he was away; the mule was about three miles in the country, in the possession of a freedman; that after they had traded he had traded him to the stable-man; after they had traded they had sent the mule out to the country. I sent a messenger out immediately and had the mule brought in, and I had Taliaferro arrested by Mr. Echols, a policeman on the place. They were using this room in the court-house, in which the committee is now sitting, for the jail; the jail was not then completed. The next morning, after breakfast, I came down to the office, and Echols came in to see me, and said he did not know Taliaferro personally, but knew his family. He said they were both Virginians, and that his family was a very clever family, and he did want me to prosecute Taliaferro for trading off my mule. Some gentleman from Mobile, a merchant, came also to intercede for Taliaferro. Taliaferro then sent for me himself. I came in here and talked with him, and he said he was very sorry for what he had done; that he had done the thing unwittingly; that he had been on a spree, and he would not have done it if he had not been a spree; that he was sorry for what he had done; that he needed money; that he had no idea he would have done the thing if he had not been under the influence of liquor; and he requested that I should not prosecute him. I told him I should not make any compromise with him; that it was contrary to the statutes of the State to compromise a felony in any way; but I would leave it with the magistrate, and if he would clear me of any costs for the arrest I had nothing further to say about it. I went then and told the mayor, Echols, the policeman, and this Mobile gentleman, and let them make their statement. I told the mayor I was satisfied with whatever course he chose to pursue. If Mr. Taliaferro would pay the cost of his arrest I had no desire to prosecute him. Mr. Howell, the livery-man, came in and seemed to be a little vexed at what I had done. He said that Taliaferro was not drunk; that he was cool, sober, and had been trying to trade the mule all day, and that I ought not to have turned him loose; but I heard nothing more of Mr. Taliaferro until I heard of him as a witness against the Ku-Klux. That is all I know about him. He left the country immediately. I never heard of him until I heard of him in disguise at Oxford. A gentleman said he met him there with pretty bushy whiskers and a hat pulled down over his face, but recognized him, and spoke to him, and had some conversation with him. I heard nothing more of him until his testimony given before this committee.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* When did he take the mule?

*Answer.* It was some time in January.

*Question.* This year?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; 1871. Some time from the 1st to the 10th.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* The testimony of Davis and other parties is that Taliaferro was highly esteemed in this community until he testified against the Ku-Klux; that he was introduced into the best families, and was highly esteemed. That testimony was given here a few days ago by a negro named Davis, a member of the legislature.

*Answer.* I do not know the means of knowledge Davis has on that subject, or what he calls the best families. I will state this: I will do Mr. Taliaferro the justice to say that his position had been good up to the time that he took my mule, so far as I know. But I will say this also: that I was censured very severely by his neighbors and by the community for not prosecuting him.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* At the time?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; at the time; before anything was said about his giving testimony upon the subject of the Ku-Klux, and before he went to Oxford in June, or was before this committee. I was censured very severely at the time. My own brother-in-law and next neighbor, Mr. May, both saw me a few days afterward and said that I had turned Taliaferro loose, and nobody knew what had become of him, and if he would take my mule in that way he would take other people's property, and that horse-stealing was so common in the country I ought not to have permitted him to have gone at large. Thereupon I made the statement to them that I have made here as to the recommendation which he received from Echols and this Mobile merchant, whose name I have forgotten.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Their intercession was by reason of his family?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. I will state that Taliaferro's family connections in this county and in Lowndes are good. He has an uncle, Captain Benjamin Taliaferro, in this county, a man of unblemished character, and formerly of high position, standing as well as any family, and Dr. Taliaferro, of Lowndes County, is of as high standing as any family. I will say further that we were highly gratified, at least I was, when I heard that Captain Taliaferro had consented to teach the freedmen's school in my neighborhood. I was anxious to have a school-house erected on my place, and have school taught there, and was gratified when they told me that Captain Taliaferro had concluded to take the school; but I had never heard of Taliaferro at the time he took my mule; I had never heard then of his being a witness in connection with Ku-Klux; politics had nothing to do in it with me or with the gentlemen who censured me for not prosecuting him. I will give the committee the name of a gentleman Mr. Taliaferro lived with last year, Mr. Richard Wooten—he lives near Brooksville, in this county, and William A. May, the brother-in-law of Wooten. My farm adjoins May's.

*Question.* Did Taliaferro carry on planting on a large scale here?
*Answer.* No, sir, with Wooten as a hand. That is my information. He had no farm of his own.

*Question.* His testimony was that he had a farm.
*Answer.* No, he had no farm; he lived with Mr. Wooten. Wooten has not a large farm himself; he is a man of moderate means, a very clever man, but a man in humble circumstances. Taliaferro lived the year before with Wooten. Where he had lived before that, if in the county, I do not know. I never heard of him until he lived at Wooten's.

*Question.* You never heard of him as carrying on farming on his own account in this county?
*Answer.* No, sir; he worked as a hand with Wooten, is my information; but people treated him kindly in 1870, and up to the time of his leaving the country under the suspicion of having stolen my mule. Up to the time when he left under that suspicion we had never heard anything against his character.

*Question.* Do you know anything of any efforts to intimidate the black people here, and to coerce them in casting their votes?
*Answer.* General, I do not.
*Question.* Did you ever hear of anything of the kind?
*Answer.* No, sir; on the contrary, if there is any intimidation at all, it is the other way. The black people vote together, and if one of them seeks to vote differently from the way the most of them vote he is afraid to do so. There is a man now at work on my place that has been afraid to vote to-day, because he said to me, "I want to vote for certain parties who have not been nominated by the black people's convention, and I do not want to have any controversy with the black people, and so I will not go to the election at all to-day." He is driving my wagon here to-day in town. I will give his name, Newton Winters.

*Question.* How is it with the negroes who work with you?

*Answer.* General, I never had any conversation with them on the subject of politics. One of them is one of the election managers at Hughes's box to-day; Moses Morgan. I believe there are about six or seven, five to seven, others on my place, who are entitled to vote, and I do not know to-day how either of them will vote. I will say for the information of the committee, that in 1869, when the adoption or rejection of our present constitution was before the people of this State, at the request of the planters, and representing their interest, I consented, although not entitled to a vote, or to hold office, being at that time a disfranchised man, to become a candidate for the legislature, simply for the purpose of canvassing the county, they believing that I had some influence with the negro vote, and I went before them representing the white people as desirous of having no further political contest with the black people on account of race or color; that in 1865 and in 1867, the white people having control of the legislation of the country, acts were passed, of which the negroes complained, I thought, justly; that when that legislature of 1866 and 1867 adjourned and was dissolved, the convention met in 1868, which was purely republican, and adopted clauses in the constitution which disfranchised the white people, or a great many of them, and which we believed unjust. My proposition to the black men of the community was, now let us, so far as Noxubee County is concerned, have no further quarrel on the subject of politics. Here is General Dent, a candidate for governor on one ticket. What is that? The conservative ticket. Here is General Alcorn on the other, who represents what is understood as the radical or republican ticket. I do not care which of these you vote for, nor do the white people of this county, but legislation is to be adopted which is to govern us in our internal relations, the one with the other. You black people represent the bone and muscle and labor of the country, and the white people represent the capital. In a great many respects labor and capital conflict. Their interests will conflict in many respects, but in a great many other respects they are homogeneous. We will give you the senate, if you desire it, and we will take the representative branch of the legislature, so that if one side is disposed to pass a law that will be prejudicial to the interests of the other, one can be a check on the other. So far as I am individually concerned, I am not entitled to a vote, but if I was I would give it to Alcorn, because he is a man of substance—a man of our own State—a man that I know. With that proposition, I went to the leaders of the negroes in the county, and requested them to go with me around and discuss this matter jointly; and we had one discussion at Shuqualak—one joint discussion. Dr. Hill, of this place, was on the ticket with me; Mr. Thomas, a former sheriff, and Mr. Duprez. The discussion at Shuqulak did not result to the interest of what they understood to be the black folk's ticket. I closed the argument. They put a school-teacher down there to catechise me in violation of the regulations. I was raised there in the neighborhood, and that drew the black people all around me. At the close of my argument, a little before dark, I had two or three hundred black people close around the stand. I never could get another joint discussion, and I never could get ten or fifty black people out at one time to hear me speak until the night before election. That was up at Deerbrook. There I made another speech to about a hundred negroes. The next morning the election was to open. Going out from where I spoke east towards Brooksville, I expected to be at the election at Brooksville early the next morning. Going out that night, I went out a mile or so, and staid all night, and came on Dr. Mat. Clay, who had walked down. There were more freedmen, and they made me stop in front of Clay's gate and reiterate many things I had said in my other speech, and many said they were going to vote for me. One negro, who seemed to be the leader, said, "I want to see you at Brooksville, to-morrow, to shake your hand." The next morning I went on to Brooksville, by a by-way. Just before I got there, I came upon a company of negroes, marching with a drum, up to a school-house near the edge of the town. When I came up, they shouted, "Hurrah for Jim Reeves," and came around me. One of them in charge was Walter Myers, near here. I discovered it was a league, and they told me how much they liked me, and how much I had defended them in their little difficulties, but they said, "Captain, we cannot vote for you, not one of us. We like you, and we want to hear that speech you made last night." I told them I had no time to speak. They were going with arms; many of them had their pistols buckled around them, and as I was informed, they proposed to march up into Brooksville, to the polls. I advised them not to do that; that that was a lawless demonstration, and it would provoke retaliation, and they had better not do anything of the kind; that so far as I was concerned, I had always told them I did not care how they voted; it was a matter of small concern to me how they voted; if they wanted to go, to send their men by detail, and vote by detail, but not march up in procession; that they would be fired into certainly by somebody; that it was a lawless demonstration to march up in procession in that way, with arms, and they had better not do it. There I left them. They came up in that way. I have never known any white man in the county to direct the vote of the negro, or to seek to intimidate him in any way, or to control him in his political movements or opinions.

*Question.* You speak of this Loyal League, its members going around in armed bodies, making their appearance on such occasions. I would like to have your opinion as to whether or not the existence of that League had anything to do with the Ku-Klux, as a countervailing organization?

*Answer.* Well, general, directly after the surrender the negroes organized what they called freedmen's aid societies, which were understood to be purely charitable. In a little while it began to be public and understood among the people that the black people swore in that society to stand up to each other, and support each other—to support their color in all contests; and whenever a difficulty occurred in the country between a white man and a black man, the blacks invariably rallied *en masse* without any inquiry, so far as ever came under my observation, relative to the merits of the difficulty. As long as the military remained in the country, I heard of no counter organization among the white people, but as soon as the military was removed, and the white people were without any military protection, it was then I heard that there were organizations being formed among the white people as a check upon these other organizations.

*Question.* For protection?

*Answer.* For protection. I remember, I think it was some time in the early part of the year 1870, there was a young Mr. Farmer in this county going from his residence to Brooksville, along a lane that was hedged on both sides with burdock-hedge; he was riding a wild horse. In the lane he met one of these companies of freedmen's aid or Loyal Leagues, or whatever they might be. There was a young colored man beating a drum, and he got pretty close to the fence, or hedge, and when the procession got near he commenced beating the drum pretty fast, which frightened the horse. Farmer told him he would whip him if he ever met him for that piece of impudence. Some months after they met in Brooksville and commenced to fight. The negro was the stouter man of the two, and threw Farmer or knocked him down, I do not remember which. The negroes crowded around, and maybe Mr. John Black and one or two white men ran up and stopped the fuss. In a little while every negro in the town rallied around. They caused every house in the town to be closed; every white man disappeared; there were only fifteen or twenty. They were in terror, and they sent off—that was Saturday I think—for assistance. The negroes threatened to burn the town. Mr. Farmer was arrested and placed in charge of the officers and started down here. The negroes still rallied and threatened to burn the town; and on Monday there was a delegation went from here of, I do not know how many, I suppose about thirty negroes. There were some white men went up. There was a large collection of men in arms, white and black. The white men got in and got possession of the town, and the negroes were in three parties; the party coming from Macon, the party from Deerbrook, and from Crawfordville. It was thought there was going to be a very serious matter of it. Isham Stewart, the leading negro of the county, was here, and I went to him and told him he had influence with the negroes and ought to stop such a demonstration. He said he would go to Brooksville, but he was afraid; that if he went up there in the excited condition of the country, his position being known, he was afraid the white men would shoot him. I told him I would go with him if he would go and make the negroes go home; that I understood the white people had assembled to keep the negroes from burning the town. I went to the depot to get a car, but there was no engine there. I went to the superintendent, Mr. Hosford, and told him he must send us up in some way, and he put us on a hand-car, and we went up within a mile of Brooksville, and all along the road we were passing armed negroes. Isham turned back all we passed. We got within a mile of the town and found the main party of the negroes that had left here halted. They said they had received information that the matter had been compromised and settled between the white folks and the blacks.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What year was that?

*Answer.* That was in 1870, I think.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You think it was organizations of that kind, and the threatening demonstrations made, that created the disposition on the part of the whites to organize some countervailing society?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that has been my impression.

*Question.* Did you hear recently anything in regard to the affair that took place over in Lowndes County at a negro meeting, where a white man named Lee was shot by them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I heard something of it. I was at my plantation, within twelve miles of there, when it occurred.

*Question.* What did you hear of it?

*Answer.* I heard two statements.

*Question.* What were they?

*Answer.* I heard from a negro man that Mr. Lee had gone up to where some parties were speaking and had made some remark which the negro could not hear, and thereupon somebody fired a pistol, and from that the row occurred. He was in the back part of the crowd, and could not see. He left there as soon as it was ascertained that Lee was killed. Then I heard from Dr. Inabinet, a citizen of this county, and a republican, on the board of supervisors appointed by General Alcorn, who was in the immediate neighborhood, that his information was that Lee went into the crowd. He was a stranger at Artesia. These parties had marched in with music and banners flying, and had halted. He went up. They were halted somewhere near the line of the railroad, and he went to where they were, and some man asked him where he was going. He was going up near where the speaker was, and he said he was going to hear what that fellow had to say; and thereupon an altercation occurred between him and a negro, and one of them, with a saber, struck him behind the head a very serious blow.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Struck Lee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and others shot him. There were a good many shots fired; I do not know how many. Inabinet stated further, in that conversation, that he was going through Oktibbeha County the next day or two afterward, and came upon a body of white men lying at a bridge a half a mile from Starksville. They said they had sent a scout on. They understood the negroes were at a church a few miles below, and they were lying there waiting to know what they were to do. He came on a little farther to Starksville, and was informed that the negroes were encamped at a little church between there and Artesia. He came on down within two miles of the church, and found two white men in the road holding their horses, who seemed to be on picket, or something that way. They told him he had better not go any farther; that the negroes had possession of the church, and were swearing vengeance against any white man that went in that direction; but, I suppose, relying on his party affiliations, he went on. He said he became uneasy, but he went on. When he got there he found the negroes breaking. A negro by the name of Nettles had come there and broken them up. The way the negroes came together was, a party had gone out to arrest some negroes from Artesia, and they had refused to be arrested; and the officers had gone on to Nettle's house, still farther west, in the neighborhood of the Choctaw agency, and he was not at home. Thereupon the leader of that party had gone to protect Nettles, and put his people in camp at this church.

*Question.* By whose order was the arrest attempted?

*Answer.* I do not know except from information. I understood that warrants were issued by Judge Orr, the circuit judge of this district.

*Question.* To arrest the negroes engaged in the killing of Lee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Were any arrested?

*Answer.* I understood there were a great many arrested, sir.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that the men engaged in arresting them under Judge Orr's order had been themselves arrested?

*Answer.* I learned that yesterday, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear that anything had been done to the sheriff for making the arrests?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard that he and the deputies who had assisted in the arrest, and the citizens who had been summoned to assist them, had all been arrested.

*Question.* Did you hear that the justice of the peace who had made the first order for their arrest had been dismissed from office?

*Answer.* No, sir; I heard nothing except in connection with Judge Orr and the sheriff and his deputies.

*Question.* Was not practical resistance made to the arrest?

*Answer.* I think the military came in. The negroes resisted until the military came. That is my information from Dr. Inabinet. When he got to Artesia they had a military guard there. That was the day before, he told me; the next morning after the occurrence.

*Question.* United States troops?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; United States troops.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Assisted in arresting the negroes?

*Answer.* That is what I understood, that they were there to assist, or were assisting. My understanding is that they were assisting at the time, under the authority received from Judge Orr and the sheriff.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was the pretext for arresting the sheriff and others engaged in making these arrests?

*Answer.* I did not learn the particulars; I just learned that it had been done by an

order from Judge Hill, United States district judge of our district; upon what sort of proceedings I do not know. I just learned the fact that it had been done. In relation to these matters, gentlemen, I have studied this matter pretty closely and pretty attentively, and I am satisfied that there have been designing men of both parties who have desired to keep these things alive for the purpose of political preferment. I believe that the mass of the people are anxious to do right, but a few political leaders of both parties, who have been seeking office and place, have produced whatever mischief has been done in a political way, in this county at least.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Do you think the Ku-Klux organization was made for the purpose of protecting the whites against this organization among the colored people?

*Answer.* That is my belief, from the information I have.

*Question.* Then your opinion is that that organization was composed of good men?

*Answer.* I suppose that there must have been some good men in it, from the reputation which they have made as to practices. There must have been some good men in it. I do not suppose they ought to have had trifling men.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What is the rate of taxation in this State now?

*Answer.* The tax is a matter of record. The State prescribes an *ad valorem* tax, for State tax, and the county supervisors regulate the county, and can put on what they please.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* The first part of your examination related to the case of Betsy Lucas, and you went on to say that a party of men went on to Jackson Cosby's, Hinton's, and Price's, all of whom lived with black women as concubines, and that they whipped the women, and directed them to leave. Did you understand how large a number of men were concerned in the purification of that locality?

*Answer.* I think, to the best of my recollection, there were only eight or ten; not more than ten, perhaps.

*Question.* By what refinement of ethics were the women whipped and the men left to go free?

*Answer.* Well, judge, the presumption by outsiders now is that the men were whipped and they deny it. That was the impression, that the men were whipped and they deny it. The women were whipped, and they acknowledge it. I do not know by what refinement of ethics it was done. If I had been there I should have as certainly allowed it to the rascals as the women.

*Question.* Did you understand that the black women say that their paramours were whipped as well as themselves?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard that they said anything about it, except that they acknowledge that they were whipped themselves.

*Question.* Is it not fair to presume that they would have spoken of their lovers having been whipped as well as themselves, if they had been whipped?

*Answer.* I suppose so, unless they were induced by their lovers to withhold the fact, because the odium which would attach to them for having been whipped for such a thing in the community would have necessarily driven them away.

*Question.* Were these four gentlemen whom you have named cotton-planters?

*Answer.* When you speak of a planter, judge, the idea conveyed is of a man of extensive means. We have a sort of distinction here. When we say a farmer, we mean a man of but little means. Those men are farmers, and by saying that I mean that they are men of moderate means.

*Question.* Owning land and cultivating it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but only small places. I do not suppose they own over two hundred and forty acres of land.

*Question.* Not able, probably, to indulge in the luxury of regular wives?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; there is no difficulty on that score. Our theory is in this country that a wife will support herself.

*Question.* In this matter of miscegenation in this part of the country, is it your information that the black women seduce the white men, or that the white men seduce the black women?

*Answer.* I think they are both pretty well seduced together. I do not think there is much seduction either way.

*Question.* Is that practice so uncommon in the country that it is thought worthy of a Ku-Klux visitation in order to correct such irregularity?

*Answer.* Well, living together, as I understand they were living together, is a thing that is very uncommon. I do not know any other instance within my knowledge either in this country or elsewhere. That white men and black women have frequent intercourse I have no doubt is true, but that they live together as these parties did, is a thing of rare occurrence.

*Question.* That is regarded as more obnoxious than these accidental or occasional cases of sexual commerce?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is the practice itself of sexual commerce between the two races frowned upon and denounced by the community generally?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my information, that persons of respectability denounce it of both races.

*Question.* In point of fact, there are a great many of the mahogany color in this community?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, a great many. There are, however, fewer than a person would suppose from a knowledge of the former condition of society here, though there are a good many.

*Question.* In the presence of the great fact that this commerce between the two races has been going on for generations here, how do you account for the severe denunciation by the democratic party against what is called negro equality?

*Answer.* Upon the same principle on which I would account for the fact that a man at the North will go to a house where lewd women hold themselves out for sale, and have intercourse with them, and yet refuse to introduce those women into his family. Just upon the same principle it is done.

*Question.* Do you think the opinion has been a sincere and well-grounded one, that the introduction of negro suffrage would tend to produce social equality among the two races?

*Answer.* I think that it has prevailed to a greater or less extent. The people think that the natural result of it must be in time to break down to a considerable extent that barrier which has heretofore been interposed between the two races in a social point of view.

*Question.* Do the southern white men apprehend any danger to their own virtue, or that their own principles will be undermined, and that they will be led to intermarry with the negroes because of the extension of equal, civil, and political rights to the blacks?

*Answer.* I do not know of any such apprehension as that on the part of the southern men, sir.

*Question.* They do not apprehend that they themselves will ever be in danger of intermixing freely, socially, and sexually with the blacks?

*Answer.* No, sir; the apprehension seems to be this: that the conferring of the right of suffrage on the negro, and his equality before the law, and his right to all the privileges of the free schools, will in process of time bring the two races together in the school-room as children, and that in that way the principles of their children and the rising generation will eventually be more or less affected. That is the apprehension.

*Question.* The apprehension is founded on the fear that they will be brought together in the school-room?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that this contaminating influence, as we regard it, will be brought about upon the white race in that way eventually. There is no immediate danger apprehended now.

*Question.* Have not the two races been raised side by side from time immemorial, under the same roof, intermingling as children, and growing up together as young men and young women?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it supposed that the school-room will be any more dangerous to their virtue?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in this way: when they mingled together heretofore the white child recognized his own superiority; he was the child of the owner, and the negro or colored child was recognized as the child of the slave. The negro himself recognized that supposed superiority, and in recognizing it showed a proper deference. When you would see the negro child and the white child at play together around the plantation, the negro child invariably gave way to the white, and the white children were often domineering in consequence.

*Question.* Did it not follow as a necessary result, from the fact that the one was the dominant and the other the inferior or servile race, that the negro women had not the same power of resisting the lust and temptations of the master or the master's son?

*Answer.* I suppose that that had a great deal to do with it.

*Question.* Do you not think that the dangers of sexual commerce between the two races are greatly diminished by the fact that the blacks are now free?

*Answer.* I think it has been very little diminished.

*Question.* Do you think that the blacks, as a matter of choice, would seek to intermarry with the whites?

*Answer.* I do.

*Question.* What evidence have you of that?

*Answer.* Just this evidence, judge, that as the black woman sought the superior, or white man, to have intercourse with him, the black man has always sought, as we

understand, to have intercourse with the white woman when he could, on account of this superiority of race.

*Question.* I ask what evidence you have that the blacks, as a matter of choice, would seek to intermarry with the whites?

*Answer.* I say that the evidence of that results from this known principle existing in the minds of the negroes to seek intercourse with the superior race. That is the evidence I have.

*Question.* You have no idea that the white race here would ever seek to intermarry with the black race?

*Answer.* No, not as a class; certainly not. There are instances where white men have married black women, and where black men have married white women.

*Question.* Are they not so extremely rare as to be regarded as exceptional cases?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, they are; but I will state to you frankly that they are rare, and the more so on account of the fear of severe punishment on the part of both races.

*Question.* Have you any law upon your statute-book forbidding the intermarriage of the races?

*Answer.* We formerly had until the civil-rights bill was passed by Congress.

*Question.* You have none now?

*Answer.* None.

*Question.* Yet you know of no intermarriage taking place between the two races?

*Answer.* Not in my own county, except occasionally I notice such things in the newspapers.

*Question.* The two races are entirely free?

*Answer.* Stop a moment. Mr. Smith, who came here a Federal soldier and was discharged, married a negro woman in this town; and a young man raised in the county married, by the dictation, as I understood, of a negro magistrate in Kemper County, a negro woman. He got his license in this county and went into Kemper and was married by William Nave, the negro magistrate. I dislike to give the names, but I can do so. The young man was of as respectable connection as any man in this community. He was a boy hardly twenty-one years old. He was left by his mother on the homestead farm, after the death of his father and the family broke up, to control and direct the farm, and this woman went there, and he became intimate with her, and lived with her as these men up here, Cosby and the others, and the young men of the neighborhood met and told him he must get rid of that woman; that she must leave there; that they could not permit him to live in that way with her. He consulted, as I am informed, with the negro magistrate, Bill Nave, of Kemperly, to know what to do, and Nave told him there was but one way, to go and get a license and marry the woman, and set them at defiance; that he had the right under the law to do it; and he did it. The license was issued; the register here issued it. Those are two instances that have occurred in that way. This Mr. Smith came here a Federal soldier. He was discharged from some cause by the Federal officers here. He lived here; he was a common laborer about; worked at the depot; he became intimate with this woman and married her. This other young man married under the circumstances I have mentioned.

*Question.* Was it a common circumstance before the war for the owner of slaves to number his own children among his slaves?

*Answer.* I do not think it was, sir. It was occasionally the fact, but it was not a common circumstance.

*Question.* You have heard of such cases?

*Answer.* O, yes; I have heard of such cases.

*Question.* You once heard of a Vice-President of the United States having quite a family of colored children, did you not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Richard M. Johnson, of Kentucky.

*Question.* Was not his example followed to a greater or less extent throughout all the Southern States?

*Answer.* I do not know that his example was followed. I state the facts.

*Question.* Similar cases?

*Answer.* I have stated the fact already that there were instances of that kind, but whose example caused, or whether it originated before Johnson's time or when, I cannot say.

*Question.* Do you think that since the slave has become a freeman cohabitation between the two races is on the increase or is diminishing?

*Answer.* I have already stated that I think it has been greatly diminishing. It results from this fact, that the young men of the country who used to indulge in these things when there were no such things as chartered lewd houses in this country anywhere, and the colored people were slaves, were not afraid of being prosecuted or brought up before the law if from this intercourse a child should result, but now they apprehend such a result as that, which would be disgraceful. For that reason, if for no other, this thing has diminished.

*Question.* It operates as a restraint upon them that they may be prosecuted for bastardy?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You spoke about May's place in the bottom and certain colored people who were driven out of the swamp. Who did this swamp belong to?

*Answer.* A portion of it to the United States. I reckon some of it is public land, and it belonged to different parties. Many persons in this prairie out here not having enough timber, go in and buy a small piece there.

*Question.* Did you understand that these men who were driven out were settlers upon the public lands?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were tenants of Mr. May, or hired by him.

*Question.* They did not live on the Government land, but on his place?

*Answer.* That is my information.

*Question.* His plantation included their fields?

*Answer.* I think they have one little field in the swamp, but I do not know of but one.

*Question.* Is that field on Government land?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is Mr. May's. I do not know that there is any Government land in there at all, judge. There is a great deal of Government land across the river, and it may extend across.

*Question.* Do you say this forcible ejection was with or against Mr. May's consent?

*Answer.* It was against his consent. It was just a notice to these hands that were there that on account of depredations which had been committed in the neighborhood upon the stock, the community would not permit them to remain.

*Question.* How large a body of men did you understand was engaged in this ejection?

*Answer.* Three.

*Question.* Only three?

*Answer.* Three. They were not disguised, and were strangers to the negroes.

*Question.* Have their names ever been ascertained?

*Answer.* Not that I have ever heard.

*Question.* How many families were removed?

*Answer.* I think there were five.

*Question.* Were they taken into the public highway and dumped down, or what became of them?

*Answer.* No, sir; they took and hauled them to Mr. May's home place and to Mr.

*Question.* You say a man named George H. Dare was indicted for stealing stock?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; hogs near that same place.

*Question.* And that he has fled?

*Answer.* He has fled or gone.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Is it not quite common that in stealing stock some worthless white man associates with him negroes?

*Answer.* It is not now; it was directly after the surrender, before society became settled down. There were a great many such organizations as that, white men at the head of them, and they would send negroes in to do the dirty work, and get out the property, and they would get the benefit of it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was Bully Jack a bad negro?

*Answer.* I only knew him from reputation; just what his brother-in-law, John Hill, gave him.

*Question.* Hill had been prosecuted for his murder, had he not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and discharged.

*Question.* And he was the man that gave him a bad character?

*Answer.* He said what I repeated.

*Question.* You never heard anything against his character except from Hill?

*Answer.* I never heard anything of his character one way or the other.

*Question.* You spoke of the Willbanks plantation, and said something about the yard being full of men, and one of them having slapped a negro woman. Did you understand that those men were disguised?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How large a body of men did you understand they were?

*Answer.* Somewhere from twenty to thirty.

*Question.* Was this in day-time or night-time?

*Answer.* At night, I understood.

*Question.* Did you understand for what purpose this body of men was upon that plantation in the night-time?

*Answer.* No, sir. A cistern is on the road-side, and they were there at the cistern, and out by the road, and the man that struck this woman walked to the cabin.

*Question.* They were watering their horses?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were watering themselves.

*Question.* Did you understand what mission they were on?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Did you hear of any mischief they committed that night?

*Answer.* That was the night on which they say Dick Malone was killed.

*Question.* How far was this from where Dick Malone was killed, on the Malone plantation?

*Answer.* I do not know the distance exactly; I suppose not more than a mile and a half.

*Question.* This Bridges was the constable who had charge of this young negro, and who had confined him in a room, chained him, and left him by himself, in an out-house?

*Answer.* I do not know whether he chained him. I said in my direct examination, or intended to say, that I did not know whether he chained him, or how he fastened him, but he was put in an out-house, in the yard, or near his dwelling.

*Question.* The negroes supposed that Bridges was implicated in some way in the disappearance of the negro boy and his probable murder, or responsibility for it?

*Answer.* I suppose that they did, sir; that they thought that he had either aided in or consented to his being taken.

*Question.* From your examination of that case, what is your opinion as to the theory of the negroes of the complicity of the constable; was it well-founded or not?

*Answer.* From my knowledge of the constable, judge, I think there is no shadow of ground for entertaining any belief of foul play. He is rather a delicate man, and formerly lived near this place, and I have known him a great many years. He is one among the last men who would be engaged in violence.

*Question.* Has anybody been indicted or arrested for the murder of this boy?

*Answer.* Not that I know of.

*Question.* Is it supposed that he is dead?

*Answer.* My information is to the contrary; that he is living.

*Question.* Has he ever been seen since?

*Answer.* I have understood that he has been seen at Artesia, but I do not know anything of it myself.

*Question.* The negroes up there believe that he has been killed?

*Answer.* I think not; I think the negroes now generally believe that he is alive.

*Question.* But at the time they made the raid on Bridges's house they were of the opinion that the boy had been killed through the negligence or complicity of Bridges?

*Answer.* What they generally believed, I cannot say. The men I am defending say they engaged in that affair that night from fear of the black men who were leading: that they came on the place armed, where they lived, and said they came for so many black men from each plantation, to come and hunt this fellow and take up Bridges. This is their explanation to me; that they did not engage in this riotous proceeding voluntarily, but were forced by the leaders out there, who ordered so many from each plantation.

*Question.* How many negroes have been arrested on a charge of riot—that, I suppose, is the charge?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* For this raid on Bridges's house?

*Answer.* I think seventeen or eighteen.

*Question.* They are now under bond, or lying in jail, are they not?

*Answer.* They are under bond, most of them. There may be one or two of the leaders still in jail; I do not know how that is.

*Question.* How happens it that where a negro man is killed, shot, or hung, or outrageously whipped, nobody can be found guilty of the outrage, and nobody is brought to justice, and nobody punished, and yet sixteen or seventeen negroes for this outrage, which resulted in no personal harm to Bridges, are arrested at once, and put on bail or in prison?

*Answer.* I cannot tell how it occurs that men escape for killing negroes. I can only say this, in relation to the arrest of these negroes, that they were in the house talking with Mrs. Bridges, and she recognized the leaders, and from the leaders they got the information as to the others. That is the way they came to find out these negroes. They went into her house and built up a light, and showed themselves to her, and talked with her.

*Question.* But, having heard of the white riders, the men who put on disguises, and go on horseback at midnight, armed, and break open the defenseless dwelling of a negro, take him out and whip him, or kill him—have you known of punishment in such a case?

*Answer.* I have never known a white man to do any such thing as you speak of.

*Question.* Have you ever known of a case where any man concerned in these midnight outrages has been brought to justice?

*Answer.* No, sir. I have known of their arrest.

*Question.* You say you have not known of white men committing such acts?

*Answer.* I say I have heard of one white man at Meridian, of whom you may have heard already, who was arrested by a negro who claimed the $5,000 reward offered by General Alcorn. The name of the white man I do not remember; he was a freedmen school teacher there. The negro who was whipped at the town of Meridian, as I understood, was a negro from Sumter County, and this man had been arrested for whipping the negro, on his visit to Meridian; why it is that these parties should perpetrate these murders on negroes I cannot tell. They did kill, right here in our community, three years ago, a Mr. Brown. He left here in the afternoon to go to the depot to take a train. He was a butcher, and had a large amount of money on his person, for a man in his circumstances, and was going up the road to buy cattle. He disappeared; nobody knew what became of him. He was gone ten days before he was found. Some young man was up the river fishing, about ten days afterwards, and found the body in the river. He was bloated so he could not be recognized. His wife recognized him by his clothes. Nobody could ever be discovered; everybody tried.

*Question.* That is rather an exceptional case where a white man is murdered, and the murderers are not discovered and brought to justice?

*Answer.* I do not know that it is where a man is assassinated in that way.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* There is a recent case in Artesia where a white man was murdered, shot in open day by a mob of negroes, and the murderers were arrested upon a warrant from a circuit judge, and the officers serving the process have themselves been arrested, have they not?

*Answer.* That is my understanding.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have you ever known of a case in this community where, as the committee are informed, there have been, from first to last, a great many murders and whippings of negro men; have you ever known a case where a reward was offered by the public authorities, or citizens, for the detection of the murderers?

*Answer.* I do not remember one, sir.

*Question.* Has that expedient never occurred to the good men of the community as a practical and efficient method of ferreting out the perpetrators of these outrages?

*Answer.* It has, sir, and our legislature at its last session made an appropriation of $50,000, to be used by General Alcorn as a secret fund for that purpose. How he has applied it we have no means of knowing. Fifty thousand dollars was appropriated by the last legislature for the very purpose you speak of, judge. The people of this county are not able to pay these rewards. We pay a heavy taxation, and it takes everything of the little fortunes we have to make a support.

*Question.* Is that the reason rewards are not offered?

*Answer.* That is the reason the citizens do not offer them; it is not from hostility or indifference to that kind of conduct in this community.

*Question.* Then how does it happen that no resolutions have been adopted at any meeting of the good, law-abiding, peaceable citizens, denouncing these outrages and leaguing to make a determined effort to put a stop to them?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir; that is not our way of acting in this community about anything—by public resolution. We have understood that this matter was taken charge of by the Federal authorities and by General Alcorn. There were men appointed by the President, it has been our understanding here, to supervise these matters and get up the testimony. We have understood that General Alcorn had $50,000 appropriated to him, and what good would it have done to have passed the resolution of which you speak. It never occurred to me that any such meeting should be held. So far as I am concerned, I never thought of it, and I never had any connection with Ku-Klux or anything that favored Ku-Klux, or the murdering of any citizen.

*Question.* Do you not think that a general expression on the part of the leading men of your county, in that form, would have the effect of alarming these lawless men, and stopping in some measure these acts of violence?

*Answer.* I do not, sir, for this reason; that wherever, as far as my information goes, these acts have occurred in a neighborhood, the best men in the neighborhood have rendered to the officers there, to investigate the matter, all the assistance they could.

*Question.* What assistance have they in point of fact rendered? Have they spent their money, or ridden down their horses in fresh pursuit, or raised the hue and cry and alarmed the whole country, and made a personal effort to overtake these scoundrels?

*Answer.* They have gone upon the ground, examined the steps, taken the dimensions of the tracks, viewed the man—the body, and ascertained as far as possible how he came by his death, and all the appearances, and have had everybody arrested supposed to have had anything to do with it, and examined or kept under arrest until they could make such examination.

*Question.* What do they do when a mule or horse is stolen in this community? Do

they make fresh pursuit on the track of the horse, following into the next county, and then, if necessary, to the one beyond?

*Answer.* The party whose property is stolen generally takes some such steps; some do not.

*Question.* He is generally successful, is he not?

*Answer.* Well, no, sir.

*Question.* He generally succeeds in finding his horse or mule, does he not?

*Answer.* No, sir; those cases are rather rare.

*Question.* Have you not heard, within two days, of a citizen of your town having recovered a stolen mule thirty miles distant?

*Answer.* No, sir; sometimes they recover and sometimes they do not. A great many times they do not.

*Question.* Would not the chances of overtaking these disguised men who compose the bands, of a dozen to forty or fifty, be infinitely greater than in pursuing a single lawless man.

*Answer.* I suppose that if fresh pursuit was made, with a party sufficiently strong to overcome this band, they could make the discovery.

*Question.* But is it not understood that before the crowing of the cock they all disperse to their several homes?

*Answer.* I do not know what is understood among them.

*Question.* I understood you to say in your general examination, conducted by General Blair, that you had been in the habit of making public addresses against this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have spoken against it.

*Question.* Then you have studied the subject, I take it, and have gathered up the numerous manifestations of the existence of such an order?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* How could you talk intelligently on the subject without facts?

*Answer.* I spoke of the information I had from the newspapers and the community.

*Question.* What information did rumor in the community and newspapers give you on the subject?

*Answer.* I saw it stated in the papers that such an organization existed, first in Tennessee, and then I understood that it had spread further South. I understood from the community that when such and such a thing was done, it was done by parties in disguise. That was the only information I had. As to their signs, their pass-words, their manner of organization, or assembling, or dispersing, I never knew anything about those things, nor had anything to do with them. I never busied myself with them.

*Question.* You believed in the existence of such an order and denounced them on the stump?

*Answer.* Yes, I believed that in 1860. I believed it was the creature of this other organization.

*Question.* You believed that these various outrages occurring in the community were outcroppings of this organization.

*Answer.* No, sir; not all of them. I never heard of but the two I have spoken of having been done by men in disguise; those were the whipping of these women and the death of Malone.

*Question.* Why did you denounce this organization if you thought it was only a myth and shadow—if you did not believe it was a real, substantial thing of mischief in the community?

*Answer.* I did not think it was a myth or a mere shadow. I thought it had an existence when I spoke against it. I did not think, nor do I now believe, that it is the occasion of the perpetration of all the offenses that I have spoken of, except the killing of Dick Malone, and the whipping of these women; and I cannot say that the whipping of the women occurred from them—it may have been a local matter—but the other was said to have been.

*Question.* What did you believe or suppose to be the distinctive purpose of this organization as it existed in Mississippi and Alabama?

*Answer.* I supposed that its purpose was to take the avenging of a wrong upon a white man by colored men into the hands of the people, and away from the law. That was what I understood at the time, and for that reason I denounced it.

*Question.* Did you suppose it was an organization to correct grievances in the body politic that the law could not reach?

*Answer.* No, sir, except individual parties; not to interfere in a political sense, but with the rights of individuals.

*Question.* You believe it embraced more or less good men in it?

*Answer.* It must have embraced some good men in it, from my information at the time.

*Question.* Had you then, or have you now, any information as to the extent of the ramifications of this order?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Or how generally it is diffused?

*Answer.* I think, judge, from the information I have, that in 1867 and 1868 it prevailed to a much greater extent than it ever has since.

*Question.* Do you think it was a political organization then?

*Answer.* No, sir; it never was, in my judgment, a political organization; never was intended to control political elections.

*Question.* Was one of its purposes, in your estimation, to break down the growing spirit of independence in the negro brought around by his enfranchisement?

*Answer.* No, sir; it never had any such purpose as that, from my information.

*Question.* How does it happen, in your opinion, that the victims of the outrages committed by these bands of men in disguise, in nine cases out of ten, perhaps ninety-nine out of a hundred, are negro men or negro women?

*Answer.* I do not know the fact which you assume in your question to be true. You assume that all the outrages, all the murders or whippings which have occurred among the black people by white men or unknown parties are done by Ku-Klux. I do not know that to be a fact.

*Question.* That is not the question I put, or the assumption I make. I inquire of you how did it happen that nine-tenths of all cases of scourging and murders by bands of men in disguise are inflicted upon black men and black women?

*Answer.* I cannot tell how it happens.

*Question.* In point of fact, is it not true?

*Answer.* Well, I think not, so far as my information extends.

*Question.* Do you mean to be understood by this committee as saying that white men, indiscriminately with black men, are the objects of visitation by these men in disguise?

*Answer.* I have stated to you, judge, that all my knowledge in relation to these matters is only from information. I know of but few white men that have been engaged that have been notified or controlled by the action of these Ku-Klux.

*Question.* Do you know of a single white man in Noxubee County who has been whipped or killed by these bands of men in disguise?

*Answer.* I do not; and I know of but one negro, and that is upon information.

*Question.* You know of a great many cases by information. You have heard of a great many negroes whipped and killed by men in disguise, have you not?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not. I have heard of negroes being killed, but by whom they were killed it was not known. I have heard of white men being killed, but it was not known who killed them.

*Question.* You spoke of Mr. Taliaferro, and his testimony; you have read the testimony, I believe?

*Answer.* Not all of it.

*Question.* What facts in the testimony of Mr. Taliaferro, so far as you have read it, are not true?

*Answer.* Well, the whipping of the negroes on the Willbanks plantation; that is not true.

*Question.* There was only one slapped there, you say?

*Answer.* Yes; that is my information.

*Question.* What other fact stated by him is not true?

*Answer.* The whipping of a number of negroes on the Malone place. I believe he states that a great many were whipped there. My understanding is that only one was whipped, and that was the one having a difficulty with his wife.

*Question.* And Dick Malone killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and Dick Malone killed. Some gentleman here stated that he said he was a planter, or farming on his own account. That is not true. I do not remember his testimony particularly, but as far as I read it——

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He stated that Cogar was killed, and that is not true. Is he alive?

*Answer.* That is my information; I speak from information.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You spoke of black men working your own plantation not being influenced by you in the matter of voting. Were you a slaveholder before the war?

*Answer.* I was not, sir.

*Question.* Had you any participation in the war itself?

*Answer.* I had, sir.

*Question.* Which side?

*Answer.* I was in the confederate service, sir.

*Question.* What was your rank?

*Answer.* My rank was high private, sir, with a musket on my shoulder. I will state to the committee that I was mustered into the confederate service as a first lieutenant of infantry. My health being bad, I was forced to resign from Virginia and come home,

and organized a company of cavalry. My health failed me again, and I then became the private secretary of Governor Pettus.

*Question.* You are a native of what State?

*Answer.* Georgia. I remained with him, and after my health was restored the war was going on pretty hard, and I became a high private, and I fought General Blair up here on the line of this railroad, and we had several bouts up there. He used to run me about up there pretty sharply.

*Question.* I am happy to see that you are reconciled to each other.

*Answer.* If we erred, and we certainly did commit a great blunder, if not a great sin, we have paid very dearly for the blunder and the sin we have committed, and we feel it every day.

*Question.* Are your people thoroughly reconciled to negro suffrage?

*Answer.* I believe so.

*Question.* Are you?

*Answer.* I am, sir. Mr. Pendleton claims to be the author of the new departure doctrine, but I am two years ahead of him; but for a different reason. I proposed two years ago, and still propose before I die, to make negro suffrage sore to the men of the North, as it was at first sore to the men of the South. That is my feeling about it; to make it a political power.

*Question.* My question is, whether you are heartily in favor of it, and whether the party you affiliate with is in favor of it?

*Answer.* I cannot speak for the party, but for myself. To say I am heartily in favor of it, I cannot. I take it as a necessity forced on me. I accept it as such.

*Question.* To be got rid of as soon as you can?

*Answer.* No, sir; but to use it as a political power to control the destinies of this country some day or other.

*Question.* You hope that one day the negroes will all become democrats?

*Answer.* I do not know that they will become democrats; I think that is hardly probable, but we propose to organize them in some way on a little better basis than they are now. We propose to control them.

*Question.* Is there an entire state of harmony now between the two races here?

*Answer.* So far as I know there is.

*Question.* The negro is happy and contented?

*Answer.* I know of no dissatisfaction.

*Question.* You do not hear of any talk on their part of migrating to Kansas or some other free State?

*Answer.* No, sir, I do not. I have never heard an inquiry of the kind.

*Question.* And have never heard of disturbed communities in other parts of the country, where the negroes have become alarmed, and have abstained from voting, or have bought their peace by voting with the democratic party?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know of any such thing as that.

*Question.* You have heard of nothing like that?

*Answer.* Not that I remember. There was a good deal of talk some time since about the efforts that were being made in Alabama to control the negro vote—not through motives of fear or compulsion—but in this immediate neighborhood here the negroes are about four to one to the whites, and we have not taken, and do not take any part. We have no political excitements here.

*Question.* You have no motive to attempt coercing the negro vote in this county, you are in such a hopeless minority?

*Answer.* No; so far as I am informed, sir, I have no desire, and the community have no desire, to coerce or control the negro vote by compulsion.

*Question.* How do you think it would be in a community where the majority was so small that a little outside pressure might result in a democratic ascendency? Would you like to vouch for the good conduct of your party under such temptations?

*Answer.* Certainly, I would; just as quickly as I would for the good conduct of the old democratic party or the old whig party in its days of heated contests before the war. When party feeling runs high, and the election is close, men will resort to things they would not do if there was a hopeless minority.

*Question.* You spoke of Loyal Leagues among the negroes; do you know of any acts of violence committed by the negroes when that League was in existence, under the inspiration of that League or its teachings?

*Answer.* No, I do not know of any acts of violence by them, except this: that I have known them to march through the streets with arms, marching down the main streets, when they were requested not to do it; at least when it was the desire of the authorities that they should not do it.

*Question.* You have seen the whites frequently marching with arms in their hands?

*Answer.* Not since the war.

*Question.* Well, before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You used to have the military drills?

*Answer.* Training very little; we had military companies.
*Question.* You had shooting matches?
*Answer.* Very seldom in this portion of the country.
*Question.* When men assembled with arms in their hands?
*Answer.* Very seldom in this part of the country.
*Question.* There is no objection to white men assembling with arms, whether singly or in bodies?
*Answer.* The white people have abstained from doing that, in consequence of the political condition of the country. I do not want you to understand me as saying that the negroes appeared fully armed. They would have their pistols buckled by their sides.
*Question.* Is not that a very common practice of the whites?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; but not in processions. In Masonic processions I have seen nothing of the kind.
*Question.* Is it not a common practice of the young men here to carry arms on their persons?
*Answer.* That is very frequently done.
*Question.* You never knew the negroes to employ their arms in acts of violence?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; upon each other.
*Question.* But while upon their processions?
*Answer.* No, sir; I have never been upon their processions.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was done in Artesia?
*Answer.* He is asking as to my knowledge. I can only speak of that from information.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You spoke of the Ku-Klux organization as having sprang up contemporaneously with, or shortly after, the organization by the freedmen commonly known as the Loyal League, and as designed to counteract the purposes of that League?
*Answer.* No; not for the purpose of counteracting or controlling that in any other sense than this: as having a point or common center where the white people could rally in case of outbreak.
*Question.* You understood the original purpose of the Ku-Klux organization was to protect the whites in it against the Loyal League?
*Answer.* Against any organization that offered to commit any injury upon a white person.
*Question.* Did you understand that their purpose was limited to that object?
*Answer.* That was my understanding.
*Question.* Who did you understand that from?
*Answer.* From the public rumor in the community.
*Question.* Did you ever see or read any of the constitutions of the Ku-Klux Klan?
*Answer.* I never have.
*Question.* In the newspapers or any public published testimony that has been given?
*Answer.* I do not remember to have read it in the newspapers.
*Question.* Did you ever read the obligation that members of that Klan are said to take upon themselves upon being initiated?
*Answer.* If I have read it I have forgotten it. I do not remember that I ever did.
*Question.* Have you ever seen any body of men in disguise?
*Answer.* Never, sir.
*Question.* Have you ever consciously conversed with a member of the Ku-Klux Klan?
*Answer.* No, sir; I never did.
*Question.* Or Society of the White Rose, or Invisible Circle, or by whatever name or designation these men banded together and disguised are known; have you ever talked with one of them, knowing him to be such?
*Answer.* I have not.
*Question.* Have you ever talked with one who has seen these men on their parade, or in their disguise, or in their council-rooms?
*Answer.* I have never conversed with any persons, except my brother-in-law, Mr. Willbanks, who saw them. He saw them on the night that they were on his farm. He is the only one, except the negroes on the place, and the place adjoining, where they passed along riding.
*Question.* Did I understand you to announce as a proposition that this Ku-Klux organization started up immediately on the withdrawal of the military authority from the South, as a consequence of that withdrawal?
*Answer.* No, sir; I did not make any such statement as that. I did not intend to be so understood. It was not done in consequence of the withdrawal of the military any further than as a protective measure, as I understood, to the white people.
*Question.* Did you understand what name they assumed, or were known by?

*Answer.* Only from report, sir—Ku-Klux—that was the first I ever heard. I heard of the organization first in Tennessee. As well as I remember, the first I ever heard of the organization was in East Tennessee, in the spring of 1867. I was on a visit there, and I heard some mention made of it, and, of course, I saw frequent mention made of it in the papers.

*Question.* How many black men, did I understand you, have been arrested for a riot, or some other charge, growing out of this trouble between Farmer and a black man?

*Answer.* I have no statement that I remember in relation to that. I think there were two, maybe more, arrested. Farmer was arrested, and, I think, there were two black men arrested, but they were discharged. I understood that the white people interceded with the authorities, and stated that the matter had been settled by the community.

*Question.* So that the whole thing was dropped?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. Farmer was not prosecuted for the assault and battery, and the colored people were not prosecuted for the riotous proceeding afterwards.

*Question.* You stated that the blacks had threatened to burn the town. How do you know?

*Answer.* It was my information.

*Question.* Who told you that?

*Answer.* Mr. Williams, who is here in the insurance office.

*Question.* Did he say he heard them make the threat?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. He came here to get men to go to Brooksville to protect it from being burned. In a conversation with him——a meeting of citizens was called here at his request, and he had an interview with them, and wanted the young men to go up there at once.

*Question.* That was the town that was to be burned—Brooksville?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How large a town?

*Answer.* I suppose one hundred and fifty, or two hundred inhabitants, black and white.

*Question.* What did you understand they were going to burn the town for?

*Answer.* It was general fury against the white people.

*Question.* White people of that town?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What had they done to them?

*Answer.* They had protected Mr. Farmer, taken him from them, carried him into their houses, and closed their houses. Mr. Williams, here at Mr. Baskerville's office, was the gentleman.

*Question.* Did I understand that that affair at Brooksville, the threatening demonstration by the blacks, and the threats made to burn Brooksville, was the cause of the organization of a countervailing society in that neighborhood?

*Answer.* No, sir; I made no such statement as that.

*Question.* You said something about this introducing a countervailing society. I understood you to refer to that transaction?

*Answer.* No, sir; I referred generally to these organized societies of the colored people. I will state this: that any white man, be he republican or what not, if he had been in this community at that time, with the disparity of number between the races, he would have felt that there was no protection for him or his family unless there was some organization in case of an infuriated mob of colored people started.

*Question.* You spoke about the Artesia affair. Who did you say called for the military aid?

*Answer.* I understood that the civil authorities did.

*Question.* You understood that when the troops came the arrests made were of negroes?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, first; and then afterwards, that, by direction or authority from Judge Hill, at Oxford, the district judge for this State, they arrested the parties or officers who were engaged in arresting the negroes.

*Question.* Probably because the sheriff and his posse had acted without any warrants; is it not very likely that that was the case?

*Answer.* No, sir; that is not my information; that may be so, but it is not my information.

*Question.* Have you any certain information in regard to the Artesia affair, or does it all rest on mere hearsay?

*Answer.* It all rests upon information which I derived first from a negro whom I spoke of, and second, from Dr. Inabinet, a citizen of this county, who is a member of the board of supervisors.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Do you think the organization of the Ku-Klux was made with a view of protecting the whites against the blacks?

*Answer.* I think so, sir, alone; I think that was the original purpose of it.

*Question.* Then do you understand that it was begun with the co-operation and assent of the white people generally in the county?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not.

*Question.* Have the white people of the county all the time been opposed to its organization?

*Answer.* The majority, or a great many of them, have—whether a majority have or not, I cannot say, but a great many of them have been opposed to this organization. They preferred to appeal to the military power of the Government to give us a garrison for our protection here.

*Question.* Had there been any acts on the part of the colored organizations against the whites prior to the organization of the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* I do not know, sir; when the two societies were organized, I do not remember now. I never knew the date of their organization, and I cannot tell what outrages had been committed previous to the organization of the Ku-Klux, or what wrong had been done to the negroes previous to the organization of those secret societies that they had.

*Question.* Prior to 1870 had there been any acts committed by the colored people upon the whites in the nature of one race acting against the other?

*Answer.* Only as I have stated, in the little personal difficulties that will sometimes occur between man and man.

*Question.* No general demonstration?

*Answer.* No, sir; no general demonstration until this one made at Brooksville.

*Question.* That was in 1870?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the spring of 1870.

*Question.* Did you not understand that the Ku-Klux existed prior to that?

*Answer.* I had heard of such an organization prior to that; whether it was in this county then or whether any organization ever did have existence in this county I do not know of my own knowledge.

*Question.* Do you understand whether a majority of the white people now sanction the Ku-Klux or not?

*Answer.* They do not, in my judgment. My opinion, Senator, in relation to that is, that the better class of both races do not. I mean to be understood of the better class, the thinking men of both races. They have long since seen the folly of these secret organizations for the protection either of the one race or of the other. Indiscreet young men in both races get into these societies, and become intoxicated, and do things that they would not do if they were not in there. I remember a little instance that occurred with myself some time in the fall of 1869. I was coming in from the east, and within three miles of the town I met three young negroes, two men and a young woman. The men seemed to be intoxicated. I rode up, and, as is my custom, spoke to them, "Good evening, boys," and rode on, and had got but a little way when one of them turned around and said, "By God, I've wanted to kill a damned rebel a long time." He spoke it in rather an undertone. I turned to see whether he intended to make a demonstration, and I saw the fellow was intoxicated, and that he had something that I supposed to be a white sash, such as I saw the negroes wear on parades, and I supposed he belonged to one of the societies at the time. There were instances of that kind. I came and mentioned it to Isham Stewart, an old negro, and told him of the young negro, and told him I thought such things as that had better be put down. Now, if I had been drinking, and had been a hot-blooded young man, I might have got up a difficulty very easily, and might have taken the lives of both of those negroes; and in that way difficulties occur by the organization of these societies. For that reason they have grown very greatly into disfavor among the negroes, and the white people are decidedly opposed to them as far as I know—the older and steadier portion of the community, as far as I know.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Under whose auspices were these Loyal Leagues organized?

*Answer.* As I stated, General Blair, we understood that the societies were organized as benevolent societies, under the name of freedmen's aid societies. That was the first organization that came here. We had no intimation of the political character of the organization until we came to vote upon the constitution in June, 1868, and then it was brought to the knowledge of the party opposed to the disfranchising clause of the constitution that these freedmen's aid societies were political organizations, and that these parties were banded together for the purpose of protection. At that time they were acting under the auspices of the republican party.

*Question.* Were their leaders white men generally?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never saw a white man in their processions. I understood that a white man addressed them, but I do not know that of my own knowledge.

*Question.* Is it your information that the organizations were completed or made under the instructions of white men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was in 1868, when we came to investigate it. That was the first time. We had treated their organization with a great deal of kindness, not thinking it political, but purely benevolent.

*Question.* The habits of southern men, as to their intercourse with negro women, have been inquired into. I will ask you the question now if there is any indisposition among men of northern birth who live or sojourn amongst you to cohabit with negro women?

*Answer.* I know of no difference between men of northern birth and men of southern birth in that respect. We had some northern men living in our midst before the war, and my information then was that they were like other men. Some of them were young men that came down South and settled. I associated with them and knew their habits. And since the war, while the United States troops occupied the country, it was our understanding that it was a vast harvest for these lewd colored women. They dressed very finely, and associated with Union soldiers, sleeping with them. We did not regard it as very remarkable for a soldier to be fond of a woman, either black or white; since then they have been as other men are, so far as I know. As to those that have been here, I do not know of any particular instances that I can mention now; but of my own knowledge of northern men, I have never known any difference in that respect between them and southern men.

---

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 7, 1871.

DANIEL H. SMITH (colored) sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where do you live?

*Answer.* In beat number one, about six miles from here, east of this.

*Question.* How long have you lived in this county of Noxubee?

*Answer.* Ever since 1866. I don't remember in 1866 what time I came down from Monroe county.

*Question.* Did you formerly live near Brooksville?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I came down from Monroe. I lived near West Point in Monroe County, in this State, and from there I came down to near Brooksville.

*Question.* Did you serve in the Federal Army during the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* For how long a time?

*Answer.* I ran away from home, sir, in 1861, and was enlisted in 1861.

*Question.* Where did you live when you went into the Army?

*Answer.* Forty miles below Atlanta, in Georgia, Newton county.

*Question.* What regiment did you belong to?

*Answer.* Forty-fourth United States Colored Infantry, under Colonel Johnson.

*Question.* Colonel Johnson, of Indiana?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You served for three years?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was it generally known where you lived in this county that you had been in the Federal Army?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they inquired into it a great deal and wanted to know where I came from, and what I had been doing, and I told them I had been a soldier in the Army.

*Question.* How did they like that?

*Answer.* They didn't like it, sir. I was very sorry I told them, after I found it didn't sit well on their stomach.

*Question.* Have you ever been attacked by disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You may state the particulars to the committee.

*Answer.* After I came here in 1866, and was near Brooksville, a gentleman up there named Elm tried to hire my wife, and told me he would give me a school on the place, if I would let my wife go and wait on him. When I mentioned it to her she was not willing to go there. I would not try to force her there, and he fell out with me about it. After he fell out with me about it, he met me, and asked me what sort of way I had done, and cursed me. I told him I thought I done my duty; that my wife was not willing to go. He told me he generally made negroes like me do as he wanted them to do; he didn't ask no negro what they did; he generally made them do it; and a good many words passed between us. I told him I thought I had done my duty. He threatened to kill me a time or two up there if I did not do it. When I was coming from Brooksville one night, I saw two men up here in the road before me, with white

sheets around them. They lit off of the horses, and told me to stop. They knowed I was going to Brooksville; they always knew it; for I was teaching a colored school near Brooksville, and always went to Brooksville Saturday evening, and sometimes it was after night before I returned home. In returning back I saw two people with sheets around them, and when they ordered me to stop I did so, and they got down and asked if that was Daniel Smith. I told them it was not, it was Aleck Billips. He was a man that resembles me very much, and was about my height, and, it being dark, they could not tell whether it was me or not, and I don't think they had taken very particular notice of my features and face. They drew a rope out, and said if it had been Daniel H. Smith they aimed to hang him with that rope that night. Then they went on and asked me if I had been a good negro to my master Charley; that was Charley Sherrod. I told them I had been very good and obedient to him, and got away from them that night by telling them that falsehood. The year after that, or a shorter time than a year, I moved away from there down here to where I am now. After moving down here (I did not teach school here immediately) I went to Somerville, near the edge of Kemper County. While I was up there I was reading a newspaper one Sunday morning, and a gentleman by the name of John McDannall was near. He was cursing the northern people about office, and said that all they were fit for was to get all the money out of the South. I told him when southern men had office they got their rights as much as northern people did when they obtained office. I told him when the southern people held the offices they got as much as the northern men out of them. He told me I was a God-damned liar, and not to repeat those words any more, but I did; but we did not have any difficulty that time. About a week after that he met me, with some more men; it was longer than that. He aimed to meet me, but I dodged him. He ordered me to stop, but I did not, and he shot four times at me. I made my escape, however, by taking the woods. I came from there down here, and commenced teaching school here. Since I moved down here last year, there is a man out here they call John Grant, asked me if I knew what I was doing. I told him that I did; that I thought I was attending to my own business. He said he wanted no negro school anywhere about at all, and was not going to have them. I told him that I had got permission; that I was teaching the township school; and that I had got permission from the committee of the township, and that it was not right for any person to interfere with me, for I was behaving myself, and making the scholars behave themselves, and every person, black and white, if they had sauced him, or done anything, I would lick them for it. He said no, there should be no damned negro schools nohow. He told me I had better break up and leave, and he asked me when I would leave. I told him I expected to break up on Christmas; that was September last year gone. I am farming now, not teaching school. He sent me several letters to leave, and finally a man came up one night, and told me if I knew what was good for myself I would not stay at home. He was a colored man, and told me not to stay at home of nights; that they would come after me; and for three nights after that I did not stay in the house. They did make their visit. This colored man that came to my house knows the height of these men. I knew John Grant for one, but not the others.

*Question.* Were they disguised men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How many were there in the body?

*Answer.* It looked like fifteen or twenty.

*Question.* How long ago was this?

*Answer.* This September past.

*Question.* September, 1870?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a year ago.

*Question.* Was this in the night-time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the night they appeared.

*Question.* What kind of disguises did they have on?

*Answer.* They had pieces of paper fixed with eye-holes in them so I could not tell them from any person else. I had concluded, before the black man came, to make port-holes, and I had two double-barreled guns, and I intended to give them the best I had. I had a large auger, and I bored holes in different places in the house, so that I thought I could give them the best I had.

*Question.* Have you lived in that neighborhood since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I live out there now; but since I farmed this year they have not interfered with me in no ways since.

*Question.* This was while you were teaching the colored school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You could not, of course, identify these men with certainty that were disguised?

*Answer.* No, sir; only one man.

*Question.* That was Grant?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was leading them ther.

*Question.* Did you identify any of these men that fired on you in the road?
*Answer.* I know Mr. McDannall was in the number.
*Question.* Had they disguises on?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* Was that in the night time?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; the moon was shining very bright.
*Question.* How large a body of men was it?
*Answer.* There were about four.
*Question.* Those are the only interruptions you have ever met?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* While you were teaching school what was the general feeling among the whites in relation to colored schools?
*Answer.* It was very bad.
*Question.* Did anybody ever speak to you on that subject, except Grant?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; several said they didn't think any negro schools ought to be taught about there; others thought they ought.
*Question.* For what reason did they object?
*Answer.* They said it was ruining the negroes.
*Question.* Why?
*Answer.* They said they had always got about enough education to make them saucy and mean and dissipated.
*Question.* Were there more whites in favor of the schools than against them?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* The majority was in favor of colored schools?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. The planters principally were for it, but the loafers were not; they always endeavored to break it up; I mean those that had no farms, and did not care whether there was anything or not.
*Question.* The good, substantial men of the country were in favor of it?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* What is the feeling among the whites, so far as you have conversed with them or heard an expression of opinion in relation to colored suffrage or negroes voting?
*Answer.* Well, sir, they do not believe in it.
*Question.* What do they say about it?
*Answer.* They say that no negroes ought to be allowed to vote, and they are very bitter against their voting or going away from home or having anything to do with it in any way.
*Question.* State what instances of that kind you know of?
*Answer.* Out in the part of the county where I live I have known a great many of them to tell the colored people, so as to disappoint them, that there was no election—that it had all been given over. A great many ignorant people would think the employer knew, and that he told them the truth. They would deprive them in that way of their votes. And, again, they would tell them to take their wagons, and go to such a place, and haul so and so away from there. They would manage in all such ways to keep the black people away. Since I have been in the State they came to me and asked me when the election was, and I would tell them. I do not believe, sir, that the generality, the majority of the white people that were around in the neighborhood, generally appreciated me much on account of my being a negro. I have heard them speak so very bitterly, though I have always behaved myself to them and been very obedient, and never put myself in the way to create any disturbance in any way.
*Question.* Have you known any other colored teachers, beside yourself, who were interfered with or molested?
*Answer.* No, sir; I don't know of any.
*Question.* Have you heard of any colored school-houses or churches being burned?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In this county?
*Answer.* No, sir; they were not in this county.
*Question.* In what county were there?
*Answer.* They were over in Pickens County, Alabama, near Pickensville, on the other side of the river.
*Question.* That county adjoins Noxubee County?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I believe the Tombigbee River divides them.
*Question.* What cases of burning of colored churches or schools have you heard of over there?
*Answer.* I have heard of their burning several churches belonging to the colored people, and I have seen colored people that said they came away to save their lives. I saw one man that had the print of the rope around his neck, but did not hang him dead.
*Question.* What offense had he given?
*Answer.* He said he had not said anything to them, and he did not know what was

the matter; he had not hurt their feelings. They just came to his house and called him out and seized him.

*Question.* When was this?

*Answer.* Along last spring; I think about May.

*Question.* That was the time he was taken out and hung?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they aimed to hang him, but he got away.

*Question.* Did he tell you that it was done by the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he said there were some fifteen or twenty.

*Question.* He did not know what offense he had given?

*Answer.* No, sir. I asked him particularly. I told him that maybe he had done something to some of them, or sauced some of them, but he said he had not.

*Question.* Do you know of any other cases in Pickens County?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of any other cases of maltreatment of people of your color in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of a great many people that said they had been whipped, that I have seen.

*Question.* State the names.

*Answer.* I don't know them. I saw them in passing, coming here for protection. They were making this way, and, finally, when I came here, they had not been this way; they had either gone by or taken some other notion. They were strangers to me.

*Question.* How many of them told you they had been whipped?

*Answer.* Three or four. They told me they were whipped in this county.

*Question.* By Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by disguised people; they did not know them.

*Question.* Was all that within a year past?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was a colored man last fall came up this way from Perley one evening. I asked him what was the matter. He said the Ku-Klux went for him at his house. I asked him what caused it. He said he rented some land, and had right smart stock around him, and they came after him and shot at him and cleared his family out, and when he went back his things were all thrown out of doors. I believe one man that was in it come and persuaded him back, and told him that if he would come back it would be all right; and, I believe he is living there now.

*Question.* Have you received any Ku-Klux letters?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You read and write, being a teacher?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* How were they signed?

*Answer.* There is no signature to them.

*Question.* Were there any marks or pictures in the letter?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What?

*Answer.* Like a skeleton, or something of the sort, and telling me to leave at such a time, and if I was not gone what would become of me. I got hold of a letter belonging to this gentleman, Mr. Grant, that they said was his letter, and compared them together, and they were the same handwriting; there were precisely alike.

*Question.* How was it signed?

*Answer.* With three K's, it was signed "K. K. K."

*Question.* Was there any picture of a coffin on it?

*Answer.* No, sir; only a skeleton.

*Question.* How many such letters did you receive?

*Answer.* A couple.

*Question.* Through the post-office?

*Answer.* No, sir; they were conveyed to me by strange black people every time, people I did not know anything about. I asked where they got them. One of them went far enough to tell me that Mr. Grant handed him that note.

*Question.* Do you know any cases of colored people being killed in Noxubee County by men in disguise?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of such cases?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the course of a year or two back I have heard of a good many, but not of late. This man Jerry Brown was killed over here, and Sam May up here, and this man in Bigbee Valley—I don't know whether they were disguised men or whether it was the man that had him in charge.

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I don't know.

*Question.* Was it the son of Ellen Grayson?

*Answer.* I don't know whose son he was.

*Question.* It was the one who was put in charge of a constable, and kept in an outhouse?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it supposed that that was his body which was found in the Bigbee River?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I saw his mother at a meeting afterwards, and she told me that she had compared the pants he had on with a piece of the stuff she had at home, and it was from the same piece of cloth. She said it was her own child.

*Question.* You heard that from her?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; from her lips; she was satisfied it was her son.

*Question.* This body was found three or four miles from where he had lived?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has any one been taken up for his murder, that you know of?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* You have spoken of several whippings, and some murders. Have you ever known of any white people to be taken up and punished for these offenses?

*Answer.* No, sir; none have been punished in this county. That is one reason why I never reported; I knew it would do no good.

*Question.* Is that the general feeling among the colored people—that it is useless to report these offenses?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That the courts will not render them any protection?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they just take these men up and turn them loose, and if they ever threaten them, then they will kill them sure enough.

*Question.* How is it when the colored people commit offenses; are the courts swift enough to find them out and punish them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they generally do. I believe all that commit any crime in this county, they know them, and bring them to the bar, and try them.

*Question.* But do you not know of any whites that have been punished for indicting these outrages on the colored people?

*Answer.* No, sir; they generally pay $40 or $50, and get off in that way.

*Question.* Do the colored people feel themselves secure or insecure under this condition of things?

*Answer.* They feel insecure every day.

*Question.* Have you heard any talk among them about emigrating to another country—Kansas, or some free State—where they would be protected?

*Answer.* They wish that; that is the general feeling among the majority of the colored people.

*Question.* Do the white people here favor the colored people buying lands and having homes?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do they throw obstacles in their way?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they object to it.

*Question.* What do you know or suppose to be their reason?

*Answer.* Their reason for objecting is, they say that if you suffer the colored people here to own land they cannot get any laborers then, for where a colored man owns a piece of land, as many as can do so will go to their own land, and that will defeat them from getting labor.

*Question.* So that the white owners of the soil you think are generally opposed to your people becoming owners of land?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; or stock in any way; they don't believe in that. I have known a great many that have lost their stock. Sometimes the employers would go out and shoot the stock down, if they found them in the wrong place. They did not tell them who killed them. The thing tells itself, that they don't want them to own stock, or they would not kill them. I have always thought it right where a man has colored people, and the colored people are raising stock, that he ought to let the colored man have some place to keep his stock. He cannot prepare it, unless he gives him the privilege of splitting rails, and putting up fences, and if he is cutting timber, of course he cannot do that.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was your school broken up after this warning?

*Answer.* No, sir; nobody came to interfere with it, but the colored people commenced persuading me to quit. They said I had better, as they thought somebody would come and scare the children to death, and kill them, and me, maybe.

*Question.* You were teaching a public school?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; a public school. I generally got money from the Government, through H. R. Pease, of Vicksburgh.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You got money from Pease for what?

*Answer.* For teaching school.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* He is your State superintendent of education, is he not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; whenever I made out a report of the school, regularly, every month, I always got $20 a month, and the colored people helped some in regard to living. This is my first year of my life in farming. I never have been able to farm before, since I was discharged from the service.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Where does this McDannall live that you say fired on you?

*Answer.* About fourteen or fifteen miles from here, near a factory up here; I don't know whose factory they call it.

*Question.* In what part of the county is it?

*Answer.* It is near the line of Noxubee and Kemper, and near the line of Winston, too.

*Question.* You say you knew that Grant was in the crowd that came to you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Where does he live?

*Answer.* About nine or ten miles below me.

*Question.* Who is the colored man that told you that they were coming?

*Answer.* A man that lives at Mr. Stewart's, by the name of Wesley; he calls himself Wesley; they tell me that is not his name.

*Question.* Wesley what?

*Answer.* Wesley Stewart.

*Question.* He lives at what Stewart's?

*Answer.* The Widow Stewart, now. Dr. Stewart died a year or two ago, and left his widow.

*Question.* In what county is Somerville?

*Answer.* In this county, Noxubee.

*Question.* In what part of the county?

*Answer.* I call it the southwest part of the county; what beat it is I don't know.

*Question.* What was the name of the man that you got into a quarrel with, and who afterwards shot at you?

*Answer.* Mr. John McDannall.

*Question.* Who were these parties who met you on the road and asked you what your name was, and to whom you gave the name of Aleck Billips?

*Answer.* William Elm, and Mr. Brooks—Brooks was his partner. I knew them both very well. Hardin Brooks was his name, if I mistake not.

*Question.* Had you ever seen those men before that time?

*Answer.* O, yes, sir; frequently.

*Question.* Then of course they had seen you and knew you?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they had seen me.

*Question.* How happened it that they did not know you at that time?

*Answer.* Because they had not taken any particular notice of me at all.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was it in the night-time that you met them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was not in the day-time; it was in the night-time. I was not very far from their houses—about a quarter of a mile.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Whose house?

*Answer.* From Mr. Elm's house, and Hardin Brooks's house. In a short while after that, as near as I recollect, they tied a colored man up there, and whipped him terribly. He used to belong to one of them.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was his name?

*Answer.* I have forgotten his name; he was a carpenter. He works here in town now, I think.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* These same men whipped him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they tied him, and whipped him with a rope.

*Question.* How far is that from here?

*Answer.* About ten miles from here, as nigh as I can come.

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 8, 1871.

GEORGE W. CAMPBELL sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN. As this witness is called by the minority, General Blair will please examine him.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* State your residence and business.

*Answer.* Shuqualak, Noxubee County, Mississippi; I am a farmer now; I used to be a mechanic.

*Quesion.* You are a magistrate?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you act as coroner in the case of a man named Bully Jack, that was killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Did you take the testimony in that case?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the testimony in regard to the manner in which he came to his death?

*Answer.* Well, sir, as well as I recollect, his wife testified that about 9 o'clock some men came near her door and hailed; she said she recognized the voice as that of Mr. Glass, who lived in the neighborhood. He hailed probably a second or third time, and she got up and went out; she still thought it was Mr. Glass. On drawing near to him she said she discovered that he was a small, slim man. That seemed to me to settle the question with her about its being Glass, because Glass is a large man, six feet high, and weighs a hundred and eighty pounds. He then told her his wagon was broken down out there, and wanted help to put the wheel on, or something of the sort, and asked if there was a man about the place; she told him yes, and waked her husband up, and the men and her husband went out to the wagon, or where he pretended it was. She said she felt uneasy, and went along a little piece, but stopped; she pretty soon heard her husband holler, as though he was hurt, and then heard them running, and then heard the pistols fire, and she commenced hollowing and alarmed all on the place, or in the neighborhood. On going out there they found her husband dead.

*Question.* Was Glass arrested?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was he tried before you?

*Answer.* He was tried; yes, sir. I was one of three magistrates that sat here.

*Question.* In a preliminary trial?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the result of that trial?

*Answer.* Well, there was no evidence to hold him to bail; there was no evidence against him except that much, and she swore the same thing before the jury of inquest as before the magistrate's court.

*Question.* Was there any other evidence exonerating him?

*Answer.* I do not remember; there was other evidence. There was a white man by the name of Lee, that this man was working with all day together. Lee testified that they worked all day together, ate supper together, and went to bed together, and slept all night together. So Lee testified as to Glass. A colored man, a brother-in-law of Bully Jack, was arrested and tried also. There was no evidence against him at all; not one shadow of evidence against him, that I considered evidence.

*Question.* Was he discharged also?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was discharged.

*Question.* What was Jack's character?

*Answer.* Well, when a slave, he was notorious as a worker, and a powerful physical man, a great foot-racer, and an uncommon good worker, but, like the most of his race, he was considered treacherous; that was while he was a slave. I knew him well during the time he was a slave; but after the surrender he moved away, farther down the country from me, and I did not know so much about him. Some time since the surrender there was a negro preacher, named Sturks, cropped with some man named John Aust. They cropped on shares. Sturks went there without anything, and had to be furnished with everything, and on settlement it was a poor crop, and there was very little coming to him, and he was dissatisfied, and came to me and showed me his contract, and told me how everything had run, and that Aust had swindled him out of everything. I added up his expenses, and showed him that it was impossible that there should be anything coming to him, under the circumstances. That much I know; the balance is hearsay. Shall I tell that?

*Question.* Tell it if you believe it.

*Answer.* I know it is true, as well as I know General Washington fought the battles of the Revolution. I know it by hearing it. After that, this Bully Jack was a sort of a leading man in the neighborhood, and formed himself into a court,

or a judge of a court, and held negro courts about. I know that, because he came to me several times—I was an acting magistrate—to know what was the law on certain subjects. I did not know then that he was holding courts. Afterward I found out that he was holding court, and that he gave judgment against Aust for so much corn that Aust had in his crib. Aust went from home one day, and Bully Jack issued an order that the injured man, Sturks, should take with him two or three other men and go and take his corn, which he thought he was entitled to; which they did. When they got the corn into the wagon and drove out, they fired off their guns and hallooed hurrah for freedom, &c. They were arrested, all but Sturks, and brought here and imprisoned and fined. Sturks made his escape. That thing was against Bully Jack; he was back in the dark; he was not known or arrested in the affair, but he was the man that held the court and gave the judgment. They were all arrested and brought here and tried and punished, according to their crime, I suppose, except Sturks, who made his escape to Tennessee, and is there yet. He was said to be a leading man down there; white and black were telling me of it frequently. Some man came to me for redress, and said Bully Jack had held a court and given judgment against him for $10 for getting his daughter big, and he wanted to know if he would be forced to pay the $10. There was a number of such things; it was common; all such tricks as that were going on. That is all I know against Bully Jack. If people had anything against him that was it. A good many blacks were opposed to him, and he had some enemies among the white people. Another thing, a man named Jenkins, in the neighborhood, was said to have killed a black man. I held an inquest over him; there was no positive proof against Jenkins; not enough to hold him. Jenkins was absent, I think, about the time of court, and when he came back some black men told him Bully Jack had been trying to get up evidence to try to convict him. That was testified to before our magistrate's court here. I do not remember anything else about it. You asked about the character of Bully Jack; that's about the character I know of him.

*Question.* Did this man Jenkins and Bully Jack have an explanation of that matter?

*Answer.* I do not know whether they ever did or not. The witness swore before our court of investigation here that he was riding behind one Glass and Cy. Jenkins, and Glass told him Bully Jack had been trying to get up evidence to report him to the grand jury, and Jenkins observed that he was sorry he was not here; that he would have helped him to report.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the name of the colored man Jenkins was said to have killed?

*Answer.* Lewis Jordan.

*Question.* When was that?

*Answer.* That was about 1866; papers on the record here will show; they were all returned to the court. The negro was found about a mile and a half from my house with his throat cut. I, among others, was summoned to examine into the case.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* What was the testimony of Bully Jack's brother-in-law, the negro, in reference to Jack's character for turbulence and violence?

*Answer.* I can't tell. Let me see. I think he swore before the magistrate's court and the jury of inquest that he had told Jack repeatedly that if he didn't quit meddling with white folks' business, he wouldn't give a chaw of tobacco, or something of the sort, for his life. Bully Jack's wife testified that Bully Jack and John Hill, his brother-in-law, would get drunk and quarrel, but that they were good friends; that one never had anything but what the other could get it; that they were not at enmity at all. There was an attempt to show that probably John Hill was instrumental in his death, but there was no evidence to that effect at all; no evidence upon it in that direction, according to my judgment.

*Question.* Was there a spur found on the ground?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. When I was sent for I went down there. They had picked up a spur near the corpse, or between where the tussle commenced and where the corpse lay. It was a spur that seemed to have been slung off of a man's foot in running; it was the smallest spur, I believe, I ever saw to go on anybody's foot. I tried it on, I reckon, a dozen feet, and I never saw one yet it could go on.

*Question.* Did you ever say to any one that you knew the man whose foot you could go and put that spur on?

*Answer.* I probably did; I think I did; I have probably said it several times, that I knew one man that I believed the spur would go on his foot, and that I could put it on.

*Question.* Did you mean to intimate by that remark that he was the guilty man?

*Answer.* No, sir; I had no idea that he had anything to do with it at all. I have observed that several times. Dr. Mosely lives below us, a nice, modest, unassuming gentleman. I observed his foot afterward, and I have thrown it up to him in a joking way several times: "You are the man that killed Bully Jack; you threw that spur off of your foot there;" and he would pass it off by saying, "Why don't they have me up?'

and so on. He has a very small foot, and I think his is the only foot that I ever saw that that spur would go on, though I never tried it; I have tried it on several. I never intended to convey that idea, if it has been taken that way—that I knew the foot that it came off of. I may have said just as I did to Dr. Mosely. A long time after the thing occurred I carried the spur in my pocket, and when I saw a man with a little foot I often spoke of it; and one object that I had in view was, that the people might think of it. I thought something might be stirred up by that, and I might get the people in the community who were opposed to such things to thinking about it, and to discover some man that probably could wear the spur.

*Question.* Were the party who killed Bully Jack in disguise?

*Answer.* The woman said not; she said the man she saw was not in disguise, and I do not remember that any other was seen.

*Question.* Her description of that man was entirely different from the man she named?

*Answer.* Different from the man whose voice she thought she recognized. She says, "I thought it was Massa Ebby Glass." He lives near. She said he hallooed, and I thought it was him; but when I got out the fact that it was a small, slim man, I saw that that was a mistake.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Was he a white man?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Were the footsteps of the party examined?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; very carefully. I saw there had been four of them, and four horses. One of them wore a large shoe, making quite a large track—about No. 10—and two made as small tracks as you ever saw men make. One was about a No. 5, or hardly five, and the other less than six, and the smallest track had pursued Bully Jack. Jack was a great runner. When they seized him he dislocated both arms in extricating himself. He was a powerful physical man. When he got loose he started to run, and the man that caught up close enough to shoot him down must have been an uncommon runner on foot. His step was very small. John T. Mosely and myself measured his steps; he must have been running very fast when he overhauled him and shot him.

*Question.* What was the fourth track?

*Answer.* That was the smallest track.

*Question.* You have described two of them as being quite small, and another quite large?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and another one that we saw rather indistinctly. I think probably he held the horses; that was our conclusion at the time. I saw some tracks there which looked like No. 7 or No. 8 tracks, but I could not say distinctly. Evidently, one man was holding the horses, while the others did the mischief.

*Question.* There has been no clew found to this matter?

*Answer.* There never has been anything definite. There was a black man came from Gainesville, Alabama, told me that a white man told him that he knew that morning two hours before day that Bully Jack was dead; and he lived in Warsaw, Alabama. I saw the white man afterward. The way I came to see him and the negro is, I am a land agent for a land speculator who lives in Gainesville, and he frequently sends men there on business, and these men were both there on Lewis's business. He told me it was well known in Warsaw that day before day that Bully Jack was killed.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Where is Warsaw?

*Answer.* On Bigby River, in Sumter County, Alabama.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* How far is that from the place where Bully Jack was killed?

*Answer.* It was about eighteen miles. A day or two after that thing occurred I was surveying down in the neighborhood where it occurred, and my attention was called to a place where men had eaten and fed horses, in another man's field, about half a mile from where Bully Jack was killed. My impression was that that was the party, and that they had eaten their supper there and fed their horses before they went up and committed the murder. There was a sign where four horses had been tied and fed, and then there was a sardine box or two thrown around, and two flasks thrown down that looked like they had had spirits in them, and some little crusts of bread and other little signs of parties having stopped there; and the party owning the field said that sign was not there the day before Bully Jack was killed; that two days afterward he found it. He called my attention to it.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was any effort made to follow the tracks of the horses?

*Answer.* It was a very dry time, the 1st day of September, 1870, and I told the darkeys if they could do anything at tracking to track. They tracked around a great deal, and thought they discovered where tracks were going in certain directions, and they said they found some mule-tracks and some horse-tracks, but I didn't think there was any confidence to be placed in it, because there had not been a drop of rain for weeks, and there were a great many horses passing. I noticed one large mule-track and three horses' tracks at the place. I hunted and worked and fretted about it; I did everything in my power to get a clew to it, but never could work a step onward. The people there suspected me of infidelity in the affair, and they re-arrested the parties and brought them here. I came here, and the magistrates of Macon asked me to sit with them here, and the very same thing was gone over here as before the jury of inquest—in fact it was tried a third time after my examination; there were two colored men dissatisfied, and they had the parties arrested, and tried them all in Shuqualak, and then they thought there was something could be done if they would get them here, and they had them arrested, and they tried them here, and it was left just where I left it at the corpse; not one thing was found out. My impression is that the reason why nothing else was found out was because nobody knew anything. The parties that did it I am satisfied came from Alabama, and returned to Alabama that night. From all the signs that was my impression, and the conclusion of everybody in the neighborhood. There were several discreet, sensible men looked at everything in it, and that was their conclusion.

*Question.* What has been the general condition of the country in your part of the county as to peace and good order?

*Answer.* Well, sir, peace and good order prevails there all the time; occasionally somebody gets killed, but that's the last of it. There is an investigation whenever there is a man killed, and whatever can be made of it is done. Now, there was a black man murdered at Shuqualak some time in the early spring, and it was well known who did it. A man named Murdock went to his house and shot him; I think it was because he wouldn't live with him.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What was the man's name that was shot?

*Answer.* I didn't know the man; I didn't know the darky at all; I never saw the man, but he lived a while with Murdock; that is what the people say; there was no examination. Mr. Haines, my associate magistrate, was called on to investigate the case, and issued his warrant for the arrest of Murdock, and the trial was put off from day to day for him to get counsel, or something or other, and he made his escape. It was a ridiculous affair, but I had nothing to do with it. He sent for me to help try him, and he said it would not be until next day, and I went next day, and before the next day the man was gone. Then another darky was killed by a woman right there in the neighborhood; it was just a family fight. The woman stuck a knife in him, and killed him; he was beating her with a stick. These cases were reported as Ku-Klux outrages; I saw them in print afterward. Two boys were hunting in the neighborhood, and one of them had lowered himself in the grass, and a rabbit came running along, and the other one shot at it and killed the boy. That was reported as a Ku-Klux outrage; I saw it so in print.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he a black boy?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was the woman who killed this man a black woman?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. They fell out about their children; the children would fight. They worked on the railroad. No white person saw them at all. It was investigated, and the proof showed that the woman did it in self-defense. I think she was acquitted before the court; I investigated the case, and held her to bail, and she came before the judge and stood her trial, and was acquitted. I believe that is all the killing cases that I know of about there since the surrender. This Bully Jack case is the only one I have any knowledge of that was committed by unknown parties.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Have you heard of the murder of Peter Gregory who was killed at Mushalaville?

*Answer.* I heard it, but it is entirely out of my neighborhood—about fifteen miles off.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Solomon Triplett who was shot?

*Answer.* I do not know; the black people have most of them more than one name; I may have heard of that case under another name.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* He lived in Winston County.

*Answer.* I may have heard of it, but I didn't pay attention to it. I have heard of a

heap of cases of people being killed by what was called Ku-Klux, and I have lived in some dread of these creatures myself. I have been threatened by them, and have got notice after notice that I had better look out; written notices signed K. K. K. I was helping the assessor assess the land-tax last fall, and got a letter of that sort; I have it with me; I have had it in my pocket ever since.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Will you let me see it?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is it, [producing letter hereinafter set forth] I have two or three besides that; I have never shown them to but one man in the county, and that was a young man named Simpson who lives in Shuqualak; he is a particular friend of mine. The notice is as follows:

"BIG THINGS ON ICE, *October* 14, 1870.

"SIR: You are hereby ordered to come out in your county paper, in fifteen days, and make an explanation of your conduct of hear lately. We would like to hear of you taking some more social drinks with your friends Marshall Allick Vandevner. We know you to be a white man in day-time and a dam negro at night, and if you fail to come out in county paper, as above ordered, and give a an account of yourself, your life will be at *stake*. You have been waited on before this, but the lady part of your family prevented. We do not know you only by carracter. We hope to hear from you soon, and hope you will make a good report of yourself.

"Respectfully,

"K. K. K.

"WASH. CAMPBELL, *Shuqualak, Mississippi.*"

*Question.* What is meant by your county paper?

*Answer.* That is our little Macon Beacon, the newspaper published here in this place. I suppose that is what they meant; that is what I understood.

*Question.* Did you get this through the post-office?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What was the post-mark?

*Answer.* Carrolton, Alabama.

*Question.* What county?

*Answer.* Pickens County, right east of here.

*Question.* Did you know this handwriting?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have studied it closely.

*Question.* Who are referred to here as Marshall and Alick?

*Answer.* They were bailiffs. Marshall was bailiff of the beat I live in, and was elected by the legislature, and then Vandevenner was appointed in his place, and they both frequently had business with me; I was magistrate. But they were mistaken about the drinks; I never drink at all. I have lived here since '39, and was never intoxicated or under the influence of spirits the least in my life.

*Question.* What did he mean by saying you were a negro at night?

*Answer.* I do not know; we have to interpret that the best way we can. I would sometimes issue a summons, and they would come to my house, or I would ride around by their office and give them the paper. Mr. Marshall was bailiff: I had to manage to get it into his hands; when he would return it he would bring the parties into my house and give him the paper. That threw him into their company often.

*Question.* This says that you had been waited on before?

*Answer.* I do not know what that means; they may have written to me before.

*Question.* How far is Carrolton post-office from where you live?

*Answer.* Thirty miles probably.

*Question.* Are you much acquainted up there?

*Answer.* I was a long time ago; I knew everybody in the country then, but I left that country. I never have lived there, but I have had a great many acquaintances around there. I used to live here, and I went with a band of music over there, and we staid there two or three days at a picnic.

*Question.* When?

*Answer.* Thirty years ago. I knew everybody about there then, and I occasionally see them yet, and recognize them; I am well known there by character.

*Question.* What was the purport of the Ku-Klux letter you received after this?

*Answer.* I lost that letter. Let me see how it read; it was addressed to me just like that, but no date nor place. He said, "Well, Wash, I have listened and looked, but I can't see nor hear of you." That was the start of it. He says, "It seems you are determined to destroy yourself, and your brawny celtic friend will be notified in writing in a few days what to do."

*Question.* Who was that?

*Answer.* He was assessor. He is a tremendously large, raw-boned man, and of Irish descent. I suppose they meant him. It said, "You and your brawny celtic friend will

be waited on in a few days, and you had better take heed. K. K. K." Simpson was under the impression that that was written by a German Jew, right in Shuqualak, just as a hoax; but I have never been able to see him write, and I do not know his writing. Simpson had that letter the last I knew of it.

*Question.* You say in your testimony relative to Bully Jack's case, that you are satisfied that the party who murdered him came from Alabama?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is my impression, from everything that has transpired.

*Question.* From what point—Sumter county?

*Answer.* I can't say; I think they came from Sumter county that night, because there was a tournament just on the line of Sumter and Noxubee counties. Just about twelve or fourteen miles brlow there, on the last day of August, and on the night of—no, on the first of September, the tournament was held; and on the night of that day Bully Jack was killed. Several of our neighbors were down at the tournament riding, and came on from there home, just after night, and there were three men met this fellow, John Hill, in the road that day, and talked with him, but that was all explained. They lived just above there, and they were brought in here to testify that they met John Hill.

*Question.* Was Bully Jack known to people in Sumter County, Alabama?

*Answer.* O, yes; the two counties adjoin. They are very rich counties; there are a great many black people. He lived right on the line. He was known over at the Ballard place and Gilbert's. Several rich men lived over there, and there was passing back and forth, preaching, and so on, but that was not the way he was got at. The probability is not that it was his acquaintance over there; the probability is that that party that came were notified to come there.

*Question.* You suppose that his enemies, or those who were interested in putting Bully Jack out of the way, gave information to other parties over the State line?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but that is just supposition on my part. I have no more knowledge of it than you have.

*Question.* Is it commonly supposed that the Ku-Klux change works in that way, and where a murder is committed that some Klan comes from a distance to do it, and retreats?

*Answer.* I do not know whether that is the general understanding or not. I have never had anything to do with the Ku-Klux, and have never been where they did much. This is the only case I knew of in my life, except the one on Mr. Power's place up here, which I suppose was by a parcel of boys that fixed up disguises, and got drunk, and went over to Mr. Powers's place and cut up the negroes, and one of them got shot and killed. That was thirty miles from my neighborhood. I got it from Governor Powers.

*Question.* You have heard of a great many negroes being killed and whipped?

*Answer.* I think I have—away in remote places.

*Question.* You have heard of cases where they have been whipped and killed by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of that.

*Question.* Did you hear of the case of Dick Malone being killed by disguised men?

*Answer.* I believe I did hear of that, away up here. A parcel of men came in disguise to whip a woman, or a man, and some one, Dick Malone, probably, followed them and was killed.

*Question.* Did you hear that they were disguised?

*Answer.* I can't say whether I did or not. I am under the impression that I heard that they were not disguised.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Johnson Kitt that was killed?

*Answer.* I don't remember the name.

*Question.* Or Sol. Triplett?

*Answer.* I know the name of Triplett, and I have heard of a good deal of mischief being done in the Triplett neighborhood, but it is entirely remote from my neighborhood.

*Question.* Your county is pretty large?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Noxubee County has about twenty townships, of six miles square each. A pretty big county—it is twenty-four miles by thirty.

*Question.* Have you ever seen any men in disguise yourself?

*Answer.* No, sir; never.

*Question.* Have they ever been in your part of the county?

*Answer.* I don't think there has ever been a man seen in my part of the county. I never have heard of one. I never saw a man in disguise. I saw a man, who I was told afterwards was a man I knew very well, but I had no knowledge of him at the time I saw him that it was him. He must have been disguised. That was in Columbus, up here.

*Question.* When you speak of peace and good order prevailing in your county, you of course mean to except these cases of violence you have heard of, where negroes have been whipped and killed by disguised men or otherwise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do not think any have been whipped in our neighborhood by anybody in disguise or out of disguise.

*Question.* You have heard of whipping in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; away off. I heard of a desperate case in the eastern part of the county. I was at that time assessing taxes in another part, and finally got around.

*Question.* What was that case?

*Answer.* I never could hear of it in the neighborhood where it occurred—I never could find out anything about it. It seemed there never had been such a case. Such reports are started by mischievous persons.

*Question.* Have you ever known or heard of any of these disguised men being arrested and brought to trial and punished for their misdeeds?

*Answer.* I think I have; in Pontotoc, or some remote place.

*Question.* But in Noxubee?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never have. I think a darky was once arrested in the courthouse, but it was just some mischief.

*Question.* When did you first hear of the Ku-Klux Klan?

*Answer.* Some time since the surrender. It was up in Tennessee I heard.

*Question.* Did you hear that it spread into Alabama and Mississippi?

*Answer.* I could hear of it in Tennessee, and nigher and nigher, and coming on, and in a little while it came around into this State, and over into Alabama, and finally—I don't remember where is the nearest I have heard of disguised men being seen.

*Question.* You have heard of a good many outrages by the Ku-Klux being perpetrated in Sumter and Pickens Counties, Alabama?

*Answer.* In Sumter I did. I do not know much about Pickens county. I do not have much communication there. I did hear of a good deal in Pickens County, of somebody being punished or abused by Ku-Klux in Pickens County, and a good many in Sumter.

*Question.* Can you name any particular cases in Sumter County?

*Answer.* I do not remember any particular cases. I think there was a sheriff, or something of the sort, killed there, but I have no knowledge about it.

*Question.* You spoke of the case of Jordan, whose throat was cut, that occurred, you said, in 1866.

*Answer.* It was just after the surrender. I will not be certain about that.

*Question.* Was he said to have been Ku-Kluxed?

*Answer.* No. I never had heard of any Ku-Klux in this county then.

*Question.* Was that said to have been a private assassination?

*Answer.* Yes; it was so considered by the jury of inquest.

*Question.* The killing committed by a single man?

*Answer.* I think the impression was that there was more than one.

*Question.* Concerned in the killing?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but I was not the magistrate when that investigation took place. I was simply one of the jury of inquest. The coroner of the county held the inquest himself.

*Question.* You spoke of a colored man being shot in Shuqualak last spring. I believe you said you did not recollect his name.

*Answer.* No; I do not remember his name.

*Question.* Were there more than one man concerned in that?

*Answer.* I think there was only one concerned in the murder. There was a shoemaker with the man—a very inoffensive kind of man.

*Question.* But he was afraid of Murdock?

*Answer.* He tried to prevent the murder, but when Murdock told him to stand off he was afraid, and did so.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* You said there was a disguised party on Governor Powers's place.

*Answer.* Yes. Powers can tell you more about that than I can. He has had it investigated.

*Question.* What was it?

*Answer.* There was a whole parcel of fellows there, but this is only hearsay on my part—that a party of disguised persons went to Governor Powers's place, and arrested a man named Matt. Duncan, and started away with him, and he escaped, and they got to shooting about promiscuously, and some man shot a young fellow named Evans, who was in disguise, and killed him. He died next day.

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 8, 1871.

Lieutenant Governor RIDGELEY C. POWERS sworn and examined.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You may state your place of residence and official position, governor.

*Answer.* My residence is near Shuqualak, in Noxubee County, Mississippi. I am lieutenant governor of this State.

*Question.* How long have you lived in Noxubee County?

*Answer.* I have lived here since December, 1865.

*Question.* When were you elected to the office which you now hold?

*Answer.* The 1st of December, 1869.

*Question.* What portions of the State did you canvass previous to your election last fall?

*Answer.* During the canvass of 1869?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* The third congressional district.

*Question.* What counties compose that district?

*Answer.* Noxubee, Winston, Neshoba, Kemper, Carroll, Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Attala, and Leake.

*Question.* Have you canvassed any portion of the State this fall?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What portions?

*Answer.* Well, sir, I have been all over the State, not in all the counties, but in every portion, from the southern tier of counties to the northern tier. I have been in all parts of the State.

*Question.* The committee are desirous of informing themselves of the condition of society in the State of Mississippi, as to peace and good order, and how the laws are enforced, and what measure of security exists at the present time for life, person, and property; and whether all classes of people are free to express their opinions, and to vote freely at the ballot-box. Upon these several subjects, the committee desire any information that you are able to give, derived from your own personal knowledge, or from information which you deem reliable.

*Answer.* Well, that is a pretty big subject, and covers a good deal of ground. We have not had much difficulty here in Mississippi, with the exception of three or four counties adjoining Alabama.

*Question.* What are those counties?

*Answer.* They are, commencing on the north, Monroe, Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Noxubee, Kemper, and Lauderdale.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Do you exclude Winston?

*Answer.* I would not leave out Winston. Winston is the worst of the number. There has been considerable violence since I have lived in the State in those counties, but outside of those, with few exceptions, there has been no trouble in enforcing the law.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What is the character of the disturbances in these excepted counties that you have mentioned?

*Answer.* Well, there have been several attempts at riots in part of these counties, and there was one pretty bad riot, of which I presume you have information, the Meridian riot; and, then, there has been a good deal of violence committed by disguised men traversing the country at night.

*Question.* What evidence have you of the existence of such bands prowling through the country at night, and committing acts of lawlessness?

*Answer.* The only evidence that I have is the evidence of gentlemen who have witnessed some of their depredations; but the most positive that I have is an occurrence that happened at one of my plantations, in Kemper County, last May. About the 26th of May, I believe, a body of men came to my plantation at night, about 2 o'clock in the morning, and took out a colored man from his cabin, with the apparent intention of murdering him. They fired at my superintendent, too, through his bed-room door, and broke into his room; broke the door.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* They fired into your superintendent?

*Answer.* They fired into his sleeping-room. He was up and at the door. They demanded admittance, and he refused to open the door, and they fired two shots in the direction in which they heard his voice. Both balls passed into the room. Then they burst into his room. It was very dark. About this time one of their men was shot and killed. It was a young man by the name of George Evans, who lived in the neighborhood there, and they then left without committing any further violence.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* How large was this party?

*Answer.* About fifteen, as near as the hands on the place could judge. It was somewhere from fifteen to twenty; they estimated it at fifteen.

*Question.* Were they mounted?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, and disguised. They left at the plantation two of their disguises in their haste to get away. They were considerably frightened when they found themselves had been fired upon, and one of their men killed; and they left two of their disguises, which are in the hands of the United States marshal at this time, I believe.

*Question.* Did you examine them?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Describe them as well as you can.

*Answer.* Well, they were just loose gowns, very much like a study-gown; a loose gown, put on over the neck, hanging down nearly to the feet. Those were made out of calico, cheap calico.

*Question.* Were there any disguises for the face?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; some whiskers made of hair taken from a cow's tail, probably, or a mule's tail, and a mustache or two, that were picked up.

*Question.* In their manufacture did they evince skill, as if some tailor or woman had sewed them?

*Answer.* They looked as though they had been sewed by some woman; just hastily put together.

*Question.* How was the hair attached, which constituted the mustache or whiskers?

*Answer.* It was by a string, I think. It was attached by tying around the head with a string, I should say, by the appearance of it.

*Question.* Who was George Evans, that you have named as one of the assailants who was killed?

*Answer.* He was a young man. I do not know his age. Probably not of age; less than twenty-one, who lived in that neighborhood. His father, Richard Evans, has been an old resident there for many years; a violent man.

*Question.* Violent in what respect?

*Answer.* A man given to drink; given to fighting.

*Question.* Was he a planter before the war?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he planted on a small scale; a small farm.

*Question.* What was the character of the son, George Evans?

*Answer.* He bore a very good character—the best of the family. There were several of the boys, three or four, I think. George was regarded as the most quiet and orderly of the boys.

*Question.* Was his body left upon the ground?

*Answer.* No, sir; his body was taken away and carried to his father's house.

*Question.* Was there a public funeral?

*Answer.* No, sir. Well, a few neighbors came in.

*Question.* Was any effort made to cover it up?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* To prevent publicity?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; there was an effort made. It was given out in the neighborhood that he died of a kind of cholera-morbus; that he died from overeating oysters and sardines. That was given out by a few of his friends directly after his death, but that was afterwards abandoned.

*Question.* What was done with the colored man upon whom the raid was made?

*Answer.* He broke away. At the time George Evans was shot they were standing near together, and those that were guarding him were rather paralyzed at seeing George fall, and while their attention was turned to him the man ran. They fired several shots at him as he ran away from them, but he was not injured at all; he got away. He is living now on my plantation in this county here.

*Question.* Had he received any notice of this visit?

*Answer.* None whatever.

*Question.* Any letter or message from the Ku-Klux?

*Answer.* None whatever. He had a small brother, who was murdered, probably by the same men, two years previous, and this boy, Matt. Duncan, on my plantation, reported that to the soldiers down at Camp Lauderdale. There was an investigation, and a good many citizens were taken down there. This boy, Duncan, was taken from his house, murdered, drawn and quartered, and thrown into Talladega swamp.

*Question.* What was his offense?

*Answer.* I never heard that he was charged with any offense.

*Question.* Was that said to have been done by a band of men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Two years before?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; about that.

*Question.* And Matt. Duncan, the colored man on your place, reported the death of his brother, and sought to have the perpetrators brought to justice?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* That is the only cause of offense you know existing against him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the only one. He is a very quiet, industrious, hard-working man. He seldom left the plantation, and no one had anything against him, so far as I know.

*Question.* Kemper lies adjoining Noxubee on the south?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the two races are pretty nearly evenly balanced?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the blacks are a little in the majority.

*Question.* I see that the census shows of blacks, 7,214, and of whites, 5,706?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are you informed what pique they had against that overseer that they sought to kill him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know that there was anything against him in the community there. He never had received any notice to quit the place, nor had he been led to believe that his presence there was objectionable to any of them.

*Question.* Was he a white, or colored man?

*Answer.* A white man.

*Question.* Did you ever investigate this matter to satisfy yourself from what locality these raiders came?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; sufficiently to satisfy myself that they were a band gotten up right there in the neighborhood, within not to exceed eight miles from the plantation; in fact, an investigation was had before the United States grand jury, at Jackson, and part of the number were indicted, and old man Evans and one of his boys quit the country. They succeeded in evading the arrest, and have quit the country. The evidence is sufficient to satisfy me that the entire body was organized right there in that neighborhood.

*Question.* You have a plantation in this county, Noxubee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Has that ever been visited by them?

*Answer.* No, sir; never been visited.

*Question.* You have now given the particulars of one act of violence. You may state to the committee any others which occur to you. I refer specially to these acts of violence which were committed by men banded together at night, whether disguised or otherwise.

*Answer.* There has been but one act of the kind in my immediate neighborhood. That occurred about two years ago, I think; I do not remember exactly.

*Question.* What case was that?

*Answer.* The case of Bully Jack. I presume you had a statement of that from Mr. Campbell, who was in preceding me. Did he tell you of that case?

*Question.* He did.

*Answer.* It will not be necessary for me to give a statement, then, in regard to it?

*Question.* No more than to give your opinion as to the locality from which Bully Jack's murderers came.

*Answer.* I have always been of the opinion, from the evidence before me, that they came from across the Alabama line.

*Question.* From Pickens or Sumter County, Alabama?

*Answer.* I do not know as to that.

*Question.* You may state to the committee the evidence upon which you come to your conclusion, or your reasons for that opinion.

*Answer.* Some of these men from across the line had visited the neighborhood, had been to Shuqualak on several occasions, and they seemed to be drinking, violent men. I am acquainted with all the men in this county in that neighborhood. I do not think that a body of that number could be gotten together for such a purpose in that neighborhood, and there is no other place where such a body could have originated, except across the line, and it has been reported to me that there existed a body of violent men in the adjoining counties.

*Question.* Have you heard of other raids from any of the adjoining counties in Alabama upon other counties in this State?

*Answer.* I have heard of them.

*Question.* What is your belief as to the understanding or confederation between gangs of lawless men in this State and similar bands in Alabama?

*Answer.* I believe they have a general understanding; that they have communication—the bands in this State and the organization in Alabama.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that when a death or whipping or other outrage is decreed a band from a distance is designated or called upon to execute the decree?

*Answer.* I think that is the case in many instances.

*Question.* You may give to the committee what information you have as to the existence of a secret organization of men, oath-bound, whose purposes are violence, and

when, according to your best information, it originated, and how extensively it has spread through the country?

*Answer.* The only information I have now of this matter is based so much upon hearsay and what I have read, that my evidence would be almost entirely drawn from such sources—what I have read and what I have heard gentlemen say.

*Question.* We have regarded that as legitimate where the sources of your information are deemed by you as reliable. We are in the habit every day of taking evidence not proceeding from personal knowledge, but from information acquired from public prints, and from rumors, and what other people have said.

*Answer.* I believe the common belief among people here is that General Forrest was the originator or the leader of the organization in this section of the country; that he was the first that started the organization in the State of Mississippi.

*Question.* About what year?

*Answer.* About 1868, I think.

*Question.* Do you refer to General N. B. Forrest?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was instrumental in having several organizations formed in the northern part of this State, as I believe, and as a good many others believe with whom I have talked upon the subject; and it has spread somewhat over the State. I believe, though, in the northern part of the State, where these organizations were first formed, they have been practically abandoned. I know some men who have told me that they belonged to the organization at that time, and that Forrest first introduced them, but they claim that the object was not to do violence at that time, but that the object was to scare colored people by disguises, &c.; not to commit violent acts; to keep them, however, from the polls, or force them to vote as the organization desired them to vote, without committing violent acts.

*Question.* Did you understand that in its organization it was a purely political society formed for the purpose of carrying the elections?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is as I understood it. I think this turn it has taken was not contemplated at the outset, and I believe a great many men who were willing to go into the organization at the first, when they found the character it was about to assume, abandoned it. It failed to get a footing in a great many of the counties of this State from the violent turn it seemed to take a short time after it was organized.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of the obligation which those initiated took?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I have seen it and heard it read.

*Question.* I will ask you to state whether the obligation which I shall now read to you is the one which you understood was taken by members joining that order in this part of the country:

"You solemnly swear in the presence of Almighty God that you will never reveal the name of the person who initiated you; and that you will never reveal what is now about to come to your knowledge; and that you are not now a member of the Red String Order, Union League, Heroes of America, Grand Army of the Republic, or any other organization whose aim and intention is to destroy the rights of the South, or of the States, or of the people, or to elevate the negro to a political equality with yourself; and that you are opposed to all such principles: So help you God.

"You further swear before Almighty God that you will be true to the principles of this brotherhood and the members thereof; and that you will never reveal any of the secrets, orders, acts, or edicts, and that you will never make known to any person not a known member of this brotherhood that you are a member yourself, or who are members; and that you will never assist in initiating, or allow to be initiated, if you can prevent it, any one belonging to the Red String Order, Union League, Heroes of America, Grand Army of the Republic, or any one holding radical views or opinions; and should any members of this brotherhood, or their families, be in danger, you will inform them of their danger, and, if necessary, will go to their assistance; and that you will oppose all radicals and negroes in all of their political designs; and that should any radical or negro impose on, abuse, or injure any member of this brotherhood, you will assist him in punishing him in any manner the camp may direct.

"You further swear that you will obey all calls and summons of the chief of your camp or brotherhood, should it be in your power so to do.

"Given upon this, your obligation, that you will never give the word of distress unless you are in great need of assistance; and should you hear it given by any brother, you will go to his or their assistance; and should any member reveal any of the secrets, acts, orders, or edicts of the brotherhood, you will assist in punishing him in any way the camp may direct or approve of: So help you God."

*Answer.* The verbiage is a little different from the oath I heard read, though the substance is the same—about the same. The oath I saw was handed to me by a young man named Taliaferro, who claimed that he had been initiated, or not exactly initiated, but had in some way gotten in and obtained their confidence, and was supposed to belong. He lived in this county, and he showed me a copy of the oath he had taken, and the substance of it was about the same.

*Question.* Have you any information upon the subject from any other persons than Taliaferro, who have belonged or claimed to have belonged to that organization?

*Answer.* A young man from Winston County, by the name of—the name has passed out of my mind just now—whose brothers, he claimed, belonged, and he made some revelations down at Jackson, and he informed me of the oath. He had access to it through his brothers in some way. I forget his name now. He was a Methodist minister. His brothers belonged to the organization, as he claimed, and he had got access to it through them, and had found out considerable about the organization through them.

*Question.* Have you seen or been informed of manifestations of the existence of this order in certain parts of the State of Mississippi, since 1868?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; in the counties that I named. In each of those counties there have been manifestations that I have heard of. I have not been personally knowing to any of them, except the one I have named on my own plantation.

*Question.* How late is the last outrage you have heard of committed by disguised men?

*Answer.* I believe the whipping of Huggins, at Aberdeen, was the last. A. P. Huggins was an internal-revenue officer.

*Question.* That occurred this spring some time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. No, I heard of two or three down in Lauderdale County later than that, only a few weeks ago—the murder of a colored man down at Lauderdale Springs; it was said to have been done by mistake. I have no positive information myself, though, in regard to that.

*Question.* Lauderdale is the same county in which the riot occurred at Meridian?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of several murders of colored men in this county from time to time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of several.

*Question.* Have you heard of the cases of Peter Gregory and Dick Malone and Bully Jack?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Johnson Keitt?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Solomon Triplett?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of that.

*Question.* Have you heard of the case of Allen Bird who was killed in July in Winston County?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of that.

*Question.* Did you hear of the case of Samuel May, killed near Brooksville, in this county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard of that.

*Question.* Did you hear of the case of Lewis Jordon, killed near Squire Campbell's place, his throat cut?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* That was about a year or so back.

*Answer.* I did not hear of that, or if I did it has passed from my memory now.

*Question.* Have you heard of several cases of negroes being whipped by men in disguise?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard of several. There was one negro whipped by this same body of men that came to my plantation, on an adjoining plantation. It was a man named Rufe Hickman. He was taken out before the party visited my plantation. They took him out and whipped him very severely; he did not recover so as to work for two or three weeks. Rufe Hickman was living on a plantation belonging to Dr. Cheatham.

*Question.* Did you hear what Hickman's imputed offense was?

*Answer.* There was a white woman of low character living in the neighborhood, who used to visit with colored people, and she went to a dance, and this Hickman danced with her; and they told him they whipped him because he danced with a white woman. I believe that was the only thing they claimed to have against him. I saw him after he was whipped, and he told me that was what they said they whipped him for.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of the case of Samuel McMillan, who was shot at and shot one of the assailants?

*Answer.* In this county?

*Question.* I think it was in Winston County.

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not remember to have heard of it.

*Question.* Have you known or heard of the teachers of colored schools being molested?

*Answer.* I have known of none in this county being molested; in Lowndes I heard of the whipping of a teacher; he was ordered to leave the State for teaching a colored school. In Winston County they have not permitted anybody to teach a colored school, or a white one either, for the last seven or eight months. I think they burned all the school-houses in that county, except one, where schools were being taught.

They were teaching school in some churches, and they even burned the churches when they have been given for that purpose. The colored people on my plantation built a school-house, and were going to establish a school for the neighborhood, and it was burned about the time they got it accomplished.

*Question.* Winston County has a majority of whites, I believe?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; quite a large majority of whites?

*Question.* Have things been in a very disturbed condition in that county?

*Answer.* Very much so for the past ten months; so much so that the colored people, a great many of them, are leaving the county.

*Question.* You may give a general description of the character of the outrages.

*Answer.* I have a plantation right on the border of the county, and the information I have is from colored men who came up from the plantation, when I was there, to see me. They would tell me they were threatened, unless they would be advised by the whites, and do as they desired them to do; they say they are whipped, or threatened with being visited by the Ku-Klux at night, and they claim that they are really in but little better condition than they were in before the war.

*Question.* Is there a great state of terrorism prevailing among the colored people in this county?

*Answer.* Very great, very great; so much so that they do not feel at liberty to express their opinions. They say very little; they do not feel safe in avowing their sentiments. So far as their political sentiments are concerned, they are compelled to keep quiet. They are in such fear that they are unable to vote their sentiments. When meetings are held, and I have held several meetings in that county, colored people do not come out; they are afraid to. If a few of them would attend a republican meeting they dare not give any evidence of approving anything said in the speech, for fear it will be noticed, and they may suffer for it.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that these outrages are committed with a view of controlling the political action of the blacks there?

*Answer.* I think so. I could see no other object in pursuing that course. It has succeeded in accomplishing that result.

*Question.* The negroes there abstain from voting, or vote with the democrats?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I do not know what this election will show, but I think it will show that they either have staid away from the polls or have voted with the democrats entirely. I know in the portion of the county where I am acquainted the colored people will not attempt at all to go to the polls; they have told me so. They have said that they did not feel safe in voting, and, under the circumstances, I advised them to that course. There was no prospect of gaining anything by voting, and where the danger was so great I did not feel like advising them to jeopardize their lives.

*Question.* What has been the character of the disturbances in Neshoba County?

*Answer.* Well, there is very much the same state of feeling there as in Winston, I believe, though not so severe. There are but very few colored people in that county. There has never been an organization among the colored people there politically; they have not been organized. In 1869 they voted in that county, most of the colored people voted, without any danger; they were not threatened in 1869.

*Question.* Have there been disturbances since that time in that county?

*Answer.* I have heard of but very few. I have heard of a few near the Winston line—of a few men being whipped. I have heard of no man being killed in Neshoba that I remember now—no colored men.

*Question.* Are there any colored schools in Neshoba?

*Answer.* Not that I know of. I do not think they have attempted to establish any there, but I am not positive. There are very few colored people in that county.

*Question.* You have spoken of one case of outrage in Kemper County—that on your own plantation. Do you know, or have you heard, of any others in Kemper County?

*Answer.* I have heard of others, but I could not give you the particulars.

*Question.* Murders or whipping, or both?

*Answer.* Both.

*Question.* Have you heard of any colored schools, or teachers of colored schools, being interfered with?

*Answer.* I have heard that some of them have been warned to leave the county; with the exception of the school-house near my neighborhood, I have not heard of any being burned. I know several colored schools are being carried on successfully in that county.

*Question.* Describe the state of things at present, and in the past, in Carroll County.

*Answer.* Carroll County is at the extreme western portion of this district, and I am not familiar there. In the year 1869, during the election, there was a perfect reign of terror among the colored people there; they were all compelled to either not vote at all, or vote as the white people desired them to vote. There has been some disturbance there I know, from the fact that it was necessary in 1869 to send troops there in order to carry on the election; there was some disturbance, some violence. For the last few months I have not heard of any disturbances in Carroll County.

*Question.* Have there been any disturbances in Lowndes County, according to your information, except the riot which occurred at Meridian last March?

*Answer.* Meridian is not in Lowndes County. There was a disturbance at Artesia, the other day.

*Question* I mean Lauderdale County.

*Answer.* No, sir; there has been no general disturbance since the riot. There have been several men killed in Lauderdale County since that time.

*Question.* Colored men?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Is it your undertsanding that they were killed by disguised bands of men?

*Answer.* I have so understood it. I spoke at Meridian, in the early part of the canvass, perhaps a month ago, and there was a colored man present at the meeting by the name of Cole, I think, that a few days afterwards was murdered. I was informed that he was murdered by masked men. He was quite a prominent colored man there.

*Question.* What effect has the riot at Meridian, and the other outrages in that county, had upon colored men, in respect to creating a general alarm, and feeling of insecurity?

*Answer.* They have felt since that riot very timid and insecure, and a great many have left the county. I think at one time, when I was at Jackson, there were from fifty to one hundred from Lauderdale County came to Jackson; they were afraid to remain there longer. A part of them went from there to other counties, to the bottoms. I have during the past few weeks been in Lauderdale County, in different portions of it, and talked with colored people. I know from what they said that they feel very timid, and very much afraid.

*Question.* Do you know what effect this alarm has had in causing them to abstain from going to the polls?

*Answer.* I do not. I could tell after I see the result of the election. I think you will find that one-fourth of the colored people in Lauderdale County will not go to the polls. In the precincts away from the troops—at Meridian, I think—probably a large portion of the colored people will remain away from the polls. Colored and white are nearly equally divided. If the real sentiment of the county could be found, it would be republican. I think you will find that it has gone democratic; and if it has, it will be only on account of the intimidation of colored people.

*Question.* You spoke also of Lowndes as being in the third congressional district, with which you were familiar?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Do you know or have you heard anything of any disturbances in that county?

*Answer.* Two or three months ago there was a colored man killed there by disguised men, and there were one or two teachers that I heard of who were warned to quit the county—warned by letters; one of the letters was published. I know at the time Judge Orr was holding court there. I saw him after court was over, and he said that the acts of violence were very near to Columbus. He charged the grand jury three different times with the view of getting indictments against some men that he thought could be gotten if he could have a grand jury that was not in sympathy with them. He thought he could get indictments against some men who committed the outrages there, but he was unable to get any indictments.

*Question.* What is the condition of affairs in Monroe County?

*Answer.* Since troops have been sent there I think it is very quiet. After the whipping of Huggins, up to the time troops were sent there, there was a general feeling of insecurity among the colored people.

*Question.* Have troops been stationed there since that time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* What effect does the stationing of troops in one of these disturbed districts have in quelling or stopping these outrages?

*Answer.* As far as the colored people are concerned, and white people too, they feel that it is a protection; that in case there is any riot or violence, they can appeal to the troops to have it put down speedily. It gives security to the people in those places.

*Question.* Does it, in point of fact, stop the commission of outrages in the neighborhood?

*Answer.* I think so. The violent men, as long as the troops remain there, are not disposed, or rather less disposed, to commit lawless deeds; they are more careful.

*Question.* You may speak of the condition of affairs in Oktibbeha County?

*Answer.* Well, sir, there was a man there whose name I forget. The first disturbance that occurred was about four or five months ago. This was a Scotchman, who had been a school-teacher, and merchandising at Starksville, the county-seat He was

waited upon at night by a body of men, and given a certain time to quit the county. Part of them were disguised men. They attempted to commit violence upon him, and he was forced to leave. He did finally leave the county, and reported the case to the United States court at Oxford. It was investigated, and indictments were found against several men in the county. Since that time I have heard of one or two deaths of colored men at the hands of masked men.

*Question.* Was this Scotchman you have spoken of a teacher of a colored school?

*Answer.* He had taught a colored school in the county, I understood.

*Question.* What is the sentiment of the people of those counties where these disturbances have existed in relation to the common-school system, particularly as it is extended to the education of the colored children? Are they generally in favor of colored schools or opposed to them?

*Answer.* There is a very great diversity of sentiment. The liberal men, the best men, the most intelligent men in the community, are in favor of free schools and the education of the colored people. The opposition to the free schools—the colored schools—comes from the men who were formerly overseers, and the lower class—those who themselves most need education here in the State.

*Question.* What do you understand to be the ground of their opposition?

*Answer.* They seem to believe, or say they believe, that the African race is an inferior race, and there is no use in attempting to bring it up to an equality with the white race; and there seems to be a jealousy on the part of the poor class against the colored people, very much the same kind of jealousy felt by the Irishmen all over the United States against the colored people.

*Question.* Growing out of any apprehension that they will be successful competitors with them to carry on the labor of the country?

*Answer.* It would seem so. They seem to feel that the elevation of the black race will be a detriment to them; they seem to fear it. Some of the prominent planters in Winston County have told me—and I know the best class of men in that county are very much opposed to this violence that is driving the labor out of the county—they told me the attempt was made by the poor, unreliable non-property holders, with a view of getting rid of black labor there, in order to command their own prices for labor. They regarded a great deal of the violence as springing from that motive.

*Question.* Has there been, so far as your information extends, any disposition on the part of the white class to prevent the colored race from becoming the owners of lands—cultivating them?

*Answer.* There was a very manifest disposition to prevent them from owning lands in 1866 and 1867, at the time the legislature of those years passed the law forbidding them to own or lease lands. There was such a law passed by this State by the legislatures in 1865 and 1867.

*Question.* What did you understand to be the reasons that induced that legislature?

*Answer.* Well, sir, the planters had an idea at the time, and the prevailing idea was, that it was impairing their efficiency as laborers; that the good of the country required that they should be kept in such a condition that they could be controlled as they had formerly been.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was that a democratic legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, it was a democratic legislature. The idea of the planters at first was to keep large plantations; to run large plantations the same as they had done prior to the war. It was a long time before they could give up the idea of planting on a large scale. At that time it was thought that if the colored men were allowed to lease or buy lands, it would demoralize the labor of the entire country. It was necessary, they thought, to control the labor in order to do anything at all to prosper.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did they apprehend a scarcity of labor to run their plantations in case the negroes generally became independent freeholders?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that was one of the motives, undoubtedly.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was that the same legislature that elected Alcorn Senator the first time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; the same legislature.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What are the sentiments of the white people in relation to colored suffrage at this time; are they generally reconciled to it?

*Answer.* They are becoming so very rapidly. They opposed it very bitterly at first, so much so that they would not go to the polls at the first election in this State where colored people were permitted to vote; but they are becoming reconciled to it very rapidly. There is a very bitter opposition in some counties yet.

*Question.* Do you think the democratic party of this State has given over entirely all hope of getting rid of colored suffrage?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not think they have given up entirely. They yield to force and do not yield from choice. If they had the power they would do away with colored suffrage at any time, in my opinion. They are becoming reconciled to it because they see no hope of avoiding it, and it is more from necessity than choice, not because they believe it is right.

*Question.* Is there a disposition on the part of the thinking men of the party, in view of the fact that the negro is now a voter, to elevate him as far as possible and extend to him the benefits of education?

*Answer.* That sentiment prevails among a portion of the people, the liberal-minded portion of the people, but it is not a large portion of the people who take that view of the subject, and a great many of them are favorable now to his elevation, taking steps showing a disposition to try it. Now, here is an instance in this county: One of the directors, Mr. Moore, is the most prominent man in the county, or has taken the most prominent part in establishing colored schools, and he has always been a democrat. He was a tolerably large planter before the war. There are several of his class who are taking a prominent part in establishing colored schools, but with these men, as soon as they take that view, discredit is cast upon their standing in their own party; they lose cast in their party by taking that stand.

*Question.* What effect, in your opinion, in arresting these outrages has the passage of the law last April by Congress had?

*Answer.* I think it has had a very salutary effect indeed.

*Question.* I mean in giving jurisdiction to the Federal courts in these cases?

*Answer.* A very salutary effect indeed.

*Question.* Do they stand in more awe of the Federal courts than the State courts?

*Answer.* They stood in no awe of the State courts at all. It would have been impossible to have convicted anybody in the State courts as organized.

*Question.* What instances of conviction have you known or been informed of in cases of outrage committed by bands of men in disguise?

*Answer.* I have not known of one, not heard of one. I have not heard of an indictment, except an indictment against four or five men up at Corinth. Those are the only indictments I have heard of, found against men for committing violence in disguise.

*Question.* What practical difficulty, in your judgment, would there be, where a negro man had been murdered by a band of disguised men, if the community took the matter in hand and made fresh and vigorous pursuit, and employed every available means to find out the perpetrators, in bringing them to justice?

*Answer.* The difficulty is just here: the organization is so widely spread through these counties that it is next to impossible to get a grand jury which has not one or more of the members of the organization upon it, and, even if you could get an indictment, you would scarcely be able to get a petit jury that would convict. If you succeeded in getting a grand jury that had not some member of the organization upon it they would be under intimidation in finding a true bill against a member of the order, fearing the vengeance of the order. There are men who are very much opposed to the violence of this organization, but they dare not say anything, dare not express their sentiments openly, for fear they will be visited by this violence, and suffer in person or property.

*Question.* For this reason would witnesses be intimidated from testifying before courts?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they would. Witnesses brought up, knowing these acts, would refuse to testify, fearing that personal violence would be visited upon themselves.

*Question.* Would that man be in danger who would take an open, bold stand against the Ku-Klux outrages, and make vigorous efforts to discover the secrets of the order and bring the perpetrators of these outrages to justice?

*Answer.* I think he would, undoubtedly. If there was a public sentiment here sufficient to take ground against them the danger then would be evaded, but a few men, or one man to take a stand against them, would be in danger of suffering from the organization, if they were openly denounced.

*Question.* Have you known any instance in which the good men of the community have called a meeting and passed resolutions denouncing these outrages, and pledging themselves to aid all offers to put a stop to them?

*Answer.* None in this portion of the State. There was such a meeting held up in Marshall, or De Soto County, two or three months ago, but there has been no such meeting held in any of these counties where the violent acts have been committed around here.

*Question.* What, in your opinion, would have been the effect of such an expression of opinion by the good men of the country?

*Answer.* I think it would have caused the disbanding of the organization in a very short time. If they would take earnestly that sort of a stand I think they could suppress it in a very short time. Their silence is only construed by these violent men into acquiescence. If the prominent influential men would take such a decided stand this whole thing would soon die out.

*Question.* Is it supposed that this Ku-Klux Klan is recruited in part from the decent, respectable young men of the country?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they make up a large portion of it, as is generally understood and believed.

*Question.* Sons of planters?

*Answer.* Sons of planters, and sons of respectable men.

*Question.* If you are able to analyze these outrages, and state the different purposes for which they were perpetrated, the committee would be glad to have the benefit of your opinion.

*Answer.* I think the general intention of the organization was wholly political; but, in carrying it out in the various localities, it is very frequently diverted from that to suit the local organizations. They gave it a local turn in different localities, but the main object of the organization is, as I understand it, to operate just previous to and during elections, in order to have an effect on the colored voters.

*Question.* Does it usually have that effect?

*Answer.* It does have that effect; wherever they are not interfered with it has that effect; in counties like Winston, where there is no opposition, nor sufficient force to oppose them, or in Lauderdale County, if there were no troops there, it would have the effect of keeping the colored people from the polls, or forcing them to vote with the white people. The colored people are very timid; taking them singly, very few of them have any personal courage. When they are in a large body they give a kind of confidence to each other, and they can be incited to do pretty brave deeds, but naturally they are all timid.

*Question.* Do they not generally feel that they have no protection at the hands of the State courts in the world, or no adequate protection against these outrages?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; they have that feeling; they are afraid to appeal to the courts. If a colored man is visited by this violence and whipped, he is afraid to go and make any stir about it, for fear the next time they come they will murder him. They always charge him after they whip him, saying, "If you make any report or fuss about this, the next time we come we will do you five times worse;" and they are intimidated from taking any steps, even if they know the parties. In some cases, I believe, they have recognized them, and have refused to give any information to lead to their conviction, for fear it would only result in some harm to themselves.

*Question.* Governor, what has been the course of the democratic press in this State in relation to these outrages, either as to denying their existence, or justifying them, or apologizing for them?

*Answer.* Until the evidence became perfectly overwhelming, the democratic press denied the existence of the organization. Since the evidence became perfectly overwhelming, they have sought to excuse and palliate the acts of these violent men. I have not known of a single out-spoken democratic sheet in Mississippi, which has uttered a sentiment in direct opposition to the organization. They have, in a kind of quasi manner, called on the people to preserve the peace, and flattered the people with being a law-abiding people, but as to coming out boldly, and denouncing this violence, and this night-marauding, I have not known a single sheet in the State to do it.

*Question.* With the exception of the resolutions you spoke of a little while ago, have you known that party, in any of its platforms, in its press, or through any of its recognized organs, to denounce this Ku-Klux organization, or the outrages committed by it?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not in any other instance except that one in De Soto County. That is the only instance I have known in this State.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* You say in this State there is little or no violence in most of the counties?

*Answer.* In the majority of the counties, there has been very little violence.

*Question.* How do the colored people vote in those counties where they are left free?

*Answer.* They vote unanimously republican.

*Question.* You spoke a while ago of Senator Alcorn being elected by the legislature that passed the bill against the colored people owning lands.

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was that in 1866, when he was elected, prior to his present election?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was elected, and went on to Washington. He and Sharkey, I think, were elected at the same time—I am not very bright upon that now—and they went on and were not seated.

*Question.* He was elected, then, by a democratic legislature?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; by a democratic legislature.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Who is the circuit judge of this circuit?

*Answer.* Judge Orr, of Columbus, Lowndes County.

*Question.* Does his circuit embrace most of the counties you have named as being disturbed counties in this portion of the State?

*Answer.* It does not embrace Monroe, on the north, nor Lauderdale, nor Kemper, on the south. They are in Judge Leachman's district. Judge Orr's district comprises Lowndes, Oktibbeha, Noxubee, and Winston—those four counties where there have been disturbances.

*Question.* Is he a son of Judge James L. Orr, of South Carolina?

*Answer.* He is a brother of that gentleman.

*Question.* Is he a good lawyer?

*Answer.* He is a good lawyer; a fine lawyer, and a fine judge.

*Question.* Is he rigid in the enforcement of the criminal law?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; very rigid. He does all in his power to enforce the law; no judge could do more. He is a man of fine abilities, and he uses every influence, all the pow er that he has, to enforce the law.

*Question.* Is there any reason, then, why the law should be taken into the hands of the citizens in this circuit, in reference to these minor offenses, when you have such a judge to administer the law?

*Answer.* No, sir; there is no reason for it.

*Question.* Do you hear particular complaint of your judiciary in this State?

*Answer.* Very little complaint of the judiciary. There has been none in this district; none in the districts these outlaws have overrun. In these several counties in the eastern portion of the State, there have been no complaints of the judges.

*Question.* The pretext given for these outrages in some localities is that the judiciary is partial, and corrupt, and incompetent. Does that charge lie against your judiciary here?

*Answer.* No, sir; no intelligent man would make such a charge against the judiciary in this section of the State. The bar would not indorse any such sentiment. The bar is almost entirely democratic in these counties, but I do not think you could get any such sentiment from the bar. Judge Orr has been regarded for many years as one of the best lawyers in Eastern Mississippi,and Judge Davis above has been regarded as a very fine lawyer—Davis and Reynolds both. Davis and Leachman have been the judges before.

*Question.* The pretext given for these outrages in some localities, as in Georgia and South Carolina, is that the pardoning power has been too freely used. Is that the case in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; there has been no such complaint that I have ever heard. There is no cause for any.

*Question.* Another pretext, as in North Carolina, is that there have been burnings of dwelling-houses and gin-houses by colored people. Have you heard such complaint in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I have not heard such complaint in this State.

*Question.* Another complaint assigned is that there have been rapes by colored men upon white women. Have you heard of such things in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I do not think I have heard of an instance of that kind in this State; I do not remember to have heard one.

*Question.* Another pretext given for the organization of the Ku-Klux in some localities is that the Union Leagues have been operating in such a manner as to produce alarm among the whites. Is that the case in this portion of Mississippi?

*Answer.* I have heard the organization of the Ku-Klux justified on account of there being such an organization among the colored people as the Union League.

*Question.* Have you heard of any acts of violence which the Union League has committed?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard it put on that ground. I have not heard it charged that the Union League has attempted to commit acts of violence. There is a great prejudice against the League, and they have sought to overthrow it in other counties. It never has been organized in this county. In several counties there has been a great opposition to it, but I have never heard it charged that the Union League was an organization for the purpose of having any such object as committing acts of violence.

*Question.* Another pretext given for the organization of the Ku-Klux in some States is, that the militia laws were such that the governor had power to call out the negro militia and not to call the white men out. Is there any such law in this State?

*Answer.* There is no such cause here. We have a militia law, but there is no militia under it.

*Question.* In some localities, as in Alabama, excuse is sought in the charge that a State constitution was forced on the people at the point of the bayonet, in violation of faith and in opposition to the will of a majority of the citizens. Is there any such complaint in Mississippi?

*Answer.* None whatever. Everybody voted for the constitution as it finally passed; both parties approved it in their platforms; it was adopted unanimously by the people of Mississippi.

*Question.* So it is the constitution of their adoption?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* It is alleged as another cause of complaint and dissatisfaction in other States, that many of the best citizens were disfranchised, so that they could not vote on the adoption of the constitution. Was any portion of the people here disfranchised from voting for or against the constitution?

*Answer.* No, sir, none; at the election, the first time the constitution was submitted, there was a clause disfranchising a portion of the citizens, but it was defeated, and at the second election that clause was stricken out, and there is now no clause in our constitution preventing any man from voting. All are permitted to vote. None are disfranchised, except those disfranchised by the fourteenth amendment to the Constitution of the United States.

*Question.* Another excuse for these outrages in Alabama was sought in the statement that the officers were not elected by the people, but placed in power by the bad faith of Congress in readmitting the State as it did. Have the people of Mississippi had cause to make similar complaint?

*Answer.* The State officers of Mississippi were elected by the people. They have no cause to complain on that score. They were elected by a majority of nearly 40,000 in this State. The county officers have all been appointed by the governor. There has been very little complaint. There have been complaints in some localities against the appointees of the governor, but not sufficient to justify anything like a resistance to the laws.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* It has never been set up as a justification?

*Answer.* No, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Both parties nominated and voted for candidates to fill the different State offices?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And also for members of Congress?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There were two tickets in all the congressional districts, and an opposition State ticket.

*Question.* It has been charged in some States that there has been a wasteful expenditure of public money, and that such transactions have exasperated the people and caused discontent and violence. Has there been such a charge here?

*Answer.* There is no such charge made in this State, except about election time they have made such a charge in order to make political capital, the same as they would in any State; but they have had no cause to make such a complaint in this State. There have been no acts of extravagance that the people could complain of generally.

*Question.* Is it your opinion that the State government of Mississippi is generally free from corruption?

*Answer.* I think so—as much so as any of the States in the Union.

*Question.* In other States complaint has been made of large prospective liabilities, which have been incurred by the indorsement of railroad bonds on the part of the State. Have you had any legislation of that character in your State?

*Answer.* No, sir; none of that character. The last legislature passed a law donating $4,000 a mile to railroads for a specified time. They are to receive their pay, or to receive the paper of the State, after twenty-five miles of the road have been completed and rolling-stock placed upon it. That has been generally approved, though, by the people. In the majority of the counties the people are in favor of that law. There is no disposition to repeal it. It was so popular that there is no county in the State where they have opposed it in their county platform.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* That donation is not issued on any incompleted road?

*Answer.* No, sir. When they have completed twenty-five miles, and that much of the road is ready for use, the State issues warrants to the amount of $4,000 per mile for the twenty-five miles. We found it necessary to do something to encourage capitalists to build railroads in this State, or else (the States adjoining us having thrown out inducements) we would not be able to induce any of the capital coming into the railroads in the Southwestern States into Mississippi. We did this with the hope of getting railroad men to turn some attention to Mississippi, and, it may be, partially succeeded.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Another pretext sometimes given for the Ku-Klux is that the colored people have been in the habit of mustering with arms in their hands. Is that a complaint here?

*Answer.* No, sir; it has never occurred in this State. The people in some localities have objected to their coming to meetings with revolvers and guns. Sometimes a colored man has brought a gun along to meeting, and that has been objected to by

white people; but it is seldom that it has occurred. Generally, they attend the meeting without arms. They are always advised by the speakers to come without arms. There has been no general complaint of that character in this State.

*Question.* So I understand you to state that none of these things which have been made the pretexts for Ku-Klux outrages in other States exist here in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; none.

*Question.* Is it for this reason that you think there is no cause, or justification, or palliation for this Ku-Klux organization?

*Answer.* I could not find any. No kind of reason would justify these Ku-Klux outrages to my mind. I do not think there is any justification. Nothing will justify them.

*Question.* Have you ever heard of any outrage, or pretended outrage, alleged as the ground for Ku-Klux outrages of any kind that could not have been reached through the civil tribunals?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not in the State of Mississippi.

*Question.* Yet this committee has found a great many Ku-Klux to exist in this section of Mississippi. How do you account for the existence of them in the absence of all these causes which have been mentioned?

*Answer.* The reason I gave in the first place, that it was a political organization, with a view of influencing the elections. It was necessary that it should exist in all the States where there were colored voters, and it has been organized here with the same general view of controlling the elections. Another reason for it—a purely political reason—they succeeded in this State in 1868 in controlling several counties. They controlled Carroll County, which was largely colored, Rankin, and several other counties, by intimidating the colored people, and they have thought that they could do the same thing in this election; and the leading democratic organ, the Clarion, has several times called on the people to remember the success of 1868, and has counseled them to resort to the same means used in 1868 to carry the election.

*Question.* In the State of Alabama there has been some complaint in regard to the election laws of the State; especially it has been alleged that the law prevents challenging the voters. Have you had any complaint of that kind in Mississippi?

*Answer.* No, sir; there is no complaint against our election law here—with one exception. There was some complaint that some counties were not allowed a representative. The basis of representation in this State was placed under the constitution upon the number of voters, and in some counties they have not the requisite number to entitle them to a representative. There was some objection to the law originally by the democratic press. These counties were all democratic where they had a less number than would entitle them to a representative. There was some objection made that two counties were thrown together and had only one representative. That is the only general objection I have heard to the election law. The election law itself is very much the same as the old election law, with the exception of a registration and the changes to answer our times. It is very much the same as the old one.

*Question.* There is not complaint enough to justify any outrages?

*Answer.* No, sir; no charge has been made on that score.

*Question.* I think you have stated to the committee that the counties on the Alabama line have been the most disturbed of any in the State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Are you aware that the people of Western Alabama ascribe their outrages to the fact that they live in close proximity to the disturbed counties in Mississippi?

*Answer.* I have not heard that; that is news to me.

*Question.* It is not news to the committee.

*Answer.* I do not know how that may be. I presume these parties are able to cross the border, first one side and then the other. I know on the western border of Mississippi there have been no disturbances in any of those counties—no violence by masked men.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* I suppose that is because it lies next to Arkansas?

*Answer.* That, or perhaps the Mississippi River, which is difficult to cross.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* What is your information and belief as to the employers seeking to control the political action of the colored people by threatening to turn them off of the lands, or other coercing means?

*Answer.* A general attempt was made on the part of the employers in 1868 to force the men under their employ to vote as they desired them; but since then, I think, they have abandoned that policy pretty generally. I have not heard of it existing, or only to a very limited degree at least, during this canvass. I have heard of such threats being made in some localities.

*Question.* From your knowledge of the negro, and his sentiments toward the party which freed him, what proportion, if any, of the colored voters would, as a matter of

choice, vote the democratic ticket, if no coercing methods were employed to induce him to vote that way?

*Answer.* I do not think any at all; not any whatever. Their natural desire is to vote the republican ticket; all of them, without exception, are so. Unless some means are resorted to by bribery or intimidation, I think they would vote unanimously the republican ticket. That has been my experience. The course pursued by the opposite party has been such as to create suspicion in the minds of the colored people that they were insincere, and really desired to deprive them of the rights that belonged to them. It has been such a course that the negro could not have confidence in that party. It was not so much on account of the republicans granting the colored man his rights, as the course pursued by the opposition creating distrust.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Cannot that distrust be ascribed in large part to the legislative acts to which you have referred?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Passed in 1866 and 1867?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that legislation was the first thing that started it. The course pursued by the white people directly after the colored people were declared free was such as to create a suspicion, and since then they have continued in the same line of policy to a sufficient degree to prevent any confidence springing up between the colored people and the democratic party.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* Have not the democratic party opposed every step toward their equality under the law?

*Answer.* Every step; there is not an exception I know of.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* It has been asserted by some witnesses before this committee that the presence of people from other States has had a tendency to produce antagonism of races, and unfriendly feeling between the whites and colored people here. I desire to ask you, if more of that unfriendly feeling was not caused by the character of the legislation you have referred to than any other cause.

*Answer.* By far, by far; the most of it. There is some objection here; quite lately this prejudice has been sought to be raised against men coming from other States; but up to this last canvass there was no such question raised as opposition to men coming in and settling here since the war. It was not a question out of which political capital could be made until this canvass. They have attempted in this canvass to prejudice people against men who have settled in here since the war from other States. In 1869 they made no such attempt, because the opposition party made up a ticket, a very large part of which was composed of men who had settled in Mississippi since the war.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* You have heard of the murder of Mr. Wissler, which took place in this town?

*Answer.* I have heard of it, sir.

*Question.* It has been said that you became his bail, or went his security, for his appearance to answer some charge preferred against him in one of the courts at Corinth some time since, and that there was a feeling among some that he might not be brought to justice on account of the official position that you held, and the contingency that you might become governor of the State and pardon him; and the theory is advanced by some that Wissler was murdered because of the apprehension that he would not be brought to justice, or, if he were convicted, that he would be pardoned. You may state now your motives, and all your motives, for having become his bail.

*Answer.* Mr. Wissler was charged with having attempted to burn up a man. You have, perhaps, heard the circumstances of that case?

*Question.* Yes, sir.

*Answer.* After that, his wife, whom I knew, came to my plantation on two occasions, and told me that her family was suffering; that her husband was there in confinement, and she could find nobody willing to go on the bail, and she implored me to bail him out and let him come home to attend to his family. I was in the canvass; I went to Corinth, and saw the magistrate who examined the witnesses, or before whom the primary examination was had, and learned the character of the testimony and the general sentiments of the best thinking men there. I saw the editor of the paper there, and different ones, and they all were of the same opinion, that Wissler had no criminal intent against that man whom he was accused of murdering.

*Question.* Shipley?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Shipley. I was satisfied in my own mind that he had no intention of committing a crime, no intention of murdering the man; that it was simply a drunken spree they had got into, and this was an accidental affair. I knew he could not be

tried at this term of court, because the code was not published, and there was to be no court held there. He would, therefore, have to remain several months away from his family. There was no gentleman willing to go on the bond, and we made a bond for him to allow him to come.

*Question.* Speaking of that transaction, is it not true that, when the matter was fresh, Wissler was put upon his trial or hearing before the examining magistrates, and after a hearing of the evidence they discharged him?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is true.

*Question.* Is it not true that the matter remained dormant for months, until he was casually passing through Corinth and was arrested and put upon trial again?

*Answer.* No, it was about two or three weeks he was casually passing through the city, and was arrested again. He would not have been arrested had he not been employed by the United States marshal in making arrests of Ku-Klux. The prejudice was aroused against him, I am satisfied in my own mind, because of his being employed by the United States marshal in arresting Ku-Klux.

*Question.* At that very time?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And you think he was indebted for his second arrest to that circumstance?

*Answer.* I think so undoubtedly.

*Question.* You say you conversed with the leading thinking men, among others the editor, at Corinth in reference to that affair?

*Answer.* I did.

*Question.* Was it the impression at that time among this class of men that he was innocent of any guilty intent?

*Answer.* It was; I did not find any other opinion there; I talked with several of them—with the county officers, and several other prominent men there—and I heard but one sentiment expressed; all were of opinion that he could not be convicted upon the evidence. A portion of the evidence has been published. There was but one sentiment among all of them that I talked with, and I talked with a good number; I spent a day and a half there.

*Question.* It is said that it was suspected he had robbed Shipley of some $500; that Shipley made a dying declaration to that effect, which was reduced to writing. What is your information on that point?

*Answer.* I know that is one of the charges. I was not informed that Shipley made such a dying declaration.

*Question.* Is it the understanding that Wissler had rendered himself quite obnoxious to this Ku-Klux Klan and its friends and sympathizers?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is the general understanding.

*Question.* What is your theory as to the cause of his assassination, or the motive for it?

*Answer.* I would be hardly willing to express a judgment upon that. I know of nothing against him, of any grudge that any persons could hold against him, to cause them to murder him, unless it should be some of these men whom he arrested in prosecuting for acts of violence in Winston County. He formerly lived in Winston County, and there had been some prosecutions against men there, and he has been supposed to know some of the facts which, if revealed, would injure some men, both there and in this county. I know of nothing else that would have instigated anybody to have taken his life, unless it would have been the knowledge that he had in these affairs. He was an inoffensive man, a man who has lived here several years, and he has never been charged with being a law-breaker or violent man, or anything of the kind. He was sometimes given to over-drinking, and committed foolish acts, as drunken men do, but he has not been regarded as a dangerous man.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was he not under indictment here?

*Answer.* He was. There were one or two indictments against him as a magistrate on a very trivial offense—something about paying over money he was supposed to have collected; but I believe it was generally thought that he would be able to vindicate himself upon a trial. The grand jury that indicted him was after the officers in this county very severely. It indicted two boards of supervisors and nearly all the officers of the county, upon very trivial pretexts, and it did not meet the approval of the people of the county. Perhaps some of the officers had not been as attentive as they ought to have been; they had not carried out the letter of the law, and had laid themselves a little liable. But this was not regarded as a sufficient reason by the people why he should have been indicted. It was not regarded as democratic, because the first board of supervisors was almost all democratic, and indictments were found against nearly all of them. He was indicted amongst others, but he was not charged with anything very criminal; they were minor offenses for which he was indicted. I do not know the exact charges, but he signified a willingness here before the people, and satisfied a good many that he could clear himself on a fair trial.

*Question.* You have spoken of Judge Davis as an able and impartial judge?
*Answer.* Yes.
*Question.* Did he not review the testimony upon a writ of *habeas corpus* being sued out in favor of this man Wissler?
*Answer.* He did.
*Question.* And he raised the amount of bail?
*Answer.* He did.
*Question.* That would not tend to show that it was in compliance with any animosity of the Ku-Klux that he was held for that crime?
*Answer.* It would not tend to show——General, I do not understand you.
*Question.* I will explain what I am trying to get at. You say you believe the motive for his rearrest upon this charge was that he had made himself obnoxious to the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* I ask if Judge Davis did not re-examine the testimony in the case?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* And he did not hold him to bail and require him to give larger bail?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; he did.
*Question.* Does that argue that he was held to bail originally, or that his bail was increased, because of any sympathy with the Ku-Klux whom he was prosecuting?
*Answer.* I simply state that I do not think he would have been arrested the second time after the first arrest, when he was discharged, had he not been engaged in prosecuting Ku-Klux. I think it would have been dropped there, but he was arrested the second time and the second time he was bound over. I do not know what instigated the judge in increasing his bail; perhaps, with the general fury—that prevailing sentiment—the judge thought the safer course was to bind him over to give him a fair trial. There was a clamor for his arrest the second time when he was there, and a general excitement at the time he was arrested, and it grew, I think, out of the fact that he was conducting Ku-Klux prisoners through the place, or had been, and was engaged in the prosecution of the Ku-Klux.
*Question.* It might well happen that a person who was himself guilty of a crime of that magnitude would not be regarded as a proper person to be arresting other people for crimes?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; if he had not been acquitted of any crime, he would not have been a proper person, but, as he had been acquitted, there was no reason why he should not be employed as a deputy United States marshal.
*Question.* But the judge did not think he ought to have been acquitted?
*Answer.* It seems not.
*Question.* He certainly had no affiliation with the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* Judge Davis? Certainly not.
*Question.* He was not operated upon by any such motives?
*Answer.* I should say not.
*Question.* He was deciding this question in a judicial manner?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* It was brought before him on a writ of *habeas corpus*, and he considered the testimony was such as to not only hold this man to bail but to require a larger bail?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; those are the facts in the case.
*Question.* Do you not think that a reply to the allegation you have made that it was on account of his opposition to the Ku-Klux?
*Answer.* No, sir; I do not see how that has any bearing; I do not see why it should, in view of all the facts. He had been acquitted once, and certainly if he had not been engaged in that business he would not have been there to have been re-arrested; they would have had to come here if they arrested him. But he was conducting prisoners through the place, and there was an excitement existing there, and that excitement was turned upon him, and resulted in his arrest the second time. I do not know whether the judge had additional evidence or what was moving the judge to increase the bond; it may be that he had additional evidence.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* They may have increased their swearing after the first arrest?
*Answer.* They may have done that, but I think Judge Davis an impartial and just judge and he justified his action by the evidence which was presented before him. I regard him as one of the best judges in the State.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I suppose the judge was as competent a man to pass upon the evidence as any gentleman on this committee, who did not hear it, the Senator from Arkansas, for instance?
*Answer.* He was certainly competent to act on the evidence before him.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* He did not hold the prisoner for the crime of murder at all, did he?

*Answer.* No, sir; he was simply bound over to be tried for the charges against him.

*Question* In his written opinion the judge decided it to be a case of criminal negligence, did he not?

*Answer.* I do not know that he went as far as that. I read the opinion that was published. It took a great many by surprise, when upon the second trial he was bound over; it was received with a good deal of surprise. The thing had been published and a good deal had been said about it through the press of the State, and it took the people generally by surprise that he should have been bound over, and the judge thought it necessary, in vindication of his action, to come out in a published statement; it seemed to be demanded on account of the criticisms passed upon the judge; he was criticized for his action, and he felt it incumbent upon him to defend himself and come out in a publication. I forget whether he went as far as your remark in passing judgment on the character of the crime.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* He held him in $5,000 bail to answer for the crime?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, that was the bond, $5,000.

*Question.* He was bound over, and the charge against him was murder?

*Answer.* He was bound over for murder.

*Question.* And you bailed him on that charge?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The grand juries in the State courts and the petit juries are drawn from the citizens of this State, are they not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* The grand juries in the United States court, held in this district, are also drawn from the citizens of this State?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* And the petit juries also?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* They are, then, drawn from the same body which compose the grand juries and petit juries of the State courts?

*Answer.* Yes; that is correct.

*Question.* In that case what is the difficulty of convicting in a State court any more than in a Federal court?

*Answer.* Under the State law we have no method of purging the jury; under the United States they are required to take an oath that they are not members of the Klan or aiders or abettors who sympathize with it; the jury is purged; and, in the second place, under our State law every person charged with crime has to be tried in the community where the crime is committed. Where these crimes are committed in this State, it is impossible to get witnesses to testify on account of the dread of the organization; but where the witnesses come before the United States court and have the protection of the United States, testimony can be procured from them in cases where it would be impossible for the State authorities to get the evidence.

*Question.* Have they not the protection of the United States, and the State, if they are attacked, as much when testifying in a State court as in the United States court?

*Answer.* They do not so regard it.

*Question.* Is not such the fact?

*Answer.* I presume so; however, I think, not exactly. When citizens are in the custody of the United States, if the Klan should visit vengeance upon those parties, the United States authorities would feel that it was more incumbent upon the General Government to defend the people. As in this case of Mr. Huggins, he was an officer of the United States Government. I do not think, if he had been operating simply as a State official, that the United States would have shown the same vigor in prosecuting the men who whipped him. The United States feels that it is necessary to take charge of and protect the men in its employ and immediate service, more than it would ordinary citizens of the States.

*Question.* The United States has claimed jurisdiction over all of these crimes, and equal jurisdiction with the State, whether the persons injured were in its employ or out of its employ?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Then what possible difference can there be if the United States claims and exercises jurisdiction to protect the citizens, whether they are in the employment of the Government or not?

*Answer.* So far as the responsibility is concerned or the duty of the Government is concerned, to protect the citizens, I see no difference, but in the one case the attention of the Government is called more directly to it. That is the chief difference. Of course, as in the case of Huggins, where a man is an officer of the Government, the attention of the Government is drawn particularly to his case.

*Question.* I am not speaking of persons employed by Government, but of witnesses.
*Answer.* Well, they are before the United States court, and become prominent; in that way the attention of the Government is called to them more than it would be if they were in the State courts.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* The district attorneys would feel it incumbent upon them in such cases of outrage upon witnesses, because they had given evidence before the United States court, to bring their cases to the notice of the court and the grand juries?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* When did you come to the State, Mr. Powers?
*Answer* In December, 1865.
*Question.* Where were you from?
*Answer* I was born in Ohio, in the northern part of Ohio, in Trumbull County. I came here out of the Army of the United States.
*Question.* You say that in Winston County the white people are in a large majority?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; I do not remember the majority; it is quite a large majority, though.
*Question.* What occasion have they, then, for any political purpose to use violence upon the negroes in the elections?
*Answer.* There are a good many men in Winston County, quite a good many white men, who are republicans. Notwithstanding the whites are in the majority, if we could have a fair election in that county, free from intimidation, I think we would have a good chance of carrying it. Several counties that have a large white majority we carry; for instance, Attala; we carry it every time there is a fair vote. The same in Winston; there are quite a good many white men there who vote with the republican party. In the election of 1869 the republicans elected the representative of that county.
*Question.* At the election of 1869 a great many men were disfranchised?
*Answer.* Not disfranchised from voting.
*Question.* Yes, sir.
*Answer.* Under what law?
*Question.* Under the act of Congress, the reconstruction act of Congress.
*Answer.* Yes, sir.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* When was your present constitution adopted?
*Answer.* In 1869.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* That election was held under the reconstruction act of Congress?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* In that election, as a matter of course, under the act of Congress, men were disfranchised who are now under disabilities by the fourteenth amendment?
*Answer.* Well, I would not take my oath to that. I do not know how it is. You are more conversant with it than I am.
*Question.* That is a matter of public notoriety.
*Answer.* I think you are correct in that. I have not had my attention called to it. I know that everybody is now permitted to vote.
*Question.* Have they been at the election on yesterday?
*Answer.* Yes, sir. I recollect now those who were disqualified by the fourteenth amendment were prohibited from voting, under the reconstruction act of Congress.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* They could not vote for the convention?
*Answer.* No, sir.
*Question.* Could they not vote for the constitution on its adoption?
*Answer.* I believe not.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* I want to call your attention to it, as you stated that in voting on the constitution nobody was disfranchised.
*Answer.* That was my impresson at the time, but I think now that you are correct.
*Question.* That was true of the organization of every one of the seceding States?
*Answer.* Yes, sir; they were all organized under the reconstruction act of Congress.
*Question.* Which disfranchised all those persons who are now under disabilities, or were then under disabilities, by the fourteenth amendment?
*Answer.* Yes, sir.
*Question.* It was not, therefore, as you have heretofore stated, true that the constitution of this State was adopted and its government formed when all the citizens had a

right to vote. You say it is your information that they have burned all the school-houses, white and black, in Winston County?

*Answer.* All but one. I have that from the report of the superintendent. That report was made to the State superintendent of education at Jacksonville that they burned all the houses where free schools were being taught, and that they ordered the minister, who was teaching in one church there, to desist from teaching by a certain time or they would burn his church. They visited the superintendent, got all the evidences of debt in favor of the school-fund of that county, and they burned them. So they destroyed the school-houses, and destroyed all the evidences of debt or funds belonging to the school-fund of that county. They burned them in his house before his face. They were masked men who came to his house and ordered him to give up the papers, and they burned them in his own fire. He made a statement of it to the State superintendent.

*Question.* You think if Lauderdale should go democratic it would be evidence of intimidation?

*Answer.* I think so. At the election of 1869 the republicans carried the county by something over 300 majority; I think something over 400. To my knowledge there are quite a good many white men in that county who will vote the republican ticket in this election that did not vote it in 1869, and all the colored people that voted the republican ticket who remained there will vote the same ticket. The registration is so nearly equal between the whites and blacks that I could not account for the county going democratic on any other ground than that of intimidation. There are a good many white republicans in Lauderdale County.

*Question.* How many?

*Answer.* Well, not less than 300. The former senator, Mr. Robert Leachman, from that county, informed me that he had a list of over 300 white republicans in that county.

*Question.* Are there any colored democrats in the county?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; but very few.

*Question.* Had he a list of them?

*Answer.* He did not inform me in regard to that.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any violence used upon the colored men who voted the democratic ticket by men of their own color?

*Answer.* Yes, sir, I have.

*Question.* You have not thought it worthy of mention in this long account?

*Answer.* Well, it is a thing that has been disapproved of by everybody. In some cases I have heard of the colored people getting exasperated against a man of their own color who they thought had been bought for selling himself, not from the fact that he joined the democratic party conscientiously. I do not think they would be disposed to molest such a one, but I have heard of a little excitement where they thought one of their own color had been bought, and they have offered violence. I have not heard of anybody being killed though, or seriously injured, in fact.

*Question.* Did you ever hear of any white man being killed by exasperated negroes?

*Answer.* There was this case at Artesia the other day, where a white man was killed at a meeting almost exclusively of colored men. I forget his name.

*Question.* Lee?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Lee. I do not think of another instance.

The CHAIRMAN. Will you let him give an account of that? I forgot to ask it.

Mr. BLAIR. The governor seemed to forget it, too.

The WITNESS. I will endeavor to answer any question, to give all the information I can.

*Question.* (By Mr. BLAIR.) You were engaged in talking about all manner of outrages, but that never occurred to you. What was there in that?

*Answer.* I have been up there since the killing, and have seen a good many of the parties, and I believe I am tolerably well posted on the whole of the occurrence, and can state it so far as I have been able to get at it. They had been having a republican meeting there. The assembly was composed almost exclusively of blacks. The speaking was about through with. Mr. Lewis, the republican candidate for sheriff, and Mr. Bliss, were the speakers. They spoke from a wagon. When they had got pretty much through Mr. Bliss got up in the wagon to make a few remarks preparatory to dismissing the crowd. This man Lee came into the crowd and called out to Bliss in an insulting manner, asking him whether he was a white man or a negro. Mr. Bliss paid no attention to it, and went on with the speaking, and Lee turned to leave the crowd and took a revolver from his breast pocket and fired it in the direction of the speakers in the wagon, and then ran from the crowd. Some colored men who were standing about, thinking he had fired and shot one of the speakers, pursued him. He fired another shot from his revolver, and they fired several shots at him and killed him. That is a correct statement of the affair, I believe. I think that the testimony given before the grand jury that was investigating the case, when it comes out, will show that that is a correct statement of the case. Lee, I believe, had the reputation of being

a quiet man ordinarily. He was there employed as a mechanic, doing some work at Artesia; he was not a citizen of the place. He had been drinking that day in the saloons, and was probably under the influence of drink at the time he went into the crowd; and this language he used was insulting to the speaker, and firing off his pistol, whether he fired it over the speaker or not, gave the impression to the colored men that he was attempting to shoot one of the speakers, and his running only excited them. They pursued, and he fired at them. They returned the fire and killed him. It was an unfortunate occurrence.

*Question.* Is it your information that he was not armed at all?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* That the firing was done by some other person in the crowd?

*Answer.* No, sir; that account was given to the press, but the investigation, in my opinion, will not show that state of circumstances.

*Question.* Why did Judge Orr order the arrest of these negroes?

*Answer.* There was a coroner's inquest called immediately after the meeting dispersed. That jury was made up of men who had come in there, and were not parties to the transaction—did not see it.

*Question.* That was very proper; was it not?

*Answer.* Yes, sir. There was no impropriety in that; but they sought to give it a political bias. It was composed entirely of white men, I believe.

*Question.* How do you know they sought to give it a political bias?

*Answer.* From the fact that they published it. The same men that were there sent telegrams of the affair contrary to what will be shown in the evidence when it is fairly investigated.

*Question.* Did they give anything contrary to the evidence as it appeared before them?

*Answer.* I do not know as to that. They implicated several parties who have been discharged by the grand jury already. They found at this inquest that he came to his death at the hands of certain parties, naming them, as inciting the murder of speakers Lewis and Bliss, and the investigation has shown that some of those parties whom they charged with the murder have already been discharged by the grand jury. No true bills had been found against any up to the time I left there.

*Question.* They were arrested under the order of Judge Orr?

*Answer.* Judge Orr gave the sheriff orders after the inquest to go down and arrest certain parties named. The sheriff, I understood, on that arrested every person he could find that attended the meeting, and arrested several that were not at the meeting at all. Going around to the plantations looking them up, he arrested seventy, and got a special train and took them to Columbus and put them in jail before Judge Orr knew what he was doing. The judge ordered them to be released, and they were released—all excepting seven, I believe. The investigation was still going on before the grand jury, but they have all been discharged except seven, I believe.

*Question.* And the sheriff and the party who made these arrests have been arrested themselves?

*Answer.* That has occurred since I left, if at all. I know they have been dismissed from office; the governor has turned them out of office.

*Question.* For making these arrests?

*Answer.* I do not know what the ground was. He certainly ought to have been turned out for making these arrests. He had no right to arrest men who were not even present at the meeting and put them in jail. That was certainly wrong, and the sheriff who would do that ought not to occupy the office.

*Question.* How do you know he did it?

*Answer.* The testimony showed that he did it; the testimony of the friends, wives, and relatives of these men. They came there, to Columbus, when they found they were taken away, and swore that they were not present at the meeting.

*Question.* How do you know but what he had evidence that they were there sufficient upon which to make their arrest?

*Answer.* The sheriff himself took several deputies with him. He did not give specific instructions to them, but sent them out to make the arrests. They went and arrested whomsoever they came across, and not only arrested in Lowndes County, but went across the border and made arrests in Oktibbeha County, outside of the jurisdiction of the sheriff; entirely outside of his county. When Judge Orr found he had made arrests of so many men—seventy men—and had chartered a special train at Artesia to bring them up to Columbus, he knew that the city of Columbus would be in danger if they were brought there in the state of feeling that existed. The colored people were excited, and the mayor telegraphed to the sheriff to wait until the troops came up. The sheriff, disregarding the telegram of the mayor, brought them all to Columbus and put seventy of them in jail, and it came very near producing a riot, which might have resulted in the destruction of the city.

*Question.* Is it impossible to arrest colored men without a riot, and the destruction of the city by colored men?

*Answer.* No, sir; not if it is done by proper process; but here were men arrested without any process whatever, some of whom were not present at the meeting where the disturbance occurred. Such acts would naturally excite the colored people at Columbus, when they found colored men arrested and put in jail, without any civil process whatever, simply at the discretion of this officer.

*Question.* Is that not very frequently done, if an officer has not time to get process and is required to make arrest of parties that are implicated in a riot?

*Answer.* The law of this State is very plain. Where the acts of violence have come immediately under his personal knowledge, the officer has jurisdiction and has a right to make the arrest of a man; but after so much time has elapsed—as in that case had elapsed—and the parties had returned to their homes, there is no law in this State for making arrests without process; none of these parties, who were arrested by him, were seeking to get away.

*Question.* Why, then, was he directed by Judge Orr to make arrests without process?

*Answer.* He was directed only to arrest those persons implicated in the verdict of the inquest, and he transcended the instructions, and went on his own responsibility and made other arrests.

*Question.* Was there any process for those persons who were implicated?

*Answer.* I cannot say as to that.

*Question.* Now, if persons were arrested improperly by the sheriff, was he not liable for that?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and he will be held liable in this case. He will be held to answer before the courts for improperly arresting these men and incarcerating them.

*Question.* Was there any occasion, then, for a riot, where the law would have held him liable, and where there was such a determination among the officers to see that these men were held liable, as you have expressed?

*Answer.* Certainly; it would not have justified a riot, but it was an occasion for a riot. Riots are never justifiable; they always spring from excitement; but this was one of the things that would cause excitement and produce a riot, and it came very near resulting in a riot. People under such circumstances become excited, and it is impossible to control them. Judge Orr and several of the influential men of the city went among the crowd when they found them gathering around the jail, clamoring for the release of these men, and it took all their persuasive powers to get these people to go home without breaking open the prison by violence. Of course, the arrests of these men would not justify a riot, but it might lead to a riot, and did come very near to it in that instance.

*Question.* Here was the case of an atrocious murder of a white man by a furious mob of negroes, and the attempt to arrest the negroes, it seems, gave rise to apprehensions of a mob?

*Answer.* No, sir; there was no resistance to the arrest of the negroes; there was no resistance. They could have been arrested at any time on a proper process. None of them showed any disposition to get away, but the sheriff went on in disregard of law, and arrested innocent parties; even went outside of his jurisdiction, outside of his county, and arrested persons who were not present at that meeting. That was what gave occasion for a riot. It was not the arrest of the men who were charged in the verdict of the coroner's jury that was the act which caused the excitement at Columbus. If these parties named by the coroner's jury had been brought there, and no others, there would not have been a word said; but when seventy men were brought there on a special train, and marched through the streets, with deputies on each side of them, it naturally aroused an excitement in Columbus.

*Question.* You say the sheriff has already been dismissed from office?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; he was removed.

*Question.* He was appointed in the first place by Alcorn?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; and removed by Governor Alcorn.

*Question.* His deputies have been arrested?

*Answer.* I do not know how that is. There had been no arrest made when I left there three or four days ago. He had not been removed when I left, nor arrested.

*Question.* You have heard of his removal since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; through the daily press.

*Question.* You have not heard of the arrest and the arrest of his deputies?

*Answer.* No, sir; I have not heard of that.

*Question.* Who do you say sent that telegraphic dispatch that the special train should not come with those seventy prisoners?

*Answer.* The mayor of Columbus dispatched the sheriff at Artesia not to bring those men up on the special train, but to wait until troops came, and to bring them up on the regular train.

MACON, MISSISSIPPI, *November* 8, 1871.

MATTHEW CLAY sworn and examined.

The CHAIRMAN. As this witness is called by the minority, I will ask General Blair to examine him.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Please give your name and place of residence.
*Answer.* Matt Clay, of Noxubee County, Mississippi.
*Question.* What is your business?
*Answer.* My business is about this Bridges matter down here, the killing of a negro.
*Question.* What is your present occupation, doctor?
*Answer.* I am a planter.
*Question.* What do you know about the Bridges case?
*Answer.* I know very little about it. I happened there only a few minutes during the trial, not more than five minutes. I heard the evidence of one or two negroes given in. I have written all I know about it down in plain English, so that by reading it to you you can know what it is, and then put any other questions to me that you may see proper.
*Question.* Read it, then.
*Answer.* [Producing a paper.] I will make a little explanation first. Some ten days or two weeks ago there was a little neighborhood meeting, and the neighbors called on me there to appear. I got offended at this at first, and told them I would not pay any attention to a private note. I had only received a private note to attend, but if my neighbors wanted me to answer any general questions, or meet them about it, I would give a statement in full, and this was the little document I handed in at that meeting. I swore to this before a justice of the peace, a man named Rice. It is as follows:

"Personally appeared before me Dr. Matt. Clay, a citizen of Noxubee County, who, being duly sworn, states as follows:

"Having been called upon, by a committee of citizens, duly appointed by a public meeting held at Bigby Valley, Noxubee County, (Bigby Valley is in the northeastern portion of the county,) Wednesday, September 27, 1871, and shown by them the testimony of H. B. Whitfield, before the committee of Congress, in Washington, known as the Ku-Klux committee, said testimony having reference to the disappearance of a negro in charge of one Bridges, at Bigby Valley, and of an assault on said Bridges by a negro mob, I, Matt Clay, do hereby state, in response to said committee, that I live nine miles from Bigby Valley; that I was present, for a short time, near Bigby Valley, at the school-house, and during the trial, before a justice of the peace, of certain negroes reported to have made an assault on Mr. Bridges near Bixby Valley, in connection with his allowing a negro prisoner in his charge to escape, or be taken from his custody; that at that time I heard, and believed from what I heard of the facts, that a certain negro, reported missing, had stolen a horse or pony from Charles Moore, beyond a doubt. I further heard at that time, and have never believed to the contrary, that Mr. Bridges had been assaulted at night, by an armed mob of negroes, who had fired a good many shots at him. This fact relative to the *night* assault, Mr. Bridges explained to me in person on the ground where it occurred, showing me how at night he escaped from his house on hearing the approach of the negroes, and running toward the school-house, about thirty yards from his house; about his meeting one of the approaching squads of negroes in his flight. He explained how he shot, with a gun, into this squad, when he was at once fired on by two or more squads of negroes, their fire crossing and marking the school-house, with buck-shot, small shot, and other missiles, in the shape of bricks, stones, &c.

"I went to look at those marks, and saw the indentation on the stones like small shot and buck-shot and brick-bats.

"These marks I saw, and suppose were made by about ten or twelve guns or fire-arms; and Mr. Bridges told me about thirty shots were fired at him.

"As to the confinement of the negro by Bridges in the school-house near his house, as to whether he was chained or not, and any incidents relative thereto, I heard nothing definite, and know nothing about it, excepting he told me he was too late to carry the negro to Macon, when he got him. I believe it is about eighteen miles to the court-house from Bigby Valley. The negro was taken to the justice about four o'clock in the evening.

"I know nothing, nor did I hear or know anything relative to the body of a negro being found in the Bigby River, near Bigby Valley, &c. I heard, and believe, from Mr. Bridges's statement, made to me while I was present for a short time during the preliminary trial of the negro before the justice of the peace, near Bigby Valley, that a party of negroes had called on him in the day-time, and questioned him relative to the escape of the negro he had confined in the school-house for safe-keeping—this was Sunday, about 12 o'clock, as well as I recollect—until he could take him to Macon, the county jail; stating it was too late after his trial to go to Macon (distance about

eighteen miles) from Bigby Valley; also that said party threatened him, and said he should give a better account than he had given them, as they believed he knew more than he had told them; and also that the armed mob subsequently made a night attack on him, already mentioned in this affidavit, &c.

"About the note being found in the school-house I do not know anything, &c.

"I do further state I met on the cars, while he was *en route* to appear before the congressional committee in Washington, Mr. H. B. Whitfield, and traveled with him about thirteen miles by rail, while the cars were in motion, between Artesia and Brooksville, on the Mobile and Ohio Railroad; that I had a short and hurried conversation with him, brought on by Mr. Whitfield, who asked me general questions about the Bridges affair, at Bigby Valley; that I told him, in substance, if he was going before the Washington Ku-Klux committee he ought to state the Bridges affair, in which some armed negroes attacked Mr. Bridges at night; that I thought it ought to be shown that lawlessness existed among the negroes, or, in other words, all the so-called reported Ku-Klux outrages did not originate among the whites in the South, but with the blacks. This was the idea I tried to impress on Mr. Whitfield, and this he promised to report at Washington.

"He misrepresents that in his testimony.

"And with Mr. Whitfield's testimony now before me, as rendered before the committee of Congress of this year, I do positively state, that any statements, or facts, or coloring of facts, given by him before said committee, and referring to me individually as authority for said statements, facts, or coloring of facts, obtained in any conversation or conversations between us, and differing from the facts, or statement of facts, made in this affidavit are, to say the least about them, misrepresentations, and certainly never directly or indirectly emanated from me.

"MATT. CLAY.

"Sworn to and subscribed before me this 4th October, 1871.

"H. A. RICE,
"*Justice of the Peace.*"

Since I wrote this affidavit I received a private letter from Mr. Whitfield in which he says he has misrepresented me, and that he is willing to give it in writing. Here is his letter, and you can have it if you want it.

The CHAIRMAN. I think we had better have the letter.

The WITNESS. Here is the letter; it is as follows:

"MAYOR'S OFFICE, CITY HALL,
"*Columbus, Mississippi, October* 5, 1871.

"MY DEAR SIR: Your letter of the 3d instant received.

"In reply I have to say that I did not represent you as saying or telling me what is put down in the evidence before the congressional committee in Washington. Upon being questioned about the Bridges affair I was asked, if I remember correctly, from whom I heard the statement, &c. I mentioned your name as one from whom I had heard some statements in regard to the affair, not that I desired to mention your name, or that of any other gentleman, as having given me the information, but because I was *required* to mention the particular names from whom I heard anything in connection with the transaction. I should have much preferred to have mentioned no name. I have not a copy of the evidence before me, and cannot, therefore, use the exact language; but the impression sought to be conveyed by me was, that the statements I had heard in regard to the affair were conflicting. I remember quite distinctly, I think, what you said to me on the cars, and my recollection is that you sustained the justice, Mr. Rice, in his course, as also the constable, and condemned the freedmen for the course they pursued; and if you have seen the evidence I am sure you will see that its tenor, as to your statement, is that way. My object was to give a fair and just statement of the case as gathered from what I had heard from different persons and had seen in the papers. So far as you are concerned, I know you are not a republican, but a fair, just, liberal, conservative man in your views; and, coupled with this, our very cordial, personal, and family relations would certainly prevent me from placing you in any false position calculated to prejudice you with your neighbors. I know you are opposed to lawlessness, as every good citizen is. I therefore repeat that I did not represent you as telling me the statement of the Bridges affair, as mentioned *verbatim* in the evidence before the committee, nor seek to create the impression, at least such was not my purpose, that you espoused the cause of the freedmen and condemned the course of the justice and constable. But I did seek to make the impression that the case presented a specimen of great lawlessness, as evidenced by the facts. I have no doubt whatever, if you wish to know my opinion, that the negro who was arrested and put in charge of the constable was taken out of the house and murdered—and this I believe from statements made by others, and not from anything, or suggestion, I heard from you. If the people of Bigby Valley have been misrepresented, no one regrets it more than I do, and no one would be more willing to make any corrections fully war-

ranted by the facts. But my belief now is, particularly from what I have heard of the case upon further inquiry, since my return from Washington, that the statement made in the evidence is quite mild, and that the half was not told of what can be substantiated if necessary.

"I hear from the best authority that the investigating committee, or a sub-commitee from it, will be through this section very soon. If any of the people of Bigby Valley think they are wronged by what I said, they can go before them and make their own statements; but they may know, at the same time, that all sides will then be heard, and they may be glad to let the matter rest where it now is before they are through with it. You are at liberty to show this to any person you wish.

"Remember me kindly to Nina and the children, and believe me, as ever, your sincere friend,

"HENRY B. WHITFIELD.

"Dr. MATT CLAY, *Brooksville, Mississippi.*"

That is about the sum and purport of the letter; it exonerates me. He made a misstatement before the congressional committee, and, like a gentleman, he retracted.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Your affidavit there contains a statement of all that you know about the matter?

*Answer.* All that I know of it or heard of it.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Did you understand where Bridges put the negro for safe-keeping?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; it was in a school-house about thirty yards from his dwelling-house.

*Question.* Did you understand that he chained him?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never heard anything particular about that.

*Question.* Tell all that you heard in relation to his chaining the negro.

*Answer.* All I heard of that I have given in that affidavit, that I supposed the negro was chained; that he confined him in a house for safe-keeping in order to bring the negro to Macon the next day.

*Question.* Did he keep the negro in that house by himself all night, or at least until he was taken out by this mob?

*Answer.* I suppose so; I never heard anything about it until the trial.

*Question.* At what hour in the night is it your understanding that the negro was taken out?

*Answer.* I suppose it was about 12 or 1 o'clock.

*Question.* What is your information as to the number of men that were concerned in taking the negro out.

*Answer.* Bridges told me it looked like thirty or forty in one squad and the same in the other squad; it was a little dark.

By Mr. BLAIR:

*Question.* Was that the crowd of negroes that came to take him (Bridges) out, or the negro?

*Answer.* The negroes that came to take him out.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* I am inquiring about the number of men who were concerned in taking the negro out of the school-house that night?

*Answer.* White men?

*Question.* I do not know whether they were white or black.

*Answer.* These men did not come to take the negro out.

*Question.* But I am talking about the parties who came to take the negro from under Bridges's charge. I understand that he put him in the school-house, and that the negro disappeared and was supposed to be killed?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* I ask for your information as to the number of men that were concerned in taking that negro out of the school-house that night. Do you comprehend me?

*Answer.* I do not know whether I do or not. A squad of negroes, my understanding is, came to arrest Bridges.

*Question.* What became of the colored boy that was confined in the school-house by Bridges, chained there?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about it. I supposed from the report the negro was taken out or got out.

*Question.* Taken out by whom?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about it.

*Question.* Have you no information about that?

*Answer.* None in the world, no more than you have. All I have is the public report that the negro had got out, or had been taken out. I do not know how.

*Question.* Were there signs of foot-prints or horses' feet about the school-house?

*Answer.* I do not know. I did not notice anything more than the shot marks on the side of the school-house. I just remarked to Bridges, I have heard so many lies since the war that I do not believe anything that is told me until I see it. He carried me about twenty yards, and showed me the marks of the buck-shot and the small shot.

*Question.* How long was this after the boy was taken out of the school-house; was it the next day?

*Answer.* No, sir; it was whenever the trial was before the justice of the peace.

*Question.* Was it several days after the boy disappeared?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* You never examined the foot-prints of the horses?

*Answer.* No, sir; I never have been inside of the house to this day. I never had anything to do with it. I avoided having anything to do with it, and did not stay but a short time.

*Question.* There was a general understanding that the boy was killed?

*Answer.* The general understanding was that the negro disappeared, and nobody knew where he went.

*Question.* What is the general understanding now?

*Answer.* That he escaped. Nobody knows whether he is killed or not. The negroes think he is killed, and some of the white folks think he is not killed; some of them think that he is; some think he is living.

*Question.* Do some white men think he has not been killed?

*Answer.* Some think so, but you know as much as I do. It is nine miles there, and I have not seen Bridges since the trial. I heard on yesterday that he was seen over in Alabama.

*Question.* What white man told you he had seen the boy since the trial, alive?

*Answer.* I do not know. It is just a report that he was seen up the river toward Columbus.

*Question.* You have heard of a body being found in Bigby River since?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I have heard something about it, but nothing definite that I could swear to. It is a mere floating rumor current here.

*Question.* You have heard a rumor that that was the body of the missing boy?

*Answer.* I have heard it was, and I have heard that contradicted. I heard from Charley Moore on the day of the trial that the negro was a young man that was lost, and they knew from the teeth that this was not the same body.

*Question.* Have you heard that his mother identified him by his clothing?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Do you know his mother?

*Answer.* Ellen Grayson.

*Question.* Have you heard that she identified the body

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* Was Bridges a constable?

*Answer.* Yes, sir.

*Question.* Was he a regularly elected constable, or was he appointed for that special purpose?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you. The justice of the peace can tell you in a few minutes.

*Question.* Did he appoint any guard to watch the boy or stand guard at the house that night?

*Answer.* I do not know anything about his arrangements as to the boy. I did not take any interest in it.

*Question.* The negroes believe Bridges was implicated in the murder of the boy?

*Answer.* That was their conversation, that the negro was taken out by the Ku-Klux, I reckon.

*Question.* And they repaired to Bridges's house next day to be satisfied how the boy had disappeared?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; that is about the sum and substance of it.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Doctor, what time in the year did this occur?

*Answer.* I cannot tell you in what month it was to save my life.

*Question.* How far did this occurrence take place from Bigby River?

*Answer.* I reckon it was between three and four miles—not over three miles.

*Question.* Did you hear anything about the body being found in the river?

*Answer.* Yes. I heard a rumor of that sort that the body had been found and the negroes were hunting for him on that Sunday. They had guns in their hands, and somebody asked them what they were hunting with guns, and they remarked they were hunting for their comrade; that he was lost, and their object in coming there was to make Bridges tell.

*Question.* Did you ever hear that there was a note left in the school-house after this boy disappeared?

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I heard that at the little public meeting when they called on me. Men were sent for that had seen that note, or rather the young man who was said to have seen the note, and he denied it before our little public meeting. It was reported that one of the young Pierces had seen it, but he said it was not so.

*Question.* What did you hear that note contained?

*Answer.* I heard that the purport of it was that 'We had got him," or "had him," or something of the sort, and signed; I do not know whether any name was signed or not.

By the CHAIRMAN:

*Question.* Was it signed "K. K. K.?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir; I reckon so.

By Mr. BUCKLEY:

*Question.* Was it not something to this effect "Don't be alarmed, we have got him?"

*Answer.* Yes, sir. I am a law-abiding citizen and want the law enforced against white and black, and where a negro is imposed upon I like to see justice done to him and will do it so far as in my power.

*Question.* Do you say you had no conversation with Mr. Whitfield in regard to this case?

*Answer.* No, sir, nothing at all. Mr. Whitfield denies it in his letter. We had this general discussion in the cars. We were very intimate friends and met on the cars, and he said he was on his way to Washington City, and said, "Don't breathe it to mortal man, I am going to see Governor Alcorn, and I do not wish to report; I know of several cases of lawlessness in the country by the whites and I do not like to report them. I think the governor has had me summoned and I think he can telegraph that I am a know-nothing and get me off, for I do not wish to go," and he asked me, "Do you know anything that has happened in your neighborhood, or what do you know about the Bigby Valley case;" I told him, and I said, "I think, Henry, the negroes are to blame about that thing." It was not more than five minutes talk.

*Question.* Do you know that he told the committee at Washington that there were two or three versions in regard to this Bridges case, and that he attempted to give both sides?

*Answer.* I know it now; I did not know what he was going to report. His conversation with me was strictly confidential. He told me not to tell his brother, who was station-agent. He said, "Don't tell Anthony I am going. I do not want anybody to know."

*Question.* Is it your complaint that Mr. Whitfield mentioned your name?

*Answer.* I did not want to be called before the country, to be called out by the neighbors and accused of sympathizing with negroes. I sympathize with them so far as justice is concerned. I like to have got into a serious difficulty with one of my neighbors, accusing me of being a radical, and I am not.

*Question.* Do you know that Mr. Whitfield had no discretion in reference to giving testimony?

*Answer.* No, sir; I do not know what his object was.

*Question.* He was asked to disclose the names.

*Answer.* I do not blame him. A man coming before a committee like you are here has to answer any question. I do not blame him at all.

*Question.* Is it the fact that the men on an adjoining plantation to where this occurrence took place have had to leave from fear?

*Answer.* I do not know any more about that than anybody on this committee. I never took any special interest in it. It is nine miles from my neighborhood. I have a plantation adjoining Bigby Valley rented out to negroes. I was going down there that day on business, and I heard of this difficulty, and thought it was every citizen's duty to go and investigate the case and see what happened. I merely went through idle curiosity, I may say.

*Question.* Mr. Whitfield says in his testimony, page 428, "there were some reports that he had been seen up in Lowndes County, and at Artesia, on the railroad, and at Aberdeen, and other places. But these reports could not be traced to any definite source." Have you ever been able to trace them to any definite source?

*Answer.* No, sir.

*Question.* The prisoner has never been heard of since?

*Answer.* No, sir; the prisoner is just as much a mystery to me as to you.

By Mr. RICE:

*Question.* You spoke in your testimony about receiving a private letter asking you about this matter.

*Answer.* Yes, sir; Mr. Whitfield's letter.

*Question.* No; a private letter from citizens in your neighborhood, calling on you to give an explanation about this containing a threat?

*Answer* No, sir; not a threat: but it was a note from a man in Lowndes County, stating that I must be at Bigby Valley; that there was to be a meeting of citizens. I am a man who attends to my own business, my two places. For fear I would not come this gentleman underscored it, and he says it is best for your character and standing in the community. When I read that I got insulted at it. I had been living here for twenty-one years, and knew everybody, and I took offense at his remark, "for your character you had better be there." The gentleman made an apology since and my friends said it was sufficient. I took offence at it and went down there and the thing was adjusted. I gave in then what I had to say about it.

*Question.* What did your friends want to know from you at that meeting? Did they have a meeting at which you addressed them?

*Answer.* They had a meeting there. There were some gentlemen from Lowndes County to investigate this thing, to see whether this negro had been killed—what you are after now, in fact—and they requested me to come down, as Mr. Whitfield had used my name as knowing a great deal about it. I went down there and stated all I knew about it. I had a plantation within two miles of the place. I was there attending to my land collecting, and went there through curiosity. I went to hear the truth about it when the trial was going on.